

## **Born Under a Bad Sign**

© Roy Den Hollander 2019

### **Paint It Back**

In 1947, breech births were dangerous to newborns, so many mothers chose caesarian sections. The problem was it left a scare, so vain mothers avoided it, as did mine. Even so, my luck did not hold out—I survived.

A person's earliest memory allegedly portends his future—perhaps. Let's see.

My earliest was around four or maybe younger. It was before my imprisonment in nursery school. I'm standing behind my mother who's cooking on the stove. What she's cooking is beyond me, since I'm so short, I can't see the top. My view is looking upward at her rear end, which wasn't bad. In her early 40s, she was still in shape and a good-looking babe.

“What's for dinner? I ask more than once not getting an answer.

She spins around in a flash with that screwed up face of unrepentant anger and yells, “Don't bother me. I wish I had listened to your father and never had you!”

For about the next decade, that was her favorite incantation of meanness. Guess she was hoping like all witches that I would disappear. It didn't work, unfortunately. But by the age of 14, I was bigger than her and my brain had matured enough to verbally fight back. So on one occasion of her now-well-passed-her prime rage when she barked, “I wish I had listened to your father and never had you!” I coolly replied, “I wish you had too.” She never pulled that rant again.

After she finally kicked off, I asked my older brother, the one my parents didn't kill, “What did you think about mother?”

Without a beat, he replied, “Mean and nasty.”

“What about me when we were kids?”

“You didn’t like being pushed around.” Sounds like a theme.

### Infanticide

So what about the brother that the parents eliminated? Roger was born and disappeared before my entrance into the family that never should have been. It took me decades to find out the whole story and not until both parents were dead. Little bits and drabs would come out but never the full story. Before I started kindergarten, once when sitting on her bed watching her get dress to go shopping, not an unpleasant sight, she mentioned the brother I never met.

“Roger was a sickly child and died before he was even your age.”

My older brother remembered Roger.

“Roger was still a baby. One day I went to school and when I came home, he was gone.”

Years later while visiting an aunt in Holland, she said Roger was born with Down Syndrome. When the parents finally died, a buddy of mine at my request got a copy of Roger’s death certificate. He died in the middle of summer of pneumonia and malnutrition. That seemed suspicious. Pneumonia in the summer? Then I realized why there had been a large air conditioner stored in the basement when I was very young. Except for that one air conditioner, which also disappeared, never in my entire life did they buy an air conditioner no matter how hot it got in New Jersey. But they had one when Roger died of pneumonia. Also, since when does a child in an upper-middle class family die of starvation?

The logical conclusion is that to avoid the burdening costs of taking care of Roger—the parents were amazingly cheap given the money that a chemical engineer was making—and for princess mother to be spared the work of caring for Roger and the public embarrassment of producing an idiot, Roger disappeared. I actually visited his grave once. The parents were too

cheap to even put a marker. All I had was the location in a cemetery and some of mother's ashes from her cremation.

"Looks like you were the lucky one Roger." I said looking down at a small patch of grass. "You escaped their lunacy. Here are some of the remains of the mother who threw you away." I poured the ashes on his grave. "Maybe in some strange way that will show you that you came out better than we did. Adios."

### Puppy Love

Third grade gave my fellow classmates and me one hot blue-eyed, blonde teacher in her early 20s. She seated us alphabetically going up and down the rows of desks. This was one time lady luck smiled on me. My desk was near the front and depending on how she sat on the desk while teaching; I had a partial view up her dress. The dresses back then were long, so no panty sightings, but for an eight year old, glimpses of a little thigh were heaven. She was also nice and considerate—unlike the mother I went home to after school.

Girls always turned me on, but in the beginning my understanding of them was limited. My earliest memory was seeing *Gentlemen Prefer Blondes* at five years old. Mother took me. In the movie Marilyn Monroe sings "Diamonds are a girl's best friend." When she sang "These rocks won't lose their shape," her hands were under the diamond necklace. By rocks, I thought she meant her boobs, and said to myself those are going to lose their shape, just give them some time. So I was confused. Confused because it wouldn't be until later in life that I realized the most important thing to girls is money, material wealth. They would sell out anybody for enough money.

In addition to our teacher, there were two student dolls in third grade—one a blonde and the other a brunette. As Mother Nature requires of boys, I hit on both of them trying to seal our imagined friendships with a kiss. They complained to our teacher.

“Roy, you can’t go around trying to kiss girls unless they want you to.”

“Well, how do you know if they want you to?” I asked.

“You just know or if unsure ask them.”

“Okay then, can I kiss you?” She laughed, but I was serious.

This newly learned guessing game resulted in my hanging out after school with another hot blue-eyed, blonde girl in our class. We’d usually go over to her house because both her parents worked, so no one was home other than her older sister. We’d play around on her parents’ bed, which was her idea. Guess there is a little Mary Shelley in even young girls. We liked each other, but then I made a mistake. One day after school, we went over to my house. Unfortunately, mother was not on the golf course as usual, so she found out who my girl friend was. A few days later, my girl friend and I were playing around on her parents’ bed when her older sister comes in and says I have a telephone call. It was mother. She had tracked me down, which wasn’t particularly hard in a town of 8000 people.

“Where have you been?” She yelled through the phone ignoring that modern day technology didn’t require the volume of her voice. “We have a political diner tonight. You should have been home hours ago.” Actually one hour ago, but I chose to keep quiet. “We better not be late because of you!”

“Okay, I’ll hope on my bike and hurry home.”

“No, we’ll pick you up.”

“Okay, let me get you the address.” Being a kid, I knew how to get to places but never bothered with addresses.

Still nasty, she said, “Don’t bother. I know where you are.”

How did she know where I was? Because she got my girl friend’s last name when we had gone to my house.

The parents arrived in their four-door Dodge, I put my bicycle in the back and got in. Mother turned around yelling, and I mean yelling.

“I don’t want you to ever see that tart again. She’s nothing but a whore. Her family is no good, what would the neighbors say if they knew you played with her? I wouldn’t have it!”

I knew what whores were, but this was a third grade girl friend. I also knew my mistake; I had taken my girl friend home and introduced her to my mother. Mother ruined that romance, but she’d never do it again. Throughout the remainder of her existence, never ever did I bring a girl friend home or introduce one to either of my parents.

My third grade teacher also made sure I could read. Mother was remiss in helping me learn because she rather spend her time playing golf. My teacher told mother that unless my reading improved to third grade standards, she would have to hold back a grade the son of the President of the Board of Education. That’s right, father was the Board President—boy he would have gone nuts. But rather than tutoring me herself—the golf course was too important—she hired one of the high school football players. He was great. He made me want to learn. My reading improved enough to meet third grade standards, but just when I was on a roll, Mother ended the tutoring. Why? To save money. Father gave her an amount to run the household, so whenever she could cut an expense, it would go into her bank account. More on that later.

Third grade for a boy—not a queer or androgyny or a girl—meant moving from Farm League baseball into Little League baseball. Back then boys didn't have to curtail their competitive instincts to keep girls and wimps from crying and the adults berating the boys for being non-PC. My athletic talents were always mediocre, but in third grade, I did come in second in the long ball throw to one of the better athletes, Adams. Didn't realize at the time that this ability would almost get me killed later in life.

### Don't Play That Song

In fourth grade, the public school introduced us to musical instruments, told us to pick one and get a parent to sign a paper okaying the school to teach us how to play. At home I asked mother for the okay, but as always, she did something purely selfish—No! She was vehement; she would not allow me to play an instrument. Didn't make sense, my older brother played the trumpet, she used to play the piano and father as a kid played the xylophone. What was her problem? But as always the Nazi loon got her way. My revenge came 60 odd years later when I took a music theory course at Julliard. Tough course but a hot millennial teacher who really knew her stuff made it a pleasure—should have done this sooner.

Still in fourth grade, during an after school basketball class, I bounced off the gym bleachers—hurt the hell out of my left wrist. The pain kept bothering me, so I asked mother to take me to the doctor. Instead, she goes downstairs into the basement, comes up with a board and taped it to my arm—not exactly state of the art medicine. That lasted for a night before I removed it. The following week at basketball class while catching a pass from another player, I collapsed on the floor in pain. The coach took me to the town doctor who found a fractured wrist and put a cast on it. It took me years to figure out why mother had refused to take me to a doctor in the first place. The answer was money. Less money spent on the kids meant more money for

mother. As with most females who were pretty when young, they pursued money for when they lost the currency of their good looks. For them money was more important than their kids. It actually paid off for mother. At the end of the parents' lives, she had more saved than her husband who had earned it all.

### Table Dancer

In the summer of 1957, the family went to Europe—father on business and the rest of us as tag-alongs. One night in Basel, Switzerland, after dinner and mother drinking too much, father and my older brother went to a nightclub. At nine years of age, I, however, was condemned to the hotel room with my middle-aged, drunken mother. For some reason, she started talking about her late teens and early twenties. Calculating the years, I put it at around 1930. She especially glowed when recounting her dancing on tables at the Astor Hotel Roof Garden—the “in” place at the time. Once, however, when drunk, she slipped and took out the table, so they threw her out. Too bad, that while hearing her story at the time, my instinct didn't warn me that at the end of the 20<sup>th</sup> century, I'd be dealing with another loon, my wife giving table dances six blocks north at Flash Dancers.

After Europe, mother and we two boys spent the last two weeks of summer where we always spent summer, at our cabin in the Catskills in a place called Beaverkill. The guys I hung out with, seven to eleven years old, used a gardening shed as a club house. The shed was on the top of a hill, surrounded by fields owned by a hot shot New York City lawyer. In the club house we smoked cigarettes stolen from our parents or older siblings and looked at skin magazines we found rummaging through garbage. At the bottom of the hill was a thick line of trees, then a road leading down to the Beaverkill River where we went swimming. One day, while standing on the rock ledges of the river, one of the gang members comes swimming furiously over, “The

club house is on fire!” We splash across to the other side of the river, race over the beach, up the road, and turn the corner. Against a pure, cloudless, azure sky, black billows of smoke rose from that lawyer’s once gardening shed. It was beautiful, but we were in trouble.

My older brother and his buddies said, “We know you guys did it. The state cops are on their way. You punks are going to jail.” We headed for the hills, which were nearby, since there were mountains all around us. When we ran out of candy bars, we surrendered to our parents. They apparently kept the state cops from bringing us up before the juvenile authorities. The fire made the local paper but the cause was not mentioned.

Our gang headed off on a new adventure after we dodged what we believed was prison and the faggots who inhabited it. We knew about queers back then and they revolted us. Most of the guys at some time or other had been approached by an adult fag trying to befriend him. Each of us usually carried a knife, so our hands instinctively moved toward the handle in case the faggot tried to get physical. Today in America, we, the young boys 7 to 11, would be chastised while the faggot would be considered a victim. What fools Americans have become. On a proportional basis, queers have destroyed the lives of more boys than heterosexuals have destroyed the lives of young girls. On the other hand, if some good looking adult babe was friendly, anyone of us would move closer in the hope of a touch or pleasant perfume. Of course, today we would be listed on the #MeToo website or given drugs.

The utility company had cleared a path up and over one of the mountains in the valley for power lines. The oldest guy in our gang suggested we hike up the “gap” as we called it. How hard can it be, “the electric company already cleared the forest?” We armed ourselves—one had a machete, me a Bowie knife, another a .22 caliber rifle, others a spear or sling shot. We started early, and while the electric company had cleared the forest, they left the cut timber to crawl over



and didn't touch the boulders that stood taller than us. It was tough going, but at the top, the view was great. We ate what lunches we brought and started down the back slope—wherever that led. After slogging along until mid-afternoon, we saw with relief some dark color through the trees that looked like a highway. But as we got closer, the highway turned into a large lake. There were summer houses on the other side of the lake, so we walked around to knock on someone's door to find out where we were. But nobody was home. There were lots of cabin, all the doors were locked, and looking through the windows they were all furnished. This place was spooky. A lake none of us had ever heard about, populated with houses on one of its shores but no people. We got out of there by way a dirt road going down the mountain. That led us to a paved road and a woman in a nearby house who gave us something to drink and told us which way back to the Beaverkill Campsite.

### Summer Songs

Our gang's adventures turned to different objects as teenagers. The campsite was the perfect breeding ground for teen girls. Families, complete with hot young daughters, would camp for a week or two than leave being replaced by others. An endless stream for the guys in our gang because we were there for the entire summer. An added benefit was that the drinking age in NY was 18, but in hill country it was post puberty. The booze was fun but not needed for the girls on vacation, since their social network at home would never hear of their unladylike activities. Their boyfriend at home would still believe he was the only one.

Sometimes teenage girls from nearby towns, such as Liberty, would camp by themselves without mommy and daddy. There was no fear of illegal aliens back then. On one such occasion at around two in the morning a buddy, Billy, and I were in a tent with two not particularly good-looking girls.

Suddenly we hear, “Billy, are you in there?” It was his mother. How did she find us? That was one of the drawbacks of the Beaverkill Campsite. There were NY State Rangers and spies everywhere watching the members of our gang due to our past propensity for trouble.

### Sharing the Love

The end of summer from 1952 to 1964 always meant returning to the small suburban town of Midland Park in New Jersey. About 8,000 people occupying a square mile of the Earth that at one time had been farms. Our town was run by a cadre of Dutchmen which included my father and the uncle of another kid my age, Blackie. He and I had met at the age of five by way of a fight we had during a church play.

The town’s oligarchs all had their own occupations while running the town’s affairs the way they saw fit. The publicly owned artisan wells supplying water to the town and other towns were sold for a pittance in order to supply a fat bribe to one or more of the petite oligarchs. Farmland was rezoned for a Levittown type of development to the financial benefit of the bosses. They even allowed a brothel in town in the guise of an inn run by some New Jersey mobster. Its benefits to them were obvious. Years later when Blackie and I discovered this, we wondered if the girls in high school whose pants we were trying to get into were selling their charms to our fathers and uncles. If there’s one thing girls are good at, it’s keeping secrets from boys.

In the late 1950s, pea shooters became the latest craze for juvenile delinquents. Hitting girls in certain parts of their bodies kept us entertained until they squealed to the teachers. So we moved out of the school yard to the real world. Hidden behind bushes along the roadways, we pummeled cars as they zoomed by. The weather was warm, so we got a few drivers who had rolled down their windows. They’d lose controlling swerving over the road and then regain it—we laughed our heads off. But then the cops snuck up behind us. We were caught before we had

the chance to run. Rather than ruining our lives by detaining us as juveniles, unlike modern day America, the cops took us home.

Making girls look stupid by bouncing peas off of their butts wasn't our only interaction with them. In sixth grade, we started having parties in which five guys and five girls were invited. No we didn't spin the bottle—we spun the girls. Each guy would take a seat with one handling the 45 rpm record player. One girl would sit on each guys lap and during the song they'd make out and fondle each other. When the song was over, the girls would rotate to the next guy. Better than the modern day lap dance, or table dance, because you could kiss and touch each other and it didn't cost the guy 20 bucks. The best position for the guy was running the record player. If he lusted after a particular girl, when she ended up on his lap, he'd raise the record holder so the song would repeat—until others who wanted a different pair of lips to kiss and body to fondle complained.

Sixth grade or earlier was about the age when boys develop this idiotic belief that girls can't take care of themselves—that they needed a boy's protection. Girls know this and exploit it, sometimes out of genuine fear but often for the satisfaction of exercising their power of manipulation over males.

Our small town had this weirdo guy living with his sister, called Squirrelly Shirley, in a big house surrounded by hedges. During the full moon, crazy Joe would stand on his front porch late at night howling at it. This made the little girls in the neighborhood so scared that they would run passed the loon's house as though the hounds of hell were chasing them. Even the older teenage girls considered him dangerous—but us guys didn't. This Larry Talbot want-to-be would also drive around town at night looking for who knows what. One night Blackie and I followed him using my mother's car. We couldn't use Blackie's car because he lived next door

to the loon and would have recognized it. Besides, the cops wouldn't stop us because they'd recognize the car as that of a councilman's wife. Father had moved up the oligarch ladder from President of the Board of Education and now oversaw the police budget on the Town Council. We'd turn off the headlights to get close to Joe, back then car owners had the freedom to do that, which allowed us to see that he was looking around for something. Probably looking to way-lay a girl, we thought. But nothing happened. Must have been the wrong night for around the same time a 13-year-old girl, last seen at 9 pm in town, was found strangled and sexually assaulted but not raped near a brook that ran through town. Was it Larry Talbot, sounded like his M.O. of going for the throat? Who knows, no one was ever convicted even though there were at least six similar murders of teenage girls in Bergen County from 1966 to 1968.

Our presumed serial killer had always been a nut case hassling his neighbors. For example, late at night, he'd intentionally shine a bright light into his neighbor's bedroom windows. Okay two can play at that. Blackie and I ran an extension cord for a really powerful spot light. We snuck up to the loon's house at night and hit the switch. The spot light burst into the living room catching his squirrely sister smack in the face—it's a raid by the Untouchables. Rat-a-tat-tat-tat, we made a machine gun noise. His sister jumped, ha, ha, ha. That put an end to the loon's Apollonian illusions.

From an early age to college age, the guys in the neighborhood didn't suffer the loon kindly. Perhaps it was out of malice or a sense of gallantry to protect the little girls from the Marquis de Sade fears or worst to which this loon would subject these budding young femme fatales. The guys would throw firecrackers, apples and water balloons at his house and taunts at him. One guy put out a number of his windows with a BB gun. When the police showed up our compatriot quickly blamed the fat kid across the street.

## Hot For Teacher

Junior high and the first couple of years of high school were largely a bore. It was just the usual teen preoccupation with rock 'n' roll and TV shows such as the Twilight Zone, Outer Limits, 77 Sunset Strip, Have Gun Will Travel and lusting after girls. Freshman year brought a new batch of kids from the neighboring town of Waldwick. The political idiot who pushed the town into building its Junior-Senior High School forgot to take into account the town's projected population of the kids who would attend it in the future. Within a handful of years, the school became too big, so the town took in students from Waldwick. Fine with me, some of those babes, such as Brachold, Certaro, Fraccola and Ferdella, easily outshone the indigenous ladies. Too bad these new girls were out of my league. I was only a minor juvenile delinquent. Got kicked-out of French class for the entire year as a freshman, but it did not help my standing with these ladies. The following year landed me in Spanish where I got kicked-out a couple of times but not for the entire year. On one occasion, the female teacher was praising the class's stellar student while referring to me as a "vegetable."

I replied, "I'd rather be vegetable than a fruit."

"Go to the principal's office, now!" She responded.

During the fall my freshman year, for some reason, I went anorexic. Drastically cut down on the food intake but can't remember why. Maybe to appeal to the tough looking ladies from Waldwick, maybe to bolster my J.D. persona or maybe the fun house mirror in the bathroom. Whatever, that piece of stupidity plagued me for the rest of my existence.

Summers were still fun up in the Catskills. Trouble was never too far away up there—but that was part of the fun. The 200-pound, one-synapse owner of the refreshment stand kicked

me off its premises for life after my verbal acuity provoked him to give me a shove. If only I had known martial arts then.

With eleventh grade, life changed thanks to a hot 22 year old English teacher, dark hair, great body, smart and who cared about her students—many of whom were brain dead like me. Susan knew I was the son of the president of the town's board of election and took it upon herself to wake me up. Her course focused on poetry and literature from the Romantic Era in which she taught us to look beyond the surface words to the underlying meaning. When we got to studying Edgar Allen Poe, someone I always liked for some reason, my unthinking, suburban middle class, ignorant view of reality began to crumble. She taught me to think and coupled with my genetic intelligence, which mother always tried to suppress, turned me into an individual who thought for himself, free of the crowd conformity running most others. Her influence didn't eliminate a proclivity for trouble, but no one was going to verbally beat me into submission ever again—physically, yes, for the time being—but not verbally or emotionally.

#### Grand Theft Auto (not the video game)

In the fall of our junior year, the son of the town's Superintendent of Schools asks if I want to help steal his older sister's car and go for a joy ride. Naturally I said yes and naturally we were both under age, with not a driver's license between us. Taking the car was easy, since he stole the keys from her purse. No need to strip the three ignition wires and start crossing them until the engine turned over as in future joy rides in stolen cars. He drove for a while and then pulled over on Goffle Road to give me a turn. My driving ability wasn't the best, since I had never driven anything beyond a go-kart before. Off we went down Goffle Road toward Midland Park. As we came over the hill, the cars in front were stopped at the railroad tracks crossing. I hit the brakes, but since the car was a stick shift, missed, and landed on the cluck. Facing

imminent collision, swung a hard left into a shopping center parking lot, careened off one car, then whizzed up the incline into the rear of another car, slamming it onto the sidewalk. We got out, looked around—no one dead or injured in the parking lot, all three cars totaled. I yelled, “Run.” He didn’t move. “Come on, let’s get the hell out of here.” He still wouldn’t move. “Look, if they ask us, we’ll just say some thieves stole the car.” Which of course was true, but we wouldn’t tell the cops that we were the thieves. He just sat down on the sidewalk. I wanted to split, but if he stayed, I knew he’d spell the beans on me, after all I was driving. So we waited for the cops—dumb. They took us to the station and released us to our fathers. We could have gotten away with it—no one carried cell phones cameras back then—but he didn’t have the metal.

That Sunday we made the local paper, although our names were withheld to protect the guilty juveniles. It was my second anonymous appearance in a newspaper. The first being the torching of that New York attorney’s gardening shed. In school on Monday, our fellow students knew we were the culprits, so my buddy Elliott nicknames me, “Wheels.” I could live with that. Some weeks later in court, the Judge put us on probation, telling us to do well in school or he’d have to review the case again. We were 16 and should have gone to reform school, but the fix was in. The Judge was not about to send us away because one was the son of the Superintendent of Schools and the other the son of the President of the Board of Education, both of whom had extensive political connections with guys like Nelson Gross. So we walked, but it did push me into doing more studying, especially in Susan’s English class.

#### Fast Times at MP High

Senior year and everyone had a driver’s license—in New Jersey the age is 17. Yes, despite my record, New Jersey gave me a driver’s license—guess the fix was in again. But I

wasn't the only one to benefit from the good-old-boy network that made society work. My pal Blackie, just couldn't seem to pass the driving part of the test. So his uncle, another political mover and shaker in our town, went to the third driving test with him. Before reaching the DMV, the uncle stopped to buy a quart of booze. At the test site, he handed the bottle to the DMV officer and Blackie passed—without even doing the driving part. Since then, Blackie has never killed or injured anyone on the roads. PC socialists complain today, but the good-old-boy network made this society function.

Some of the guys had fast cars but to prove who was the fastest required a drag race. There was a straight-away stretch of Route 17 between Waldwick and Saddle River. Route 17 was a four lane highway with two lanes going south and two lanes going north, separated by a grassy divider. The two cars that would race would each take a lane heading north. Behind them were two other cars in each lane. These two cars in the back would slow down to a crawl blocking traffic in the two lanes so the racing cars could start from a near dead stop. The motorists behind really got ticked but what were they going to do? One of the tail cars hits its horn, and the dragsters take off easily hitting over a hundred by the time they reach the finish line, the exit to Saddle River.

Besides drag racing, the driver's license was crucial because now we could travel to upstate New York where the drinking age was 18. If we didn't have a fake id, then someone in the group who was 18 would buy the booze, which we drank on the way back to a party or dance in New Jersey. Every so often, the guys would go into the City, also with a drinking age of 18, to hit the Village, a popular club or to check out a porn movie. My brother, who was in the Navy, sent me an id, which had my age at 24, when I barley looked 17. It didn't matter, I still got into places upstate and in the City. By the end of my senior year one of my female



classmates wrote in my year book, “Remember all the good times we had, but I can’t see how you can remember them.”

She was right. On one occasion, my pal Elliott challenged me to a drinking match. We got the Sliz brothers to come along to the Rainbow Lounge in Suffern to make sure we made it back home later, since we’d be too polluted to even walk. We drank shot after shot after shot until I looked to my left and Elliott was sprawled on the floor passed-out. The Sliz boys dragged him and guided me into his car, took his keys and drove us home to NJ. They dropped me off first. One of them opened the back door and helped me up the front lawn embankment to my bedroom window. I had left it open in order to sneak back into the house without the parents knowing I was drunk. Everything was going quietly, but as the Sliz boys left to take Elliott home, they started yelling and peeled out in the car, which alerted my parents. The Sliz boys always pulled these kind of antics and not always without consequences to them.

After drinking out our welcome at the Rainbow Lounge, Elliott, the Sliz boys, another classmate and I went looking for other places upstate to get served. One Saturday night outside Suffern, we pulled into the gravel parking lot of a non-descript bar. Inside, the patrons reminded me of the hillbillies who populated the bars in the Catskills during my summer vacations. A couple of summers earlier at 15, a friend and I were playing pool in a bar in Lew Beach until some local chased us out at the point of his hand gun. That time it was my mouth that got us bounced. “What did we do?” I asked, as we ran through a field to get away from pistol Pete. My friend said, “They don’t like being insulted.”

Once inside the bar outside Suffern, we were immediately asked to leave, probably because the bartender thought some of us under age. On the way out one of the Sliz boys mouths off and the hillbillies start after us. We run to the car, everybody plies in, Elliott starts it up, puts

it in gear, begins to peel out and someone idiot in the back seat yells stop while I'm sitting next to Elliott yelling at go-go-go. Apparently, Elliott, not wanting an Isadora Duncan, hits the breaks. A hillbilly reaches the car, pulls open Lee's door and slugs him in the jaw. Lee lets out a yell and we're surrounded by hillbillies—thank goodness this was before the movie Deliverance and we were all white. Lee apologizes for his verbal insults and the rednecks let us go.

We continued north somewhere up a New York way and pulled into a fancy looking, brightly lit-up club. Inside, the people were dressed up—some in tuxes and the girls in dresses with diamonds and jewelry. We got some strange looks, but they didn't seem hostile, which was a welcome change. The guys headed to the bar while I found the men's room. Inside, some girl walks in wearing a black dress with sequins. Uh-oh, I'm in the wrong bathroom, but then I look down at the urinal I'm using and conclude it's for both sexes. The girl walks over to the urinal next to me smiles, lifts her dress and starts using it. Hurrying back into the bar, one of the guys one says, "They're all queers in here. You can't tell the guys from the girls." "You can in the men's room," I said. This time we kicked ourselves out laughing.

### The Great Pumpkin

Goosey night of our senior year, the night before Halloween 1964, the Sliz boys and I were riding around with another classmate looking for pumpkins to abduct and smash. Driving up Franklin Turnpike we spotted this huge pumpkin sitting on the brightly light front stoop of a house. The front door was open, but the outside storm door, made largely of glass, was closed. This allowed the owner to keep an eye on his prized Halloween decoration from inside the house. It was clearly a trap. The owner was broadcasting, "I dare you juvenile delinquents to even try to steal my pumpkin." Not being JDs to ignore a challenge, we stopped the car in front of the house. It was a long way from the road to that Brobdingnagian pumpkin. I was ridding

shotgun at the time, so it was up to me to snatch the squash. Closing in on the target, the living room was lit with the TV, so I knew the owner was watching some show. Stealthy my arms reached around it as though it were a virgin and I took-off running for the car—damn it was heavy. One of the Sliz boys had rolled down the front door window for me to push the pumpkin through. But it won't fit—it was too big! He opened the door and I jumped in with the abduction on my lap. The car peeled-out with the usual Sliz boys derisive insults shouted at those who couldn't catch us.

We headed to Glen Avenue—a long, winding steep hill with a mailbox at the bottom as our target. Before starting our bobsleigh run, I leaned out the front door window and one of the Sliz boys outside the car gives me the pumpkin. He jumps in the back and off we go zooming down the hill. Nearing the mail box, my knee hits the door handle and the front door pops open. That left me balancing on the door with my upper body hanging out the window holding the pumpkin and my legs inside with the other Sliz holding my ankles so I don't end up where the pumpkin was going. No way was I going to abort this challenge. Here comes the mailbox, I let go the pumpkin right on time and BOOM! Sliz pulls me back inside and we speed off laughing.

### Free Speech

Fall meant deciding which college some of us seniors would try to get into. I pulled out a map of the U.S., scanned from the East coast to the West coast and said there—Berkeley. It was the farthest away from Midland Park and the parents. Could I get in, most likely. Since the Judge in the grand theft auto case warned me to do well in school—I did.

In applying for college it was necessary to have one of the guidance counselors forward a student's school records and, if requested, private evaluations to the college admission's office. Armed with the papers the counselors needed in order to send my records to Berkeley, I

approached them. Not one, not one would send my records to Berkeley. Each repeated the other, “Your grades aren’t good enough—don’t bother. We’re not going to waste the school’s time.” It didn’t make since. They had forwarded my records to schools that were a lot harder to get into than Berkeley. Why the blockade? So I ended up attending the second furthest college of my choice from Midland Park: the University of Colorado. The guidance counselors had no problem sending my records there.

There are times my own slowness and stupidity amaze me. In early 1965, Berkeley was in the forefront of the Free Speech movement on college campuses that would soon evolve into the anti-war and hippie oppositions. When I was trying to get the guidance counselors to do their job, Berkeley students were engaged in a mass act of civil disobedience. They were demanding the university administration lift the ban on political activities and acknowledge the students’ right to free speech and academic freedom. The civil disobedience did not attract me to Berkeley, it was the distance from Midland Park and my Nazi parents. My parents knew I wanted to go to Berkeley and one of them or both had decided to prevent it. They knew if they had outright forbidden it, I might do what my brother did—join the service. So, my father, at that time still the President of the Board of Education, used his political clout to have the guidance counselors prevent me from applying. Even if I had insisted they send my records, anyone of them under pressure from father could have called Berkeley’s admission office to deep six my application. Unfortunately, the realization of political interference in my life didn’t occur for decades. My buddy Blackie had worked as a high school guidance counselor, and he said that just parents, not even board of education members, had enough influence over guidance counselors to push their children in certain directions. There also ways to sabotage a kid going

to the college he wanted and for which he had the grades. That one underhanded, despicable act of the parents changed whatever destiny was mine. As if I didn't already despise them enough.

### Driver's Seat

Still in my senior year and as a result of Susan's teaching, I put together somewhat of a philosophy, or more accurately an objective in life after experiencing an epiphany—the only one I can recall. Late for class, I ran into Susan who had just parked her 1963 Chevy Corvette Stingray with buck seats and four on the floor.

“Why are you late?” She asked.

“I was just finishing up this paper for English”

“Let me look at it.” I gave her the paper that expressed the philosophy and we went into a vacant classroom where she read it over. She liked it and made a few grammar corrections.

“This is good. Why don't you sit in on my English class this year? I think you'll like it and gain some more incite from it.”

I agreed and for the rest of my senior year took two English classes—one with her and one that was a waste of time with some androgynous, narrow-minded clown.

Every once in a while, Susan would give me a ride home from school in her Stingray. Sitting in those bucket seats, every time she shifted gears, her skirt moved a little higher on her thighs. To this day, I still regret not at least trying to put a move on her. Boy was she hot.

As for girls my own age, the only regret is that too many of them said no, and as for the ones that were interested in me, it was impossible to tell until graduation. A few of girls made their interests clear in the notes they wrote in my yearbook. Good grief, why wait until high school was over to tell me. But that's the way girls function. Since guys can't read minds even though girls believe they can, guys have to take a shotgun approach by hitting on one girl after

another. This results in numerous rejections and hits to a guy's ego. For instance, my buddy Blackie was hot for one girl who sat next to him in class until the teacher pulled him aside to say the girl complained about him looking down her blouse. If true, she shouldn't have worn such revealing blouses, but she did in order to attract guys. Problem was it attracted a guy she wasn't interested in at that point in time. Such is the very basis for Feminazism and its miscarriage the #MeTooHo lunacy. Girls advertise their charms to attract guys, but when it's the wrong guy, they accuse him of sexual abuse—meaning he didn't read their minds to realize they didn't want him but the other guy. As Phyllis Schlafly pointed out, girls became feminists because they were upset that the guy they wanted to ask them to the Senior Prom didn't.

In 1965, the shotgun approach didn't end up ruining a guy's future. Eventually, he finds one that is interested in him. My date to the Senior Prom was one such young lady. Our Prom was called "Star Dust," which is from where we all came and would eventually go. My date was a smart girl who ended up marrying the football quarterback and the class's financial success. At the end of the Prom, she wrote a little poem in my program:

When the leaves of this page  
Turn yellow with age  
Don't ever forget  
I remember you yet.

Nice, I still remember her.

Little Honda

With a couple of hundred dollars, a 50 cc black and white Honda became mine. Great little bike for tooling around the suburbs but longer trips to the shore or the Catskills were tough. Nice part of those days—no helmets to constrict the experience, and because the seat was small, the girls had to hold on to you—until they got scared and told you to stop.

On one occasion after our yearbook signing party with a little drinking, I offered one of the Waldwick dolls, Connie, a ride to the next party. Since freshman year, my fortunes had improved—I owned a motorbike. She accepted, much to my surprise, and away we went with her arms around me. Okay, so her longtime boyfriend could beat up most of the guys in my class, but he wasn't around having graduated the year before. This night was looking up. We head off, being followed by some of other classmates in cars because I knew the way. Then I took the corner into the dead end street of the party a little too fast. To avoid wiping out, we went over someone's lawn and through a small hedge. "Stop!" she yelled, jumped off and into one of the cars.

As irony always has it, years later she ended up living on that dead end street where I grew up. Her house once held one of the guys in the gang I palled around with. The gang built a two story club house in his backyard, near the remnants of woods. Nearby housing developers involuntarily supplied us with our building materials. Late at night we'd sneak over to the houses being built carrying our Boys Brigade flash lights. Boys Brigade was similar to the Boy Scouts—only no queers and still no broads. Amid the skeletons of partially completed houses lit only by starlight and our flash lights we grabbed 2x4s, sheets of  $\frac{3}{4}$  inch plywood and nails. We avoided moon lit nights—too easy to get caught. The sheets of plywood were difficult to surreptitiously maneuver through the uninhabited hopes of families yet to exist. Two of us could easily handle one, but two sheets—forget it. Over multiple nights we amassed our supplies and built the club house after school and on the weekends. Not a bad job. It never collapsed and provided refuge from our parents and safe keeping for the porno we collected from garbage cans or, as with our building materials, stealing. My passenger, Connie, who bailed from my Honda, never knew the insignificant history of her future home.

The Honda gave me freedom from relying on using the parents' cars. Except for the bugs in the mouth, it was a great way to travel in the warm weather, and meet chicks at parties. Going home late on a weekend night, usually by way of Highland Avenue, took me to a stop sign before crossing Erie Avenue. The middle of Erie bulged higher than Highland. It made for a type of ramp. So well before the stop sign, I'd stop, listen, and then turn the throttle up, shift the gears for a running start to pull a little Evil Knievel going over Erie Ave. Of course, I wasn't sure whether a car was coming down Erie at the same time—but that was part of the thrill.

#### Here They Come, The Baby Boomers

Our high school yearbook, "The 1965 Parker," largely avoided the typical clichés, thanks to Adams. The opening panorama showed us trudging into school with the American flag waving in the background at half-staff. Not an accidental choice, but foresight of our future as the Viet Nam War metastasized through America. My profile on one page while in class shows me wearing a Goldwater button. A number of us set up a Goldwater for President Club not because we were reactionaries, but because we knew Johnson was lying about not going to war in Viet Nam. The draft still existed then, and as avid listeners of Dylan's songs, we knew who the "Masters of War" were going to send to die in Viet Nam.

The only other place my picture appears is the obligatory portrait. Most yearbooks just list the name and maybe a nickname or sports and club memberships. Adams, however, wrote a sentence describing a senior's character. For me, he wrote "Where good and ill, together blent, wage an undying strife." At the time I didn't get it, but after all these years, he was right.

The comments that a number of friends wrote in my yearbook seemed to express a related insight, "Don't forget the great parties—but I really don't see how you can possibly remember them! Love Lorraine."



Graduation day in June 1965 meant parties. At one, the guys who during our senior year had gathered in the boy's room before the start of school every day were again gathered. This time for farewells. All through that year, one of the guys from Waldwick would regale us every Monday morning over the girl he had fun with on the weekend. His sexual escapades amazed me and the other guys. At this "so long" party he says, "You know all those times I told you guys about the fun I had with the girls I went out with? They were all lies!" Nobody punched him, but we were all surprised. Since then, whenever a guy told me about his time with a girl, unless it was his wife, I listened politely, but never believed it. Maybe what he said was true, but it didn't matter, I always dismissed it as bragging.

A few days after graduation, I snuck up to the front of the high school to continue the tradition of painting something on it and signing "Class of 65." "May our ideals be high; Only in dreams to fly." What do you expect for a 17 year old?

With graduation, some of the guys stepped into the real world—Vietnam or Canada. Others, like me, continued the partying through summer because we were going to college. The girls, like always, didn't have a care in the world, except what color to paint their toe nails and what dress to wear to attract the beau of the moment they were after.

The parties were many in the suburban towns, down at the shore—Ocean City, Long Branch and up in the mountains—New Paltz. More than once, I ran into Adams from the long ball throw singing at a party. He wasn't in a band, but just step up to the mike and sang—he always had chutzpah.

Our class's unofficial theme song was "I Can't Get No Satisfaction." Often sang when mixed with boozed and always too loud when cursing the parties and hamburger stands. At one burger joint met a 15-year-old girl who delighted in taking daddy's Thunderbird for a spin with

me in it. We had “fun, fun, fun till her daddy [took] the T-bird away.” When he found out, she was grounded.

Towards the end of summer, Bauer, the smartest guy in our class, and I hitchhiked to Miami. Why Miami—who knows; it was his suggestion. We knew our parents would never allow us if we asked, so I told mine I’d be saying at the Bauer’s house and he told his he’d be staying at our summer cabin. We didn’t have much money, so we always bolted from hotels or restaurants. On the way, we learned that eating ice cubes, which were free in motels, superficially curbed the appetite. We both carried knives not wanting to end up the perversion treat for some sicko fags. One time, a couple of guys heading for Viet Nam let us sleep in their trailer. I told Bauer, I’d keep first watch and put my hand on the hilt of my hunting knife just in case. But I fell asleep. So we were lucky then.

Miami was nice, we snuck onto the Fontainebleau beach—everybody was white then and lots of tanned sexy blondes. Our last night in Miami, we went out our first floor window in the Surfside hotel late at night to avoid paying. Made out way at night to a shopping center with a water fountain that had walls wide enough on which to sleep. But every time I fell asleep my arm would plop into the water waking me up. On our way north, we stopped at Cape Canaveral to watch a launch but it was delayed, so we missed it. One 30 something lady gave us a ride with a small boy sleeping on her front seat. She kept looking at me in the rearview mirror saying, “I know you. I know what you’re thinking.” Maybe if I hadn’t been so tired, I would have put a move on her. In New Jersey the State Police picked us up—they had been looking for us since we left, a week ago. Here’s why. The Sliz boys had called our parents pretending to ask for us. With my parents they asked for Bauer saying, “Oh we heard Bauer was staying with you, since he’s not at home.” With Bauer’s parents they’d ask for me. “Oh we heard Roy was

staying with you, since he's not at home." Our parents got together, realized our trick and notified the State Police.

Summer 1965 was over. The Board of Education had fired Susan. The reason they gave was that she was "teaching her students to think." Typical of small town, small minded America. From birth until summer's end, I had been economically and emotionally stuck in Midland Park. My first decision of freedom had been manipulated by the parents, which set my life in a direction it never should have gone. Everyone I've met and everything that's happen in my life since then doesn't matter—they're all meaningless.

### War of the Worlds

Home for summer and work from a boring year in Colorado, my buddy Elliott came up with a great idea of sticking it to those we called the "ugly people"—narrow minded authoritarians and the generic fools living where we grew up. In the tradition of Orson Wells, he invented a process for putting together a hot air balloon made out of the same type of plastic used by dry clearness to cover clothes. Following his instructions, our group of rebels melted plastic sheets together using blow torches, used stainless steel wire to make a ring with a sterno can in the middle and attached it to one end of the balloon. A flare was hung from the sterno can with a fuse extending to a cigarette. We'd light the sterno to fill the balloon with hot air and just before launch, light the cigarette. Once in the air, the cigarette burned down to ignite the fuse that then lit the flare. All this happened at night, of course.

Lots of people in Bergen and Passaic Counties got upset, called the cops and the press. Even the Hayden Planetarium and McGuire Air Force Base started investigating. Both claimed it was not a U.F.O. but the satellite Echo I, which was 200 feet in diameter. We laughed at this attempted cover-up. Our balloons were maybe 5 feet by 7 feet. After our two week campaign of

ballooning, a growing number of people were claiming that flying saucers were here exploring earth. The Saucer and Unexplained Celestial Events Research Society said, “The objects represented something very advanced and very powerful.”

After our success in Northern New Jersey, we decided to try for the big time—New York City. When the weather report had winds blowing from west to east, we went to the foot of the Palisades across from the City and launched the balloon. Next day, we scanned the papers but no mention of U.F.O.s or flying saucers. Then we realized. New York is so lit up at night that no one would see our red light in the sky. So ended out extraterrestrial practical joke. We went back to college and Elliott’s unique quality of sticking it to the establishment died when he got married.

#### Eve of Destruction

College only turned out to be a safe haven for a handful of years. Those of us guys in college knew we were on borrowed time. The periodic news of the death of a prior classmate in Viet Nam who never made it to college or dropped-out or funk-out or ran out of money reminded us every day that the most powerful nation in the history of the world was perched waiting to send us halfway around that world to risk our lives guarding Firestone’s rubber tree plantation in the Mekong Delta, or some other U.S. business investment.

By 1967, I had had enough with studying aerospace engineering. It just didn’t seem important with my contemporaries dying in a stupid and useless war. So I turned-on, tuned-in to somewhere and dropped-out. But after dropping out of the University of Colorado, I wasn’t going to Viet Nam, instead underground with an assumed name to Goleta, California. After Susan was fired, she went to the University of Santa Barbara located in Goleta for graduate

studies, so why not visit her. No way was the female head of my draft board going to make me do to the Vietnamese what the British tried to do to us Americans.

Goleta was nice—no oil on the beaches yet, and Susan was a smart person with whom to talk. The War was out of my life temporarily, and I sat in on grad school classes, including one of Susan's. My draft board tried finding me without success, but I knew eventually I would have to return to college for another 2-S exemption. Spring 1968 brought me back to the University of Colorado and the cherished 2-S exemption. There I played center middle on its Lacrosse team and did volunteer work on Bobby Kennedy's Presidential Campaign.

Kennedy or Eugene McCarthy were the last hope within the system for the guys of my generation not to end up prematurely dead, maimed, poisoned or psychologically destroyed in Viet Nam. For the girls, as always, it was which campaign of the rival candidates they were more likely to meet a guy who would support them for the rest of their lives. On June 3, 1968, in San Diego, Kennedy spoke mainly to us guys, "What we have to offer is the world's last best hope—youth, not a time of life but a state of mind, a temper of the will, a quality of the imagination, a predominance of courage over timidity, of the appetite for adventure over the love of ease." The next day, they murdered that hope.

The pronoun "they" is correct. Years later in 1975, Al Lowenstein and Paul Schrade started an effort to re-open the Robert Kennedy assassination case in which I joined. Sirhan Sirhan was convicted in 1969 but it appeared to us that a second gunman had actually killed Kennedy. First, Sirhan carried a .22 caliber Iver Johnson handgun with eight shots, but more than eight shots were fired in the hotel's pantry. Second, famed Los Angeles coroner Thomas Noguchi's autopsy found powder burns on the senator's jacket and on his hair, indicating four shots fired at point-blank range from behind, including the fatal shot to behind his ear. Sirhan

was standing in front of Kennedy during the shooting and was not close enough to cause the powder burns. Third, a security guard also carrying a handgun was walking behind Kennedy at precisely the angle from where the shots to Kennedy's head and back were fired. He has consistently denied firing his weapon although witnesses testified he did. Police never examined the security guard's gun. Fourth, the police confiscated Sirhan's gun but screwed up the ballistics testing. A subsequent effort to retest the ballistics required a re-firing of Sirhan's gun. The problem was that by then someone had run a metal wire brush through the barrel making ballistics impossible. So subsequent investigations couldn't match any of the bullets from the wounded bystanders or Kennedy to Sirhan's gun. Fifth, Los Angeles police bullied or ignored witnesses who claimed they saw Sirhan with a dark-haired woman in a white polka-dot dress. At trial, prosecutors brought in a blonde-haired woman with a green polka-dot dress and claimed she was the mysterious woman in question. A re-examination of the assassination of Senator Kennedy was ordered by the courts but the result was the same—Sirhan remained the escape goat.

In the fall, I started at Boston University and joined S.D.S. Went to demos, helped take over buildings, had nasty arguments with college officials, helped in a Black Panther used clothing drive and lusted after Angela Davis who spoke on campus and my radical seminar professor—boy were those two babes yummy. Almost made it to the Days of Rage in Chicago, but a fellow SDSer talked me out of it. It was always the same old argument of trying to use the system to change it or go outside the system to bring it down. In hindsight, neither really made any sense. Back then the war hawks were running the show, now it's the PC-Feminazis. Both hate liberty and try to sacrifice you on the altar of their interests. As for outside the system, blowing up corporation bathrooms or townhouses just didn't seem relevant.

My main objective in Boston, however, was to beat the draft, which kept breathing down my neck. The 2-S deferment didn't last forever, but a little luck and planning did. On the planning side, I found an anti-war shrink who willingly, for an amount of money, wrote letters to keep guys like me out of the draft. The problem was that the draft boards had become suspicious of him, so I couldn't just walk in and lay the money down and walk out with an effective letter. Instead, I started seeing him once a week over more than a year. That meant, I was a legitimate patient. On the luck side, I re-injured a knee originally thrown out while playing Lacrosse at Colorado.

With the knee, I first tried an orthopedist who had been a Marine—no way was he going to help me avoid the draft. He thought I should go over there and take a few rounds for the military-industrial complex and Nixon's policy of Vietnamization. Next, lady luck stepped in with an appointment with a doctor at the University. His son was my age and facing the same predicament that all guys in our age range faced, so he wrote me a great letter for the draft board.

Spring 1970, along with my cane, which I no longer needed but the military didn't know that, we potential canon fodder, early in the morning, are sitting in a room at the draft board. A room filled the doom of morose guys my age fearing the worst. Some soldier comes in and tells us to follow him. I get up and start walking normally toward the door. One of the guys says, "You forgot your cane." I hurry back for it, and start hobbling on it to the door. The rest of the guys start laughing.

As the day wore on, my old buddy Bauer with whom I had hitchhiked to Miami was one of the potential draftees. He was now playing in a local rock 'n' roll band. When my name was called, I handed over my two letters to the officers: one stated I was unfit for the military because of a bad knee, the other that I was unfit because of a bad attitude. Midway through the

day, they finally read my letters and called me to a window. The soldier said, “You have been found unfit for military service and are free to go.”

The best words any man in my age bracket back then could hear. But now what to do. Since 1965, when I walked out of high school, to 1970, my life, like those of so many other guys, was ruled by the draft. Some just gave up and went—40 percent of those in Vietnam were drafted, some volunteered because they had no other choice, some were told by judges to join or go to jail for some minor crime, and some were gun-ho. Some even lived in a drug induced illusion day in and day out. In the Boston University dorm Myles Standish Hall, the guys in the room next to me smoke dope all day and night long. Once I asked one of the guys why. He said. “Look at what’s outside. There’s no place else to go.”

He was in part right but also wrong. True there was no place else to go in America but not the world. Even in America the place to go was not a place but a potential future time because the times were changing.

When hitchhiking from Boston back to Jersey a driver left me off at the small shopping center on Franklin Avenue just east of the Grand Union in Ridgewood. Complete with beard and shoulder length hair I stuck out my thumb for a ride to Midland Park. A housewife in her white convertible pulled out of the shopping center going my way. She looked at me with obvious distaste and disapproval and stepped on the gas to get away. Her two young daughters in the back seat, probably around 10, turned, smiled threw me a flower and flashed the peace sign. At the 1969 mobilization to stop the war, beyond the battling at the Justice Department, the sense of the 500,000 people was one that the war hawks of the older generation were in retreat while many in the new generation were moving to liberty, equality and fraternity. Even the girls



seemed to stop playing their stupid games and were willing to help in ending the lunacy of the war.

Then the Feminazis shrilly pushed their way onto the scene with a new con to replace the prior establishment. Not only should men put girls on a pedestal for romance but also for any occupation, economics, law and whatever she wanted to do regardless of her abilities. Just another special interest group wanting preferential treatment, but this one declared all girls should be treated as princesses. At Boston University, a band of Feminazis started putting small stickers around the college saying, "It's not your heart he's after." Obviously, but they failed to address the other side of the same story, "It's not you she's after, but your wallet." Fair is fair, but try telling that to any female who lives by lies and false impressions. I never bought into their ideology except for about 10 minutes when I was trying to hustle this hot looking Feminazi at Boston. What surprised me, was all the guys who bought this garbage or pretended to believe it. What once seemed as a bringing together of the two sexes for both their benefits has turned into total war for the past half a century.

After Kent State in 1970, the anti-war movement held another demo in D.C. with around 100,000 protesters. Sitting on the ground in the crowd listening to the speakers, Candice Bergen was introduced. "What the devil is that rich, spoiled broad doing here?" I thought, and stood up to take a look. There she was dressed to the hilt in her Madison Avenue mod. Then I knew the anti-war movement was dead. While some of the old SDSers were blowing up restrooms, others were co-opting their way into the establishment's panties represented by Bergen. I left and went back to Boulder, Colorado.

Started shooting coke, heroin, angel dust and anything else that dissolved in water. One of the hippies in the house where I was living was a hardcore junkie. He'd come into my room

when I was sleeping and search through the dresser drawers looking for dope. Once, after he dropped some methadone, we went to the supermarket. We're at the checkout cashier with him standing in front of me. Suddenly his body starts shaking; he was nodding. So I hit him a couple of times on the back and he straightens out. The hippie culture like the anti-war movement had gone sour.

Early that spring while walking passed the University's rugby team practicing outside the stadium, someone shouts "Hey, Den Hollander." It's my former physics professor with whom I had played Lacrosse for the University a few years earlier. His nickname was "Stick" and the president of the only motorcycle gang in Boulder and the only person I knew who could do a back flip from a standing still position. He also dated the hottest babes on campus.

"Why don't you come out for the rugby team? You always liked to hit the other guy in Lacrosse even though it wasn't allowed. With rugby, you hit the guy with the ball all the time." I thought about two seconds and said, "I'll be here tomorrow." No way I could keep shooting heroin and play rugby, so goodbye junk. The team did fairly well, we made it into the semi-finals with me playing flanker. At Colorado, the flankers did not switch between blindside and openside, but stayed on the same side of the field throughout a half. My coach once told me, "Den Hollander if you were 20 pounds heavier, you'd be the best flanker I ever saw." That was a great compliment and touched on a quality and a problem throughout my life. My quickness, innate anger and reckless abandon gave me the temperament of good flanker, but my 160 pounds made it difficult to keep a scrum from spinning. At season's end, I went back East.

#### Centerfold

A friend had just graduated from Georgetown and wanted to hitchhike to San Francisco. The city had just started allowing bottomless go-go girls in North Beach. We used to frequent

the topless joints in D.C. when he was in college. Sometimes the girls would come over and sit with us just to talk, since we were obviously college guys and poor. They didn't even bother conning us for a drink or meal even though they were also college girls and poor. Hitting clubs in North Beach where the girls wore no g-strings at all sounded inviting.

Once on our sojourn, a hot, young and obviously rich girl in a red sports car stopped. She said, "I can only take one of you because as you can see my car won't fit you both. So you guys decide which one." Personally, I thought she was just exercising her power as a hot babe to see whether one of us would give up the other. If that happened, she would just speed off laughing. Girls are tricky like that, but it didn't work. We both declined to leave the other, and off she sped.

Somewhere in Missouri, three hippie guys in a van pick us up. Two were our age and one looked like he was still in high school. They were going to San Francisco, so no more hitchhiking. They only had one cassette, however, the Rolling Stones album "Sticky Fingers." By San Francisco, we knew all the lyrics by heart. In Kansas, we pulled into a campsite for the night. The night sky was packed full of stars searching across flat Kansas. More than I ever saw up in New York State. It was just beautiful lying out there under them. In Colorado, the cops busted us and others sleeping in a camping ground. It turned out there was a missing persons report on the high school kid, so we sat in the police station while the cops notified his parents. All the while, I kept hoping the cops didn't search us. Hitchhiking across America with long hair in the time of Easy Rider wasn't exactly safe. So I carried a loaded semi-auto .25 caliber pistol. At least I'd take one or two red-necks with me. The cops never did search us and the kid's parents allowed him to continue to San Francisco, so they released us. In Utah, while cruising by the Bonneville Salt Flats where racers set land speed records, I half mockingly said

to the driver, “Hey, why don’t you turn off and see how fast this thing can go on the flats?” To my surprise he did and we were immediately stuck in porous salt and mud. It must have rained the night before. He tried driving out, no good. We pushed and pushed, no good. We tried flagging down help, no good. The few cars on the highway just whizzed by. Were we to die in this god-forsaken desert lorded over by the Mormons? We finally started thinking civil engineering and put some cardboard and rocks under the tires for the back wheels to grip. With a few more heave-hos, the van was free and we were free to live until another stupid deed.

In San Francisco, my buddy got the two of us a room at some Jesuit seminary, since he had graduated their college, Georgetown. He couldn’t get the van guys in, so they went their own way. The next day, the two of us hit a trendy downtown bar where a friendly older bartender lady entertained us with stories and dancing behind the bar. At night we went to North Beach, stopped in a few topless-bottomless clubs to which I remarked, “These aren’t centerfolds. They looked like the tired, old strippers from the Village.”

#### Meet Me in St. Louis, Louis

We headed back East. I stopped off in St. Louis for the rest of the summer and my buddy continued home to New Jersey. St. Louis was great. I ended up crashing with an old buddy from Colorado who had a cracker, a black guy—naturally called Rap, and a pregnant girl for roommates in a large apartment. None of the guys were the father. All summer long, she couldn’t decide what to do when the baby was born: keep it or give it up for adoption, murdering it through abortion was not an option for her as it is with so many self-centered females. We were living in Clayton on Southwood Avenue, right next to Forest Park. Forest Park had been the site of the 1904 St. Louis World’s Fair. Across from the park on the northern

side along Lindell Boulevard was a row of mansions built in the late 1800s by the city's millionaires—beautiful houses.

My old college buddy had a younger brother who hung out with a crowd that played softball a few nights a week at John Burroughs prep school in Ladue, a few miles down the road. Ladue was the wealthy suburb of St. Louis. The softball games included a bunch of friendly people, some still in high school, some older than me, such a teacher and another married lady, and a guy who had actually tried out for a pro football team. The group started calling me “Ace” for a reason that escapes me, but unlike my Eastern pals at the time, it wasn't derogatory. When I bought a 54 Chevy pickup truck to get to the games, the DMV required me to put my name and address on the door, so I used “Ace.” Sometimes a car with babes would ride by with a couple leaning out the window, “Hey Ace, hey Ace.” Why were the girls out here so friendly compared to the East Coast?

My buddy from Colorado worked in the public health department and was friends with a married couple who were both doctors. Their sons who played in the softball games had a band and the doctors invited my buddy and me over for dinner. The doctors also had a five-year-old platinum-blonde beauty whom you knew was going to break a lot of hearts. Sarah focused on me and said she wanted me to come over the next day and play dolls. From her older brothers, I got the distinct impression Sarah got what she wanted.

After dinner, Sarah's mother said, “You know she expects you to be here tomorrow.”

“You're kidding,” I answered. “Won't she just forget?”

“Not her and be ready to play dolls,” she smiled.

“Do girls really pursue guys at that young age?”

Her mother laughed, “Of course they do. It's genetic.”

Baby sitting was something I had never done and playing dolls was something that never even crossed my mind.

The next day was largely spent playing dolls with a five-year-old doll, which quickly evolved into a friendship, or from her view something more? I took her to some of the softball games where I put her into the care of one of the high school girls with instructions to avoid any brain washing. Also took her swimming in my 14 year-old-girl friend's pool. One time, my girl friend and I were sitting on the edge of the pool dangling our legs in the water when Sarah, held afloat by an inflated tube, paddles over. She looks at my thigh, runs her hand across it as though she's a grown woman, then turns back to being a five-year-old and paddles away. My girl friend and I just look at each other in amazement. Playing dolls and taking Sarah to the softball games and swimming was the closest I ever got to being a parent.

As the softball games continued, one guy and I fell into a home run derby contest, but can't remember who won by summer's end. At least half the players were girls, so reflecting the lunacy of the times they wanted a game of guys versus girls. Us guys said sure, and to make it competitive, we won't use gloves and would bat our opposite ways. Gee, guess who won. As the slaughter progressed, some of the girls got so mad that when they were thrown out at first base, they'd give me, the first baseman, an elbow as they ran by. Somewhere deep down, girls really disliked guys.

My summer of softball, friends and Sarah sitting ended too soon. I thought of settling there, finishing college at Washington University, which was a few blocks away, but went back East to attend Columbia's School of General Studies. Most likely a mistake, but once again, had it not been for parental interference with my college education, it never would have happened. Therefore, in the end, as with everything else, it was meaningless

## Derry

Columbia didn't pan out, so looking for something worthwhile to do, I went to Northern Ireland to see if the I.R.A. would take me. Really dumb, thinking the I.R.A. would allow a Dutchman to join. My interest in them started in the summer of 1969 when working in England. The British papers were filled with the "Troubles." England had done to Ireland what it had tried to do to America.

Starting in the 1600s, England created a colony in the northern part of the island country run by Protestants imported from England to keep the Catholics under the boot-heel of the British. The southern part won its independence in 1921 but the north remained tied to England. In the late 1960s, the Catholics in the North began protesting the system wide violation of their civil rights by the ruling Protestants. Conflicts between Catholic youths and the Protestant police resulted in riots and the deployment of British Troops. The Brits sided with the Protestants, so the Catholics created their own paramilitary force the I.R.A. and the Protestants did the same with the U.V.F.

At Heathrow Airport, the British Customs agent gave me a strange look on seeing my ticket to Belfast and asked me my business there. "Just a Christmas vacation," I said and boarded my flight.

Stepping off the plane in Belfast, there were none of the usual waving folks waiting for family and friends, just armor vehicles and British troops carrying assault rifles. This territory was clearly occupied. After finding a bed and breakfast, I heard some explosions, and in the words of a high school pal, set off to find the action. By the time I arrived, the Royal Ulster Constabulary and fire brigade had the area cordon off. It was an explosion at some protestant shop likely set by the I.R.A. Surprisingly, no one was hurt. The next day, I took a train the

Derry. Met an Irish Catholic girl who was upset over the violence. She didn't care about the Brits violating her rights but about a friend who had just been maimed in an explosion.

In Derry, I ran into an American from the Bronx working for the Irish Northern Aid Committee. Us Americans stood out in that place—must have been the accent. He filled me in on some of the history of Ireland's problems with the British and even confided that he was there to deliver money to the I.R.A. collected in the States. I told him I was interested in joining. He looked surprised but agreed to run it by his contacts at the Bogside Inn.

“Take me with you,” I asked.

“No that would be too dangerous for me,” he replied.

While waiting for word from the Bogside Inn, during the night I'd usually walk around the Bogside, which was nearly pitched-black with British check points on its perimeter. The soldiers didn't dare go into the Bogside because the I.R.A. controlled it. Nearing a check point, the Brits would yell, “Halt!” To which I'd respond with some neutral remark. The moment they heard my accent, they knew I was American.

“Are you lost?”

“No, just taking a walk.”

“This is a dangerous place to walk. You may not make it to the end.”

“Thanks for the warning.” But I didn't care.

One day, explosions started going off, and just like in Belfast, I followed the sounds to the action. A group of Catholic guys my age and younger were throwing rocks at British troops in the Creggan Estates. The youths were situated on the side of a road that bounded a soccer field with a house between them and the Brits a short way down the road. On the other side of the road were a row of townhouses. The Brits would fire rubber bullets now and then whenever



someone stepped out from behind the house. Those rubber bullets were a joke. They were easier to dodge than an opposing rugby player. Why'd they even bother?

The Irish youths, as most European guys, can't throw worth a damn. That's understandable; they grew up with soccer not baseball. So, I started giving them a crash course in the long ball throw. After all, I came in second to Adams back when we were kids. Then one guy pulls out a small bomb with a really short fuse and tries to launch it over the house between us and the Brits. He throws a curve instead and blows out the second story window in a row house on the other side of the road. The lady occupant opens her front door and smiles at the group.

Resuming my long ball throw with rocks over the house we were using for cover, I became curious as to the precision of my aim. Stepping out from behind the house and standing a couple of feet away from the metal pole of a street light, I hear a rapid ding, ding, ding. Then I hear the gun fire, hit the ground, roll over the embankment and see the other guys huddled against it in fear. Bullets travel faster than sound. Realizing the Brits were out to kill, the riot was over and everybody dispersed. The British Government had always claimed its troops kept their assault rifles on single shot, but the guy shooting at me had his on automatic and still missed. No wonder they lost the war against America. All in all, it was the best day of my life.

The following day, the Northern Aid Committee guy said his contacts thought me a C.I.A. agent. So back to the U.S. Two weeks later, Bloody Sunday occurred when British Troops started killing youths who were throwing rocks at them. The youths were unable to hit the soldiers, but that didn't matter to the Brits. Looked like I missed my big chance—I could've hit those murderers.

Back in the U.S.S.A., I enrolled again at Columbia, started working in its library to support myself, found a room off-campus and played rugby for the College team during the spring of 1972.

My brother hit hard than that.

One Friday, bored with nothing going on that weekend, my pony tail and I hitchhiked down to Philadelphia to see the friend with whom I had gone to California who was working there. While waiting in the lobby of his hotel in Philly, Joe Frazier walks by with his entourage. Frazier was huge, glad he didn't play rugby.

My friend shows up with his co-workers and we all go out drinking. When the bar closes, one of my friend's co-workers gets in a fight with another drunk in the bar's parking lot. Mayor Frank Rizzo's police force shows up and starts putting not only the fighters but my buddy and his other co-everyone into the paddy wagon. I in my pony tail try to intercede asking, "Why are you arresting them? They weren't fighting?"

The cop belligerently says "You're under arrest too, get in."

In I go, sit down and reply, "You wouldn't be so tough without that tin star on your chest."

Not exactly original, but enough for the cop to blow up. He jumps in the wagon and tries to slug me, but misses, hits the steel wall of the wagon instead at which point I pin his arms to keep the pig from trying again. The other cops pull him out of the wagon with him hitting the back of his head on the top frame of the door. Looked like a win for me.

At the precinct, when we exited the paddy wagon, some cop asked, "Who's the tough guy?" To which I naturally replied, "I am." Pow! He punches me in the stomach—typical pig cheap shot and hand cuffs me behind my back. My friend and his co-workers are taken into the

stationhouse while the precinct pigs gathered into two lines, a gauntlet, through which one pig pushes me. They punched and kicked me to which I almost mouthed off “My older brother used to hit harder than that when we were kids!” But considering my situation, I chose discretion as the better course.

Inside the precinct, they handcuff me to metal bench in a locked cell. Guess they thought they had captured John Dillinger.

When they finally processed me, I told them I wanted to go to the hospital. It likely had a better environment than the precinct. On the way to the hospital and back again, my cowardly escorts punched and kicked me the way girls do when someone can't strike back and with about as much force. These were the famed, tough Rizzo pigs. They couldn't defeat a Girl Scout troop.

They locked me in the drunk-tank that was nearly packed. No one bothered me, must have been the brushes on my face from the gauntlet. Most my time was spent reading the book on Ireland's battles with the Brit that I had brought along to Philly. It had been recommended by the guy from the Irish Northern Aid Committee. Next day, they locked us all in cells. At one moment, someone in another cell started singing “Yesterday.” I laughed. The interesting part of being entombed in concrete and steel was that when you close your eyes, you can see fields of grass and trees. Monday morning, the court charged me with assaulting a cop and resisting arrest. My buddy showed and bailed me out.

The pig's case came to trial just after Thanksgiving, which was dismissed thanks to an A.C.L.U. lawyer. The F.B.I., however, investigated the violation of my civil rights, which was added along with many others to a lawsuit brought by the Department of Justice against Mayor Rizzo and various police officials for committing and condoning “widespread and sever” acts of

police brutality. As is usual with American injustice against the establishment, the case went nowhere.

#### Four More Years

Walking down Broadway, bored with my life, I stop at a table set by the local reform democratic club, Riverside Democrats. The club was looking for volunteers to register people to vote called "First Vote" and help on the McGovern presidential campaign and Bella Abzug's congressional campaign. Count me in and I signed up. S.D.S. was dead, other than the guys blowing up bathrooms, so reform democratic politics was the remaining opposition to the never ending War. Sure, I had beaten the draft, but I was ticked at that War and the government pushing me around for five years.

The Riverside Club assigned me to doing canvassing during the summer in some of the more dangerous parts of its district. That didn't bother me. They were nothing compared to the Bogside. In the fall, the Club made Frank, an aide to State Senator Sidney von Luther, and me the co-chairmen for its McGovern, Abzug and other 1972 campaigns. Frank was also a former S.D.S.er who helped shut down Columbia with Mark Rudd in 1968 and also acted as Rudd's bodyguard. He brought his roommates into the campaign who were in their last year at Columbia. One a student body senator who led a student strike at Columbia after Rudd and knew how to box. The other, an English major who could knuckle your head before you could count to four.

Our only opposition wasn't Nixon's dirty trick boys. They didn't bother with our area because it usually voted for the Democrats. Our opponents came from the downtown McGovern headquarters run by Dickie Morris. He cut a deal with conservative democrats in the Club to try and push aside our operations, but they were too slow and too dumb. The keys to the vote in the

area and volunteers were Columbia Students. Morris's reactionary underlings focused on old line democrats as well as the fat, lazy and local political leftovers from McCarthy's campaign, such as Jerry Nadler.

Frank and I ramped up the canvassing and started enlisting volunteers from Columbia at the beginning of the fall term. Thanks to a couple of high school girls, we also had an in at the local schools for volunteers. On Election Day we had all the polls covered, the phones were buzzing pulling out the vote, volunteers were knocking on doors reminding people to vote and anyone needing a ride or escort to vote got it.

Morris had funded a store front for his bought-off workers and his chief lackey actually came now to the club on Election Day with a bull horn to try and get our volunteers up to his empty store front. The Columbia student senator grabbed the bull horn and kicked him out. On the lackey's way back to his storefront, we had a surprise for him. The student senator had a twin brother in Boston whom no one knew about. He came down to help us out, so we put him in Morris' storefront to send what volunteers might show there down to us at the Club. When Morris' lackey made it back to his storefront—there was the student senator doing to his volunteers what he had tried to do with ours. He was dumbfounded. How could one guy be in two places at once? At the end of the day, the two twins appeared together outside the store front. Morris's lackey realized the trick and we laughed at him.

The Club won its area 4 to 1 for McGovern, but, except for Massachusetts, the entire country had chosen four more years, which thanks to a couple of reporters and various impeachment movements ended up being only two more years.

Us former S.D.S.ers and the organization we built took over the Riverside Democrat Club at its annual directors and officers election in 1973. We didn't win everything but enough to

exercise control with a few allies. Our big mistake, however, was electing a 22-year-old President. At the time, he was dying of cancer, but the sleaze didn't tell anyone. We felt like McGovern with Eagleton when we found out. Our political clout in the Club and the New Democratic Coalition, which was trying to replace the old line regular democrats from Tammany Hall, lasted through 1974.

In 1973 the Watergate Scandal broke, so our group of now bourgeois reformers, perhaps a little full of ourselves, worked at mobilizing public pressure on Congress to impeach Nixon. We set up the Committee For A 1974 Presidential Election that held forums and debates, won the support of local Congressmen and other government officials, which wasn't hard since Manhattan had supported McGovern, and lobbied the press. Nixon was eventually impeached, maybe we helped a little, maybe not, but it was worth the effort and fun.

The political battle in Manhattan was between us reformers and the regulars of Tammany Hall. One of the battlegrounds was election districts. The Board of Elections drew geographical boundaries for each election district, which usually comprised a block or two. Each district had a minimum of two and a maximum of four Democrat committeemen. The Republicans also had their committeemen, but being Republican in Manhattan usually meant little or no power because there were so many registered Democrats.

The power of committeemen was to select Democrat candidates to fill some vacancies and determine the rules by which the Manhattan Democrat party operated. Victor Kovner, a reform Democrat, political power broker and lawyer, enlisted our group to floor manage the 1974 New York County Committee Meeting. He wanted us to keep tract of the chances to (1) change an old Tammany Hall rule and (2) add a reform rule. The Tammany Hall rule prevented anyone from running for Civil or Supreme Court judgeship unless a district leader okayed it.

The rule the reformers wanted to add was that anyone running for either judgeship on the Democrat line had to be approved by a screening panel. We set up a system of polling the 1,770 committeemen. As the meeting progressed, our polling showed that the screening panel would pass easily while changing the limitation on district leader appointments was a toss up. Kovner decided to sacrifice both in return for some undisclosed deal he had cut with Tammany Hall. This would not be the last time Kovner knifed me and my allies in the back. Eventually, however, I had somewhat of a last laugh.

Our budding young machine of reformed SDSers began to wane. We backed a loser for NYC Comptroller and the Columbia student senator, who was the core of our group, went back to Boston to attend law school and eventually run unsuccessfully for State Senate in Massachusetts. Never understood why he left NYC for Boston.

#### Talking Union

My job at Columbia University was in main circulation at Butler Library. The jobs in the University's libraries were unionized. Each department in a library had a union delegate. When our delegate left, he endorsed me as his successor and the other employees agreed. As union delegate, I still held my job, stacking and checking out books, but also represented other employees in our department in grievance proceedings with management.

Local 1199 of the Drug and Hospital Workers Union was our union. It represented 500 workers in the libraries, the central mail room, the Computer Center, the Controller's Office, the School of Social Work, and the cafeterias. 1199's contract with Columbia ended June 30, 1973. During the spring and into the summer, the officers from the union downtown and us delegates negotiated with Columbia for a new contract. We wanted a 9% raise, Columbia was offering us

2%, but was willing to significantly increase its pension contributions, which the downtown union kept pressing us delegates to accept in return for a minimal increase in salary.

The four delegates at Butler Library, including me, couldn't understand why the downtown union was willing to sacrifice a salary increase for increased pension funding. Then one of our spies in the office of the Vice President for Personnel at Columbia told us that the union had earlier in the year agreed to push the delegates into a low increase in salary in return for more pension funding. Since the pension funding was paid into the union downtown, it could invest the money as it saw fit. Sounded to us like the Teamsters' pension fund corruption for which James Hoffa and his buddies were convicted.

Our own union was trying to trick us, pushing us into something that benefited it but not the workers. This really ticked me off, so I convinced the other delegates to go for a strike that demanded higher salaries. Simultaneously, I contacted one of older guys at the Riverside Club who had connections with the Transport Workers Union, Local 241. It represented the buildings and grounds workers. With them walking out in support of our strike, it would cripple the University.

On Monday, September 10, 1973, at the beginning of the fall term, we struck. The downtown union tried to stop us, but we had exposed its under-the-table dealings with the University. They had no choice but to go along.

Columbia's Vice President for Personnel, Donald Miller, nicknamed Uncle Donald (he was allegedly black), arrogantly proclaimed that a strike by 500 clerical workers could not shut down the University. He was right, but other cooperating unions, student groups and professors proved his hubris misplaced. With their help, the strike spread chaos across Columbia.



The Transport Workers Union walked out with us for a couple of days until the courts ordered its members back to work. Our political organization from the McGovern campaign had a student group on campus that enlisted other groups to go into the libraries during the strike to take books off the shelves, check lots of books out and return them the next day. The libraries non-union administrators tried vainly to keep the libraries on campus functioning, but had to reduce the hours under the onslaught. The School of Social Work closed, garbage began to pile up, the Central mailroom boarded on chaos, the cafeterias shutdown completely, 50% of security guards did not report to work, elevators broke down and were not repaired, the lack of maids and janitors was rapidly turning the dormitories into health hazards, truck drivers who usually delivered packages to the University refused to cross the picket lines.

Uncle Donald, kept saying the University was “operating smoothly.” So on Thursday, September 13<sup>th</sup>, we took over his office along with the rest of Dodge Hall. We piled into Miller’s office, but he was at his usual two-hour lunch maintaining his corpulent physique. When he returned, he tried to stare down us strikers in an effort of intimidation, so we announced that his office was now our new strike headquarters. Miller remained in his office doing nothing but complaining about us sprawling on his expensive furniture until his work-day ended, at 5 pm of course. So where was Miller’s “smoothly functioning” University now? With Miller gone, we absconded with the personnel files of Columbia’s 4500 non-union workers and turned them over to an honest union, District 65, to use for organizing them. Columbia had refused to provide District 65 with the information, making its organizing of Columbia’s non-union workers nearly impossible. The purpose of the takeover was to pressure Columbia back to the negotiating table or agree to a federal mediator. The next day, Columbia agreed to federal mediation and we left Miller to his now slightly less expensive furniture.

By Saturday, Columbia agreed to a 6.5% pay raise, which we accepted. We should have held out for more. By December, I was fired with the approval of the downtown union.

One side note, during the takeover the Columbia Tenants Union boss, Bruce Bailey, 6' 4", 250 lbs., showed up trying to cash in on our uprising. I told the union rep from downtown that Bailey was bad news—out for power and money through physical intimidation. Years later, Bailey's strong-arm tactics backfired. His head, absent its body, was found in a garbage can—I laughed.

### Going Uptown

Frank, my co-chairman for Riverside's McGovern and Abzug campaigns, got both of us legislative aide's jobs in Albany for State Senator Sidney von Luther. Von Luther represented Harlem and the Upper West Side. Sidney had been active in civil rights and, ironically for me, Local 1199 before being elected State Senator. During King's march on Washington speech, there's a guy standing just behind him and to the right wearing a union hat that I always thought was Sidney.

In Albany, state legislators were treated like nobility. Lobbyists provided free dinners, booze and favors. The locals, especially the young babes, were compliant—guess they wanted out of rural New York. Even though Albany was a city, it had the rural mentality of a province.

One of the heroes of upstate New York at the time was O.J. Simpson, who ran for the Buffalo Bills. He was the first running back to rush for more than 2,000 yards in a single season, which was 1973. The State Senate passed a resolution honoring Simpson for his accomplishment.

Another hero, heroine or whatever of the counter culture in the City was Andy Warhol's movie and theatre superstar and the muse for the Velvet Underground—Candy Darling. Candy

had recently died of cancer. At her funeral Julie Newmar read the eulogy and Gloria Swanson saluted her coffin. Hmm, I thought, Sidney was facing a tough Democratic primary in September. There were plenty of Warhol fans, queers and transvestites, like Candy, on the Upper West Side. Why not pander for their votes by having the Senate honor Candy. After all, Simpson was an entertainer as was Candy. So, I sent a request for a resolution with some notes not mentioning her real sex and a picture of Candy. By her picture, if you didn't know she was a guy, you could never tell. The drafting office was not fooled; they knew who she was. That didn't matter, however, if von Luther wanted to introduce a resolution honoring her. The Senate would never pass it, but boy the publicity over the fight would win every pervert vote in his district—and there were plenty of those. I made my argument, but Sidney axed the idea.

Sidney's opponent in the Democratic Primary was not just one candidate but the political machine of Percy Sutton and Clarence Jones, publisher of *The New York Amsterdam News*. Those supporting Sidney were guys like Pete Seeger who held a campaign fundraiser on the Sloop Clearwater. Seeger was really a classy guy.

Sutton was the long time Manhattan Borough President and lawyer for Malcolm X while Jones was a former advisor and speech writer for Martin Luther King. The Sutton-Jones machine wanted Sidney to use his position as State Senator and member of the Harlem Urban Development Corporation (“HUDC”) to help them land \$30 million in contracts to develop the eastern part of the Harlem State Office Building site on 125<sup>th</sup> Street. The money for the development and, of course, lucrative profits for the developers of that two and a half acre site would come from state taxpayers by way of the HUDC. Sidney not only refused, but made such a stink that HUDC put off its decision citing the need for further study. So Sutton-Jones

financed and ran Carl McCall, an alleged reverend, against Sidney. McCall came to be known in politics as “Cash” McCall. Frank was the one who came up with the name.

While Frank and others handled the campaigning, I worked with a former English Professor on the negative research into the Sutton-Jones-McCall trinity. The Professor was experienced at digging up dirt on politicians and getting it published in the media. The trinity never built anything, so they set up paper companies with no assets as fronts to obtain the development contracts. One of the future buildings would house Sutton’s radio station WBLS-FM and WLIB-AM. The investigative reporter Steven Bauman at Metromedia TV News (Channel 5) did a series of reports on the Sutton-Jones-McCall scheme and Nicholas Pileggi did an article in New York Magazine titled “Guess Who’s Coming to Gracie Mansion.” Sutton always wanted to become mayor of the City, but this story put an end to that. During one of Steve’s patented ambush interviews, Sutton threatened to get him—clearly a compliment for Steve. Naturally, it was the usual empty politician threat. The muckraking delayed that Haarlem gang obtaining any contracts, but after the election, which McCall won, the trinity was awarded the contracts.

### Medium Cool

Sidney’s term in office lasted until December 1974 and so did my regular pay check, but what to do next. The Professor had a good relationship with Steve Bauman who knew me from the Sutton story, so Channel 5 hired me part time to do research.

The first story was a special Steve put together on the City’s dire financial straits that compared NYC to credit worthy Chicago. Steve had me doing research such as wading through the City’s capital and expense budgets for which I got a credit when the special aired. So somewhere in outer space, electromagnetic waves carrying my name with Judy Garland singing

“Chicago” were whizzing at the speed of light into eternity. Nice feeling being commingled with her for all time. More importantly, however, I learned about TV news production.

The next story was working with the Professor to figure out who was burning the South Bronx. The reason was simple—money. But exactly how the scheme worked and who was involved was complicated.

The South Bronx went from being two-thirds white in 1950 to being two-thirds black or Puerto Rican in 1960. Over the next 10 years, it turned into a poverty-ridden area with high crime rates, lousy public schools and Robert Moses’ construction of the Cross-Bronx Expressway that destroyed neighborhoods such as East Tremont. The middle and working classes abandoned their rental apartments for houses and mortgages in suburbia causing apartment buildings to decline in value. Then arson broke out like a plague, sometimes seven large fires a night. Out of 474 buildings, 312 were set ablaze. The politicians, such as Bronx District Attorney Mario Merola, blamed the arson on tenants. “Right,” said our news director, Mark Monsky, “You’re going to burn yourself out of the only home you have. No f\*\*king way.”

Monsky sent the Professor and me to the Registry of Deeds in the Bronx to examine the real estate transactions of the torched buildings. All hot-summer long we spent in the records department. The only break was every so often going out with the Fire Marshals to check on a torched apartment building.

The Marshals said, “The arsonists start a fire on the top floor because for the firemen to get at the blaze; they have to go through the roof. Once the roof is gone, the tenants move out because whenever it rains the water pours through the open roof into their apartments, if they haven’t already been ruined by the water used to put out the fire. With all the tenants out, the

plumbing, copper wiring and anything else of value is stripped. Then the building is torched again to hide the thievery.”

Walking through the torched buildings in a part of America was eerie. They must have resembled Dresden after Churchill’s fire bombing. Amid the smell of smoke and stagnant water, one fire marshal told me, “Don’t go wandering off. You never know what whacko you may run into.” I stayed close to him and his gun.

By summer’s end, we had figured out the arson scheme. Legitimate landlords would sell their buildings to organized crime who got a deal, but the landlords also got back some of their investment and out of Dresden. Organized crime would sell the buildings back and forth among dummy corporations. The sales were on paper only, no money exchanged hands other than the small amount of taxes and fee to register the sales. Each phony sale drove up the value of a building. Then organized crime insured the overvalued building about to be torched. Once torched and the insurance collected, organized crime abandoned the building leaving the City to pay for demolishing it.

What had us stumped for a while was why would an insurance company fall for such a scheme. So we contacted a few and it turned out they wouldn’t because none of the private insurance companies would write any property policies in the South Bronx—too risky. A contact at one company, however, said, “The state had set up a pool to fill in the gap of insurers in the South Bronx. If an insurance company wanted to do business in New York, it would have to contribute to the pool. The pool was in turn required to insure tenements in the South Bronx. Because all the insurance companies were contributing to the pool, anyone company’s losses were relatively small.” Any loses were tax write-offs.

We interviewed the head of the state insurance pool. He knew what was going on, but the pool was required under the law to insure the buildings. In 1974, it lost \$10 million on Bronx fires. The obvious question was did organized crime use its political influence to get the New York State officials to set up the pool so it could be fleeced? Obviously yes, but we were never able to find two sources to say so. Back then you needed at least two undisclosed sources, and they had to be independent of each other. None of this Deputy Attorney General Rosenstein trickery of Christopher Steele says X and tells Yahoo News X, which prints X: therefore, there are two independent sources. So the rest of the South Bronx went up in flames.

One side story of Bronx corruption was that DA Merola never bothered to try an indicted arsonist for torching a building on Washington Avenue. Probably because a trial might start to publicly unravel the onion. Merola told Steve he couldn't try the guy because there was no evidence of arson—meaning no fire marshal's report. We checked with the fire marshals who told us the report had been lost—fat chance, but it kept the story from airing. Sometime later, John Miller found out through one of his sources that the report had never been lost and was still in the files, but the news had moved on to other stories. The arson conviction rate at the time was 1%--gee, I wonder why.

Forty years later, I went back to the South Bronx with Mark to a salsa club. The place now looked like suburbia—no more Dresden. Once the South Bronx was leveled, the politicians set up community planning groups, which employed many of their supporters. The groups obtained taxpayer funds under New York urban renewal programs and the federal Housing and Community Development Act. These community planning groups bought real estate, created plans for development, determined who would rebuild the Bronx and funneled government subsidies to landlords for renting to the proletariat. Given organized crime's involvement with

the construction trades—it made out just fine, as did the politicians who received appreciative contributions from developers and the construction industry. Money to burn it down—money to rebuild it.

Another story of corruption, which I researched for Gabe Pressman, exposed the Nassau Republican party extorting kickbacks of one percent of salaries from Nassau County and Hempstead Town employees. The scheme was simple: you want the job, you want a raise—pay up. The Republican Party actually gave receipts to those who paid the 1% kickback. Even after employees paid up, many were still obliged to serve as serf labor for setting up Republican events. Even Russia did away with serfdom in 1861.

The Republican Party controlled the government of Nassau County and most of the towns in Nassau. The heart of its power and money was the Town of Hempstead the largest in the county. The Party also received kickbacks from construction companies in return for lucrative contracts paid for with taxpayer money. At the time, Hempstead was the highest taxed town per capita in the nation. The Republican Party bosses were Joseph M. Margiotta, Chairman of the Nassau Republicans, and Francis T. Purcell, Supervisor of Hempstead.

Some of the extorted monies helped finance the elections of Republican judges. Who says you have to respect a judge? The Republicans were so cheap that they even issued press passes to political officials who were not reporters with the passes stating the person worked for the New York Times. This way the fake reporter could use the parks and beaches for free. This place was looking more corrupt than the county I grew up in—Bergen County, N.J., where towns were also run by Republicans, such as my father. The U.S. Attorney for the Eastern District, David Trager impaneled a grand jury to investigate the Republican Party's corruption. Years later, Trager did me a big favor as my law school adviser. He was one decent and honest man.



A number of the county and town officials were indicted the following year, 1976, and Margiotta was subsequently convicted for shaking down kickbacks from insurance agencies doing business with the county and towns. A few Nassau County employees also brought a class action lawsuit in federal court and eventually won in 1985. Looked like the news media actually had some power.

Monsky, the news director, liked my research ability and wanted to hire me full-time but the Federal Communications Commission (“FCC”) required a quota of females to work in any TV newsroom. Back then the FCC had the power to tell newsrooms what to do. Most TV news shows were broadcast over the air. Since the number of frequencies for broadcasting was limited, the law allowed the federal government to decide which stations could use which frequency. That meant a station had to follow FCC dictates or be fined or even lose its license to broadcast. Since the Feminazis were taking over the bureaucracies of the government, they required that girls be hired regardless of their incompetence. But Monsky was smart. He got all the five stations in the Metromedia network to hire one-fifth of me. That way, it never showed on any of the stations’ employment statistics that a competent man had been hired.

My prior boss and former State Senator von Luther came to me with a story involving Medicaid-Methadone clinics. He wants me to meet a couple of people with inside information; fine, let’s go. We end up for a late lunch at “Siricos” in Brooklyn with one of his business associates and Joe Gambino, a relative of the late Crazy Joe Gallo. As we sit down, Joe tells von Luther’s associated that he had taken care of the “punk” who failed to make the payments on the car transferred to him. No, I didn’t ask how.

The group explains that Medicaid-Methadone clinics hand out methadone to junkies in order to keep them off heroin and away from the evils it breeds. Reminded me of the old days of

shooting the stuff to relieve boredom in Colorado, but I never ran into any of the alleged evils. Regardless, the clinics take a urine sample to make sure the junkie is not still shooting-up. The clinics send the samples to laboratories to do the testing. That's where the guys I was having lunch with came in. They owned and ran laboratories that did the testing. Their complaint was that the clinic owners required them to pay bribes in order to obtain the business to do the testing. Since the government had set a fixed fee for doing a test, the bribes came out of the laboratory owners' pockets. It also violated the law.

Monsky liked the story but he needed one of the laboratory owners to carry a wire to record a clinic demanding a bribe. None of these guys would, so Monsky elected me to go around with a wire pretending to represent a laboratory. Von Luther's associate educated me on the business and sales presentation. Channel 5 set up a telephone that Monsky's secretary would answer and pretend to be the non-existent laboratory I represented.

These clinics were located where the junkies hung out—the worst parts of the City. Spent a couple of weeks driving here and there and recording a few of the clinics demanding bribes or as they called them “kickbacks.”

Monsky and Steve had me tell one of the bribers that we had him on tape and they wanted to meet with him. He showed and we gathered in Monsky's office, which overlooked an Eastside brownstone. I took a seat on the side, the only one looking out the back window of Monsky's office

Monsky played the hard-ass and Steve, Mr. Friendly.

Briber, “Well, I was just trying to set up what I thought was your laboratory. I really want to clean up Medicaid.”

Monsky smiled and told him the tape would go on the air unless he cooperated. He whined that he had a wife and two children—didn't matter. He finally agreed to wear a wire to expose a different fraud in which medical clinics and doctors inflated their services when billing Medicaid.

While this was going on, a light went on in the Eastside brownstone across the way. It was clearly a bedroom. A pretty teenage girl stepped up to her window and took off her tank top and shorts—nice tits and ass. She'd change her clothes, walk to her window, take them off again. Did this a few times always turning off the light in between to make sure someone was watching—yes I was. I lost track of the interrogation.

The briber reneged on his agreement to carry a wire after talking to his lawyer. Steve did the story and the District Attorney's men stopped by for their copy. The FBI also started an investigation and the Senate held hearings on Medicaid fraud.

As a result of the story, Steve received a tip about a different Medicaid story. This often happened. One expose on a subject matter would breed other related exposes. The tip stated that people could bribe their way onto welfare at the 135<sup>th</sup> Street and Broadway office. He and Monsky drafted a wetback girl in the newsroom to wear a wire and try to bribe her way onto welfare. Apparently, they chose her because she would fit in with the welfare office's clientele scamming the system. But she was scared, so Monsky went along and positioned himself outside the welfare office with his two guns waiting and hoping for some action. No action, but the story won a Golden Typewriter award and got seven bureaucrats dragged out of the office under arrest.

Channel 5 had a running investigation into the Stillwell Haven Home in Brooklyn. It wasn't a nursing home but an assisted living residence. That didn't stop the owners from

treating their residents like animals or forging their SSI checks. One of the employees contacted a friend of mine who ran a group that exposed various evil doers in the City. Many in his group worked for the City, so they had access to a lot of information—basically vigilante investigators. The employee spilled the beans but refused to go on the air, so we had no evidence of anything. We did, however, refer the allegations to the Brooklyn DA.

One allegation was that the female owner had forged a resident's signature in order to be reimbursed for clothing she allegedly had purchased but for which she had no receipts. The DA subsequently admitted this happened, but that it didn't come under the forgery statute. So I asked the ADA (assistant district attorney) on the matter, if they had checked to see who had countersigned this resident's SSI check out of which the money for the clothing was taken. No, he said because it was not part of any specific allegations; therefore, "we had no reason to check that signature." Christ, you'd think they have to be hit on the head with a baseball bat. That resident quickly died, which ended the forgery story. Judy Licht, however, did do a story on Stillwell's abuses and other rip offs of the elderly.

Judy was one hot babe but often nervous. When she had an anxiety attack in the newsroom, the paramedics put her on a stretcher but had to wait until a live feed from the newsroom was over. Couldn't have a star reporter being rolled out on live TV.

One interesting story was when I arranged for Harry Reems to stop by the newsroom for an interview with Steve. Reems had just been convicted of obscenity for his role in Deep Throat. The government gave the whore of the movie, Linda Lovelace, immunity to testify against Reems. Reems made all of \$100 doing the movie while the producer made millions.

One tiny story that would eventually grow bigger was my accompanying a young political operative who was buying petition signatures from a couple of small time political

bosses. The signatures were to put Marie Lambert on the Democratic Primary ballot for N.Y. County Surrogate in the 1976 election to replace one of the Surrogates who had been indicted but then died in office before trial. Lambert lost that year.

The highpoint of everyday, assuming Steve didn't get into a physical fight with some crook or corrupt politician he was investigating, was the video feed of stories from ITNA. ITNA would send stories from around the world to various TV news shows that would decide to use them or parts of them or not bother. Channel 5's producer Andrew, one of the anchors John, an assignment editor Joe and I attended. Andrew was the most cutting person I ever met who did a great impression of an Indian, as from India, trying to speak English. In true anti-PC fashion, these three guys insulted everybody, everything, and each other. Generally, I kept my mouth shut except for laughing—they were hilarious. Today, we'd all be fired by some female or queer squealer. For example, Congressman Jerry Litton was running for Senate in the Democrat Primary in Missouri. On his way to the election night party the plane carrying him, his wife and two children crashed—burning all of them beyond recognition. He died not knowing he had just won an upset victory. One of the guys in the feed suggested a tease for the story, “And for Congressman Litton, some good news and some bad news.”

Channel 5 Metromedia TV News was unique in those days because of the investigative stories it did. Monsky, the news director, loved them and pushed them. Often he'd pull out one of the guns he legally carried to imitate blowing away one of these crooks or corrupt politicians. Steve, Pressman, Miller and others thrilled at nailing these ne'er-do-wells pretending to be upstanding citizens.

Steve did a series of exposes on one poverty pimp, City Councilman Ramon S. Velez. Velez, among other embezzlements, was funneling off money from the Puerto Rican Day

Parade. As a result, the State Attorney General's office barred Velez and any of his allegedly anti-poverty organizations from participating in the parade. Steve also exposed Velez receiving government funds for a lunch program in which lunches were not distributed to the poor. In response, Velez sent a group of his wetbacks, who were living off of the taxpayer, to pick Channel 5. They could barely chant in English, instead it was "Channel 5 es un mentiroso. We want nuestros lunches." While entering the building with the producer, I remarked sufficiently loud, "Let them eat cake!" He replied, "Let them drink cerveza!" We laughed. These illegals wouldn't dare attack a couple of young white guys in the news media. Even Italian organized crime wouldn't, which for me paid off later in my life.

Velez also sued the station for \$20 million—it went nowhere. Basically, Velez was a fat wetback spider with tentacles into South Bronx poverty programs and community NGOs allegedly providing services for hefty fees paid by the taxpayer. Velez never ended up in jail like Capone, but Steve's stories lead to the government cutting off a fair amount of this funding.

Working the assignment desk was always tough. You're responsible for knowing what's going on in the greater metropolitan area and getting a reporter and crew there on time. The tension is always on—fear of missing a story on the police and fire radios, which are near impossible to understand anyway, and the truism of Monsky's law, "If something can go wrong, it will and at the worst possible time."

For example, an organized crime contact called to say he and his lawyer had one of the suspects the police were looking for in a Queens Tavern kidnap and murder case. But when the crew shows, the junkie starts going threw cold turkey and could only vomit and groan—no interview there. So we call the cops to pick this low life up. Then the same reporter and crew try to cover a story about a movie theater charging 10 cents to see the original King Kong movie.

But when the reporter shows up, it's not 10 cents any more. So she has the owner put up the 10 cents sign again. The people who lined up thought the movie was 10 cents when in fact it was \$3.50. A near riot ensues with the reporter taking most of the abuse. Good story.

Monsky had just hired a new reporter and put her on the weekend shift, which made me her assignment editor. Stephanie McLuhan was the daughter of Marshal. Very pretty, but a little spacey. One Saturday I had to call her at home to wake her up. She rushes over and is about to head out the door with the camera crew when I notice her sneaker laces aren't tied. So I tied them for her. Didn't want her falling on that pretty face.

Funny things always happened in the newsroom. One day, Gabe got so involved cutting one of his stories that he put his lighted pipe into his sports coat pocket starting a small fire. He quickly drowned it with his coffee and went back to work on the story as though nothing had happened.

One of my contacts gave me a tip about a whore house on the Upper Eastside that was actually owned by Chase Manhattan Bank and accepted credit cards—a new funding for prostitution that previously only took cash. The station aired a nice little story about it.

In the spring of 1977, Metromedia management cut the newsroom's budget 10 percent. It mainly impacted the investigative stories because they take time to put together and are therefore costly. For example, Steve wanted to do a follow-up on the Medicaid kickbacks but there was no money for it. As though that was not enough, management followed up the cut with a memo directing Monsky to kill all investigative exposes and concentrate on just the daily stupidity and disasters, such as airplane crashes, murders, political infighting, etc. So died the only worthwhile thing that Channel 5 did.

After doing the assignment desk on the weekend, one of my regular assignments was to write the Saturday and Sunday night news. This occurred completely by accident. One Sunday, I stumbled into the newsroom hung over and dead tired and the producer tells me the regular writer is out sick so I'm his replacement. I woke up fast.

The anchor, who was different each night, would write some of the stories, and I the other as determined by the producer. One Saturday night the producer assigned me the story about the CIA's Operation Mockingbird. It was a large-scale program that recruited journalists into its propaganda network. The program paid American reporters to gather information during their overseas assignments and twist their reports to further the Agency's less than democratic line. The anchor came over to me and said, "Do you have the copy of the CIA story?"

"Yes."

"Give it to me. I'll write the story." Him being the ultimate boss on Saturday, I gave it to him.

He sanitized the story making the CIA sound like it did nothing wrong by bribing reporters to manipulate their reports and spy. Later, Monsky clued me in that the anchor had previously worked overseas and participated in the CIA's Operation Mockingbird.

One of the reporter's left for another channel, so the newsroom was looking to hire a replacement. Monsky told me that if he had his way, he would hire me as the replacement. But, as he said, "Because you're not a girl, I can't." The FCC and management were scared of the Feminazis, so he hired a Jewish broad pretending to be a wetback because she married a Latino.

During one of the production meetings to decide which stories to do that night, the producer summarized a story about smoking causing early menopause and that females were suffering more heart aches, ulcers and other diseases because of their "new" role in society. To



which the wise-guy anchor quipped to the broads in the meeting, “Ya see; you didn’t know when you had it so good.” The guys laughed, the girls didn’t.

Thanks to the FCC, the newsroom had its share of broads who didn’t know what they were doing, couldn’t make up their minds or refused to forgo one of their ideas for a better one. One such incompetent we called “Drivel” was always mouthing her bourgeoisie women’s-lib trash. One of her favorite delusions was that a woman had to be twice as good as a man to get ahead. To which I once remarked, “Me thus think you have confused the numerator with the denominator.” She didn’t get it.

Another of these forced hires we called “Space Cadet.” She was assigned to organize the video tapes that played during the sports section. She kept calling the sportscaster to ask one moronic question after another. Now this guy was known for his cool, calm and collected style, But Space Cadet got to him. He started shouting and screaming, “Who is this broad? What politics put her in the tape room?” We laughed, but sports was a disaster that night. For example, a boxing match appeared when the sportscaster was talking about Pele.

Feminism also gave the show a female producer and Latina script editor while firing one of the more competent male assignment editors for a female who made up coverage that never occurred. The producer and script editor drove everyone crazy with their loud mouths and bossiness. The power went to their heads—or the fear.

One of the exceptions to female incompetence in the newsroom was Susan. A straight laced, preppy type from a well-to-do family. Before becoming the weekend producer, she did the script editing and did it extremely well. She was exact, on time, a little prudish and then out of nowhere she elopes with a guy from ABC sports. Boy was that a surprise. So I nicked named her Suzy Cream Cheese after the Mother’s of Invention song.

The reporters with a brain rarely had anything good to say about the news media. It's a "waste," "go into industry," "get yourself into something substantial," or "go to law school." Well, I went to law school and business school, and what these guys didn't realize was that the news media, in those days, had lots of power.

Strange things, not always unpleasant, happened in NYC during my media days. While taking the subway train to work with my girl friend of the moment, we were talking about the attractiveness of young ladies of which she was one. From across the car comes this pretty little girl, about five years old, staring at me with these wide dark eyes that said "I'm yours." She touches my thigh, but then her mother grabs her hand and pulls her out of the car at the stop. As the little girl left, she gave me a fleeting look of "I love you." My girl friend and I just look at each other perplexed, and I remembered the incident with Sarah in St. Louis. At times, I wondered whatever happened to that little girl as well as Sarah. I know what happened to my girl friend. One of her subsequent boyfriends murdered her.

July 13, 1977, the lights go out all over town. Had to get to work, so I felt my way down to the street. It was pitched black. There was no moon. Looking up and down Broadway, everything was dark. You really had to watch out running into people and deal with the fear that everybody or somebody might go crazy. The taxis were still running, however, so I grabbed one for Channel 5.

The newsroom, lit by candles, was going nuts trying to get reporters and crews out to cover the rioting, looting and arson in Haarlem as well as the insurrection at the Bronx House of Detention. Most of the phones didn't work. Monsky was shouting orders, and the managing editor blaming it on a UFO draining the electrical grid. The cause was actually a lightning strike on a transformer at Indian Point. Mayor Abe Beame called it a night of terror.

The Empire State Building and World Trade Center loomed like black monoliths in the night sky—a kind of Jungian beauty. All of NYC was helpless for want of electricity. Our reporters and camera crews rushed here and there, but as the night wore on, the streets took on an eerie silence in the dark.

When most of the stories were covered, the assignment editor, one of the reporters and me sat in an unusually mellow newsroom lit by the soft glow of two generator lights. The assignment editor said he first thought it was World War III and sat back waiting for the walls to melt. Perhaps, unfortunately, they didn't.

Channel 5, like other TV news shows did what the reporters called “whore” pieces. Their purpose was to push some commercial product such as a particular show or a pecuniary interest of management. Gabe hated them, but the managing editor loved them.

Next to the blackout, the big story of the summer was the Son of Sam—.44 caliber killer. On the one year anniversary of his first hit, the cops were staking out the Bronx and Queens. The assignment editor and I thought the cops were idiots. I said, “Sam's obviously going to hit in Brooklyn or Staten Island.” Sure enough, that Saturday at 3 am he blew away a young couple in Benson Hurst, Brooklyn. But Sam screwed up. He had parked his car at a fire hydrant and was ticketed. The cops back tracked the ticket to an apartment in the Bronx. At this point Sam was just a suspect with the cops undercover outside his apartment. While the cops were waiting for a search warrant, out waltzes Sam with a Thompson .44 caliber machine gun. He was on his way to a disco in Long Island. What a story that would have made, but the cops grabbed him.

One reporter bet me a drink that the Puerto Rican terrorist group the FALN would soon do some bombings in NYC. Sounded like a safe bet to me until they bombed the Mobile Oil building, killing one person, and bombed a Department of Defense office on Madison Avenue.

How did he know they would do more bombings, he wasn't Puerto Rican. Then I remembered. He used to work for the CIA.

The news room had AP and UPI wire machines to keep track of national and international stories. The oversize managing editor, when he was able to get out of his chair, would scan the wires. August 16, 1977, he lets out a yell, "Elvis is dead." Shock, then the newsroom goes crazy trying to put together its coverage. I give Steve a print out from the New York Times data base and off he goes to Memphis. The managing editor digs up old Elvis movies and the entertainment reporter puts together a really good piece. Three days later, Groucho died, which was sadder than Elvis' death.

Monsky and the managing editor started sending out memos criticizing everyone's work and threatening them, including me, with termination. It was the usual bureaucratic tactic to scare people into working longer hours and doing exactly what the bosses say. The sports reporter got one threatening to fire him if he did a certain type of sports story again, which was a legitimate and truthful story. Boy did he blow up, "What the fuck is this? Kindergarten?" He stomps into the backroom where the managing editor is watching TV. After a short while, he storms out shouting, "Shove it up your fat ass. I quit!" And walks out never to be seen on Channel 5 again,

The tiny story I had mentioned earlier about the buying of petition signatures had unexpectedly turned into a bigger one. The candidate the young operative was working for had run again in the 1977 Democratic primary for Surrogate and won. Most likely they had bought petition signatures then as well. The victory meant she would more than likely win the general election. The Manhattan Surrogate's office was notoriously corrupt. The judge appointed lawyers as *guardian ad litem* whenever someone died leaving behind a child. Didn't matter if

another parent was still alive or not. The *guardian ad litem* was hired to watch out for the child's interest. But actually was watching out for his and the Surrogate Judge's pecuniary interests. Guardians would generally inflate their billings, kick back to the judge who naturally approved the inflated billings and in some cases actually looted the estate. Lawyers received fees as high as \$250,000 for little work. The Surrogate also determined in which bank an estate's funds would be deposited along with the brokers used for investing the funds. The Surrogate's position controlled millions of dollars of this type of patronage, which attracted Roy Cohn and various organized crime families. Senator Robert Kennedy had successfully attacked the court for awarding exorbitant fees to lawyers who were the judge's friends. Kennedy's reform candidate won in 1966 and Tammany Hall lost control of the court's multi-million dollar trove of legal patronage.

I regretted not joining the primary campaign undercover for Channel 5, but no one thought Marie Lambert would win. So I stayed at Channel 5, once again trying to get a foot in the door with the IRA through one of the Irish crew members who had connections. Working for the IRA would have provided some great stories and might have led to more involvement with them. But everything went down the drain with management stopping the investigative stories and once again the IRA thinking I was an undercover agent for the CIA.

Channel 5 quickly became a bore, so I left to do an undercover investigative story with the *ad hoc* group of investigators that had provided stories to Channel 5. Through the young political operative who had purchased petition signatures for Lambert, who was organized crime's candidate for Surrogate, I became the assistant campaign manager for the general election. The group of investigators acted as go-betweens with Joe Conason, the new Running Scare columnist at the Village Voice where Jack Newfield worked. This kept my name secret.

## Undercover Agent

Before the general election, Conason published a couple of Running Scared columns based on the inside info that I provided him via the investigators, who also confirmed much of my info.

Lambert was in reality the campaign manager making all the decisions and telling us whom to shakedown for money. She'd often ranted about what she would do to those who didn't contribute—give them the lowest fees possible and make fools of them in court. As for generous contributors, they would receive exorbitant fees, part of which would be kicked back to her or to political campaigns she supported. She would also turn a blind-eye to contributors looting the estates of widows, widowers and orphans.

The general election campaign pursued two main interrelated objectives determined by Lambert. One was mass mailings to the tune of 600,000 pieces that exploited the bigotry, fears and ignorance of different identity groups. The campaign set up phony committees to send out the mailings in order to provide credibility for the lies.

The other objective was raising money to pay for the mailings and to wash cash through the campaign into her purse. Money from the Mangano/Gambino crime family was disguised by funneling it through phony organizations, such as the Women's Institute for Better Probate and Trust Administration in Fort Lee, N.J. Fort Lee was an organized crime haven, popular with some of the campaign supporters. Over dinner in that infamous town, one contributor told me of his hatred for Castro. The contributor had been partners with Meyer Lansky in a Havana Casino making lots of tax-free money when Castro ended the good-times with his revolution.

"The girls must have been something else down there," I remarked with a little envy.

"Poor and willing to do anything for a buck," he said.

The Mangano crime family had the daughter of the founder regularly visiting the campaign and helping out. Toni's father Vincent, a.k.a. "The Executioner," had headed one of the original five crime families in New York City and was key in setting up the National Crime Syndicate that divided up territories across the U.S. Toni's father was no stranger to politics. He set up the City Democratic Club, which was also the headquarters for Murder Inc. Guess politics ran in the blood, but Vincent wasn't around when Lambert ran. He had disappeared years earlier. During the campaign, bag men, unknown to the staff but not Lambert, would show up at campaign headquarters on Williams Street with cash for the candidate.

Other contributions came by way of Roy Cohn and Bill Shea. Both had various attorneys who practiced in the Surrogate's Court make contributions or purchase tickets to one of our fundraisers. On Lambert's instructions, we kept a detailed index file of these contributors so that she could reward them with patronage when elected, and elected she was in one of the most expensive Surrogate campaigns up to that time. Cohn raised a lot of money for her, had his chauffeur drive her around in his white Rolls Royce, used one of his front companies, Tyson Sullivan, Inc., to rent a safe-deposit box at Flushing Savings Bank for storing her illicit cash contributions, and even got Donald Trump to contribute.

Lambert had been opposed by the Bar Associations, numerous judges, newspapers and virtually every organization advocating for competent judges, thanks in part to Joe's articles. It didn't matter, however, the mailings conned 55% of the voters into pulling the lever for her.

The election campaign for me wasn't all snooping, secretly copying documents and listening in on conversations. One of Bill Shea's partners gave me tickets to game 6 of the 1977 World Series against the Dodgers in which Reggie Jackson hit three home runs to win the series

for the Yankees. To a lifelong Yankee fan, that game was terrific. When it ended, we rushed down onto the field. It was a lot bigger than little league and covered with lush grass.

In another sporting vein, the counsel to Mayor Abe Beame was one of Lambert's backers and the counselor had a NYC councilwoman for a wife. They were separated but not in politics—both supported Lambert. She was in her mid-forties but hot, so we started dating. Once her husband threw a fit when I borrowed his City car to spend an afternoon with his wife. What did he expect, giving me a set of keys and saying I could use it whenever I wanted? His wife and I actually ended up living together for a while in her apartment in Washington Heights. The only annoying part of that was her two idiot sons—one in high school and the other a college dropout. The college dropout is one of the best examples of the “Peter Principal.” Decades later, he was elected the Comptroller of NYC. He could barely add  $2 + 2$ , but by the 21<sup>st</sup> century, digital computers for math were common place.

After the election, on Lambert's orders, we started organizing fundraisers to allegedly pay-off the campaign debt. In reality, the money would end up in Lambert's pocketbook, and was a way of shaking down lawyers who practiced in the Surrogate's Court—buy a ticket or no patronage. Word leaked out to the press, I wonder how, which caused a furor in the legitimate legal community because it is against judicial ethics for a judge to know who contributes to her campaign and to solicit contributions from those who practice before her. It creates the appearance, which is often the reality, of judicial favoritism and bribery. Pay off the judge and she'll rule the way you want. One Supreme Court Judge said, “It stinks.” And the State Commission of Judicial Conduct received complaints about these fundraisers. The Commission had recently been created by the State Legislature to censure, suspend or remove a state judge for violating the Code of Judicial Conduct. The Code also regulated campaigning for judicial office.



Lambert told the press she had no idea of who was contributing to help payoff the campaign's alleged debts. Boy was that a lie. She often sat in her campaign office in the back thumbing through the index cards of contributors; telling me whom to contact for more money and others who had not yet given.

Lambert was not about to forego the money from her shakedown, so she got Roy Cohn to take over organizing events such as one slated for Studio 54. Cohn was the co-owner of Studio 54 along with Mafia boss Carmine Galante. Using this new strategy, the campaign staff and Lambert could plead we didn't do it—but, of course, we were involved. On November 15, 1977, Lambert sent the campaign manager and me to meet Roy Cohn to iron out the specifics for the Studio 54 fundraiser. Cohn's law office and living quarters were at 39 East 69<sup>th</sup> Street. The place was impeccably decorated. The only other place I had visited that showed the same preppy taste was Ted Kennedy's D.C. home. Years later, I caught part of a movie about Cohn, which depicted the interior of his townhouse as garish. Boy did the producers get it wrong—subtle fake history to bias the unconscious minds of viewers.

We sat down with Cohn and his executive assistant in the second floor rear dining room next to the kitchen. Cohn was sharp and courteous as he went over his plans for organizing the event: ticket price \$250, a table for \$2,500, and he showed us a mock up of the ticket—very nice. Cohn went over the rich and influential attorneys he would approach and would also enlist some of them to sell tickets—one was Bill Shea whom he got up to call in the kitchen. Coming back into the foyer after calling Shea, Cohn says, "I can't stand all this negativity." Shea, who also ran a law firm, had succumbed to the legal community's criticism of Lambert's post-election fundraisers. According to Cohn, Shea agreed to make discrete phone calls but not publicly push the event. Cohn telephoned Lambert about Shea dropping out of publicly pushing

the 54 event. Prior to the election, Shea had organized a small but lucrative secret fundraiser at the Sky Club on top of the Pan Am building, so Lambert didn't rant over his present reticence. After talking with Lambert, Cohn said, "Okay, we'll do it without Shea's public support, but we'll get it down." I admired his attitude, but recalled what he and McCarthy did in the 1950s, so Conason received more information from me. The publicity scuttled the Studio 54 fundraiser but not the money it raised—\$40,000. After all the bad publicity over the post-election fundraisers, the campaign did only small secret fundraisers attended by representatives of those currying favor with Lambert. Only Lambert and her campaign manager knew the specifics.

Lambert's election as one of the two Surrogates for Manhattan made her a lot of money and popular among politicians such as the former Mayor John Lindsay who was thinking of running for the Senate. Lindsay requested that Lambert funnel patronage to his friends who would then contribute some of it to a possible upcoming campaign. My, how political images differ from the reality. Even Al Lowenstein showed at her induction looking for Surrogate Court largesse.

#### Massachusetts

The former Columbia University senator and fellow worker on the 1972 McGovern campaign decided to run for State Senator in Massachusetts in the district that included Cambridge. So while the N.Y. State Commission on Judicial Conduct investigated Lambert, I moved out of the Councilwoman's apartment to Boston.

The girls on his campaign were yummy. There were a handful of blondes and a fair amount of casual sex as was usual for a campaign with twenty-something volunteers back then. Today, the guys would face the threat of having their futures destroyed even though they did what the girls wanted. The extreme mood-swings that girls experience from the bio-chemical

reactions in their bodies would most assuredly have resulted in paranoid delusions of sexual abuse. Today's feminized press and courts would immediately revoke the presumption of innocence for any guy accused by an emotionally unstable girl. But in 1978, Mother Nature and the presumption of innocence still held sway.

My campaign work for some reason gravitated to researching the opponent, Francis X. McCann. He headed the Massachusetts State Senate Post-Audit and Oversight Committee. At the time, there were some leftovers of a scandal in Massachusetts. The Massachusetts Bureau of Building and Construction had awarded a contract to McKee-Berger-Mansueto ("MBM") for supervising the construction of the University of Massachusetts Boston campus. Press reports alleged the Bureau and MBM cut a sweetheart deal. The State Senate then set up a special committee to investigate, but actually used that committee to shake down MBM for around \$40,000. The State senators involved ended up in jail. McCann was not one of them, but the ripples washed up against him as Chairman of the Post-Audit and Oversight Committee.

After writing a summary implicating McCann and his committee as co-conspirators in shaking down MBM and putting all my research into a three inch binder, I handed it over to the candidate's brother who did press for the campaign. He had great contacts up there, such as the local anchor Jack Cole who was looking for dirt on McCann. Cole, also an attorney, was the anchor who once said, "We'll be back with more alleged news in a minute." The candidate's brother, however, promptly threw the binder into the garbage, so I left the campaign only to revisit for election-day when my Columbia buddy lost. Years later, my buddy told me that he and his brother had dinner with an old business friend of their father. The businessman told them that McCann's committee regularly shook down businesses with the threat of investigating them if they had or were looking for a contract with the state.

## Tammany Hall Interrupted

Back in NYC, Lambert, now Surrogate with lots of patronage, and with the help of Roy Cohn, was trying to put together a political machine in the corrupt Tammany Hall tradition. The initiating campaign for Lambert-Cohn's New Tammany Hall was the 1978 race for Civil Court Judge in Northern Manhattan. Lambert convinced a fellow female personal-injury lawyer to run. Lambert instructed the key operatives from her election campaign to manage this Civil Court Judgeship campaign. Since I was back in town, and my cover from the Lambert campaign had not been blown, I joined up and fed Conason information on the campaign.

Lambert and Cohn's candidate, Helen Goldstein, was 46, Jewish with dyed blonde hair—nice looking enough to entertain thoughts of hitting on her. The only problem with that was she had a heart condition. On one occasion, she collapsed in her apartment. One of the campaign staff tried a little CPR and she came around, which avoided a call to 911, which would have ended the campaign. That campaign was denounced as “the dirtiest campaign in Manhattan in 20 years,” because it focused on appealing to bigotry and accused the reform-democrat candidate, who was also Jewish, as pro-PLO, anti-Semitic and connected to Skokie-type Nazi demonstrations.

Lambert instructed us to send out mailings to the district's Democrat voters using the same type of fear mongering and bigotry that her campaign had used complete with phony committees such as the Manhattan Chapter of the Zionist Committee for Israel. If Lambert's candidate won the Democrat Primary, then she would most likely win the general election. The trick in sending the mass mailing was to have it arrive in voter's mailboxes on the Monday just before the Tuesday election. That way the opposing candidate and the press did not have enough time to expose all its lies and bigotry. Since I was in charge of delivering the mailing to the post

office, I sent it out too early—on purpose. It arrived on Saturday, which gave the opposition and press time to expose the corrupt campaign tactic of Lambert’s candidate, who lost.

Lambert and Cohn didn’t give up their efforts to create their New Tammany Hall. In 1979, they used patronage from the Surrogate’s Court and Cohn’s political connections to back district leadership and judicial delegate races by former members and supporters of Lambert’s campaign, such as Scott Stringer (current NYC Controller), and the good friends of Cohn.

District Leaders were party officials in either the Democrat or Republican parties. Their political support was crucial for candidates for Civil Court judgeships to win in their respective party primaries—Democrat or Republican. However, only the Democratic primary mattered in the Manhattan-Bronx Judicial District because of the overwhelming number of registered Democratic voters. A victory for a Civil Court candidate in the Democratic primary meant victory in the general election and a seat on the Court’s bench. Civil Court judges handled civil cases involving amounts up to \$25,000.

More importantly, Democratic District Leaders often decided who would run for the Judicial Delegate positions in the Democratic primary. The Judicial Delegate winners would then decide at the Democrat Judicial Nominating Convention the persons who would run for State Supreme Court judgeships on the Democratic line in the general election. Once again, since the voters in the Manhattan-Bronx Judicial District were overwhelmingly registered Democrats, a nominee running on the Democratic ticket was tantamount to election. State Supreme Court judges handled civil cases involving amounts over \$25,000 and criminal felonies.

Any District Leader or Judicial Delegate would quickly find those aspiring to a judgeship and current judges facing re-election reaching out to him or her, often with bribes in one form or another.

By the beginning of 1979, Lambert and Cohn suspected that someone on the inside had been feeding information to Conason since 1977, which is when Joe's coverage about her began appearing in the Voice. It seemed a propitious time to avoid ending up swimming with the fishes, so when Conason and Jack Newfield asked me to go public, I agreed.

Joe wrote the article and Jack came up with the headline: *Where There's a Will, There's a Way*, February 5, 1979. Now Lambert and Cohn knew who the mole was, but they couldn't find me even though they were looking. A reliable source told me the guy connected with Meyer Lansky and others were trying to track me down for a "talk." The State Commission on Judicial Conduct's investigation of Lambert was well under way at that time as were the legal battles with Lambert's lawyers. Her lawyers, naturally aided by Cohn's law firm, were challenging the Commission's subpoenas of Lambert's campaign workers and the Commission's very authority to investigate her campaign. Lambert argued that she had a First Amendment right to associate with people from whom she raised money, which countered New York's Code of Judicial Conduct that forbade a judge from raising money from lawyers who might appear before her.

Joe kept publishing columns on Cohn and Lambert trying to create their own political machine of corruption by controlling the Democrat judicial nominating convention for the Manhattan-Bronx district. The articles ticked-off Cohn so much that he complained in a letter to the Village Voice editor. Perhaps he complained because Joe had labeled the candidates Lambert and Cohn were supporting as "Cohnheads," which was a takeoff on SNL's "Coneheads."

Cohn actually wrote to the editor, "I have zero interest in Manhattan politics." Who did he think he was kidding? Since the demise of Senator Joseph McCarthy, Cohn had become one of the major political power brokers in the City, which wasn't by accident. Lambert also started

her own cover-up by rewarding campaign supporters subpoenaed to testify with lucrative Surrogate Court patronage.

The Cohnheads continued on their march, financed by Surrogate Court patronage and Cohn's connections, to topple the Democrat reformers who had dominated the Manhattan-Bronx Democrat Party for a decade. One district leader in Manhattan said these Cohnheads, "are haters. They'll stop at nothing and they're crazy." Joe wrote in one article

[T]he Cohnheads are dangerous, lacking any political ideology or morality other than desire for influence and patronage. They out-reform the reformers, making unfounded accusations of corruption; they out-regular the regulars, telling old-line district leaders they have the backing of Carmine DeSapio, the mob-linked leader of Tammany Hall. Rarely, if ever, do they raise an issue, and when they do it's likely to be spurious.

The Commission on Judicial Conduct contacted Conason to see if I'd be willing to testify in return for immunity—the Commission couldn't fine me either in order to serve a subpoena. Joe and Jack both thought it would be a smart move, as did I, so the Commission granted me immunity in May 1979. The next month, the Supreme Court, thanks to Joe's February article, upheld the Commission's subpoenas requiring a number of campaign workers to testify. Lambert had been trying to block their testimony but the new information in Joe's article caused the Supreme Court to rule against her, so she appealed. There was, however, still the stink of a political fix in the courts. The Supreme Court also ruled that the Commission could not investigate the campaign's fundraising activities, such as cash contributions under the table.

Another part of the political fix was that the clerk of the Supreme Court refused to allow the media to view any of the files in the Lambert court proceedings before the judge had actually sealed the record. Guess the clerk knew what the judge was going to do before the judge actually did it, or the fix was in. As Joe wrote, "The judges are being allowed to evaluate and control an investigation of one of their own without the press snooping around to inhibit

favoritism.” The judge rationalized sealing all the records because the Commission did not want to turn over to Lambert’s lawyers the names and addresses of those who were providing it with information. Meaning, it didn’t want a source going out a hotel window before he testified. By then, the Commission knew where I lived and worked. The judge used the Commission’s refusal to paint a target on its witnesses on order to keep the press in the dark as to what was going on in court. It made no legal sense, since courts often protect witnesses without turning the proceedings secret. The Commission appealed.

The Appellate Division made its decision in December 1979. The legal battle had been going on for 18 months. The Appellate Court ruled the Commission could investigate the campaign fundraising activities, such as secret cash contributions over \$100, as well as Lambert’s cover-up of rewarding supporters with Surrogate Court patronage. The decision stated that Conason’s February 1979 article convinced the judges to allow the Commission’s probe to into these matters. Beyond the Lambert case, the ruling made clear that the Commission, which had recently been set up, was constitutional and had the authority to investigate judicial misconduct on the campaign trail and in the courthouse. The Appellate court, however, upheld keeping all court records secret. Joe wrote, “So, in contrast to most other legal battles involving public officials, we have no way of knowing the circumstances under which Lambert is being investigated.”

#### Eyewitness News

While the Judicial Commission’s legal battles with Lambert moved through the courts on its way to the highest state court, the Court of Appeals, I needed a job. My friend from Channel 5 News, Cream Cheese, had moved over to Eyewitness News at Channel 7. Eyewitness was



looking for a political producer/researcher for its politics reporter Roger Sharp for the 1980 election season. Thanks to Cream Cheese, they hired me in January 1980.

Roger was a smart, smarter than me, extremely competent guy who didn't suffer fools lightly of which there were many in the Eyewitness Newsroom—usually females. At 6'3" he had made the Michigan State University football team when they won the Rose Bowl in 1956. That was impressive. When he started out in the news, he had been one of the youngest reporters in network news working for ABC. He had great stories, especially from the early 60s.

In the spring of 1963, Roger was covering Martin Luther King's campaign of sit-ins, boycotts and marches in Birmingham, Alabama to protest its segregation laws. Events started off peacefully. Everyday like clockwork, the SCLC protesters would gather inside the 16<sup>th</sup> Street Baptist Church and then march out the door down the sidewalk adjacent to the Church toward City Hall. They never made it because Bull Connor, the head of police, had them arrested. The arrests were peaceful, since the strategy was intended to cause the mass arrests of people protesting for their rights, which at some point would grind the city's jails and courts to a halt. This went on day after day with Roger and the rest of the national media covering the protests and arrests. Then one day, the time of the meeting at the Church was changed. The protesters marched out, but unlike the other times, the sidewalk was now in the shadows because the sun was in a different position in the sky. Back then, the media used film, which required a lot of light to record images. Since most the protesters were black, their skin absorbed more of the visible electromagnetic spectrum while whites reflected more. Therefore, the TV cameramen couldn't get useable images of the protesters marching down that sidewalk in the shadows. So Roger and the other reporters go over to the organizers, tell them the problem. The organizers tell the protesters to cross the street over to the other sidewalk that was now in the sun. The

police, however, didn't know what was going on and all hell broke loose—fire hoses, police dogs, clubbings and images on national television that shocked the nation and doomed segregation. Apparently the “medium is the message.”

In another of his early assignments, Roger ended up in Cuba during Castro's revolution, got arrested for being an American spy but was finally released after the U.S. State Department intervened.

At Eyewitness News, Roger, with me in tow, covered the 1980 presidential, senate, congressional and local primary and general election campaigns. Working in the media gave me some protection from the good friends of Lambert and Cohn because organized crime generally avoided harming cops or folks in the news media. The mob didn't like any publicity—period. But just in case, I kept my name off of all the credits and carried a .38 derringer in the inner pocket of my suit jacket.

The Democrat Party presidential primary pitted Carter, an ineffectual President trying to deal with the government hostages being held in Iran, against Ted Kennedy, the killer of Mary Jo Kopechne. Jerry Brown, the Governor of California for the first time and one dynamic speaker, took a shot but his time had already passed. He should have made a serious run against Carter in 1976.

Carter refused to campaign. Many of the political reporters thought this was his wife's idea. Actually, it was common knowledge among the media that Rosalynn was the real president. The nice part of working in news was knowing what was really going on behind the public lies, but back then, such was kept quiet. Now, however, such is made up. Thanks to Rosalynn, our coverage was limited on the Democrat side to Kennedy's campaign events and

interviews of him. Kennedy had a bunch of hot young female relatives working for him and his campaign events always brought out big bosom babes—covering him was a joy.

My role was to keep abreast of what was happening, where and when and getting Roger, me and the crew there on time. Roger always wrote his own scripts and asked his own questions, sometimes with help from my research and suggestions, he also chose the sound bites but left the B-roll and putting the piece together to me and the videotape editor. The B-roll was easy, I'd always put in the hot young girls yelling and jumping up and down.

Just before the New York State primary, which looked like Carter was going to lose; the White House calls and invites us down for an interview. All the other local NYC stations were also invited to interview Carter. That gave me an idea. Since Carter refused to debate Kennedy, why not have Kennedy answer the same questions we'd asked Carter. We could then inter-cut the answers of both in a piece that would simulate a debate. Roger agreed and at the last minute so did Kennedy. We headed over to Kennedy's hotel, and at the door, I remember my derringer in my suit jacket pocket. There was no place to dump it—looked like I was going to jail. Not exactly the story Roger was expecting. The Secret Service, however, didn't search us thanks to our media credentials and Roger did the interview.

The next day at the White House, the NYC local news crews are waiting in the hallway outside the oval office to interview Carter. Zbigniew Brzezinski, Carter's Security Advisor, turns the corner carrying this huge map of Iran, he looks at the reporters and camera crews in shock, almost drops the map and scurries off. This was before the aborted helicopter raid to free the hostages in Iran. Had we been sharper, we would have realized the reason for the map. Carter lost the N.Y. primary.

Carter pulled the same tactic for the New Jersey primary. He invited at the last minute the NYC local reporters down to a speech he was making in southern Jersey. After the speech, he would do an interview with each station. When Roger finished the interview, we had to get him back to NYC for the 6 o'clock show while I had the interview with his editing instructions beamed to the station from southern Jersey. That way as soon as Roger arrived, he could walk onto the set and do the open and close for the piece live. Roger made it in time and the piece aired. By then it was night, and I went to the airport for a helicopter ride back to NYC. But at the airport, I realized I had no money, and the newsroom had not booked me a flight because everything was arranged at the last minute. What to do—hitchhike? The helicopter company won't take a personal check or personal credit card, but one trusting businessman did take my check in return for cash. They put me in the only vacant seat, which was up front next to the pilot. The helicopter approached NYC from the south where the World Trade Centers with lighted windows loomed gigantic in front of us against the black sky. The helicopter was flying at a height about middle way up the Centers—what a beautiful sight. Carter also lost the New Jersey primary.

Before the Democrat Convention in NYC, the *ad hoc* investigative group came to me with another story. Eyewitness News was not like Channel 5, of course, even Channel 5 was no longer like Channel 5. The U.S. Attorney for the Southern District of N.Y. was investigating the Democrat power broker Pat Cunningham for income tax evasion and other federal crimes. Both the F.B.I. and the Criminal Investigation Division of the Manhattan I.R.S. were handling the investigation. The story was relevant because Robert Strauss, President Carter's campaign chairman, had hired Cunningham for Carter's campaign and made him responsible for making the arrangements for the Democrat Convention at Madison Square Garden for mid-August.

Strauss's hiring Cunningham raised a lot of political eyebrows. Cunningham had been the Democrat County Leader in the Bronx. In that position he effectively controlled who was allowed to run for Bronx Civil Court Judgeships. Since the Bronx was heavily Democrat, Cunningham's approval virtually assured election, which in political speak meant money. In 1976, the special state prosecutor, Maurice Nadjari, was investigating corruption in the City's judicial system—something that is proverbial. Nadjari's grand jury indicted Cunningham for selling judgeships, accepting bribes and fixing criminal cases. Cunningham beat the rap but was forced to give up his Leadership position to Roy Cohn's law partner Stanley Friedman.

Cunningham and Strauss were old friends, but why risk the bad publicity of hiring a once indicted politician to work on a presidential campaign? The investigation group's sources told us that Strauss was trying to use his political clout to close the investigation. Did Cunningham threaten to squeal on Strauss about something? Did Strauss figure that were Carter to win with Cunningham's help, the investigation would go away?

Strauss was holding a pre-convention press conference at Madison Square Garden that Roger was covering. So at the press conference, with Roger's okay, I asked Strauss about the Cunningham investigation—boy did Strauss blow up. He ranted and railed about media smear-tactics, that there was no investigation, which was a lie, and that Cunningham was an upstanding citizen who had never been convicted of anything. Up to then, that last part was correct.

With Strauss's rant on videotape, the convention about to begin and our knowledgeable sources, there was enough for a story, but the Executive Producer nixed it because investigative journalism was not part of the Eyewitness News image. Two years later, Cunningham was found guilty of tax evasion, perjury and other federal crimes. Strauss was not a party in the

criminal case but did appear as a witness. When the prosecutor tried to question Strauss about Cunningham selling judgeships, the judge prevented it.

At the convention, Kennedy lost, but made the best speech of his campaign. At its end, he said, "For all those whose cares have been our concern, the work goes on, the cause endures, the hope still lives, and the dream shall never die."

Afterward his defeat, Kennedy held an end of the campaign party at his home in D.C. His campaign manager for N.Y. and N.J. invited me along on the promise that it was off-the-record. The house was the most tastefully decorated home I ever saw. But the high point was Shriver's daughter walking around with her leg in a cast wearing short-shorts. Don't remember whether I got to sign it or not, but if I had, it would have been on the inner thigh. She was warm and friendly as young girls are but quickly became bitter with age.

On the Republican side of the 1980 election, the main presidential candidates were Ronald Reagan and George Bush, followed by Congressmen John Anderson and Phil Crane. Anderson was by far the smartest of any of the candidates whether Republican or Democratic. Crane, however, had the best looking campaign girls.

Bush won the Iowa caucus because Reagan's campaign manager kept tight reins on Reagan's appearances for fear of what he would say. Wisely, Reagan fired his manager, since Reagan's attraction was that he would say and do the unconventional providing it further his conservative view of America.

After Iowa, Bush held a press conference in New Hampshire. Roger had sent me there to lay the ground work for our coverage. In recounting his victory in Iowa, Bush says, "What we have is momentum. We look forward to Big Mo being on our side." I thought, "Big Mo?" What a preppy idiot this guy was. His big mo ended with the Nashua Telegraph debate where

the editor of the influential paper tried to turn off Reagan's microphone. Reagan, clearly angry said, "I'm paying for this microphone Mr. Green." Bush looked like the preppy wimp he was in comparison. Reagan won most of the primaries after that, including New Hampshire. At the Republican Convention in Detroit, Reagan made the politically smart move of choosing Bush as his VP.

It was now Carter, Reagan and John Anderson, who was running as an independent with over 20% in some polls. Reagan and Anderson debated each other early on but Carter refused to participate—must have been Rosalynn telling him to stay in the White House again. But Jimmy would not get away with hiding forever. In October, a week before the election, Carter and Reagan were neck and neck going into the only debate they had. Carter looked like a scared little-girl, but his doom was sealed when Reagan asked American voters, "Are you better off than you were four years ago?"

During 1980, the key election in New York State was for Senate. On the Republican side, Senator Javits, sometimes referred to as Jake the Snake, was running in the Republican primary looking for a fifth term even though he had been diagnosed with Lou Gehrig's disease. Shouldn't he have retired? Some of these politicians begin to believe that the people exist to serve them instead of the other way around.

Javits was a liberal in a party that in 1980 was turning conservative. Al D'Amato, a supervisor of the Town of Hempstead, conservative and implicated in the Nassau 1% kickback scandal, ran against Javits. D'Amato won the primary, but Javits stayed on the ballot for the general election as nominee of the Liberal Party. There was obviously a deal between the Republican Party and the Liberal Party to keep Javits in the general election so that he would draw votes away from the Democrat nominee Congresswoman Elizabeth Holtzman.

The contest between D'Amato and Holtzman was tight. Roger periodically interviewed both candidates. On one occasion, Holtzman came to the studio for an interview. As with all candidates showing up at the studio for an interview, I'd go down to the lobby to greet them and show them upstairs for the interview. Holtzman shows up, walks through the revolving door, I put out my hand and start to introduce myself, but she walks right by ignoring me. I turn around and she's looking at the lobby's TV showing a clip of her. What a self-centered princess, I thought. When the TV piece on her was over, she deigned to recognize me, and I escorted her to the interview with Roger.

All during the senate campaign the Village Voice had been castigating D'Amato and supporting Holtzman, which made sense—it was a liberal newspaper. Holtzman was the liberal and D'Amato the conservative with connections to Joseph Margiotta. Personally, I sided with Holtzman until she pulled her feminist-princess superiority routine. This babe was not likely to get along with anyone in the Senate where compromise was crucial. I gave D'Amato's brother, Armand, a call.

“Armand, what I'm about to tell you is just between you and me. No one else is to know—not even Roger. Holtzman's campaign pays the firm 'Arts, Letters and Politics' thousands of dollars for campaign advice. That firm is owned and run by Sara Kovner. She's the wife of Victor Kovner the attorney for the Village Voice. Victor carries a lot of weight over what the Voice prints and does not print. There's at least the appearance that the Kovners are financially benefiting from the Voice's articles criticizing your brother.”

Armand thank me and the next day D'Amato issued a press release about the Voice's conflict of interest that the local news picked up and ran. D'Amato won the race with 44.9% to Holtzman's 43.5% and Javits with 11.1%. Did Holtzman's princess conduct toward me lose her



the election—who knows, but it didn't help. Reagan on the other hand beat Carter in a landslide winning 44 states.

The next political event was covering Reagan's Inauguration. Eyewitness sent a team of reporters and producers including Rose Ann Scamardella, the inspiration for Saturday Night Live's character Rosanne Roseannadanna by Gilda Ratner. Ratner's character was brash and tactless.

One of the celebrities entertaining at the Inaugural Balls was Patti Lupone who was then playing Eva Peron in the play Evita. Rose Ann had arranged an interview with Lupone at her hotel room. The crew and I show up on time but there's no Rose Ann even though time was running out to get the story on the 11 o'clock show. First, it was yelling through the door at Lupone's maid trying to explain who we were. She finally let us in so the crew could set up the lights. Then Lupone walks out of her bedroom partially dressed, but not so partially dressed to deter her from going into a fit over us guys being in her boudoir. I then realized how she got the part of Eva Peron. If we had been in Argentina, she would have had us executed. Rose Ann shows up—late, what do you expect, does the interview, and I sprint back to the studio, put the piece together with the editor and barely get it on the air.

The next day, Rose Ann's regular producer, a female, and the one who should have done the Lupone story calls me.

"Rose Ann wants you to be at her room by 11 tonight."

"What's the story?" I ask.

"No story, she wants you to spend the night with her."

I laughed, and said, “Sorry, I have a date with two college coeds.” Which actually was the truth. I had met them during the run up to the inauguration and agreed to show them around the broadcasting area.

Her producer said, “Are you sure?”

“Yes, I’m sure.” If I had had sufficient foresight, I would have started a guys #MeToo lunacy. Instead I told Roger and we laughed.

After the Inauguration, my contract with Eyewitness News was up, so I went looking for a political job. When Roger heard that Congressman Chuck Schumer had interviewed me for a PR position, he pressured WABC to hire me as a writer, which it did. Working as a writer meant more than just writing copy. Often you put together a story for an anchor and sometimes went out to do the interviews.

Eyewitness was about to celebrate an anniversary, so the night assignment editor sent me to get Frank Gifford’s reaction. Gifford was the sports anchor at Eyewitness before he moved over to Monday Night Football. Gifford was attending an event at the Waldorf, so before he and his wife wet into the ballroom, I approached him with the camera crew and asked for comment about Eyewitness News’s anniversary. Always a classy guy, he made a funny but not derogatory comment. Then I asked him, “Could I get your autograph? I remember you catching one handed those bombs from Y.A. Tittle during your comeback in 1962. Just amazing!”

His wife responds, “I don’t believe this!” Guess she thought those days were over.

Gifford signs the back of one of my Eyewitness News business cards, “Thanks!” He was one of the greats, but more important he showed amazing guts in making a comeback after suffering a severe head injury from a tackle in 1960.

Another memorable encounter was with Abbie Hoffman sporting his new face. We talked a little about his anti-war days, but now he was trying to blunt the conservative trend that America was entering under Reagan. I gave him my card and said, “If you’ve got any political stories, give me a call.” Never heard from him. The press reported he committed suicide, but I never believed that.

Writing for Eyewitness News was fun. Studio 54 regularly sent the newsroom free tickets, but considering my past connections with that nightclub, I never attended. Roger did a half-hour special on Israel with me as the producer that was titled “Israel: What Next?” It actually won a silver medal at the N.Y. Film Festival, which I had never heard of. What was a news documentary doing in a film festival—who knows. It didn’t matter because the prize went to the field producer. I kept my name off the credits, once again because of Lambert and Cohn’s good friends.

My tenure at Eyewitness was short because I intended to go to law school. Like an idiot, I thought I could use the law to defend my rights. The news media, however, had a lot more power to exercise—no biased, brain judges with which to deal. Law school started for me in the fall of 1981.

### I Am a Witness

The legal battle over Lambert finally reached the Court of Appeals. In July 1980, the Court of Appeals ruled the Commission had the authority to investigate Lambert’s campaign and awarding of patronage to campaign supporters. It also ruled that the court proceedings must be made public.

My testimony before the Commission occurred at the beginning of my second year in law school, September 1982, at the Association of the Bar of the City of New York. Lambert was

present and tried to stare me down, but my juvenile delinquency days easily returned the visual intimidation until she looked away. Her lawyer was James LaRossa, dubbed by the press the attorney for Mafia bosses. During my two days of testimony, the attorneys for the Commission pretty much allowed LaRossa to have his way. Something wasn't right here. The Commission originally wanted my testimony badly, but now they sat back without the usual fighting that occurs at any hearing. Looked like the fix was in again.

A source inside the Commission subsequently told me that the Reform Democrats, represented by attorney Victor Kovner, and the Regular Democrats who had supported Lambert cut a deal. Cohn was probably involved somewhere. Lambert agreed to distribute Surrogate Court patronage to not only her campaign supporters and attorneys connected with the Regulars but also to the Reform Democrats who had opposed her. She also agreed to a private letter of censure by the Commission, which meant nothing. So in the end, greed won out with both Reformers and Regulars feeding off the estates of widows, widowers and orphans.

After my testimony, I ran into LaRossa in the elevators of the U.S. Eastern District of New York Courthouse after an interview with Chief Judge Jack Weinstein who was considering me for a law school internship position. LaRossa somehow found out what I was doing there and called Judge Weinstein in an effort to sink my internship by lying about my role in the Lambert case. It didn't work. My law school advisor, the former Eastern District U.S. Attorney David Trager told Judge Weinstein, "LaRossa is a mob lawyer who cannot be believed." Judge Weinstein agreed to the internship but it only lasted for a semester instead of a year.

Before my testimony, Lambert and Cohn's good friends subpoenaed my law school records. They now knew where I lived. In addition, since the protection provided me by simply working at Eyewitness News was gone, I decided to blow town and transferred to George

Washington University Law School. They couldn't find out about my transfer because after testifying, the hearing judge was not about to grant another subpoena for my records.

### The Jealous Mistress

Attending law school in D.C. was a nice quiet life, reading the writings of the best minds in history. Too bad the actual practice of law was dealing with the worst minds in history.

Law schools grade on a curve, so a 90 or above means you knew the subject and didn't get any additional points. If you were lazy or dumb, a law school would usually give you enough points to pass. Sounds generous and communistic or in today's lingo: PC. What's the impact? The better private law firms are not about to pay top money for graduates who would otherwise have flunked out without the curve. So what happens to these, in reality, legal failures—the employer of last resort, the government. For example, N.Y. State judges are paid around \$150,000 a year, which is the salary of a first year associate at a decent law firm. The reason state judges are paid so little is because the vast majority would have flunked out of law school without the curve. So the next time you appear before a state court judge, remember she's probably an F student. Federal judges are paid more, but often the prestige of the position attracts students who didn't need a curve to graduate. The Federal Government also has other positions that attract smart graduates, such as its Honors Program. Students with good grades are hired for a two year stint with some department, such as the Treasury.

In D.C., I took up residence in a suburban house in Arlington within a couple of blocks of the metro station. The subway had escalators and air conditioning, but the preoccupation with cars meant it shut down around midnight even on Friday and Saturday. Lambert and Cohn's boys never found me, assuming they were looking.

To keep myself in shape for the girls, who no matter what they say don't like guys with fat stomachs, I went looking for a rugby team. My mediocre rugby career was nearing its end due to old age: thirty-something. After learning the sport at Colorado University, I played a year for Columbia College, which was nice since the school alums sent the team to Europe. Boys were the people in Paris nasty. A couple of guys almost got into fights, but one of our teammates knew French and diffused the situations. After Columbia, I played off and on for Old Blue, which basically was the Columbia Alumni team. Old Blue was set up as a private club team in 1963 by guys who had graduated from Columbia. What was unique about Old Blue, from the other teams I played for, was that when you stepped on to the pitch, you were confident of winning, defeat was not an option. Sure, the team didn't win every game, but for me the confidence never wavered. One of the original founders of Old Blue was now coaching Washington Rugby, so I joined the team.

The only time in my life when the word "love" came to my mind without some girl friend whining for me to use it was when I'd stepped out onto the pitch, even now when it's just an old boy's game.

Law school is tough. The way I made it through was constantly reminding myself that "Anything worth doing is worth doing badly," and "This too will end," which for me was 1985. Since I did well in school, I applied to the top ten federal agency Honor's Programs, thinking that as a lawyer in government, I could have a greater impact than at a private firm, such as Skadden Arps, which had made me an offer.

At eight of the Honor's Programs, the interviewers and decision makers were girls, for one it was a queer and for one a regular guy with a family. Guess which one hired me, guess which ones did not? All the girls said no, so did the queer, but that didn't matter. Of the girls

who said no, six were in agencies with less prestige and competition than the one that hired me—the Treasury Department with the regular guy. Looked like discrimination.

My first tour of duty at Treasury was in the Interpretative Section of the I.R.S. One of the main purposes of the section was to approve or disapprove requests for private letter rulings. A private letter ruling is when a taxpayer, individual, corporation or other entity, wants to know whether a particular transaction will have any tax consequences. If the section says no, then the taxpayer can carry out the transaction without having to pay any taxes, and the I.R.S. is bound by that determination as it applies to that taxpayer only. It has no precedential value for other taxpayers. Another purpose of the section was to decide whether the I.R.S. should appeal a case.

The group of new hires was welcome by the Associate General Counsel of the Treasury. He told us that “It is my job to make sure that those with hands across the Whitehouse get what they want.” I should have walked out then, but it took me a little longer to realize the I.R.S., as with most of the Federal Government, was institutionally corrupt.

Most of the cases assigned to me involved corporations or wealthy family trusts. One, however, was a federal worker who reported for jury duty, was paid a fee, and the fee was paid over to his federal employer as required by law. The worker didn’t report the fee on his tax return, so the question was whether the fee he never got was part of his gross income. Believe it or not, my idiot boss said yes.

The attorneys in this allegedly elite section of the I.R.S. referred to it as “Club Fed.” No one, except me, ever stayed late or worked on the weekends. It was strictly 9 to 5, Monday through Friday, unless word came down they could leave early then they bolted for the door. Just before Christmas 1985 my boss and I were discussing a case in his office. The head of the section calls my boss to say everyone could leave early because of the holiday. My boss jumps

up, grabs his coat, tells his secretary to make the announcement and tells me, “We’ll finish this after the holidays.” He was the first one to the elevators.

Okay, time off is important, but these federal attorneys worshipped sloth. Many admitted they were just “time-serving” until the taxpayer paid them a pension as a reward for having done as little as possible for the people they allegedly served. Nothing would ever change the indolent bureaucrats of the federal government because they couldn’t be fired, unless they massacred their fellow workers, or committed felonies and maybe not even then. Lois Lerner wasn’t fired, she retired.

Not only were these lawyers lazy but scared. Their fear drove them to twist the law in Kafkaian fashion to reach the result the higher-ups wanted. This made no sense to me. If they couldn’t be fired, what was there to fear, since none of them had any ambition to do something other than live off the taxpayer. This place was eating away at my egoism, so I started looking for work at private law firms in NYC, but didn’t plan on leaving Treasury until finishing my recommendations on one private letter ruling by a family “with hands across the Whitehouse.”

The California family of the late J. Paul Getty requested a private letter ruling as to the tax consequences for breaking up the irrevocable Sarah C. Getty Trust, which by then was valued at \$4 billion. In 1930, Sarah C. Getty, the mother of J. Paul Getty, succeeded to the ownership of the Getty Oil Company when her husband George F. Getty died. Sarah knew her son was a playboy spendthrift, so she put the oil company into an irrevocable trust with J. Paul as the trustee in 1934. J. Paul received the net income from the oil company, but under the trust he couldn’t squander the oil company’ assets on his wastrel life-style. He could, however, add to the value of the trust with smart investment decisions which he did, turning millions into billions over 40 years. Sarah Getty made clear in the Trust deed that its purpose was to preserve the



Getty Oil business, always building it and maintaining control of it as a growth enterprise, never by any means dissipating control or relinquishing any part of it.

The media often listed J. Paul Getty as the richest man in the world, which wasn't true. He was just the trustee of a wealthy trust who received its net income. It was the Trust that owned Getty Oil—not J. Paul.

Sarah Getty set the Trust to end not when J. Paul died but only when all of his four sons who had already been born had died. So with the death of J. Paul's last son, the value of the Trust would be distributed to the remaining descendants of J. Paul. J. Paul died in 1976 when all his four sons were still a live. His son Gordon P. Getty became the trustee.

Up until 1984, the Trust held 40% of Getty Oil stock valued at around \$5 billion. At the end of 1983, Pennzoil Co. offered to buy the Getty Oil stock in the Trust to which Gordon Getty agreed to sell but then changed his mind and sold all the stock for a higher price to Texaco on January 6, 1984. Pennzoil sued Texaco in the Delaware courts for tortious interference with a contract. Delaware courts are the courts of choice for lawsuits involving large corporations because the judges are smart and experienced with such disputes. At the time Texaco was the nation's third-largest oil company with a net worth \$13.5 billion. Texaco's lawyer missed a court deadline that resulted in the case being transferred to Houston, Texas—Pennzoil's hometown. In November 1985, Pennzoil's home-grown jury gave Pennzoil a \$10.3 billion dollar verdict against Texaco, which the home grown judge upheld. The Texaco "man with the star" appeared headed for oblivion.

Gordon Getty's sale of the Trust's Getty Oil stock incurred a capital gains tax of \$1 billion. The Trust's income beneficiaries, remaindermen and even the unborn, who legally had an interest in the Trust, were angered not only at the tax but that Gordon, as trustee, would

decide how the remaining \$4 billion would be invested. They basically thought Gordon was an idiot with little to no business experience. They weren't off base; Gordon spent most his time writing unpublished music. So 26 of the beneficiaries, including minors, unborn, unknown and unascertained, being represented by 10 law firms, sued to remove Gordon as trustee and saddle him with paying all the capital gains tax.

After 51 depositions and 82,000 documents, the relatives decided to settle. The settlement called dissolving the Sarah C. Getty Trust and then creating six independent trusts, each with its own trustee, beneficiaries, remaindermen and investment requirements while payment of the capital gains tax would be spread among all the new trusts. The California court approved the settlement, citing it had the authority under California's Probate Code § 1138.1 (a)(14). The division of the Trust would occur as soon as possible after receipt of a favorable tax ruling by the I.R.S.

On receiving the request for a private letter ruling from the 10 law firms representing the Getty Family, the I.R.S. set up a task force appointing different groups of lawyers to handle different aspects of the transaction. One group determined whether gift or inheritance taxes would be due, another whether income or capital gains taxes would be due. I ended up in the group researching income and capital gains taxes.

Looking over the private letter ruling request, I had a few questions about the settlement agreement, so I called one of the chief lawyers for the Getty Family. That didn't go well, an I.R.S. higher-up forbade me from contacting any of the lawyers no matter what the question. Even my sycophant boss said that was strange.

Then one day, a girl attorney in the gift tax group calls me. In a hush voice, she says, “I hear you have questions about granting the private letter ruling, so do I. A gift tax should clearly be imposed on the Getty’s but my bosses are pushing me to find no taxes. This is not right.”

“I’m going through the same situation on the income and capital gains issues. It looks to me like they should owe both if they break up the trust, but I’m getting pressure to let it go. Why don’t we try to track down anyone else who thinks this case is being pushed through because the Getty’s have political clout.”

She replied, “If I hear of anyone, I’ll let you know. But I don’t want my name connected with opposing what the bosses want.”

She was not the only one who secretly opposed the Getty Family not paying taxes, but the other attorneys were all scared to speak up no matter what the Internal Revenue Code stated. Besides the pressure to give the Gettys what they wanted, what really bothered me was since when did any state allow for the termination of an irrevocable trust before the date set in the trust deed. The law of trusts dated back 500 years to common-law England, which was adopted by every state in the union. The whole purpose of an irrevocable trust was to keep beneficiaries from invading and dissipating the assets for a period of time. The California trial court had approved the termination of the Sarah C. Getty Trust before its time and distribution of the assets to the Getty family. In effect, the court allowed for the invasion of the assets contrary to the trust deed executed by Sarah C. Getty. The court stated it had the authority under California Trust Code § 1138.1(a)(14). The California Law Revision Commission at 1278 described that section as follows:

**Division of Trusts:** A recently enacted statute provides for the division of a trust into two or more separate trusts upon a showing of good cause and with the consent of all parties in interest. The proposed law eliminates the requirement of obtaining the consent of all parties in interest. Under the proposed law, the trust

may be divided on petition of a trustee or beneficiary where good cause is shown and the court finds that dividing the trust will not defeat or substantially impair the accomplishment of the trust purpose or the interests of the beneficiaries. Division of a trust may be desirable where different members of a family want their own trusts because of a disagreement about how the trust should be administered or because a beneficiary moves to another part of the country and prefers to take his or her part of the trust along.

Sounded exactly like the fact situation for which the Getty lawyers wanted a letter ruling, and exactly what the law of trusts prohibited for centuries and in every state. The section became law one day before the Getty relatives executed their settlement agreement that divided up the assets of the Sarah Trust into six smaller trusts controlled by the different groups of the family. That sounded convenient—too convenient. So I called the California Legislature. None of my higher ups had ever said I couldn't, only that I couldn't talk to the Getty lawyers. After talking to a couple of folks, I was referred to a legislator who had opposed changing the trust law and asked him.

“Why did the legislature change the code?”

“Because the Getty Family wanted it. It's a temporary change that will be on the books for a number of months and then the code will revert back to the old law.”

“California changed the law that every state in the nation adopted from the English common-law on their say so?”

“That's right and that's why I opposed it. You have to understand that the Gettys have a lot of clout in the legislature and the governor's office. Everyone knew this change was to allow the Gettys to revoke the Sarah Getty Trust, take its assets and put them in different trusts so they could do what they wanted with the assets.”

“But that's contrary to the very reason for an irrevocable trust.”

“Right, but that is also why the new law will last for only a handful of months. This section was written so that it would apply to any family which was in the position of the Gettys trying to get at the assets of an irrevocable trust. Of course, they were the only ones in that position.”

“So that’s why the Getty lawyers are in such a rush for the private letter ruling.”

“Right,” the legislator said. “From what I can see, they’re running out of time.”

“So the California legislature enacted a private law to benefit the Gettys because they are rich?”

“That’s the way it works, unfortunately. Any other questions?”

“No not now, thanks.”

Who did these members of one of America’s richest 100 families think they were? Using a state legislature to excuse them from a universal law just to fill their pockets with money. Money that was likely the result of criminal activity, since as Balzac said, “Behind every great fortune there is a great crime.” This really ticked me off, but what to do?

The I.R.S. functions, when it functions at all, based on one key axiom: the tax consequences of a transaction are determined by its substance—not its form. Since the I.R.S. is not bound by a taxpayer’s characterization of a transaction, it should not be bound by a legislative characterization when taxpayers use their influence to get such legislation passed. The California court and the Getty lawyers claimed the six new trusts would simply be a continuation of the Sarah Trust according to California-Getty law. But California law didn’t matter, what matter was how the I.R.S. saw the transaction. The substance of the transaction was that the court approved settlement agreement terminated the Sarah Trust before the Trust deed allowed,

distributed its assets among the beneficiaries who then set up six different trusts with those assets. All of that had tax consequences.

The I.R.S. higher-ups, however, were pushing to give the Gettys what they wanted—no taxes owed. The history of trust law and the I.R.S. tradition of examining the substance of a transaction didn't matter. The Interpretative Section was going to kowtow to this one-percent family with white-shoe lawyers.

So I wrote up a dissent memorandum detailing the Getty Family's "hands across" Sacramento and that under the Revenue Code the transaction would incur regular income and capital gains taxes. Called the Treasury Inspector General's office to report that my bosses were being unduly influenced by the Getty lawyers to give the Getty Family what it wanted despite the law. Talked with one of the attorneys there who said he'd keep an eye of the case, sent him my memo, dropped my memo off in my immediate boss' office, and blew town to work as an associate at Cravath, Swain & Moore. I had enough of the government's Club Fed corruption.

One of the small ironies of my ending up at Cravath was that after the Houston court found Texaco liable for \$10.3 billion plus interest, Texaco hired Cravath to save it from nonexistence. Cravath put Texaco into Chapter 11 bankruptcy, which would protect its assets from Pennzoil executing on the judgment. Cravath then offered Pennzoil \$3 billion, which it accepted in lieu of the judgment. Texaco was saved and subsequently merged with Chevron. As for the Sarah C. Getty Trust, the Family terminated it and used the assets to set up the other trusts. Whether they had to pay taxes on the transaction, I didn't know and quickly didn't care. My focus was on my duties at Cravath working for a smart, cool partner in the litigation department.

Sitting in Cravath's cafeteria for a quick lunch, overlooking Manhattan from 50 odd stories up, I often thought, "So this is what it's like in service to the king." Cravath had its benefits. One weekend while sitting at the bar in a nightclub, I started hitting on this young babe next to me. She wasn't interested until I mentioned my employer was Cravath. Cravath turned every one of its male lawyers into prime meat. Another advantage was that most of the lawyers there were smarter than me—I liked that. No more cowardly Club Fed losers who couldn't argue a legal issue or understand the law. Cravath even held a formal Spring Dance at places such as the Museum of Natural History with a cocktail hour in the gem room. The girls drooled and not over their drinks. The best of the three dances was the one where the Shirelles sang. My date was of the same color, but seemed somewhat embarrassed dancing with a true-blooded Aryan to the Shirelles' hit songs.

After three years, I left Cravath. They asked me to stay, but I was a dope and left.

### Third and Fourth Worlds

1991 and my high school class finally gets around to holding its 25<sup>th</sup> reunion 26 years after graduation. Life was boring at the time, so I challenged an old buddy that I'd go if he did. He was bored too, so we both went—partially as a goof. This one stupid move sealed my fate for the remainder of my existence—thanks of course to a girl. In high school she was one of the "in-crowd"—blonde, blue-eyed, big pillows and a cheerleader while my crowd was purely juvenile delinquents. At the end of our senior year, I'm sitting on the bus waiting for it to leave on the senior class trip with bottles of resealed Coke spiked with rum under my seat. She comes up to me very friendly and starts talking. I'm civil, but the back of mind is screaming—stay away from her. So I did and never saw her again until the 1991 reunion.

She was living in the City, so we saw each other every so often for dinner or a drink. Then she invited me to a barbecue up in Westchester County that one of her friends was holding. Free food and booze in the countryside—I accepted. At the barbecue, I met a professor from Hofstra with connections in the Soviet Union. The Soviet Union was still intact, but Gorbachev was out and Yeltsin was in after the failed summer coup. The professor invited me to a conference in Moscow at the Kremlin sponsored by an organization called Intertraining. It was the creation of the Speaker of the Supreme Soviet of the Soviet Union—Ruslan Imranovich Khasbulatov, who had backed Yeltsin during the failed coup attempt by hardline commies. It's always hard to tell who is behind what in that country or exactly what an organization's aims are, but they would pay my hotel, and all I had to do was get to Moscow in November over Thanksgiving week, so I accepted.

But first, there was a trip to a place south of the border. An attorney friend of mine from Cravath had turned into an eco-Nazi and was planning a trip to Ecuador. He wanted to expose the oil companies ruining the jungle interior by filming their destruction of the pristine habitat.

“If you want, I'll go with you. I have some experience in filming as a field producer at a couple of local news stations.” He agreed, so we flew south in October. On the plane, I was talking with a lady who seemed to know a lot about Ecuador, so I asked her, “Where exactly is this place?” She turns to her female friend and says, “He gets on a plane to fly somewhere but he doesn't know where it is.” They laugh, to which I respond, “Why not? That's part of the adventure and having the confidence to deal with whatever arises.”

On landing in Quito, some official sees us two Americans waiting in the custom's line and escorts us through, skipping the wait. Apparently South America has changed since Nixon visited.



We found a travel agent and hired a guide and boat to meet us on the other side of the Andes in Coca. The official name is Puerto Francisco de Orellana. That's where the Spanish Conquistador Francisco de Orellana set sail down the Rio Napo which flowed into the Amazon taking his band to the Atlantic Ocean. They didn't know where they were going either.

A DC-3 flew us over the Andes to Coca's one runway airport. The Town's streets were mostly made of dirt or mud when it rained. In town we ran into a couple of American guys—that was a surprise. One was a retired military veteran living off his pension, and the other was a BS artist from Chicago. The military guy was cool and lived in Quito. He reminded me of a guy I had roomed with in St. Louis in 1971. He told me to look him up next time I was in Quito.

Before heading off down river the next morning, our guide, my buddy and I had supper at an outdoor café. Of course, given the warm weather most shops could be considered outdoor. Right around dessert and right on time, a hot young Latina walking by nearly jumps in my lap. Fine with me. Anney Rosa worked in a beauty salon in town but her home was Guayaquil in the south. She spoke broken English and was Mestizo, a mix of Spanish and native—more native. We agreed to meet after our eco-filming trip down the Napo.

The wooden boat looked like a large Vietnamese sampan with an out-board motor on the back. In addition to our guide was the boat's owner and operator, who carried a .45. It made sense. Can't exactly dial 911 in the middle of the jungle—not that in America the cops ever arrive on time anyway.

There are really no words to describe traveling down a river wider than the Hudson, looking out on a flat expanse of jungle on either side—it was beautiful with a peace that permeated your conscious and unconscious mind. Toward the end of the day, and here the day went from sun up to sun down—no street lamps cracking the night, we took a side tributary to an

in land lake. Entering the lake, we could hear the jungle noise at close of day from the other side. It was as if the jungle was welcoming us but also warning to leave our arrogance and human idiocy behind or it would destroy us. For me, I felt something never experienced before—that I belonged there.

Over the nearly week of exploring, we filmed a few oil company helicopters disturbing the quiet and the remnants of a couple of small areas of trees felled by Petroecuador. I told my eco buddy that there was no way to picture the beauty of this place. If he wanted to convince government officials to save it, he'd have to bring them to visit in person.

Most of our time was taking in the environment. One night, we sat down with a native family for super and liquor made by the women chewing yucca then spitting it into jars for fermentation. The alcoholic drink is called masato. As long as it came from girls' mouths and not guys, that was fine we me—no danger of AIDs. Another evening, we camped by a lagoon. The presence of a dugout canoe allowed me to paddle around the lagoon by myself in the pitch black dark with only the camp fire as a beacon back to my civilized companions. Before hitting the sack every night a little after sundown, you had to check the inside of your sleeping bag to make sure nothing had crawled in. Never slept better.

Come morning at sun up, we'd take some muddy water from the river and boil it for coffee. The boiling killed nature's poisons but not man's. Swimming was okay even though our guide would catch out of the same place Piranha for dinner. A course I refrained from because of my allergy to anything coming out of the water, except mermaids.

On one occasion we pulled up alongside the bank where I saw some orchards through the underbrush—naturally I wanted to bring one back to Anney. Jumped out of the boat, through the brush, cut off an orchard, turned around to go back—I was lost. Had no idea which way to go.

The jungle had warned me not to act like an idiot. Doomed seized me, but then my buddy yelled out, “Where are you?” That told me which way to go. The boat was only about ten yards away, but there was no telling that in the jungle.

Back to Coca with my orchard for Anney, a couple of dates and my promise to visit again for New Year’s Eve.

My buddy and I headed off to another jungle town, Lago Agrio, by bus—actually by the roof of the bus. The buses have small railings on top for overflow passengers who hang on while sitting on the roof and praying for no sudden stops. We weren’t overflow but chose the roof for fun. The bus pulled into a couple of no-horse towns with dirt roads as stops along the way. Some locals sold unknown food to the passengers before the bus continued its route.

Lago Agrio was relatively large, around 40,000 people, and sported one night club still called a “discothèque.” We checked it out, but there wasn’t anyone there except a few rundown prostitutes. Next day, we flew back to Quito and then on to the asphalt jungle—New York City.

Anney didn’t have a telephone, actually nearly everybody in Coca didn’t. The town did have a telephone center where calls and telegrams could be sent. Regular mail service also worked. Anney would call me and I’d call her right back at the center number to save her money or send a telegram or letter. So we kept in touch.

In November, I hopped a plane for the remnants of the evil empire. Landed at Moscow’s Sheremetyevo International Airport, which looked like Newark’s Airport from 1965—the past still lived in Russia. Had no idea where to go but then hear my name over the load speaker telling me where to meet my ride into town. If anything, this conference was organized.

Intertraining housed the conference guesses at the Intourist Hotel, a half block from the Kremlin where the conference was held. The hotel was one of the special locations where

foreigners were allowed to stay in the Soviet Union—presumably for eaves dropping purposes. Twenty-two stories of grey concrete and glass owned by the Moscow City government, it housed more prostitutes plying their trade than a Nevada brothel. Back then, the government owned everything, including the prostitutes.

The rooms weren't bad by dorm standards and the beds more comfortable than a cot. The Soviet Union was paying for my accommodation, so why complain. Every floor had a dowdy, oversized lady manning a desk by the elevator. Couldn't figure out why until later.

The Conference assigned me a young co-ed as my translator and KGB escort. Not a problem, since I got to pull a 007 by taking her up to my hotel room. As soon as we entered, the dowdy floor lady was banging on the door. My escort answered and sent the floor lady on her way.

“What was that about?” I asked.

“She thought I was one of the hotel's prostitutes who are required to pay her when they visit a guest.”

Of course my escort wasn't a prostitute in that sense but an independent contractor for the KGB. Why should I care? Her body was soft and I had no secrets.

The Conference took place at the Kremlin Palace of Congresses, which Nikita Khrushchev had built as a modern arena for Communist Party meetings in 1961. At the end of a few days of innumerable speeches in the building's auditorium, all the participants were invited to the oversized banquet hall on the top floor. The Soviets had a knack for the large. Major city streets were as wide as Interstate highways in the U.S. So how did pedestrians ever make it to the other side—they constructed pedestrian passages under the streets.

The banquet hall had plenty of food and vodka, but I couldn't figure out what some of platters were offering—not turkey, not ham, not salami. So I dubbed it “generic meat,” which tasted like Spam. Must have been left over from World War II when the U.S. shipped supplies to the Soviets to help their war effort.

Speaking of shipping, the Conference shipped me off to Kursk with my KGB escort—  
“where I asked her?”

“Kursk,” she said. “It is south of Moscow where the largest tank battle ever was fought during the Great Patriotic War.” That’s how Russians refer to Stalin’s bungling of the time rather than World War II. “We defeated the Germans there, which was a turning point in the war.”

“So why am I being sent there, not that I mind seeing historic sites.”

“The Supreme Soviet has decided to dissolve the Soviet Union and replace it with a Commonwealth of Independent States. Russia intends to open its doors to democracy and capitalism, so after decades of isolation, Intertraining wants to establish contacts between current Communist Party officials and Westerners.”

“They want to get in on the ground floor of capitalism.”

“Yes,” she said.

It made sense, but that wasn't the truth. As I later learned through a couple of failed business ventures and various contacts, the former commies, now ardent capitalists, considered business the way the mob does in America. Sucker your partner into investing, then take the money and run. Or if the joint venture is successful, use the country's warped laws to kick the Western investor out or have him liquidated. It only cost a couple of grand to hire a Chechen hit man or black widow.

Such really wasn't much of a change from the Soviet Union's bad-old days. The Soviet Union had a population of 300 million but only 17 million belong to the Communist Party. They were the elite and the way to move up the Party ladder was to lie, cheat and deceive. For pretty babes, it also included their bodies. The higher up in the Party meant more consumer goods, better food, nicer apartments and dachas and the power to push others around. But now the Party was dead and all those perks were disappearing. So what to do—scam some Westerner, which was the real reason for sending me to Kursk. Power in the Soviet Union had turned on a dime from Party loyalty to the almighty dollar.

In Kursk, we toured a little, played around a little, and I made a couple of speeches about doing business with the West. Nobody understood my speeches, but smilingly congratulated me on my acumen, public speaking and quickly followed up with “Let's make a deal for our mutual interest.” That meant invest hard currency in my scheme. I looked at a few, since at the time I had some money before being pink-listed by America's PC-Feminists.

My escort and I were taken to a bottling plant that produced a Russian liqueur. After a few free samples—great taste, nice effect, the CEO asked me to arrange for financing its importation into the U.S. “Sure,” I half drunkenly responded. When I got back to the 20<sup>th</sup> century—America, I checked out the possibility. Turned out the liqueur was banned in the U.S. because the D.E.A. considered one of the ingredients a narcotic. No wonder it tasted so good.

Before leaving Moscow for the U.S., my KGB escort and I were walking passed a post office. Above the door was a digital clock that said 14:10. Seemed strange, but then I remembered the Soviet Union was on military time. Later in the day on our way back to the hotel, the clock was still reading 14:10.

“Looks like your post office's clock is stuck.” I said.

She responded, “That’s not a clock—it’s a Geiger counter. It measures radiation.”

“Radiation! America hasn’t started the war yet.”

“I know silly. The Government used to freely give uranium to scientists and some businesses in the hope of moving into the atomic age. But there was no way for disposing of the uranium once it was spent but still radioactive. So they dumped it here and there. One of the newer parts of Moscow State University was built on radioactive land fill.”

“The students must have loved that.”

“Some came down with radiation sickness, which is how it was discovered.”

“Next time I’m here, I’ll bring my Brooks Brothers lead-lined suit.”

She laughed, and we kissed goodbye until my next visit.

Another deal by way of an American lawyer whom I had met at the Intertraining Conference presented itself. The commie bosses of the country’s North Caucasus Railroad, headquartered in Rostov-on-Don and serving the Black Sea, Georgia and those violent insurrection areas of Chechnya, Dagestan and Ingushetia, wanted to computerize their system. The other American lawyer had made the initial contact and even had a client who could do it. The objective sounded reasonable and doable, so we worked together on it. Back in the States, we put together a plan with his client, and on a later trip the following summer, the three of us presented it to the Railroad’s CEO and his staff in Rostov.

The way business worked after the fall of the Soviet Union was for westerners and the bureaucratic bosses, or biscrats, of a government entity to enter a joint venture. The biscrats would be secret partners in the joint venture. Basically, the bosses of government entities set up private companies in which the bosses are partners and then contracted with the government entity that they controlled. All the bosses needed was for some western firm to provide goods or

services to the joint venture of which the western firm was also a partner. The joint venture then sold the goods or services to the government entity for a nice profit. But the deal by Russian standards didn't end there. Once the goods or services were provided the government entity, the bosses in the joint venture would set up a separate company without the westerners and transferred the government contract, along with payments, to the new company. Under Russian law, there was nothing the westerners could do about it. The bosses would then exchange the rubles paid by the government entity for dollars and wire the money to accounts in the U.S. using banks with branches in Russia such as the Bank of New York. Or just carry the cash with them on a visit to the U.S. and put it in a safe deposit box.

On one tour of Russian bankers to NYC that was sponsored by the Soviet American Banking Law Working Group ("SABLAW"), the First Deputy Chairman of Russia's Central Bank asked a bank manager, "How secure are these safe deposit boxes?" "Complete security and secrecy," the bank manager said. Clearly the First Deputy didn't want someone walking off with his ill gotten gains.

In the nineties, all the bureaucrats were trying to fleece the Russian Government, which owned all the assets, and transfer money and themselves to America. An estimated \$1 billion a month flowed out of Russia.

In our deal, the government owned railroad would buy the computers and computer services from the joint venture and pay the joint venture to set up and service the computer system. That way the bosses of the railroad benefited from having the government owned railroad enter into a contract that secretly paid them government funds through the joint venture. We would also benefit since our company Data Rail was a partner in the joint venture. But then they tried to convince us to send them hundreds of thousands of dollars in computers but no



software that would enable the computers in the network to talk to each other, which was necessary for any computerization of the railroad. It became clear they would just have turned around and sold the computers, a premium item at the time in Russia and laughed at the stupid Americans.

Our summer trip to Rostov-on-Don, however, was memorable. One of the executives had us over for a shashlik barbecue and swimming in the Azov sea. The sea was polluted, but when the executive's 15 year-old daughter came out in her itty bitsy tiny weenie bikini, all fears of pollution disappeared. These Russian girls learn early how to manipulate men.

The demographics of Russia generally had brunette and black haired girls in the south, but as you moved north they became redheads, blondes and in Kalingrad platinum blondes with legs that went on forever. Under the commies people had been frozen in place and the southern brunettes and black haired girls probably result from the Mongol invasions that never made it as far north as Kalingrad.

The travails of trying to conduct some type of business with the New Russians in the 1990s taught me that unless they were your friends, they acted just like the con artists in the Abbott and Costello TV show. Businessmen, professors, lawyers and government officials all flooded into the country with vain attempts to establish a new economic order of capitalism under the rule of law. The only result was to massage these foreigners' egos and transfer dollars to the New Russians. Basically the nation was a land of RICOs, populated with robber bureaucrats. First Yeltsin, then Putin, were the boss of bosses. Someday the Russians may learn that in a country of Machiavellians, even the Machiavellians lose.

With all the lunacy and attempts to separate me from my money, I still liked Russia. Every time I visited or when working there, which was often from 1991 to 2001, I learned something about myself—cheaper and more fun than using a shrink.

In between trips to medieval Russia, or what I called the Fourth World, and my modicum of a legal practice, I returned to Ecuador to see Anney off and on from 1991 to 1993. As promised, in 1991 I headed back to see her for New Year's Eve in Coca—rather a long way to go for a party. My late 20<sup>th</sup> Century flight landed in Quito, but there were no early 20<sup>th</sup> Century flights from Quito to Coca, so I took a bus. It was packed with people standing in the aisle, but no one on the roof—too dangerous. Up it chugged along these narrow semi-paved roads of the Andes with steep mountain slopes on one side and sheer cliffs on the other. Boy, I hoped the driver didn't do drugs like some of NYC's subway operators. The bus didn't sound too good, probably built in the 1940s, but it did make it to the top of the Andes before breaking down completely.

The driver told each passenger something in Spanish, which I did not understand having taken only two years in high school that I barely passed. Should have paid more attention to my Spanish teacher, but she wasn't hot like my English teacher—so I didn't. Sitting on a rock along side the now useless bus, the driver came up to me, gave his speech, took my ticket, ripped it up and gave me a few Sucres refund. The message was clear—you're on your own now gringo. Everyone else also got a refund and with some urgency started waving down cars, trucks and buses and negotiating a price for a ride—in Spanish. What's the rush, I thought, it was high noon, sunny and warm. Did they know something I didn't? My ignorance didn't faze me; I was wearing my Brooks Brothers blue blazer.

After everyone had finally caught a ride, I decided to give it a try. Along came a bus, going who knows where, it stopped, I hopped aboard, opened my wallet for the driver who took out some Sucre and away we went with me standing in the aisle since there were no seats. The bus ironically ended up by late afternoon in Lago Agrio. The same town my Cravath eco-pal had been in months earlier. A Dutch couple on the same bus told me there were no buses leaving for Coca that day. So I stood there on a wooden sidewalk looking at a row of vehicles pulled up as though they were horses in an 1800s town in the West. A guy comes out of a store heading toward his pickup truck and I say “Coca?” “Si,” he responds. Somehow we negotiated a fare with me riding in the back in my khaki pants and blue blazer.

By the time we leave Lago Agrio, night is falling. Off we zoom down dilapidated roads surrounded by the jungle—this guy drove fast, guess he knew the roads. Except for the pickup’s lights, it was pitch black. What Joseph Conrad would call the “Heart of Darkness,” but for me it was inviting. After about an hour the pickup’s lights go out and it slides off the road as the driver hits the breaks. Now it’s really dark, but I’m still wearing my blue blazer and the confidence of a NYC resident enjoying himself. The driver gets out and opens the hood with me next to him while the engine is still running. In the dark he reaches his hand toward the engine and, of course, the fan clips his finger—only slightly, luckily for him. One of the Sliz boys actually did the same thing in high school after buying booze upstate; he was lucky too.

“Espere,” I say and go back to my duffle bag and grab a flash light. With the man-made light, he was able to get the head lights working. We hit the jungle road again. Around 11 pm we roll into Coca, I thank him, turn around and Anney jumps on me. Apparently she was worried—for me or the future she envisioned for herself. She had spent much of the night wandering the main street looking for me.

New Year's Eve in that jungle town was mark by the natives burning effigies in the middle of the roads.

“What's going on,” I asked.

Anney said, “It's ‘los años viejos’. People make large dolls often of people they dislike with signs detailing their sins. At mid-night everyone lights them on fire. They are trying to forget the bad of the past year and the hope the New Year will be better.”

“Sounds like forgiveness to me,” I replied. “Wouldn't the new year be better if they remembered the past evil of these people so that they could then punish them and get justice?”

“That's venganza!” She said disapprovingly.

“What's the difference?” I replied. That stumped her.

Next day we hitchhiked down the Rio Napo to Primera Vez, a jungle motel on the river's banks. Traveling down the Napo was a breeze. We'd stand on the bank and Anney would wave at a boat going down river. Just like on the highways of America, some passed us by, but one eventually pulled over to the shore. Anney would negotiate our ride and I'd pay the Suces. Sometimes we'd be let off on the bank of the Napo—no town, just sand to stand on and the ever presented jungle—when our ride of the moment turned down another river. We'd wait for another boat to come along and pick us up. At Primera Vez we ate a pretty good dinner. But on the way back to our hut, the motel's giant pig took a disliking and chased us to the door. To which I responded with part of an S.D.S. anti-war slogan, “Today's pig is tomorrow's bacon.”

On my next trip to Anney in March 1992, I looked up the retired military guy in Quito on my way to Coca. We hit a few nightclubs and he introduced me to one of the 12 guys running for the Presidency of Ecuador—a lawyer. The lawyer was looking for an idea he could use in his campaign for getting Ecuador out of its stifling debt burden to foreign governments. After my

trip, I sent him a paper that basically advised him as President to threaten default, the debt instruments would drop in value, then have Ecuador secretly buy many of them. Afterwards, announce Ecuador's intentions to honor its debts. That would send their value up at which point Ecuador could sell for a profit to be used to pay off the remaining instruments. Repeat this a few times. He liked the idea but he came in dead last in the election.

In Coca there was a big dance, but Anney was apprehensive about us going.

"They might try to rob you," she worried.

"I doubt it. The only country I've ever been in where people try to violate my rights is America. Go get dress."

Anney finally came out of my hotel bathroom. There's something about a dark skin girl with long black hair, fathomless dark pupils and wearing a shoulder-less, short bright red dress. She looked more delicious than a Fanny Farmer chocolate covered caramel.

The Third World Jungle Dance was nice. Not unlike the dances during my high school years only there were no fights or disputes. People arm themselves in the jungle, which creates a unique atmosphere of civility.

Anney needed to go home to visit her family in Guayaquil and give them some of her savings from working in Coca. Third World families use children as capital investments. The children earn money and turn it over to help the family survive. Years later, I mentioned this in class a Columbia University's School of International Affairs. The Feminazis in the class erupted as though mothers only had children for altruistic reasons. What malarkey, even mothers in the U.S. and Europe have kids to support them and seal a wife's hold over her husband. The class descended into a shouting match with the teaching assistant turning his chair to face the wall, hoping he could disappear. Not so for me; I was relishing the confrontation. These

pampered American bimbettes should have known better. After all, they wore piercings in their noses, which reminded me of Third World savages walking around with bones in their noses. The bimbettes emulation of the savages should have made them realize that children are often viewed as capital investments.

After class, the teaching assistant told me, “I sorry I didn’t put a stop to that ruckus.”

“Not a problem,” I replied. “Fighting the zealots of ignorance is always a pleasure.” He laughed.

Anney and I took an overnight bus to Quito where we stayed at the Corrion Hotel. She made me rent two rooms—one for her and one for me. Appearances are always more important to girls than the reality—she stayed in my room. She had a little problem taking a shower. She was able to turn the water on for a bath, but didn’t realize that for a shower she had to pull up the knob on the tub spout. What do you expect for the Third World, but then years later while on a road trip in the U.S. with a friend sporting a master’s degree, he had the same trouble. Maybe they were related. Anney was half Indian and my friend was trying to cash in on Indian casinos by claiming he was part Indian. Maybe that’s the real reason Elizabeth Warren claimed she was an Injun.

Anney wanted to go to Mitad del Mundo.

“What’s that? I asked.

“It is the middle of the world. It has ancient meaning for us in Ecuador as where the gods live.”

Sounded as though her native Jungian archetypes were surfacing. The Quitu-Cara culture, which thrived in the area from 2000 B.C. to the Conquistadors, built monuments

marking the middle of the world as a special place for their gods. How they knew where the equator was is beyond me.

“Fine, I’ve never met a god. Are the goddesses hot?”

“Stop! You muy malo. Show el respeto.”

We took a bus out to the large stone monument with a metal globe on the top that represented the world. The monument, built in 1980, was supposed to sit on the equator, which the country is named after. But in true Third World fashion, they missed the exact equator by 240 meters.

The place was pretty much deserted—quiet and strangely peaceful. Maybe the middle of the world would be a nice place to live, but what would one do there, if one were not an ancient god.

Back in Quite we hit a disco, and the next day took a plane to Guayaquil. Guayaquil was a port city in southern Ecuador on the Guayas River where it flowed into the Pacific. The city was vast and sprawling with some multiple story buildings in the center. Most, however, consisted of concrete houses without windows, without running water. Periodically a water truck would come around to each house to supply it with drinking and bathing water. The houses did have electricity to play the ever constant Latin music on the radio that blared throughout the ghetto—or in Spanish, the barrio. The music started early in the morning lasted until late a night. I couldn’t figure out why the incessant music. Then one day I awoke to no music. Went out to look around and then I realized the reason. Without the music, this dilapidate, hopeless place of human existence became unbearably depressing. Anney didn’t seem to mind, she knew everybody having been chosen the “Princess of the Barrio” the previous year before she went to Coca.

Anney had what she called a couple of brothers and a sister, along with lots of aunts, uncles and cousins. Her mother, who clearly disliked me, which was fine, since I felt the same about her, had multiple husbands producing multiple siblings. Anney even referred to family friends as relatives—a classic Third World extended family. Guess it helps them survive. At one of her extended family's gatherings, it seemed as though everyone played an instrument and sang. Music and dancing were unusually important to them. None of them could understand why I couldn't play an instrument. That was easy. Mother, a piano player herself, adamantly refused to allow me to take up an instrument in fourth grade. Father, a xylophone player, as usual, backed her up—should have escaped those two loons back then.

Anney's family found my parents' forbiddance unbelievable, as did I. But I eventually made up for it by taking a music theory course at Juilliard. Besides, if I can manage to end up in the same circle of Hell as those two parents, I'll be able to fight them for eternity. This time, I'll win because now it'll be an adult they face and one who's a lot meaner than they.

Anney told me never to leave her house at night. Fine, no place to go in this neighborhood—not unlike the small town where I grew up in New Jersey. We frequently went to the city center and sometimes Anney bought custom jewelry, with my money of course.

“This is very hard to fine in Guayaquil,” she said. “I would like to start a business selling it. Many girls want it because they cannot afford real jewelry.”

Anything to attract a man's eye, but it set off the light in my mind. “I can fine this stuff easily in America and very cheap. Why don't we go into business? I'll bring a duffle bag of it next trip, you try to sell it and we'll see if such a business makes sense.” She readily agreed and I liked the idea of making money to finance my travels there.



Once she took me to a plaza built on the bank of the Guayas River that commemorated a meeting between Simon Bolivar and San Martin in 1822. In the center, was a sculpture of the two shaking hands. These two are considered the liberators of South America from the Spanish. The plaza was built in such a way that a person near a wall on one end need only whisper and a person at the other end near the same wall would clearly hear what was said. We sat on a bench and I dozed off with my head in her lap. But when I awoke, I was staring back in time to the dinosaur era. This five foot long iguana was hanging on a tree apparently sizing me for a snack. That got me on my feet and us out of there. Anney, naturally laughed. These lizards were common place down there. That night we went to a nightclub in the city center with her friends. Not bad, up on the 20<sup>th</sup> floor looking out at the lights of the dirt poor ghetto.

Anney and her sister or cousin, I could never get the relations straight and I figured neither could she, took a trip to Salinas on the Pacific Ocean. Salinas is a resort town that reminded me of Miami Beach only quieter and cheaper. It's on a peninsula that juts out into the Pacific with a huge semi-circular beach lacking in signs of "Private property, stay off." The water was as warm as a bathtub. Guys along the beach would rent rides on small rafts with wooden planks over oil barrels used for bouncy. The raft operators would peddle us around the bay or we'd just sit on the raft moving with only the waves rolling into the beach. It was quiet, peaceful, and just beautiful.

Back in Guayaquil, Anney and her sister left me at my hotel—no more of the barrio for me. That night, it started pouring rain, never saw the likes of it before. Next day, went out in my Brooks Brothers shorts and Lacoste polo shirt to grab a cab to Anney's. There were none because the street was two feet deep in water and the rain kept falling. I figured a dam broke somewhere, or maybe the end of the world—but I couldn't be that lucky. It was warm out, the

water was warm, so I sloshed around the streets to take in the sight of this biblical punishment or cleansing. Next day, the sun was out and the flood waters gone. Anney explained that such torrential downpours and flooding periodically happen in Ecuador and are called “El Nino.”

Anney had to get back to work at the beauty salon in Coca, but she didn’t want to go the round about way by plane to Quito and then bus to Coca.

“Let’s cut straight through the Orient to Coca,” she suggested. Orient means deepest, darkest jungle with natives shooting poison darts that kill by paralyzing your respiratory system. At least, that’s what I was taught in my fourth grade social studies class. Now, one of those female natives wanted to take me on a three day trip, assuming I made it to the end, across the heart of the forbidden jungle I had learned about in fourth grade. Our books had depicted the region as dangerous, deadly, pagan and uncivilized. Of course, us guys liked the idea of girls walking around without tops, so it couldn’t be all bad.

“Okay,” I agreed, “Let’s go.”

A bus took us to Riobamba in the middle of the Andes. Riobamba traced its roots back to the Inca Empire in the 1500s, and then the Conquistadors took it over. We caught one of the barbarian festivals common in the third world that commemorates a time of wide spread tribal human butchery. The likes of which PCers in the first world ignorantly idealize. The only way to shut up these PCers about the natives is to send them back in time to be butchered by the “noble” savages.

From Riobamba we took a bus down the Andes into the Orient to Puerto Misahuallí. There we stayed in a small hotel, The Albergue Espanol, owned by a French lawyer.

The owner told us that “After I made some money as a lawyer in Paris, I decided to get out of that place. Always wanted to run a small hotel, so here I am.”

Maybe true, maybe not, I thought, but he served a damn good supper.

Anney and I went for a walk in the night. There's no daylight savings time in Ecuador, so after supper, it's dark. The only lights came from this small town on the western bank of the Rio Napo where we were standing at the water's edge. Everywhere else was pitched dark other than a few reflections of incandescent light off the jungle trees on the bank at the other side. There was no moon. We could hear plenty of jungle noise from the living organism on the other side. The visage and sounds were alluring. Not unlike Ulysses' sirens only more fundamental and deeper. Again the sensation that there is where I belong.

In the morning we rented a sampan with an outboard motor and hired its owner as our guide. We pushed off down the Rio Napo toward Coca. This was still the dry season, so the sun was out, warm but not hot as we followed the current down the Napo. Sitting at the very front of the boat with just the river, jungle, sun and blue sky in sight provided a sense of belonging to the underlying mysteries of nature.

After a while, Anney told the owner to stir over to a small dock on the Jungle bank. She led me a little way into the interior to find a bunch of guys making curare. That's the poison I had read about in fourth grade that South American tribes use on their darts. Great, why did she bring us here, and how did she know what that dock would lead to? Never figured that out, although I may have missed an opportunity to deal with some of my future enemies back home. Near night fall, we arrived in Coca and went to one of its two decent motels.

While in Coca, I came down with cholera—boy you should have seen how people avoided me then. Anney took me to a doctor who shot me up with the largest hypodermic I ever saw, naturally in the rear. It must have been packed with every antibiotic made, but it did the trick.

Anney went back to work and I to New York. On my next trip I brought along a duffle bag of custom jewelry for her to start selling. In Quito, before flying into Coca—no more of those bus rides over the Andes, I looked up the defeated candidate for President. He showed me around his floor wide office in one of the downtown office buildings. Nice view, but I didn't see any filing cabinets. Maybe he kept them locked up in a secure room. At his desk, he said, "My wife wants to get a visa to America, so she can go shopping in New York City. Could you stop by the U.S. Embassy to find out what she has to do?" I had a day before flying into Coca, so I said, "Sure, not a problem."

Just then he received a telephone call. Took out a piece of paper, put in on the glass top of his desk and wrote something down. The conversation was in Spanish, so I didn't understand any of it.

After he hangs up, he tells me, "That was a judge in one of my cases wanting to know whether my client was willing to pay him more than the opposing party for a favorable ruling. I told him I'd ask my client and get back to him."

Then he looked over his notes and put the paper through a shredder. That's why there were no filing cabinets because there were no files and why he wrote on a glass top desk—no impressions. Here, the legal practice relied on who paid the most in bribes.

Next day at the U.S. Embassy, I met with one of its officials. "I'm trying to help the wife of an Ecuadorian friend obtain a visa to the NYC. What do I have to do?"

He asked her name, which I provided and then said as though not surprised, "We know who she is and who she's married to. She's Russian and he's a lawyer for the drug cartels in South America. There's no way we will let his wife or any relative of his into the U.S."

"Okay, I guess that's that," I replied.

“Be careful,” he added.

Looked like the U.S. didn't want his wife laundering money for him through some New York bank. I told the lawyer the Embassy's response.

“Thanks for trying,” he said. “I understand you'll be coming back to Quito with your girl friend in a week before you go back to New York. Give me a call, you two can stay with my wife and me at our house.”

“Will do and thanks for the invite.”

In Coca, Anney and I spent our time traveling through the jungle and hitching rides up and down the Napo. It was great. We finally emerged after about a week in the jungle to immediately take a plane to Quito where I called my Ecuadorian lawyer friend. He and his wife picked us up at the airport in his black Mercedes. His wife was the typical hot looking blue-eyed Russian blonde but looked at us somewhat strangely. We drove to an “elusive” valley of large houses outside Quito. Nice life style. After showering with hot water, a welcome change from the cold muddy water of the Napo, we met the lawyer and his wife in their overly large living room.

His wife said, “You two look completely different than when we picked you up. You look civilized.”

That surprised me. Guess too much time in the jungle can change ones physical appearance and maybe more.

We all laughed and then went out to dinner with a body guard.

After eating, our host leaned back and patted his prodigious stomach saying “the perks of success.” Then there was this loud metal clang on the floor. The lawyer's .45 Colt had fallen out of his belt. He clearly had enemies.

Next day, he had his bodyguard drive Anney and I to the airport. She was flying to Guayaquil and I to NYC. On the way the driver became suspicious of a car behind us that he could not lose. So he slowed down in order to get up even with it, pulled out his .45 Colt, waived it around in a threatening manner and the car sped off. One way to deal with obnoxious drivers.

The driver let us off outside the terminal; we thanked him for the show and went inside. We hadn't gotten five feet when a couple of guys flashed their Interpol credentials and took us to separate rooms. No questions, they just searched my luggage and told me where to wait for Anney. It took a while, but she came out boiling mad. They did more than search her bag, they did a cavity search. Boy was she ticked. Apparently someone is keeping tabs on my Ecuadorian lawyer friend and who visits him.

Anney finally calmed down, I went to my gate and she to hers.

The next trip, I again brought along a duffle bag of custom jewelry, but this time at her direction, we met in Guayaquil.

"There's more customers in Guayaquil than Quito, so I can make more money here." She said.

"That makes sense," I replied. "There are more girls in Guayaquil."

When we finally got around to talking about my 50% share of the profits—there were none. My profits went for this or that alleged emergency. I gave her the new bag of jewelry and hung around for a few days.

At the Guayaquil airport for my flight back home, we passengers walked out onto the tarmac and up the old fashion aircraft mobile staircase into the plane. Another reminder of Newark airport when I first had gone off to college. Just before entering the plane, I turned

around to see Anney outside on the terminal the deck waving goodbye, swinging her right arm back and forth. I waived goodbye and entered the plane knowing I'd never see her again and never did. Foolish little girl, she shouldn't have violated our business agreement by taking my share of the profits. From now on, I'm sticking to the Fourth World, Russia, and exploratory expeditions in the asphalt jungle—Manhattan.

#### From Russia With Love

In Russia, off and on during the rest of the nineties, I wrote a number of articles for newspapers and research papers for a few government agencies, such as the Ministry of Foreign Economic Affairs. Also made a number of speeches. The most interesting was at the Kremlin Palace of Congresses at another Intertraining conference in 1993. One of the officials saw me in the audience and came out to ask me if I had a paper to present. "Sure," I answered. "It's on the problems with foreign assistance." "Okay," he said. "We'll get you a translator and call you to the podium shortly."

They called my name and up to the stage I went where I was joined by the translator. Stepping behind the lectern, I saw it was cover with green velvet—nice, then I realized this is same place where Khrushchev threatened to bury guys like me. The images of him shaking his fist in the air from this podium were still vivid in my memory. My speech didn't last nearly as long as his speeches and there was no fist shaking.

My paper warned about how foreign aid from Western governments and private loans were conditioned on Russia buying American goods rather than it being invested in Russia's manufacturing capacity. Investment in the means of production (I figured they'd understand that term) would allow Russia to manufacture such goods itself. In addition, the burden of repaying billions of dollars would require Russia to become a Third World exporter of its natural

resources because that was the only way to earn hard currency to make the yearly payments on the loans. It couldn't manufacture goods to sell on the world market for hard currency because its manufacturing capacity was antiquated—no one would buy their goods, unless production was modernized. With each new debt, the noose would tighten around Russia's future as a manufacturing nation because greater amounts of hard currency must pay an ever increasing debt service rather than being invested in Russian industries. So, as long as Russia relied on Western loans it would never have sufficient capital to modernize its industries to the point where they could compete with Western industries. In the end, foreign loans would require Russia to sell its most valuable assets at bargain basement prices, eventually drive Russia into default as happened to Latin American countries in the 1980s, and wipe out the savings of average Russians.

The officials sitting in a row on the dais in back of me didn't like my warnings. They wanted foreign loans from Western governments and private entities because they would be the ones to control the money or the goods purchased. They knew they were just going to pocket the funds or resell the goods and then pocket the funds. It wouldn't do the country any good but would make these bureaucratic mobsters rich. The West would write the money off, and no one in Russia could do a damn thing about it because the only enforcement authority in Russia for 70 years was the Communist Party, which was dead. The Chairman, seated above and right behind me started ringing this bell for me to finish and to make it quick. Damn, that was loud and eliminated any possibility of shouting over it. Find, I'll go back to the hot young lady I was with in the audience.

When the conference wrapped up and on the way out, an older Russian official from the audience asked me for my autograph—that never happened before. With my autograph in hand, he said, "It was good to hear such honesty." A lawyer being praised for honesty—clearly this



country was warped. My paper ended up being published by some academic center at Moscow State University. It did no good. Five years later, August 1998, Russia fell into an economic crisis over foreign payments and devalued the ruble that wiped out the savings of most Russians.

When in Russia, I saw a lot of the best ballet in the world. My girl friends changed, two got married, but whoever it was, we'd go down to the Bolshoi or one of the other two excellent ballet companies in Moscow and buy a couple of center row orchestra tickets from the scalpers for five dollars. I tried the box seats a few times, but they were always too far from the ladies in tights or if close enough, you couldn't see part of the stage and would miss some of the dancing.

One of my sojourns to the still evil empire was as part of a group of American professors trying to help the country change to a "market economy," that is, capitalism. The group had a meeting with the U.S. Ambassador to Russia to help spur their efforts onward. We walked into the ambassador's office and their sitting behind the ambassador's desk was Robert Strauss. Damn, so he's the ambassador, hope he's near-sighted. I fell back behind some tall guy to avoid Strauss, assuming he remembered, recognizing me from his Democratic Convention press conference. The professors asked a few questions, Strauss gave encouragement, apparently didn't recognize me or chose not to, and we all left with me leading the exit.

During the 1990s a lot of Americans were traveling to Russia. Some legit businessmen looking for a new market, others out for a good time with the young-pretty Russian girls more than willing to sell themselves for U.S. dollars. One retired businessman from Prudential was doing both. On a number of occasions he invited me and others down to his house in Princeton. The same house where Woodrow Wilson had lived. Nice place, even complete with a ballroom. On one occasion he had a New Russian and his young wife over. So while he and the New Russian lied to each other about how they could make a lot of money together, I gave the wife a

tour of the house. We played around a little in the ballroom, then went back to the two bloviating drunks upstairs.

### Private Eyes

My efforts to make money in the U.S.S.R. weren't going so well, as with most foreigners, but I was still alive, which some of the others weren't. Thinking Columbia University's School of International Affairs might help I enrolled. One of the girls in my study group was Muslim from Morocco and nice looking. So I asked her out. "No," she said.

"Why not?" I asked.

"Because you are an infidel!"

This girl was attending a modern American University, but she was still ruled by the idiocy of the 700s.

The School of International Affairs was a joke. The entire program was academic pretentious nonsense that had nothing to do with reality, so I transferred over to the Business School and concentrated in finance.

An MBA should help land a job with a Western investment bank in Russia. While the dollar is king in America, in Russia it is a god. Columbia was a strange place. It didn't grade with numbers but had a system of H, HP and P, LP—high, high pass, pass, low pass. No one flunked-out because the school was trying to dumb down the smart people who worked hard and pull up the dumb and lazy people. Sounded like commie Russia. The school also pushed this team concept where the collective made decisions without dissent—also patterned on commie Russia.

The Human Behavior class indoctrinated the concept of everyone kowtowing to the dictatorship of the group. Everyone in the class was part of a group. Each group was required to

create a videotape on the subject of its choice for a class project. Our project was on “power” and we fought back and forth until its completion—no commie consensus here. When all the video projects were submitted, the professor had the members of each group fill out a questionnaire on the process each group went through making its video. We got a HP or B and asked the professor why not an H or A. She said, “Your video was by far the best I ever saw teaching this class. But it involved too much dissention and disagreement, which was shown in the questionnaires you answered.” So by Columbia’s standards, the result didn’t matter, just that it was achieved in a sheep-like manner. More commie Russia thinking.

After graduating in 1997, again with honors, I headed back to Russia looking for an investment banking job. Interviewed with a number of firms, but they weren’t interested due to my advanced age. Then I saw an article in the Moscow Times about the Kroll Associates office in Moscow.

In America, Kroll Associates was the modern-day version of the Pinkertons, a private detective and security agency founded in 1850, or the real-life corporate version of Spade & Archer. Back when I was doing research in the media, Kroll was referred to now and then as conducting various investigations. On a lark, I sent my resume to Kroll’s manager, an American, and we met. He said Kroll was looking for someone to market its services in Russia—not to Russian companies but to Western Companies. That was fine with me and after going through the firm’s background check; I was hired to start in July 1999.

So what exactly did Kroll do in Russia? The company provided information to its Western clients on the Russians its clients were thinking of doing business with or entering into joint ventures. The information, essentially anything you wanted to know about a person or organization in Russia, came from government officials in return for U.S. dollars in cash. Kroll

kept its own slush fund for paying officials. Kroll also provided security for Western executives, such as protecting them with moonlighting militiamen, Federal Security Service members or military men, usually toting machine guns. Part of the security protection included sweeping offices and apartments for wire taps—a favorite of the Russian government for gathering information. On one occasion a Ford executive’s apartment had listening devices implanted in the walls. Boy, did that tick him off.

### Physical

Russia and Ecuador weren’t exactly civilized countries and the airlines flying there won’t let a passenger pack a gun. So how do you defend yourself in a dicey situation in these places or even Manhattan? A friend of my girl friend at the time introduced me to the owner of Gleason’s in Brooklyn.

He told me, “If you’re interested in learning how to box, stop by the gym, I have trainers willing to teach white-collar guys like you how to defend themselves.”

The owner assigned me a trainer who used to fight as a heavy weight and eventually opened his own gym off Wall Street, which was a smart move. He realized there were lots of professionals looking for a good workout—training as a boxer was the next best thing to playing a sport. He even started the trend of girls not only training at his gym but helped establish professional women’s boxing. I didn’t hold it against him.

My trainer, now an entrepreneur, hired his son Junior and one of Junior’s friends, both trained boxers. They’d put his clients through a session that included rounds on the heavy bag, the double-under, pads and, if you wanted, sparring for three rounds. Once I did the sparring. But when a punch landed to my head and I felt my brain bouncing back and forth inside, I declined entering the ring again.

These boxing guys were really great—civilized, but scary as all get out, huge and mean looking, which gave me an idea. Life is filled with jerks or bullies who think they're tough and can get away with violating your rights. Lawyers, like me, often come across such bozos. So on a couple of occasions, I hired the boxers as enforcers. They didn't break legs or engage in such violence, all they had to do was show up, flex their fists, maybe or maybe not say a few words. The bullies, who are always cowards, got the word. On one occasion, they scared the bejesus out of a one of my neighbors in a Ridgewood court with whom I had a dispute. The guy was so scared that he didn't go home after court, fearing we would be waiting for him, which we were.

After my trainer closed his gym, I moved over to martial arts while in business school, which lasted off an on for 20 years. The two best were taught by an instructor at Hunter College and a Krav Maga school. Mark, the Hunter instructor, and I became good friends and often chased girls together. He'd be my front man for hitting on black chicks, and I'd be his for hitting on white chicks. He'd often say, "If you can't defend your life, you own nothing." Mark turned into a venture capitalist, so I took up Krav Maga until an old rugby injury prevented me from doing the kicking. The old injury, however, didn't interfere with boxing. Junior's friend, who was one of my trainers from the Wall Street days, had started his own gym, so at the end of my life I went there. No better feeling than a good workout. At the end of every boxing class, I thanked the gods for those guys.

But before the end, there is still more story under the title Stupid Frigging Fool.

[The sole author, Roy Den Hollander, of this document, *Born Under a Bad Sign*, by making it public on the Internet abandons all his copyrights in this document. Anyone may copy, distribute or use it or sections freely without violating any copyrights of the author once this document has been made public by the author on the Internet.]

# **Stupid Frigging Fool**

(Sixth Revision)

By Roy Den Hollander  
545 East 14<sup>th</sup> Street, Apt. 10D  
New York, N.Y. 10009  
917 687 0652  
Roy17den@gmail.com

## Contents

Preface

Characters

Text

I. But

1. Dream Lover
2. Manhunt
3. Angel Baby
4. Then She Kissed Me
5. Let's Dance
6. Someday We'll Be Together
7. Black Slacks
8. You've Got The Magic Touch
9. You've Really Got A Hold on Me
10. Do You Love Me
11. Lonely Weekends
12. Stay
13. Young Blood
14. Pretty Little Angel Eyes
15. Goin South
16. Party Lights
17. Step By Step

18. Devil Or Angel
19. Imagination
20. Viva Las Vegas
21. Could This Be Magic
22. Back In The U.S.S.R. Boy
23. I Can't Help Myself
24. Everybody's Somebody's Fool
25. Suspicion
26. You Can't Judge A Book By Its Cover
27. My True Story
28. I Put A Spell On You
29. I Put A Spell On You (Again)
30. Cathy's Clown

## II. Look up into

1. You Keep Me Hanging On
2. Don't Play That Song (You Lied)
3. On Broadway
4. Secret Agent
5. She's A Fool
6. Chains
7. Lover's Island
8. Remember Then
9. Diary



10. Runaround Sue
11. I've Had It
12. Come And Get These Memories
13. Do You Believe In Magic
14. You Better Move On
15. Black Magic Woman
16. Talk To Me, Talk To Me
17. All In My Mind
18. Last Kiss

### III. The star light sky

1. War
2. The Mountain's High
3. What's Going On?
4. Can I Get A Witness?
5. Shape Of Things To Come
6. Help
7. Image Of A Girl

### IV. Some night

1. Mother In Law
2. Telstar
3. Traveling Man
4. Searchin
5. Liar, Lair, Pants On Fire

6. It's Too Late
7. Eve of Destruction
8. I Heard It Through the Grapevine

V. And allow yourself

1. Don't Stop Now
2. Happy Holidays
3. Auld Lang Syne
4. Runaround Sue
5. The Pusher
6. Pushin Too Hard
7. Nothin To Lose
8. I Fought The Law

VI. The freedom

1. Turn, Turn, Turn
2. I'm A Believer
3. Hey, Little Girl
4. Summertime
5. Work A Day World
6. I Like The Night Life
7. Bad Girls
8. All She Wants To Do Is Dance
9. What Does It Take
10. Walk On The Wild Side

11. Everyday People
12. It Ain't Me Babe
13. Psychotic Reaction
14. Ain't That A Shame
15. I Got A Line On You
16. Tell It Like It Is
17. Hot Fun In The Summertime
18. The Letter
19. Something In The Air
20. It's Just A Matter of Time
21. Once Upon A Time
22. Bend Me, Shape Me
23. She Works Hard For The Money
24. On The Road Again
25. I'm Looking Through You
26. Every Breath You Take
27. You'll Lose a Good Thing
28. Trouble in Paradise

VII. To wonder

1. Back On The Chain Gang
2. You Cheated, You Lied
3. Party Lights
4. Walk Like A Man

5. Two Faces Have I
6. Laugh, Laugh
7. You Talk Too Much
8. Tired Of Waiting For You
9. Diamonds Are A Girl's Best Friend
10. Time Has Come Today
11. Smooth Talking Criminal
12. The Cheater
13. Keep On Dancing
14. Tired of Waiting For You
15. Goin Uptown
16. Hot Fun in the Summertime
17. Just One Look
18. I Like You (A Lot)
19. Girls! Girls! Girls!
20. Please Mr. Postman
21. Let Me In (Wee-Oop)
22. Younger Girl
23. Stupid Girl (Stones)
24. Subterranean Homesick Blues
25. Money
26. Don't Play That Song (You Lied)
27. Heat Wave

28. Hey Joe

VIII. The Point

1. Ladies' Night
2. Somewhere Beyond the Sea
3. Woman's World
4. Do You Want to Dance
5. Private Eyes
6. My Little Bimbo[s] Down on the Bamboo Isle
7. Cloud Nine
8. Party Lights
9. Only in (PC) America
10. Saigon Bride
11. We're Not Going to Take It
12. Coup d'état
13. One More Time
14. The Second Time Around
15. Saigon Bride (cont.)
16. Sympathy for the Devils
17. (I Can't Get No) Satisfaction

IX. Addendum

1. The End

## Preface

### I Married a Witch

Lips to whisper lies, lips to kiss a man and make him suffer.  
I will treat him like a slave. Make him suffer body and soul.  
Now we will see about hands resisting me.

### The Author

We have the power to act against injustice.  
We may not always succeed,  
But we can make it pay a price.  
So that next time,  
It may think twice.

If you can make them laugh at you,  
They will not expect something serious.

# **Stupid Frigging Fool**

By Roy Den Hollander

## Part 1

### Dream Lover

On a warm July night in Moscow 1999, I was rushing back to my apartment on Kutuzovsky Prospect, slightly drunk, and hoping that the party I had walked by earlier in the evening was still going. I couldn't get out of mind the two tall, beautiful Russian girls I had spotted. They were wearing full-length black gowns, standing and talking outside the party that had overflowed from the basement office of the building. Russian babes are real women—not like the man-haters in America who try to act like men, or at least how they perceive men to act. No, young Russian women—I should say “girls” because to them the term “women” is an insult that means “old ladies”—are pure femininity—dazzling, sweet smelling lures waiting to give delights, understanding and loyalty.

It was just before midnight as I walked around the corner into the driveway to my front door. I smiled on seeing a handful of people still partying outside. I began to reconnoiter for an opportunity, but stopped when I heard a couple of guys speaking English—two middle-aged American men wrapped in a haze of desire were flirting with two teenage Russian girls. Being middle-age myself, this looked like the place for me. I started talking with the two guys. One of the Americans was a dentist and the other ran a restaurant-disco-casino called Fellini's in Moscow. Both were obvious low-life amateurs when it came to girls, with one trying to give fashion tips to the seventeen year old by playing with her hair and repeatedly tying and untying her open blouse underneath of which she wore nothing. I guess the summer nights get very warm in Moscow for girls. My aging eyes strained to see through the darkness, only partially lit

by the corner street lamp and the neon light over the basement office door. After my eyes soaked in as much as they could of the seventeen year old, I turned my attention to the sixteen year old, who had the type of face I liked but could only speak Russian, while I couldn't say anything in Russian beyond the level of a three year old. So, I headed toward the heart of the party to find my own piece of heaven on earth. But, before reaching the basement door, a Russian man speaking good English said in an authoritative tone, "This party is for members only."

Being a slightly obnoxious American lawyer, I responded, "So what do I have to do to become a member?"

"Are you an American?" he asked.

"Of course I am," I replied, a little full of myself.

His demeanor instantly changed to friendliness, the type only a fool would trust. He introduced himself as Leo, and motioned me to go inside. I descended half a dozen stairs on the outside of the building, ducked my head to avoid hitting the top of the doorframe and walked into the party. I saw ten or more Russian girls—all in their late teens or early twenties. Even better, there were hardly any guys, and those guys were all Russians. I had stumbled into a gold mine of females. Although I was twenty years or more older than these babes, I was an American, and that made me prime meat in the eyes of virtually all Russian girls, especially when compared to Russian men. Russian guys generally dress better and show better manners towards girls, such as, opening doors for them, putting on their coats and the like. But Russian girls consider them weak, physically dirty, prone to alcoholism, undependable and notoriously unfaithful.



At the bar, which looked like the type a working class family in Queens would have in its basement, I saw a cute girl of around twenty. My opening line in English prompted her to get up and walk away. “Oh well, I guess I’ll have a drink instead,” I said to the empty bar stool and turned to order a drink.

The bartender spoke some English and we struggled through a rudimentary conversation. He told me the basement was the office of a modeling firm run by Leo, and that there were models’ parties every Friday night. I had hit pay dirt.

I heard someone behind me say my name, turned and there she stood—blond, a few inches taller than me, blue-gray eyes—stunningly beautiful and with an innocent, fresh smile beaming from her face that told me I was the one and only. A glow seemed to surround her, and I fell like a sack of bricks. I knew I could not let her get away, as she was “the one.”

“Hi I’m Angelina.”

“I’m Roy,” I gushed in anticipation. “Do you want a drink?”

“No, but you like to go outside?”

“Sure,” I said, thinking *I will go with you anywhere*.

Outside, I suggested we sit down on an outcrop of the building. She was concerned that the paint was wet. I tested it and said, “Seems to be dry.” We sat and talked. Angelina spoke fair enough English so we could communicate. During our conversation, a bizarre notion struck me that this girl would be a worthy opponent, but I pushed it out of my mind. She worked as a model and dancer, lived in Krasnodar near the Black Sea, was twenty-three and didn’t have a boyfriend at the moment. As a teenager she won the long jump championship of Russia three years in a row but then injured her foot, which sunk her athletic career. She earned an undergraduate degree in Physical Education and started graduate school, but the lack of money

caused her to pursue dancing and modeling. One of her modeling pictures hung in an exclusive clothing store just a few blocks down Kutuzovsky.

Unlike America, Russia offers few occupations in which people can make a decent living. Once I helped a friend deliver food to a couple in Moscow, both of whom had doctorate degrees and taught at a prestigious university but were starving because all their income went to feed their child. The lady who cleaned my Moscow apartment held a PhD in public health. Jobs with the government paid so little that she and other health workers ignored their official duties in order to earn money by providing menial services to foreigners and Russian gangsters. Outside of Moscow, there are even fewer opportunities to find jobs that pay well enough to afford decent shelter and prevent hunger.

Angelina said Leo invited her to Moscow for a week to do some modeling. She stayed in an apartment Leo kept for his out of town models on the other side of the courtyard that separated the buildings in the apartment complex. The two teenage girls were also staying in the same apartment. It was late, and Angelina needed to work the next day. She asked me to walk her to the apartment, since the courtyard had no lights and was a darken tangle of shrubbery and trees the size of a city block. The Soviets tended to build everything on a gargantuan scale, probably to over come a justified feeling of inferiority. Moscow's main city streets are six and eight lanes wide.

On our way, I naturally asked her out for the next day, Saturday.

She said, "I must make modeling tomorrow afternoon but after I have time. Call Leo to see if it okay with him."

Surprised, I asked, "What does Leo have to do with it?"

“I need his permission.” I thought that strange. Why should a modeling agent have to give his permission for one of his girls to go on a date?

“Okay, I’ll call him,” and she gave me his telephone number and the one for the apartment she stayed in.

At her door I hugged her and tried a kiss on the lips but no go. She was taller than me, and all she had to do to put her lips out of reach was to look upward. Even on tiptoes, I couldn’t get near those luscious red promises on this girl of at least six feet three inches in her shoes. All right, I could wait and said good night. I walked back through the darkness under the trees wondering why Leo needed to okay my dating one of his models. Probably Angelina wanted to make sure Leo didn’t have another modeling shoot scheduled for tomorrow evening or for the day after, but she could ask Leo that herself. Or perhaps Leo required prior approval for his models to go on a date to make sure they didn’t show up the day after with bags under their eyes—understandable. Back at the party, I asked the two Americans I had met earlier about this Friday night event I stumbled into worked. They were distinctly unenlightening. When I mentioned that I would be going out with Angelina the next night, the Fellini casino manager snapped, “No, she’s not going out with you. Angelina and the two teenage girls are going to a party at my casino.” I held my tongue and my martial arts training as the anger flashed into my brain. Who was this low life telling me whom I could date? But he quickly added in a reconciliatory fashion that I should also come to the party. Keeping my options open, I agreed, thinking maybe I will work something out where Angelina and I are alone.

I went home, but sensing something was wrong. I thought about forgetting Angelina but then reasoned: let’s see what happens. After all, I might enjoy a little Russian adventure.

## Manhunt

The next afternoon, Angelina called to ask whether I had talked to Leo about going out with her that night. I said, “No, I thought you had to go to the party at the Fellini Casino.” She laughed.

“Don’t worry about it,” she said. “Call Leo now; he in his office.”

“Okay,” and why not I thought.

I felt elated that this beautiful, young, Russian girl wanted to go out with me instead of going to a casino party, which is considered the height of the social circuit in Russia. Then again, Russians also considered McDonalds as the *chic* place to dine.

On the telephone, Leo invited my downstairs to his office. My third floor apartment overlooked the basement entrance to his modeling agency. Many successful Russian businesses operate out of the basements of residential buildings, especially in prestigious neighborhoods such as Kutuzovsky Prospect. Zoning regulations, as with other laws in Russia, are basically meaningless unless a government official wants a bribe to keep an un-enforced law un-enforced.

Once again, I descended the steps to the office entrance now blocked by a steel door with a peephole—rang the bell, waited while some one inside scrutinized me and listened to a number of locks unlocking and the sliding of a heavy metal bar. The door opened to show a smiling, pretty, young girl. She didn’t say a word, just walked me down the hall toward Leo’s office. The hallway sported artsy photographs of scantily clad young ladies—typical for a model agency. In his office, however, were a couple of not so artsy framed Penthouse covers.

Leo greeted me with a firm handshake and a friendly hello, introducing himself as Leonid Perlin. His greased back, black hair and overly dark clothes did little to alleviate the sense of sleaze that pervaded his office. He motioned me to a black leather chair in which I sunk well

below the level of the desk at which Leo took a seat. A not so subtle way of trying to make visitors feel weak unless they had more power than Leo. At the time I did, so the difference in height didn't matter.

“What brings you to Moscow?” he asked. His English was better than Angelina's.

“I'm a lawyer and business consultant from New York City who was hired by an American firm to manage and improve their Russian operations.” Actually, my employer originally hired me to assist the firm's manager, Joe, by marketing its services to Western companies in Russia. But when I arrived in Moscow, Joe had decided to leave and the manager's job fell to me.

“What firm?”

“Kroll Associates,” I told him despite Joe's warning to keep a low profile because the firm did investigations and security work. Joe tended to over dramatize the job, imaging himself a secret agent behind enemy lines.

Leo never heard of the company. “What's its business?” he asked.

“It's essentially a modern day private detective firm. Western companies that want to do business with Russians, or even Russian companies operating in their own country, hire us to investigate their potential partners, suppliers and buyers. Sometimes we also track down funds that disappeared from a joint venture or business transaction. We even provide physical protection for businessmen in Russia.”

“Is it dangerous?”

“Not for an American,” I responded. “But the Russians who assist us could have problems.”

“Are you here permanently?”

“No, my consultancy contract is for six months, then back to America unless it’s extended.”

Now it was my turn to ask questions—still feeling in the back of my mind something odd about this place. “And what about you? What do you run here?”

“A modeling agency and introduction business.”

“What’s an introduction agency?” I honestly asked.

“We bring together foreign men and Russian girls. If an American man wants a pretty, young wife, we can introduce him to as many girls as he wants over a period of a week. If the girl he chooses is interested in him, then she can visit him in America so that they can get to know each other better.”

“Do many of the introductions end in marriage?”

“I won’t take on men clients over forty. The difference in age is too great between a twenty-year-old girl and a man over forty.” Leo didn’t answer my question, but that’s a common tactic among Russians who want to avoid the truth, which means most Russians. I let it go, not really caring about his dating business’ success.

He pushed some papers about his introduction services and fee schedule across his desk. The English version was awkwardly written, and I assumed this guy probably didn’t find much business for his introduction services by using such an advertising brochure. For a fee of about \$5,000, Leo will meet the American client at the airport, set him up in an apartment for a week, arrange for meals and interpreters and show him pictures of lots of girls from which the client chooses the ones he wants to meet. Leo kept using the word “client,” which struck me as strange in describing men who buy a bride. But what did I know, never having used an introduction agency myself.

“Very interesting,” I insincerely said. “If I come across any American guys looking for a Russian wife I’ll send them to you.”

“Please do. I am always ready to help out an American,” he replied.

I changed the topic to my reason for being there. “What about last night’s party? Angelina said I needed to ask you about taking her out tonight. Is that right?”

“Alina is a very beautiful and independent girl. She does some work for me.”

“Who’s Alina?” I asked.

“That’s what we call her around here, but she uses the name Angelina.”

I immediately assumed the two names were Russian derivations of each other. A Russian name can take on many different forms depending on the relationship between the person and the one using the name. Some forms are considered formal, some friendly and others endearing.

One name can have three or more different forms.

“What kind of work does she do?” I asked, looking for consistency.

“Modeling and dancing,” he responded.

“So what about this Friday night party of yours? How does it work?” I asked matter-of-factly. I didn’t want to press too hard because once a Russian thinks someone is digging into his affairs—the iron curtain falls. But I wanted information to put to rest my instinct’s subtle sense of suspicion about Leo’s business while at the same time giving the girl I had fallen head-over-heels for a fair chance. After all, my suspicions might simply result from my ignorance of an alien culture. Similar behaviors in dissimilar societies often have different meanings.

Leo said, “Every Friday night I have a party where I bring together some girls and men. The men pay fifty dollars to get in and they meet the girls.”

“Where do you get the girls?” I asked as though searching for the source of the Nile.

“I have books of very pretty girls, mostly from Moscow but also other Russian cities. They send me their pictures hoping to become models. I invite them to my studio where I take a few photos. Unfortunately, most of the girls cannot afford a professional portfolio, but I do what I can with snap shots. We could make big business with an investment that allowed me to shoot professional portfolios.”

I knew Leo was referring to me when he said, “We.” My eight years of traveling to the remnants of the “Evil Empire” made me wary of investing money with Russians. They have a proclivity of using investments for personal needs or sending them to their overseas bank accounts. Then they concoct some lame story about how the money disappeared. Many Russians in their blind arrogance actually believe Americans should feel honored to be cheated by them. Leo’s books, however, did contain pictures of some real beauties, so I filed away his business proposal in my memory on the chance that some western modeling agency might want to exploit this Russian gold mine of feminine girls.

“So what happens at your Friday night parties?” I continued, still not sure what went on.

“When a man sees a girl he likes, I introduce the two of them. If she likes him, then they decide what to do.”

“What do you mean, they decide what to do?”

I expected a knowing smile, but none came. “They make their own arrangement. Maybe the man will take her to a club, begin dating her, even possibly marrying her or something else.” That “or something else” exhibited the Russian knack for euphemisms, and my heart started sinking.

“So they decide on a price for going to the ballet or opera or some place else and begin a romance.”



“Right,” he said. “It’s the same as an Internet dating service. The man pays so much to meet some girls. They talk and decide which way the relationship will go, if any.” Stated that way, it all made sense and began alleviating my nebulous suspicion about Angelina.

“So what’s the going rate?” I asked.

“A hundred dollars or more. It all depends on the couple.”

I could afford that, I mused.

Leo continued that his modeling business wasn’t doing too well because he didn’t have the capital to compete with “Red Star,” Russia’s top modeling firm. According to him, Red Star made lots of money because it hired out many of its models as prostitutes, which Leo refused to do. Red Star, he said, could also squash any serious competition because it belonged to a powerful organized crime group or Krisha as the Russians call them. A more descriptive American term is Racketeer Influenced Corrupt Organization or RICO, which is a group of people or businesses whose moneymaking involves one illegal activity or another. In Russia, most businesses, including foreign companies, cannot survive without engaging in some illegal activities, and virtually every successful Russian business—whether legitimate, criminal or a mixture of both—is part of a Krisha or RICO. The mixture of criminal and legal activities is actually the preferable way of doing business throughout all levels of the Russian economy, especially for large conglomerates. Not only businessmen commit crimes and belong to or rely on Krishas, so do universities, many media outfits and trade unions. It’s a way of life created out of centuries of corruption that has turned Russia into a land of RICOs.

Krishas are not just a group of former KGB and military thugs meeting at “social clubs” the way the American mob does, but include government officials reaching as high as the President and his inner circle. Krishas cut deals, merge and war with each other. Taken together

they comprise the Russian mafia and, some say, the Russian State. Krishas may extort money from foreign companies in the form of “charitable contributions.” These help avoid certain “acts of the gods” that could destroy a company’s assets, disappear an executive or cause over zealous scrutiny by a government agency. The big money for Krishas, however, comes from sweetheart deals with the government and Presidential decrees that favor a Krisha’s legitimate business activities. The government—national, regional, and local—still runs the show in Russia, and the real boss of a Krisha is usually a big shot in one of the levels of government with the boss of bosses for Russia being its President. Federal Security Service or F.S.B. agents, who are in the agency’s reserves, still keep an eye on major corporations and banks by working in them. Any enterprise or individual who wants to make money needs government backing and approval.

The former Mayor of Moscow, Yuri Luzhkov, and his Krisha controlled all major real estate developments in the city because the city still owned all the land. His group also ran the counterfeiting of western goods in Moscow. Many officials from the police to Luzhkov’s inner circle received a cut. President Yeltsin’s inner circle, which masterminded the election of Vladimir Putin in 2000, consisted of various Krishas cooperating in a loose form of a confederacy. The Krishas amassed huge empires of oil, natural gas, media, automobile production and aluminum manufacturing and were publicly headed by the so-called oligarchs. But even the oligarchs were merely front men for powerful officials, and the fortunes of their empires rose and fell depending on the governmental clout of their political godfathers. Over a handful of years, one Krisha allied with Yeltsin gained control of the aluminum industry through the assassination of dozens of executives and government officials. Everyone knew the Chernoy brothers were behind the slaughter, but no prosecutions ever resulted. The Chernoy

subsequently became clients of Kroll Associates and Putin carried on in the Yeltsin tradition—only the names of the criminals changed.

Leo complained he couldn't compete too vigorously with "Red Star" because of its Krishna, so he expanded his business into "exotic" films. Not what I wanted to hear. He added, perhaps reading my face, "No sex, just scantily clad girls and guys—a coed Sports Illustrated swimsuit issue in moving pictures. Actually, I'm waiting for three girls right now to show up to go shoot a film."

After some more discussion, the three girls for the exotic video showed up. Naturally, Angelina was one of them. I guess I suspected it all along but still couldn't imagine that the girl I was crazy about wore next to no clothes in moving pictures. She was surprised to see me, as if I had just learned something about her she did not want me to know. I promised Leo I would keep in touch; we exchanged business cards. I told Angelina I would call her after the shoot, kissed her on the cheek and left.

Now I hoped that kiss on the cheek would tell her that I was sincerely interested in her as a person, which for me made no sense. If I were ten years younger, I would have run the other way as fast as I could. All my life I avoided girls who sold vicarious thrills because I assumed them promiscuous. True I did not know for sure what Angelina did, maybe as she said, "Just a model and dancer," but the situation didn't feel right. The importance of my health and physical condition always made me fearful of catching something from overly promiscuous girls. Also, when I get a girl's clothes off, I cannot keep myself from putting my face between her legs. The idea of ingesting the remnants of the prior inhabitant of a girl's intimate parts simply makes me gag. But I reasoned that Angelina must value her health as highly as I do mine; after all, she was an athlete. She won the Russian female long jump championship for her age group three years in

a row when in high school, so I doubted she'd engage in any risky activities. Still I wondered what I was doing but kept stumbling along.

### Angel Baby

Later that afternoon, Angelina once again called me before I had the chance to telephone her to arrange for our date. That kiss on the cheek must have worked. She realizes I really care about her.

She asked whether I had a camera and told me to bring it. She sounded enthusiastic. When we met on the other side of the courtyard, I remembered my discussion with Leo and gave her a hundred dollar bill.

“What is this for?” She asked as if insulted.

I figured I was paying for a date that night, so her question threw me. Guess she's just a typical girl after all, and Leo was trying to pump me for money. So as not to insult her further, I said, “It is a gift. Leo suggested it. I understand how difficult it is to live in Russia, so I am sure you can use it.” She considered it was too much, but I insisted.

Putting her arm on my shoulders and insisting that I walk on her right, even though the Russian tradition is for guys to walk on the girl's left, we headed to the Park of Victory. Angelina 's six feet three inches in her shoes made her at least three inches taller than me so that her arm rested naturally across the top of my shoulders. I felt the strange comfort of a woman who cared enough to take me under her wing.

Most Muscovites consider the Park of Victory the ugliest park in their city, but I like it. The place is huge. A large open plaza lined with fountains leads up to a thousand foot tall obelisk. Behind it, located at the top of a wide expanse of stairs, is a semi circular museum that

opens out toward the obelisk. The top of the museum looks like a flattened German Kaiser helmet.

Walking with Angelina, I felt young again. I felt hopeful. Angelina was tall and beautiful. She wore her blond hair down to her shoulders and everyone was looking at her.

“Why does everybody look at me?” she naively asked.

“Because you are beautiful,” I said. Although I felt a little jealous, since looking like an obvious American and not a bad looking guy, Russians usually stared at me, especially the girls, but now even the girls were starring at Angelina.

I said to myself, ““So what, this doll is with me, it is warm, it is sunny and I am somebody, at least in Russia.” Moscow has beautiful weather for two months during the summer, and it stays light until 11 pm. My life was looking up.

The moment we entered the park, Angelina wanted her picture taken with both her camera and mine. This girl knew how to strike a pose, no awkward moments in front of the camera for her. She clearly had modeling talent. As we walked along, we stopped for a few more photographs, and she got a man to take our picture together. Angelina impressed me as smart and educated although her English required me to speak slowly and use more common words than a lawyer normally would. But what really struck me was the good heartedness that beamed from her smile as if coming from the soul of a happy little girl. She led me to a bench on the landing behind the museum that overlooked acres of trees interrupted by long promenades radiating in different directions. The sun neared the western horizon in front of us.

“Do you read numbers?” she asked.

“What do you mean?”

“Give me your birthday and I will read your numbers.”

“Oh, numerology,” which I considered along with palm reading, astrology, magic and religion a pathetic attempt by people to find meaning in their insignificant lives. But if going along will bring me closer to this pretty girl, I won’t rain on her parade.

“Okay,” I said and proceeded to lie about my birth date. Naturally, I wanted her to think I was younger; otherwise, she might not see me as a boyfriend. Still, it made me feel guilty because what she thought she was about to discover, since she clearly believed in numerology, would not apply to me. To her, I would be someone else.

She pulled out a small notebook and pen from her purse. That impressed me. How many girls carry pen and paper? I noticed she wore a lot of rings on both hands. Scribbling calculations and drawing graphs with a believer’s intensity, she concluded that besides having money, I had all the attributes necessary to get what I wanted out of life. I partially agreed since I had some investments, but didn’t know what I wanted from life.

She responded, “Don’t worry you will, and then nothing will be able to keep you from your dream.”

“Okay,” I said, sadly wishing I had a dream, and asked, “What is your dream?”

“To be a model and have my picture on a magazine cover.”

“You’re lucky, you know what you want.” I said with genuine admiration.

We talked more about her hopes, and I realized that despite James Joyce’s criticism of modeling as a pornographic art, I admired her conviction to pursue her dream no matter what. I offered her encouragement with my usual career counseling speech, which I have never been able to follow myself. Everyone is born with a set of aptitudes that makes him particularly suited for a certain occupation. Each of us knows what that is when we are young but often allow others to convince us to pursue a different career in order to assure that we can make a living.

What most people do not understand is that if you do what you love the money will come, at least in America. Angelina, however, was a young lady from Krasnodar that had an even worse economy than Moscow. In Krasnodar, as with most of Russia outside of Moscow, over a majority of the people were unemployed, underemployed or were owed months in back pay. Many were literally starving. Angelina's mother worked as a college instructor and gymnastic coach but earned only \$35 a month, just enough to get by. Some retired folks on worthless pensions committed suicide rather than face the shame of begging in order to survive. Yet Angelina had the guts to pursue her heart's desire trapped in a dangerous land with few opportunities. I felt like a pampered western dandy.

“Can I read your palm?” she asked.

“Alright,” I agreed continuing to indulge her obvious belief in the supernatural; after all, it made for conversation and drawing closer to this delicious girl.

As she scrutinized both my palms, she said, “You are intelligent, a hard worker and have many talents.” Then, as if surprised, she paused and finally said with noticeable concern, “You also have a guardian angel watching over you.”

Always feeling the victim of life, I responded, “I doubt it!”

“No,” she strongly insisted, “There is an angel who protects you from evil. She is with you now.”

I was a little surprised by her conviction, but then my heart jumped hoping what I was about to say was true. “Maybe it is you Angel?” Her concern turned to a giggle and from then on I called her Angel.

She continued with her palm reading and massaging my ego by adding to my attributes, all of which I had heard before in readings by other girls. But then she murmured, “Hmmm,” and looked closely at both my palms.

“Well that’s all,” she abruptly said.

“What do you mean?” I said. “What did you see?”

“Oh, nothing important.”

“Oh no you don’t. Come on, what did you see?” I continued to press even though she, like other fortunetellers, would probably hide any bad divinations. But she surprised me.

“You have a short life line,” which she showed me in both hands.

“Well that fits,” I concurred. “I can’t say I have much of a desire for longevity. My life has not gone the way I would have wished it. So how long do I have?” Not that I really cared.

“You shouldn’t think like that. The God has put you here for a reason. But you must fight for your realization. All my life my mother and I have had to fight. When my father left us, he wanted to take our apartment and all the furniture and leave us with nothing. But my mother fought him and won. He got nothing. When I competed for the long jump championship, I was losing but I had one jump left. My anger drove me to fight, and I won on the last jump. You must not give up.”

I felt ashamed of my wallowing but also felt joy, since I had found a unique woman—yes woman—in Angel: not only beautiful, feminine and smart, but wise and tough.

I wanted to stay there forever talking with her on that bench and watching the sun sink into the west, but she said, “Let’s go to the disco!”

Out on Kutuzovsky Prospect, which ran by the park, I let her flag us a ride, since more cars were likely to stop for her than me. When a car would stop, she’d open the front door and



bend over in her black tights to negotiate a price with the driver while I stared at her from behind. A pleasing arrangement, although not as pleasing as it could have been since she wore a sweater tied around her waist that draped over one of the more appealing parts of a girl's body.

Her tenacity in finding an inexpensive ride impressed me. She tried car after car pushing for the lowest fare possible. No wastrel this girl—saving money delighted her. What struck me as sad, however, was that she negotiated to save me fifty cents to a dollar—a lot of money for her but small change to an American. I sensed in her a desperation about poverty and an unnatural joy in money. Often she'd spot on the sidewalk a kopeck, worth about 1/25<sup>th</sup> of a U.S. cent, pick it up and immediately break into her beaming childlike smile. My mother did the same for American coins when I was a kid. Poverty to Angel apparently meant starvation; to me it meant eating at home instead of in a good restaurant. I wondered whether I would ever be able to understand her. Angel finally found a ride for a price she liked. I agreed, and we headed to find the Propaganda Disco.

Hailing a private car for a ride rather than a taxi is the rule, not the exception, in Russia. Car owners generally pick up strangers going in their direction in order to make some extra rubles. Sounds dangerous, but Russians don't mug each other on a regular basis as in America. Perhaps it is the old Soviet regime conditioning of comradeship or fear of the police. Russians dread the police the way Americans do criminals. When a Russian finds himself in a dangerous situation, he calls his family, friends or a private security firm—never the police. The government pays the police so little that cops regularly resort to crime and bribes just to make a subsistent living. A favored moneymaker is to pull over a car and demand payment for some minor violation or the officer will lock the driver up, which will cost even more money for the

driver to bribe his way out of jail. Russians also want to keep the police in the dark because cops often tip off gangsters as to likely targets.

Russia's amateur taxi drivers do present one problem other than their occasional drunk driving. They don't always know how to get to where the passenger wants to go, although they say they do in order to win a fare. On the other hand, they will take the time to consult their maps and ask other drivers. But sometimes the rider has to end the exploration of unknown parts and find another ride. Angel and I had such a driver and ended up walking around for about an hour looking for the disco. During our trek, I feared she'd think me a jerk and, like the typical American girl, start blaming me for the discomfort of walking around lost, but she did not. After a stop at McDonalds, her favorite place to eat I learned, we finally found the disco.

As with all Moscow discos, it was small compared to New York City's dance factories but just as loud. Angel danced, danced and danced some more. I had never seen anyone dance like her. She moved like a snake undulating to the music. She smiled sweetly like a child with a lollipop and then instantly turned into a temptress. However, I had too much experience with girls to fall for this Hollywood vamp approach, so I would laugh and then she would laugh but she kept returning to that femme fatale act as though by habit. It didn't matter, I was a happy duck. This was the best I felt in years. None of the Russian guys tried to cut in on us as American clowns do in New York City—clearly the Russian guys were more civilized in that sense. After more than an hour of nonstop dancing, I began thinking this beautiful, young woman actually likes me—she likes me—and enjoys being with me. Then the realization knifed through my brain: “Naturally she likes you, you idiot, you paid her \$100. That's the average family income for a month in Moscow.” I went into a tailspin and immediately decided not to

touch this girl because I would never know whether her response was for money or because she liked me.

We danced a little more and I said, “Let’s go.”

“Just a few more dances?” she asked and I agreed.

On the way back, I asked, “What did you think of the place?”

“The crowd was too young and there was not enough room to dance. I like a lot of space so I can do my dance routine.” Dance routine sounded a little strange, but all girls have their own dance styles they use to show off. She suggested, “Let’s go to another place tomorrow night but also do something in the afternoon”

“Okay, I’ll call you around noon.” Tomorrow was Sunday and I had no work to do.

Back at her apartment, I remembered my vow not to make a move on her and didn’t. We talked a little, and then I kissed her on the cheek good night and left. Walking back to my apartment through the still-darkness of the courtyard filled with trees and shrubs didn’t alarm me. I enjoyed the minor sense of danger that the night offered in this precarious place, as I did in New York City when I’d turn now a dark alleyway late at night just for the challenge. Sometimes in a life, it is possible to reach a point where a person wants to know what is dangerous so that he can consciously pursue it.

Despite my misgivings about Leo’s agency, something drew me to Angel. In the foreboding blackness of the courtyard, I discovered a theme that always controlled my life but I never articulated: I couldn’t fall romantically for a girl unless I liked her as a person and, more importantly, she liked me as a person.

## Then She Kissed Me

The next day Angel again called me before I had the chance to call her. This girl is anxious; maybe she really likes me instead of the hundred-dollar bill I gave her.

I hurried over to meet her on the patio outside her apartment. She laughed at the lifeline on my palm that I had drawn longer with a pen. We walked to the Park of Victory again and took more photographs, mostly of her and at her direction. Actually, the day revolved around my taking pictures of Angel—fine with me, she was beautiful and I was falling in love.

After a short while in the park, Angel asked, “Do you know of any other parks in Moscow we could go to?”

Don’t blow this Roy, I said to myself. She didn’t think much of the disco last night, so here was my chance to impress her by coming up with a park that she likes. I racked my brain and tried hard but drew a blank. I began to sweat.

Then Angel said, “I saw a place not far from here across a bridge in that direction.” She pointed east.

“Gorky Park,” I jumped with relief. Angel was great. She saved me the embarrassment of failing again to come up with a place she liked. American men more often than not try hard to please their girlfriends of which American girls take full advantage. But in Russia the men don’t give a damn about a girl’s desires because they are out to please only themselves. I often wondered why those guys were so selfish.

On Kutuzovsky Prospect, Angel hailed a few cars looking for the lowest price again. I noticed she wore the same black slacks with the same sweater tied around her waist but a different blouse. Girls never wear the same of anything two days in a row, so once again I imagined poverty stalking her like a plague. She negotiated with one driver after another. I

thought every price was okay, but she said, “I don’t want to waste your money. We shouldn’t pay people who are greedy.”

“Okay,” I was not going to argue with this unique girl who wanted to save me money. What a find when compared with the gold diggers in America, a characteristic of most U.S. girls. Angel was not only stunningly beautiful and pleasant but also thrifty. When she thought she found a ride for the right price, she looked to me for final approval. This caused me to add respectful to her growing list of desirable qualities. American girls couldn’t hold a candle to her.

Gorky Park is mostly an old fashion Soviet amusement park with a roller coaster, Ferris wheel, bumper cars and other rides. The park’s chief concession to modern times is the disco music, which blares so loudly a person can only escape it at a good distance from the park.

Inside the park, we bought a couple of ice cream cones. Angel complained she did not want to get fat but couldn’t resist at least one ice cream. She had a weakness for sweets, just like me. As usual, she directed me to take pictures of her. She possessed a knack for setting up a shot, which I assumed came from her modeling work. Angel asked a couple of middle-aged ladies to take our picture together, after which I took one of the ladies with their camera. While focusing in on these females in my age bracket, I thanked the fates I was not back in America. All those political correctionalists trying to con me into dating ladies my age—meaning over the hill—with the lie that only middle-aged maturity can fulfill my needs for a companion. Give me a break! Why would I want to wake up in the morning next to some overweight, flabby female when I can have something like Angel?

I turned to look for her and saw some Russian sailor hitting on her about twenty yards away. How did that happen so quickly? She was standing right next to me only a few seconds ago. As I rushed over to put an end to this little scene, I wondered why her face looked as

cheerful and inviting as when she talked to me. Could she be interested in this sailor? I put my arm around her and kissed her on the cheek, demonstrating to both of them that I considered her mine. But the sailor was drunk and made an objection in Russian to which I said, “Get lost!” On hearing my English, he must have realized I was American and just stood there dumbfounded holding his beer. Sometimes Americans have that effect on Russians for they know, but often refuse to admit, that we won the cold war and they lost—badly.

As we walked away, Angel said, “You do not have to worry Roy, I can handle myself.”

“Okay, next time I will let you handle it,” I said, still a little upset. I then tried to kiss her on the lips in the hope of allaying my insecurity, but she yielded me only her cheek, saying, “You mess my lipstick.” All right, I rationalized; models place more importance on their appearances than the rest of us. I did try, however, to kiss her lips a few more times during the day but without success. Even for a model her reluctance seemed strange.

But before those failed attempts, off to the amusement rides we went. The roller coaster, bumper cars and a ride that hung everyone upside down turned Angel into a little girl. She laughed, giggled and screamed like she was ten. I avoided the roller coaster and the upside-down ride knowing they would turn my stomach inside out, but Angel loved them. Just before the upside-down ride began, Angel sat looking like a carefree, innocent child filled with anticipation. All of me wanted to hold her tight, to shield her from the horrors of Russia.

The economic situation in Russia at the close of the 20<sup>th</sup> century was so desperate that many families only survived by allowing their young daughters to sell themselves. The girls call it “turning our bodies into supermarkets.” They used the term supermarket because under communism such stores did not exist. Only with the coming of the so-called market economy did supermarkets and rampant prostitution appear. Many high school girls and college coeds

team up with a couple of their friends for *banyas*, or bathhouse orgies. They share themselves among a few Russian or Western men with each girl earning \$50 or more for a night. Other girls chose to frequent clubs where foreigners, meaning men with money, hang out. If a Russian girl at such a club agrees to go home with a guy, she will sleep with him but afterward demand money. One night stands in Russia for foreigners are exclusively business deals from the girl's point of view.

There are also parties organized by Russians where foreigners and Russian men with money attend. Russia's rich are commonly called "New Russians," and virtually all of them acquired their wealth through some form of criminal activity. The girls at such parties are considered amateur prostitutes because they sell themselves only periodically and don't take all comers. These parties in the early part of an evening look amusingly like innocent grammar school dances where the boys cluster in groups and the girls separate into cliques waiting for the overly shy boys to approach them. But the similarity ends with a few drinks and the lap dancers doing their strip tease that leads them into taking off the clothes of some of the guys. Meanwhile, the organizer scurries from table to table introducing guy to girl and pushing them into nocturnal deals. As the evening wears on, the bleak, hopeless reality of Russia, ever present behind the smiles and laughter, pushes its way through with the bone chilling realization that many girls attend these parties because they are chronically hungry and desperate. Most of them dream about a family and career after graduation but for now they must survive. Russia also has lots of professional prostitutes who are in it to make as much money as they can in order to afford the glamorous life. No regrets for them, just greed.

Angel got off the upside-down her ride all smiles. We walked around to some more attractions, holding hands or her arm lying across my shoulders with me always on her right. At

the magic house where curved mirrors change a person's appearance, Angel would only let me take a picture of her image in the mirror that made her look thinner. She clearly worried about her weight, as I guessed all models and dancers do. It was early evening, so I suggested we go eat at the Stardust Diner.

“What's a diner?” she asked.

I tried to explain but decided it would be better to just go there and show her. The Stardust looks like a diner out of the nineteen fifties, which it emphasizes with lots of American fifties memorabilia hanging on the walls. The food is mainly American as is the music. When I ordered a root beer, she thought it was an American beer with alcohol. I smiled, gave her a taste and she liked it. It was as pleasing to me as showing a daughter new and wondrous experiences.

“So Angel, what other dreams do you have?”

“My dream to buy an apartment in the City of Krasnodar for me and mother,” she said with determination.

“I thought you already lived in Krasnodar.”

“No, my house in little village outside of the city. It not a good place to live—very dangerous. I want mother to have a decent apartment. She an honest woman who lived a hard life. She deserve better.”

“A worthy goal,” I said. “What kind of an apartment are you looking for?”

“At least two rooms.”

Russians describe apartments by the total number of rooms excluding the kitchen and bathroom. A two-room apartment consists of one bedroom and a living room—pretty good for just a mother and daughter in Russia.

“How much does such an apartment cost?” I asked.



She hesitated in answering, apparently debating whether to tell the truth or not. I could not understand why the reluctance, so I said, “What’s the big deal. How much does it cost?”

“Around \$15,000,” she finally said.

“Not too bad,” I replied like an ignorant American who did not realize at the time that from her economic perspective \$15,000 was as hard to come by as \$450,000 would be for me. The average monthly income for a family in America was 30 times greater than a family in Russia. Just multiplying a price by thirty yields an amount that allows an American to understand what the cost of something means to the average Russian.

Not understanding how high a hurdle this Russian girl had set for herself, I matter-of-factly asked, “How are going to make it?”

“Earlier this year I danced in Cyprus where I saved up a fair amount.”

“That must have been nice: warm climate, sun and sea. Where did you dance?”

“In a night club,” she answered.

Sounded as though she worked as a go-go girl. “What type of dancing?”

“Modern,” she quickly answered, clearly a euphemism for go-go dancing.

“How did you like it?”

“Very much. I am an artist. I use my movements to paint a picture and communicate what I feel inside. It gives me great joy to express myself to music”

“Not unlike Isadora Duncan,” I said.

“Exactly,” she replied. Once again, I was impressed. I always enjoyed hanging out with artists because they seemed different then the rest of us: more exciting life-styles, or was it that they used art as an excuse for reprehensible conduct?

“So how much did you save up dancing.” I intrusively asked while a strange idea took form in my head.

“Oh, some,” she evaded. Russians are even more reluctant than Americans to talk about their finances because most Russians fear robbery or extortion by criminals, which for them includes the tax authorities. Every Russian who earns income has to file with an individual tax inspector who will demand a bribe if there is any indication that the person made more money than reported. But nearly all Russians underreport their incomes because of the ridiculously high tax rates, so the inspectors concentrate on those who appear well off betting they can pay the largest bribes. In response, Russians try to keep a low financial profile in order to pay as small a bribe as possible to the tax inspectors along with evading taxes. In a society where most people once squealed on each other under the Communists, a low profile meant telling nothing to anyone.

Still, I pressed, “How much is some? Don’t worry, I am not going to tell anyone.”

She got that look again about whether to tell the truth or not.

“Well, I saved around \$6,000.” She reluctantly answered.

“So how are you going to make the rest?”

“I will have to go dance in some other country. I cannot earn that kind of money in Russia.”

The look of lost on her face when she said that tugged at my heart. I wondered whether she used the word dance as a euphemism for other activity and called it art so she could live with herself. I hurriedly finalized the idea bouncing around in my head.

“I may go to Mexico,” she added.

Oh, brother, a tall, blue-eyed blonde in Mexico. Now there's an invitation to trouble. Besides, for some strange reason, ever since I was a little kid, I hated Mexico even though I never visited there.

"Look, I will lend you \$10,000," I offered in an effort to protect her from the world.

"You kid me."

"No I am serious, or I would not say it."

"You're crazy. Why do you want to help me? Who am I to you? Do you want to control me by my owing you money? I do not want to owe anyone a lot of money," she said as if holding a knife ready to strike.

Her hostility instead of gratitude threw me. All I could mutter was, "I love you."

"Why? You don't even know me and I don't know you. How can you love someone without knowing them?"

Regaining some of my composure, "It's possible to meet someone whom you know at first sight is the one—the one you do not want to lose. That's how I felt the moment I turned around and saw you at Leo's party. Your image entered through my eyes and touched something in my unconscious. Look," I added defensively, "if you are worried about owing me the money, we can make it a long term agreement and essentially forget about it if you can't pay me back."

She tensed her face, narrowed her eyes and stared unflinching into my eyes in that peculiar Russian fashion of trying to third degree someone into telling the truth. But I was telling the truth, although it made no sense to hand over ten grand to a Russian model and dancer whom I met two days earlier.

I added, "I don't want you doing something stupid just to make \$10,000. You know things are a lot more dangerous today than they use to be." But I could tell she was not buying

it. Maybe something inside her stubbornly resisted owing anybody anything. An admirable quality—independence, but in the extreme, it can lead to unnecessarily desperate acts.

“I won’t do anything stupid,” she firmly said.

“I hope so for your sake, but think about my offer, okay.”

“I will,” she replied, but I knew she wouldn’t.

“So when are you going to Mexico?”

“I’m not sure. Leo is trying to make arrangements now, but it difficult to get visas.”

That was an understatement. Most governments considered young Russian women the least desirable visitors or immigrants. Just the opposite of what many men believed, including me. I suspected the worldwide feminist conspiracy responsible for such stupid government policies, especially in America. The feminists knew they couldn’t compete with the beauty and strength of Russian girls.

I sincerely but sadly said, “I hope everything works out well for you, and you get your apartment. If I can help, let me know.” We finished dinner around 10:00 PM as the sun began to set and strolled over to a small park with a couple of oversized statues of former Communist leaders. Many of the ubiquitous symbols of communism and its cult of personality still stood throughout Russia in tribute to the bankrupt economy that couldn’t afford to tear them down and as an unintended concession to the old Soviet ways of hypocrisy and dishonesty that continued throughout the country.

Angel said, “There is a church near here that I want to go to. Today is Sunday and I haven’t gone to church yet.”

“Okay let’s go. Which way?” Religion meant nothing to me, but I enjoyed the architecture of churches.

“Down that street,” she pointed. On our way, Angel choreographed a few more pictures of herself with me as the adoring photographer.

At the Russian Orthodox Church, Angel put a kerchief on her head, crossed her self and we entered.

With the fall of the Soviet Union, the Russian Orthodox Church began picking up the pieces of the influence it previously held under the czars. It seemed as though the entire population got religion at once. The government, whether federal, regional or local, provides a lot of financial and other assistance to the Church, just as it did under the czars. The Moscow City Government used tax revenues to finance part of the rebuilding of the Cathedral of Christ the Savior that Stalin blew up because he didn't like it intruding on the view from his office window. The remainder of the money to resurrect the Cathedral came from criminals enriched by their corrupt allies in government who together continue to loot public assets. And that's a lot, since the government still owns or controls much of the property in Russia. The head of the Church often consults with powerful officials who generally give him what he wants, such as when President Yeltsin issued decrees, which have the effect of law, making it difficult for other religions to recruit followers.

Angel quietly bought a few candles and gave me one.

“What do I do with this?” I asked.

She whispered, “Go around to a painting of one of the Saints and light the candle from another candle burning in front of the picture. When you light the candle, ask the Saint to protect a loved one or make a wish and put the lighted candle in one of the holders.”

I am generally open-minded to different philosophies, but this type of religious mumbo jumbo could not logically help me or anyone I cared about. Yet in the back of my mind, I knew

forces I couldn't explain had wasted my life, so I decided why not light a candle—maybe it would work. Besides, I knew enough diplomacy to respect the beliefs of others—especially those of a young and pretty “other” of the opposite sex.

“How do I know which Saint to choose?” I asked. “These paintings all looked the same to me.”

“There,” she pointed to one, “he will help you.”

I could not think of any loved ones alive or dead whom I wanted to protect. Actually, I couldn't think of any loved ones at all, so I asked this ancient painting to keep Angle safe and make her mine for at least a few years.

Russian churches that survived the Commies, as did this church, are hundreds of years old and often small and intimate inside by American standards. There are no seats, so during a service the faithful stand facing a wall of paintings and icons inlaid with gold and silver that reaches to the ceiling. Believers think that heaven exists behind the wall of religious symbols. Once the archbishop in Kursk allowed me to walk behind an icon wall at his diocese but would not let my interpreter join me since females aren't allowed. It didn't look like heaven to me—dusty, dirty with metal struts propping up the wall as if scenery for the theater. Maybe I was missing something.

Angel moved from saint to saint, crossing herself, lighting candles and praying. She obviously believed, since no one would go through that ritual as many times as she did with such an earnest expression and not believe. I felt somewhat envious. Maybe religion offered more than a last delusory hope for the desperate.

We walked out of the church into the Moscow night. Angel wanted to go back to the Park of Victory because at night the water fountains lit up red and she wanted to take more

pictures. So back we went. The bright red lights thrilled her, she struck her poses—which never stopped amazing me, I took the pictures and finally our last role of film in her camera ran out. Both of us were too tired to bother with a disco, so we decided to go the next night, Monday.

We crossed under Kutuzovsky Prospect heading back to her apartment. Because the streets are so wide in Moscow, the city built underpasses for pedestrians; otherwise, people would have to run a gauntlet of the less than considerate Moscow drivers speeding along these multilane highways.

I innocently suggested, “Let’s stop at my apartment, and I will get you another role of film for your camera.”

When we got to my apartment building, she stopped without me realizing it. I kept walking toward the entrance until I noticed she wasn’t at my side. I turned with a questioning look and thought I saw a scared little girl. “I’ll wait here,” she said.

“Come on. I’m only going to get you a role of film. You might like to see the apartment.” I meant what I said. She followed me into the building. In the elevator, I tried to ease her obvious fears that I would put the make on her, “It’s a nice apartment. Joseph Stalin’s daughter used to live there.” We entered the apartment. “Look around,” I said, “I will go get the film.” I walked through the living room to the bedroom, grabbed the film, turned to go back out and there was Angel sitting on my bed.

“Oh, why did you do that?” I said disappointedly, believing she felt obligated to pay me back for the \$100 and the rides at Gorky Park.

“Let me give you a massage,” she said without emotion.

“All right,” sadly admitting to myself she’s not the girl of my dreams that Bobby Darin sang about in “Beyond the Sea.” So, I might as well enjoy a night of fun for all my time. I sat

next to her, tried to kiss her, but instead she made me take off my shirt and to my surprise gave me a real, non-sexual, massage. I returned the favor. Lying face down she lifted her halter top up to her neck, which gave me a look at the side of her naked left breast. A vision I would ponder often over the next month. She undid the sweater around her waist revealing a red paint stain on the seat of her tights. I realized that when I had told her to sit down outside of Leo's party, the paint where she sat was not dry. I felt guilty for ruining this girl's tights for she probably could not afford another pair. I decided to buy her another pair. I gave Angel a polite massage, enjoying every minute of it and keeping my hands respectfully away from her intimate areas, although I kept debating whether to make a serious move on her. After all, here was this beautiful girl lying on my bed with her topped pulled up. But I decided no. I was going to show her I was different than those other guys—that I wanted a long-term relationship, not a one-night stand.

“Thanks,” she said. “That was a good massage.” I gave her the film and we left.

“You are a good man,” she said as I walked her across the courtyard to her apartment.

“You the only one who did not sexually push yourself on me. All other men always want something.”

This time when we said good night standing outside her apartment, she kissed my lips but in away they had never been kissed before. She held my face with both her hands as I looked upward into her face and kissed me with light, very short caresses that became stronger and stronger until she pressed a long hard kiss on my lips. When she pulled back with a slightly artificially sounding sign, I was hers. What a great sensation. Looking up into her face I felt safe, cared for and loved. Here was a reason for living. We agreed to go to a disco the next



evening. Then I returned back through the dark twisted forest to my apartment, happy I had come to Russia.

### Let's Dance

At work on Monday, I recounted my weekend to the outgoing American manager Joe whom I was replacing. He knew Russia better than I, and all he said was don't fall in love too quickly with a Russian. I laughingly responded that I had already fallen.

In the evening, Angel called me just as I returned from work. These Russian girls were great; they have the courage and finesse to pursue men without appearing desperate like American girls. Once again we arranged to meet on the patio outside the apartment where she was staying. On my way out, I grabbed the Moscow Times, which publishes a description of the crowd, atmosphere and happenings at the most popular discos, clubs and other entertainment spots. Like most Russians, Angel preferred American and European music. I also took the flowers I had bought for Angel on my way home from work. Russian tradition calls for giving a girl 3, 5 or another odd number of flowers because even numbers are considered unlucky. Also seven is usually the maximum number you give a girl because, as Russian men say, you don't want her to think you can't live without her. Funny, I always thought that was one of the definitions of love. Anyway, at the time I did not know about these Russian conventions but lucked out by giving Angel three flowers.

"Oh, they are beautiful," she exclaimed with her bright, happy, childlike smile. "They smell great and their color show how you see me. I am doing my Masters Thesis on the psychological meaning of color."

"I thought you studied Physical Education," I said surprised.

“That was my undergraduate degree, but I am going for a graduate degree in Practical Psychology. I am very good at it.”

This put Angel in a new light. She not only possessed the physical strength and temper of the will of an athlete but also studied how to influence the emotional and behavioral characteristics of people. Much more impressive, and maybe I should be a little more careful for Angel’s sunny smile hid a keen intelligence. But why should I worry, I graduated with honors from George Washington University Law School and Columbia University Business School, so how much of a threat could she pose to me. Besides, a thesis on colors seemed a bit superficial, so I blindly followed my heart.

“What do your graduate studies tell you about these pink and white carnations?” I asked as we walked over to the Park of Victory, since it was too early to hit the discos. “When you were looking for flowers to give me, your soul was trying to match its feelings for me with the colors.”

“I’m not sure about my soul, since I do not believe I have one...”

“Everybody has a soul,” she quickly interjected.

“Well, let’s just say my unconscious mind prodded me to choose these flowers.”

“Okay, if that is how you can understand it,” she politely replied. “Your unconscious mind felt a harmony between the way you thought of me and the color of the flowers.”

“I can believe that. When I was trying to decide what flowers to buy, I concentrated on the shapes and colors, hoping to sense which ones seemed right for you. I looked over a bunch of flowers until I felt these were the right ones. But why did I choose pink and white?”

“Every color expresses a feeling,” she explained with a teacher’s patience. “When your eyes took in the red it spoke passion to you and the white touched your feelings of innocence when with me.”

“I understand, passion and the innocence of childhood—a strange combination.”

We sat on the same bench as we did our first evening in the park looking west at the falling sun while I held my arm around her waist. She told me more about her Masters Thesis by going through the primary and secondary colors and the types of emotions they evoke in the human soul or for me the unconscious mind. She wrote the colors down in her little notebook as she explained the results of her research with the pride of a dedicated scientist.

“So when will you receive your Masters?” I asked.

“Probably never,” she wispily said. “I stopped my studies because my mother and I needed money. I sometimes wish I had not wasted two years of studying and teaching after college but started modeling right away.”

“What would you rather do? Pursue your Masters or model.” I said.

“Model,” she responded.

“So now you are doing what you want. You are lucky. Most people, like me, never pursue their first best destiny. Most just look for a secure occupation that will enable them to survive but not flourish. You are going after what you really want. I envy you.”

“You envy me,” she laughed. “Let’s go to the disco.” Maybe she missed the point, but it would come up again as these types of conversations always continue throughout a relationship.

We headed off searching for a disco using the Moscow Times as our guide, but it was Monday night and even Moscow discos were dead. Still, the ones we did visit based on the Times’ descriptions made me wonder whether a reporter had recently visited any of them. Many

discos change or disappear quickly in Moscow as owners move on to new money laundering schemes, loot the business or meet a violent end. The high incidence of unnatural death among all types of Russian businessmen contributed to the drop in average life expectancy for males from 65 to 59 years since the fall of the Soviet Union. Many Russians consider liquidating rivals as just another way to compete successfully.

After rejecting a few discos, we saw the Metallica Casino-Disco while riding down New Arbat; Angel suggested we check it out. Moscow casinos can't compare with Atlantic City or Las Vegas. They are small with tiny neon signs and offer no special attractions other than young pretty girls for sale inside. Angel thought the place too expensive, and one of the numerous tuxedo hoods guarding the door kindly referred us down the block to the Mirage Disco.

Hoods or euphemistically security guards are common for any Russian business where a fair amount of cash exchanges hands. These guards usually comprise the more brutal members of Russia's intelligence agencies, military or national police force. Most security personnel continue to work at their official jobs because that enables them to carry firearms and use government power to assist their employers or clients. Russia has one of the toughest gun control systems in the world, so only persons connected with certain government agencies have access to firearms. That means government employees and their associates do most of the shooting and killing.

When the Soviet Union collapsed, law and order collapsed with it. Many high-ranking government officials, seeing a capitalistic opportunity, recruited intelligence, law enforcement and military personnel to moonlight for the private security firms those officials set up. The firms sell services once furnished by the police. Each firm belongs to a Krisha controlled by influential members of the local, regional or national government.

Security at the Mirage frisked me but made Angel walk through a metal detector in deference to her sex. Another indication of the schizoid way that Russian men treated Russian girls—at times respectful, protective but also fearful. I have seen Russian coeds put to flight hostile, drunken Russian men or shame them into obsequiousness. But at other times, Russian men will punch-out a girlfriend with no qualms at all.

The disco was nearly empty but spacious with the feel of class. The maitre d' courteously seated us. Angel put her flowers by her chair, and we ordered drinks and salads—she wanted to lose weight.

“Let’s dance,” she said grabbing my hand and leading me to the center of the dance floor, which we had to ourselves. I then saw why she had complained about the crowded dance floor at Propaganda. This girl needed room to dance. Her arms moved in rhythm with her legs and body as she glided across large parts of the floor. She did not gyrate but flowed, undulating sensuously, releasing the magic of a young girl’s heart, which put a smile on my face that I couldn’t wipe off no matter how hard I tried. As we danced more people entered the disco, but for a long time we were the only ones out on the floor—the center of attraction, as our small audience looked on. I loved it. Angel’s dancing beat mine, but I had a few good moves. I moved in close to Angel rubbing my abdomen against hers and sliding around to her rear where, without touching, I would reach around in front of her and run my hands over her breast and towards her groin. She would spin away with a little girl giggle and go into her temptress routine, parting her mouth and lowering her eyelids. Every so often she would clasp her two hands together with both index fingers pointing at me to simulate a pistol. She would jerk her hands back as if shooting and then blow the smoke from the barrel with her parted lips. I didn’t understand the symbolism but so what. At times I suggestively kneeled in front of her looking

straight at the V between her legs and moved forward toward her as she moved away with a knowing smile. What fun, and I felt we were drawing closer to each other out on that dance floor.

We took a few breaks whenever Angel thought a particular song was not good for dancing. I ran out of steam around one in the morning. I could tell she wanted to dance all night long, but I had to work the next day. As we left the club, a couple of girls entered. She stared at them with an expression on her face that made me think she was jealous because they were as tall and blond as her.

“What’s the matter?” I asked.

“Prostitutes,” she disparagingly said.

“How can you tell?”

“I know,” she said.

Gee, I thought, she must really hate prostitutes. I just stay away from them.

When we got back to our building on Kutozovsky, she realized she had left her flowers at the disco.

“Let’s grab a ride back,” I said.

“But it will cost you money. It doesn’t make sense to spend the money for a car just to get some flowers.”

“It’s only a few dollars.”

“Yes, but you can use that money to buy food,” she replied. “There were times when my mother and I didn’t have enough to buy bread—we went hungry, so you must think ahead before spending any money.”

I really admired Angel's concern for me and felt terribly sad that life had not treated her better. I hoped I would be able to change that.

"You're right Angel—for Russia. But in America people with the level of education and skills of you and your mother can easily make enough for a comfortable living without worrying about going hungry. Believe me, the cost of the ride to pick up the flowers will not result in me missing a meal."

"America must be so different than here," she said. "You decide."

"Well, these were the first flowers I gave you, so they symbolize the future of our relationship. I do not want to abandon them in a disco. Let's hail a car."

"You are crazy," she said good-naturedly, "to go back for flowers."

When we arrived at the disco, Angel said, "You must go in to get them, I will not. And make sure you look in mirror when inside." The tone of her voice rushed me inside before I realized how strange that she wouldn't come in and what she said about a mirror.

On my way up the stairs, I imagined I would have to go through the garbage to find the flowers. But when I entered the disco, the maitre d' just looked as if he was waiting for me and showed me over to the bar without saying anything. He pointed to the flowers in a vase waiting for their owner's return. These Russians really have some endearing characteristics. They were so considerate as to take the trouble to put the flowers in water. What a pleasant surprise. It seemed to me that they sincerely wanted the romance of a Russian and American to blossom. I thanked everyone but didn't give a tip because they would have felt insulted. Once when I gave a Russian waitress a big tip, she got insulted and gave half of it back. On the way out, I looked in a mirror and finally remembered that Russians, always superstitious, believe if you go back to

get something you forgot, you have to look in a mirror to avoid any negative repercussions. So if looking in the mirror made everything fine, why didn't Angel come inside with me?

I soon forgot my question when I handed her the flowers. Angel beamed her smile and said with wonder, "I can't believe you did this. You are crazy." Those words made me feel like a Knight in a fairy tale, willing to do the impractical just to please the princess. What was happening to me?

Outside her apartment, Angel delighted me with her special brand of quick light kisses leading up to one strong long one—kissing her just kept getting better and better.

I told her I couldn't make plans for the following night because Kroll's Director of European Operations, Anne H. Tiedemann, was in town from London and wanted to give a farewell party to the departing manager Joe.

"I just as soon skip the party and go out with you," I said.

"But work is important," she wisely replied. "It enables you to live and enjoy what life has to offer. You must do what is required."

"True, true, but some bosses are just a pain because they're too insecure and narrow minded for the position they hold. That's generally true of American Feminazis. And Tiedemann is not just a Feminazi but a lesbian—two strikes."

"What's a Feminazi?" Angel asked.

"The same as a feminist, usually an unattractive American girl who blames men for everything that ever went wrong in her life. A feminazi thinks if she were a man she would be rewarded for the superior talents she has deluded herself into believing she possesses. They generally don't even realize that the reason they keep their jobs, despite their incompetence, is the accident of nature that made them a girl."



“I don’t understand,” Angel said.

“When a woman becomes pregnant, there is a point where the child could become male or female. It can go either way. So the fact that I am a man and you are a girl was the result of accidents of nature.”

“I understand,” she added mimicking me in a teasing way because I often adopt a professorial approach in explaining something.

“There is an interesting theory that comes out of this biological ability to end up as a boy or a girl. Whether man or woman, we always feel that part of us is missing. You had the potential to be a boy, and I the potential to be a girl. We both miss the other half that neither of us became. And it is that other half whom we are looking for as a lover—someone to make us whole. Understand?”

“Uh-huh,” was all she said.

“Well, anyway, just to wrap up my exposition, these American Feminazis threw away the powers that millions years of evolution gave them in order to hold their own with men. They now try to act the way they perceive men as acting. The result is they make themselves caricatures, neither men nor women, just uncivil she-males, or I should say she-devils. They don’t realize that evolution designed men with certain abilities and women with certain abilities so that they would work together as a team by uniting the missing half with each complementing the other.”

“You must be able to deal with anybody,” Angel said, not really understanding the tragedy that had befallen American women over the past twenty-five years.

“You’re right, but American men are tired of dealing with American Feminazis, so we go to Russia, South America or Asia to find real women like you who know their power lies in their

femininity. Mother Nature evolved men to be attracted to femininity not masculinity. American girls do not realize the power they have given up in their foolish quest for dominance. Some even believe they can exercise the power of both sexes, but combining opposites usually cancels each other out, leaving a zero, which is how many American men see American women. I'm sorry, I'm preaching."

"It's alright. It helps me understand you better," she said as she hugged and kissed me. "Call me if the party ends early. Good night."

#### Someday We Will Be Together

At work the next day, I mentioned to Joe the story about retrieving the flowers from the disco. He responded, "This is Russia! She might want you to save your money, so you can spend it on her."

"A possibility," I said as my suspicions temporarily reared their hydra heads again.

Kroll's farewell party for Joe took place at a fancy restaurant, by Russian standards, in the western part of Moscow where the New Russians build their million-dollar "dachas," a term that literally means summerhouse, alongside the plebeian dachas of the average Muscovite.

Most Russians live year-round in city apartments. There is no suburban sprawl as in America, only large forests, steppes or intermittent tracks of dachas. City residents visit their dachas over the weekends or for longer periods of time. The spread of dachas grew out of a need for food rather than a desire for leisure. Under Leonid Brezhnev, the Soviets realized their collective farms could no longer feed the population, so they started providing small plots of government land to large numbers of apartment dwellers to grow food for personal consumption in order to stave off mass starvation. The Government craved out sections of some forests and plains and divided the cleared land into parcels ranging from a tenth of an acre to a third.

Russians planted anything they could grow and eat on these little plots of real estate. They built small cottages and shacks for shelter during the growing and harvesting seasons from early spring to the end of September or October. Apartment dwellers turned into master gardeners eternally searching for seeds, which like everything else were in short supply. On Fridays during the summer, a mass exodus began from every Soviet city. People left work early, jostling each other for seats on trains and buses to get to their mini-farms for tending over the weekend. These little plots of homegrown food avoided starvation for many under the Communists by producing around 80% of Russia's potatoes and vegetables and one-third of the meat and milk. By 1991, 30% of Russia's families supplemented their meals with dacha grown food.

Today, the average Russian still scurries off every weekend in the spring and summer to fend off hunger. Dacha gardens in the late 1990s accounted for 50% of Russia's agricultural production. Also in the late 1990s, the New Russians invaded certain dacha areas, such as western Moscow, outside of the urban centers. The New Russians, or perhaps more accurately old Russians no longer restrained by the Communist Party from engaging in rampant thievery and other crimes, acquired loot and influence to acquire large plots of land on which they build palatial homes. No hunger there. These few have plenty because the many of Russia have next to nothing. The New Russians require lots of security, however, as is always the case with thieves fearing that someone else will do to them what they do to others.

The western Moscow restaurant was decorated as a Czar's hunting lodge to cater to the delusions of grandeur of the racketeers living in the area. The food was ordinary as in most Moscow restaurants. For a good meal, a foreigner needed to eat in the home of a Russian acquaintance. But unless the acquaintance belonged to the class of New Russians, his family

would have to scrimp on other meals the rest of the month in order to live up to the tradition of Russian hospitality.

The Kroll party ended late, but Angel and I still met for a short while on the patio outside her apartment. In the darkness, her kisses changed to longer ones with more feeling. I lightly caressed with the back of my fingers one of her breasts.

“Please don’t,” she said. “I too get excited from touching and need release.”

“Okay,” I complied. I never heard that kind of honesty from American girls. They always try to make a man feel as if they are doing him a favor by allowing him to touch them. American girls are very adept at making a man feel guilty, as if he foisted his natural desires on a reluctant female. In truth, girls reap most of the sexual satisfaction because they enjoy sex more than men; otherwise, they wouldn’t risk the burdens of pregnancy as often as they do. If a man faced the same risk, the enjoyment he receives from sex could never drive him to the same level of promiscuity as the average girl. Angel admitted the power that passionate caressing had over her, and I found that refreshing.

For the next two nights we danced until morning. She wanted to dance and dance all night long. The euphoria I felt when with her and anxiousness when not made me want to be by her side always. We only kissed and hugged, but I was in heaven—I was in love and also exhausted, since I had to work each day. At times I felt like the dancing dead, but as one of the Russian investigators in the office said, “You can sleep later, enjoy yourself now while you’ve got the chance.” So, I enjoyed myself but felt a little hurt when she asked me not to dance so close to her because it interfered with her dance routine. I always saw dancing as a way for two people to join together emotionally by following the impulses for intimacy that the music frees from their unconsciousness. But Angel wanted room to perform, so I remained at a distance.

Besides her dancing, Angel could also sing. On our last night out, she sang to me Whitney Houston's classic "I Will Always Love You," and actually hit all the notes. I was impressed and on top of the world.

My perception of her world grew but it didn't mean I fully grasped it. Her words painted a relentless fight to survive the forces of Russia that incessantly denigrate and threaten not only a person's pursuit of happiness but also one's very existence. I felt deeply sorry for Angel. As happens so often in the Russia that grinds people's dreams under foot, her father turned into an alcoholic when she was eight, and from then on her happy childhood turned into a nightmare. Once when her mother went on tour as a dancer, her father and his drunken friends ate the food her mother left for Angel, so she went hungry for days. Another time when she was thirteen, she said he attacked her sexually, but what exactly happened she wouldn't say. Other times she said he physically beat her and half suffocated her with a pillow. Outside the family she ran into the medieval nightmare of a quasi-Moslem culture. Angel's parents moved from Samara, Russia to Grozny, Chechnya when she was little. Once she reached puberty, she said the men on the public buses sometimes grabbed intimate parts of her body, including between her legs. As a girl in that culture, she told me she couldn't do anything about it. At night she could not venture out after eight o'clock for fear that some man would rape her or decide to carry her off to live with him. In 1991 at sixteen, Angel's mother divorced her father, and mother and daughter moved to Krasnodar. The Soviet Union had just collapsed, and the nightmare of an alcoholic, abusive father and Muslim Chechnya were replaced by the merciless brutality of Russia's market economy relentlessly stalking the two of them she said for destruction, as it did so many other honest and hard working Russians. Angel tried teaching to help her and her mother survive, but the money couldn't even pay for a telephone, so she turned to modeling and dancing.

She told me the modeling jobs Leo had lined up for her during her stay had fallen through because the employers thought her overweight, including the producers of the “exotic” film. In Russia the only type of modeling that pays livable wages is fashion, which requires very thin girls. America, on the other hand, has many different types of modeling that pay well, such as sports. Despite the lack of work, she always appeared cheerful, but must have felt crushed and frightened after coming all the way to Moscow in the hope of earning a couple of hundred dollars only to go home empty handed. I could not imagine the fear that looming hunger created in the breast of this sweet girl. I decided to give her some more money when she left.

Angel asked me to help her get to the airport late Friday afternoon for her flight back home to Krasnodar. I hired Kroll’s driver and his car, picked up a large bouquet of flowers and arrived outside her apartment at the time she wanted, but the driver and I ended up waiting about a half hour—very uncharacteristic of Angel, who always kept close track of the time. During the wait, I realized that she never invited me inside the apartment where she stayed. The one in which Leo housed his models from out of town. Why not I wondered, but then forgot about it when Angel suddenly appeared out of nowhere all a glow, giggly and pleased.

“Where did you come from?” I asked.

“I just shopping.” But she didn’t carry any bags, not even her purse. Before I could ask another question, she beamed, “Oh, the flowers are beautiful. They are so big. How will I carry them with everything else? No matter I will manage, I always do. I carried eight bags when I came back from Cyprus and didn’t lose any of them.” Eight bags—I liked her can do attitude.

“Why so many bags when you flew back from Cyprus?” I asked.

“Oh, I was bringing lots of presents.”

“How many bags did you go to Cyprus with?”

“Two,” she said.

Lots of presents was right, I thought!

I took her aside out of hearing range of the driver knowing how private Russians are about some things. “I hope this will help,” and pressed another \$100 bill into her hand.

“I can’t take this,” she objected. “It’s too much.”

“Take it,” I insisted. “You said that Leo couldn’t find you any work while you were here. This will make up for that.”

“But it is too much. You have to think about yourself,” she pushed. I am always a little surprised when someone, especially a girl, expresses concern for me. Angel had a good heart.

“Look, I can afford it and besides you need it more than I do.”

“Thank you.” She put her arm around my shoulder, smiled innocently and kissed me, “My trip would have been a waste if I had not met you.” That made me feel great.

“If you need more, call me,” I said, not realizing she probably couldn’t even afford the long distance telephone call.

“I couldn’t do that,” she resisted.

“I want to help Angel, so call or write.”

“How can you help me if you are in Moscow and I am in Krasnodar? This is Russia and you are an American. If you need help, you call me.” She said with a knowing smile that puzzled me until I dismissed it as bravado.

“Angel, you, like so many other Russians I have met, underestimate us Americans. Remember we won the cold war, not Russia.”

Looking down into my eyes she smiled a wolfish grin, “But you are in my country now. Russians can be very dangerous—I know.”

“Angel, you don’t get it. I am an American lawyer with resources. I can go anywhere I want and probably solve any problem that comes up.”

“Just keep yourself safe in Moscow and write me.” Her caring made me feel wanted.

She wrote down her address and pager number. “I do not have a telephone, but you can call me at this number at a friend’s house this Saturday around nine in the evening. When you call I will try to answer, but if someone else does just ask for Angelina. Don’t say anything else to them and don’t call that number unless I tell you to.”

“Okay, but why the cloak and dagger?” I asked surprised.

“Russians are very envious. If they think you have more than them, they will make trouble for you—try to tear you down or take what you got. It best to keep your life to yourself unless you sure you can trust someone and that takes time. You are too open, you must be more careful with what you say to Russians.”

“What can a Russian do to me?”

“Oooo, you will be surprised. We have many ways,” she again wolfishly grinned.

Naturally, I ignored her warning, believing it was time for Russians to put away their secretive Soviet mentality and join the civilized world.

“Here, this is to protect you.” She gave me a wallet size card with religious figures on it. “These are icons of three saints who will keep you safe. Keep them with you at all times, Moscow is a dangerous place for Westerners, and I do not want anything to happen to you.” I was skeptical that the reproduction of ancient portraits could protect me, yet a long-time-ago college course in Quantum Mechanics and my recent readings of Joseph Campbell made me realize that as Hamlet said there are more things in heaven and earth than are dreamt of in our



philosophies. Anyway, the card was small and fitted in my wallet, so I ended up keeping it next to my favorite picture of Angel and me at Gorky Park.

“When are you coming back to Moscow?” I asked.

“I don’t know yet but I will let you know. It depends on what jobs there are.”

“Well, I can always come to Krasnodar for the weekend,” I suggested.

“You must be patient. Do not let yourself become crazy—wait for me.”

“Okay, I will wait.”

I held her all the way to the airport with my head on her shoulders. Weren’t these roles supposed to be reversed, I wondered? After all she wasn’t my mother. We kissed goodbye, promised to write and I would call her Saturday evening. Things were going my way. Angel told me on one of our dates that she didn’t have a boyfriend—part of me wanted to believe it but part of me did not. Whether she told the truth didn’t seem to matter at this point. I knew Angel wasn’t mine yet, but I was sure I would eventually win her, as I had every other girl I managed to kiss on the lips. Besides, how could any Russian man compete with an American—an American lawyer at that? Russian guys might act smoother with the ladies, but only an American man will give them respect and compassion.

Riding with my driver back to the office, I asked him did he see where Angel came from when she appeared out of the blue. He didn’t know but was sure she didn’t come from the direction of the shops as she said because he would have seen her in the rear view mirror—bizarre.

On Saturday, promptly at 9 PM, I telephoned the number in Krasnodar that Angel had given me. A middle-aged woman answered, but Angel immediately got on the line. I told her I missed her dearly and asked when she’d return to Moscow. She didn’t know but told me to

“keep my patience.” We only talked a few minutes. I wanted to go on longer, but she had to meet her mother. She gave me a date and time to call her again at that number. On the next call, I talked to apparently the same middle-aged woman in broken English for less than a minute before Angel took the receiver. After another all too short conversation, Angel insisted that I throw the number away saying it no longer worked. As a good lawyer would, I naturally kept it.

Angel changed the way we communicated. I no longer called a number on a specific day and time. She'd telephone to give me a number to immediately ring her back on so that she could, as she said, avoid the costly long distance bills for which she didn't have the money. I kept those numbers as well. At the end of our telephone conversations, she always said do not call that particular number again unless she told me to. After a while, all of these 007 precautions seemed more ridiculous than suspicious, but every so often I wondered why. I told one of the Russian investigators at work about the convoluted ways of reaching her. He suggested we investigate her. It wouldn't cost much, but I declined. This was the girl I loved—I should trust her.

### Black Slacks

After a month of coming up to speed on Kroll's operations for the former Soviet Union, August marked my first month as manager. The six-month contract I signed with Kroll required me to not only direct the detective agency's investigations and security details in Russia but also improve its administration and market its services to Western companies. Neither the previous manager nor his and now my boss Tiedemann, who worked in London, had a clue about running a business or dealing with employees. Tiedemann also tended to violate both Russian and American laws despite or because of her cop mentality. I had a lot to do, which was good, since Angel was in Krasnodar. One of my tasks involved resurrecting Kroll's newsletter on the

political and economic situation in Russia that we began sending to the firm's clients doing business in Russia.

The presidential election, unless canceled—such things did happen in the former Soviet Union, would take place in the spring or summer of the following year, 2000. Many contenders were jockeying for position. It was a little unclear, but the Russian Constitution seemed to prevent Boris Yeltsin from running for a third term. As though a law ever stopped a Russian intent on enriching himself, which Yeltsin and his associates did repeatedly. Yeltsin's health, however, made another run for him unlikely unless the Russians were dumb enough, and they weren't, to accept a nearly brain dead President. Yeltsin and his allies had looted the country for seven years, so to continue their plundering his inner circle, whom the press duped the "Family," needed a compliant candidate to succeed the President. But rampant corruption, a criminal economy and the falling standard of living for most Russians made such a candidate's chances of winning the Presidency nil.

Yeltsin chose as his successor Vladimir Putin, the then Prime Minister and former head of the Federal Security Force, known in Russia as the F.S.B. After the collapse of the Soviet Union in November 1991, the K.G.B. was renamed F.S.B. for public relations reasons. The F.S.B. continued to conduct intelligence operations inside and outside of Russia, and is basically a combination of America's Federal Bureau of Investigation and the Central Intelligence Agency. Kroll's investigators used their extensive intelligence experience, contacts and knowledge of Russian politics to conclude that Putin would never win the Presidential election. He was politically savvy in the back rooms but unknown to most Russians, never held elected office and an incompetent manager. Most observers of the Russian scene reached the same conclusion. We sent out our newsletter predicting the party formed by an alliance between the

Mayor of Moscow, Yuri Luzhkov, and the former Prime Minister of Russia, Yevgeny Primakov, was the odds on favorite to win next year with Primakov taking the Presidency. But a year in Russia is an eternity and not just for politics.

On the weekends, I usually worked and took long walks in the Park of Victory where Angel and I used to stroll. I felt lonely and missed her. Once in a while, I'd go out night clubbing with my American friends, but to my mind none of the girls could hold a candle to Angel. They did not interest me, partly because I thought Angel more beautiful, courageous, good-hearted and in need of my help but also I can only go out with one girl at a time. A serial monogamous my friends call me. I never understood how some of them managed to date more than one girl at a time. Where do they find the time and the emotional equipoise? Sex is enjoyable, but I always felt it only made sense with someone I really liked and trusted. Otherwise, why engage in such intimacy that opens the heart and makes one vulnerable to another person. A heart closed with deceit or mistrust prevents not only an emotional but metaphysical intermingling where lovers experience their beings living and breathing inside of each other during sex. Assuming both are capable of multiple orgasms, sex is then a physical act that transposes into a transcendental union with another part of the universe, a living part, that dispels the illusion of being condemned to existing separately and apart. How I dreamed of such a union with Angel despite a sense of uneasiness that she brought into my life. In one letter to her, I wrote:

“I am concerned for you, I worry about you, I want you to be happy and successful. Why? Because I believe the fates have decided to make it so. There is a current running through the universe affecting everything. When a person's intuition accesses that current, it tells him what he must do or what road to take. If he does not, then he will forever regret it as Eugene O'Negin did in Pushkin's play. After the happy week we spent dancing, walking, talking and hugging, it is clear to me that if I have any purpose left, it is to help you.

“As I said, I do not know about the world you work in and, perhaps because of that, I think it is dangerous. However, danger and risk may be necessary in order to pursue your career.

This is usually part of any career; there are always risks that a person must take to succeed. But if you are taking risks or increasing your danger to obtain the apartment, I can lend you fifteen thousand instead of ten, and you can pay me back when you want. Then you can court the world for your career and know that the risks are worth your success.

“I know what you are saying, “Who is this crazy American? Why does he want to help me? What does he want from me? Well think of it this way. You gave me the card with the icons to protect me. I could not have given it to myself because I did not know about it and am not a believer. You know about it and you are a believer, so your concern for me caused you to do what you could in this world to protect me. Well my concern for you causes me to do what I can to protect you.”

I started looking into modeling in Europe and America for I knew Angel didn't have a clue about how to pursue her occupation in the countries that paid good money for models. Russia never had a free flow of information available to the public. Under the Soviets, information meant power, but now under the Nomenklatura freebooters, information means money. Access to government documents is not a matter of right but of cash. Enough hard currency can buy any information the government possesses, and for former dictatorships like Russia, that's a lot. The Soviets and present government officials kept multiple records of everything. A transaction in America that takes one document takes three or more in Russia with everyone in required to sign somewhere. In order to avoid forgeries, Russians perfect complex scrawls that Swiss bankers would envy. Angel must have spent days perfecting her intricate signature. Growing up in such an environment that tightly controls information, Angel could never imagine the wealth of data available to her on modeling in the West.

I checked out a few modeling web sites and ordered a couple of books over the Internet with my credit card. Angel, like most Russians, did not have a credit card. They preferred to pay cash, since it did not leave a record from which the tax authorities could estimate incomes. Neither did most Russians own a computer, and among those that did, few could afford the twenty dollars a month for Internet service. I also contacted a close friend in New York City who used to model for tips on how Angel should go about breaking into the business and even

posted on Kroll's London computer bulletin board, which employees used for personally related messages, that I was looking for contacts in the modeling industry for a Russian model friend of mine. Surprisingly, my London boss Tiedemann responded immediately to my message, but chastised me for posting it because she said "Russian model" meant whore. I almost quit right there and then. A man would not have wasted his time or good relations with one of his direct reports by butting into someone's personal affairs. Where did this lesbo man-hater get off accusing my girlfriend—who was superior to my boss in every way—of being a whore? Decades ago, I vowed never to take a job in which my immediate boss was a Feminazi, but Joe's surprise abandonment of Kroll, a firm he vowed never to work for again, left me the Moscow manager having to deal with a female that couldn't get her sexes straight. Well, at least Tiedemann was in London, had she worked in Moscow, I would have left for New York.

Remembering that Angel had ruined a pair of her black tights by sitting on wet paint at my suggestion during Leo's party, I asked the female, office accountant to suggest a store where I could pick up a pair. She told me to try Gumm, the department store on Red Square. Not knowing Angel's size, I took along the picture of the two of us standing together at Gorky Park. I figured the sales girl could guess Angel's size by comparison. I found the same type of tights, but they carried a price tag of \$120. Who could afford these prices in Russia—only the New Russians. But they were for Angel, so I charged them.

Later, I asked one of the Russian investigators why the accountant would suggest such an expensive store? He said, "Russians use to value intelligence and art but, today, only money. The more you pay the better, even if what you get is not worth the price. Paying a lot enhances your status and shows you are better than others. She naturally assumed you did not want to lose prestige by paying a low price for the tights."

I explained to the accountant the American preoccupation with getting what you pay for or better, not less, and asked her to recommend a place where a person could find bargains for my future reference. She referred me to one of the many open-air markets in Moscow where small merchants group together to sell different wares and where most Russians shop. Every Russian city has these types of markets that first became popular in the middle ages.

I tried sending flowers to Angel in Krasnodar, but Russia did not have an FTD florist system. Just another example of the difficulty of organizing a nationwide payment system for goods because of the fear that someone would devise a scheme for defrauding customers by not delivering the promised products. Russian businessmen do not play fair. The only thing moral to them is what furthers their interests, and they will commit any crime, they will lie and they will cheat and to them that is moral. In Russia, if a businessman tricks someone, it is the victim's fault for not protecting himself. Naturally, a social system of con artists coupled with a legal system incapable of enforcing the rule of law makes economic progress nearly impossible. Russia, however, is not a lawless country. It has the laws on the books necessary for a modern economy to function, but most laws are not enforced because of corruption and the pervasive Russian mindset of not caring what happens to their fellow citizens.

The postal system among cities barely functioned because employees opened mail they thought might contain something of value or just dumped letters in the garbage to avoid the work of delivering them. Angel meant too much for me to allow a heartless culture to crush our burgeoning romance or her hopes, so I sent her letters by DHL and left little messages on her pager such as, "Just a reminder that someone is on your side, thinking about you and waiting to help" or just "Love Roy." Toward the end of August, Angel sent me two very sexy pictures on which she splashed some of her perfume. She, like most Russian girls, had a love affair with

perfumes, probably to help mask the odor when with Russian men who didn't bath very often and rarely used deodorant. One of the photographs showed her evocatively posed, stretched out on a large bed dressed only in a black lace top and black panties. On the back she wrote in red ink "For you Roy! from passionate Angelina," which she covered with a few red lipstick kisses. In the other, a shot from her waist up, she stood in her bra while sexily pulling one shoulder strap down. "Your mysterious Angelina" in red with red kisses adorned the back. The pictures lifted my spirits, but I wondered who took them, most likely an old boy friend. I replied with a message on her pager:

"I received your photographs and put them on the pillow next to mine so that I could smell your perfume the night through and dream of you. Can you squeeze yourself into the next letter you send? Then when I open it, you will pop out. Good idea—right. But if your magic only works on me and not letters, then please send more pictures with your perfume. I miss you terribly. There is no sunshine when you are gone, so let me pay for your trips to Moscow and then there will be lots of sunshine here."

Angel called a few days later to make my wish come true. She would fly into Moscow late Friday evening.

"Will you pick me up at the airport?" she asked.

"Sure," I would do anything for her. "How long are you going to be here?" I naturally hoped a long time.

"I don't know. It depends on my business with Leo. I may go to Mexico with him and another girl to do some modeling." My heart sank. If there was one country I never liked, it was Mexico. Well, I would wait and see rather than worry about something that might not happen.

On the way to the airport with my driver, I stopped at one of the many roadside stands selling flowers. Russians are enamored with flowers. The subways, the roadways are populated with little stands selling all types of flowers even in the middle of Moscow's arctic winters. Driving up to the airport, I sensed that Angel was not going to be in town long and that she



would try to sleep some place other than my apartment. All right, I knew it would take a while to win her. At the airport, carrying a large bouquet of assorted flowers, I scanned the crowd coming off the airplane on the dimly lit tarmac. Many of Russia's airports do not have gantries for deplaning; instead, like American airports in the 1950s, the passengers descend a stairway that is rolled out to the plane. I was anxious not to miss her, which was rather foolish, because in her street shoes at six feet three inches—six-one in bare feet—she stood taller than most and her beauty out shined our girls. I broke out in a smile when I spotted her and waited until she passed through the opening in the fence between the runway and parking lot. We hugged and kissed each other.

“The flowers are great, they are so beautiful,” she happily said.

“How was the flight?”

“I was so tired that I kept falling asleep, but the seats were so small that I kept falling against the man next to me.”

“He must have enjoyed that.”

She laughed, “Can you take me to Leo's? I need to see him tonight.”

Not a problem, since Leo's office was in the basement of the building where I lived. In the car heading to Leo's, I couldn't help but hug her all the way.

“Listen, Roy, I am going to stay in the flat Leo has for his out of town models. Okay?” Angel said. Naturally, I felt let down, but there was nothing I could do.

“You know you can stay in my apartment if you want. Nothing will happen unless you want it to.” I always found that when a girl was ready for sex, she'd make a clear move. All I needed to do was make myself available and wait, so I continued to wait for Angel.

At Leo's office, Angel talked with him privately behind closed doors. When she came out she said, "I guess it is fate. I will stay in your flat because Leo has other girls staying in his place."

"Don't worry. You can have my bedroom; it has a lock on it and I will sleep on the coach."

She smiled assuredly, looked down into my face and ran her hand through my hair as though I was a little boy, "I not afraid. Let's go. I have much to do tomorrow. I will leave early Sunday morning to fly with Leo to Mexico City." Rats! She was going to Mexico; now I began to worry.

"How long are you going to be there?"

"My visa is only for two weeks, so I will probably be back by the middle of September."

For some reason I felt otherwise and said, "No. I think you will be there for a long time."

"That's not possible; my visa is only for two weeks. I will do some modeling and come back with Leo soon. Don't be pessimistic."

"We will see."

In my apartment, I showed her the bed where we innocently gave each other massages a month earlier. She just stood there as if demanding something.

"Don't worry, here are some clean sheets. It's a comfortable bed." I added, but she still just stood there like a princess demanding something. I finally guessed and made the bed for her.

Before going to sleep, we had a bite in the kitchen and talked about her upcoming trip and what she wanted to do the next day, Saturday. Russians tend to spend lots of time sitting around the kitchen table, drinking tea, nibbling on small cakes and talking late into the night.

We didn't stay up very late because Angel was tired from her two-hour flight. She retired to my bedroom, and I prepared the couch in the living room for me. Before turning out the lights, she called me into the bedroom to kiss her good night. When I walked in, she was completely under the covers except for her face and long flowing blond hair. She looked like a defenseless but overwhelmingly beautiful little girl beaming innocently up at me. I kissed her lips and forehead and said good night.

### You've Got The Magic Touch

The next morning, Angel woke me early because she needed to find some medicine before she flew off to Mexico the following day. Finding medicine in Moscow is often an exasperating chore, outside of Moscow—often impossible. We trudged from one pharmacy to another for about three hours until she found a medicine that was an approximation for what she wanted. Under the Communists, Russia did not have an economy dedicated to satisfying consumers' needs and wants because most of the wealth went for guns, bombs and missiles. After the fall of communism, the consumer still goes without because much of the wealth flows into the overseas bank accounts of the crooked government officials.

I asked Angel what kind of medicine she was looking for but only got a vague response of "a preparation to cleanse my body." I couldn't figure out what cleansing the body meant, some Russian health habit probably. I didn't pry and soon forgot about it once she found what she wanted and we headed, at her suggestion, to the Exhibition Center in North Moscow.

The Exhibition Center used to house exhibits touting the latest technological achievements that claimed to make life in the Soviet Union a utopia compared with the West. Because of press censorship, most of the empire's citizens didn't know that the Soviet Union lagged behind the West by years and decades in nearly all areas of modern life except for rockets

and nukes. After the fall of the Soviet Union, Russians finally saw an accurate picture of life elsewhere and realized that their piece of the planet resembled not just a third world nation but more like a fourth. South American countries made better cars and appliances, and I could easily find restaurants in Amazon jungle towns serving food far superior to Moscow eateries. The managers of the Exhibition Center, however, quickly adapted to the new hunger of Russia's citizens for Western ways by setting up an amusement park.

Inside the Center, Angel's eyes went big at the sight of a loop-de-loop and the largest Ferris wheel I ever saw. Something about rides turned Angel from a hardheaded model into an excited, happy little girl. It was as if an eight year old took over the six feet one inch body of this physically matured woman. We chose an open seat on the Ferris wheel that hung its inhabitants out in mid-air 75 meters above the ground rather than an enclosed compartment. At the top, as we looked over the Moscow skyline on an overcast day, the mature woman pushed out the joyous child to wonder how she and her mother would fair in the land of criminals. It made me want to help but also began my understanding of what her agent Leo had meant when he said that Angelina was a very strong-willed girl. She wanted to make it on her own without any charity. Angel next hopped on the loop-de-loop, which I avoided not wanting to lose the contents of my stomach. I took some pictures catching her screams of pleasure streaking along upside down and then grinning as she wobbled off the ride.

After the Exhibition Center, we window-shopped along Tverskaya Street, Moscow's Fifth Avenue but even more expensive. In one shop, I bought her a lipstick for twenty dollars. Outside she cooed it was the most expensive present anyone had ever given her. That shocked me. How could the world not have adorned this twenty-three year-old beauty with suitcases of gifts? I could not fathom such, but here before me stood the evidence. And then it hit me as to

why she avoided kissing on the lips until late at night—she could not afford to put on lipstick more than a couple of times a day. Such desperate straits wrenched at my heart. We crossed the street to Patio Pizza, a restaurant chain that ran Pizza Hut in Russia, probably through some form of unfair competition or threats. During our meal we ended up talking about prostitution.

As the broad-minded condescending liberal, I remarked, “I can understand why someone who does not have enough to eat or decent shelter would sell their body. I could never hold that against any girl.”

I didn’t mean Angel by any stretch of the conversation, but she apparently thought I did and blurted out, “I am not a prostitute. My body not a supermarket.”

“I didn’t say you were. I only said I can understand how a girl in desperate straits could end up working as one,” I quickly replied trying to straighten out the misunderstanding.

Rather than allow the miscommunication to spiral into an argument, she surprisingly said, “You are a man who has a good heart. I don’t meet many like that. You are very special!” That made me feel great and hopeful I would eventually win her love. She added, “I will tell you all about my past the next time we meet.”

That surprised me since I never had asked about her past, which was her business. But if she wanted to talk about it to further our understanding of each other, fine, so I said, “Okay, it’s a deal.”

Next, we went to one of the open-air markets to buy food for dinner, which Angel volunteered to cook. She warned me to watch my wallet because such markets were filled with thieves and con artists—not unlike Russia as a whole I mused to myself. The food was amazingly cheap by my standards, but she haggled over every purchase saving rubles and kopecks and smiling like a cheshire cat after besting some merchant. It turned out that she was

right about the thieves. My wallet did not disappear, but my mobile did. Angel almost broke down in tears, saying, “I should not have brought you here. It is my fault. Your mobile was so expensive, what will you do.”

“Kroll paid for the mobile, so don’t worry about it. You were not to blame. Let’s go back to my apartment and have dinner.”

When she walked into my kitchen, she put on her glasses and changed from the hard bargainer of the market place to a homemaker. She looked ten years older, not just to my eyes but in the photographs. Angel moved effortlessly from one role to another, not just in mannerism, but in her physical appearance as though she could turn from vamp to little girl to businesswoman to housewife at will. I’d never seen anything like that except in the movies.

She made a typical Russian dinner of salad, generic meat and a couple of vegetables. The portions were around half the size of what Americans normally have for dinner, but that is common throughout Russia. I guess people can grow use to not having enough to eat, but then again, Americans over eat.

Angel needed to go to bed early since she had to be in Leo’s studio downstairs at 4 AM to catch her ride to the airport for the flight to Mexico. Before sleep, I gave her a massage like last time that she wanted. I pressed between the vertebrae along her back, squeezed the muscles down each arm to the palm and out to the fingertips and did the same with her legs to the feet and toes. She reminded me to squeeze particularly hard on her feet, which were plenty big, eleven inches. I assumed she suffered from previous athletic injuries, as did various parts of my body from my lacrosse and rugby days. I then tucked her in, set the alarm for the night of early morning and kissed her on the lips and forehead good night. My night turned out to be not good at all. Something I ate kept me tossing most of the time. At first I concluded it was the weird

apples she had bought, but my American anti-acid had no effect. Not only my stomach felt strange but also my brain as it swam through conscious and semi-conscious states all night long. Finally the alarm rang.

We went downstairs to Leo's studio at four in the morning. A few other people were there. I told Angel I'd wait until they left but she said there was no need. I sensed that my importance in her life had instantly diminished the moment we entered Leo's studio. She kissed me goodbye rather quickly, turned and focused her attention elsewhere. No long goodbyes for this girl. I felt sick anyway, so I went home to slip between the sheets that still smelled of Angel and dreamed of salvation. But the next night while lying in bed I knew that whether Angel brought salvation or destruction, I would win in the end.

#### You've Really Got a Hold on Me

The workload at Kroll picked up dramatically in September as business always does at that time of year in Russia. The old totalitarian regime created behavioral patterns among Russians that continue to persist following the collapse of communism. The entire country virtually closes down in August as much of the population flocks off on their vacations to tend their dacha vegetable gardens. Another mass vacation takes place in December from just before the 25<sup>th</sup> until the middle of January. During this time, it seems the entire country goes on a three-week drunk that makes it impossible to get anything done.

Some widespread behavioral patterns reach deep into the personalities of Russians. Pretty young Russian girls always appear happy and pleasant toward men with influence and money, especially foreigners, but bitterly critical and deprecating of young Russian men just starting out, and nearly all Russian guys tend to exhibit a strain of moroseness as though some plague pursued them their entire lives.

Part of my job at Kroll required me to educate some of its Western clients to the reality of doing business with Russians. I usually told our clients that all Russian businesses and organizations operated to one degree or another outside the laws of accepted commercial activities in the United States and Europe because if they didn't, they couldn't survive. For example, any venture needed the protection of local, regional or national public officials or it was doomed. Protection meant paying bribes directly, or laundering the money through charitable organizations, or providing a hidden ownership interest in the commercial venture. The trick for any business venture was to remain friendly with the politicians who were in power at the moment. One Western bank had invested large sums with a Moscow conglomerate that had excellent connections with Moscow's Mayor Luzhkov but poor relations with the people around Yelstin—the Family. In early September 1999, it looked like Luzhkov and Primakov's political party would win the Presidency the following year, but a victory by the Family would endanger the bank's investments.

Most of the work at Kroll consisted of investigating the backgrounds of various Russian businessmen and their companies with which Western corporations were considering dealing. Kroll focused on determining whether the Russians were sufficiently crooked to assure favorable treatment by the government but not so crooked as to abscond with all the Western investors' funds or goods, which tended to happen quite often, or create a public relations nightmare for the Westerners. Some of our clients nearly stumbled into business relations with the worst elements of Russia's criminal business world—the Chechens. Mayor Luzhkov and his administrators were making lots of money by allowing a Chechen Krisha to operate in certain areas of Moscow. Chechen gangsters are ruthless even by Russian standards and by no means stupid. They maintained control of various business facilities, such as the Armand Hammer Center, by using



assassinations and political clout. An effective combination in Russia, especially when assassins tended to use bazookas the way American mobsters once used Tommy guns.

One of Kroll's clients was considering a deal involving the Armand Hammer Center until we verbally warned its officers to stay away. A deal with Chechen gangsters could not only result in horrendous publicity for the company but also threaten the lives of its Moscow executives if a dispute arose. You don't take Chechen gangsters to court. Our giving of a verbal rather than written report was required by Kroll's policy in Russia of keeping references to specific organized crime activities out of its documents in order to prevent retaliation or their use by the government against Kroll.

Generally, Kroll was on the side of the good guys who just wanted to make a reasonable profit in Russia even though it required practices frowned on by the American Government. But part of one case came our way through Tiedemann, the European head in London, who allied Kroll with two of the worst in Russia. Tiedemann accepted as clients the monopolists of Russia's aluminum industry, which nearly caused a revolt in the Moscow office by the Russian investigators. The two Chernoy brothers had recently gained near complete control of the aluminum industry after years of competition, bloody even by Russian standards, in which at least forty persons, including business executives and even government officials, were murdered.

The aluminum war began when the Chernoy brothers used their influence with the Family to get Yeltsin to sign a decree that exempted aluminum shipped aboard from export tariffs. The tariff exemption allowed Russian aluminum manufacturers to sell ingots below the world price but still make large profits that they siphoned into overseas bank accounts for themselves and friendly officials rather than reinvesting to modernize Russia's aluminum industry. In effect, the decree gave aluminum manufacturers the green light to loot the industry.

The promise of profits was huge, and, as it turned out, so was the death rate as manufacturers battled for control. In the end, the Chernoy brothers won; their competition peacefully at rest six feet under. But the allegations of their criminal acts, evidence and many witnesses still lived. So the brothers hired Kroll to find out which agencies and individuals had information on their aluminum war activities that might cause them problems in the future. Tiedemann accepted the contract with the Chernoy brothers because the price was right. And she accepted the contract even though it was a conflict of interest, since Kroll had previously investigated the Chernoy brothers for another client. Kroll provided the brothers with the information requested, and they most likely purchased the files of incriminating evidence from various Russian agencies—not an uncommon occurrence. The F.S.B. in 1999 would sell its files for around \$50,000. As for the witnesses, I can only imagine what happened to them.

On any case, the way Kroll determined who knew what went to the heart of acquiring information in Russia. Every person with information, from close associates of the President, to the F.S.B., to the police, to the neighborhood librarian, will sell it for the right price. In the Bank of New York money laundering case, one source close to the Family and knowledgeable about the transfer of money overseas wanted \$200,000 for his information because he would have to disappear once he provided it. The Bank, however, was not interested in paying that amount. Generally the price for information depended on how much danger its release to the public would put the informant in.

A week after Angel left, I called Leo's agency to check on their return date. The secretary told me Leo and Angel were coming back late Friday night on September 10<sup>th</sup>. I couldn't wait. Angel hadn't sent me any word from Mexico probably because she was busy. But it didn't matter; she would be back soon, and I would be at the airport to meet the love of my

life. I'd give her the short letter I had planned to send her in Mexico but couldn't because I didn't have an address. It told how I felt, which made me confident that my sincerity and empathy would move me closer to her heart:

“When you left this last time, I felt lonelier than the first time. Will my loneliness increase every time you leave?”

“Being a dancer in a club and model must be very difficult. To enjoy doing something but to face criticism for doing it requires much more strength than most people have.” (Angel told me that most Russians look down on go go girls and models.)

“I wish I could protect you from all the idiots of the world, but then you would not grow to your full potential.

“I am you and you are me. Is that possible?”

“I hope you are all right. I, however, am not since you are far away and I worry much about you. Yes, you are a mature woman, but trouble, like men, is attracted to beautiful ladies.”

The night of Angel's scheduled return, I left work early to change into all black clothes and splash on the cologne that she liked. Angel was very fashion conscious and thought Russian men in basic black dressed better than any men in the world. However, their failure to bath regularly or use prodigious amounts of cologne turned her off. I made sure not to make that mistake. I met my driver, picked up a bouquet of pink roses because they reminded me of my guardian Angel, and we headed for the airport and a new chapter in my life.

Moscow's international airport Sheremetvo 2 is located in the middle of a forest only about fifteen minutes from the high-rise buildings of the city. Unlike New York City where office and apartment buildings gradually transform into suburbia, many parts of Moscow abruptly change from high-rises to dense forest. There are sections where one side of a road is lined with apartment buildings and the other side with woods. Russia lacks a middle-class, suburban population. Cities do have enclaves of upscale houses, but these are owned by the New Russians, the new thieves, and hardly middle class. The vast majority of Russians live in cities while the poorest occupy small villages scattered throughout the country consisting of houses built before the 1917 Revolution that lack hot water and modern toilets.

Driving down the lonely road to the airport surrounded by fields and forest, I looked at the night sky and felt that something was not right, but quickly pushed it out of my conscious for I would soon rest my head on the shoulder of my very tall soul mate. My driver and I arrived early and luckily found a couple of seats in which to wait. Moscow's premier airport lacks a lot, such as enough terminal seats, toilet paper and orderly lines—true everywhere in Russia. The concept that each person has a right to a spot in a line based on when he shows up does not register with Russians. They believe in the mob approach with everyone trying to cut in front of others or jostling their way to the front. Perhaps living in a society of limited resources where the last in line might starve keeps Russians behaviorally stuck in the middle ages. Angel would often just walk up to the front of a group amassed at a window as though no one else was waiting. Usually the most aggressive line cutters are New Russians who think of themselves as the new nobility. Perhaps they are for the average Russian never speaks up to object.

When McDonalds first opened in Moscow, the line stretched down the block between two rows of metal barricades. The space between the barricades was wide enough for three people, but only two stood abreast, with one lane open. I could not figure the reason for the open lane until I saw New Russians and their black clad bodyguards using it as a passing lane to cut in front of everyone else. That ticked me off, so I stepped into the passing lane in order to block the cheaters but still kept my place with respect to the others in line. Some New Russian thugs came along, clearly realized I was an American by my Brooks Brothers' suit, so they made a detour around me by pushing out of the way the Russians who were standing next to me. None of the assaulted Russians said a word. Once while at a nightclub in western Moscow where friends of mine in the band "No Problem" were playing, a New Russian simply pushed me out of the path

he was traversing across the floor. When I responded with a few choice words in English, he said, “Oh, you are an American. I apologize.” Guess if I was Russian, I’d have ended up dead.

Sheremetov 2 consists of one passenger terminal, dimly lit, and decorated in bleak colors with many employees scurrying about apparently accomplishing nothing in a very rude manner. Dealing with Russian bureaucrats, such as custom officials, requires an ability to act convincingly as either a supplicant or comedian. Bureaucrats wheel power in Russia virtually unrestrained as to which rules they will enforce or ignore. They are controlled only by their superiors, assuming their superiors know and care about an underling’s arbitrary actions. There are no effective appeal procedures within the administrative or legal systems for challenging a government official’s decision other than a “gift” of hard currency or some other valuable item. To avoid the cost of bribes requires winning over bureaucrats before they dig in their heels.

When dealing with female officials, it’s best to figuratively prostrate oneself, for as with any girl with the upper hand, they are intransigent driven by a personal desire for the mass settling of old scores. With male bureaucrats, situational humor works, the more absurd the better. The men generally waive me through laughing because they realize the absurdity of the system in which they live. The females do not. Their souls, like many American feminists, emanate a hatred for men. The feminists blame men for everything that ever went wrong in their lives, including the decisions they consciously and willingly made. The reason for such hostility in Russian females comes from the simple fact that as between the sexes, Russia is a buyers market with females the sellers. In the 15 to 64 age group, there are 3.5 million more girls than guys out of a total of 102 million. The large disparity in numbers drive females to spend heavily and devote much time to advertising their wares, that is, their bodies. Their skirts are shorter and slit higher; their blouses more transparent and cut lower; their walks, mannerisms and smells

more feminine; their duplicity more insidious; and their goods sold more cheaply, which requires more customers to make a living.

When I saw that Angel's plane had landed, my heart pounded and I headed for the gate with my flowers. I saw her agent, Leo, exit from the gate first, and I knew her beauty would soon enter my eyes to touch my heart. I waited and waited but no Angel. Hopefully, she was tied up waiting for her luggage or perhaps was coming on another plane. Leo saw me and came over.

"Where's Angel?" I immediately asked.

"She has decided to stay in Mexico for three months more."

My dream shattered.

Leo saw the destitution in my face and quickly said, "She wrote you a letter and asked me to give it to you."

I took it with renewed hope, ripped it open and read. My heart broke. Leo had delivered a goodbye letter.

Leo tried to cheer me by saying, "She likes you Roy, but she needs to make money to buy an apartment."

I turned, tried to throw the flowers into the trash bin but my driver stopped me, so I told him to give them to his wife. We left, but as we were leaving in the car I reread Angel's letter. Because of her rudimentary English, I could not determine whether any hope for my dream remained. I saw Leo walking to his car as we waited to exit the airport parking area. I needed more of an explanation about what Angel was trying to tell me in a language not her own and why she stayed in Mexico. So I jumped out of the car and ran over to Leo.

“Leo, I don’t understand from her English whether she is telling me she likes me but we will not see each other again, or whether we may meet again. Did she talk to you about her letter?”

“I told Alina to write the letter in Russian so she would be sure that she was telling you what she wanted. You could then get an accurate translation, so there would be no miss communication. But she is very head strong and said her English was good enough.”

“I wish she had listen to you,” I anxiously said. “Now I have a letter that I am not sure what it says or what she is doing in Mexico.”

“She is safe and dancing in a club whose owners I know well,” Leo said.

Somehow that did not relieve my anxiety for her well-being. I disliked Mexico and didn’t trust most Russians to tell Americans the truth about anything. It seemed they always tell Westerners what they think Westerners want to hear. My Russian friends said it was because Russians do not want to hurt another person’s feelings. I found this ridiculous, considering the history of brutality in Russia and the present day disregard among Russians for their fellow countrymen.

Every spring, the melting snows reveal the bodies of senior citizens in the outskirts of Moscow. They didn’t commit suicide; they were murdered. These seniors, usually without families or close friends, were tricked into signing over their apartments for promises of cash, which they needed because their pensions didn’t provide them with enough to survive. If they refused to sign, their signatures were forged. They were then killed and dumped in the snowdrifts on the edges of Moscow. The value of even the smallest apartment rose dramatically in Russia’s criminal economy so as to make the murder of pensioners lucrative. If the victims had relatives or friends living with them, the murderers’ scheme would fail because Russian law

requires everyone living in an apartment to consent to its transfer. The organized gangsters that commit these crimes would have to kill everyone in the apartment or forge all the tenants' signatures—unlikely even for Russian mobsters.

The police could easily track the gang of criminals responsible because all levels of government still keep records on just about everything and everyone. Both the Czars and the Soviets collected vast amounts of information on citizens in order to identify potential opponents. Any totalitarian regime needs extensive information on the population or risk losing control of its subjects. Since old bureaucratic habits die-hard, government agencies continued to collect lots of data on people and activities. Every person whether resident or visitor within any city or town in Russia, must be registered at a local address. The police periodically canvas apartments to determine who lives there. Once an officer knocked on my door and took my name and business telephone number. With all that available information, identifying a body, connecting it to an apartment and tracking down the persons who took over and then sold that apartment should be easy, but no one cares because most of these pensioners were alone.

Russia is a land without mercy. Government officials are too busy looting the country and the average Russian too busy trying to survive. No one has the time or instinct for compassion or civility. The brain's neuron center for empathy is distinctly lacking in Russia: ethics is what someone can get away with. For protection and survival, Russians band together into extended families of relatives and friends in which members control each other through a Kafka-type psychology rooted in fear. Anyone outside the family does not count. Anyone within the extended family must be protected because the survival or prosperity of all members depends on everyone. Each extended family engages in whatever activity, illegal or immoral, it deems necessary to further the economic interests of their collective whole. This social structure



of extended families, which often evolve into RICOs, include the poorest households in the provinces right up to Yeltsin's inner circle and now Putin's.

Leo saw the doubts run across my face as to Angel's safety and her feelings for me. He told me to stop by his office the next day, and we would talk. I agreed and went looking for my driver whom I could not find, so I hailed a ride home. All the way, I thought about the scene from the movie Casablanca where Humphrey Bogart waits for Ingrid Bergman at the Paris train station until his piano friend shows up with a good-bye note from her. As the train pulls out with the rain pouring down, the look on Bogart's face expressed the dejection I felt and the way he threw away the note, my disgust for Angel's actions.

Lying in bed that night, my instinct told me to forget this girl, which is what I usually did when a girlfriend or potential girlfriend acted with such inconsideration. But in the discontent of middle age and having lived too long among overly psychoanalyzed New Yorkers, I decided to try the therapy cult's approach and "work" at this budding relationship rather than terminate it.

#### Do You Love Me

Before meeting Leo the next day, Saturday, I read and reread Angel's letter looking for some evidence that she cared for me and was safe. She opened the letter with, "Written to you your Angelina." And closed with, "I kiss to you a lot and embrace too much." But in between she left open whether we would see each other again because she decided to stay in Mexico for apparently an indefinite length of time to make money to buy an apartment. She did, however, include a different address than the one she first gave me for sending letters. The new address was her home in a village outside Krasnodar where she lived with her mother: Yablonevsky in the Adygea Republic. So whose address was the original one she gave me, I wondered? Angel thanked me for the presents I gave her, said I had a good heart and soul and wished that my

dreams come true. That didn't seem possible since I dreamt of her. From the letter, Angel apparently enjoyed Mexico, meeting many people through her dancing and modeling and going to Acapulco for a photo shoot. But the letter only made me feel more alone, dejected and concerned about her. Did this girl care about me or not? Was she safe, or did Leo force her into indenture servitude to Mexicans? Maybe I would catch a flight to Mexico City for a long weekend to find out.

I left my apartment to see Leo, intent on finding out how to reach Angel. I walked down the speakeasy type steps to the door with multiple locks, a metal bar and a peephole and stepped into the world of Leo's Russian modeling business. As always, an attractive young lady showed me into his office where I sat in the chair that put me at least a foot below Leo seated behind his desk.

"So how can I help you with Alina?" Leo began.

"I really care about this girl and don't want anything bad to happen to her," I warned. "I'm worried about her alone in Mexico."

"There is nothing to worry about," Leo said. But I couldn't tell whether his statement genuine or feigned. "She is safe. She dances in a high-class club where nobody can touch her and is escorted to and from work by guards. I know the people who run the club and they are legitimate, strictly business." That only increased my concern. "Strictly business" in Mexico meant to me that anything goes in the pursuit of money, and Angel might be trapped in a situation not of her own choosing.

"How can I contact her? What is her telephone number? She didn't give me a number in the letter." My imagination played scenes of Leo selling Angel to a band of Mexican white slavers who made her write the letter. It all made sense for a detective thriller. The one person

with the resources to save Angel was I, an American lawyer working for a worldwide detective agency. So in order to get the American out of the picture, the Mexicans force his girlfriend to write a goodbye letter, breaking his heart and demoralizing him from looking any deeper into the situation. Well, it wasn't going to work.

I continued, "I want to talk to her Leo, I want to make sure she is okay. You understand my concern."

"Of course, I don't know how to reach her, but she will contact me in a week or so, and I will tell her you want to call her."

Leo must have thought me an idiot. Who was he kidding that he didn't know how to contact someone working for him in a foreign country? My suspicions multiplied. Why was he trying to keep me from talking with Angel? I didn't let on that I thought he was hiding something so as to keep him from suspecting the plan forming in my head to find Angel. I changed the conversation to try to find out more about Angel and her involvement with Leo's modeling agency. Leo said Alina was a good girl from a poor family, and that he had found her some modeling work in Moscow over the years. Her first job paid \$50, and for her the money was magical because she never thought she would ever earn so much in such a short period of time. Angel told me the same story about how excited she was on earning her first \$50. To her it was a miracle. I did not understand the importance until I used some of my business school skills to estimate the economic value of \$50 to a Russian from the provinces. The equivalent for an American was \$1,000.

The residents of Moscow and St. Petersburg refer to the rest of Russia as the "provinces" and consider the people living there, whether in city or village, as country bumpkins: unsophisticated, poorly educated, crude and greedy. Russian men from either of these two cities

say a girl from the provinces makes a good housewife because she will be forever grateful to her husband for bringing her to Moscow or St. Petersburg. The reason for any gratitude lies in the economies of the two cities that far outstrip any other areas of Russia. A young Russian on his or her own can find work of some type in Moscow or St. Petersburg to make enough to survive and help his or her family mired in the poverty of the provinces. But Russians cannot just pack their bags and head to Moscow or St. Petersburg looking for a job. All Russians must carry an internal passport that lists where they live. When they travel outside their hometown, they must register with the police department in the city they visit. If they stay in a hotel, the hotel handles the registration, but if they stay with friends, the police may deny them registration without a bribe that many cannot afford. Throughout Moscow and St. Petersburg, the police randomly check registrations. A person caught without the proper registration will end up on a train back home or pay a bribe either in money, sex or some other valuable commodity.

Since Moscow and St. Petersburg are virtually the only places that provide a decent chance to make a living, registration in these cities means escape from a dead-end life of poverty in the provinces. Both guys and girls from the provinces look for spouses in Moscow—their ticket to a better life. Many beautiful girls from the provinces flock to Moscow and St. Petersburg to sell their assets in the lap-dancing clubs, casinos and brothels in order to earn enough money to support their families at home and live the glamorous life. When a cop catches one without a proper registration, she'll pay the bribe with sex or some of the money she earned selling sex.

After I left Leo's agency, I decided to put my plan for finding Angel into action. I did not trust Leo and had heard too many stories from the American media of innocent young Russian girls lured overseas with the promise of good money from legitimate jobs only to have

their passports taken away and forced into prostitution. This was not going to happen to my other half. And besides, how difficult could it be to find a six-foot-one Russian blond go-go dancer in a club in Mexico City. All I needed was a private detective.

In the evening, an American friend working at Credit Suisse called to invite me to a party at one of Moscow's nightclubs.

"I'm not much in the mood for going out Vadim." I said after telling him my tale of woe.

"You are going to have to get over her Roy and this is the way to do it."

"I don't want to get over her. I want to find her and talk with her."

"You're not going to find her tonight so come with us."

Not wanting to spend the night in my apartment, I met him and his Russian lady friends at Vermel's. The girls were all very pretty and nice and listened to my tale of woe about Angel. My friend, who had immigrated to America from Azerbaijan when a child, asked me, "Do you still think that Russian women are more desirable than American?"

I answered, "Definitely, they are more feminine, tougher and understanding than all these American girls who try to act like men by forgetting what sex they were born as."

"True, Russian girls are more feminine, but perhaps that makes them more deadly," he laughed. "Here are three beautiful Russian girls and many more all around you to help you forget Angel."

Vadim's friends all smiled deliciously, but I couldn't forget about Angel. I worried that her obsessive drive to make money to buy an apartment may have led her into doing something stupid or dangerous. I went home and wrote Angel a letter; assuming she would receive it some day, in which I quoted from a Rock 'n' Roll song:

“Wherever you go, what ever you do, I will be right here (or in New York) waiting for you. Whatever it takes or how my heart brakes. I’ll be right here waiting for you.”

My personal concerns soon seemed small compared to events in Moscow. Terrorists began randomly blowing up apartment buildings in September 1999. Hundreds of innocent human beings died in these explosions that turned high-rise apartment buildings into piles of rubble. The authorities were helpless at catching the culprits. Psychics tried to predict which apartment houses were next. Residents set up night patrols to spot any suspicious persons or cars near their buildings. Many husbands and wives sent their children and grandparents to their dachas in the countryside to get them out of harm’s way. When I went to bed at night I wondered whether I would wake up under tons of bricks.

Yeltsin’s Government and the media, still subservient to the Federal Government, blamed the Chechens. Some of my Russian friends who were highly educated cursed the Chechens and wished death to all of them including the children. Most Russians see Chechens as primitive life forms worthy of extinction. I knew the Chechens were brutal but did not think them so stupid as to incur the wraith of a militarily stronger country whose rank and file population despised them.

My knowledge of Chechen criminal activities came from the first case I worked on For Kroll. The Moscow City Government wanted an American firm to manage a hotel-conference center. We discovered that Chechen organized crime ran the hotel, conference center and shops and provided the entire complex with services from laundry to protection to prostitution. The murder of two influential executives at the complex had also occurred, which was par for the course of lucrative Russian businesses. The American company at our suggestion declined to take the job. From our investigation, I learned that Chechen mobsters ran valuable businesses throughout Moscow and most of their profits flowed to Chechnya. Chechen and the Slavic

Russian mobsters had divided up Moscow by regions and industry while Mayor Luzhkov made sure that the two operated more or less peacefully and paid tribute to his city government.

Luzhkov and his inner circle not only exacted a share of the wealth from Moscow's criminal activities but ran their own illegal enterprises. At times it was difficult to distinguish between the activities of the city government and organized crime groups.

Russia's national police force, the Ministry of the Internal Affairs, or M.V.D., and the F.S.B., were both controlled by Luzhkov's opponents Yeltsin and Prime Minister Putin who used the bombings to crackdown on Chechen gangs in Moscow by deporting and jailing members, which cut deeply into Chechen criminal profits along with the tribute paid to Luzhkov. At the same time, the bombings undermined Luzhkov's image as an effective, strong leader because he could not protect city residents from the bombers. The Yeltsin dominated media raised questions about Luzhkov's competence and whether he was fit for the vice presidency for which he was running with his ally Primakov going for the presidency.

The damage that the aftermath of the bombings did to Mayor Luzhkov's political standing and Chechen criminal activities made it unlikely that the Chechens were responsible for this latest round of butchery. The people behind the bombings knew how to manipulate Russian fear and hatred of the Chechens. Some Russian professionals in the intelligence field blamed Prime Minister Putin, then Yeltsin's candidate for President, and his supporters as the culprits. Putin was running a near dead last in the polls to replace President Yeltsin, but after the bombings and resulting wave of hysteria sweeping Russia, the population clamored for a strong leader to put an end to Chechen terror.

At the time, Russia was technically in a state of war with Chechnya over its invasion of Dagestan in August, but the public was generally opposed to supporting a second Chechen war

just three years after the end of a previously costly and largely failed conflict with Chechnya. That all changed with the bombings. The Russian populace now wanted to destroy Chechnya, and Putin jumped into the lead for the Presidency, surpassing the alliance of Primakov and Luzhkov.

Chechnya has been a pawn in Russian power politics since the late 1700s when Catherine the Great's imperialistic ambitions expanded Russia southward. Catherine gained military control over Chechnya by treaty with Georgia but suffered defeat when she tried to exercise it. The Chechens and Russians have fought each other off and on ever since. The two populations differ in ethnic background, language and religion. Most Chechens are Sunni Muslims while Russians are usually Christian Orthodox, or at least profess to be such. Under the Soviets, many Russians at the Government's urging emigrated to Chechnya where they formed the ruling elite with the best jobs, the most perquisites and all the power that they arbitrarily exercised to further their own self-interests.

Chechnya made the perfect scapegoat for Putin's ruthless drive to power even when it looked like the Chechens didn't do the bombings. On the evening of September 22<sup>nd</sup>, with all of Moscow on alert, the bombers targeted an apartment building in the city of Ryazan, southeast of the capital. A resident of the building noticed strangers moving heavy sacks into the basement from a car. He called the police, but the strangers escaped before the cops arrived. A test by the police showed the sacks contained explosives. As the police blocked all roads from the city searching for the suspects, a telephone company employee overheard a long-distance conversation between the F.S.B. office in Moscow and individuals in Ryazan. The person in the F.S.B. office warned those in Ryazan to take care and avoid the police patrols that were looking for the bombers. Apparently, the F.S.B. was warning the bombers. When the story broke, the



F.S.B. lamely claimed it had placed the sacks in the basement, but they contained only sugar and it was merely conducting a training exercise. The resulting investigation by Russia's attorney general went nowhere because of stonewalling by the F.S.B., and the lawyer appointed to a public commission to conduct an inquiry was arrested before making his findings public. Witnesses did identify an F.S.B. agent as renting the basement in one of the bombed buildings in Moscow, but the agent then died in a car crash in Cyprus. In the end, the Russian courts adopted the F.S.B.'s conclusion that a couple of Chechen warlords were responsible. As an American executive told me, "What a frigging amazing place! The Government butchers innocent civilians so the powerful can remain in power, and on top of it all, the population knows the Government lied but still supports its war in Chechnya."

At least Angel did not face the danger of living in Moscow. But what other dangers confronted her in Mexico City. I finally tracked down a private detective in Mexico City through one of our Moscow subcontractors and was just about to hire him when Leo called to say he received a fax from Angel telling him to give me her address and telephone and fax numbers. So, just as I suspected, he knew all along how to reach her but refused to tell me. Why the secrecy? Oh well, maybe he didn't understand the nature of my relationship with her.

I called Angel right away. It was three in the morning her time, but she picked up.

"Hello Angel, it's Roy."

She giggled like a little girl, "I am glad you called. So Leo gave you my number."

"Yes. Are you okay?"

"Yes, I am fine. Leo told me you were worried about me, how sweet."

"When I read your letter, I couldn't understand why you said we would never see each other again. I thought you were being kept in Mexico against your will."

“Oh Roy, don’t worry,” she said seriously. “I am safe doing the work I want. I wrote the letter to thank you for your help. You told me your contract with the firm in Moscow was over in December, and I don’t know when I will leave here. I don’t think we will see each other again because you will go back to America before I return.”

My heart sank, but I wasn’t dead yet. “Angel, the contract might be extended and if not, I have enough money saved so that I can stay in Moscow for a while past December.”

“You can do that?” she sounded surprised.

“Yes, for a while. I don’t want to lose you. Besides, you did ask me to wait, so I will wait. Do you have any idea when you might be coming back to Moscow?”

“I am not sure; it may be three or four months. We will see what happens.” Not exactly what I wanted to hear.

“What type of work are you doing?” I asked.

Somewhat vaguely she answered, “I do modeling and dance in a club here. I just got home from work when you called. The club is very nice and the food is excellent. I have to watch my diet or I will get fat like I did in Cyprus.”

“I met you when you came back from Cyprus and you didn’t look fat to me.”

“Phew, I was almost as fat as when I first wanted to be a model at sixteen.”

“Well, I didn’t think so. What is a good time to call you?”

“I start work at 2:30 in the afternoon and leave at 2:30 in the morning, so I am usually home by three.”

“That’s a long work day!”

“I know, but I need the money to buy an apartment for me and my mother.” Once again her single minded drive for an apartment troubled me, but I admired her tenacity and courage to

go after what she wanted. For it was a worthy goal—a comfortable and safe home. Everybody wanted that, even me.

“Is it safe leaving work so late at night?” I asked, my concern still showing.

“Yes, the club bodyguards escort us girls to our apartment. You have nothing to worry about Roy. We are well taken care of. The apartment is lovely with a color television. I share it with two other girls who dance at the club.”

“Is this a good time to call you from now on?” I again asked to make sure and a leave my fear of annoying her with late night calls.

“Yes, and fax me your address and telephone numbers in Moscow, so I can write you or call you.”

“Will do.”

“I kiss you and hold you,” she seductively whispered into the telephone.

“I love you and miss you,” I said as she giggled her goodbye.

The following Saturday, somewhat to my surprise, my waking mind came face-to-face with a decision I needed to make between two alternatives: whether to forget about Angel or continue to pursue her? Apparently, my unconscious had processed the past two months of my involvement with this beautiful and talented Russian girl to put me in a position where emotionally I could go either way. Each of the two times Angel left, I felt miserable right afterward, but within a week or so the symptoms evaporated. I couldn't figure out why if I loved her. Ten years earlier, I would have forgotten about her because her actions and my intuition signaled too many warnings. Besides, all my life I knew I should avoid marriage. I used to refer to it as the one stupid mistake I never made, but behind the flippancy laid a serious warning. Yet

now in middle age, I was thinking in a very conformist and for me peculiar fashion that I was missing part of life by never marrying.

Changes in a person's philosophy generally do not happen at once but germinate in the unconscious mind until an external event brings to light a different belief. In the couple of years before meeting Angel, my reading of Joseph Campbell's writings and Wolfram von Eschenbach's *Perceval* probably worked on my unconscious waiting for an event to convince me I was missing a key aspect of living—uniting with my “soul mate” or “other half”. Campbell's books on mythology often referred to the popularization of romantic or “courtly” love in 12<sup>th</sup> century Europe as epitomized in the book *Perceval*. The troubadours in the 12<sup>th</sup> century started singing of a higher reality accessed through romantic love that united men and women in a bliss filled metaphysical union that partially satisfied man's eternal yearning for feeling connected with what lies behind our perceptions of reality. Until the troubadours' popularization of romantic love, the primary relationship between a man and a woman consisted of marriage as a political and economic partnership. The advent of romantic love augured our modern day Western concept of people marrying primarily for love and not economic advantage.

Now that I met Angel, I thought, maybe the troubadours had discovered something, and all those moon, June, swoon, love tunes expressed more than the pleasures of sex or the security of companionship. When reading Campbell's *Creative Mythology*, I even created a visualization that represented the ideal life for me, assuming romantic love was not just another female illusion for manipulating men. Standing facing me was a tall, beautiful blond woman representing my other half and me her other half. Into our metaphysical union flowed art from her talents and vocation and physics from mine. Together we helped each other achieve not just material security but the joy of pursuing the work for which we were born and the peace of

feeling united with each other as part of the universe. Angel seemed to fit the bill. Besides dancing and modeling, she drew, acted and sang. Here was my chance to achieve my dream life, so I decided to pursue her until I won her. I vowed to call and write her once a week.

The bombings in Moscow and other cities subsided a couple of weeks later, but the out cry for revenge grew as Putin and the oligarchs backing him used their control of the media to fuel Russian war fever with stories of atrocities committed by Chechens against Russians living in Chechnya. Unlike in America, the Russia's Federal Government still controlled key industries, including the media, through direct ownership, state oversight committees and private owners who owed their newly gained business empires to connections with Yeltsin's inner circle. Putin and his allied oligarchs easily manipulated the news in order to mobilize most of the population behind Russia's troop invasion of Chechnya in October.

In order to assure victory in the presidential election for 2000, Putin needed news reports of Russian victories with relatively few Russian troop casualties but many Chechen deaths, whether civilian or military did not matter given the hatred of the Chechens. Stories of Russian military successes in which reporters depicted the Chechens as barbarians filled most of the airways and newspapers. Media outlets controlled by oligarchs beholdng to Yeltsin and allied with Putin fired any newsman who dared to report both sides of the war. The few independent newspapers and television stations reporting on the brutality of both Russian and Chechen fighters ran into harsh criticism from Putin's media cronies, fell victim to hostile business takeovers by Putin's oligarchs, and faced sanctions from the Media Ministry for interviewing Chechen leaders. Independent news outlets were even raided by government officials searching for evidence of tax evasion or other law breaking—not hard to find about any Russian business, or individual for that matter.

Most Russians, but not all, violate laws, agreements or other social or moral obligations when it is to their advantage. Russia is largely a country of liars and cheaters because survival under the Communists and Czars required chicanery and mendacity to survive or get ahead. The insatiable demands for bribes by the ubiquitous bureaucracy over 500 hundred years did not instill a sense of honesty but rather the belief that dishonesty was the best policy. When Lenin took power, he only changed the heads of the government agencies by replacing nobleman with Communist Party members. The rank and file bureaucrats remained to continue the tradition of bribery and the arbitrary exercise of power that bled away the value created by industry and stifled individual initiative. After Czarist rule and communism, the law of dishonesty is probably genetically encoded into most Russians. No one could have been a supporter of the Czar or Communist who did not suffer a horrible conversion that overturned all decent values. In 1999, a conservative estimate put government graft at over \$20 billion in an economy with a GDP of only \$184 billion.

A person might think that Russia needs more legislation to put an end to such massive corruption, but it wouldn't matter. Thanks to the Communists, the country already has an over abundance of laws that affect more areas of human activity than even most European nations. In Russia, statutes no longer exist to govern conduct, redress grievances or provide a degree of certainty on which people can rely in the conduct of their affairs. Rather the laws provide government officials with the power to exact favors and money from individuals and businesses by threatening them with enforcement of the regulations—essentially institutionalized extortion. I always advised Kroll's clients to obey the multitude of rules applying to their operations or risk government officials showing up to demand bribes or even a stake in their businesses.

## Lonely Weekends

Through the fall of 1999, Angel worked in Mexico and the war in Chechnya raged with Putin looking the odds on favorite to win the presidency the following year. I called Angel weekly and wrote frequently, but she never wrote back. I asked her why, and she said that her days were filled with work and on the weekends she visited many beautiful areas in Mexico but always alone.

“She doesn’t write you because she does not care,” my female tutor of Russian brutally said.

I refused to accept this. Girls were always attracted to me, ever since I was eight. And once I kissed a girl, she was mine—not always immediately but eventually. I was sure this six-foot-one Russian beauty would be no different. Besides, few Russian man would do for her what I would. We discussed my taking her to America for a visit around Christmas time, which thrilled her. She might not love me now but she would. I kept calling, writing and on her birthday, November 10<sup>th</sup>, I sent her a bouquet of roses, which I imagined no one else did. I sincerely loved and cared about this girl. I dearly missed her and empathized with how lonely she must feel in a country so far from her home where she did not speak the language.

Despite the promptings of my heart, my intuition and logic still wondered about Angel’s reticence. But I always dismissed any misgivings with the rational that Angel, as most Russians, was secretive in order to protect herself from a corrupt government and various criminals. The Russian investigators in the office knew about Angel’s trip to Mexico and my concerns, since I possessed that common American failing of notoriously expressing my thoughts and feelings. Once again, they suggested investigating Angel and, this time, her agent Leo just to make sure I didn’t end up in a “difficult situation” as they euphemistically put it. Quite logical, but I chose

what I thought was the honorable route and declined. If I could not trust the girl I loved, I deserved whatever consequences came. Then again, perhaps part of me did not want to know the truth. Russians have a saying, “It is better not to know too much because then you can believe what you want.” Americans, however, have a saying too, “The truth shall make you free.” But at the time, I was in Russia, immersed in a culture closer to the medieval ages than the 20<sup>th</sup> century with all the eddies and whirl pools of an intangible sea driving my thoughts and actions in bizarre directions.

A few months in another culture can dramatically affect a person’s conduct without him realizing it. One of Kroll’s Fortune 500 clients sent its American manager back home after exhibiting “peculiar” behavior reminiscent of a feudal aristocrat and attributable to living in Russia. When I first met Kroll’s overall boss of Europe and the Middle East, a former CIA officer, he warned me against “going native,” which he defined as losing touch with who you are—an average middle-class American. Working in Russia, created the unseen danger of assimilation into the behavioral patterns of influential Russians because the entire society saw foreigners and New Russians as the economic and power elite of the country. For example, the manager of another Western client liked to tell the story of how he threw a temper tantrum at a policeman for stopping his chauffeur driven car while rushing to an appointment. The police officer demurely apologized and let the manager proceed as though he were a member of the nobility. In America, he would have ended up with a ticket or in jail. Many foreigners not only arrogantly puff themselves up in importance but also begin to follow the Russian maxim, “Tell the truth and you are doomed, tell a convincing lie that you believe yourself and you prosper.” Tiedemann, my immediate supervisor in London, who visited Russia frequently, had this down pat.



The infectiousness of the Russian prevalence for dishonesty once again entered the political spotlight in the fall of 1999 when a money laundering scandal hit the Bank of New York that involved Yeltsin, the Family and the Russian mafia. It didn't touch Putin because at the time he was new to the Prime Minister post and had no fortune to wash overseas.

Some Russian intelligence officials considered Yeltsin and his inner circle as the most influential of gangs within the Russian mafia. As president, Yeltsin ruled Russia almost as an Emperor. When he could not buy off or politically bludgeon the legislature into doing his bidding, he issued decrees that had the force of law. His inner circle of allies controlled the executive branch and the armed forces and ruled over key industries that allowed them to loot billions from the country. Much of the expropriated wealth ended up in safe markets for investment, such as the United States. Even the Family could not adequately reduce the risk of investing in Russia because of the unstable economy, embezzlement by other mafia gangs and the always precarious nature of power in Russia. Today's insider could just as easily become tomorrow's orphan, so Yeltsin's favorites and other gangsters transported much of their stolen wealth overseas. In the late 1990s over one billion dollars a month left Russia. Much of it gained by illegal means on which no taxes were paid.

The Bank of New York alone moved seven billion dollars of Russian mafia money out of the country during the late 1990s. The money funneled through three accounts into unlicensed banking operations set up in Queens, New York and Jersey City, New Jersey. Many transactions came from a Moscow bank run by Yeltsin's financial advisor. The Bank of New York hired Kroll to conduct an investigation into the money laundering accusations in order to shift the blame to the Family and Russian mafia for tricking an allegedly honest Bank of New York. Another reason was to show U.S. investigators that the Bank was doing all it could to prevent

such illegal activities in the future. Simply put, the bank got caught making lots of money washing Russian mafia cash, so it hired Kroll to help with the damage control.

The Kroll office in New York and Tiedemann in London ran the investigation—often sending their own agents to Moscow without confiding in the Moscow office what they were doing and severely restraining the Moscow office’s activity in the case. Tiedemann assigned the Moscow office the task of finding the Russians involved in providing the money for washing, but we were forbidden to track down any leads pointing to the Bank of New York’s culpability and what leads we came across were deep-sixed. Meanwhile, she and the New York agents were busy covering-up those trails. Tiedemann often limited or circumvented the Moscow office when she wanted to conduct an unethical investigation or manipulate the results to favor a high-paying client.

The Moscow office’s investigation into the Russian side of the money laundering reached right up to the Family, but we could not get inside because our sources of information feared for their lives. They wouldn’t talk no matter how much they were paid because they knew the power of the Family could reach anyone anywhere in the world. In a different case, we did breach the Mayor of Moscow’s inner circle to the extent of receiving reports on arguments between the Mayor and one of his close business allies, but obtaining information directly from inside Yeltsin’s Family was just not possible. Although nearly everyone and everything was for sale in Russia and people were willing to sell the lives of others for the right price, they were not about to sell their own lives.

The money laundering information we gathered showed politically well-connected persons funneling large amounts of money from illegal and legal activities to America without paying Russian taxes—no surprise there. Kroll’s efforts helped the Bank of New York avoid

criminal prosecution by paying a \$38 million fine and promising to abide by U.S. money laundering laws in the future. Not bad, a small fine given its assets and swearing not to do it again. The only persons criminally prosecuted, or more accurately scapegoated, by U.S. prosecutors, were a Senior Vice President for the Bank and her husband whom the Russian mob paid \$1.8 million to help transfer money and prepare documents for Russians to enter the U.S. illegally so that they could enjoy their laundered riches in America. The two also got off easy with five years probation.

During the unfolding of the scandal in the U.S. press, the Russian government and its controlled media mocked the American government for chasing windmills and insulting the character of Russians in general. The use of ridicule and attempts to make others feel ashamed are typical feints used throughout Russia's mendacious culture. The country's legal system never existed for discovering the truth and redressing grievances, only to preserve the power of first the Czars, then the Communists and now the New Russians. Consequently, Russians resort to psychology when accused of wrongdoing by someone whom they cannot bribe, maim, murder or otherwise influence. First they laugh good-naturedly and teasingly imply that such fanciful accusations will make the accuser look foolish to others. If that does not work, they assume the role of the innocent, misunderstood victim persecuted by unjust forces and unfairly treated. Russian girls are masters with both techniques; especially, when they add tears to the mix—many of them can cry a will. No one with half-a-brain believes the Russian government and its media lap dogs, but that doesn't matter. The influential in Russia never pay for their crimes. The Family and those close to it who laundered money continued as members of the power elite under Putin or enjoyed their stolen wealth overseas.

## Stay

Two and a half months after Angel left, I found myself working in the office at night as usual and writing:

My Precious Angel,

It is Saturday night, dark and cold outside with snow on the ground and me here in a lonely office working because there is no one to go DANCING with. Where are you Angel? Why am I always alone? I thought you said I had a guardian angel to protect me. Doesn't that mean protection from loneliness? Are you that protection? Will our differences doom the short future you saw in my hand? —enough of my moaning and groaning.

Don't you become weary of this space-time continuum? Life has not been easy for you as it has been for others who have so much they cannot decide what to choose from and then complain with tears of hypocrisy that they have to make a choice.

Oh well, I miss you, I look at your photos, I sleep with the toy dog you gave me, but the perfume scent is gone, and I still feel lonely. I wonder whether we have a future and, if so, how long? I guess I should just let the universe and its metaphysical underpinnings unfold—after all you have a longer period of uncertainty facing you than I have.

I guess you are the only one I have now.

Love Roy

On November 15, Angel sent me a fax that she was flying back to Moscow on the 30<sup>th</sup>.

“It your love—Angelina. Little time and we can see each other. I'm think about you. It will be nice to be together. I hold you a lot, kiss a lot and miss.” Her message made me feel like her teddy bear, although I didn't know whether she had one. I was sure; however, she didn't have a three-foot high teddy bear, so I bought her one as a homecoming present. Angel sent her fax on stationary from the Westin Hotel in Acapulco, which seemed strange since she worked in Mexico City.

November 19 brought another fax with her flight information in which she asked me to call, saying it was very, very important and closing “I kiss you! I hold you! Your Angelina.”

I called her, “What's up Angel?”

“I am so happy you called. Did you get my faxes?”

“Yes. Is everything okay?”

“Yes. But I will be bringing back a lot of cash with me and I wanted to know whether you will meet me at the airport?”

“I’ll be there.”

“Can you also help me get through customs without declaring how much money I am bringing with me?” This was not unusual; most Russians want to avoid anyone, especially customs, from knowing how much money they have for fear of criminals and tax inspectors.

“I will arrange for you to go through the VIP lounge.” I said.

One way of smuggling in or out of Russia involved paying a well connected travel agent \$200 or having an influential person arrange for custom officials to escort the traveler and his luggage through the VIP lounge in order to avoid any inspection of the person’s bags. Naturally, the custom officials require a gratuity.

“That will be good,” she said. “Call me again Friday night after work to make sure everything is okay.”

“Fine, pleasant dreams lover,” I said. She said farewell with her usual I kiss you, hold you and miss you.

I made the arrangements through the firm’s travel agent and called Angel that Friday—but no answer. Strange, unlike most Russians and girls everywhere, Angel was always punctual in keeping to her schedule, just like an American businessman. I tried a few more times but still no answer. Now I began to worry. I did not have the number for the club she worked at, but even if I did, the place was already closed, so there was not much I could do except hope she was all right.

Around midnight Angel’s agent, Leo, called me at home.

“Roy, it is Leo. Angel is in jail,” he blurted out.

Oh, great, “What happened?”

“The police raided the club and arrested all the girls who did not have working visas.”

Hell, I asked myself, what kind of a club did she work in as visions ran through my head of Federalalies busting a nightclub with scantily clad “showgirls” screaming as they are thrown into the paddy wagon?

Leo added, “I thought you might be able to help get her out of jail so that she does not miss her flight on Monday.”

I was surprised at his apparent concern for her. “Give me the name and number of the club,” which he did, which also surprised me because up until then both he and Angel always ducked giving me either. I had simply chalked their reticence up to engrained Soviet secrecy.

“I will see what I can do to get her out Leo.”

“One more thing,” Leo said. “When she comes back she’ll be carrying a lot of money, including my commission. I think Angel and the money would be safer at your apartment than my office. I don’t have a safe here.”

“Okay, that makes sense. Thanks for calling me.”

When I hung up the telephone, I wondered why Leo called me. He clearly had contacts in Mexico City were he did some of his modeling business. And although we met a couple of times while Angel was in Mexico, we were not buddies. Leo, like most Russians, only dealt with Westerners on a business level, usually trying to obtain financing for some scheme or another in which the Russians always promised the sun, the moon and the stars in return for handing over dollars to them.

Enough speculating, first things first—Angel was in trouble and I had to help her somehow. I could just imagine what a Mexican jail was like. I traveled to Ecuador some years

earlier where one of the presidential candidates at the time showed me the prison in his nation's capital—no air conditioning, no color TV, no three-square meals a day and no clean sheets—just filth, stench and brutality.

I called our firm's office in Mexico City and told the manager the story. He said he would track down which jail she was in and use his pull to free her.

"Great," I said. Then I asked, "What kind of a place is The Men's Club?"

"It is a high class titty bar, no prostitution, just beautiful girls giving lap dances. I've been there a few times. Tell your girlfriend to introduce me to some of her fellow dancers there. I'm not rich enough to attract any of them on my own."

"Will do. Thanks a lot," and I hung up.

So Angel wasn't a model or go-go girl as she led me to believe but a lap dancer for rich men—that hurt. Yet over the course of the weekend, I rationalized that how else could a pretty young Russian girl make a living coming from a dead end society like Russia. At least she didn't resort to prostitution as all those girls at the clubs Rasputin, Sirius and many other places in Moscow. Then again, undulating intimate parts of the body in close proximity to strangers' faces while wearing only thong panties in return for money might amount to a form of prostitution. But I understood that desperate circumstances could drive decent people to desperate acts in order to survive. And the situation in the provinces where Angel lived was desperate. Anyway, I believed she was smart enough not to do anything stupid and had a good heart. All she needed was an opportunity to pursue a legitimate career in modeling, singing or acting, and she would put away the lap dancing. However, that meant bringing her to America and her changing from the typical Russian view of the future as the immediate to the American long-term view necessary to build a career. But I was sure she could do it with my help.

On Monday, the manager of Kroll's Mexico City office called to tell me that the authorities released Angel before he had a chance to intervene.

"Apparently someone else with influence got her out of the immigration prison."

"So she was arrested for a visa violation?" I asked.

"Right, and the immigration police put her on a plane for Germany."

He gave me the plane information, which was the same flight she planned to take originally, but I didn't know whether she intended to still catch the connecting flight to Moscow that she had faxed me about. I called the Frankfurt airport to page her. A little later, Angel called the office.

"Roy, it is your Angelina," she temptingly said.

"Are you all right? What happened?"

"It long story and I tell you in Moscow. Can you get me through customs?"

I told her it was all arranged and what she needed to do when she got off the airplane.

She said, "I will be bringing a lot of cash so it important that I do not have to declare it."

"I understand. It is all taken care of."

"I have to go catch my plane. I kiss you, I hold you, I miss you," she giggled as she hung up.

Something troubled me about the whole situation, so I sat down with the Russian investigators in the office for their take on what happened and Leo's involvement. They suggested that I keep Angel's money locked in the office because Leo might hire some policemen to knock on my door and search my apartment. If they found Angel's money for which she had no custom declarations, the cops would take it and she'd never see it again. The police might not even wait until Angel and I returned to my apartment but grab us at the airport



on Leo's signal. Leo told me he planned to be at the airport to meet Angel and the other girl who went to Mexico with him and Angel back in August. The investigators also warned that Angel might conspire with Leo believing that I would make good her loss. That way she would double her money and Leo his commission. I didn't think Angel would ever do anything like that, but Leo would. My instinct agreed with the investigators' advice not to show at the airport, and, for once, I followed my instinct. I telephoned Leo that I couldn't make it to the airport and told him about the arrangements for Angel to go through the VIP lounge in order to avoid Customs. Angel would stay in one of his apartments for the night and I'd picked her up the next day.

Always the vain girl, Angel didn't wear her glasses when she exited the plane, so she missed the sign with her name held by the guy who would have escorted her to the VIP lounge. When she hit Customs, she simply lied about the over eight thousand dollars in cash and travelers checks she was carrying. Customs cleared her, and Leo took her and the other girl back to his office. The next morning, I went by to meet my smiling, tan Angel. We kissed, and she put her arm over my shoulder in that same protective fashion.

"Roy, I can only stay in Moscow a couple of days. I have to take my money back to my mother in Krasnodar so it will be safe. You understand, don't you?"

I understood her desire to get home with her money after three months overseas but was not happy about it.

"So when do I see you again?"

"I will be back in the middle of December to pick up the rest of my money that Alfredo is bringing me from Mexico."

"Who is Alfredo? Does he work at the club?"

“Yes he does and is a good friend who will bring the rest of my money to Moscow. The police took me directly from the jail to the airplane. I could only pick up my clothes and the money I had hidden in them. Alfredo has the rest of my money, about \$18,000.”

“That’s a lot of money,” I said. In total, she made \$26,000 for three months work tax-free, which was better than my earnings in the same period. “Is Alfredo also coming to Moscow on the club’s business?”

“No, he’s just doing me a favor.”

“He’s going to fly all the way from Mexico City to Moscow, risk smuggling in thousands of dollars, just to do you a favor?” This didn’t sound logical to me for some guy who worked in a titty bar.

“You’re jealous, how sweet,” she beamed her childish smile. “Don’t worry Roy, Alfredo is just a good friend with a kind heart.” Something didn’t fit, but I soon forgot about it with Angel beside me.

We took her bags to my apartment and her money to the office for safe keeping until she left, which I told Leo we were doing to prevent any uninvited cops on the take from showing up at my apartment. I gave Angel lots of flowers and the three-foot high teddy bear. Before going to the Bolshoi ballet, we visited Leo for her to pay him his commission, 20% of her gross in Mexico. After the ballet, Angel made a series of calls from my apartment to Mexico City to check on her money and confirm when it would be brought to Moscow. As I sat down next to her while she presumably talked to Alfredo, she crumbled up a slip of paper with telephone numbers on it so that I could not see them. Why the secrecy, I once again wondered, but as always, I let it go.

We spent our first night together during with Angel drinking too much wine and asking me a peculiar question, “Now that we are boy and girlfriend, how many girls have you had sex with in the past three months?”

I replied, “How many guys have you had sex with in the past three months?” She was clearly surprised by my response and eventually said none. My intuition told me she lied, but I was in no position to protest because I had played around with my secretary for a couple of months.

Angel and I worked out the details of my taking her to America for ten days in January. She couldn't go over Christmas because she wanted to spend the holidays with her mother. The year before she had worked in Cyprus during Christmas, so it was important for her to spend the holidays with her mother this year. I told her what documents to bring back to Moscow so that we could go to the U.S. Embassy and get her a tourist visa. On the day she left, I hired an armed bodyguard to escort us to the airport for Angel's two-hour flight to Krasnodar. I didn't put it past Leo to try to pull a fast one, since he knew which flight she would take and how much money she carried. Eight thousand U.S. dollars equaled \$160,000 of buying power in Russia. I also worried about Angel arriving in Krasnodar with so much cash, but I had no means to protect her there. She assured me she would be safe in her hometown because her mother would meet her at the airport. That did not assuage my fear much. What could her mother do against gangsters, call the police?

No one relies on the police for protection in Russia. Instead, those with money hire private security agencies that ironically employ policemen to do what their government jobs require of them. It is hard to blame the cops when their government salaries are so small and usually paid months late. The cops see their bosses all the way up to Yeltsin taking payoffs in

one form or another or using government positions to make money on the side. Why should the cops be the only suckers to act honestly?

Angel knew Russia better than I, so I put my apprehension aside, and all the way to the airport, she held me like a child, which seemed natural.

Angel promised, “I will call you when I know the exact day of my arrival back to Moscow.”

“And call me as soon as you arrive to let me know you made it back safely.” I asked as we kissed goodbye.

My concern went beyond the danger over her carrying so much cash to flying on a local airline. Under the Soviets, air travel inside the empire was a dangerous proposition. Each major city owned an airline that the local bureaucrats managed—not exactly a prescription for safety. In order to fly to a particular city required passage on either that city or the departing city’s airline—there were no others. Politicians do not appreciate negative publicity, so airplane crashes were often not reported. People waiting for their friends and loved ones at airports were told nothing. After a few days, they realized the truth.

With the collapse of communism, the officials running the local airlines could no longer keep accidents secret, but their incompetence in operating heavier than air flight remained unchanged. And to make the situation worse, a new danger arose. Previously, the Communist Party prevented government officials from egregiously looting state assets, but now rampant embezzlement thrived in the bureaucracies. Large portions of budgeted funds for maintenance disappeared and planes took off with a minimum of fuel because officials had sold the rest. Throughout Russia, bureaucrats cut airline safety to a minimum and below in order to enrich themselves.

When I didn't hear from Angel the following day I began to worry. I sent her a page, "Did you arrive safely? Love Roy." But still no response. During the wait to hear from her, my maid told me that someone had recently gone through everything in my apartment, and that two sets of my gloves were missing. Did Angel steal them? Nah, it made no sense.

Two days after her scheduled arrival, I sent another page, still no response. I didn't hear from her until three days after she arrived. I couldn't understand why she delayed in calling. She knew how much I worried about her traveling with so much money and flying.

"Angel, where have you been? Did you receive my pages?"

"Yes, I got them but was not able to call you until now. Everything went fine. My mother met me at the airport."

"Why didn't you call sooner?"

"I was not near a telephone where I could call," she said. "You know I don't have a phone in my house." I knew that but also knew that all Russian Post Offices have telephones for calling long distance. True, most Russians could not afford to make long distance calls, but Angel had just gone home with \$8,000 to an economy where the average yearly income for households amounted to \$1200.

I quickly forgot my concerns when she said, "I miss you Roy and want to be with you when I am back in Moscow."

"When will that be?"

"I am not sure yet, but around the 15<sup>th</sup>. I will call you just before my arrival. Roy I need you to do me a favor."

"Okay, what?"

“I need to know banks in Moscow with ATM machines that give cash in dollars. My friend from Mexico brings a BankMex Card with some my money on it, and I need an ATM machine to get the cash from it.”

“I will find out. Is there a place I can call you with the information?”

“No,” she answered, “page me and I will call you back. When do we go to Embassy to get my tourist visa?”

“We can go any day of the week, but we have to get there around six in the morning to stand in line. The Embassy opens up at eight.”

“Okay, I bring all documents with me. Can your driver pick me up at train station?”

“Not a problem, we will both meet you. Just let me know which station and when.”

“That is good. I kiss you, hug you and miss you.”

“And I love you,” I replied.

Angel called back a few days later for the list of banks with cash machines. Using ATM debit cards to transport money overseas was rather sophisticated, but it required a bank account, which meant she had one in Mexico City or used the account of a friend there, probably Alfredo.

### Young Blood

About a week later on Tuesday, December 14<sup>th</sup>, my secretary says, “Angel is on the line.” I assumed she was calling in response to the pages I sent her in Krasnodar the previous week. Once again, I was surprised she hadn’t called earlier.

“Did you get my pages?” I asked.

“No,” she said in a low, contrite voice.

“I sent one on Friday and Saturday. I was worried when you didn’t answer.”

“Oh, you know Russia,” she uneasily said. “Nothing works here.” Then in a sultry voice, “I’m in Moscow Roy and want to see you very badly.”

“What! When did you arrive?”

“I took train and got in early morning at seven.”

“Why didn’t you call? I would have picked you up.”

“I didn’t want to bother you. Anyway, I had to meet Alfredo to get my money.”

“Did you get it all?”

“Yes. Now me and mother can buy apartment. I am so happy. Can I come to your office?”

“Where are you, I can send my driver to pick you up.”

“No. I need to do some things first. I will meet you in your office.”

“Okay. I have some meetings but will tell the staff to expect you. I should be back by late afternoon.

“I want to be with you Roy. I missed you,” she said again in her vamp voice.

“And I you, Angel.”

“Are you sure, you don’t want my driver to pick you up?”

“Yes, I will be okay”

“See you later then.”

As I hung up, I felt something was not right. First, during our previous call, Angel made sure that I could pick her up at the train station, but then she arrives without any notice. Second, she failed to answer my pages sent to her in Krasnodar, the only place her pager worked—it didn’t work in Moscow. Perhaps she wasn’t there but on her way to Moscow by train or already in Moscow if she flew. Assuming she took a train on Friday from Krasnodar, she would arrive

on Saturday, meaning she had been in Moscow for at least three days before she called me. Finally, she came to town to get her money from a so-called good friend who was willing to fly all the way from Mexico City to Moscow just to do the good deed of delivering her money. This strained my understanding of human nature. I asked the firm's Russian investigators whether we could find out which train or plane Angel took from Krasnodar to Moscow, the date and time of its arrival and the date that any Mexicans with the first name of Alfredo arrived in Moscow within the past week. After a few telephone calls, they said yes, but it would cost me a few hundred dollars. I told them to let me think about it. The cost didn't matter, but I worried about the impact my spying on the girl I loved would have on our future relationship, since no matter the result, the act of my distrust would always remain a secret between us. I always considered a relationship based on dishonesty as doomed.

I believed that a true union with ones other half proceeded through four levels, each requiring honesty by both persons. Beginning at the physical when two people find each other's appearance appealing. Then moving into the mental where they realize the other is as smart as they are. Philosophies and behavior patterns may differ, but each respects and enjoys the others intellectual abilities and insights. At the third, emotional level, compassion and passion combine in a desire to be with the other person. Lies, secrets and dishonesty can creep in at any of these three levels to prevent one party from opening up completely to the other. Open hearts can't hide lies and dishonesty or keep secrets. Without open hearts, two people will never achieve the metaphysical fourth level where the physical, mental and emotional levels combine during the act of sex to produce an experience of each person merging into the other. For a brief time, both exist in a metaphysical union not just with the other person but also with the universe for each is a part of that universe.



Riding to my afternoon meetings, I concluded that Angel probably arrived in town a few days earlier to payoff Alfredo with sexual favors for bringing her money from Mexico. I understood how important the money was for her and her mother, and had it not been for the police raid on the club where she danced, she would have brought it all back with her. I further excused her conduct by rationalizing that our affair had only just started and payment to Alfredo was an obligation incurred before Angel and I became intimate. I decided to let this incident go, but if another one happened, the relationship ends.

As a lawyer, I've noticed that a key problem with the profession is that lawyers could convincingly argue any proposition to the point where the truth or proper course of action depended solely on the outcome they wanted. Perhaps, I had fallen victim to this skill by giving Angel a second chance.

When I arrived back at Kroll, the door to my office was closed. My secretary said Angel had been in there for a while and was probably sleeping. I quietly opened the door to check but found her intently looking at a document on my computer screen. My computer contained the files from present and past cases, Kroll's web of information sources in Russia, informants in Europe and America as well as a direct link into Kroll's database, which stored the most secret information for the entire firm around the world.

"What are you doing?" I asked.

"Oh, nothing, just playing," she said clicking the exit symbol so the document disappeared.

"I thought you didn't know anything about computers."

"I don't, that's why I try to learn. Aren't you glad to see me?" She smiled innocently and I forgot about the computer.

When I saw her jumbo-size suitcase I said, “You should have let me send my driver. How did you manage to carry this here?”

“It was no problem. I am a strong Russian girl,” she said as she struggled to move the suitcase out of the way.

“How did you get here? By metro?”

“Yes.”

“You must have had a difficult time lugging that bag around.” It didn’t make sense to me why she chose to drag this large, heavy bag, which she could barely move around my office, through the metro system when my driver would have made things easy for her. Oh well, we were together again and the office staff thought highly of Angel except my Russian secretary. She pulled me aside to say, “She’s using you Roy!” But I dismissed the warning as jealousy.

Angel had charmed the three investigators, which included two wily middle-aged Russian men and a British girl in her twenties, who believed herself a man. The British girl, Tiedemann’s girlfriend, was impressed with and sexually attracted to Angel. “She’s a big girl,” the Brit said in a tone of desire and submission. The Russian guys were particularly impressed with Angel washing everyone’s luncheon dishes. Companies in Moscow generally provide kitchens for employees to prepare their meals because most Russian workers can’t afford to buy their meals, and, even if they could, Moscow doesn’t have many places to grab a quick meal. The Kroll office included a kitchen and everyone brought his or her own lunch except me. I hired my secretary’s mother to prepare both my lunch and dinner at the office.

The male investigators said Angel was the type of Russian girl that would make an excellent wife. This allayed my suspicions and greatly pleased me, since previously, after seeing her pictures and hearing she worked as a model, they told me to watch out and suggested

investigating her. One of the investigator's had spoken from inside knowledge about Russian models. His niece worked for Russia's top agency Red Star and for years she brought her female model friends to his dacha.

“All they talked about was how they used this man or that man. They bragged about how many men they could keep on the hook at one time. None of these girls expressed any concern for morality. All they wanted was money and the glamorous life and would do anything to get both. No self-respect, no dignity at all. I got so fed up listening to these whores that I kicked them out of my dacha and vowed never to see my niece again, and I haven't. But I can see Angel is not like those lazy whores. She knows about woman's work and is willing to do it.”

I felt proud and happy that the investigators, even the lesbian Brit, now approved of Angel.

I asked her, “How long are you going to stay this time?”

“I have a fight back in two days.”

“Only two days,” I protested.

She drew closer and put her arm over my shoulders, “Roy I have to go back to Krasnodar as soon as possible, so me and my mother can buy an apartment before end of year. A new law begins the first of next year. It will make us tell where we got our money to buy an apartment. It will cause me problems if I have to say I make the money in Mexico.”

“I'm sure it would. The government would make you pay taxes.”

“Yes,” she said.

Later the Russian investigators in the office told me the purpose of the law was not to crack down on tax cheats but to stop the purchase of real estate with money from illegal

activities, such as prostitution. Well, lap dancing wasn't prostitution, so Angel didn't have to worry unless the authorities refused to believe her, which they would in order to extract a bribe.

Real estate in Russia, for practical purposes, did not mean land, just buildings, houses and apartments. When communism collapsed, the business occupying a building or people living in an apartment or house became owners of the structure rather than just tenants, but the land on which a structure stood remained the state's. So these new owners could sell buildings, houses and apartments but not land. No one, including businesses, could buy land, but anyone could lease it from the local government for, in some cases, 99 years. The inability to buy and sell land made foreign investment in real estate risky because any lease of land required the continuing good graces of government officials. Once a project turned into a moneymaker, however, officials reasoned they should reap the benefits rather than the foreign investor whose funds made it all possible. Local governments could and did renege on lease contracts to force foreign investors to sell at a loss to the brash young Russians who acted as the fronts for and were usually related to the corrupt officials—the real power in Russia.

Similar scams frequently occurred to foreign investors under Russia's bizarre corporation law. Prior to 1998, foreign capital flowed into Russia seeking high returns as compared to the risk. With the help of the International Monetary Fund, the national government and some regional and local governments began borrowing in the international market of public debt. This signaled to private investors that the risk of investing in Russia had diminished significantly. The rush was on for high returns, which caused a flood of foreign money into Russia.

When foreigners invest in another country, they exchange their own currency for that of the country in which the investment is made, in Russia's case the ruble. An American must convert dollars to rubles before making a legal investment in Russia. At some point the investor

will sell the stock he bought, receive dividends or collect loan payments all in the form of rubles. Rubles don't do a foreign investor any good in his own country, so he needs to exchange the rubles into his own currency. A person can't buy chewing gum in America with rubles. A serious problem can arise when the foreigner finally goes to switch the rubles from his investment into his currency—the rubles may buy fewer dollars than the investor originally put into Russia. To avoid this problem, the investor pays a bank to agree to give him so many dollars for a certain number of rubles over a period of time that assures the investor will not lose on converting rubles. Banks run by competent managers can make a good return providing this service. Russia, however, had very few competent bank managers.

In 1998, the Russian government defaulted on its loans to the West. Private investors took this as a signal to cash out. They went to various Russian banks with the rubles from their investments requesting the banks pay them the amount previously agreed in dollars or other foreign currency in exchange for the investors' rubles. Unfortunately for the foreign investors, agreements meant nothing in Russia. Most of the Russian banks refused to pay because when the government defaulted, the value of the Russian ruble plummeted. If the bankers lived up to their agreements, they would lose most or all of their wealth as a result of their own greed and incompetence. They thought it better for foreign investors to lose, so they began secretly transferring the money owed foreign investors to overseas havens or corporate entities different from the banks.

One case at Kroll involved a number of Western banks that bought stock in and made loans to a large Moscow bank. With the fall of the ruble, the Moscow bank saw an opportunity to avoid paying its foreign currency contracts and cheat our Western clients out of their investment while saddling them with the bank's currency losses. The Moscow bank did this by

simply transferring most of its valuable assets to another bank that the Russian executives controlled. They left the original bank with all its liabilities but no assets to pay them. The Western investors had no recourse because their claim was only against the original bank that now had a negative value. They could not go after the assets transferred to the second bank because it was a different legal entity although run by the same Russians. Sounds nuts, but Russian corporation law permitted this type of embezzlement. In civilized countries, such conduct usually puts the bankers in jail.

The following day, Angel and I got up early to wait in the dark arctic cold outside the U.S. Embassy to obtain her a tourist visa. There are always long lines of Russians waiting to try their luck at a visa to America. Some want to visit their relatives, but most want to leave Russia for good. One typical method for leaving the motherland behind involves a tourist or student visa. Once in America and after the visa expires, the Russian simply stays put working in the underground economy. Russians know that most of the workers in the U.S. Immigration and Naturalization Service are like their own bureaucrats—inept and lazy, so the chance of getting caught and deported once in America are slim to none. But getting the visa in the first place can prove difficult, especially for young Russians.

The most favorable method of entry for Russian females is to marry an American because then they can travel back and forth, work in America legally and eventually bring their relatives over. One Russian girl expressed the attitude of many, “I don’t care if he is fat, old or ugly, I will do anything to get out of here.” Once they have lived in the U.S. for two years, they become permanent residents and can divorce their husband, which they usually do, taking some or a lot of his money with the help of a divorce court manned by Feminazis just waiting to vent their hostility against a guy.

The Embassy personnel understand that many Russians, especially females in their twenties, will say or do anything to escape their homeland, so the personnel make the procedure as difficult and arbitrary as possible. After waiting two hours in the cold and another hour inside, Angel and I finally made it to a clerk. We presented the papers and the clerk, a Russian female, decided on her own initiative, contrary to the Embassy's guidelines, to require an additional document that I did not have. It's an old Russian trick of arbitrarily making last minute demands inconsistent with the rules in order to dissuade someone from doing what they had a right to do. It played on the average Russian's ingrained acceptance that bureaucrats could make up the rules as they went along. The clerk obviously hoped to throw a monkey wrench into our plans or at least dishearten us into giving up. Angel began to argue, but I knew it was useless, so I pulled my ace. I told the clerk to contact the American officer at the Embassy whom I had talked with a number of times about obtaining a visa for Angel. I originally contacted him just in case some lower level bureaucrat gave us a hard time. Russians always jump for their superiors, especially if they are Americans. She contacted the officer and granted Angel her visa immediately.

"I can't believe it. We got my visa and so quickly. Great," Angel said as she hugged and kissed me. "Now I go to America."

"You will see it is a different place—the land of opportunity."

"What do you mean by opportunity?" she asked.

"In America, if you work hard, have a little bit of luck and treat people decently, you can achieve your dreams. You can work at whatever it is you wish and make enough money for a house, a car and to raise a family in a safe environment. You do not have to sacrifice your dreams and self respect just to survive like in Russia where only the criminals succeed."

“I will see for myself,” Angel said somewhat disbelievingly, which made sense. She grew up in a culture where its citizens had no rights, no opportunities unless the band of thugs who hijacked the government, whether Communists or racketeers, disdainfully granted such. How could she possibly understand the axiomatic belief of virtually all Americans that because they are human beings, they have rights that no government can take away; that the government and its bureaucrats work for the citizens rather than lording over them as feudal barons once did. How could she realize the power of such a belief in tens of millions of people. America never had a dictator. Richard Nixon tried, but the political system got rid of him because he had broken the American moral against widespread violation of the citizens’ Constitutional rights. A more practical guarantee of individual rights that many communist minded Americans don’t realize is that before any government decided to assume dictatorial powers, it would have to contend with the 200 million guns owned by Americans. In Russia, only the government and criminals—who are usually the same—have weapons; therefore, they do pretty much what they want.

Since Angel wanted to spend the holidays with her mother, at the suggestion of one of the Russian investigators in the office, I asked her whether she wanted me to visit her in Krasnodar. The investigator reasoned that if Angel really cared for me, she would agree, but he added as a caveat that the village she lived in just outside of Krasnodar was a dangerous place for a Westerner. Angel seemed surprised by the idea and asked, “Where would you stay? My house is too small for guests.”

“I’ll stay in a hotel,” I said, which caused her to pause and think.

“But it is too expensive,” she protested. “You know how I try to save your money. I’m not like other girls who take a man’s money.”



“I can afford it.”

“Let me think about it. I’ll have to talk to mom,” she concluded.

At night, Angel and I went to a party thrown by a young American, Tony Wong, who headed up the Russian operation for the American pharmaceutical company Schering-Plough, which I referred to as Scherring-Hoe. Tony and I met through one of my professors at Columbia University’s Business School. As with most American man working in Moscow, Tony’s major recreational activity consisted of bedding as many young, although not necessarily pretty, girls as possible, which included a 14 year-old Cuban girl that he often bragged about. Tony, a firm believer in quantity over quality, actually kept count. I attributed the high number to part braggadocio and part a character flaw of chasing any girl who dated one of his friends or associates. He apparently assumed that since a girl was going out with someone he knew; she should also go out with him. Naturally, he made a play for Angel even though she was almost twice his height. She thought it very strange that an American would chase another American’s girl.

“Even in a disco, the worst Russian gangster did not try to cut in on another Russian’s girl,” she said.

“Tony’s not typical of American men,” I replied. “But there do exist some who just don’t have the guts to find their own girl in America, so they feed off of others. But in Moscow with so many Russian girls wanting to date American guys, I just don’t understand Tony’s tactics.”

For Russian girls, an American boyfriend meant the glamorous life that only dollars could buy. Americans generally lived in luxurious apartments, drove nice cars or were chauffeured around at the expense of their companies. They could afford the best discos, restaurants and culture while your average Russian girl entertained herself by sitting around the

kitchen table, drinking tea, eating chocolate and talking with friends—not a girl’s idea of fun as her looks tick away. The beauty of most Russian girls burn brightly from puberty to their late twenties when they start to turn sour on life as age robs them of their looks and, therefore, their power. The girl who bets on her beauty in Russia has about ten years to satiate her desire for fun and adventure and to score big. Angel always admonished me, “Don’t waste your time!” as though she believed it paramount to pack an entire lifetime into relatively few years.

Russian girls also find American companies attractive because they provide the best paying jobs. Most begin as secretaries, whom Russians refer to as “secretutes” since a secretary generally provides her boss with sexual services. But unlike working for a Russian boss, a secretute can advance within an American company and by socializing with her boss, she’ll meet lots of other Americans willing to show her a good time in return for sexual favors. A win-win situation for a Russian girl as long as she stays attractive. The boss, of course, enjoys a young, pretty girl the likes of which would never consider going out with him in America unless he had a lot more money. Even when the American boss keeps hands off, there is the advantage of not having to worry about some employee dragging him into court for sexual harassment in an effort to sex-mail the company and destroy a man over an innocent remark complimenting a girl’s appearance. The American guys I knew in Russia went there in large part to escape persecution by a social order twisted to favor females by turning a blind eye to the weaknesses and strengths that Mother Nature gave both sexes over millions of years of evolution. Russia also allowed these guys to believe themselves special despite prior social and career failures in America. Russian girls knew all this and used it to their own advantage.

The next day, Angel agreed to my visiting her over the New Year’s weekend, which for Russians amounts to our Christmas, New Year’s and the Fourth of July all rolled into one

holiday. On New Year's Eve, Russians exchange presents, get drunk, party and set off fireworks. The approaching New Year held added significance since it also marked the beginning of a new millennium, which for the countless Russians who believed in superstitions carried a heightened sense of caution. For me, nothing changes on New Year's or New Millennium Day, so any omens of ill fortune were buried by my rational mind.

While preparing to leave for the airport, Angel asked some strange questions, which she repeated a number of times over the next month or so.

Folding her clothes, she matter-of-factly asked, "Does your firm work with the F.B.I.?"

"Sure, some of Kroll's employees are former F.B.I. agents. Why do you ask?"

"Maybe I could find work with them."

That surprised me. "I thought you wanted to be a model."

"Yes, but if it not workout, I will need other job. Doesn't the F.B.I. have an office in Russia?"

"Sure, it's in Moscow."

"You must have lots of contacts in F.B.I.?"

"Not I, that's all handled through London or New York."

"But you know the people in London and New York, right?"

"Sure, I go through them now and then."

"The F.B.I. works with the F.S.B here in Russia, doesn't it?"

"More or less, also the Ministry of Internal Affairs."

"Kroll must have lots of contacts in the F.S.B. and the Ministry?" she asked rolling up her panties.

“That’s how we get information to help our clients. The bodyguard I hired for you last time works for the F.S.B.”

“Your clients are big American corporations?”

“Mostly.”

“They hire you for information?”

“And sometimes protection.”

“Why all the questions Angel?”

“I just research the job market.”

My driver and I took Angel to the plane. I positioned myself across her lap and fell asleep with my face nestling between her neck and shoulder. I couldn’t get over the security I felt in her size. This time she carried \$18,000 in cash, but I was not as worried. Angel clearly knew how to function in Russia; besides, Leo knew nothing about it.

Before boarding the plane, she said, “I look to us being together for the new millennium in my home. Remember, I am poor so my house is small and lack many things.”

“That is not important to me. It is you I want, not your house.”

“Oh, I hope so,” she laughed. “I could not see you living in my house. It would be too difficult for you.”

“I have lived in some difficult places,” I said. “Russians seem to think Americans are weak.”

“Living is so difficult in my country. It makes us strong. Americans do not have the problems we have and so we grow up tougher,” she proudly said.

“If Americans are so weak, why did we win the cold war?”

“Oh, you are a war hero now,” she said sarcastically with her arm over my shoulder and playing with my hair. “We will give you a medal in Krasnodar,” she laughed good-naturedly.

We kissed. “Be careful and call me when you arrive.”

“I will think of you and miss you until New Year’s. Be careful in Moscow. I have special love for you. So long for now,” she said with her model smile.

### Pretty Little Angel Eyes

This time Angel called as soon as she arrived in Krasnodar. All was well; she and her money were safe. I wondered where she kept her \$26,000—definitely not in a bank. Russians knew better than to trust any bank in that country with their money. Under the Soviets, a large bank account triggered an investigation into where the funds came from. Such investigations often ended with the account holder in the gulag or graveyard with bureaucrats expropriating the money. Russia’s present system of kleptocracy proves no less risk for money entrusted to a bank. Tax officials will use bank records to target well-off depositors for a bribe to avoid prosecution for tax evasion. Or a bank will simply declare insolvency in which the depositors’ funds disappear into the executives’ pockets, which occurred all across Russia in 1998. Federal deposit insurance didn’t exist in Russia, and, if it had, the government couldn’t have afforded to pay. Over the decades, Russians have created ingenious ways of hiding their money in their apartments using false ceilings, hidden doors and double bottoms in draws or storing its value in jewelry.

Angel earnestly asked, “Roy, this will be a big New Year celebration because of the new millennium. Can you bring some fireworks?”

“What kind of fireworks?”

“The ones that shoot into the air and explode, the big ones,” she giggled. “I can’t find them in Krasnodar but I think they sell them in Moscow.”

“Wait a minute,” I said. “You want me to bring firework rockets on an airplane.”

“Yes, big ones that explode with lots of lights,” she innocently said. Bright lights and neon colors thrilled Angel. Every time we passed a brightly lit casino in Moscow, she said with a strange awe, “Oh, the lights are so beautiful. It is great. My hometown is so dark.”

I had visions of walking on an airplane, my arms full of rockets that would promptly blow up in mid-flight. Ironically, given the Russian disregard for safety, the stewardesses might actually let me on the plane with the fireworks. On flights within the country, passengers bring on huge suitcases and maybe an animal or two that are stowed in the aisle or if small enough held in their laps. They are afraid the luggage handlers will steal their bags for which the airline will not pay because it assumes the victim of the theft will lie about the value of his stolen belongings, which they will. I loved Angel, but I wasn’t going to risk a Russian stewardess permitting me on an airplane with rockets.

“I don’t think they will let me on the plane with them, Angel,” I somewhat dissembled not wanting to show what a Russian would consider cowardice for not trying to hide the rockets in my luggage.

“Oh,” she said as if surprised. “You really think they will not let you on the plane with them?”

“Yes, I do,” I said.

“Why don’t you hide them in your luggage?” she responded.

“The ones I saw in Moscow are too big for my luggage,” I lied.

“Oh,” she said somewhat disappointed but then just as quickly brightened, “I will try to find some here.”

“Good idea. I will give you the money when I arrive,” I said, relieved to escape that situation.

For the next two week I ran around Moscow buying presents for her and her mother. Angel told me her mother had been a dancer in her earlier years, so I got her a pictorial book of Bolshoi performances along with various other gifts. For Angel I bought a CD player, jewelry and lot more.

Work consisted mainly of two cases: one involving a high-speed electronic data system. A consortium of foreign investors wanted to invest in the construction of an electronic data system that would carry email, television and other digital information throughout Moscow. A large Russian communication conglomerate with good ties to Moscow’s Mayor Luzhkov had run out of money before completing the system. The foreign investors concluded the system would generate huge profits providing the executives of the conglomerate also maintained good connections with the Prime Minister Putin, the odds on favorite to win the Presidency thanks to the war in Chechnya. Because Luzhkov opposed Putin, a Putin Presidency would threaten Luzhkov’s political influence and the conglomerate’s success if it was tied too closely to Luzhkov.

In Russia, winners go to extreme measures to bury their opponents—both figuratively and literally. The success of any business depends on political connections. The foreign consortium worried that with the possible political demise of Luzhkov, Putin would transfer control of the electronic data system to another company more closely connected with him. Our investigation found that the Russian conglomerate had excellent connections with Putin, so the

foreign consortium's investment was safe by Russian standards. We also discovered that the new digital transmission system would enabled the Russian Government to eavesdrop on any transmission, including all the emails going into, around and out of Moscow. Kroll immediately began measures to encrypt its emails.

The other case concerned finding the culprits behind the counterfeiting of a Western brand of instant coffee. Russian counterfeiters always get something wrong with the packaging of their fake products because it costs too much to accurately duplicate foreign labeling. The bogus labels made finding the retailers easy by simply going to various markets looking for the telltale signs of the counterfeiter's label. Moscow, as with other Russian cities, has a small number of large open-air markets consisting of many small shops where Russians purchase most of their consumer items. It turned out that every large market in Moscow sold the counterfeit coffee. No surprise there since eighty per cent of the foreign coffee sold in Russia is counterfeit.

Kroll's contract agents, members of the F.S.B., backtracked the counterfeit coffee to the wholesaler and then the manufacturer by examining the records kept by a few retailers and the wholesaler. When a law enforcement official shows up at a Russian's business requesting to look at its records, the business better comply even though the official may be moonlighting for a private company such as Kroll because payment to a high ranking official could land the owner in jail or heavily fined. That's the way private investigations usually work in Russia: using law enforcement officials, no matter how high their rank, who rent out their police powers because it pays better than the government. The wholesaler's records listed the apparent manufacturer and times of delivery. To make sure they found the real culprits, our agents followed the delivery trucks back to their source. The counterfeiters operated under the aegis of the city government



with profits channeled to the Mayor's office and other officials right on down to police officers. There wasn't any cost-effective way for our client to put a halt to that.

After the fall of the Soviet Union, the influx of Western and Asian products caused many Russians to stop buying the low quality and often-dangerous goods produced within their country. Under the old Communist regime, manufacturers didn't care about quality because there was no competition nor enforceable safety requirements, since consumer lawsuits went nowhere in the Soviet courts and the government didn't care. With the fall of communism, manufacturers still didn't care about safety because of the continuing incompetence and corruption of the courts and the government. They do care, however, about competition, which they deal with by simply marketing their low quality products under imported brand names. Counterfeit televisions, radios, clothing, food products, medicines, liquor, beer, wine, toiletries and many other items flood the Russian market. Usually the prevalence of a counterfeit product far exceeds the number of the genuine import, so most Russians never realize they've purchased fake goods because they never bought the originals that allow for comparisons. Even foreigners, who sometimes can tell the difference between counterfeit and genuine goods, continue to buy fake products because no one knows where to find authentic items.

Counterfeiting grew into a big business for local governments in the 1990s because they continued to control most of the manufacturing facilities in Russia, just as they did under communism. Privatization didn't touch many production plants, and in those it did, the local government kept a large ownership stake. Public officials earned huge profits passing off cheap Russian goods as the better quality and more expensive imported brands. Foreign producers tried lobbying the Federal Government to crack down on local counterfeiting but failed, since many federal officials also shared in the counterfeiting profits, and they were not about to

destroy a key source of funds that assured power for their political allies in local governments. The most successful RICOs stretch from the President's inner circle down to the traffic cop extorting money from motorists.

With Christmas approaching, business and government operations nearly ceased in Russia. From around the 25<sup>th</sup> of December to the middle of January, many Russians got drunk then sobered up so they could start drinking again. The population binged on food, drink and doing nothing at all, which, except for necessary services run by drunks, virtually shut down the entire country. This extended hiatus from work evolved after the fall of communism when Russians decided to celebrate both the Western holidays and the pre-Soviet observance of the orthodox Christmas on January 7 and orthodox New Year's a week later. The Russians created an opportunity for an extended vacation in Cyprus, Turkey or at their dachas and took it without regard for the long-term economic consequences.

### Goin South

On the night before New Year's Eve, loaded down with presents, I boarded my plane for the warmer climate of Krasnodar and Angel. In Moscow, the snow was falling with the temperature well below zero. The plane taxied out to the runway but then stopped just before we were about to take off. The captain said there would be a slight delay to clean the runway. Two hours later, still sitting on the tarmac, the stewardesses started serving dinner while we waited. No sooner did I cut into my generic Russian meat than the pilot decided to take off. As the plane rumbled down the runway picking up speed, the passengers tried, with varying degrees of success, to keep their dinners out of their laps. Then the plane shot up steeply like a combat fighter. The acceleration slammed passengers into their seats while they juggled trays of less and less food in an effort to nullify the forces splattering meals over them, the seats and the cabin

floor. Some succeeded, most didn't. I was lucky. Once the plane leveled off, the stewardesses and passengers laughed about the incident expressing a resigned acceptance of "What do you expect from Russia."

Two hours late, I arrived around 10 PM instead of eight a little worried that Angel might not have waited, knowing her frustration with tardiness. The taxi drivers, as they do at any Russian airport, mob the disembarking passengers at the gate exit to hawk their services, making it difficult to spot friends. But there she stood, tall and beautiful with an older woman, nearly a foot shorter than her. She put her arm on my shoulders, looked down into my eyes and kissed me; I was happy.

"You're late. We have been waiting for hours. We did not know what happened."

"The snow in Moscow delayed our take off," I said.

"As usual they tell us nothing," Angel complained about the airline officials. The Soviet fear that a late plane often meant a crashed plane still haunted Russians.

Angel introduced me to her mother, Inessa, who didn't speak English, but I learned later that she, like so many other Russians, understood the language but pretended not to.

Taking charge, Angel said, "First we go to the hotel where you and I will stay. Mom will then drive back to the village with this very nice gentleman who agreed to take us for much less than other drivers. Can you pay for the car?"

"Of course," I said.

I started to kiss her, but she was hesitant and said, "Not in the car, in front of my mom and the driver."

The drive to the hotel took me through various sections of Krasnodar while Angel told me a little about her home. Krasnodar's population totaled around one million, a fairly large city

by Russian standards and like all cities except Moscow and St. Petersburg crushingly poor. As we drove, the night darkness seemed in the process of strangling any light coming from homes, buildings or streetlamps. I never saw such a place where the night fought so relentlessly against the light except for the Bogside in Londonderry, Northern Ireland. Immediately, I understood why Angel liked the bright city lights, only hopelessness patrolled these streets.

Criminals ran the city, lived in big houses and rode around in Mercedes Benzes while the rest struggled through a dead end existence of poverty and humiliation. Like the aristocracy and Communists before them, the criminal bosses of Krasnodar, many former Soviet big shots, occupied powerful government posts from which they arrogantly and arbitrarily enforced their will. Even their younger underlings, Krasnodar's New Russians, flaunted an untouchable status by ignoring traffic rules, forcing average folk to move to a less favorable table in a public restaurant, never waiting in line, renting the town's most beautiful models as semen depositories and living the indulgent life above the law. The bosses didn't battle other ruthless gangsters and politicians to the top of the power structure; they simply worked their way up under the Communists the way many executives do in American corporations. The organization that had restrained the conduct of Russian political bosses—the Communist Party, lost its power with the empire's collapse, which allowed cowardly Kafkaian bureaucrats to turn into embolden bullies.

During the drive, I saw that most of the city's buildings consisted of small, one-story single-family houses made of brick with outhouses for toilets and, according to Angel, no hot running water. Except for some large, newly constructed houses built by New Russians, the homes were old and dilapidated with windows covered by the grim of the ever-present industrial air pollution. The tallest buildings consisted of hotels and apartment complexes of about 10 stories with hot running water supplied by the city but turned off every night from 9 PM to early

the next morning to allegedly save energy. More likely, the Mayor sold the city's fuel at a token price to his associates and relatives who then sold it in the marketplace for a killing with a large share of the profits going into the Mayor's overseas account, probably in Cyprus. The dimly lit city center on Krasnaya Ulitsa or Red Street contained mainly retail shops in low-rise buildings mostly constructed before the 1917 Revolution. Krasnaya Ulitsa stretched straight as an arrow for two maybe three miles, and for much of that distance, a park with a pedestrian walk ran down the middle between the car lanes.

Around 11 PM, we arrived at the Moscow Hotel on Krasnaya Ulitsa where I had booked a room on the recommendation of one of Kroll's sources. Angel and I said goodbye to her mother, and I paid the driver to take Inessa back to her house in the village. The lighting inside the hotel only added a few more watts to the dimness of the city center, probably intentional in order to cover a dilapidated and architecturally ugly hotel built under the Communists.

Krasnodar had a number of hotels, but the city government allowed foreigners to stay at only two in order to more easily keep an eye on them. Old Soviet behavior died hard, but also assured that foreigners were charged higher rates, since the income went back to the city and its bureaucrats. Russian hotels generally charge Westerners five, ten and even twenty times as much as they do Russians—not unlike banana republics where prices rise dramatically when a Westerner walks through the door. The most cost effective way to visit Russia was to use friends living there to find a private room for a fraction of the hotel rates and someone to guide the visitor away from money fleecing restaurants, stores and women. Despite the Russians 70 years of isolation from the rest of the world, they knew all the little schemes used to separate a foreigner from his money—it's in their genes.

The quality of accommodations didn't differ between the two hotels allowing foreigners, but the Moscow Hotel cost one-fifth the rate of the Intourist Hotel, which was why I stayed at the Moscow. The doors in the hotel's rooms hung crooked and opened the wrong way, some frames lacked trimming and the sinks were not attached to the wall, so when I leaned on one it almost land on my toes. The beds, only a little wider than a camping cot, used plywood boards for a box spring on which laid a decade or decades old mattress that had never been turned. The Moscow Hotel also rented suites with double cots, one of which I had mistakenly reserved. Hotel suites catered to prostitutes and their clients, were filthy and, in the one I rented, still sported a used condom lying on the floor.

As soon as we entered our less than paradisiacal abode, Angel said, "You must always lock the door twice and leave the key in the lock so no one can insert a duplicate key from the outside."

"You're kidding," I said. "Who would want to break in here?"

"You are American. To Russians that means money. Chechnya is not far from here and there are plenty of Chechen gangsters in Krasnodar."

"What can they do to me? My firm has contacts with the F.S.B., F.B.I. and C.I.A.," I said full of myself.

"That means nothing to the Chechens. I know; I used to live with them. They will kidnap you, hold you for ransom and for each delay in payment cut off a part of your body until there is nothing left."

"Not a pleasant prospect." I jokingly answered.

"Please! Just do what I say. I know how to live in Russia."

"Okay, if it makes you happy."

She smiled, held me and put her hand on my head, “Yes Roy. It will make me happy.”

Changing the subject she said, “Tomorrow in the morning, I must go some places by myself.”

I assumed she wanted to let me sleep late or didn’t want to bore me with tagging along as she did her chores. “I don’t mind going with you. It will give me a chance to see some of Krasnodar.”

“No. I must go myself. It will be better if you wait here,” she firmly said.

“Whatever you want. I’ll go out for a walk.”

“No, you mustn’t,” she quickly said. “Russia is a dangerous place.”

“Angel, I have traveled around different parts of Russia by myself many times. Besides I live in New York City. I know how to take care of myself. You do not have to worry about me getting hurt or lost on the streets of Krasnodar.”

“I don’t want to worry about some crazy Russian hurting you,” she sweetly said.

Gee this girl really cares about me. “Okay, whatever you want.”

“Good,” she smiled. “Then in the afternoon we will go to my house in the village and celebrate New Year’s Eve with mom.”

Angel pulled out of her bag bread, meats, utensils and the type of water heater I hadn’t seen since my college dorm days for making tea. This girl came prepared.

“The food is for you Roy. You must be hungry after your flight,” she caringly said.

“That’s for sure. But don’t you want some?”

“No, I already ate and I still on my diet. Tea is fine for me.”

We talked while I stuffed my face, then played around and went to sleep. I fell right off into a strange dreamland even though it usually takes me an hour or more to fall asleep no matter how tired I am.

Next morning, Angel ran her errands and I watched television in the hotel room.

While switching through the four channels in Krasnodar, one of the Russian investigators from the office called to say that Yeltsin had just resigned the Presidency and appointed Pupin acting president.

“That means Putin will almost certainly be elected to a full four-year term in the spring,” I said.

“Unless the war in Chechnya goes dramatically bad, there is no stopping him,” the investigator replied. “The F.S.B. and the oligarchs did a good job of out maneuvering Luzhkov and Primakov with the Chechen War.”

“What happens to them now?”

“They will try to placate Putin in order to preserve some of their power by not running an aggressive campaign against him or perhaps even support him.”

“The courageous way out,” I sarcastically remarked.

“Exactly,” he laughed. “Russia is about survival, not dignity. Enjoy your New Year’s Eve.”

“You too.”

### Party Lights

When Angel returned, we grabbed the presents, food and champagne I brought from Moscow for New Year’s Eve. As always Angel dickered with a couple of taxis looking for the lowest rate and complained, “Everybody in Russia wants to cheat you. They are so greedy.”



Angel's village, Yablonovsky, laid just outside the city limits of Krasnodar. At the roadblock on the city border, armed guards checked people entering Krasnodar but not leaving. Russians considered Krasnodar well managed despite the wholesale corruption because the Mayor ran the city with a strong hand. Like a boss of bosses, he enforced a code of cooperation among the different Krishas that minimized violent confrontations by ensuring all the gangs participated in the fleecing of Krasnodar's population. In return, the average citizen didn't have to worry about street crime or terrorists. Yablonovsky was a different story. There anything could happen. Krishas battled violently, store owners didn't know which gang to pay protection and when the sun went down, average citizens generally stayed at home behind locked doors.

When Angel attended college in Krasnodar at the Academy of Physical Culture, where she graduated in 1996, public buses didn't go beyond the Krasnodar city limits because of the danger. Angel couldn't afford a taxi, so she traversed the miles from the city border to her home on foot. In the dark of winter, she ran in fear that some hoodlums might grab her and have their way with her. I felt so sorry for her going through such an ordeal. I wished I could have been there to help her.

Angel's neighborhood consisted mainly of small one-floor houses with no basements or attics. Here and there a New Russian two story house sprung up but even those sat on tiny plots of land. There wasn't as much to steal in southern Russia as in Moscow, so the New Russians weren't as rich. A high fence of solid metal surrounded Angel's house with a locked gate in the front. When we arrived, her mother was outside in their tiny front yard washing clothes in cold water with her bare hands in the winter weather. They couldn't afford a washing machine. The house had no hot water, no shower, no bath and an outhouse in the back from which the user could watch snowflakes fall through the cracks in the wooden door of the unheated commode.

Inside the front and only door to the house, stood a small kitchen with a gas stove, sink, couple of cabinets and a tiny table for two pushed against the front window. On the wall to the left of the front door hung coats and on the floor were piled up shoes and slippers. Russians always change from shoes to slippers when entering their homes, not just out of cleanliness, but because many believe the devil lives outside their doors and street shoes that traipse through the devil's environment carry bad luck into their homes unless placed off in a corner. After the kitchen was a tiny foyer the size of a large closet in which the two kept their vanity table and Angel's many stuffed animals. How could she afford all of those, I wondered. The last and largest room in the house served as the living, dining and bedroom—that was it. These two women were poor, terribly poor and had always been poor; yet they appeared cheerful, hopeful and hospitable in their poverty.

Angel and her mother created a cozy and warm atmosphere with holiday decorations that included a plastic Christmas tree. The television or a radio stayed on all the time, except, I assumed, when they slept. The barrio of Guayaquil, Ecuador used a similar technique to ward off the depressing environment. Angel's mother seemed genuinely nice and modest, looking after my needs as she would a son. Angel brought out her photograph albums—one for the family and six dedicated to her. I browsed through them while she provided commentary and her mother prepared dinner in the kitchen.

“My parents moved to Grozny when I was very little.” She showed me a photograph of a man in his thirties holding a baby. “And this is our apartment in Grozny. It was very big with four rooms.”

“My father was an officer in the M.V.D. in Grozny, and until I turned 10, we were very happy.” In Russia, as in the former Soviet Union, the police, or M.V.D., are a nationwide

agency controlled by the national government. Individual towns do not have their own police departments beholding to the Mayor but rather a division of the M.V.D. handles local law enforcement right down to the traffic cop.

“I thought you said everything was fine until you were eight?”

“No,” Angel continued, “We were happy until I was 10. Then he started drinking and when mom went traveling as a dancer, my father would beat me and not give me enough food. He would invite his friends over to play cards and drink. Then they would eat the food my mom left for me. I was always hungry.”

She told me the story before, but my heart still ached for her. I couldn’t change the past, so all I said was, “I’m sorry Angel.”

“When I was 13, he sexually attacked me.” She told me that before also. Angel didn’t go into details, and I didn’t ask but assumed he raped her.

“Mom decided to divorce him and move to Krasnodar when I was sixteen. It was very difficult. My father wanted half our apartment but Mom fought him in court and won. Mom sent me to Krasnodar in 1991 where I lived in a dormitory and went to the Academy of Physical Culture. I was always hungry.” Angel often said she was always hungry. “Mom sold our apartment, bought this house and moved all our belongings here with the help of a wonderful Chechen man.”

“I am so sorry you and your mother went through such a hell,” I sincerely said. “If I had known you then, I could have helped.”

Angel laughed and in a nice way said, “What could you an American do here in Russia?”

I responded a little defensively, “In 1991, after the fall of communism—a lot. We Americans are not as weak as you think.”

“Oh, my superman. Next time I will call you and you will fly to me.” She laughed, but really believed I could not have helped her.

I noticed that all the pictures of her before she started college clearly showed a nasty and angry, although pretty, young girl. A few of these also showed a very fat girl, which surprised me. I pointed them out and Angel quickly grabbed them saying, “Those aren’t suppose to be there!” She then ran off to hide them in her vanity room. I tried to joke about her past stoutness, but she didn’t take kindly to it, so I dropped the subject, not asking the obvious question: “If she was always hungry, how did she get so fat?” But I did ask about the mystery as to why the photographs of her after she started college showed a cheery, bright and smiling girl as though overnight her entire psychological makeup had changed.

She said, “When sixteen, I started reading the Russian philosopher Sergey Nikolaevich Lazarev who wrote about karma. I realized that my anger would get me nowhere but only punish me. People would not want to help me if I always angry. I started to believe in the God of the new human race, the new world outlook. It combine science and religion in a society where people be both saints and creators, and the God helped me change inside.”

Sounded a little Hitlerian to me but understandable given the insecurities of the changes undergoing in Russia in 1991. Still, overnight conversions, especially those involving religion, made me skeptical. How can someone growing up in poverty in a dysfunctional society like Russia change herself into a good-spirited person? But, apparently, she did. Angel never lost her temper with me and always appeared cheerful and kind. Yet something prompted me to ask for one of the angry anti-Angel pictures, “Can I keep one these photos of you when you were sixteen?”

“If you want,” she seemed surprised but unconcerned.

We moved on through this pictorial celebration of Angel but not necessarily in chronological order.

“These pictures are of the Russian long jump championships in high school. I won them three years in a row.” I heard that before also but was still impressed. “Here are shots from our track meets at the institute. I did not do well then because I injured a bone in my foot. I would have tried for the Olympics, if I had not injured myself, but I do not think I would have made it because all those athletes take steroids. I didn’t want to do that to my body and lose my femininity.”

“Drugs can exact a heavy price but mainly they are just a waste of time,” I knowingly said with a double meaning that she missed. “But successful athletes in Russia live well, with the state providing all kinds of benefits: cars, apartments and money. Don’t they?”

“Not anymore,” she sourly answered. “Now the bureaucrats only help themselves. After the fall in 1991, the only way to get ahead was to work in the government or as a criminal working for government bureaucrats.”

“Not so in America.”

“I will see.”

Then with pride she directed my attention to three other packed albums, “These have my modeling pictures.” I saw lots of nude and semi nude photographs that clearly pleased Angel but made me feel jealous.

“Who took these photos?” I asked, wondering whether that was all he did. I didn’t know anything about the modeling industry except that the mass media seemed to always report stories of unscrupulous photographers taking advantage of innocent girls.

“Various photographers, they are all professionals,” she added, as if knowing I suspected something more went on at these shoots. I decided I would just have to get use to strange men looking at my girl’s body since that is what a model sells.

None of the photos in these albums showed between her legs, but that didn’t mean none were taken, so I tried to catch her off guard by asking, “Where are the photos that show the rest of you?”

Angel matter-of-factly said, “I don’t permit those kind of pictures. I am an artist.” That was a relief. Some parts of the modeling industry could provide a decent way to make a living, and Angel apparently understood this as she avoided the more sordid temptations for making big money.

Proud of her recent travels, Angel pulled out some photos of her in Mexico, including the “good friend” Alfredo, middle-aged and fat, two other guys and two girls, one a friend from Lithuania, Azul, who also danced at The Men’s Club. Angel said they were taken on a weekend trip to some Mexican ruins.

“You told me that when you went away for the weekends you were always alone.” I said.

“Not all the time.”

“Yes all the time. In one of your faxes, you said I am always alone on the weekends.”

She ignored the discrepancy, “This guy and girl are married. She is Russian and friends with me and Azul. Alfredo and this other guy are the couple’s friends. We all simply took a trip together.”

I let it go until the photos of a smiling Angel lying on a hotel balcony with the background clearly identifiable as Cancun. Not all of her showed, but she was completely naked. “Who took these pictures?” I asked, my suspicions immediately returned.

“Azul, of course. We traveled a lot together.”

“So who is the girl in the back ground by the railing?”

“Just some girl. I don’t know who.”

“Do you always have strange girls on your hotel balcony? Who paid for the hotel room anyway?”

“I have to help mom in the kitchen,” she abruptly said and just got up and walked out.

Russians tend to ignore questions or statements for which they have no appropriate or face saving response.

I wasn’t happy about what these photos implied but wanted so much to believe in her that I even began thinking this Alfredo was just a good friend of hers and Azul’s. Possibly he took the two of them to resorts so that people would envy him traveling with two pretty young ladies or to convince himself that such girls enjoyed his company. But then I estimated the costs in my head to fly, house and feed two girls for a weekend in Cancun and knew only a fool would believe Angel’s fairy tale. Alfredo clearly received a return on his investment, which meant Angel misled me about her extracurricular activities in Mexico. However, once again, I rationalized that I really had no grounds to object because our romance didn’t begin until after Mexico. Still, her dissembling bothered me, as I saw a little deeper into her behavior. Her memory didn’t match mine: she couldn’t keep her stories straight but possessed an excellent ability to invent stories on the spot.

When I finished the last album, Angel came back from the kitchen, pulled out the videotapes of the beauty contests in which she competed over the past four years. Her presence on videotape came across even better than in the still photos; a transition most models can’t make. The video camera loved her and she loved it. My previous work as a writer and producer

in television news taught me when someone belonged in front of the camera, and Angel did. All the other contestants looked stiff and ill at ease in comparison to her. Videotape simply emphasized Angel's brightness and cheerfulness.

We watched the videos of the Miss Krasnodar and Miss Fa, which she won in 1998. These contests were big time in Russia, similar to state and regional contests in the U.S. In the Miss Fa contest, Angel did a dance and acting routine of professional quality. As good as I ever saw back in the states. Immediately, I realized that with the right management and a little luck she might make it big in America.

"You really have talent Angel, I am impressed."

"But in Russia, talent means nothing anymore," she accurately pointed out. "Under the Soviets, the state rewarded artists for their work, but now they starved, no one cares and the criminals steal everything."

"Yes, but in America artists can make a decent living and some even achieve great things. Sure they have to work hard...."

"I no afraid of work."

"With a little luck, artists can support themselves in relative comfort and raise a family doing what they love."

"Oh, America is a fairy tale," she laughed.

"No, it's a place that gives people the chance, not the guarantee, to achieve their dreams. When we go there next month, I will introduce you to a couple of my friends. One was a model and now sings and acts in plays, and another played lead guitar in a famous rock band and now produces records. They are not rich but make a living doing what they love."

"I wish for my dreams to come true but I will see."



I, on the other hand, confidently entertained visions of managing the career of an up and coming star of the stage, screen, fashion magazines and rock ‘n ‘ roll. As a lawyer with an MBA, I knew I could make her dreams come true. My friends would put me in touch with influential people in the entertainment industry, and I could protect her from its sharks. It all seemed to fit: brains, talent and a decent girl deserving a chance. It also promised a new adventure for me.

Angel grabbed the runner up spot in the Miss Krasnodar pageant in which the winner went on to vie for the title of Miss Russia.

“I didn’t win the Miss Krasnodar title because I was poor,” she said. “Here the winner has to buy her own clothes for public appearances as Miss Krasnodar. They don’t give her a wardrobe. The judges knew I couldn’t afford fashionable clothes, so they gave the title to a girl with rich parents.”

“I’m sorry,” I said, not sure whether to believe her or not since it sounded like sour grapes.

“Let me show you my first beauty contest,” as she pushed the tape into a video player, which I assumed she just bought with some of the \$28,000 she brought back from Mexico.

The tape showed a group of girls painted in different colors. “Which contest is this?” I asked.

“Body art,” she gleefully answered.

I looked closer. “Are these girls wearing any clothes?”

“No. We cover our bodies with paint. It is art,” she emphasized over and over.

“Besides, no one can see anything because of the paint.” Not exactly true, I could see plenty just watching the tape.

Angel continued, “I was so nervous before I went on stage. I was afraid someone would recognize me and tell my mother.”

“Where is this?”

“It was right here in Krasnodar. I was a student in the institute at the time.”

“How could you go on stage without any clothes in your hometown and not think someone would recognize you?” I asked, but she did not answer.

“I won this contest because of the design painted on my body and my fan dance,” she proudly recounted her triumph.

All the contestants did a dance of their own choosing, but Angel’s fan dance made the others look like amateurs. I understood why she won but not why she danced naked in front of an audience in her hometown. Her prize was a CD player, but she pleaded with the contest sponsors to award her a camera instead, which they did.

“I always dreamed of owning a camera and then I won one, and now I have gotten the CD player too as your present to me. It must have been fated,” she said, sincerely believing in an omnipotent intelligence that directs the events in people’s lives. She probably wanted the camera to take pictures of herself.

The tape of another local contest that Angel won showed her with the man she called her first love.

“That is Alexei my first boy friend,” she said with fondness.

“Good looking guy,” I said with jealousy.

She then proceeded to tell me about Alexey, the man to whom she lost her virginity. All girls do this. Why? I don’t know.

“Alexei and I met at this contest. When I won, he presented me with flowers and carried me off the stage. He was very strong.” That was an understatement; Angel weighed around 150 pounds. “We went together for over a year before making love, which for me was the first time. I was twenty-one.” No lovers before twenty-one for such a beautiful girl sounded unlikely to me, especially in Russia where, next to vodka, sex ranked the most popular form of escape from the malaise of Russian life. But then again, one of my former Russian girl friends, very pretty, kept her virginity until twenty-one. “We made love here in the house the first time. My mother found out and was furious with me. We went out for nearly four years, but he had no money and would not look for good paying work. Then he left me for another woman. Alexei was the only man I had sex with.”

All girls do this routine too, or something similar. They say without any prompting how many guys they went to bed with: one, two or three—never any more. It doesn’t matter their age, twenty or forty, the most guys they slept with before me never tops three. I never could figure how that was possible? All of my buddies, including me, have slept with more than three girls, so assuming we make up a representative statistical sample, who are all the guys out there sleeping with? Maybe there are a relatively small number of girls who take on thousands of men each, but I doubt it. The girls I dated simply lied.

“Here is dinner,” Angel said as her mother brought in the first course.

When Russians entertain guests, the dinners go on for hours with many courses and many different drinks. They spare no expense in showing their hospitality. The dinner that night easily cost a month’s salary for her mother, which amounted to around thirty-five dollars for teaching at a college, the same Academy of Physical Culture where Angel graduated. Nearly every lifting of the glass required a toast, which is an art form in itself in Russia. After my

second toast, I ran out of things to say, which was surprising for me, since the wine wasn't strong, the glasses small, and I usually don't drink passed my ability to think. For some reason, my concentration vanished into a stupor of well-being. Angel and her mother, however, rambled on and on, toast after toast. With Russians the more you say the better, that way no one will remember any of your words—I guess. Angel couldn't eat too much because she was about to burst the seams of her skintight mini dress.

About five minutes before midnight, Angel jumped up, somewhat drunk, ran into the foyer, came back carrying enough fire power for a troop of soldiers and said, "Let's hurry outside for the fireworks."

I grabbed a coat but not Angel; she hit the cold unfazed in her low cut, ultra mini silver dress. Russian genes, I assumed. No streetlamps on her block, only the dim light from stars and windows that barely made visible the indistinct forms of plenty of people moving around and talking in the street. Looked like the entire neighborhood was out there waiting for the town fireworks somewhere off in the distance. Angel squatted like a child full of glee with her mini ridding around the upper most parts of her un-childlike legs, setting up her own rockets, which I thought would be hard pressed to complete with the town's fireworks.

Then at midnight, all around me explosions went off, screaming rockets careened every which way and bright colored flashes lit up the block. The town didn't put on a fireworks show—each and every household did. It looked like a war as far as the eyes could see. Every small group of people in the street shot off its own fireworks disregarding what lay in the line of fire. Rockets and explosions went off in all directions near and far, quickly scaring me out of my euphoria into the alertness of a ball carrier in a rugby game. Angel jumped up and down, squealing like a little kid while her rockets exploded all over the place. Rocket after rocket,

bomb after bomb, this six-foot-three beauty in heels with glittered blond hair, painted face and gold chains cavorted in the noise and bursting lights. Her metamorphose into an ecstatic little child seemed complete and endeared her all the more to me. All around us, other Russians were laughing and cheering in total disregard of their rockets hitting houses, neighbors or themselves. After ducking a couple of projectiles, I concluded these people were nuts. Finally it stopped, and the bleak, deep silence of the country took over. We went back inside, where Angel and her mother donned dragon masks.

“Why the masks?” I asked.

“2000 is the year of the Angry Dragon,” Angel said grinning and slightly drunk.

“So what does that mean?”

“Successes can vanish or be illusionary. Things look better than they are. Great caution is needed before acting because fortunes as well as disasters will come in massive waves. There will be a lot of surprises and anger. But from some anger will arise the righting of wrongs and the success of justice over injustice. The dragon has the power of transformation. But we must learn which battles to lose in order to win our wars.”

“Sounds like any other year to me,” I cynically replied.

“You will see this year’s difference at the end. The dragon turns and shows the full moon. Look at it in the sky; it is a reminder of the gift that you have been given. The Moon shows choice and earth nature. You can make a choice but cannot escape your nature.”

“Ookay,” I said, trying to shake the haze out of my head in a vain attempt at comprehension.

Angel and Inessa continued the celebration by setting off poppers that shot confetti and sparks all over the place. They appeared oblivious to any fire hazard. Russians don’t look too

far ahead, but her and he mother's lack of a minute or two foresight to a possible blaze seemed extreme. Luckily, no fire occurred, and the two enjoyed themselves, as did I.

Around two in the morning, Angel and I walked out into the silent darkness to hail a car back to the hotel. She seemed alert, but I was groggy even though I had drunk little.

She warned, "It very dangerous to go out at night around here. Many people are robbed, so do not say anything in the car; otherwise, they will know you are an American."

"What ever you say, but I don't feel any danger here. The stars are out, it's peaceful and we are alone." I always enjoyed the quite-loneliness of night in secluded places—the opportunity to feel the currents of life and wonder how it all works. But I knew nothing of how life worked on that dark and chilly road with houses of people who never hoped to fulfill their dreams because the avarice of a few made the lives of so many nothing more than a struggle to survive.

"Sssh, be quiet. Someone may hear you. It is dangerous here."

### Step By Step

The next evening we took an overnight train to Sochi on the Black Sea. Angel bought the cheap sleeping accommodations where my feet hung out into the open corridor along with the rest of the passengers who looked like refugees. I told her to buy a cabin for privacy, but she wanted to save money.

Under the Communists when the iron curtain kept most Russians imprisoned in the Soviet Union, Sochi turned into a favored warm weather resort for the Nomenklatura, or influential communist bosses. After the fall of communism, middle-class Russians, the few who existed, started vacationing in Sochi while the Nomenklatura, now influential criminal bosses, travel to Florida and the Mediterranean, especially Cyprus.

Sochi had an attraction to it, even in winter. It sported a tropical, lighthearted feeling unlike the gloom and oppression of other Russian cities. The hotel looked like a classy American one out of the 1930s: well built, fine decorations and brightly lit. Angel brought along the water heater for tea plus bread and meats, but once again she only drank tea while I ate the food as late night snacks over our two nights stay.

The Sochi restaurants were nice, the food not too bad and during one lunch while talking about her acting talents, Angel said to me, “Do you want to see me cry?”

“You can cry at will!” I said amazed.

“Watch.” Within seconds tears began rolling down her cheeks. I’d never seen anyone do that before.

“How’d you do that?” I asked.

“Oh, it easy,” was her response.

We went to a few discos—Angel cannot live without dancing. We shopped, saw the sights and caught the circus, which Angel, like all little girls, loved. She especially liked the tigers.

“I was born in the year of the cat,” she said. “And the tiger is my favorite animal.”

“Do you consider yourself a tiger?” I half jokingly asked.

“You will see my power someday, be careful,” she responded looking down into my eyes. I dismissed her remark as bravado. Later, I learned she was born in the year of the rabbit.

On our last day while walking in a park, we ran into a Russian guy and girl whom Angel knew. They talked in Russian; I didn’t understand a word and then they left.

“Why didn’t you introduce me?” I asked.

“Oh, I’m sorry. I forget.”

“You always forget. Whenever we run into someone in Krasnodar that you know, you never introduce me. How come?”

“I just become so involved in talking with my friends that I never think about it. It not important. These two were models at the agency I worked for in Krasnodar.”

“Okay, but it would be nice if you introduced me in the future.”

“I promise Roy,” she said as she smiled.

That night when we returned to the hotel, Angel turned on the television. Angel and her mother always turned on a radio or television when inside but only occasionally paid attention to either as they went about their routines. Maybe the background noise made them less lonely or distracted unpleasant thoughts. Whatever, when Angel turned on the television, she immediately let out a whoop of pleasure.

“Come watch,” she excitedly said. “This is my all-time favorite movie.”

I walked over to the TV thinking some classic such as *Casablanca* was on.

“*Showgirls* my favorite,” she said bouncing up and down on the bed in joy. “It is about Los Angeles.”

“Never heard of it,” I said. “But with that title, I’m sure it’s about Las Vegas, not Los Angeles.” I sat next to her to watch. The story told of a good looking blonde who used her body and lack of ethics to work her way up from a lap dancer selling sexual favors to a showgirl at a Las Vegas Casino.

Angel loved the movie and what she described as the glamorous lifestyle it depicted. To me, what little I watched, duped in Russian, looked like a trashy film depicting part of America’s sex industry. I was surprised she liked it. Oh well, people have different tastes. My favorite movie was *Milk Money*.



Angel blurted out, “I always wanted to be a showgirl. It my dream.”

That also surprised me. I didn’t say anything but quickly assumed Angel meant she wanted to work as a Las Vegas showgirl—not as a ho like the character in the movie, which I assumed the film exaggerated for dramatic purposes. If Angel wanted to walk around as a Ziegfeld girl sprouting feathers—fine. I wasn’t going to rain on her dream. Too many self-righteous and failed people try to discourage the dreams of others by pushing cowardice under the guise of practicality. I wasn’t going to do that to Angel.

After the movie, Angel insisted I take some pictures of her playing the roll of a femme fatale in her thong panties and stockings. Not a problem, and I happily snapped away with her slithering around on the floor in one seductive pose after another, performing as well as any sexy actress. The movie apparently inspired her.

Afterward, she giggled like a little girl happy with her play-acting, but I knew posing for pictures was serious business to her. Everywhere we went, we took lots of pictures mostly of her striking one pose or another. When one roll of film was finished, she immediately found a developer and on receiving the prints, quickly look through them with a critical eye for the few good enough for her portfolio. Angel knew her business. The remainder she gave to me, which usually included the shots of the two of us together. She always said, “I want you to have these so you will always remember your Angel.”

On the over night train back to Krasnodar, we shared a semi-private cabin with a manager of the Transneft Pipeline Company, his wife and little daughter. He didn’t speak English, so Angel did her best to translate. The executive treated us courteously because I was American, but the true nature of an arrogant and mean person showed through his pretense of friendliness. His wife clearly feared him, but his daughter didn’t.

The Transneft Pipeline Company built and controlled nearly all the oil pipelines in Russia. It was one of the many Soviet era monopolies that continued in tact with the same officials using the same inept management style; only now they embezzled huge amounts of public resources in the name of Adam Smith rather than the little they stole in the name of Karl Marx. The Transneft manager fitted the mold of a New Russian businessman in that he was nothing more than a duplicate of the old Communist bureaucrat: a sycophant to his superiors, a brutal tyrant to his subordinates and competent only at lying, cheating, stealing and pretending. When communism fell, most Russian officials quickly picked up the terminology of democracy and capitalism such as “freedom of speech,” “profit motivated” and “mutual benefit” in an effort to convince foreigners that their old Soviet habits of fraud and corruption had died with communism—they hadn’t. Russians simply used the new terminology to appear committed to civilized behavior because that increased their chances of tricking Westerners out of something of value. *Caveat emptor* still ruled in Russia, which the Russians translated as “If I cheat you, it is your fault.”

Before we reached Krasnodar, the Transneft manager invited Angel and me to dinner at his house the next day before I flew back to Moscow. We accepted on Angel’s condition that she could bring her mother.

Our train arrived real early in the morning, so rather than going to a hotel, Angel and I went back to her mother’s house to sleep. The house had only one small bed with one of its sides pushed up against the wall of the large room. I made a comment in passing that it made more sense to pull the bed away from the wall so that each person could climb in and out without disturbing the other.

After doing my best at washing up in the kitchen out of pans of hot water, I headed for bed.

“Don’t lie on the side near the wall. That my spot,” Angel said.

“Alright.”

When she came to bed, she positioned the front of her body in the right angle made by the bed and the wall with her back facing outward. Strange position, but even stranger was she did not move from that position the entire time she slept. She just stayed huddled against the wall.

At mid-afternoon, Angel, her mother and I visited the Transneft manager for dinner. Naturally, he lived in one of the larger houses in Krasnodar, surrounded by a high solid steel fence and protected by two bodyguards. Business in Russia often turned deadly, especially for Russian executives. The manager welcomed us warmly, proudly showed us around his plush house, doted on his pretty ten-year-old daughter and sat us down for a long dinner. As dinner progressed our host drank glass after glass of vodka followed by a glass of water that he poured from a pitcher kept on the floor by his chair. As with most Russian businessmen who believed in the illusion of their own toughness, our host wanted to show us that he could consume large quantities of alcohol without getting too drunk, which was why he drank so much water. Alina’s mother also consumed a fair amount of liquor and turned into an embarrassing and clearly feeble-minded drunk.

Our host likely suffered from an inferiority complex toward Americans as a result of the Soviet Union losing the cold war. Following World War II, communist propaganda touted the Soviet Union as the most desirable place to live as well as the strongest and most technologically advanced nation on earth. Its collapse shocked most Russians by undercutting their beliefs in the

country and themselves. Their vaunted view of their status in the world crashed to that of inhabitants of a third-world nation distinguished only by its nuclear arsenal. Unable to dispute the demise of their empire at the hands of America, Russians rationalized that as individuals they were still tougher than Americans; that is, they could drink more, suffer longer and cheat better.

On the other hand, perhaps like girls, they had lived lies so long that they could not recognize the trash heap of history on which their nation had landed. The Transneft manager proclaimed that Russia would soon catch up and surpass America now that communism was dead. He sounded delusional to me. A nation without the rule of law, where crime paid all the time and honesty never proved best was doomed to muddle along as a banana republic dependent on loans from the International Monetary Fund. Once Russia no longer posed a nuclear threat as a result of warhead dismantling and the wholesale looting of maintenance funds and new parts needed to keep its missiles functioning, the loans would decrease dramatically leaving Russia's tenuous economy even worse off. Of course, I kept my thoughts to myself and wished his country a speedy recovery.

When the time arrived to catch my flight back to Moscow, our host sent Angel and me to the airport in his chauffeur driven black Mercedes, the car of choice for Russian executives and racketeers. Angel gave me a care package of cookies and sweets, we kissed and hugged good-bye, I boarded the airplane and Angel went back to the dinner party.

#### Devil or Angel

In Moscow, I began making arrangements for taking Angel to America for ten days during the end of January. Since bright lights, glitz and showgirls thrilled her, I suggested a trip to Las Vegas that she happily agreed to, but I don't think she believed it would happen—Russian pessimism.

Work included arranging for the security of a couple of high level executives from a Fortune 100 company who were scheduled to visit St. Petersburg and Moscow. We made the appropriate contribution to the local police so they would escort the executives from one point to another without stopping for red lights and post guards outside their hotel rooms. A little extreme by my thinking, but American executives always believe themselves more important than they are.

Another case involved a Western investment bank that sunk large sums of its clients' money into a poorly run Moscow based conglomerate. Investment bankers often push through deals that make little economic sense because they receive their commission upfront long before a transaction goes south. In the case of the Moscow conglomerate, the investment bank wanted to justify losing its clients' funds with an after-the-fact report from Kroll that the investment bank had actually made a wise investment because the Moscow conglomerate had a reputation for effective management and was politically well connected. Such, of course, was a lie.

The Moscow business community knew the conglomerate operated with little regard for standard business practices and the conglomerate's appearance of growth resulted from it borrowing money to buy up unrelated businesses whose income was then added to the conglomerate's revenues. Solid growth occurs when a business increases its income by selling more goods or services, not by buying up other companies. The conglomerate also blatantly violated accounting principals by transferring the assets from one company to another at the chairman's directions in a duplicitous effort to bolster shareholder value of a particular company owned by the conglomerate when that company was seeking additional investments. The investment bank had stupidly failed to conduct such due diligence before investing its clients'

funds. The bank's managers blew up over our report of their failure and tried to pressure us into changing it, but we stuck by the facts and lost the bank as a future customer.

In a third case, Kroll electronically swept an American executive's apartment for listening devices. We did a lot of this on a regular basis but usually in a company's offices where sensitive business discussions occurred. In this case, we found listening devices implanted in the walls through out the apartment. The executive could not hold a secret conversation anywhere in his apartment. The Russia agency most likely responsible was the F.S.B. because in recent years its focus had shifted from politics to economic espionage. The executive decided to move.

A couple of weeks before Angel and I left for America, my Russian tutor from New York and her best friend arrived in Moscow. Both were born in the Soviet Union and both immigrated to New York when they were around ten. They continued to visit their relatives in Russia and had grown into twenty-year-old amalgams of both cultures. Naturally, I gushed to them about Angel and how I thought she might be the one. They listened politely. Both had always thought it strange that a middle-aged man like me never married, so I expected them to wish me good luck. They said nothing until I showed them her picture, then they went ballistic in unison. "You idiot! She's a whore playing you for a fool. Two years from now you will see that it was all planned. All she wants is a green card. She will say anything; do anything to get to America."

"How do you know that? You never met her," I weakly said, taken aback by their reaction, especially because I knew they always told me the truth as they saw it.

"Look at her you fool. Can't you see it? Look at the picture. Look at that hair, she must iron it daily." These two girls were young and pretty but often brutal; however, they always had my interests at heart.

“I don’t understand,” I said a little bewildered. “So her hair is a little burned.”

“Yea, like she stuck her head in a pail of beach. Look, we know what we are talking about. We know how Russians and Americans think. Romance between the two doesn’t work. The mindsets, the beliefs and understandings are too different. Neither of us will seriously date an American guy because one wouldn’t know how to deal with us.”

“There is something to that,” I sarcastically joked. “The moment you two moved into my apartment you immediately dropped your suitcases and started going through all the closets, draws and cupboards.”

“Very funny, Roy! But this is serious. Listen, there are pretty young girls in Russia, like your Angel, think of them as a distinct class, they care about nobody but themselves. They can act, cry, pretend and will do anything to get what they want, which is money and out of Russia. They have no dignity or self-respect and are willing to take it up-the-ass from whomever pays them enough. America has the same type of girls. You call them “white trash” or “trailer park trash” or plain “ho.” You don’t have to talk to them, you can tell just by looking at them. Well this Angel of yours is Russian trash, but you can’t see it because you grew up in America. We however can.”

This hurt. I had known these two for a couple of years and respected their insights, especially concerning Russia, and often lusted after their bodies. I knew they worried about my making a real stupid mistake, but I thought them wrong—Angel had a good heart. She deserved a chance at a better life, and I was going to give it to her.

A few days after my friends left for New York, my lesbian boss from London arrived with cash, as she always did, for paying off various officials, to negotiate another six-month contract with me and to provide some useless suggestions for running the business. As the

European coordinator for the firm, Tiedemann visited Moscow and the other European operations in Paris, Frankfurt and Johannesburg every two months—nice vacation spots. All the country managers dreaded her visits, not just because of her Nazi personality, but her dumb and dangerous decisions. For example, at the end of Kroll's fiscal year, she violated accounting regulations by attributing expenses incurred in 1999 to the year 2000 in order to falsely inflate the Moscow office's profit for 1999. At the time, Kroll was in negotiations to sell the company to the Blackstone Group, so a lie about profits in Russia increased the sales price for Kroll, which benefited all the officers holding Kroll stock, such as Tiedemann. She also violated Russian tax codes by filing perjured documents with the Russian Government in which Kroll falsely claimed that the Moscow office functioned only as a marketing representative of the London office. It did a lot more, such as provide intelligence and security services in Russia. Tiedemann also refused to eliminate Kroll's practice in Russia of violating the United States Foreign Corrupt Practices Act by paying public officials for information available only to the federal, regional or local governments and then selling that information to Kroll's clients.

The Foreign Corrupt Practices Act applied to Kroll because it was an American firm and to Tiedemann who was a U.S. Citizen. On her periodic trips to Moscow, she carried thousands of U.S. dollars and at other times sent cash by Western Union to maintain the office's slush fund for paying government officials for information and security services. On one of the many times I objected to the practice, she said that as long as she got the British girl or Russian investigators in the office to make the actual payments, she did not need to worry—that of course was wrong. The Act reaches any American making or facilitating such payments. I couldn't understand how a company that employed so many former police officers, intelligence agents and prosecutors could run its operations this way unless no one higher up knew about Tiedemann's actions.



## Imagination

Angel sounded excited over the telephone about our upcoming trip to New York City and Las Vegas and would book a flight to arrive in Moscow the day before we left.

“Why don’t you come a few days earlier so that we can spend some more time together?” I suggested.

“I can’t Roy. Me and Mom have found an apartment we want to buy, but I am afraid the sellers will cheat us. We have to make sure all the paper work is done correctly, and my mom needs me to help her.”

That made sense, so I didn’t complain. “Alright, I understand how important the apartment is to you.”

“I miss you Roy and can’t wait to be with you.”

“And I love you,” I sincerely replied.

On January 19, 2000, Angel and I flew to New York City. Abroad the plane, I gave her a few tips on American manners.

“If you bump into someone, just say excuse me or I’m sorry. Don’t just ignore the person as they do in Russia. And whatever you do, don’t push someone just because they are in your way. It could cause a fight in America.” Often times, Russians in a hurry just bulldoze other people out of their way without an apology and more miraculously without a fight. The people just put up with someone pushing them aside or banging a suitcase into their knees while they sit in a subway car. The Russians doing the assaulting don’t give a damn about others, and the assaulted persons don’t believe they have any rights to defend or just fear that the batterer, often girls, have connections.

“I understand,” she somewhat patronizingly said with her mischievous grin.

“This is important,” I said a little over protectively. “Many people carry guns in America and people have been shot over such slights. If you anger someone in New York City, you know I’ll be the one to get shot trying to protect you.”

“Oh,” she smiled sarcastically, mussing the hair on the top of my head, “you are a hero protecting your Angel.”

“Okay, okay, just try to remember to act civil and say ‘excuse me.’”

“Yes Roy.”

“Oh, and if you get lost or need any type of help, find a policeman.”

“Why would I want a policeman?” she asked with surprise.

“Because unlike Russia, in America they will help, especially you since you are a foreigner and a beautiful girl.”

“You think I am beautiful?” she smiled waiting for the answer she wanted.

“You know you are beautiful, just look in the mirror.”

“I hope I am. Remember that Russian philosopher I told you whose book change my life?”

“The one about karma?”

“Yes. Lazarev says when you get up in the morning and go to bed at night to say over and over something positive about your life. He also warns not to criticize or degrade yourself or others, avoid the negative down path.”

“What do you mean, ‘negative down path’?”

“Negative emotions don’t give to you what you want, they bring only what you don’t want. If every time you repeat to yourself why you can’t have a subject of your dreams, you never get this. Start to talk to yourself by saying why you may have what you want.

Concentrate what do you want to have but not on what you don't want. Many people knowing what they don't want, but very few knowing what they want."

"Sounds like good advice for some, the power of positive thinking, but I think I would rather know the truth then make up an illusion."

"Why you need the truth?"

"Without the truth you can't make an accurate decision. You will end up doing something that will cause more harm then the good that positive thinking provides."

"You need the God," she self-assuredly said.

"So what do you tell yourself every day?"

"That God is good, and I am beautiful."

A little narcissistic, I thought, but then again her looks were her ticket. "Anyway, if you need help, go to a policeman. They will not try to take advantage of you or make you pay a bribe. They may ask you out for a date, but will not extort money from you and will help you."

"This is strange to think of a policeman as someone who will help and not hurt you," she mulled, trying to grasp the concept.

"It's America, Angel. The police are paid a decent salary, and there is a special department that investigates police corruption, which is not corrupt itself. Besides, most cops work as cops because they want to help people."

"That is good."

"Oh, and above all else never, never try to bribe any policeman or government official or you will end up in jail."

"You are kidding? If you do not pay how do you get them to do anything?"

“Well, except for cops and firemen, it is sometimes difficult to get officials to do their job, but you can’t bribe them, unless the official is a President, such as Billy-Bob Clinton. I think he would like you. You are much better looking than Monica.” At which point Angel proceeded to hit me multiple times on the arm, only in part good-naturedly. We began wrestling, a habit we frequently pursued in public and private. She was very strong for a girl. I had the advantage in upper body strength, but her legs were more powerful than mine. But Angel’s physical prowess had deep weaknesses. Once during a pillow fight, I put the pillow over her face and she freaked out. She also went nuts if while playing around I put her in a chokehold—memories of her past. A few of the passengers on the plane looked askance at us, but we ignore them and went on wrestling since we were having fun.

During the flight, she drew my portrait, which wasn’t bad. She seemed ideal to me: a model, dancer, singer and artist all rolled up in one beautiful and smart package. She also spent time writing in Russian in a composition notebook that I assumed she kept as a diary.

Before going through customs at Kennedy Airport, I advised her, “If an officer gives you a hard time, tell him you are traveling with your boyfriend who is an American lawyer.”

“Why?”

“Bureaucrats in America generally want to avoid any problems and lawyers mean just that. Here, the individual has specific rights under the laws, which most lawyers know but average Americans don’t. Bureaucrats take advantage of the public’s ignorance to try to make their jobs easier by pressuring people into doing things that people have the right not to or by just acting arbitrarily. Bureaucrats aren’t supposed to do either but they do. However, if a lawyer is involved, bureaucrats know they will just create a lot of problems for themselves by not going by the book.”

Sure enough, one official started asking Angel lots of questions until she pointed to me standing in the waiting area watching the two and mentioned my occupation. The official remarked in surprise, “a lawyer!” and passed her through. Often times the lawyer routine works in America but never in Russia. Only money talks there.

The moment we walked into my apartment in New York, she want to go out, I wanted to sleep after fifteen hours of traveling. Angel insisted, and as usual got her way. She possessed energy in abundance and the stubbornness of an iron will. I wondered whether anyone ever successfully opposed her desires. We went to a trendy Westside restaurant populated with New York’s young, arrogant and greedy where the prices shocked her.

“Why is it so expensive here?” she asked. “These meals cost what university instructors in my town are paid in a month!”

“People are paid a lot more in America, so by comparison the prices aren’t so bad.”

“Not in Krasnodar, most people can’t afford to go to a restaurant, even once a year. My mother has never even been to a restaurant.”

“I thought when your mother was young she traveled around the Soviet Union and Europe as a dancer. Remember that picture you showed me of her and you as a little girl in Germany. She must have eaten in restaurants.”

“Under the old system back then she could but not now. Only the criminals and their friends can afford to regularly go to restaurants and discos.”

“You go to discos all the time with your friends.” I said.

“That’s different.”

“How so?”

“We will talk about that later,” which was one of Angel’s favorite tactics for not answering a question along with pretending not to hear it in the first place or saying “You wouldn’t understand,” or going into a monologue on some tangential point. Most Russians have an uncanny ability, which Angel had in abundance, to talk and talk without getting to the point in the hope their listener eventually forgot or gave up on the original question that started the soliloquy.

After dinner, we went to the Sony Imax to see “Fantasia 2000,” which made Angel giggle and smile like a Cheshire cat. The huge screen wowed her, and the Disney characters were as real for her as they were for child. “It’s like virtual reality. I feel I am inside the movie,” she gushed.

Over the next few days before leaving for Las Vegas, I tried to show Angel a few of the different occupations she could realistically pursue in America by introducing her to friends who worked in modeling, acting, rock ‘n’ roll and physical training. I wanted to help her get out of lap dancing and make her wish come true by finding in America the occupation meant for her. Everyone has a first best destiny, and I wanted to help Angle find hers.

Biology theorizes that at birth an infant’s brain is arranged in such a fashion that best suits the child for a particular career. Psychology can assist in determining that career by measuring at least sixteen different aptitudes that a person may possess at birth. The aptitudes aren’t learned; they are hard-wired into the brain. Most people have four or five aptitudes and most jobs require a similar number. The trick for a man, and I believed for girls, was to work at a career that used his aptitudes and, therefore, best fitted the structures of his brain. That career would be a man’s first-best destiny. If he ignored such a career, feelings of boredom, uselessness and that he should be doing something else would haunt him all the days of his life.

Nearly everybody realizes as a child or teenager what fascinates them so much that they dream of making it their life's work. Unfortunately, parents or environments may convince or scare young adults into forsaking their destiny. Many turn away from their dreams for what they perceive as a safer, more likely path to a materially comfortable or affluent life. They fail to realize that by pursuing their dreams, the money, security and status will come as though by magic. It's only common sense that when people work at activities they love, they will more likely achieve success than pursuing a compromise dictated by their fears. They will also find greater satisfaction than toiling at a disliked job just for the money. Besides, those who deny their dreams will find their dreams haunting them throughout their lives. A television program, book, individual or some other trigger will time and time again remind folks who missed their first-best destiny of what they threw away. By middle age, such persons will feel uneasy about their lives as though something is not right and perhaps they should have gone for their dreams instead. And the regret of failing to pursue what they wanted will plague them everyday. No amount of alcohol, drugs, therapy, sex, religion, eastern philosophy or mysticism will assuage the misery—only death relieves that pain. I didn't want that to happen to Angel as it did me, and I knew that with my contacts and knowledge I could help her reach her dreams.

Angel and I first met with my martial arts instructor and friend. Mark worked as the sports trainer in a college athletic department. Angel loved athletics, graduated with a teaching degree from a college devoted to sports and taught aerobics in Krasnodar. Her mother also taught aerobics and worked as a trainer at the college Angel attended. The field of physical fitness looked like a possible fit with Angel's aptitudes. In Russia, unfortunately, anyone who worked as a teacher or trainer lived in poverty. Only crime and sex paid in the former Soviet Union. But in America, Angel's love of sports and exercise could provide her the opportunity to

live a middle-class lifestyle or better, if she wished, by teaching or training. Mark briefed her on the industry, including the different jobs immediately available, their requirements, salary and the long term potential that included training movie stars and marketing her own fitness video. Mark even offered to use his connections to help Angel find a job, but she decided not to pursue that avenue.

“I think I want to do modeling more than teach exercise. I know I am a little old for a model but I want to try before it is too late.”

“Fine,” I said. “We will have dinner tomorrow night with my friend Cindi who was a model, rock ‘n’ roll singer and now works as an actress. She will have lots of suggestions and know exactly how to approach the business.”

Cindi brought to dinner the owner of an agency that employed models and actors for corporate events. The two briefed Angel about the different areas of the modeling and acting business, how to go about breaking into both and what pit falls to avoid. They advised that pursuing a modeling or entertainment career required perseverance and hard work that often entailed a second job as a waitress or bartender. The agency owner offered to use Angel as a model when she returned to America. I could see Angel’s brain going to work, trying to figure out how to take advantage of the knowledge and opportunity my friends offered.

After dinner, she firmly told me, “I want to come back here and try to become a model but I must hurry. I don’t want to waste the time. I wish I didn’t spend those two years after the institute doing my dissertation. I just wasted my time.”

“We’ll come back, don’t worry,” I said.

“But how can I get a work visa?”

“Let me work on it.”



“Okay, but if I can’t come to America then I will go work in somewhere else. Maybe Japan or Europe.” I knew what that meant—more lap dancing.

After meeting with my friends, Angel surprised me by insisting on going to lap dance clubs to check out the job prospects. The clubs in New York City that served alcohol only allow the girls to strip to their tong panties.

Angel adamantly said, “I don’t want to do striptease and I don’t want anyone to touch me. It is dirty work and I do not like it.” I learned in the vernacular of the lap-dancing industry, “striptease” meant taking everything off.

“I thought you never did striptease and no one ever touched you?” I probed a seeming inconsistency.

“I didn’t but I know girls who did. I don’t like it.”

So we visited Scores and Flash Dancers, the classiest, assuming such a description makes sense of New York City’s gentlemen clubs, as they are euphemistically called. The girls go to a customer’s table and ask whether he or she wants a dance. Angel said many of the dancers she worked with in Mexico preferred stripping for girls rather than guys. During a song a girl wiggles out of her long evening dress leaving her naked except for a tong panty. She then undulates various intimate parts of her body in close proximity to the customer’s face. Management allegedly forbids the lap dancers to touch anyone, but many rub their knees and asses against the customer’s crouch. The customer, however, can’t touch the girls and management apparently strictly enforces this through the many bouncers with sloping foreheads stationed about the room. For one song of about three minutes the girl receives \$20 cash. Or if the customer wants, the girl will sit and talk with him, make him feel she’s interested in him, for

a fee of course. There were also VIP rooms that cost hundreds of dollars, but what went on in them, I couldn't tell.

Angel asked more questions of the girls at these joints than she did of my friends who briefed her on fitness, acting and modeling jobs. She was especially interested in how much the strippers made a night: average \$600 to \$800, which shocked me. A normal workweek meant \$3000 to \$4000 pure profit since these babes didn't pay taxes. Perhaps I should have been born a girl.

Angel again surprised me with "It will be my second job instead of working as a waitress or bartender. I will make more money and not have to worry about being poor. I can only do this while I am young so I must do it now."

"But if you work as a waitress or bartender, it's only part time, which allows you more time for your dream of modeling or acting."

"Me and Mom are poor, and I need to save up at least \$50,000, so we can feel safe in Russia. I can only do that while I'm young."

"Things work differently here Angel. To succeed in modeling or acting requires a lot of work and being able to change your work schedule around. From what the girls said, these clubs don't allow that. Also, you'll have a better chance of securing a long-term occupation by concentrating on it now when you are young."

"No, I will do the dancing until I saved up enough."

"Okay," I relented. "But once your legitimate career begins to move or you saved your \$50,000, then you can devote fulltime to modeling or acting and forget this unpleasant lap dancing."

“It is art,” she quickly protested. “When I dance I go some place else where I think only of the movement of my body.”

“Well that is one way to look at it,” I diplomatically said, wondering how taking off her clothes for money so that strange men could get excited rose to the level of art.

“If I come back here to work, I don’t want to be dependent on anyone. I need my own money.”

I wasn’t happy. “Angel, sure these lap dancing jobs pay a lot of money, but working five nights a week from 8 PM to four in the morning is going to take a toll on your looks and health. Look at this place,” as I gestured with my arm to the main room at Flash Dancers. “It’s dark, dingy, full of smoke, naked girls and drooling losers who never went with a pretty girl in their lives. Think also of the impact on your psyche.”

“Oh, don’t worry Roy,” she once again mockingly said with her arm over my shoulders. “I am a strong girl.”

Well at least she wouldn’t turn into a financial burden like some of my prior girlfriends. I warned her, “Whatever you do, don’t tell anyone in America you are working as a lap dancer. It may be acceptable in Russia, but here they might think you are a prostitute.”

“I not a prostitute,” she retorted so quickly it startled me—boy, she hated hookers.

“I know you aren’t. Just that people might think that. Even though you will be making more money than most Americans, they will still look down on you. This is not Russia where only money counts. Here certain jobs are considered illegitimate: that is, low level, and people will look at you as low class and a bad person. They will not want to help you in your career.”

“I will remember that.”

## Viva Las Vegas

After four days in New York City, we headed for Las Vegas. Angel made entries in her composition notebook while we waited for our flight and on the plane.

Flying over the desert, she said with disappointment, “I don’t see anything. I don’t think there is much out here.” I assumed she thought the western part of the United States was like the northeast: one vast sprawl of buildings and houses. But then the plane turned to land and she saw Las Vegas out her window.

“Oh! There it is! Look at all the buildings out here in the middle of nowhere. It’s great,” she excitedly said.

We checked in at the Paris Hotel that has a huge casino with the ceiling painted like the noonday sky. It took Angel a few trips through the casino to realize the ceiling was not the real sky. Such childish confusion and wonder endeared her to me.

Our first night we had dinner with a married couple from New York City that were friends of mine for years. They recently semi-retired to Las Vegas. The wife ran an antique business but previously worked as a political operative in New York, and her husband once served as Chief of Police for Manhattan and Brooklyn and the manager of security for one of America’s richest men. They lent us their video camera, which Angel quickly took command of and gave us tickets to the more popular performances that featured Las Vegas showgirls—Angel’s dream.

Neither Angel nor I gambled, so we spent our time touring the casinos and Las Vegas attractions. I looked the ultimate tourist, lugging the video camera and two still cameras slung around my neck so that Angel could record her trip for prosperity. At her direction, I took pictures of her with various Las Vegas sites in the background. Angel preferred the video

camera in front of which she played hostess to her imagined audience of fans. With the tape rolling, she droned on interminably in a travel log type monologue without saying anything imaginative as she walked and pointed out various attractions. Her monologue did pick up when she came across a nude statue of a man on a pedestal before which she made some sexual gestures and tried to enlist my participation, without success. These rather crude antics bothered me because they looked like what low-class, uneducated girls from trailer parks did, but I let it go. In addition to play-acting the travel hostess, the little girl in Angel made sure to go on as many amusement rides as possible. But at night the career woman took over for the little girl as Angel focused intently on the topless shows we attended.

After the first showgirls extravaganza, she exclaimed, “That was great. Those girls were so beautiful and glamorous and the way they walked,” as she imitated them. “I want to do that. I have always dreamed of it. And I know now you don’t need big tits to do it.” Angel usually referred to her breasts as though they were assets that she did not have enough of but also rationalized, they stayed firm longer with the nipples erect.

“Well, like I said, ‘America is the place where dreams can come true.’ I’ll call some of the casinos to find out how someone becomes a show girl.”

“That would be great. Let’s go to one of the gentlemen clubs. I want to see what they are like and whether I would want to work in any,” she added.

That I didn’t like. I kept hoping she’d focus on the less tawdry end of show biz, but Angel always came back to the lap-dancing clubs, wanting to check out the employment opportunities. Frankly, I began to feel troubled in these places. How many naked girls can a man look at in a short period of time without getting bored? Also the clubs’ commercialization of vicarious sexual thrills began to somewhat repulse me. Everyone knew the girls in these

joints didn't give a damn about the men but only wanted their money, just as Tina Turner sang about in the song "Private Dancer." So then why would a man go to these strip clubs: to engage in a form of self-delusion that the girls really liked him or in the hope of finding a girl to go home with him for a few hundred dollars? Even the rent-a-sex reason made no sense to me. I always thought sexual relations matter only when two people honestly cared and were mutually attracted to each other, and that human complexity required emotional as well as metaphysical connections for sex to achieve true satisfaction beyond the purely sensual or ego gratification.

I replied to Angel's request, "Aren't you tired of these clubs? After all you worked in them in Cyprus, Mexico and now you want to work in them here?"

"It's my business. I want to see whether I can do it here."

We went to the "Paradise," which an American executive in Moscow said was the better of the lot. The club's manager was impressed with Angel's height and told her to come audition when she came back but she would need a license from the county to work. Like Flash Dancers in New York City, the girls stripped to their tongs and the customers could not touch.

Once again, Angel made it a point to tell me she didn't want to work in the all-nude clubs or where the men touched the girls. "They were dirty. I don't like dancing naked or men touching me."

"They were dirty," I repeated using her past tense. "I thought all the clubs you worked in you only stripped to your panties and that the men could not touch you."

She hesitated and only answered part of the question, "Sometimes a man would touch me, and I would call the bouncer over." I didn't press the part about naked dancing.

Also like Flash Dancers and most of the other lap-dancing clubs in America, this club was run by organized crime, which didn't bother Angel a bit. I couldn't figure out why.

The following day, I contacted the manager in charge of entertainment at the MGM Grand. He told me that many of the Las Vegas shows were put together in New York City and suggested how to find the producers there that were recruiting. For shows organized in Las Vegas, he referred me to a publication that ran recruiting notices. I told him a little about Angel, and he advised that before going to any auditions, she needed to learn basic dance steps and taking singing lessons would also help, but given her height, she should have no problem finding a job as a showgirl.

In response to the news, Angel said determinedly, “Now I must come back here.” Las Vegas was nice for a vacation but to live there didn’t thrill me. But if Angel wanted to work there, then I would live there with her. I was sure I could find a job, or maybe just end up managing Angel’s legitimate career and keep her from the spiraling decline into the dead end of easy money in the sex industry.

We met my married friends for dinner again. The wife wanted to give Angel a necklace but she would not take it. She explained to me later she feared it was a trick that my friends would want something from her in return. I chalked it up to different cultures and tried to explain to Angel that most Americans give gifts from the heart and my friends considered her a friend because she was with me. But Angel didn’t get it. Perhaps she was more scared of the world than she let on.

After dinner, the former police chief took me aside as he usually did when he thought I was heading for trouble. “Be careful of that girl. She is not everything she pretends to be.”

“There are probably parts of her past I would rather not know, but she has had a hard life, and I can help her.” I said.

“I told you this once before, you’re not responsible for anyone but yourself.”

“I remember. It was concerning another Russian girl. I will watch out.” But I didn’t really think Angel could do me any harm.

The Chief added, “You know that stuff you told me about her reluctance to kiss when you first met her, well, hookers don’t like to kiss on the lips either for fear of losing their business objectivity. I don’t think she’s one but go easy.”

“A friend of mine in Moscow said the same about Russian girls in general. They’ll let you fondle any part of their body but fear losing their hearts with a kiss. Does that mean all young Russian girls are hookers?” We laughed.

Everyday since we left Moscow, Angel called her mother to check on the status of their efforts to purchase an apartment. One day, Angel got off the phone all smiles and happy.

“A miracle has happen. I and mom own an apartment. It great, our own apartment at last with a bathroom, two bedrooms and hot water in a safe part of town.”

I congratulated her. As a middle-class American, I couldn’t imagine it a miracle, but from her reaction, she clearly did.

“How much did it cost?” I asked.

“Twenty-four thousand dollars, and we still have to renovate it. It needs new kitchen and bathroom, the walls and ceilings must be painted and the floor redone, and on top of that, we will have to buy new furniture. A lot of work and expenses yet.”

“Let me know if I can help.”

“You are an American man and not used to hard work. It would strain your muscles too much. Mom and I can do it.” Her remarks didn’t insult me because they were typical of third-world girls. Most Russian, Latin and Asian babes believe the Feminazis emasculated all American men. But that’s generally true only for guys in the government, media, education or



living on the Westside of Manhattan. Most girls don't realize that the capacity for brutality of third-world men exists only when they have more power than others. The real viciousness of American men comes out when they are the underdogs with their backs against the wall. In time, Angel will learn a few men still exist in America.

Before we left Las Vegas, I bought a Barbie Doll for the daughter of the Transneft official we had met on the train from Sochi. Russian dolls couldn't match Barbie although real live Russian girls did. I knew the daughter would like it and asked Angel to give it to her when she returned to Krasnodar.

### Could This Be Magic

On the plane back to New York City, Angel seemed deep in thought much of the time and wrote a lot in her composition notebook.

In New York before we caught the Phantom of the Opera, we ate at another trendy Westside restaurant.

Angel looked at me in an inquiring way, squinted her eyes and said, "There is something interfering here. I sense it."

My marital arts training spun me around in my chair looking for trouble, but there was none there. "What are you talking about?"

"I think someone put a curse on you."

"Only my mother, but thank goodness she's dead," I only half-jokingly said.

"I'm serious Roy. Your secretary at Kroll did something. I could tell the way she looked at you in the office. She liked you, didn't she?"

"We dated for a while, but she's planning to marry this Australian guy who is visiting her in Moscow."

“Did she ever prepare a meal for you?”

“No. We went to restaurants. But her mother prepares my meals in the office during the workweek. Why?”

“Now I know what is going on,” Angel declared.

“What are you talking about?”

“Your secretary wants to keep you. She does not want anyone else to have you, so she has used her mother to cast a spell on you.” Oh brother, not this black magic stuff again. I didn’t believe in it, but Angle did, so I indulged her.

“Why would she want me when she has someone else?”

“Life is uncertain in Russia, and some girls want to keep more than one man tied to them, so if they lose one, they will still have someone to help them. Russian girls will cast a spell so that the man will only want them and not go out with another girl. The man will feel depressed and not want to work.”

“I feel that all the time.”

“Stop Roy! This is dangerous. There are powerful forces at work here. Your secretary cast her spell by putting some of her menstrual flow into the food her mother prepared for you.”

That went well with my spaghetti. “Wouldn’t her mother know about that?”

“Her mother probably helped her. We Russian daughters are the product of our mothers, not our fathers. Our fathers live their own lives while the mothers and daughters stick together.”

“Nice society,” I sarcastically remarked. “So right now, I am under my secretary’s curse that will prevent us from getting closer and cause arguments like the one we had last night when you fainted because of the emotions welling up inside of you. Did her curse cause you to faint?”

“No. She’s using black magic against you, not me. That made you say things that hurt me and caused me to faint. She wants an emotional crack to occur between us.”

“All I said was if you’re not happy, we can end the relationship. You got to see New York and Las Vegas. That’s a plus.”

“I don’t want to go into that now.”

“Fine, but how do you know she used black magic?”

“Black magic is used to do something to another person. It’s very dangerous because it will come back to you many times stronger unless you protect yourself. White magic is to protect yourself from harm that others want to cause you. So when we get to Moscow, I will take you to a white magic man who will protect you from your secretary’s spell.”

Visions of a medicine man dancing and chanting went through my head. Naturally, I didn’t believe any of this hocus-pocus, but it might turn into an interesting story, so I agreed.

“Okay, anything that may help, I will try.”

Angel loved the Phantom of the Opera, but I didn’t understand it. She tried to explain the middle-aged Phantom’s sacrifice for the beautiful, young artist, but it made no sense to me.

“Why would the Phantom sacrifice himself for her when she loved a man her own age?”

“Because he loved her and wanted to help her.”

“Well, whatever you say, but I still don’t understand.”

As she put her arm over my shoulders, she said, “My bewilder American lawyer. You will someday.”

After the show, we met my rock ‘n’ roll buddy at the recording studio previously known as the “Power Station.” Pat had moved from playing lead guitar for Meat Loaf to producing. When we arrived, he was mixing a record for a male singer, but both of them willingly took a

break to show Angel around the studio. Such is the power of pretty girls. The two also briefed Angel on the type of jobs available in the music business for backup singers and dancers. Pat offered to hook her into some auditions when she came back. Afterward Angel said that if she came back to America to work, she wanted to concentrate on modeling—not acting, singing or dancing. Fine, the choice was hers, but modeling seemed the less likely chance of success given her age, now 24.

Angel and I spent ten days and nights together in America with a few arguments caused by misunderstandings. She was prone to crying rather than getting angry during our disputes, but I never knew whether her tears were real. By the end of our stay, she clearly wanted to come back and work in America, and I clearly wanted to stay with her. Although her desire to work as a lap dancer still bothered me, I rationalized it wouldn't take long to earn the \$50,000 nest egg for her and her mother. Besides, once her legitimate career took off, she wouldn't have the time for stripping. Any suspicions about her occupation extending to other areas of the sex industry dissipated, in part, because she was so awful in bed. I've dated a few girls, and Angel rated the worst when it came to sex, so I concluded no one would ever pay for her services in bed.

She insisted on a purely mechanical routine to warm her up—no spontaneity, no creativity wanted. Much to my surprise, she didn't even like having oral sex performed on her—a rarity for girls. And anal sex was taboo because of a bad experience that she refused to elaborate on. She called warming her up “making me ready,” which allowed her to orgasm quickly during intercourse. Making her ready started with a little kissing of the lips, then the suitor moved his mouth to her ears, which she rarely cleaned, where he waited for a few moans as the signal to play with her hair and lightly kiss her closed eyes. After a few more moans, onto her breasts, which tasted awful no matter how long or hot a shower she took, and she took

scalding showers. Her breasts seemed impregnated with the foul odors of the clubs in which she had spent so much time dancing. When ready, she would curl up into a fetal position during intercourse with her knees between her and the guy as though pushing him away but yet wanting him to stay until she climaxed. She kept her eyes tightly shut all the while and obviously entered a world to herself. There was no feeling of connection with her, no communication of emotions or a shared experience. She concentrated solely on reaching orgasm, which usually took her about five minutes. Then she would lie like a log wanting to stop just when I was warming up. During the entire ritual there was an ever-present bad odor coming from her sex organs. I told her she probably needed to go see a doctor because something was wrong down there. She just ignored it. Sexually, Angel stunk both literally and figuratively, but I still loved her with an emphasis on the compassionate part of love rather than the passionate.

My Russian tutor in New York, whom I talked with over the phone, took exception with my reasoning, though not so brutally this time. She said, “You know it is all about sex. If you really love a person, you will enjoy sex with them much more than you would enjoy better sex with a person you don’t love.”

#### Back in the U.S.S.R. Boy

Back in Moscow, Angel found a person she referred to as a “white magic man” from an advertising weekly regularly delivered to my apartment. I always tossed this shoppers’ guide without looking at it believing it consisted of coupons and the latest sales on consumer products and services. Unlike American shopper guides, this one advertised the services of witches, warlocks, mediums, clairvoyants, diviners and other assorted weirdoes. Apparently Angel was not the only Russian to believe in such mumbo-jumbo. It was obviously a booming business with the vast majority of Russians using “magic people” to attain their heart’s desire. Now I

knew the Russians were nuts, who else would put up with a Czar and the Commies, but magic? Despite my mockery, Angel was serious and insistent on me seeing this guy to remove the curse, so I went along.

On January 31, 2000, after the sun went down in gloomy, snow-covered Moscow, we entered a shabby office in a dingy apartment building in the southeastern part of the city. The magic-man looked in his thirties, tall, sharp features with black hair. He escorted us into a small dimly lit room with a table covered by a black cloth on which sat a black candle in an ugly and ornate brass holder. I couldn't quite make out the figures on the candle holder. The magic-man closed the door behind us and motioned that we sit in the two chairs with our backs to the door, directing me to sit on Angel's right. The magic-man sat behind the table facing us and lit the candle. If this guy was a white magician, why all the black accouterments, so I turned to Angel, "I thought this guy practiced white magic?"

"Shush, I'll explain later," she said. Now I had heard that from her before and didn't expect any subsequent explanation, but, if this childish ritual made her happy, then fine with me.

The magic-man, whom I now assumed deluded himself a practitioner of the black arts, spoke only in Russian, so I did not understand what was said but as usual relied on Angel's translation. The magic-man listened to Angel and then melted some wax in a small can, waited for it to cool, and then gave his analysis. Angel translated that the magic-man found a mild spell placed on me by my secretary to make me want her and no other woman. Angel triumphantly added, "You see, I was right. I know about these things." Why wasn't I surprised with the sorcerer's conclusion?

The magic-man continued to explain that to exorcise the spell; he needed a photograph of me from the front that showed me in a receptive position. Angel explained a picture in which I looked straight at the camera without crossed arms so that I would be open to the exorcism.

I looked at her puzzled. What difference did my arms make or which way I looked in the photograph? She read my expression and said, “Don’t worry, I will pick it out.” Fine, I thought, at least my head doesn’t have to do a 360°.

Angel and the sorcerer made arrangements for her to drop off my photograph for him to cast a protective spell to cancel my secretary’s curse. The black magic-man then wrapped the melted wax in paper and said for me to bury it in the snow when I left. Angel told me to pay him twenty dollars, but when I went to hand him the money, he shrank back as though I was the black magic-man and motioned for me to put it on the table.

Angel explained, “It is dangerous to take money or anything directly from people because someone can use it as a way to put a curse on you.”

“What does he do when he goes shopping for something?”

“Shush!”

Boy, these Russians were superstitious, I thought. No wonder the economy didn’t function with everyone scared to accept money because it might carry a curse dooming them to a fate worse than death. I put the twenty on the table and didn’t even think about shaking hands goodbye. Angel and I went outside into the darkness where she told me to bury the melted wax in a snow bank.

“Why a snow bank? It’s only going to melt leaving the wax for the street sweeper, if they have one out here. Shouldn’t I bury it in some deep, dark forest?”

“You Americans! Just do what the magic-man says. We know about these things.” Into the snow bank it went.

Driving back to the office with Angel, I felt immersed in a narcotic fog of feeling good from which crystallized the thought that Angel was all that mattered in my life. Work, career or death didn't concern me—only Angel. I attributed this strange elation and conclusion to my contract with Kroll ending soon. Despite previous negotiations, Kroll decided not to renew my consultancy in order to save money. Fine with me, the work had been interesting although not very challenging, living in Russia was okay, but I could do without dealing with the pathologically insecure lesbo boss in London and her lover in the office. As with most feminazis, who can't act like a guy because they're not and can't act like a girl because they're neutered, these two didn't understand how the world really worked or how to deal with people.

Later in the evening, Angel went through some photographs of me.

“This one will do,” she said with her Cheshire grin as she showed me a photograph of me smiling with my arms at my side.

The following day, she delivered the photograph to the magic-man and warned me, “You must pick up the photograph before the end of seven days. I will be in Krasnodar preparing for my eye operation, so I can't do it for you. It's very important to take the picture before the end of seven days; otherwise, the spell will not work. Have your driver take you, and leave your wallet in the car, but you must go into his office alone.”

“Don't you trust this guy,” I asked little surprised at such precautions.

“I don't trust any Russians,” she emphatically replied.

“Then why don't I take my driver inside with me or a body guard for that matter?”

“No, you mustn't! The magic-man might turn angry, and you don't want that.”



“What’s he going to do, put a curse on me?” I laughed.

“Be careful Roy. You don’t know what you are dealing with here. These magic-men are very powerful in Russia.”

“Okay, I’ll go in alone to make you happy.”

She grinned, mused up my hair and said, “Remember to leave him another twenty dollars.”

“Fine,” thinking this magic business simply wasted my time. “What do I do then with the photograph?” Wondering whether I needed to bury it in the snow again.

Surprisingly she said, “I don’t know. Whatever you want.” Apparently, the magic-man hadn’t thought of it.

Seeing my puzzlement, she quickly added, “Keep it with you.”

The next evening while still in Moscow, Angel and I visited her agent Leo. She wanted to collect some money she thought Leo owed her concerning her work in Mexico. She asked me to wait in another room while she and Leo discussed business. My intuition didn’t like that, but I rationalized they would talk in Russian anyway. After their meeting, Angel seemed relieved, telling me that Leo was going to call her Mexican agent Maria, who had arranged for her to work at The Men’s Club, to find out what happened to some of her money.

“How many agents do you have?” I asked.

“Too many and they all take some of my money. Leo sends girls to Maria in Mexico City and she finds them dancing jobs in the clubs. Leo takes 20% and Maria 15%.”

“How do the clubs make money?”

“Some take a percentage of the girl’s earnings and others make the girl pay the club a set amount to dance each night. The Men’s Club took 15% so for every \$20 dance, Leo got four dollars, Maria three and the club three. But I don’t complain; \$11 a dance for me is good.”

“Time for you to find different work.”

“I dream of modeling. It what I like, but in Russia I am not what they want. Here they only want girls for runway modeling. I do not have thin enough body.”

“Well, as my friend told you in New York, there are many different modeling careers in America, such as fitness modeling that you could do.”

“Yes, it my dream.”

As we walked back to my apartment on February 2<sup>nd</sup>, Candlemas Eve, in the cold and dark along Kutuzovsky Prospect, I asked Angel to marry me. The words jumped out of my mouth without me realizing it—no rehearsal, no running over the exact phrasing and no nervousness. Just lost in a fog again; my will suspended while the rest of me executed some prearranged program.

“Are you serious?” she asked.

“Yes, I am serious,” I said although I didn’t feel serious. I didn’t feel anything.

Angel said nothing; she waited then, “I don’t know. Let me think about it.”

“Okay,” I said as a momentary light flashed through the fog bringing a sense of dread for the results of a terrible mistake heading my way.

As we walked, I remembered, as I so often did, the girl I should have married but didn’t because of a stupid decision of mine. In 1968 the workings of the universe introduced me to Jennifer whom I knew right away was the one, my soul mate. With an open, generous and kind personality, Jennifer made my thoughts loom less menacing on me. She played a great game of

touch football, catching the ball behind her head when necessary and enjoying the roughness. She was tough, more so than Angel, but a genuinely nice person. While smart, at times Jennifer displayed a mind boggling naiveté as when she said she thought the height of the Rocky Mountains in Colorado might block out the moon at night—her favorite object for pondering. Ironically, or I now realize, fatefully the decision not to marry Jennifer sent my life in a direction I wished I never went.

Back then, a college course in Quantum Mechanics and General Relativity had lit a passion in me to delve the mysteries of the universe. The course turned my understanding of the universe upside down. After each class, I felt like Alice in Wonderland—common sense meant nothing. The universe was not as I thought; it thrilled and astonished me. In class, philosophy, science and mysticism met. No theory was outrageous unless based on the mundane understanding of our everyday perceptions. What my five senses had told me all my life was nothing but an illusion. The true nature of the universe was stranger than any tale. I wanted to understand the metaphysics of that nature in scientific rather than intuitive terms, which meant majoring in physics.

I knew that marrying Jennifer would mean settling down into a career in order to meet my obligations to wife and family, and the only career that interested me was one in physics. My wandering days would end. Years later in the 1990s while reading Joseph Campbell, I concluded that fundamental forces had been at work on me in that late sixties' summer. Jennifer appeared in my life with her dark bottomless eyes and black hair to steer me in the direction of understanding the workings of the universe by attracting me into the underworld of intuitive knowledge. She would have set me on a life-long process of carrying understanding from the world of metaphysics to the light of consciousness in the form of the mathematical language of

physics. A worthy vocation, but I didn't marry her, and every day I regretted not following the path Jennifer represented because of my succumbing to fear and pride in deciding to wander eclectically from one endeavor to another that eventually brought me to Angel.

Two nights later over dinner at the Pushkin Restaurant, Angel answered my proposal by agreeing to marry me. Usually, when Angel had asked for time to think before answering a question, she forgot about it, and I would have to prod her for an answer. Either her memory wasn't very good, or she hoped I'd forget having asked the question. Buying time was apparently one of her tactics for bypassing a potential problem. This time, for some reason, I refrained from reminding her about my proposal. Perhaps my unconscious knew something I didn't.

"I will marry you Roy but I want to make some things clear," she said with her innocent smile.

"Fine," I said. "Discussing issues beforehand is always better than waiting for a problem later."

"We will live as husband and wife and you will help me find work in America in my favorite business?"

"Right, Cindi is willing to help you with the modeling. You know my contract with Kroll ends this month, and I plan to go back to America and take you with me. In order to do that, we need to go through certain procedures at the U.S. Embassy. Now they might, although I doubt it, decide not to let you into America. In that case, we can live in Moscow or go to some other country. I said before, I think you are very talented and besides loving you, I want to help you reach your dreams. As a lawyer with an MBA, I can do that. It's common in America for husbands and wives to help each other in not only emotional ways but in material terms and in

their careers. Often two people working together can achieve much more than two people working separately. So I see our marriage as two people who love each other and want to help each other.” Angel just looked blankly. When Russians don’t understand something they don’t say so because it makes them feel humiliated. “Do you understand,” I added.

“I understand,” she sarcastically said with a smile.

“Do you love me Angel?”

She leaned forward with her Cheshire smile, touched my hand and said, “I have special love for you Roy.” In the words of a famous fictional detective, I felt like a toad on a wet rock with a snake looking at the back of my neck. She added, “So you will try to get me papers to work in America?”

“That’s just what I said, and help you in your career like you want. It is all part of our being married.”

“How long will it take for my papers to America?”

“About three months after we marry, maybe shorter.”

“I go back to Krasnodar for my eye operation, so let’s get marry after that.”

“Fine, and since you will have your own career and money in America, I would like a prenuptial that says you will not take my money if we divorce.” She seemed a little surprised at this.

“Why do you want this paper?”

“Because otherwise you could marry me, and after a few years, take a lot of my money through a divorce.”

“You Americans always think about money. What about the feelings of the heart?”

“Just as you are concerned about working in America, I am concerned about not losing a lot of my money.”

“Okay, but you must do everything you can to get me work papers in America, and I want a paper that says you can’t send me out of the America,” she added.

“It’s not up to me to decide whether you could stay in America if we divorced. Immigration authorities make that decision.”

“But I will be able to work?”

“Yes,” I repeated.

“Okay,” she grinned innocently. “Here’s to us and America,” she toasted.

The following day I took Angel to the airport to fly home to Krasnodar. She needed to help her mother renovate their new apartment and undergo laser eye surgery to correct her inability to see people at a distant. She couldn’t stand contacts because after eight hours of working in a smoky club, they irritated her eyes. And glasses she really disliked. Probably because they insulted her vanity and club proprietors rarely hired four-eyed girls, although Angel looked stunning in them. Angel also said she needed to assist in transferring the old house to one of her aunts, which, as any transaction in Russia, still required long hours, numerous approvals and multiple stamps and papers all invented to maintain full employment in the Soviet Union that no longer existed. The aunt, a sister of Angel’s mother, lived with her husband and daughter in the far east of Russia on Sakhalin Island. They wanted to move to Krasnodar because on Sakhalin not only jobs were scarce but also food—people were starving while the criminals running the government stole millions. Angel said that compared to Sakhalin, Krasnodar looked like the land of prosperity. It surprised me to hear that Angel and her mother had relatives. She

never mentioned them before, so I assumed her and her mother were a family of two only.

Angel said her mother had two sisters but only stayed in contact with the one in Sakhalin.

Before boarding the plane, Angel reminded me “Don’t forget to pick up the photograph from the magic man before the end of the week or the spell will not work. And hurry with the paper work, so we can get married in Krasnodar soon.”

“I will get it done as fast as possible, but my job doesn’t end until the last week of February.” I didn’t understand her rush.

Once again she asked, “How long after we are married will I get my visa to America?”

“As I said before, the visa could take up to three months.”

“I hope it goes faster, but its okay, since it will take me three months to recover from my eye surgery.”

“Three months!” I said in surprise. “I thought it only took a week or so. That’s what they advertise, even in Russia.”

“No,” she said with her innocent smile. “My doctor says that for three months I can’t get excited, drink alcohol, eat sweets, dance or party. I must keep my blood pressure low and that includes sex.”

“Are you sure about this? I don’t think I would trust a Russian doctor who says it takes three months to recover.”

“He one of the best in the world. The eye institute in Krasnodar was set up by the inventor of the laser eye surgery.”

“If it’s so good, why does it take three months to recover when in Moscow and America it’s only a week?” Angel just ignored the question.

“Don’t worry Roy. I will be fine; he is a good doctor. Russia is one of the best in the world for this technology.” Angel, like so many Russians, still bought into some of the old Soviet propaganda extolling the country’s technological prowess, but the reality made me fear that something might go wrong.

Russia boasts free modern medical care for everyone, but Russians with money go overseas for serious treatment or import Western specialists. Even Yeltsin flew in a Western heart surgeon. And the term “free” in Russian lexicography really means paying money under the table to the state employed physicians and nurses; otherwise, a patient’s chances of recovery drops dramatically. Patients pay nurses for clean syringes rather than gamble with a nurse reusing a disposable, improperly sterilized syringe because it reduces hospital costs allowing the money saved to go into the administrators, doctors and nurses’ pockets. The Hippocratic oath holds no meaning in Russia. The members of the medical profession—like everyone else—hustle for themselves, close relatives or friends while hiding behind a veil of fine words about compassion and justice that they rarely practice.

In the West, we at least have medical malpractice lawyers, who despite all the criticism, act as a deterrent to egregious medical blunders. Doctors in America kill and maim a little less because of the fear that lawyers will rob them of so much. But in Russia, the lack of a functioning legal system permits doctors to kill and mutilate with impunity through negligence, recklessness or drunkenness. If Angel’s doctor made a mistake, the only recourse would be to hire a criminal group operating in Krasnodar to extort compensation from the doctor, and the enforcers would take around 50%.

“I hope nothing happens with the operation,” I said, deeply concerned.

“Just think positive thoughts, and I will be find.”



“Okay, have a safe trip.”

Angel called me a couple of times from Krasnodar to make sure I picked up the photo from the magic-man within the time limit. At the end of the week I visited the magic-man’s office. He was not there, but his overly apprehensive female helper, which I chalked up to her drinking a few too many cups of coffee, handed me the photograph and more melted wax wrapped in paper as though they were radioactive materials. In broken English and sign language, she communicated that I should flush the wax down the toilet. I headed for the office toilet, but she quickly, almost in a panic, stopped me. No, no, she emotionally shook her head, indicating that I must use the toilet in my apartment. She demanded \$20, telling me to put it on the table with the black cloth, and after I paid, gave me the bum’s rush out the door. Good grief, these witches and warlocks were a bunch of sticklers and not very friendly. At home I flushed the wax down the toilet and put the photograph in a safe place.

To my Russian tutor in New York, who had visited me in Moscow with her friend, I sent news of the engagement by email in which I hoped the direction of my life had changed. I planned to manage Angel’s legitimate career and go back to college to study quantum cosmology, a branch of physics. True to form my tutor replied:

“Hey Roy, I think you are an idiot, but I’m not going to say anything because you already know what I want to say. I think the only “career” that Angel could get is in the porno business, but it is your business, and don’t cry to me when she leaves you and takes everything from you.”

During February, I called Angel about twice a week and at times questioned myself why I didn’t call her more often; after all she was my fiancée. We exchanged Valentine day cards. Her card said:

“A lot of loves, my dear Roy. From all my heart it for you...Love—it flower. And this flower you must give—calories, care, all your clean feeling. And after, ...after will come to you wonder! Care your flower, to be happy with this, what you have. Don’t make unimprovable mistake. With tenderness, loves—your enigmatic outspoken flower, Angelina... with love.”

Angel talked better English than she wrote, but the sentiment came through—very sweet. When February 14<sup>th</sup> arrived, I turned the page in my schedule book to find a note that Angel had secretly written in it before she left—very nice. “Roy, care your love! It very easy destroy, but how is difficult is back. I have feeling to you—don’t broken it. Keep yourself concentrated. And construct your love. Love—it respect, trust. Love—it life, so take it and have enjoy!!! With love Angel.”

My work responsibilities ended sooner than expected, which enabled me to complete the paper work, required by both the Russian and American governments for their citizens to marry, just before Angel underwent her eye operation. I told her I’d fly to Krasnodar to be with her during the operation. But, to my surprise, she said no because there would be nothing for me to do while she was in the hospital. I explained the point was for me to provide her with emotional support, not to find activities to consume my time. But she insisted I not come until the end of the month.

“Okay, but I’ll call you in the hospital.”

“You can’t,” she said. “There are no telephones.”

“I thought even Russian hospitals have a telephone on the floor.”

“Look Roy, it better that you not call me at the hospital. Russians are very nosy always looking for information to use against people.”

“We’re going to be married Angel. How can they use that against you?”

“If Russians know that someone goes to America, they will try to get money by kidnapping or threatening harm to family members in Russia. I will call you as soon as I come home from hospital. Do this for your Angel.

“Okay, but I doubt you have to worry about anything like that.” All of this troubled me, although she did have a point. One of the cases at Kroll required us to find the whereabouts of Miss Russia of 1991. She was scamming some French investment banker claiming he knocked her up. But she didn’t want to stay in Paris and allegedly went back to Moscow to have their

child. The banker wanted to know whether she was in Moscow and actually pregnant. We found someone with her passport living in the apartment of Miss Russia's parents in Moscow but at the same time found someone with her passport staying indefinitely at the very expensive Pierre Hotel on Fifth Avenue in Manhattan. The girl in Moscow wasn't pregnant, but the one in New York City was—from whom, who knew? We, therefore, concluded the girl at the Pierre the real Miss Russia and the girl in Moscow a cousin pretending to be her in order to prevent gangsters from discovering the former Miss Russian's expensive life style and threatening her family in Moscow unless Miss Russia paid them a stipend.

I booked my tickets for the end of February, leaving my return date open because we still needed to complete some paper work in Krasnodar for the Russian Marriage Registry Office, commonly called ZAGS, before scheduling our wedding. ZAGS traditionally performed weddings and kept the marriage records. Under the Soviets, only weddings performed by ZAGS were legally recognized. Some couples also had religious ceremonies, but to the Communists, they were meaningless. After the demise of communism, religious weddings tied couples into legal knots as effectively as ZAGS, but many Russians still preferred a marriage at ZAGS. Once ZAGS received all the required documents, it usually scheduled a wedding a month later. I didn't mind hanging around Krasnodar for a month, but once again Angel didn't want to wait. She decided to bribe the head of ZAGS in her district for a wedding as soon as possible.

“Why the rush,” I asked her over the telephone.

“I don't want to waste the time. I wasted three years after college working in Krasnodar that I wish I didn't. It will still take three months to get my visa. All of my money goes for our apartment, so I need to start making money again soon.”

“I can lend you some money if you need it.”

“No, I want my own money and to get on with my career.” Again I rationalized her wishes. This time by thinking if I were in her position, I’d also want to leave Russia as soon as possible.

In Moscow, I waited until the end of the month with next to nothing to do, contacted my friends in the U.S. and met with my friends in Moscow to tell them about my marriage plans. To my amazement, each and every one of them, whether Russian, American or European, said I was an idiot. One dear petite friend, Maria, who came from England, worked for a religious charity helping orphans, sang with a great voice in the band “No Problem” and whom I never heard utter a curse, responded to the news of my forthcoming marriage with “You stupid fucking fool! You stupid fucking fool! Are you some kind of an idiot? All she wants is a green card, and then it’s so long sucker. How can you do this? I told you love doesn’t exist in Russia, and I’ve been here longer than you. I thought you were smart. Well Roy, I will pray for you—you needed it! Damn it! I can’t believe this! I hope I’m wrong. Well, call me when you get back from Krasnodar.”

Maria’s reaction shocked me, but for some reason it didn’t fully register. She was a close friend with my interests at heart, but I consciously ignored what she said without even considering the possible truth of it. The same with my other friends, I valued their advice; all of them were smart, but I didn’t even pause to wonder whether I was making a stupid mistake. Not at all my usual mode of operation. But their warnings did work on my unconscious so that by the time I boarded my flight to Krasnodar on February 28, 2000, I wanted answers from Angel to a number of questions. If I didn’t get believable responses, then I was homeward bound without a wife.

## I Can't Help Myself

Angel met me at the airport with her usual smile, hugs and arm over my shoulders.

“How are your eyes?” I asked.

“They are improving slowly. I can't read anything and must remain calm. No strenuous work. Tomorrow, mom and me move into our new apartment. It great! I have dreamed of this for a long time.”

Angel's mother, Inessa, enlisted a number of her students from the Gymnastic Department at the Academy of Physical Culture to help with the move. One student showed with a flat bed truck more appropriate for carrying bulldozers than household goods. The move was a typical Russian operation—no planning and no organization, they just psyched themselves up, drank a lot of coffee and moved in all directions as fast and carelessly as possible, apparently trying to beat some imaginary clock. Glasses were smashed, boxes dropped and injuries incurred, but everyone, to my surprise, remained cheerful as they laughingly dismissed the damage to property and bodies. The students worked for free and gave Inessa and Angel house warming presents after the move. The new apartment was large by Russian standards with two bedrooms, but it needed a lot of work.

That evening, Angel and I took a walk down the park in the middle of the main street, Krasnaya Ulitsa, strolling along with other lovers and folks. The weather was much more mild in Krasnodar than Moscow, and by Russian standards, spring would arrive the next day on March 1 instead of the vernal equinox of March 21 as in the post-medieval countries.

“We need to get some things straight before our marriage,” I said.

“Always the lawyer,” she ginned putting her arm over my shoulders. “What is it now?”

“I just think we should be clear about what each expects from the other. I know that Russians tend to see marriage as a matter of economic convenience rather than a romantic union. But as you know, I, like most Americans, see marriage as an emotional bond in which each helps the other in their life and career.”

“You will be my husband and I your wife. You will help me get to America where I can work?”

“Yes, and we will live together in New York.”

“And I will be able to work.”

“Yes. I will do everything I can to help you pursue your dream of modeling, acting or singing. I always told every girlfriend of mine that she must be financially independent. Nobody wants to rely on someone else for economic well-being. Humans tend to take advantage of those who are dependent on them. And a lasting relationship can’t exist when one person can dictate to the other, which is what happens when one party enters a relationship for economic gain rather than love.”

“So, my Roy has had many girls,” she teasing said.

“Only one at a time, a serial monogamous.”

“Ohhh, you are faithful,” she mockingly replied.

“Which brings me to the main point. When we are married, I expect you not to go out with anyone else or try to trick me. I know Russian husbands and wives tend to have lovers on the side, but I don’t work that way. I expect you as I want a faithful and honest spouse.”

She didn’t say a word, just looked down into my eyes with her Cheshire smile. I pressed the point because I didn’t want to hear any of her excuses later that she didn’t understand or

didn't agree. "Look Angel, the way to deal with me is to be truthful. Tell me the truth, and we can work anything out. If you try to manipulate me, I will know and lots of trouble will result."

"I truthful with you Roy. Are you truthful with me?"

"You know I am."

"Do you agree not to go out with other men while we are married and not try to trick me?"

She lowered her eyes and contritely said, "Yes Roy."

The next day, Angel and I started running around preparing the necessary paper work encountering one bureaucratic obstacle or another. For example, I needed an address in Krasnodar. My Moscow residence wouldn't do because ZAGS didn't allow out-of-towners to marry locals, and I couldn't use Angel's address because ZAGS didn't like couples living together before their marriage. We ended up paying the Moscow Hotel Manager some money for a document stating I resided at the hotel. Money and gifts can buy anything in Russia, such as a way around stupid bureaucratic rules—probably the only reason for the rules in the first place—and procedures that assure fairness. Angle used flowers and candy, bought by me, to bribe the ZAGS female commandant into moving our wedding to near the front of the line—a ten-day wait instead of thirty.

At night, Angel wanted to hit the discos, which was fine by me. The places were more civilized than the deafening, in your face, behemoth caverns of New York City. They also started earlier, around 10 PM, and you could carry on a conversation without screaming in someone's ear. The men were also different; they demonstrated some class unlike the white guys in America who danced with themselves like pigeons trying to attract a mate. The clubs also put on mini-dance reviews called "ballets" around midnight. The discos hired dance troops

made up of local residents to perform various skits. The dancers were excellent, in my opinion much better than any professionals I saw in America.

One night, we ran into the finalists for the Miss Krasnodar beauty pageant dancing in a pack at a disco with free admission for girls. Why else would they be there, unless some guys were paying the way? All these babes were stunning, tall, beautiful, well dressed and sexy—pure femininity. A modern day American girl bred on feminazism didn't have a prayer of competing.

Krasnodar began looking like a little piece of heaven right here on earth because as gorgeous as these beauty contestants were, many of the young ladies I saw in that city were just as attractive. Actually, Angel didn't look so extraordinarily pretty in her hometown, and I understood why she always needed assurances about her looks. Even the average girl in the street appeared beautiful—no blue jeans, hiking boots or faces without makeup. Skirts, stockings and shoes with heels highlighted the female form in Krasnodar. These girls wanted to look like girls, not men. More sexy girls probably inhabited that town than any place I had ever visited. In the street, I looked until my eyes hurt, but the Russian men barely paid these beauties any attention. At first, I assumed the men were used to this extreme femininity, but then I remembered it was a buyers' market. With significantly more girls than guys in Russia, the man with a little money could take his pick. That meant the girls, the sellers, needed to advertise their wares the best they could, which resulted in super-feminine felines strutting the boulevards, quick to smile in an innocently alluring way and willing to engage in conversation with any half decently dressed guy that approached them. Still, my "glut of girls theory" didn't explain why Russian men weren't aggressively grabbing this girl or that one to spend many of their waking hours playing with these lovely things. The Russian men apparently preferred spending most of



their leisure time hanging out in groups of other men, virtually ignoring the sensual beauties swishing passed. My analysis was missing something.

The following evening as Angel and I walked to the disco “Joy,” I raised another of the concerns I wanted resolved before the wedding. This one went back to last August, before she left for Mexico when Angel volunteered to tell me all about her past. At the time, her statement surprised me because I didn’t ask about her past. She brought the subject up and promised to tell me her life story the next time we met. She didn’t, so ever since then, I periodically reminded her, but she always said, “Don’t worry Roy, I tell you later,” but later never came. By evading that promise, she made me wonder about her ability to keep her word and her honesty. I didn’t care about the bad things she may have done before we met; everybody regrets some of their past. But I needed to believe that when she told me something it was the truth, when she made a promise, it was not to deceive. Relationships don’t work unless based on honesty, so with our wedding looming, I decided to find out whether Angel would finally keep her promise. If not, then I would fly back to Moscow still a single man.

“Remember you said you were going to tell me about your past?”

“Yes,” she defensively answered.

“Well, what about it?”

“You already know about my past.”

“No, I don’t. What were you doing in Cyprus?”

“I was dancing in a club.”

“You mean you were stripping in a club.”

“That is dancing—it is art.”

“Did you take all your clothes off? Did you go out with your customers?”

“I always wore thong panties, never nude dancing. Sometimes I gave a customer a massage at his hotel.”

“You went to a customer’s hotel!”

“Only if he were a friend—nothing ever happened. I just gave him a massage. I very good at massage.”

“Wait a minute. You’d leave the club, go to his hotel and all he wants is a massage?”

“I don’t want to talk about this anymore. I just had a serious operation and my doctor says I should not get upset.”

I was waiting for the tears, but they didn’t come so I continued. “Look Angel, you’re the one who promised to tell me about your past. I didn’t ask about it.”

“Yes, I know, and now I wish I didn’t.”

“Don’t you realize that when you make a promise you’re supposed to keep it unless something prevents you?”

“You make promises and don’t keep them.”

“Name one,” she couldn’t. “Angel I don’t care what you did before we slept together in December. All you have to do is tell the truth. You made a promise to tell the truth about your past. I didn’t force you into that promise; you made it yourself, so tell the truth!”

“I told you the truth,” she stamped her foot.

“All of it?”

“Yes!”

“In America when a person keeps from telling something important, that’s a lie too.”

Now she started the tears, “You are offending me. You forget who I am to you.”

“So none of these good-friend customers ever tried to have sex with you in a hotel?”

“Some tried but I told them I was on my period.”

I knew that wouldn't deter everybody. “You went to a hotel with your customers and never had sex!”

“Yes.”

Then I remembered Bill Clinton and asked, “What does sex mean to you?”

“Only intercourse,” she said.

“Okay, did you ever play with a customer sexually like jerking him off or letting him play with your tits and crouch?”

“Stop it!” she stamped again like a horse. “I'm a good girl. I didn't go to Cyprus to have sex. I needed money and made it dancing in a club. It is art what I do!”

I let it go for then, but unless Angel stopped her dissembling and prevarication, I was going back to Moscow sooner than planned.

The next day we went to a notary for both of us to sign the prenuptial contract that my lawyer in Moscow prepared. Notaries in Russia, usually women, make a good living, not by charging a couple of rubles for their signatures but extracting exorbitant fees from the populace. They can do this because the government requires a notary's signature on all documents filed with a public agency while other documents need a notary's signature in order to have legal effect. The government also limits the number of notaries in any town, so their high fees are largely protected from market competition.

Our notary, a fat, mean-spirited, male-less female of which there are many in Russia, advised Angel to change certain portions of the prenuptial contract. Russian females in any profession believe they have a god-given right to meddle in the affairs of the people who pay them. The notary proceeded to change the prenuptial on the spot, in Russian of course. Angel

avored this rewrite because the notary sided with her—sisters united against men allegedly trying to take advantage of poor defenseless women and all that malarkey. I began to boil at the interference because when I previously sent Angel a copy, I included money to pay for her own lawyer to review it. When I walked into the notary's office, I believed she had done that since she told me the contract was fine. But she hadn't.

I couldn't figure out the reason for Angel not reviewing a document of such importance with an attorney before we went to the notary. Did she pocket the money for a lawyer thinking the notary would give her advice for which I would pay, or perhaps she arranged with the notary before hand to make changes favorable to her on the spot assuming I would rely on Angel's translation of the changes? How convenient for Angel I thought. With my lawyer in Moscow, any consultations with him were unlikely given the telephone system out of Krasnodar. I tried to clear my head of the ever-present conspiratorial mentality of Russians. After the notary made her changes, I made sure we went to an independent translator to tell me in English what they were. Some of the changes I okayed, and some I didn't. We signed three original copies: one for the notary, one for Angel and one for me. Angel put our two copies in her bag.

Angel wanted to take in an amusement ride, so we took a private taxi to the end of Krasnaya Ulitsa where the movie theatre housed a couple of rides and a few holes of miniature golf. Angel introduced me to the manager of the theater, one of the few times she introduced me to anyone. He didn't speak English but was friendly and let Angel ride for free—always a special treat for her. Angel later told me the manager was Chechen and she met him when she first came to Krasnodar to stay in the college dormitory while her mother was still in Grozny making arrangements to move their household goods. She said the Chechen was very kind hearted because he helped her and her mother find a house and to move.

On our way back to her apartment, Angel started talking about how much she liked her stay in Mexico and the beautiful places she visited. I took the opportunity to give her another chance to keep her promise to tell me about her past and see whether she could speak the truth without her tongue catching fire.

“In the one and only letter you sent me from Mexico, you said you wanted to stay in Mexico to model, but you weren’t modeling, you were giving lap dances in a club. Why did you lie?”

“I didn’t lie, I did a little modeling.”

“You mean when you only tell part of the truth and leave the rest out you’re not lying?”

She grinned that Cheshire smile, “Exactly! It’s being artful.”

“Didn’t we talk about this last night?”

“You talked about. I listened,” again that cat smile.

“You don’t get it do you. When you prevaricate, that means hide the truth, it’s the same as lying.”

“Not in Russia.”

“But in America and with me, when you fail to tell something important that is lying. If it’s not the truth, the whole truth and nothing but the truth, it’s lying.”

She looked at me in disbelief, “That’s not the way in Russia. Here a lie is only when you say something false. It our way.”

“I’m sure it is! I have run into it everywhere I go in Russia. All right, in one of your two faxes from Mexico, you said that you went to many beautiful places but were always alone. During New Year’s Eve, you showed me pictures of you naked in a lounge chair on a hotel in Cancun. Who paid for the hotel, who paid for the airplane, I know you didn’t.”

“I don’t remember.”

“You stayed in an expensive hotel in Cancun and don’t remember who paid for it?”

“I answered your question, now stop being aggressive to me!” Then she stamped one of those size eleven feet again.

“Well at least that means you didn’t pay for it. So what did you give in return for someone taking you to Cancun and those other places in Mexico?” She ignored this question, but it didn’t matter because the main purpose of this grilling was to see whether she could tell the truth. She couldn’t.

I continued, “You said during New Year’s that you traveled with friends to different places. Were these men friends and did you provide them with sexual favors? Sexual favors mean not only intercourse but other acts such as....”

“Enough! You’re upsetting me and my doctor forbids it!”

“Your doctor again. I thought recovery from these laser operations took only a week—not three months.”

“I am a sick girl and you should not be so aggressive with me. You forget who I am.”

“Just tell the truth Angel. You said you would or was that a lie too.”

“I have told you the truth! And I am not going to talk about it anymore.”

“No you haven’t told the truth. First it’s one story, then another, then I don’t remember or some other excuse. You’re the one who volunteered to tell me about your past. I didn’t ask.”

“Yes, I know and that was a mistake.”

“Well, I don’t want to make a mistake either, so I’m thinking of canceling the wedding. I’ll decide in a couple of days. All my instinct tells me this is stupid and I should go home.”

Her eyes narrowed and glared at me with cold-blooded resolve, “As you wish.”

Later that afternoon Angel said, “I have to go meet someone. I will be back in a couple of hours.”

“I’ll go with you,” I said, distrustfully.

“You can’t come along.”

Now I was really suspicious, “Why not?”

“My friend is very fragile and afraid of strangers. Just your being there would upset her, she is very sensitive. You can come to the apartment house, but I can’t take you inside.”

“Going to see another of your boyfriends?” I said, not believing this story about some strange shy woman.

“No, I am not!”

“Why don’t I believe you?” I sarcastically said, “That’s okay, I’ll stay here in your apartment.” I hadn’t reached a final decision but pretty much knew I would shelve the entire relationship, so any afternoon tryst didn’t really matter.

When she returned, I asked her for my copy of the prenuptial just in case. She handed me one from her bag, but as I went to put it in my suitcase, my instinct told me to check it, and sure enough it was a draft version without signatures and notarization, which in Russia and America meant useless. I was sure Angel gave me the unsigned copy on purpose, hoping I wouldn’t notice. Did she think me that stupid?

“Nice try, but I would like a signed copy.”

Without a word she nonchalantly handed me a signed version.

The next day we got up in the morning, did some errands and Angel prepared lunch for the first time. She said she wanted to save me money from eating in restaurants. I was on the verge of a final decision to leave and would start formulating an escape that afternoon. After

lunch, however, I fell asleep for the entire afternoon. Couldn't understand why, since I never slept in the afternoon, no matter how tired, and that morning's activities were by no means exhausting.

I awoke around four in a fog, feeling very mellow and unable to concentrate. Angel made dinner, I think, and we went to a disco, but I still can't remember which one.

The next day after lunch, I fell asleep again for the whole afternoon. When I awoke, I felt euphoric, couldn't think straight, but knew something was wrong. I tried to think, to grab hold of my reason to finally decide not to go through with the marriage and arrange my departure, but I couldn't reach a decision on either the marriage or the escape. Both kept slipping away from my will. All I could do was to say over and over about marrying Angel, "This is stupid, stupid, stupid." Angel even told me with a grin later, what I was saying. Obviously she eavesdropped on me when I was alone and talking to myself in an effort to think out loud since my brain no longer seemed to function. The next day I fell asleep again after lunch and also became constipated. Angel said it must be the change in diet, which made no sense because the food in Krasnodar was the same fare as in Moscow. In fact, I began to think the food Angel prepared was great, even though it consisted mainly of hot dogs and frozen vegetables or spaghetti.

I don't know for how many days this went on: up in the morning for errands necessary for the wedding, Angel preparing lunch and my falling asleep in the afternoon. Another strange routine started, I think around the same time as my afternoon naps, but I'm not sure since those days seemed vague and indistinct with one flowing into the other without break. Angel started going into her bedroom warning me not to disturb her because she was communing with some



“negative forces” and my entering could cause me harm. To the dysfunctional state of my consciousness at the time, her statement actually sounded rational.

My concerns about Angel’s ability to tell the truth vanished, and, I think, although I am not sure, that our sex life stopped. I can still remember my first couple of nights in Krasnodar and Angel’s foul body odor during sex. The city Government turned off the hot water to the entire town every night at around 9 PM, so when we returned from the discos usually at 2 or 3 AM, there was no hot water for a shower. No big deal, I thought at first, but when I went to bed with Angel, she smelled so bad without first taking a shower that I nearly gagged. Once again, I told her to see a doctor, but she refused to admit there was anything wrong. “Russian men never complained about any smells,” she retorted.

Her mother usually came home from work around five o’clock, after my daily nap, and scurried about the apartment doing one domestic task or another as though trying to keep the demons of her mind distracted with busy work. In the early evenings, Angel began excusing herself for a couple of hours to visit her friend Natasha who lived upstairs in the same building. I asked Angel to introduce me to Natasha, but she refused, and given my befuddled, apathetic mental state at the time, I put up with that and quickly forgot my thinking of Natasha as Angel’s lesbian lover. On more than one occasion, Angel remarked about how she enjoyed giving and receiving from women lap dances because their touch was more caressing and thrilling to her. I dismissed such talk as the usual transparent efforts by girls to needlessly cause their boyfriends emotional distress out of an innate sense of insecurity and as trendy pop rot rubbish

One night Angel said she was going to audition for the manager of a popular disco for a ballet troop he planned to send to Italy.

“Why are you auditioning to go to Italy to dance when we are getting married in a few days,” I asked with surprise. By now, my thoughts of calling off the wedding had vanished in a haze of well-being.

“I need to work Roy. I don’t want to sit around doing nothing while we wait for my visa. What if I don’t get the visa? I don’t want to lose the time. Besides, if they hire me, it will last only a couple of weeks during the end of May. I have never traveled to Italy and want so much to see it.” My warning sensors should have activated, but I felt too spaced to worry.

I went with her and met Alexey Smolin the manager. He seemed like a bright, ambitious young New Russian and only spoke Russian. Actually, all the people I met while with Angel in Krasnodar only spoke Russian in front of me, so I never understood what they talked about and was completely dependent on Angel for any translations. At Smolin’s club, Angel auditioned, wiggling around as though stripping, which meant the job included lap dancing. Alexey said maybe and gave us free tickets to his club.

The remainder of that week or so in March, I still couldn’t see clearly in my mind. But I do know that on Saturday, March 11, 2000, early in the morning, Angel prepared breakfast and we headed to ZAGS to get married. The wedding room I recall from seeing a week earlier looked very nice, painted in pastels, a high ceiling and polished wood floors located in a well kept 19<sup>th</sup> century building. When we entered the wedding palace, as Russians called it, I felt elated as I had since Angel began preparing my meals. There were a number of couples waiting to get married, surrounded by relatives and friends.

“Where’s your mother?” I asked.

“She had to work.”

“On a Saturday?” I replied. “And what about your friends? There is no one here but us.”

“It’s a secret,” she said and at the time it seemed to make sense to me.

After a short wait for the other couples’ ceremonies, the wedding march began to play for us and we walked into the marriage room, I think. The ceremony was in Russian, which meant I didn’t understand a thing, so Angel told me what to do and say. At the end, I recall kissing her for an extended period of time, and she started slapping me on the chest to stop. Not what I expected from my wife. We signed the registry and someone took pictures. After the ceremony, Angel took me to the Aeroflot office and booked me on a flight back to Moscow. She said the earliest one was for Monday.

“Trying to get rid of me,” I said, as some of my old reasoning flashed through.

“Roy, you must get back to Moscow to file the papers for my visa.” Always the visa, I said to myself. “Okay, after I file the papers, let’s take our honeymoon to some place in Russia.” The honeymoon was my idea, and at first, Angel seemed to go along.

She responded, “I would like to go to Samara where I was born to see whether I can find my father.” A couple of months earlier, Angel said her father lived in Tver and asked me to use the firm to try to find him. We tried, but no luck. So what was he now doing in Samara, but the logical inconsistency faded away, and all I said was “That’s find with me. How will you find him?”

“He has a brother and other relatives there who may know where he is.”

“Are you sure you want to do this? You said he beat you as a kid and sexually attacked you when you were 13.”

“I just want to see him.” She sounded like a little girl lost who had never seen her father, which didn’t make sense because she lived with him and her mother in Grozny until her parents divorced when she was sixteen.

We also visited a travel agent about taking a tour of seven ancient and very famous towns that circled Moscow. Angel said she would handle the arrangements for the towns around Moscow and to visit Samara. I volunteered to schedule the trip, but she insisted she could get a better deal for our honeymoon through Krasnodar agents than I could in Moscow.

On our wedding night, Angel wanted to celebrate by taking her mother to a fancy restaurant because she never got to go out.

“Doesn’t Inessa have any boyfriends?” I asked.

“Mom doesn’t date. She had such a bad time with my father that she stays away from men. My father was the only man she ever knew.” I found that hard to believe, but still in a fog, let it go.

The restaurant was nice by Russian standards, and, as always when we went to a restaurant, Angel got the waitress to take pictures of the food and us. I never did understand her habit of taking pictures of restaurant meals. She often told me she knew hunger when young and especially liked to tell the story about when as a young hungry teenager she came out of church and gave her last kopeck to a beggar who proceeded to insult her for giving so little, which made her weep.

On Sunday after the wedding, Angel said she needed to change my flight from Monday to Tuesday because I had to stay an extra day to help her with the tax authorities.

She explained, “I told you before about the new law that took effect in the beginning of the year. When someone buys an apartment the tax people want to know where the money came

from to make sure it's not from crime. I need you to sign a paper in front of a notary saying that you gave me \$15,000 to buy my apartment."

My mind was still so muddled that I, a lawyer, agreed to this fraud. "Whatever you want," I automatically said.

A day later than she planned, Angel put me on a plane to Moscow secure that the tax authorities wouldn't trouble her. I still don't remember going to the airport, what we said to each other or the flight, but I felt pretty good as I had for the passed week or so.

### Everybody's Somebody's Fool

In Moscow, the glow of Krasnodar soon wore off. I began feeling really depressed, restless and irritable but assumed it was the boredom of not working and the isolation of living in a country where I didn't speak the language. I called Angel repeatedly and asked her to come to Moscow because of the loneliness, but my entreaties didn't move her. She always had an excuse for staying in Krasnodar. Her eye doctor required follow up visits, her mother needed help in fixing up their new apartment or she had to prepare documents to transfer her old house in the village to her mother's sister. I gave up trying to convince this Russian wife to come live with her American husband and began pushing her about arranging our honeymoon.

"When are we going on our honeymoon?" I asked during each telephone conversation.

"When do I get my visa?" she'd always reply.

"There's nothing more I can do in Moscow with the visa. We just have to wait."

"Mom doesn't think it is a good idea for me to see my dad in Samara," which was her reason for killing that part of the honeymoon plan, so I started prodding her about the trip around the ancient cities outside of Moscow. She kept saying, "I am waiting for the travel agent to return from Moscow." After hearing that a few times, I volunteered to make the arrangements

myself in Moscow, but she said, “You must be patient. I can make our trip cheaper from here, and I still have things to do in Krasnodar.”

After three weeks of Angel’s procrastination, I gave up on a honeymoon, joined a gym, started studying Russian at the Pushkin Institute, made half-hearted attempts at finding work in Moscow and tried to battle the intense loneliness by filling my social schedule with museums, clubs and friends.

When I saw Maria at a club where her band No Problem played, she didn’t berate me about marrying Angel but asked about the ceremony. “What did Angel wear at the wedding?”

I stopped to think, looked at her in bewilderment and said, “I don’t know.”

“You don’t know!” she yelled, as some of the club customers turned to look.

“I can’t remember. I’m trying to picture the ceremony, but draw a blank. I remember the building, the brightly colored rooms and people. But the details escape me.”

“I thought you lawyers had good memories.”

“I do, but I can’t grasp it clearly. It all seems vague. I know I went through the ceremony because I can remember some parts of it, but her dress, not a clue.”

“Were you drunk?”

“At nine in the morning? No way. It just doesn’t make sense.”

“Who else was there?”

“Just Angel and me.”

“What about her mother?”

“She had to work.”

“Work!” Maria yelled again with fewer customers turning to stare. “You’re telling me that your wife’s mother didn’t even bother to go to her daughter’s wedding?”

“She wasn’t there as I recall.”

“You are a stupid fucking fool!” she yelled one last time, but no one noticed by then and added, “I hope for you it works out, but I doubt it.”

A few days later, I received a letter from Angel with the wedding photographs that she said the ZAGS photographer took. I called Maria up to answer her question, “Except for a white dickey, she wore all black.”

“Black! She wore black and you couldn’t remember that!” Maria yelled into the phone. “Didn’t you ever go to a wedding; didn’t you ever see a wedding? The bride wears white or some light happy tone, not the color of death.”

“Well, she did wear a white scarf,” I lamely replied.

“You idiot! How could you not remember your bride wearing black to your wedding?”

“Beats me why I don’t remember. I must have noticed it but guess it just seemed natural at the time.”

“Natural! No one wears all black to a wedding, except witches or the mistress of the anti-Christ! She’s a witch Roy, and you’re doomed if you don’t get rid of her.”

“Look, I know our views of the universe differ. I believe in quantum mechanics, you believe in an omnipresent God, but witches? Even if they do exist, they are nothing more than psychopaths.”

“So who wants to be married to a psychopath?”

“You have a point there.”

“I know I’m not going to convert you, but there are things in this universe that no one understands. You just have to believe. Evil exists and often disguises itself behind a pretty face and fine words. Be careful Roy, the devil’s lies fool many smart men.”

As usual, I didn't buy Maria's religious views but did consider her warning to dump Angel. There were too many troubling occurrences concerning my wife: she always came up with an excuse not to live with me in Moscow, she delayed and delayed our honeymoon into no honeymoon, she didn't want me to visit her during her eye operation, and once we were married, she rushed me out of Krasnodar to start working on her visa. Something she always asked about whenever we talked. Maybe I was just another customer to her. On the other hand, I admired her determination to pursue her dreams of modeling and knew that in Russia her fate promised only a desperate struggle to survive. I still believed Angel deserved a chance at something better, which meant bringing her to America: one of the few places in the world where opportunity waited for the courageous to seize it and dreams had a fighting chance of coming true. I didn't want her to end up like me, haunted decade after decade with the gnawing regret of dreams untried. So once again compassion or some other forces in the universe ruled, and I overlooked Angel's disturbing conduct and put Maria's warning on hold but not out of mind. During many quiet, spring nights while walking in Moscow, I said to myself, "If her aim was to make as much money as possible in America, then I would end the entire episode immediately, but she wants to pursue her dreams, so I will go along for now. If she doesn't start acting like a wife, I'll annul the marriage and she'll end up back in Russia." But while my waking self settled on one course of action, nightmares plagued my sleep with Angel selling herself for more and more money.

Angel's mother, Inessa, actually came to Moscow before Angel did, although only to switch trains on her way to an aerobics' convention in St. Petersburg. Angel asked me to meet Inessa with my driver and take Inessa to her connecting train at a station across town, which was fine with me. Moscow has a number of train stations spread through out the city. Each station



handles trains going to or arriving from a certain part of the country. For example, trains to and from the north, which includes St. Petersburg, use a different station than those for Siberia. The train stations erected before the Communists, as with all other architecture in Russia, are beautiful, spacious and painted in bright pastels while the Communist era creations are gray, drab rectangular-boxes.

Inessa and my driver flirted all the way to her connecting station. Many of Inessa's mannerisms reminded me of Angel, but what surprised me was how adept her coquetry appeared for a woman who avoided men. Perhaps her genes made practice unnecessary. After dropping off Inessa, my driver, clearly impressed or emotionally massaged, said Inessa "very good Russian woman" who unfortunately married a nasty militiaman officer that drank too much and beat her. Exactly what Angel told me about her father, the former Chief of the M.V.D. in Grozny, or militia as the Russians refer to their national police force.

A week later and a month after our marriage, Angel traveled by train to Moscow to take the required medical examination for her visa with a U.S. Embassy approved doctor and ostensibly to spend time with her husband.

My driver and I picked her up at the station and drove back to my apartment.

"Nice of you to visit your husband. I'm surprised you decided to extend your stay from five to nine days." I sarcastically remarked.

"I told you, I have many things to do in Krasnodar. I very busy."

"I thought your eye doctor told you to take it easy."

"I am getting better, so I can do more now."

"Good, then you can answer some of the questions you didn't before we got married."

She put her arm over my shoulders and grinned down at me “In Russia, it better not to know too much because then you can believe what you want.”

“In America, it’s better to know the truth for it will set you free.”

“But I am Russian, and all Russian girls have a ‘private life’ about which their boyfriends are not allowed to ask. If the boy loves the girl then he respects her; love and respect are the same. If he respects her, he will not inquire into her ‘private life.’ The girl will not reveal her ‘private life’ because the boy will not understand, or the boy will think less of his girl. As time goes by, the girl will decide to reveal parts of her ‘private life’ when it safe and when the boy can understand her reasons for engaging in the activities that make up her ‘private life’. The two will grow closer together. This is love in Russia.”

“Sounds like the young wife in *Casablanca* rationalizing her intended infidelity with the police captain or something out of the *Cabinet of Dr. Caligari*.”

“What cabinet?”

“Never mind. Look, if I know that someone is living a secret life, but I do not know what they are actually doing, and I know they will lie and hide the truth about these secret activities, but I do not know which, how could I ever believe them about anything? I know they lie about some things but do not know which things, so I assume they lie about most things. If I cannot believe what someone says, how can I trust them? Without trust, how can one be close to or love someone?”

“You will understand.”

“Does this ‘private life’ mean you don’t wear your wedding ring in Krasnodar?”

“I wear it, see!” she held up her right hand.

“Barely with all the other rings you have on the same figure. Why do you have three or four rings on the wedding finger? Are you trying to hide it?”

“I’m tired after 36 hours on the train and need some sleep. We will talk later.” Angel seemed more confident than when I grilled her in Krasnodar. No stamping of the feet this time.

A day after her arrival I began feeling happy again and my doubts vanished in the haze that swept over my consciousness. Angel did the shopping and prepared the meals, which were the same fare as in Krasnodar, but I thought surprisingly good. In Krasnodar, Angel said the warm climate made the region Russia’s agricultural center and the producers kept the best food for the area, which was why I found her meals there so good. But now in Moscow, even that city’s inferior quality of food started tasting as good as in Krasnodar. Angel, however, usually prepared herself something different than she did for me because she was on a diet.

At Angel’s insistence, we went to discos and of course strip clubs where as a veteran of Cyprus, Mexico and a visitor to U.S. clubs, Angel held court, spouting advice to the younger girls gathered around her as though she possessed the grail to glamour and fortune. During her nine-day stay; I noticed some peculiar traits for the first time. She always slept with her watch on that beeped every hour, and after engaging in sex, she didn’t sleep in the nude, a pair of panties always appeared out of nowhere to cover her bottom. I couldn’t figure out where she hid those panties until one day I lifted her pillow and there was a pair waiting, I assumed, to protect against any additional entries. Were they a little girl’s armor against surprises in the night or a tollgate?

I introduced her to my friends, many of whom warned me against marrying her, and, to my surprise, they all liked her and thought her a nice girl. Angel even won over Maria, who told me her opinion of Angel, as a ruthless gold-digging witch, was wrong. The two of them talked a

lot about religion, and Maria decided Angel a spiritual person whom she could trust. They quickly became friends. I assumed the initial misgivings by my friends about Angel came from the pictures they saw of her, which showed a blond tart on the make, and their stereotypical thinking that all pretty young girls from the Russian provinces were sharks out to get as much money as possible through any means available. After meeting her, however, they changed their minds, and my suspicions settled into my unconscious buried under the rationales that they had stemmed from middle-aged paranoia and cultural differences.

While in town, Angel checked out a couple of what she called casting agencies for jobs, which I assumed were lap-dancing recruiters, but they didn't want her. We visited Leo, where Angel talked a couple of girls into going to Mexico as dancers and agreed to look for girls from Krasnodar for Leo to send to various parts of the world in return for a percentage of their earnings. Leo showed Angel and me a few pictures from Mexico of him, her and another man.

“Who's the guy?” I asked as my suspicions welled up.

Angel got a disagreeable look on her face and said, “He works at the club.”

“Nice rooms,” I remarked still looking at the pictures. “Where are they?”

“That is my apartment, when we moved in.” she replied. Leo didn't say anything, but I sensed the universe, once again, trying to tell me something that I wouldn't realize for a while.

After a mentally foggy but euphoric nine days of which I still remember little, Angel returned to Krasnodar once again saying she needed to see her eye doctor, help her mother with their apartment and prepare the documents to transfer her house to her aunt. She left behind some food with instructions on how to prepare my own meals rather than, as she said, wasting my money in restaurants. She would return by the end of May for her visa interview at the

Embassy. If all went well at the interview, which I was sure of since I would be there doing most of the talking, Angel would receive her visa that day.

Once again after we parted, the glow wore off, but this time it took a week. A couple of days after I finished all of her prepared food; I fell back into the underworld of depression, loneliness and suspicion. Russia always put me through experiences on a more elemental level than elsewhere. The forces flowing through nature careened deeper into my being in that country by circumventing the protection of empirical Western beliefs. The archetypal unconscious of Russia drove its residents' psyches without any balancing by rational conscious decisions as in America. Empirical reasoning just didn't work in Russia. A person needed to follow his instinct because no agreement, law nor behavior could be relied on to narrow down the possibilities, only unforeseen surprises were constant, and only intuition could determine a course of action. The conscious mind just didn't measure up to the task of living in Russia—too many variables to deal with and the mistakes too costly. One wrong move and life ended; whereas, in America, falls were often broken by safety nets, only the chronic screw up ended in a bottomless pit.

Out from my unconscious flowed the same old disbeliefs in her excuses for not living with me. I began keeping track of my calls to Angel in Krasnodar that went unanswered as an indication she was not in her apartment or not in Krasnodar. For some reason, she instructed her mother not to answer calls that failed to show the telephone number on the caller id of her home phone or mobile. Since calls from within Russia but outside the Krasnodar region didn't register on her caller id, whenever Angel's home phone didn't answer, it meant she was out of the apartment. And whenever her mobile didn't answer, it meant she was out of Krasnodar because on those occasions she left her mobile with her mother. I did reach Angel periodically but never

could convince her to come to Moscow before her visa interview, although she claimed her “private life” now in the past. I guess even from her point of view that was a lame excuse for not answering my questions.

To while away the days, I added to working out at the gym and learning Russian reading detective stories, starting with the *Maltese Falcon*, which featured a ruthless, mean-minded woman driven by greed for money. I also kept in touch with my Russian tutor in America who, always to the point, warned me again and again:

“Your wife is milking you for money; it is obvious, so be careful not to be left on the street. Do I understand correctly that you live in different cities? If that is the case are you actually thinking that she is faithful to you? I wouldn’t bet on it. Go and get yourself a girlfriend but don’t get emotionally attached; after all, any girl is going to be using you as well as you’ll be using her. Look at it like a business deal, but not like prostitution, just to spend time and have fun. I’m more sure that Angel is not faithful to you, so why be a sucker? You do know she wants to come to America, and that is all she needs you for; get it into your head finally!

I tried following my tutor’s advice and sometimes went to the “Hungry Duck” with an American executive working in Moscow. Between 7:30 and 9:30 PM, the bar admitted only girls who were allowed to drink free for those two hours. Around 9:00 PM, the guys started to line up outside thinking about the inebriated girls inside. At 9:30 PM, the club opened its doors to men. Inside, a guy could easily find “working girls,” that means prostitutes, high school and college babes out for a good time or to make some extra cash and uneducated girls from some of the poorer provinces bowled over by the nightlife of the big city. The Duck was small, dank and dark with two concentric rings of bars over four feet high and two feet wide on which most of the dancing occurred and from which drunks often fell. Around eleven, one or more girls, sometimes with the help of a friendly male stranger, would strip to her panties and display her assets dancing on the bar. I never saw any girl strip completely, but it must have happened. Other girls willing rubbed their bodies against guys while dancing, or parted their legs so that a

guy could look up their dresses when they danced on the bar. Some of the girls didn't bother wearing underwear and would deep-knee bend to give a guy a better view and get closer to his drooling mouth but then quickly stand up with a teasing smile. As for rubbing their bodies while dancing, the girls would go just so far and no more. If a guy tried to become too intimate, the girls backed off. Russian girls were exhibitionists to a point but would not cross some puritanical line in public. If one of these babes at the Hungry Duck agreed to leave with a guy, she was his for the night, usually at a cost of a few hundred rubles, fifteen dollars.

On my excursions to the Duck, I usually met a hot willing babe or two, but something kept me from taking anyone home for the night, which didn't make any sense. Why throw away these young nubile opportunities?

Control over my life kept slipping through the holes in my will pushed by lame rationalizations. I could have gone back to New York City or any place else in the world but sat alone in Moscow with nothing interesting to do waiting for a visa for a wife that refused to live with me or go on a honeymoon. This was not my style. More than once in my past, I had jumped a plane home to leave behind some self-indulgent girl who thought she had me on the ropes. Why not this time?

By the last day in April 2000, I actually considered that black magic might worked in Russia just because so many people there believed it did and assumed Angel arranged for the black magic-man to cast a spell causing me to marry her. But whether magic worked or not, I didn't care, all I wanted to know was did those two conspired against me. I went looking for the magic-man. More than once, I stopped by unannounced at the sorcerer's lair, accompanied by my driver and interpreter, but either Mr. Black Magic wasn't there or hiding inside. Fine, I'd

find the truth about Angel some other way, since even black magic can't win out over persistence.

My tutor in America warned me against my new quest for knowledge, "She might get her way before you can prove anything, and then what is the point of showing her that you knew it all along, she already got what she wanted. I think that you should just divorce her and let her take over some other idiot. Angel has cheated on you, cheats on you and will cheat on you all the time if you don't break it off. It is, as we say in Russia, understandable even to a hedgehog."

### Suspicion

Saturday May 6, 2000, an inspiration flashed through my mind. I jumped out of bed and dialed Angel's "good friend" in Mexico, Alfredo. I kept his number since December when Angel gave it to me in case she couldn't reach him from Krasnodar. She thought I could help recover her money left in Mexico if a problem arose. I called Alfredo because sometimes a direct question surprises people into an honest answer. He might admit to having an affair with Angel when he was in Russia.

After introducing myself, I asked him about the day he came to Moscow back in December. He said he couldn't talk but would call me back. Six hours later, Angel called my mobile telephone, which was strange because she never called it before. She always telephoned my apartment phone and never in the afternoon but always in the evening. Angel had nothing new or significant to say, so I assumed Alfredo called her to tell her of my questioning him. That prompted her to contact me to try to figure out what I suspected or knew. Two days later, Alfredo called me back. His English was quite good.

"Sorry for not returning your call earlier. Business you know."



“On the weekend? I thought most operations shut down in Mexico over Saturday and Sunday,” I replied.

“Some do, some don’t. So what can I do for you?”

“As I asked before, how did you meet Angelina?” I assumed he’d tell me to drop dead, but instead he went into what sounded by the tenor of his voice and the text as a scripted story.

“We were only good friends,” he quickly and defensively said, not answering the question I asked.

“But how did you meet her?”

“Through my girlfriend Azul, who also danced at The Men’s Club here in Mexico City. Azul and Angelina were best friends, so Angelina accompanied Azul and me when we traveled around Mexico.”

“Not much privacy?”

“I didn’t mine.”

“But you paid all the bills for both of them to travel to resorts such as Acapulco and Cancun. Rather expensive I understand.”

Alfredo hesitated because such conduct look ridiculous paying for a girl from whom he received nothing in return. “Uh, Azul and Angelina were very close and didn’t want to be separated.” Oh, how lame a response was that?

“So what were you doing in Moscow in December?”

“I traveled there on business and only saw Angelina for a few hours in order to withdraw her money from my debit card.”

“She told me you came here only to bring her money because you worked for the club.”

Again I fully expected Alfredo to object, but he didn’t.

“No, no, no, I had important business in Moscow. I run my own company. I can’t imagine how she thought I worked for the club.”

“Neither can I, since she traveled around Mexico with you. One would think she could at least remember what you do.”

“She traveled with Azul and me.”

“Fine, thanks for the call Alfredo.”

Like most third-worlders, Alfredo was a liar. I didn’t believe his story and hired a Kroll investigator to check the exact dates in December for Angel and Alfredo’s arrivals in Moscow. If the dates coincided and were earlier than the day Angel showed up at my office with the story she had just arrived in town, then the two probably hooked up.

Over Easter, I tried to reach Angel but no answers late Saturday and Sunday. She finally called late Sunday.

“Where have you been, I tried to reach you.”

“I just go out with my friends in town.”

“Didn’t you take your mobile?”

“I forgot. Listen Roy,” she switched into her wheedling voice. “Next Thursday, I go to visit an old friend in Kannevskaya village outside Krasnodar. We grew up together in Chechnya, and I haven’t seen her since I left Grozny. I really want to see her again.”

“Okay,” I said.

“I’ll be away until Monday.”

“Are you still going to arrive in Moscow on the seven o’clock train next Wednesday morning? We still need to do some preparation for the visa interview on the following Tuesday.”

“I’ll be on the train but while in the village you won’t be able to reach me because my friend doesn’t have a telephone, and my mobile won’t work that far outside of Krasnodar.”

Right away the depths of my unconscious sent a warning. Here we go again. What is this girl scheming this time?

“Give me the name of that village again.” I wanted to check whether it existed and its location. “And when are you leaving? Thursday afternoon and returning Monday afternoon.”

“That’s right.”

“Okay, I will telephone you Thursday morning before you leave,” I said.

“Are you checking up on me, my husband?”

“Do I have reason to, my wife?”

“You Americans don’t believe anybody!”

“Long before you were born, John Kennedy said in a speech directed at Premier Khrushchev, ‘Civility should not be mistaken for weakness and sincerity is always subject to proof.’”

“I not Khrushchev!” she objected.

“But you are Russian.” I replied

The village checked out, only a few hours outside Krasnodar, but my feeling of something not right kept bothering me.

On Thursday, I called Angel at her home in Krasnodar. She said she would call me when she returned the next Monday, and I would then call her right back to make sure she actually telephoned from her home.

I wished her a safe trip, which Russian tradition required when a loved one or friend traveled. Going from one place to another in Russia didn’t engender feelings of security thanks

to careless common carriers, police looking for bribes and Chechen terrorists. Both the Czars and Communists restricted travel in order to keep track of their citizens, so the infrastructure that supports safe and comfortable journeys never fully evolved. As a result, Russians appealed to irrational protections such as well wishes from friends and taking a few moments to sit and mediate before embarking. Most Russians believe the thoughts of others and their own along with unrelated actions can influence hidden energies of the universe to affect events in the observable world. Angel often talked about using her mind and rituals to assert her will on unknown forces to avert or cast an “evil eye”. Unlike Russia, America, in large part, replaced a reliance on the supernatural with a belief in science, technology and individual rights to create a society of relative security and predictability.

On Saturday, Angel called me again.

“I thought you were in the village where your mobile didn’t work,” I said surprised, assuming she used her mobile because the village allegedly had no telephones.

She stumbled and said, “I will leave today. My, my trip was delayed because a modeling job came up yesterday.”

“What type of modeling job?”

“It was, it was...promotional.” She seemed to be reaching for an explanation.

“What kind of promotion?” I pressed.

“Oh, just handing out samples. It was fun. I will tell you all about it when I see you next Tuesday.”

“You mean Wednesday.”

“Yes, yes, Wednesday. Do you miss me my husband,” she said in her seductive voice so as to change the subject.

I provided the obligatory yes.

“Oh, and since I am leaving late for the village, I wouldn’t be able to call you Monday from Krasnodar before I board the train.”

“Why not?”

“I want to stay with my friend as long as I can, so I will go directly from the village to the train.”

“What about your bags.”

“I have everything I need for Moscow with me.”

“Okay, I will meet you when you arrive Wednesday morning,” I said, all the time thinking this call made no sense. But once again, I knew that with time the real explanation would become evident as it always did when something happened that made no sense or stood out incongruously.

### You Can’t Judge A Book By Its Cover

The evening before Angel’s scheduled arrival in Moscow from Krasnodar, my doorbell rang. Probably the militia, checking on who was living here again. Ever since the apartment buildings’ bombings last September, the police periodically checked to make sure the person registered at an apartment actually lived there. The city government hoped to find terrorists or at least Chechens living illegally in Moscow. I ignored the ringing, but it persisted. Then a thought out of left field hit me, could it be Angel? No, she was not that dumb to pull the same suspicious stunt she did in December by showing up earlier than scheduled. The ringing continued. I finally opened the door, and there stood Angel, six feet three inches in her shoes, smiling innocently but looking extremely tired, more tired than usual for the trip from Krasnodar. The universe tried to tell me something from that, but I didn’t know what, so I would have to wait

and stay alert. I stared up at her, suspecting she had pulled another deceit—like meeting some boy friend in Moscow a few days earlier.

“Aren’t you going to invite your wife in?” she asked with guile.

“What are you doing here?” I said, starting to cross-examine her. “You were supposed to be on the train from Krasnodar tomorrow morning.”

“I came early because I got a ride. Let me in Hollander!” She never before referred to me by my last name. It sounded like she had decided to mentally distance herself from me.

“You shouldn’t keep your wife standing in the hallway after a long trip!”

I helped her in with her bags. “How did you get here?”

“Save your questions. First, I need to use our bathroom.”

“What do you mean ‘our’ bathroom? It’s my apartment.”

“It’s our apartment, my dear husband. Everything in here is ours Hollander. You must remember I am your wife,” as she put her arm over my shoulders and kissed me. Now I knew something was wrong. First she addresses me with the impersonal use of my last name, then she refers to us as a married unit, which she also never did before.

“I will explain everything after I wash up and make us dinner, my darling husband.” She headed for the bathroom.

Angel prepared a meal and we sat down at the kitchen table.

“So how did you get here?” I once again asked.

“I found a van that drove to Moscow and it was cheaper than the train so I took it.”

“You’re telling me that there are commercial vans taking passengers from Krasnodar to Moscow?”

“Yes.”

“You said back on New Year’s Eve that traveling the roads in southern Russia was dangerous because of bandits and Chechens.”

“Oh not so dangerous. Are you concerned about my safety, my dear husband?”

‘Husband’ again, what was her game, I wondered.

“How much did the van cost you?”

“Oh not much.”

“How much did it cost?” I persisted. The details always trip up a liar.

She dismissively said, “I don’t remember exactly,” that from the girl who quibbled over a few rubles for a taxi ride.

“Where’s your ticket?”

“I threw it away. Why all the questions Hollander, don’t you believe me?” I was not going to let her side track me.

“Where are their offices in Moscow?”

“Different parts of Moscow.”

“Where?”

“I don’t know exactly.”

“Where did the van stop in Moscow?”

She hesitated, “They let me off in front of your apartment building.”

“How nice of them, door to door service. So you went to the trouble after a long trip to throw away your ticket between the front of my apartment building and my apartment door?”

“They didn’t give me a ticket. They were friends who were driving to Moscow.” The story’s details changed to account for her inconsistent answers. Now I knew she was lying, but why?

“I thought you took a van run by a business.”

“No, I didn’t mean business. They were friends of mine coming to Moscow, so I paid them some rubles for a ride and they left me off by your apartment building.”

“How much did you pay them?”

“I told you I don’t remember, now stop it Hollander! I still have problems with my eyes and shouldn’t get upset.”

Look who was talking about becoming upset, I thought to myself? I was not only upset but hurt and angry. She still wasn’t telling the truth, and this time it concerned something she did while we were married. After dinner, I felt a little better and somewhat groggy. Still suspicious, I decided to put the incident away for later thinking. During sex, the suspicion resurfaced briefly because she felt different inside, I filed the information away with all the other pieces from that evening.

The next few days we scrambled around getting additional documents and preparing for her visa interview. We almost failed to obtain one crucial document. Angel worked in Cyprus for over six months in the first half of 1999, so she needed a police report that showed no record of arrests on the island. A month earlier, Angel contacted the Athanasious whom she referred to as her “impresarios,” the agents who arranged for her employment. Irina Athanasiou promised to obtain the document from the police and mail it to Angel’s address in Krasnodar. Angel said the document didn’t arrive before she left for Moscow with her friends in the van. I called the agents office and talked with Irina who said the police report went out in plenty of time to reach Angel in Krasnodar. It should have arrived by Saturday when Angel left to visit her friend in the village. Irina’s statement should have raised my suspicions again about Angel’s story of traveling directly from her friend’s village to Moscow without checking at home for such an



important document. But once again my brain wasn't functioning very well, so I blindly assumed the unreliability of the Russian mail service delayed delivery. Irina said she would send a copy express mail to us in Moscow.

Irina and I chatted a little. She was a Russian who married a Greek named Melios. He and his brother Marios owned a couple of clubs in Limassol, Cyprus: Zygos, where Angel worked and another club called Tramps—nice name, but it didn't register amid the stupor I was feeling. The three Athanasiuos used their agency Irinis to import girls, mostly from Russia, to dance in the clubs that Marios managed. Irina had the contacts with various Russian model agencies to obtain the girls while Melios dealt with Cypriot immigration to obtain work visas for the girls as artists.

The other concern over the upcoming visa interview was the incident in Mexico where Angel said the police took her into custody for working at The Men's Club without a work visa. Her visa for Mexico listed her as a translator and had expired by the time of the raid. Angel couldn't speak a word of Spanish, so clearly Leo and his contacts in Mexico bribed some Mexican official to get her a visa. I assumed that was how Russia's so-called model agencies were able to send Russian girls all around the world including America, which was where the girls could make the most money. On one occasion, Leo told me he had regularly bribed an official at the American Embassy \$3,000 to \$4,000 to obtain visas for his girls to work in lap-dancing clubs in Southern California.

Angel worked in Mexico for only three months, so she didn't need to provide the American Embassy with a police report, but her visa application required that she report any arrests. "Arrest," however, is a legal term that does not include detention. So whether the Mexican authorities arrested or detained Angel depended on exactly what happened. Angel said,

“It was Friday night, I was working, when all of a sudden the lights came on and the police were everywhere. They took us to an immigration center where I stayed until the following Monday when they put me on the airplane flight to Moscow for which I had a ticket.”

“Did they take your name, fingerprints or photograph you?” I asked her.

“No.”

“Did they say you were under arrest?”

“No.”

I then consulted with an American lawyer practicing law in Moscow. He drafted a legal memorandum that concluded the facts indicated a detention and not an arrest. I wanted the memorandum thinking that the INS probably ran each applicant’s name through an international database set up by cooperating immigration services around the world that kept track of arrests. Given the close economic ties between America and Mexico, I assumed Mexico participated in such a database. If Angel’s name came up, then I would have a legal argument that she was detained but not arrested.

While preparing for the interview, Angel wanted to register herself as a resident of Moscow so that, as she said, she could live and work in the city in case the Embassy denied her a visa. That didn’t make sense to me because I doubted the Embassy would deny her a visa, but even if it did, she often told me she refused to work in clubs in Russia. So why did she need a document allowing her to stay and work in Moscow as long as she liked?

Angel called working in a club in Russia, “low-level work.” To which I usually asked, “How do you know it is low level, if you never danced in Russian clubs?”

“Girls tell me.”

She especially complained about the way Russian men with money treated Russian girls. “They go into a club and take whatever girl they want, treat her rudely and the girl can’t do anything about it.” Her complaints made me feel morally superior since my upbringing in America taught me that a man treats a lady with deference. Still something always troubled me about Angel’s criticisms of Russian men. The Russian guys I knew didn’t act like that. Maybe my Western tendency to believe women until they clearly showed themselves undeserving of it gave me a skewed perspective of a culture in which the cynicism of men toward women might merely provide the men with protection.

Was Angel planning on the both of us living together and working in Moscow with her doing only modeling if the Embassy denied her visa? I didn’t think so because once she said that if she didn’t receive a visa, she’d go with Leo’s help back to Mexico or some other country. I let that ride at the time because if she did the marriage was over.

Logical or not, I okayed Angel registering in Moscow. My driver agreed to help in dealing with the bureaucracy and allowed her to use his address for her registration. Registering took a couple of afternoons in which Angel and my driver stood in long lines and wrangled with bureaucrats. During one of those afternoons, I took the opportunity to search through her bags looking for any evidence that she came to Moscow sooner than she said. I found none, but just as I was about to give up, I noticed the composition notebook in which she always wrote standing upright inside her bag. How did I miss that, I wondered? A quick scan and I knew it was her diary. Could she be that stupid to leave her diary where I could find it? Since I didn’t read Russian, she probably thought her secrets safe, but she failed to consider copy machines and translators.

My heart pounded hard in my chest as I tried to decide whether to invade her secret world. The truth will set you free, I remembered and rushed off to the nearest copier down the block. The operator made it part way through the diary when he hit Angel's writing in blue ink. The machine couldn't copy it, so I rushed a couple of more blocks down Kutuzovsky to another copier, sweating and fearing all the time that Angel would come home before I completed my mission. I stood impatiently, heart still beating fast, waiting for the second copier to finish. Not since I was a little boy trying to hide something from my mother did I feel like this. What are you afraid of, I kept asking myself. Even if she finds out, what can she do, we're in Russia not America. Finally, with a copy of her diary from the beginning of 1999 to the present, I rushed back home in a sweat, replaced the original as best I remembered in her bag and thought hard of a place to hide the copy. I decided to get the copy out of the apartment because I knew Angel regularly went through my things when I was not around. I didn't want her finding the copy because she would destroy it on the spot and then talk me into believing I was wrong for copying it because she always told the truth. I put the copy in a brown envelope, called my tutor and arranged to hand the package off to her in the metro without telling her what it contained. My tutor disliked Angel, but even so, I knew that young Russian women tended to defend other young Russian women no matter how despicable their acts. I feared my tutor might not agree to hold on to the diary if she knew what it was or might even deep six it because of this unwritten alliance among young Russian ladies in their war against Russian men.

In the evening, after Angel returned from registering, she sternly said, "You have gone through my bag."

I began to sweat. Did she suspect I copied her diary? I answered, "No, I merely moved it."

“You lie!” and she narrowed her eyes as though looking into my mind. “You disrespect me by going through my things.”

“And you disrespect me by telling lies,” I countered.

“Don’t go through me bag again,” she warned and went back to her things in the other room of my apartment.

On Saturday, I met with my tutor hoping she would translate Angel’s diary before the visa interview on Tuesday. But when I told her what it was, she refused. I knew any effort at persuasion was fruitless because of the Russian female camaraderie against men. I asked whether she could recommend another translator. She said she would, but I knew she wouldn’t. Russians are experts at saying yes when they mean no, and only a sixth sense or being Russian can tell. I left and called a CEO friend of mine at an investment fund. He was a traditional American man like myself on whom I could count for help. He didn’t buy into the current wimp ethic foisted on modern American men by shrew like female authority figures. He got his secretary to round up a trustworthy Russian man to do the translation. Unfortunately, he could not start until after the visa interview and, assuming the visa came through, after Angel returned to Krasnodar to pack for our planned trip to New York City. I decided to keep my options open: go through with the interview, since I still possessed no hard evidence but only suspicions about my wife’s duplicity, then get the diary translated and decide what to do afterward. If I kept possession of the visa documents the Embassy will likely grant her, she wouldn’t be able to sneak into America before I notify the Embassy that the marriage is over, which will prevent it from issuing her a duplicate visa. Depending on what the diary said, I go back to New York City alone or with a wife.

Sunday May 28, 2000, five days after Angel's arrival in Moscow and two days before the visa interview, the weather was warm and sunny. Maria, now Angel's friend, invited us on a picnic she organized for her band and a group of friends to a beautiful area of woods and lakes north of Moscow. In a caravan of four cars loaded with Russians, Europeans, one American, food and drink, we headed for the countryside.

Muscovites take every opportunity to leave their city not just because of the air pollution, abandoned stockpiles of pesticides or contaminated toxic waste sites but more deadly health threats. When I first traveled to Russia, just after the collapse of the Soviet Union, I noticed digital lights above the entrances to the post offices but wondered why the numbers shown by the lights were in the teens or twenties. Then I remembered that Russia went by military time. One day while walking passed the post office in the building where I was staying, I saw the numbers change from 14 to 13 and asked my interpreter, "What's wrong with the clock? Does time run backward in Russia?"

She laughed, "That's not a clock. It's a Geiger counter. It warns people whether there is a lot of radioactivity in the area on any particular day."

Later, I learned that Moscow even had a department devoted to finding radioactive hot spots in the city. The Soviet Union, even more so than America, pushed atomic power as a cheap, efficient source of energy in the sixties and seventies. The government widely distributed nuclear materials to public agencies and scientists. Trouble arose when the materials could no longer generate power but were still radioactively harmful. Rather than going through the cost and trouble of properly disposing of the waste, the Commie's dumped it anywhere as if throwing leaves over the fence into a neighbor's yard. So now there are hot spots all over Moscow, but no one knows where they all are. Many buildings, including additions to Moscow State University,

were built on radioactive sites or out of radioactive materials. Since my initial trip to Russia in 1991, the city Government turned off the Geiger counters to save electricity, and the radioactive hunting department does next to nothing for lack of funds. No one cares because all are on the make for themselves. Russia is an alien social order that still hasn't passed through the Renaissance, Reformation or touched the era of Constitutional Liberalism.

When our caravan arrived at the camp area, Angel rushed over to the horses. Like most girls, she loved riding and proceeded to gallop off into the woods. I took in the view feeling content although somewhat unclear in my thinking and waited for the serving of lunch by our barbecue chef, a British businessman who worked in Moscow while maintaining a wife and children in England. Angel galloped back, thrilled as a child from her ride. We took a walk in the woods where others also strolled. I started to seduce her but she clearly didn't want to engage in any romantic activity. Other than that episode, Angel acted very affectionate making me feel as she often did as the most important person in the world. I enjoyed a sense of well-being that we were married.

On the day of Angel's visa interview, we arrived at the Embassy early in the morning to stand on line. One of my translators, Sasha, joined us just in case Angel needed some translations. When Sasha showed up, she looked at Angel and then at me and screwed her face into a look of disgust as though Angel epitomized the worst of Russian womanhood. I naturally thought Sasha wrong; while smart and very pretty, she was only nineteen. The Embassy opened; we handed in the required papers and waited about 20 minutes until we were called to the window for the interview. The amount of time the interviewer spent reviewing Angel's documents was laughably short, maybe five minutes. The interview itself last another five minutes with me answering most of the questions. At the conclusion, the interviewer granted

Angel a visa. She smiled from ear to ear as one of her dreams came true. We congratulated each other on her visa of which I took possession saying, “safekeeping purposes.” I thank Sasha about whom Angel later remarked in a lustful manner that Sasha was very desirable. I just looked at her.

The entire visa process was pretty much a joke from a security point of view. The Embassy officials try to browbeat applicants into not pursuing a visa or create burdensome document requirements in an effort to keep the number of visas issued below a certain number. The bureaucrats, however, should know better. Any Russian will forge documents to get what he wants, and most are amazingly adept at it as though they learned it in grammar school along with the three “Rs.” In Krasnodar, I watched in amazement as Angel forged signatures or altered documents with precision concerning her apartment. “My courses in calligraphy help me with this,” she once said with that Cheshire grin of getting away with something.

As far as Embassy personnel scrutinizing documents or making background checks to ferret out characters dangerous to Americans and our freedoms, they take the sloth approach with only a cursory review. The American bureaucrats probably figure why waste time or energy that they need for partying with sociable Russian men or women.

I don’t remember much more of that week except Angel making dinner and arranging for our flight to New York, which Angel insisted on happening as soon as possible. The earliest tickets were for June 22<sup>nd</sup>, three weeks off. On Sunday evening, my driver and I took Angel to the train for Krasnodar. She had to go home to pack and put her affairs in order for her immigration to New York City. At the train station, she kept telling me not to wait to see her off, something new for her. Despite my befuddled thinking since her arrival, I still suspected that her failure to take a train to Moscow meant she came early to play with one of her boyfriend’s.



Maybe Alfredo came back to town, and she planned to rejoin him, so she wanted me to leave before the train left. With her Moscow registration, she no longer needed to worry about staying in town for more than three days. I decided to wait, escorted her on the train to her berth, said goodbye and watched from the platform as the train pull out of the station.

Right after Angel left on June 4<sup>th</sup>, I received a call from a friend of mine in London. Carol and her mother wanted to visit Moscow for a weekend, so I invited them to stay with me and volunteered to pick them up at the airport and show them around the city. Carol worked as an audit manager at one of the “Big Five” accounting firms and wherever she traveled, she took her mother along. They scheduled their arrival for that Friday and would return to London the following Monday.

During the week leading up to their arrival, the clearness in my thinking returned to normal but without the depression that accompanied my previous separations from Angel. The translator that my CEO friend found to translate Angel’s dairy contacted me. Igor agreed to do the translation without feigning any moral objections. It actually seemed very natural to him, as though he understood the harm certain Russian females could cause a man. Since my plane for the States left in a couple of weeks, I was in a rush. We agreed the quickest way to do the translation was for the two of us to sit down and have him read the diary to me in English while I took notes. We arranged to meet at the business center at the Radisson Slavinskaya Hotel.

The Radisson Business Center was the brainchild of an American businessman. After the collapse of the Soviet Union, Western businesses flocked to Moscow to open up a previously closed market to the moneymaking wonders of capitalism and consumerism. Moscow lacked most of the infrastructure businesses needed, such as reliable communications, faxes, computers, printers and a quiet comfortable setting to discuss business deals. So an American set up and

financed the Radisson Business Center to provide Western businessmen with the tools of their trade. He included Russian partners in his venture in order to provide the necessary connections for doing anything in Moscow and to satisfy Russian legislation requiring the inclusion of Russians in any foreign business that conducted certain activities in the country. After a few years of profitable operation, the American's Russian partners decided to maneuver him out of the business by simply incorporating a new firm, without him, to operate the Business Center. That often happens in Russia. After Western businesses invest the capital and know-how to make a venture successful, the Russian partners, motivated by their religious conviction to greed, use the corrupt legal system to remove the Westerners from the business. The Russians transfer the assets to a second corporation and hire the police or a security firm to take control of those assets and the business's location. Most Westerners complain to their respective governments because the Russian legal system offers no recourse, and most foreign governments do nothing, so the foreign investor usually cuts his losses and moves on. Not so with the founder of the Radisson Business Center, he refused to move on, so one day while waiting for a train in the Moscow Metro, a contract killer shot him dead. Needless to say, no one was ever tried for the murder although everyone knew the people behind it.

#### My True Story

On Thursday, June 8, 2000, I met Igor at the Radisson Business Center to begin translating Angel's diary. Although I copied her diary from the beginning of 1999, when she went to Cyprus, to just before her visa interview in Moscow at the end of May 2000, Igor and I started with Angel's 23 July 1999 diary entry—the day I met her. Her life before we started dating didn't concern me, so we skipped over her doings in Cyprus. Igor looked through the material and estimated it would take us a few days. I stressed that I wanted the complete truth as

she wrote it, no matter how brutal. I had no use for the Russian tendency to euphemize the truth purportedly out of a concern for the feelings of others, when the real reason was a selfish desire to hide from the bleak reality of a society without a conscience. Igor began translating, and I started a slow spiraling descent into Angel's underworld.

Angel came to Moscow in July 1999 not to model but to make money dancing completely naked at a party sponsored by a Moscow magazine. She found the party "cheery," especially when another girl danced with a "dildo munching on it all the time." Angel also made money as the sole player in an "erotic" film produced by an American that was shot just before I took her to the airport the first time to fly back to Krasnodar. That's why she was late meeting my driver and me as we waited outside Leo's apartment used for his out-of-town models. She wasn't shopping as she claimed. The mystery behind her appearing out of nowhere was that she snuck out of the apartment where she shot the film. Her diary described it as "undressing," and each of the onlookers paid her \$20. While in Moscow, she also visited a doctor for the venereal disease called "Gardnerella," which causes a foul smell. Thank goodness I didn't sleep with her then.

Her arrival in Krasnodar was to the arms of her boyfriend of nearly four years, Alexei. When I called the number at which Angel told me not to talk to anyone but her, the woman with whom I conversed was Alexei's mother. No wonder Angel told me not to call that number again. Alexei saw one of the pager messages I sent to Angel in which I closed with "Love Roy." Alexei demanded to know what it meant and who was this guy. Angel replied, "It means nothing. He is just a good friend." Alexei bought Angel's lie along with a few other deceptions about her activities in Moscow and after a couple of weeks, asked her to marry him. She refused because he didn't have enough money—two thousand dollars to be exact. Two thousand dollars

doesn't sound like much, but in Krasnodar the buying power was equivalent to \$50,000 in America. Igor remarked that girls from the provinces found any way possible to get money.

Alexei didn't give up his courtship. He clearly loved Angel, but without money, his love didn't translate into a cash flow for her. Alexei didn't fully realize this nor that Angel hung out with another guy name Andrey who managed the club Imperio in Krasnodar. Alexei continued to give her what he could, not knowing that Angel, with accountant like diligence, listed in her diary the cost of every present followed with "Thank you dear, I love you." One gift was a videotape of what became her favorite movie: *Showgirls*. Angel's diary clearly showed an obsession with the material world, which stood in stark contrast to the monologues she frequently gave me on the importance of spiritual matters in her life. Igor commented, this girl reminds me of Janus, the Roman god of two faces.

At the end of August 1999, Angel received a message from Leo to fly to Moscow immediately so that she could leave for Mexico with him and another girl, Tanya. The flights out of Krasnodar were all booked, so she used her F.S.B. contact to acquire a ticket. Agents in the F.S.B. can accomplish what ordinary citizens cannot, provided the agents receive a currency of value to them—dollars or sex. Angel's diary didn't say what she paid. Before leaving for Moscow, Angel and Alexei took a vacation in which she suffered from a vaginal infection. The medicine she spent so much time looking for in Moscow was for this condition, whatever it was. Alexei and Angel partied a lot, and without Alexei knowing, she did some lap dancing. No wonder Angel looked tired when she arrived in Moscow.

In Mexico City, Leo's partner, Salvador, met them at the airport. I realized that in the photographs Leo showed me of him and Angel in her Mexican apartment, the other man pictured didn't work at The Men's Club as Angel had said but was Salvador. While visiting his house,

Salvador showed Angel full frontal and rear naked pictures of her he obtained from Leo's Internet site. He told her that he wanted the girl in the photographs, who was Angel, as his girl friend.

Angel toured Mexico City with Leo and Tanya, but Angel didn't get along with Tanya who criticized her for using cheap lipstick while Angel retorted in her diary that Tanya was cheap herself. In person, Angel assumed the mask of humility, honesty and criticized no one, but the pages of her diary painted an arrogant, duplicitous, caviling and egotistical young lady. When a shoeshine boy tried to polish Angel's shoes in return for a kiss, Angel wrote, "For my kiss he would lose all his proceeds." She remarked how when walking in the street with Tanya, she, not Tanya, attracted stares, whistles and men jumped out of cars when they saw her. At discos, it was always her that the crowds looked at in admiration—not the beautiful friends she danced with such as the finalists in the Miss Krasnodar beauty contest. She believed herself a great dancer in the vein of Isadora Duncan when in reality, as a dance friend of mine later observed, her moves were limited to that of a stripper and her lack of coordination kept her from even doing the Salsa properly. Before she went to bed and when she awoke, Angel told herself over and over, "I am beautiful, I am beautiful...."

Salvador took Angel, Tanya and Leo to Acapulco and there made his move on Angel; she rebuffed his attempts. On learning this, Leo scolded her for knowing better. He brought her to Mexico for Salvador and to work as a lap dancer, which she knew and agreed to when Leo made the arrangements a month ago. Leo warned her against always trying to get something for nothing. Angel agreed that since Salvador spent so much of his money on her "it was fair to spend a night with him." From her diary emerged the personality of a true middle-eastern businesswoman—always trying to get the better of the other party. She believed in caveat

emptor—buyer beware, and didn't feel fully satisfied unless she cheated another somehow. But if a client undercounted the number of lap dances she gave, the hostility smoldering inside her burst into outraged on the pages of her dairy but into tears before the client or a club's bouncers.

Through Leo's connections, Angel and Tanya found work at the The Men's Club, where girls from around the world gave lap dances in their tong panties. The customers paid \$20 for about a three-minute dance from which \$4 went to Leo, \$2 to the managers of the club and \$3 to Maria, who helped obtained visas for the lap dancers under the pretense of them working as translators and placed the girls in various clubs in Mexico City. Angel made \$11 on each dance. Girls on the day shift from 2:30 PM to 8 PM pocketed around \$250 while on the 8 PM to 2:30 AM shift they averaged \$300. Angel worked both shifts.

Listening to Igor's translation, my heart cracked a little more with each man whom Angel, often euphemistically, described her involvement. The Angel I loved was merely an illusion concocted by a consummate con artist. Her diary showed an uncanny ability to get away with telling the most preposterous lies in the face of overwhelming evidence that she spoke falsely. She convinced young, middle-aged and older men to trust her, to help her because she needed them and cared about them. I remembered the effect of her soliloquies on me. I never could recall the words for their impact came more from the tone of her voice and the look in her eyes that swept aside all logic leaving the glow of believing the absurd because she made you want to believe. Her false feminine warm heartedness masked a calculating businesswoman who kept throughout her diary a balance sheet of material gain. Angel saw every interaction with another human as an opportunity to acquire something she didn't deserve. Lie, cheat or deceive but make sure you win something of value was her motto. When a guy didn't give enough, she

cursed him in her diary, “Let God be his judge!” but if he gave more than expected, she asked God to bless him.

Angel was no fool, she knew how to market herself and, perhaps more important, which market segment to ruthlessly pursue—men with a good heart, that is, suckers! Angel didn’t take all suitors in Mexico; she focused on her market segment. The men she used sounded decent and caring toward her, wanting her as their regular girl friend, or at least the image she so effectively created of a kindhearted, decent girl trying to survive in a cruel and unjust world that oppressed women. She not only used the arsenal of weapons of the traditional female grounded in deception but also effectively exploited modern day feminazi propaganda of female victimization.

Angel left nothing to chance in her pursuit of money. Besides her methodical materialistic practicality, she invoked religion by appealing to the Russian Orthodox Saint Nicolas the Thaumaturge to help “us” in all our business. Her regular usage in her diary of the plural pronoun to refer to herself at first seemed strange until I learned that her mother had set Angel on her course to wealth and perhaps fame. For Angel, she and her mother were in a partnership to exploit men’s passion for a pretty young lady and sympathy for her hard luck stories. A letter from her mother encouraged Angel to have “many new conquests.”

My translator and I pushed on through the dark, self-deluding, cruel and ultimately lonely reaches and experiences of a mind maniacally driven by greed to whom the gods had given physical beauty and smarts as she exploited those gifts in Mexico City.

September 16, 1999

During my first day dancing at the Men’s Club, I made 16 dances, 27 dances yesterday and 31 dances today. I could make even more but I did not manage to receive order for dances until too late. Yesterday, when there was a pause, I thought that my music began and hurried to

the stage. Everybody laughed because there was no music, so I ran away in a pretense to change my dress.

Today I bought for 189 pesos white sandals and a silver chain for wearing on foot and a bright dress for 600 pesos.

Today one fucker promised me to give his credit card. I went with this idiot; I left my work before my working time actually ended. But he gave me (I could hardly manage to beg it) \$60, he promised to give me \$300 more; later, we made fun. But when I refused to kiss him, here he all of a sudden changed his tone; he said that he was a citizen of Mexico and that he would go to police... He took back all money... He was the most down man... Ali... Fucker...

Azul, Tanya, me and men went to Karnavaca to a restaurant. We dined for 4 hours. He annoyed me. It was on Saturday. But in the evening he ordered 13 dances. My customer promised me to gift a dress, a nice dress.

Yesterday I danced for one man – he gave me \$200. And today I danced to two men – they ordered 20 dances, and one more man ordered 6 dances.

We went to cinema with German guys. I liked it, and Tanya liked it so-so. I allowed myself to make pedicure – it took 1 hour and cost 80 pesos.

Today is my mom's birthday! She is 49 now! Let my mum be happy! I wish her good health, very good health, immense love, happiness, luck in everything, peace and well being!!! Let God bless us two!!!

September 19, 1999

After a long delay, I decided to call up my darling boyfriend Alexei. His voice was dry. I was saying that I miss him, and he never mentioned that he missed me, he did not say anything encouraging to me. After it I burst into tears. I even do not want to call him up any more. He even was not glad to hear my voice. I do not know. Maybe all this was due to the fact that he had broken his car and not my deciding to stay in Mexico.

I had my second meeting with Mavro, we went to a restaurant where there are fountains. It was nice. We went to airport. It was so magnificent: large field and aircrafts. We kissed and played; it was so nice.

On Saturday I made 8 dances. One idiot cheated me – I lost 11 dollars. Let God be his judge!

Azul, Louis, her customer, and me went to his home and ate Japanese meals – it was very tasty. In the evening we went to a restaurant and later we moved to the bar of Latin American music. We had a nice time; we danced and everybody was looking at me...

Today the weather is so fine, the sun is shining brightly, but there are no customers. And a bit later all of them came at the same time... I bought a bright dress! Tomorrow I am going to buy some more things (a top and a skirt).

My God bless me! Give me wisdom, forces and patience! Our Lady save and give us love! Guardian angel, keep us! Nicolas the Thaumaturge, help us in all our business!

September 23, 1999

There were the following interesting events these days. Now I have \$3600!!! God be praised! I plan to soon go to the all-nude Penthouse Club and to work there a little because the girls there make more money. God help me!



On Monday I made 25 dances. On Tuesday I made 37 dances! Today I made 35 dances! On Tuesday a man called me, he looked very simple. He ordered 4 dances and gave me 2500 pesos! On Wednesday he sent me a basket of red roses! God give happiness to him!

I met with Pablo. He is very good at kissing... But his character is rather heavy.

At the club I made 20 dances for one customer! God give him love and real happiness! (I gave to his young friend my name card with telephone number, and he by mistake passed to my customer. It was terrible!) Before it one fucker drove me to tears. He was tall and had attractive appearance. But he accosted to me with questions: Why did I speak at once about money? Why did I think only about money? He repeated all this about 5 times. I could not stand it and went away weeping. Fucker! Let God be his judge!

Later in the evening, I got acquainted with Max. He looks very attractive. He promised to take me to watch the underwater world with porpoises. He sent to me wonderful roses 7 pieces. Tanya has disappeared and Azul was frightened by it. Later it turned out that Tanya fell ill a little...

Roy called me up. He told me that he loved me and was going to wait for me to return to Moscow.

My God bless me!!! Give us forces and patience and guard us against all evil!!!

October 02, 1999

On Sunday and on Saturday, Azul, Alfredo and me went to an old Mexican town four hours outside Mexico City. We waited for this trip for a long time. Sometimes he could go, sometimes he had to prepare a number... But we went! We bought fruits... We came to such an old, such a nice city. Colors of houses were so picturesque! In the evening we visited disco. We danced there and crowds came to watch us, especially me. In the night I thrice changed my bed, going to another one, because Alfredo wanted sex. I had a dream that somebody touches me between my legs, but I could not understand who it was. I felt some movement. I woke up and saw him with erection. In the morning I told him that I was not a prostitute! He apologized. Alfredo gifted to me earrings and a topaz pendant. He gifted to Azul a silver bracelet as a present to her birthday (\$450). It was wonderful! A marvelous trip.

It was difficult on Sunday and on Monday as well. Each day I made 22 – 25 dances.

On Thursday... I woke up in the morning, washed, and Azul told me: "Let us run, faster!" At first I did not understand her and thought that it was some kind of a game, then I heard something falling down. I ran. In front of me on steps slowly ran a woman. I ran out in pajama so I took a security's suit. Near by stood a house and I saw how its jalousie was hanging here and there. It was terrible... My heart was beating hard... Alfredo and I went to change money – I thought that somebody had stolen my 500\$ because the package was empty... I began to weep hysterically but Alfredo was a nice fellow, he soothed me and said that he would give me those \$500, nothing had actually happened. I thought that a lad who was examining the house after the earthquake had taken the money, because the bag with money was open, but the money was there. In my room everything was falling down...

At work my eyes ached and watered from my contacts, customers did not want me.

At the Penthouse Club the dancers spread open their places. Nobody wanted me... I made only 6 dances in Penthouse. I understood – yes, somebody has put an evil eye upon me.

I finally removed the evil eye – what a relief!!!

At work there was a special show advertising the club attended by Mexican stars, I was “Miss Russia”. They shot me for TV, took photos! It was so wonderful! Azul celebrated her birthday. I gifted her a silver wine-glass. Let God give her all the best! Today she was working hard in Acarico. It was a favor to her. Alfredo bought me some food, fruits and underpants.

After I called my darling Alexei, I decided not to call him any more because of his questions: “What do you do there?” And after I began to quarrel with him because he had not said once “miss you” or “love you”, he said, “Why do you call me names? I’m not doing what you’re doing in Mexico for money.” I gave him my fax number – and never received anything from him by fax!!! If he does not answer to me first, I will not write to him myself!

Mavro has appeared again. Well, we shall see him!

My God bless us and save us!!!

October 09, 1999

There have happened a lot of events. On Saturday Mavro and me went to his house. The house is good, large. We kissed, did something more. He bought me jogging shoes but they too small, so he will exchange them. We went to aqua-park where we rode attractions. It was outstanding!

The next day, Sunday, Alfredo and me went to look at the pyramids. It was wonderful; I climbed to the very top! He gifted me a pair of silver bracelets and many other things. The pyramids belong to the God of Sun and the God of Moon. I meditated and accumulated energy. Then we went to the restaurant, which is situated inside a rock with candles and Mexican folk dances. They invited me to dance, and I jumped a little. It was cheery, everybody looked at me.

I bought a red dress, it gave at the seams on the first day, I brought it back to sew up. They apologized before me.

At the club on Monday I had 22 dances, on Wednesday I had 45 dances, thanks to Raul. He wrote out to me a check for 5000 pesos! The next day I received this money. Let God give him love and happiness.

On Thursday I made 39 dances. On Friday I made 27 dances, \$60 was given to me by one man from Florida. There were different situations. One customer insisted that I had danced for him not 3 but only 2 dances – it all makes me feel nervous, I told bouncer. Prior to it I had a clear face but yesterday in the evening it covered with spots... Mavro promised me to change jogging shoes and said that he had left them at home. All of it was actually a lie. He behaved to me like he did to his other girl (he took back all things he had bought to her – fucker, son of a bitch). Today he told me by phone that if I wanted to separate from him, that it was my own problem and he would separate from me with great pleasure (I felt that our relations would not last for long).

Azul, Alfredo and me went to ride horses – it was wonderful! These horses had a lighter saddle. First we went to mountains and then descended. Wonder!

I got acquainted with Sydney, he is from Australia, and we shall see what will come out of it!

I so miss my dear boyfriend Alexei. And what about him?

I called up my mum – the first thing she told me was that Yevgeniy Martianov who trained me in the broad jump when I was in college would be in Mexico City at a conference. My mum greatly feared that he might learn what I was doing in Mexico City. It would cause a scandal at the Academy.

On Sunday, Sydney and me went to his home and had sex. Then we went to Entertainment Park where we rode all kinds of attractions; he bought so many tickets that we won prizes – small toys. Then we left Entertainment Park went to a church to pray and later I got inebriated. We are acquainted for already a month and a half. He too often says that he loves me; there has come time to check his feelings. I understood that Mavro wanted only to have sex with me. I did not give it to him, so he became very angry and could hardly restrain himself. And then he began “to separate from me”.

My God, bless us! Give us forces and patience! Our Lady save us and give us love! Guardian angel, save and keep us! Nicolas the Thaumaturge, help us in all our deeds!!!

October 17, 1999

Now I am in Cancun. We went on Friday, early in the morning. I went with Alfredo, Azul and Martin. The hotel is so magnificent... It is situated in such a nice place... We did not sleep in the night from Thursday to Friday (I made 34 dances). I sunbathe without clothes on the balcony and Alfredo took pictures. Color of the sea is so pleasant. Alfredo wanted intercourse. But I told him that I had menstruation. The next day we went to the park “X-SCARLET”. First we walked along the river one photo cost \$8—so much. It was so interesting to roam among rocks, light everywhere is so different.

My suspicions about the sunbathing photo Angel showed me on New Year’s Eve proved true. Azul didn’t take the picture as Angel claimed, but her client Alfredo did with Azul standing in the background. Alfredo paid for Angel and Martin for Azul on the Cancun trip. Alfredo wasn’t as magnanimous as he claimed in taking Angel along on trips just because she was Azul’s friend. No, Alfredo took Angel along for him, and the story he told me over the telephone about the two of them being just “good friends” was probably concocted by him and Angel.

Then we went to dolphins. They had interesting skin. We swam with dolphins. We caressed dolphins’ bodies. They do not like if somebody touches their muzzles. Than we were lying on the water and two dolphins were carrying us along like in the film about some superhero. “I am superhero.” It was overwhelming.

We went to watch a concert of folk music. I felt cold... Alfredo took care of me. We had hardly managed to persuade him to feed us. Alfredo did not want to feed us.

Today in the morning Alfredo left us – he went for a business meeting. We were swimming all the day; I played volleyball. Then we went to a rock music restaurant. We watched stars and sea.

On Wednesday at the club I made 52 dances. Raul has ordered 32 dances. It was my record!!! He gifted to me a lot of roses. Let God send happiness to him!

I called up my darling Alexei and asked him to call me up on Tuesday. He reluctantly answered that he could dedicate to me only one minute. Thank you for your generosity!

My God, give me forces, patience and bless me!!!

October 30, 1999

The week after Cancun was very interesting. It was so good without Alfredo; nobody begging for sex all the time. Sydney came to the club; he did not pay for dances, but he promised to return money later. I had his jacket, so I did not fear for the money. There came a few men from Boston. On Friday we danced to them.

I went to Acapulco with Yatsento; he missed me. We traveled in the night from Friday to Saturday. All the way I was sleeping. The hotel has a swimming pool with flowers. It was wonderful... He more or less gave me to sleep. In the morning we had our breakfast on the balcony with a nice view on Pacific Ocean and of the city. We went to the beach where we flew with a parachute pulled by a motorboat. Practically all the beach boys asked to take photo of me. I had my photos with a parachute and a seashell.

In the evening we went to a restaurant; from there it is nice to watch Acapulco all in lights. We were sitting at the table with candles. Yatsento as well annoyed to me with his accosts. But he is more self-restrained than Alfredo.

Now I am sitting in the plane with Alfredo flying to Puerto Vallarta. I am nor very much happy, because I know that I will live with him in hotel. I am tired of ... with him.

Last week to the club came Max, he gifted to me a golden chain and a perfume. Then he bought to me a chocolate. After work I had to go with him to a hotel three or four times. (We are taking off now.)

We have quarreled with Sydney. He spoke about his feelings, he gave money for my dances and I returned his jacket. All this talk of feelings is bullshit. When we fixed time for a meeting he never came and I wasted my time and lost money. When we went with a man from Boston to Acapulco, Sydney felt upset because I promised to go with him. (It is so nice to look out of the plane's illuminator – we are flying over mountains and forests on our way to Puerto Vallarta...) I understand Sydney, but he does not keep his word. He speaks too much of love, but he does not prove it. For example, I asked him to meet with me on Friday, but he simply did not come... He is a young selfish fool.

I called up Alexei's mother. He has not sent me a single fax – "It is too expensive for me!" he says. I said to his mother that he had forgotten about me, but she said that he had written me a letter.

My agent Leo in Moscow annoyed me with his faxes about money. Sometimes our calculations do not coincide. He sends faxes every day. I must be careful Leo does not find out I do not pay him all I agreed. Maria, his partner here, says that if I will decide to return to Mexico, I have to call her up without Leo's involvement. Then I will make more money.

God, give me forces to lower my weight! Bless us! Amen!

November 1, 1999

Only 10 days are left till I will meet my 24<sup>th</sup> birthday.

Puerto Vallarta is such a wonderful place. If only I were here with my darling Alexei. I have been thinking about my boy for a long time. I would so much like to be with him at this

moment. This is a magnificent hotel where you do not need to think about your food, all is included in hotel price. Two days cost \$600 for each including meals and cost of flight. It was so wonderful! I swam in the swimming pool, played volleyball in water, where they serve cocktails, a tasty one, tequila with concentrated lemon, and we splashed the losers with water. It was wonderful! Alfredo and me played as well table tennis and there he succeeded better than at volley ball. I recall my boy Alexei– I think I love him, because I all the time think about him, and does he think about me. He did not send me a written line for the two months. I think, I will receive nothing from him even on my birthday. Why?

In Puerto Vallarta there were a lot of people from the north of America. There were as well Poles and people from Byelorussia. In the evening we go to local disco. There I saw a homosexual man. He had on a white evening dress. We danced a little, and in the evening Alfredo annoyed me with silly talk of love. He said that he feels deeply for me and that I do not understand him. I told him a lie to keep him at bay. I said that somebody tried to rape me and I ran away. He got angry, began to look for a doctor, but then again began to accost to me. I have so hardened; I felt nothing because I am so tired of his pawing... I used different ways but nothing worked with him. He allowed me to sleep. The next day he made me touch him in the bathroom. "It is common; just a little bit," he pleaded. I swore so much. But then he came - God be praised!

Later we rode water motorcycle. I kept maximum speed, and he feared. We also went by sailing vessel! I could not stand his touches! He is old; he might be my father! His smell, I do not like it. I see that he likes me but I am tired of him making me do things, which I do not like to do... I am thankful to him.

Today is Alfredo's birthday. I presented to him a postcard and a little angel. Alfredo said that the plane would take off at 14:00, and it turned out that the plane took off at 15:30. Smart fellow...

With God's help, with God's blessing, amen!

November 12, 1999

Alfredo, Azul and me again went to another resort town. He promised not to want sex with me. The flight took 45 minutes. Hotel was so marvelous! On the first day we played tennis. In the evening he again began to accost to me... We went to disco, danced and changed partners. It was wonderful!

The next day Alfredo and me rode water motorcycles. It was outstanding! He bought to me slippers.

I called up my darling Alexei. I asked his mother whether he had another girl. She called him to the phone. When I asked him why he had not written to me he answered: "I will try to find time for it." "Why do you prefer not to speak to me? Do you want to end our relations?" He did not answer anything. I asked: "Why do you behave like that?" He answered, "I am fed up with everything, with what you do for money. When you said you were going to stay in Mexico for the money, I felt as if something broke in me, a string snapped."

After this conversation I was weeping for 20 minutes.

In the evening there was an interesting competition between couples. I put roll of toilet paper between my legs and Alfredo, blind folded, put broom handle between his legs. I gave instructions for him to put broom handle into hole in toilet paper. Then we ran to drink beer through a tube that was very sexy. Then the couples were given one minute to swap clothes.

Finally the girls were blind folded and had to feel between all the men's legs to identify who was their partner. We won 4 tests of 5.

Alfredo accosted me in bed again. I ran away and later he apologized.

On Monday back at work, I made 20 dances for 6 hours of work. On Tuesday I met Manuel, who paid me \$500, plus toilet water. It was a nice evening. In the evening I made 23 dances – the business went not so good. But my 500\$... Jorge said that he would present to me 24 roses for my birthday.

Alfredo called me up at 00:05am on my birthday. He said that he had especially set his alarm clock and congratulated me. In the morning – it was wonderful. I had just opened my eyes when they brought to me roses – from Roy. Later he rang to me and congratulated me.

Later came Alfonso. He gifted to me a rose, a set of chains for hands and feet and a postcard in Russian wishing to me happiness. Alfredo came to me and presented gilded flowers and a postcard with warm words. Very nice roses with sunflowers. We went to a restaurant and ate very tasty salmon. Alfredo ordered an unusually tasty pie.

At work it was wonderful. One customer bought 18 dancers! Prior to it 2 customers ordered 8 and 7 dances each. Linda, Yulya and Azul sang to me. It was wonderful! Then the club presented to me a cake. It was my best birthday. It was not saddened by the fact that somebody had stolen my 1000 pesos and 1000 pesos from another girl. One more friend presented to me a rose and a large stuffed dog.

Yesterday Alfredo bought me a nice bag for 1300 pesos – class! But he got mad – he wants to have sex with me. I think that I will agree to it in order not to go to work. Yesterday he paid to me for two hours as much as he pays for 10 dances at the club—\$200. We went to a park and then to a church. He came to the club and bought 10 dances! Let God bless him!

Leo faxed me saying he had not received his money – the bank in Russia does not take money for some reason.

My God, I thank you from all my soul for everything!!! Bless us, give us wisdom, forces and patience! Our Lady, protect us against all misfortunes, give us immense peace, well being, strengthen our belief and hope!!!

Guardian angel, keep us! Keep my money safe, money of all of us! Nicolas the Thaumaturge! Be my quick assistant in my business and in my losing weight! All Saints, help me!

Thank You, my God, for all ordeals, for my wonderful 23 years! Bless me in my new 24 year!!!

November 20, 1999

What a surprise I received on Saturday! Azul congratulated me with birthday as soon as I opened my eyes. Then Alfredo and I went to ride on horsebacks. We went to the park and rode attractions, and then we went to a restaurant. Garçons began to bring meals and at that moment to the hall entered Tanya with a pie – surprise! There arrived Yulya and Paco, Xavier. We danced; it was merry! I am very grateful to everybody.

At the same day I made 18 dances. I got acquainted with Aleho – it was so marvelous! On Sunday Alfonso and me went to the city. We had a walk and bought aromatic sticks. We sat near the church on the grass... It was so wonderful! I have rested in my soul so well! Then we went to a Mexican restaurant. We returned home and went to the region where there was a lot of youngsters and bought yogurt. We wanted Cappuccino but there was a line. It was wonderful!

On Monday I again worried about money – I spoke to Leonid by phone. I made that day 11 dances, and Alfredo paid to me for 14—\$280. We went to a nightclub. Girls there have nice breasts and figures. A brunette danced to me in the private room. Alfredo helped, she was slightly biting me and rubbed me between my legs. I like the way girls do it. Then Alfredo wanted to take me to the hotel. When I refused he went into hysterics and began to cry. He said that he could not wait any more and that I was playing with him. I understood that I had to stop putting him off or he would stop paying me money. I drank some rum and gave it to him. He was happy...

I interrupted Igor to check the date of the month for Monday. Sure enough, November 15, the date of the fax on Westin Hotel stationary in which Angel said she visited places alone in Mexico, thought about me and missed me but obviously not enough to refrain from sex with Alfredo.

The next day Alfredo presented to me a toy dog – it is a wonder! On Tuesday he again paid for 14 dances. We went to “Titanium”. All men were looking at me and I was looking at the girls. I had drunk so much that I gave it to him that night; I was drunk and spoke much in Russian.

On Wednesday and on Thursday I had 41 dances every day--\$820 each day. Friday I had 45 dances. Benjamin gave me money and ticket to go to Cancun. Alfonso presented to me a silver bracelet and lent to me his jacket. He fell in love with me... Yesterday I was with Max. He told me that my visa would soon be ready, so I masturbated him and he was happy.

“Yesterday” meant November 19 the date of the second fax Angel sent me from Mexico. In it she asked me to call her to help her avoid customs when she returned. True to her cozen nature, she wrote, “I kiss you! I hold you! Your Angelina.” I couldn’t tell whether she held part of Max before or after writing the fax.

November 23, 1999

I am on the way back. We stopped in the hotel “Fiesta Americana”. And it has began... We had been waiting for a room for an hour and a half. At 15 o’clock we entered the room – it was filled with tobacco smoke, lay hair and condom wrappings. We could not prove that we had a bank account for 3000 pesos for the hotel. In the restaurant there is a sad music; customers had to pay for drinks separately. The swimming pool was good. We met boys, had a meal in the evening – the boys paid for us. Then we went to a disco. There was such a show... Sometimes there were water bubbles. In the night we went to the sea to swim. It was something unusual. In Caribbean sea there were my admirer and Azul. We did not kiss though we wanted.

The next day we went to gym. I had a good training. In the evening we went to a shop. Azul and me had \$600 each. Azul bought a cap and a bag, and I bought the next day jogging

shoes. In the evening I was laying on the surface of the sea, all in darkness. The next day we asked to wake us up but they did not do it. We were nearly late for AQUA WORLD. We rode water motorcycles and when we were parking instructor turned over our water motorcycle. It was wonderful to see large fishes swimming in water near me. We went back along the seaside.

In the evening I ran in gym for 60 minutes. Then we went shopping. We bought jogging shoes to me. In the night I said good-bye to the sea.

Today Thanks to God there were no problems with coupons. Azul leaves the day after tomorrow. My God, bless us!!!

November 29, 1999

When Azul was leaving she did not even wake me up. She left to me a message saying that she loved me, thanked me for everything and will miss our playing.

I had a good result on Tuesday – 41, 45, 41 dances. Raul again appeared here. He bought 15 dances and went away (he was with a friend). First business went so-so, but later, approximately from November 23, I had to work much.

On Thursday I could hardly manage to make 41 dances. Alfonso and I went to a Mexican restaurant. He wanted to leave for Monterrey. We gave to each other our addresses. He said that he loved me... I went with Enriko to a good Japanese restaurant.

Friday has come. Alfredo said to me not to work. I did not have to work because it was a holiday but I wanted to earn the money since I would be returning home in another week on November 29.

With Alfredo's assistance I received a Banamex Visa debit card on which I can put much of my money, so I can take it out of Mexico and into Russia with out customs knowing. The rest I will put on to travelers cheques, but not too much for customs might find them.

My customer Jose came and took 20 dances. I danced 2 dances more. I danced as well 6 dances for another customer. And all of a sudden there switched on the light – police everywhere! It was a raid. They checked everyone for drugs. We were divided into two separate groups – Mexican girls and foreign girls. Then they shot us with video camera and pushed us into a bus with bars on windows. There were so many policemen. They took us to a police station and we stayed there from 11pm to 4am in the morning. They wrote down our names, took our fingerprints. Cuban girls were crying. Then they took us to the immigration jail. All of us were so cold. There were Yulya and I, and as well Cuban girls – all of us slept in the prison cell on the floor. We slept only 4 hours. We thought that they would let us go soon but they did not. Then the bell rang and they brought to us some meal. The club brought to us socks, sweaters, and meals from McDonalds and fruits. At first we all kept together, were merry, there was a woman from Cuba with braids. Everybody felt sorry for her, but later when somebody of us took photo of her, she began shouting and gave us away to police. Policeman wanted to know who had taken photo, but all of us refused to say. When he went away we teased that Cuban woman, laughed at her and her braids.

By now it didn't surprise me that Angel sanitized the real story of the police raid on The Men's Club in order to obtain her visa. Her diary describes an arrest—not a detention.



Then Hungarian girls began to separate from us. Yulya is a kind girl – when we were sleeping she covered me with a blanket and tried to help in everything. I tried to help her as well. She is a nice girl.

Two girls from Hungary went away on Sunday. Policemen did not allow them even to take their things. From police station they went directly to airport.

On Monday, November 29, I called up Francisco – he is a friend of Max. I asked him to take me out of here. He told me that it was impossible. I don't know what has happened to my things. I do not know what happened to my visa that Max was getting me. Alfredo called me up and told me that a girl had gathered my things. She did not find one of my bags. I was nervous – maybe she took it and just said that she did not find it?! Later Alfredo and Maria have found everything, they gathered and brought to me all my things. I am so thankful to them! Now I have with me cash for Leo – \$2200, my Traveler's Cheques – \$5000 and another \$2100 in cash and the remaining \$18,000 is with Alfredo who promised to bring the \$18,000 to me in Russia in 10 days. My God, I hope that he will bring it; this money is my flat. I worked hard to earn this money, 10 –12 hours a day.

When they brought our things in sacks from the club, one Hungarian girl found out that somebody had stolen her money, perfume and cosmetics. It was good that I took everything with me.

They took me out of prison at 20:30 and my plane was to take off at 21:10! I did not see Alfredo and Maria, because the police put me right on my flight to Russia. Katherine and Yana said later that Alfonso was waiting for me and he was very upset. But I didn't not manage to see anybody...

Our Tanya was also frightened and decided to fly back to Russia with me. She is sitting now here, in the plane, somewhere to the left from me. God be praised, she sits rather far from me.

I would not desire anybody to fly from Mexico as I did.

I thank you, Mexico, with all my heart for everything! I will come back!

Now we are approaching Frankfurt. My God bless me!

Alfredo bought to me a jacket, pullover and a sports suit. I hope very much that I will receive my money by mid-December. My God. Help me! Bless and forgive us, protect us!!!

My translator, Igor, said he was exhausted while I felt emotionally stunned from bouncing down into the ever-deeper circles of marriage hell. We stopped for the day. I had never believed in the concept of a soul, but whatever animated my life, Angel's diary had blasted it—such utter disappointment in a person. How could anyone live such a life—no dignity, no self-respect, none of the nobler qualities that humans struggled for over millenniums in order to grow beyond the desires dictated by the lowest chakra of bodily appetites? Angel reminded me of the panther from H.G. Wells' *Island of Dr. Moreau* that kept reverting back to her animal nature. So far her diary never once mentioned any of the virtues of compassion, enlightenment

or honesty, only the sordid vices of lies, cheating, hypocrisy and using sex for material gain. She even tried to pull down God by entreating him to help her in her business endeavors. I'm not religious, but even I wouldn't tempt the fates by asking God to bless someone I successfully scammed while damning those I didn't. It's almost as though she thought of herself as one of God's angels, doing his bidding to raise funds for paradise by tricking guys.

Despite the revulsion, I still tried to find some hope in this sea of filth. Such is the weakness of men when it comes to women. The mask behind which the real Angel lived, that carefully crafted counterfeit image continued to hold sway over me, and I started rationalizing again by telling myself her actions weren't so bad. After all, she came from an impoverished childhood and the materialism of the middle class in even a third world country like Mexico simply overwhelmed her. She accepted the largess of men who fell for her and provided them geisha like pleasures in return. So what? She boosted their egos by pretending to like them and distracted them from their staid existence with her endearing girlish thrill of discos, amusement parks and travel. She made the middle-aged man feel young again, and the young man feel wanted. But none of it was true, just a con, and no self-delusion could hide that one of those middle-aged guys was I, although I tried to convince myself otherwise. Her diary clearly showed she pined for her Alexei—not me. Still the illusions my conscious mind constructed to avoid the pain persisted while my intuition kept bubbling up with the sense that her diary probably left out the worst of her actions.

Igor asked, “Are you sure she is Russian? Her Russian grammar is awful. It is as though she never learned the language. She gets most of the conjugations wrong and writes as though she were German.”

“Her birth certificate says she was born in Samara, but her mother, according to Angel, took her to Germany when she was an infant. Maybe she learned German first, but she never mentioned being able to speak it, and I never heard her use it. Just another errant piece of the puzzle,” I said dejectedly not really concerned about her linguistic abilities.

“How did her mother get permission to leave Russian back then? That would be in the late 70s and only important people could leave.”

“Angel said her mother traveled around Russian a lot as a dancer and also went to Germany as a dancer.”

“Was her mother a ballet dancer?” Igor asked.

“No, modern dance.”

“Strange, I don’t see the Soviets allowing a dancer with a young baby to travel to Europe unless she was a ballet dancer.”

“There is much about Angel that I am finding strange.”

Igor continued. “She really keeps a close track of the money she spends and makes. And I noticed that she always is trying to take advantage. She wants something but tries to avoid giving something in return.

“In America, we call that the consummate con artist.”

My translator laughed, “So, same time tomorrow?”

“Okay, see you then.”

I dragged my stomped heart home, decided against going to a couple of meetings, took a sleeping pill and forgot my worries in the land of oblivion.

## I Put a Spell On You

The next day, hope reared her deceitful head with the justification that Angel really wasn't my girlfriend while in Mexico. Before she went to Mexico, we went out for a few nights, kissed a little, one massage and nothing more. How could I expect fidelity from someone who didn't owe me any? My struggle, however, to find a lawyerly argument that kept Angel as my true soul mate failed to realize the obvious—a girl who did what she did in Mexico would never be anyone's soul mate. But I didn't see that at the time. Igor picked up translating the diary with Angel's December 7, 1999, entry, which was a week after her deportation from Mexico and arrival in Moscow. I hoped the virtues she often talked about in her soliloquies, and I desperately wanted her to possess showed themselves in the remaining part of her diary.

In Frankfurt I avoided Tanya. The airport paging system told me to report to a message office. There was a message for me to call Roy. He could not meet me when I landed, but told me he arranged for me to get through customs without trouble and that Leo would be at the airport.

In Moscow I tried to sneak through the custom line for nothing to declare but they stopped me, searched my bag and found my \$9,300. I was asked where I worked and where I took all these money. I answered that all these money are a present of my boy-friend – and you are welcome to see and to check. They let me in.

It turned out that 2 men should have met me and should have helped to come through customs without problems. Leo knew it and on purpose came later. But he was fooled because he did not know that most my money would come later with Alfredo and the commission I finally paid Leo \$1400 less than I owed him. I had to spend the night in a studio. But thanks to God all ended well.

Apparently, Angel and Leo weren't in on a scheme, as Kroll's investigators thought, that the two would have the militia confiscate the money from my apartment and then try to con me into making good their loses. Leo's actions still looked suspicious for whatever reason while Angel wanted to cheat Leo out of some of the commission she owed him, which she did.

The next day Roy and I went to the Bolshoi Ballet "Giselle". Roy gifted to me a huge bear and hired an FSB agent to guard me and my money because he suspected Leo might try to use his police contacts to arrest me on a false charge and take my money.

In Krasnodar, my darling Alexei met me with white flowers. He did not even embrace me and was silent all the way home. He did not want to enter my house. He wanted me to hate him. He shouted that he was unfaithful to me. At home I went into hysteric, my mum helped me very much. I have so much pain inside.

The next day he came to ask me to give him a chance. I decided to give him a chance. We went to Sochi to buy me a sheepskin coat and spend a couple of days. When we made love he did all usual things but somewhat automatically. He sniffed and looked away from me. He said that he missed my body. I understood that the same thing he said to another woman (32 years old with a child 7 years old). It hurts me inside...

We went to Sochi and everywhere he was paying for everything. In the train he spread out the bed, it was wonderful. But it is not the same as before, I feel it. He takes care of me, but it goes not out of his soul. He can hardly utter the word "love".

No wonder Angel didn't fear for her money. After landing in Krasnodar, she had arrange for her boy friend to meet her at the airport, and the reason she didn't call me for three days to confirm her safe arrival was because she and Alexei went to Sochi.

After Sochi on returning to Krasnodar, we went to a restaurant, but he was mistaken if he thought that I would forget everything so easily. We love each other but he does not understand how much aches my soul... He tried to make a wall of those little quarrels, which were between us, he wanted to stop love... But he did not manage to do it.

I don't have that respect and trust to him which I had before. He went every day to training instead of staying with me for a single day. And when I went to see model friends at beauty pageant, he was outraged that I did not spend this time with him. Earlier he worried about me, and now. His mother was shocked by his attitude towards me.

I think that he does not love me any more. When we make love, and I want to do it twice, he tells me that he had tired. What for do I need this inactivity? He shows that he wants to forget me. I don't respect and trust him, which I had before. I keep him now as a man whom I need for solving my problems, for transport. But sometimes I use him as a sexual partner because now I am not active in my business in Krasnodar. I want very much to find a foreigner and to live abroad; I want to buy a flat and marry a foreigner, but I do not want to live in Krasnodar!

Alfredo called me up – he insisted that I live with him in his hotel room in Moscow. My God, give me wisdom, forces and patience!!! Bless me!!!

December 10, 1999

Now I am sitting on the train to Moscow in a berth with 3 men—they want me. I called up Alfredo and now I am going to him for my 18,600 dollars. Mum looks for apartments to buy. The most important thing is that Alfredo bring all my money. I hope he will be accurate.

My God, bless me! Give us wisdom, forces and patience!

December 19, 1999

I arrived to Moscow early Friday morning December 10. I left my luggage in the baggage office and the whole day walked around Moscow. I sat for 3 hours in the hotel "Rossiya" waiting for Alfredo. At last! It turned out that he bought Traveler's Cheques for 7,000 dollars and another \$7,000 we would get from traveler's checks he said were lost and the rest on a debit card. That way he was able to hide from Mexican authorities how much money he took out of Mexico. He is smart that way and teaches me how best to avoid the law, but I must pay him in sex.

Oh god, that night was such a torture to me. I understand his feelings and I had to drink. When he said, "I want to fuck you, Angi!" I do not know why but I wanted to laugh. Though I respect his feelings and all he does for me.

I worried very much – I feared that Roy would notice me in town.

So I received my 18,600 dollars plus \$600 from Alfredo for staying with him. I am thankful to him. My God, bless Your slave Alfredo!

Alfredo hired a taxi for me that took me to where Roy worked—I had a very heavy bag and couldn't take it by metro. Thank goodness everything turned out all right. I got my money and Roy did not see me in Moscow with Alfredo. Roy believed that I just arrived that day by train. Thanks to God for keeping my secrets!

So, when Angel called me at the office on December 14, she was really calling from Alfredo's room at the Rossiya Hotel. And the way she got the heavy bag she could barely carry to my office was by a taxi in which Alfredo put her.

Roy and I got up early the next morning at 5 o'clock for receiving an American visa. It was so cold to stay in the line. To my great surprise they gave us visa at once – now I am going to go with Roy to America on January 19. Let God bless me!

Roy presented to me a cellular phone. I was so glad!

I have flown home to Krasnodar and my money is safe.

December 18, 1999 – date of my complete breaking relations with Alexei. He always avoids me. I myself told him to stop playing these games. He answered that he had feelings to the other woman. He killed his love to me. I recollected my nurse friend Lena's words that Alexei did not see me as his wife.

Now I have a cellular phone on which I have already received calls from Mexico and from Sochi.

Mum and me looked at flats. We chose one with 3 rooms, and there is a discount of \$2500 because it requires repairs. It causes us so much nerves to hurry the paper work before the new law takes effect next year. If we cannot register our apartment before January, I will have to say how I got the money to buy it. We paid \$1000 for urgent registration and papers and services of the lawyer – but this dullard is constantly letting us down. We finally missed the deadline for filing papers because of him. Now we just hope that a bribe to the government officials will let us submit the papers after the deadline. I want to receive it as quick as possible! My God, help me!!!

I received communion and colored my hair. Volume of my thighs has lowered only by 1 cm to 102 cm. My God, give me forces to lower my weight more and quicker!!! With God's assistance!!!

January 05, 2000

Here is the New Year! The Year 2000! My God, bless me! I thank You for all, for all!!! Let mum and me go with God's blessing and help!!!

On December 30, 1999, mum and me met Roy, the plane was late by 2 hours. We took Roy to "Moscow" hotel, the taxi cost 130 rubles and included taking mum to her house. I spent a night in hotel, in the first class room.

After Roy and me went to celebrate to home. He brought so many presents. There was a player with a disk, and many little things – chocolate, cornflakes. Mum as well received wonderful presents – gloves, a casket for earrings. I presented to mum a Dictaphone. And I presented to Roy a placard with my photo. He was glad.

Mum and me on New Year's Eve and in Christmas night did magic to divine our future. We used bread, onion and an eggshell with a candle. Fortune promised to mum a large gain and to me it promised winning a competition. My God, help us, and give us wisdom, forces and patience! My God, bless me!!!

I didn't remember any hocus-pocus stuff from New Year's Eve. How did those two sneak that by me in such a tiny house?

We met the New Year very well, shot a little fireworks. I had not overeaten – may be for the first time. We wanted to call a taxi but we did not manage – all telephone lines were busy. At approximately 2:30am we went to stop a car. There were few cars in the street. We rather quickly stopped a car and the driver took only 30 rubles! The next day, on January 01, we wanted to go to Sochi by bus, but the route was cancelled, it was good, that we managed to return those tickets and to buy tickets for a train. He was disappointed to go in an open berth. The way was easy. We arrived early morning.

We slept at the hotel, then went to the market. Roy bought to me socks and underpants. In the evening we went to "Prestige" disco. When I was in the cloakroom, Roy quarreled with a drunken boy and had early struck him. Roy did not want that drunken boy to sit with us. Then we went to another disco; it was "Ultra". Next day Roy upset me to tears – he made me to evoke unpleasant memories of my life in Cyprus when he asked me what I did there. I never should have told him, I would talk about my past. Now he wants to keep me to that promise. He says it not what I did but that I be truthful with him. Why does he want the truth? Then he himself got angry because I did not want to speak of it, but I changed the subject of our conversation.

We walked to the park where I met a model friend from Krasnodar. Roy asked me why I did not introduce him. I don't want him to know about my private life. Then we visited circus, where tigers scuffled with each other and the animal trainer could hardly manage to calm them down. After it, we had a meal and went to the railway station for our train back home.

Our fellow travelers in our train compartment were Sergey and his wife. We drank a little and talked. At night Sergey snored so loud that I could not sleep.

The next day mum and me went to visit Sergey at his house. He works in Baku, Azerbaijan and Novorossiysk, something connected with oil. He said much about Russia, that it would show itself to America, that Russia was not worse than America.

After Roy flew back to Moscow, I frightened Alexei – I let him know that I spy a little after him and his girl-friend. He was frightened. Today his mum told me that his girl-friend's name is Tanya, that she has a seven years old child and that she is 32. Alexei called me up and asked me not to come to his house. He was frightened of my magic powers. When he called me up the next time I refused to speak with him. Let God be judge to him and to all his deeds!

Tomorrow mum and me shall go to settle our relations with the apartment sellers. They are going to cheat us, I am sure of it!

My God, give us wisdom, forces and patience! Our Lady save us! Guardian angel, keep us! Nicolas the Thaumaturge and all Saints, help us! With Gods blessing and help!!!

January 17, 2000

Alexey called me up and told me to take all my things from his mother's apartment and never to come there again. Later I came to his mother and took a bath there. His mother handed to me a large package with my things. Cover of the package with razors was opened and there was absent one razor. I was infuriated by this fact. Son of a bitch! I took all my photos where we were together. I was trembling with indignation. In this state of feelings I wrote to him a message – “You are bloody son of a bitch! It all will come back to you!” I told his mother that I am not going to carry heavy things – let him himself bring all these things to me. He came to me and I asked my mum to speak to him. They spoke calmly; he was smiling. He thinks that I lost an excellent opportunity to marry. I called him up later and told him all I thought about that razor. He began to shout, he told me there was no razor missing and to go to the shop and check other packages with razors. There was so much hatred in his voice. My God, what a monster he is. My God, let You be judge of his deeds.

I visited Irina; she is from Grozny. I and mum bought fabric for an evening dress. We bought as well skirts (a short one – 450 rubles and a long one – 1300 rubles) and a beret. Irina (she is 31) married Sergey (he is 27) in the end of October. God give her happiness!!! God send her a child!

I begin to keep to a diet. I grew thin by 4 kilos. Volume of my thighs is still 102. God, give me forces to grow thin; I so much want to be thin! I am tired of being thick! I began to loose actively my weight!!!

Alfredo called me up each week. He told me that he missed me, loved me and wanted me. On January 15 he has his birthday.

Roy also called me up. Once he called me up when I was looking at his photo. The next time he called me up when I was reading a horoscope of his. Roy says that I am the only happiness of his. He wants me to be near him. If only he were younger. Information about Roy, which is at my disposal at present, satisfies me completely. We shall see how events will go... I turned away an evil eye, which was on me. Let God do so that nobody hindered me.

Our sellers of flat continue to be dilatory. They continue to lie that they have already prepared documents, but they did not. They wanted more money for us to move in early.

I asked Volodya to help mum to complete the purchase of our apartment since I will soon leave for a visit to America. My God bless us to complete this bargain without unpleasant surprises!



January 23, 2000

Now I am in a plane flying to Las Vegas from New York City... In airport I saw one Russian man, I desired him, what can I say.

When I came to New York one bore custom official asked me too many questions – what for I came, who and where and so on. But when I answered that Roy is my future husband her ugly face had immediately changed.

New York looks just as I fancied. I did not like dark color of house walls.

Roy does not like American women because they too much strive to be like men. Roy thinks that all American girls should be sent to Russia where they will have to put up with Russian men and all Russian girls should go to America as a reward for their femininity. That way, American women will get what they deserve for the past 30 years of attacking American men.

I called up to Mexico to Maria. She told me that after my arrest at the Men's Club there was one more raid by the police, still all girls from Czechoslovakia and Hungary have come back, but nobody can give any guaranties of no future arrests. She told that she might try to make for me a paper allowing me to work in the club. Salvadore accuses me for the club raids – he said that it was I who set police against the club. I do not know whether it is worthwhile going back to Mexico.

I got Roy to take me in New York to two clubs – everywhere there is so much chaos in these clubs. There is no show in the clubs where the girls go on stage; they can only take off clothes on stage to thong panties and cannot sit or lie on the stage. When the girls take off clothes on stage they make some money but most is made doing lap dances for the customers at tables. While making table dance those dancing may touch the customers but the customers cannot touch them. Also the girls cannot leave work with one of there customers, but they can make dates to meet customers after hours. A table dance is \$20, but in comparison with the club in Mexico girls were dancing worse. There are private rooms where the girl can make \$100 or more for a half hour.

Roy and me went to the "Imax". It was something like cinema, but there was a huge screen in which you seemed to enter virtual reality. We saw a Walt Disney film. Then we went to a Russian restaurant where I immediately began to feel nostalgia to Russia. In Japanese restaurant each slice of sushi cost 1 dollar. Roy took me to a shop. I found there a nice roll-neck sweater, but Roy told me that it was too expensive – \$60. Why then he took me to an expensive shop and allowed to choose if all there was too expensive to him? I found something for my hair \$15 and he again said that it was too expensive. Then we went to a restaurant and there he paid 75 dollars. Why does he grudge spending money on things, which I will wear for a long time? Sometimes I don't understand him. He drove me to tears. I did not want to tell him how offensive it is when somebody takes you to an expensive shop, proposes to choose something and then says that everything there is too expensive. He began to argue with me. I will not stand it! He has no right to criticize me! Their cultural traditions of truth and talking disagreements over don't matter to me; let him restrain himself!

We met an actress friend Cindy, Frank and producer Everett who produces shows and looks for people. They are very interesting people. My God, let me find work in my favorite kind of business! My God, bless me!

January 27, 2000

Now I am in the plane flying back to New York from Las Vegas.

What happened in Las Vegas? When I came there I was looking at all surrounding me with widely open eyes. Oh, these hotels... Casino, where people waste such a lot of money. Me stayed in "Paris" hotel. The room was very nice. In the evening Roy and me went to watch showgirls. Small artists executed acrobatic tricks and danced cancan there.

In the evening we met Patsy and her husband. We had a look at their house – it was neat, clean and cozy. Patsy wanted to present me a nice embellishment, a necklace. I liked it very much, but I feared she wanted something from me and did not accept it.

Then we went to a show, where our places were next to the stage, so I could not see the general picture. It was a magnificent show; costumes were very good. Main subject was beginning of the 19<sup>th</sup> century. One dancer was looking at me. Then there appeared tigers in a cage. I enjoyed that show very much.

I got Roy to take me to a men's club. Roy drank much. There was a show where girls were dancing rather well. All was the same as in New York – they took 20 dollars for a dance. Roy said he was getting tired of going to these clubs with me and watching all these nude girls dancing. This is my business and I need to learn where I can make the most money.

We went to the "Crazy girls" show. There was nothing interesting; it looked very cheap in comparison with preceding shows.

Yesterday we went to "New York" hotel. There I rode the roller coaster. It was exciting. The day before it I went to a "virtual reality" show in which I flew between poles, and fell down. Yesterday's evening show was something like a circus. There were brothers from Mexico who juggled.

Yesterday we discussed philosophical problems and Roy disagreed and raised his voice. I decided to change subject of conversation and to make a photo. Suddenly he smiled. I do not know, but it worthwhile marrying him only for the purpose to receive American citizenship. He is not the person I need. He took care of me, when I pretended to loose consciousness, he was anxious. He is too open with his emotions.

Angel obviously had considered marrying me well before I ever proposed so that she could work in America.

I called up to mum. She received a letter from Maria in Mexico concerning visa. Maria's guarantee that Salvador will not make me trouble for my past business is not sufficient for me. Maria said she sent money she owed me to Leo in December and he lied to me that he did not receive it. I have to clear this up when in Moscow.

My God, I don't know what to do. May be, I will have to go for a month to Mexico. May be I will have to earn money in Moscow.

My God, give me wisdom and forces!!!

January 29, 2000

My travels have ended. Now I am sitting in the airport waiting for our flight back to Moscow. Yesterday I managed to call up to Azul – it turned out that she had been to Holland. She is trying to find out whether it is possible to get a visa to work in Mexico or not.

My God, what shall I do? May be I shall go to Mexico for a month, but it is a risk. But it is as well money... On the other hand, to live with Roy and work in Moscow. I shall think it over. Roy is good as a friend and sexual partner, but Roy as a husband....

What happened one night after Las Vegas? I was in a good mood, and he was merry as well. Then I made a mistake. Roy has strong intuition. I must be more careful in the future. I couldn't think quickly of how to change the situation, so I went to another room. He followed me and brought a dressing gown and covered me with it. He said calmly that if I wanted to end our relation then we would come back and that was all. He is a fool, he knows that I depend on him and behaves indecently. I went back to the room. I embraced him and he embraced me. We made love in the table and I finished twice. Then I went into my tears act and pretended to shiver and faked a faint. It had the effect on him I wanted.

The next evening we went to a restaurant. There we spoke about different things and I brought up magic and the evil eye. When he said his secretary's mother use to prepare his meals at work, I knew his secretary had bedeviled Roy through his food to make him want her and no one else. I told him when we go back to Moscow I will try to find a way to avert her bad eye. I could tell he still did not believe in magic, which makes it all the more easy for me. He agreed to go with me to see a white magic man to protect him from his secretary's curse. But I will find a black magic man to end the secretary's spell and put on one that assures he does what I want.

Igor exclaimed, "This girl will stop at nothing!"

"I'm beginning to realize that."

Then we went to a performance "Phantom of the Opera". It is a story of a phantom who fell in love with a girl and she loved another man. After, we met Pat at a record studio, he trusts in God. There an attractive boy from France sang a sexual song. It was very interesting.

My God, bless me!!! I thank You for everything!!!

February 04, 2000

We arrived in Moscow at approximately 12:30pm and went to bed. We woke up at 7:40pm – got up, had a meal and made love. Next day in the morning we again had a meal. I spent a long time finding a magic man willing to do what I wanted with Roy without having to pay a lot of money. I chose an attractive tall black magic man with a sharp eye. I brought to him Roy and the magic man said that it was strong negative influence on Roy but he could easily replace it with the spell I wanted. The next day I brought to him Roy's photo so he could bind Roy to me and end the magic of Roy's secretary.

My conversation with Leo about the money Maria sent to him for me was interesting! He said that Maria was lying and agreed to make a direct call to her to prove that he did not receive the money. He said that he did not want those financial problems to become an obstacle in our

relations. I agreed. He had helped to me a lot and I am thankful for this. After my meeting with Leo in the evening, Roy made me proposal. The magic worked! Thanks to God!

On Tuesday, February 2, 2000, my mum called to say our flat became really ours! We bought it!!! A miracle has happened. God be praised! Thank goodness!

In the evening I spoke to Roy about marriage. I said that I do not think I am ready, and I was not sure about him, and that the only way to make sure in everything was to go to America with a visa to work. If I do it, it will be business for me and later the time will show. And plus he began speaking about a paper according to which I will not have any right on his money in the case of divorce. So, in this case I will receive nothing... In my turn I told him about a paper according to which he would have no right to send me out of the country. He drank 2 glasses of wine and became foolish. The talk became senseless.

On the 3<sup>rd</sup> of February I went for a walk with an attractive man with oriental appearance told my fortune by hand. I was told that I would have two children and my relations with Roy would become more profitable from the end of February. I was interesting to that man with oriental appearance. We drank some wine and talked.

I stayed in Moscow a few days, I cooked for Roy, cleaned his things, I went in the snowfall to pay with for my and his phones. I think he will miss me.

My God, give me wisdom and bless me!

February 19, 2000

At last I returned home! Thank goodness, I am away from Roy!

For the next two weeks, I have been making repair in our new flat. My mum is ill with a strong cough in the night. Alfredo called me up – he masturbated himself while he spoke to me. We spoke about 40 minutes. He is crazy with sex for me. I told him that I am sitting in white underwear and touching my private parts. Roy phoned to me right after from London. He sounded suspicious. How could he know? I made him recollect who I am for him for the time being. I told that I have no money. He felt sorry for me and promised to bring some and asked how much. I answered he should decide.

Alfredo called again and I complained that I have no money. He promised to me that he would transfer to my debit account 1000 dollars, but I asked for a lesser sum – 500 dollars. I don't want him to think he only means money to me. He invited me to Paris, he told me that he could not live without me, that he wanted me badly.

On February 13, I saw my old boyfriend Alexei with his woman. It was a shock to him. He went by without greeting me. He led her aside. They were walking and watching me. My heart was banging. They went away.

On February 14, I called up Roy and Alfredo and greeted them with St. Valentine's Day and to see they got my cards.

Gee, I wondered whether Angel wrote Alfredo the same malarkey she did me that her love was like a "flower" that required my "clean feelings to grow it."

In the evening I went to a concert. I was photographed with a famous man whom I told that I had my photos with many well-known persons and now I would have my photo with him

as well. “Then you must visit me personally to pick up the photo,” he said. I did, but he drank too much that day to do anything in bed.

Now I am preparing for my laser eye operation. I will endure it but then I will forget about glasses. I went to consultation. I worry. I phoned to Lena, my nurse friend the clairvoyant, and she said that I might do this operation. Lena said as well that the business with Roy is very advantageous for me.

I have bought a coat for 2400 rubles. It is fashionable; its sleeves are a little short.

My God, bless me, give forces and patience! Our Lady, protect us against misfortunes and save us! Guardian angel, keep us! Nicolas the Thaumaturge help me in all my deeds and business! All Saints help me!!!

“Who is this Nicolas the Thaumaturge she keeps beseeching?” I asked Igor.

“He’s a Saint from the fourth century on whom Santa Claus is modeled. Nicolas was the Eastern Orthodox archbishop of Lycia, Turkey who people believed worked wonders for children, sailors, perfumers and unmarried girls. Legend has it that he kept three girls from selling themselves into prostitution in order to support their aged father by going to their house at night, opening the windows in the bedrooms for the first two girls and leaving a bag of gold. The window of the third girl was locked, so he dropped the gold down the chimney into the third girl’s stocking that wear hanging on the fireplace mantle to dry.”

“Sounds familiar, I see why Angel likes this guy: something for nothing.”

Igor and I stopped for the day because I needed to leave for the airport to meet my friends arriving from London.

My hope that Angel cared about me more than a means for working in America was clearly on the ropes. All her smiles and affectionate words apparently met nothing other than to mask the truth—a manic drive for money and psychotic need to keep up appearances. Light started to pierce the stupor of my illusions. Angel saw me as just another in a long and growing line of suckers, albeit her best and most stupid one. Her denigration of me hurt, but I found especially sad what her words revealed about her character. It seemed as though the real Angel lacked what the fake Angel worked so hard at pretending to have: heart, compassion and self-

respect. She clearly knew what decency met for she outwardly acted that way. Her spoken words exhibited an understanding of ethical behavior, but inside virtue apparently held no sway—only selfish gain. I began to fear she was incapable of putting herself in the place of another person whom she hurt when material gain was at stake. Her diary showed that when she looked out on the world she only saw a reflection of herself. Any little slight stirred her to anger as though some lesser life form dared to transgress the laws of the universe by annoying her. She took offense so easily and held it to her chest as though it were a precious diamond that she could never let go and never forgive. From her perspective, all circled around the sun of Angel, which may be why in some instances in her dairy Angel didn't even refer to me when I was there. Perhaps I married the true egotist, lacking in empathy or remorse.

She and her mother's use of magic to gain their ends made them both look like mental cases, and Angel's mixing it with an apparent sincere devotion to a Christian God seemed hypocritically bizarre. Even if she found an illusion of power in practicing magic, how could she still believe in God, especially when Angel used a black magic-man—it just didn't make any sense.

“What about this magic,” I asked Igor. “Is this common in Russia?”

“You would be surprised at how many Russians believe in magic. They use it to catch a wife or husband, to win in a business deal and punish their enemies.”

“You're kidding? People really believe it works?”

“Absolutely! And it makes sense. In Russia under the Czars, Communists and now the Criminals, the average person always had little if any protection from the whims of the powerful or rich. Belief and the practice of magic satisfy the need to reduce this sense of powerlessness. It provides an illusion in which to hide from the truth of their vulnerability. Not just the

uneducated proletarians in the provinces believe but professionals and other accomplished persons because there is no other way to even hope to avenge the violation of their rights or win a confrontation. The courts don't work, it costs money to hire hoodlums and you need connections to influence government officials to do what they are supposed to."

"All right, magic becomes a substitute means for not only righting wrongs but causing wrongs or venting anger. And because there are no other means available to most people, it may actually work—in Russia! But how can someone believe in magic and God at the same time?"

"All Russians know that the use of magic to influence another person, rather than just to protect oneself, is black magic, which means that whatever harm you cause another will come back to you many times over."

"That's what I am saying. If Angel knows this why does she use it?"

"Because she believes her devotion to God through going to church, buying icons, lighting candles and praying will protect her from any harm that may result from her use of black magic.

"Very cunning and logically sound but I doubt any God would fall for it."

"She obviously believes so."

"So, she's conning God the same way she conned me and others"

"That's probably what she is doing and thinks it acceptable behavior.

"Somehow, I don't think it will work. So, when can we meet again?"

"How about Sunday? Same time?"

"Okay, see you then."

I met my driver and headed to the airport to meet my friends from London. All this nonsense about black magic, white magic, evil eyes, curses and spells was beginning to take its

toll on my system of rational beliefs. I tried to bolster my beliefs with the argument that while science's explanations, especially quantum physics, painted a strange picture of the universe and left many unanswered questions, the idea that any malevolent heart could use such mumbo jumbo to manipulate the forces of the universe made no logical sense. Still the thought nagged at my mind, what if it did work? Look at what happened to me in less than a year in Russia. I did something I vowed never to do—got married. And despite all the warning signs, married the type of person, which I always avoided through out my life because the emotional filth of such girls revolted me, not to mention the danger of disease.

I struggled to understand what was going on and came up with the theory that perhaps living in a country where most of the people believed in magic somehow influenced the time-space continuum to make magic effective. Maybe all the psychic energy from these millions of twisted Russian minds warped the laws of physics to make ancient rituals and beliefs work. If that were true, I was doomed. My logic and will couldn't save me in Russia. I hoped my friends' arrival would bring some sanity to my thinking. They lived in England that most civilized of modern countries, so their presence in Moscow might bring some modernity back to the medieval ages in which I felt trapped. At least they could help me fight magic with magic since, as my reasoning went, they both grew up in Jamaica. A voodoo ceremony to get Angel out of my soul seemed to make sense. But I didn't believe in the soul and why should an audit manager from a Big Five accounting firm know anything about voodoo. This was all nuts!

#### I Put A Spell On You (Again)

I showed my Jamaican friends, Carol and her mother Thelma, around Moscow, which to my surprised they liked even after being attacked by Gypsies. Bands of Gypsies used to regularly accost Western tourists in Moscow—picking pockets and stealing purses. These bands



of around eight boys and girls in their teens or twenties carrying what appeared to be babies would surround and jostle tourists pretending to beg for money but actually grab wallets, jewelry and purses then runaway. The young women used their apparent babies as psychological shields to deter tourists from slugging them during the pushing, bumping and robbing. In the wake of the apartment building bombings the previous year, the Mayor's security forces ran all the Gypsies out of Moscow. So when I saw a band of Gypsies in the metro, I was surprised but still warned my friends to stay alert. Unfortunately, we let our guard down by talking about our next stop and the Gypsies attacked. I stunned two of the mothers with a right to one's face and a left to the gut of another—the only type of argument a female understands. The Gypsies backed off liked the cowards they were crying that I hit a mother with an alleged baby in her arms. I moved in to pummel the two some more, but the entire group took off. I knew the babies these “virtuous” mothers carried were probably corpses or just dolls. My Russian friends previously told me that the Gypsies stole babies and used them or dolls to engender sympathy from tourists when begging. Even after an infant dies, the Gypsies continue to use it for a time heavily wrapped in cloth so as to create the illusion that the child still lives.

I turned to my friends. They were all right and had held their own against the mugging. Carol and Thelma had clocked a couple more of the attackers, but one Gypsy got away with Carol's wallet from her purse. Carol lost her credit cards, a little money and some identification but not her passport. I explained to my friends we could report the incident to the militia, which would take the rest of the day given the Russian addiction to paper work maximization and most likely yield no results even with the appropriate bribes. Besides, Gypsies in Moscow used only the cash they stole because the few Russian businesses, even the criminal establishments, would never accept a credit card from a Gypsy, not because they knew the Gypsy stole it, but because

Russians considered Gypsies spiritually filthy and avoided any contact beyond the exchange of cash. Carol decided to forgo the militia and contacted her credit card companies.

Thelma, as did Carol, well knew about my troubles over Angel and asked, “Do you think your wife sent them after us?”

“I didn’t even think of that, why would she?”

Carol interjected, “Maybe she’s afraid we’ll bring you to your senses.”

“What’s wrong with my senses?”

Carol laughed, “Look at you, all this talk about voodoo and magic and then marrying a girl like that. Where’s the logical lawyer I used to know?”

“Well you believe in magic, don’t you?”

“I believe in God and that evil people exist. But even your wife must have some good in her.”

Thelma added, “Well, there are strange things in this world and some very harmful, but only God can protect you.”

This didn’t do me much good since the idea of a benevolent intelligence running the universe seemed nothing more than a desire to find meaning in the tragedies of life where no meaning existed. Believing some father or mother-like figure occupied a hidden dimension from which it watched over mankind and guided events in its all knowing wisdom might allow some to accept the vagaries of life, but I believed in the “will” for changing matters.

The next day, my driver showed my friends around while I continued with my translator, Igor, delving the sordid life of my wife.

“Do you think we can finish today?” I asked.

“Let’s see. The last entry we did was February 19, 2000, and the next one is April 5. Are we missing part of her diary?”

“No. Angel under went a laser eye operation on February 23 and was unable to read or write for about six weeks. I assume that’s why she didn’t make any journal entries during that time.”

“So, we have from April 5 to May 23 to do.”

“That’s the day she surprised me by showing up at my apartment in the evening with the absurd story of hitching a ride from Krasnodar to Moscow with friends.”

“We should be able to finish today. What about the diary entries before you met her?”

“I’m not concerned with those now, maybe later, I don’t know. Let’s get the rest of this show on the road for now,” I said somewhat bitterly but hoping in my heart that there were no further painful surprises coming my way.

April 05, 2000

My God, so much time has passed! How much nerves took and how many troubles gave to me Mr. Hollander! On the March 01, 2000 mum and me moved to our new flat. He helped us along with my mother’s students. But it takes too much nerve to deal with his bloody philosophy.

I suffered so much because of him and all the work we had to do to marry at ZAGS. Just days prior to our marriage he said that he might cancel everything because I told him that I did not like to speak with him about my past. He infuriated me - I had to speak about Cyprus, about Mexico, that I was tired there and did not want and did not have sex there. Roy did take care of me but morally he was sucking me dry, I so went to the clairvoyant who gave me salts and sugars to admix into his food. His smile began to look like a smile of innocent angel. And on Saturday, March 11, 2000, I led him to ZAGS where we got married. It was merry! I did not accept it seriously; for me it was only business. I become so tired of him... He is a complete fool...

“Wait a minute,” I said. “She went to whom and for what to put into my food?”

“The word in Russian means a person that has powers to solve problems, make people do things and see the future.”

“Another magic-man?” I asked derisively.

“More than someone who just delves in the arcane arts. It’s a person very common in Russia who provides spiritual and everyday advice, reads cards or other signs to predict the future and provides herbs and other natural medicines. Many Russian seek out such people to help them with their health, love affairs, business and what not. Your wife went to one and got what she called “salts and sugars” that she put in your food. There’s no other way to translate what it was.”

“Probably some hocus pocus she had put on the salt and sugar for my food. What a darling?” But I arrogantly dismissed her actions as inconsequential. “Okay, let’s continue.”

At the end of March in the Miss Krasnodar beauty pageant, my friend Inna was awarded title “Miss Charming” and “Miss Russian Radio” – all thanks to Dmitri Morozov the photographer who taught us girls to pose with and without clothes. My friend Alena took the first place. After it we had such a party. I danced sometimes with Morozov and sometimes with one more young man. I danced so much that I was presented with a basket of “Silver Line” perfume. Then, when I went to the disco “Joy”, the manager Alexey Smolin told me that he wanted me and that I was driving him mad. He bought a bottle of Champaign. I was near to going with him.

Yesterday Katya and me had a nice time in disco “Orbita”. We corrupted a poor boy—kissed him, rubbed parts of his body while we danced, it was fun.

My mum went yesterday, April 4 in the evening to St. Petersburg. My God, help her! I got Roy to use his driver to take her from one train station in Moscow to another. While she was gone I got acquainted with Arsen whom I brought over to my flat. He is tall and looked like a good monster from a tale. We spent two days in my flat but then I tired of him sexually. I began to step aside from him.

God be praised, Arsen finally stopped calling me up. I was cold when I spoke to him last. He could not even help me tune my TV aerial and began himself to speak sarcastically about my stoutness.

What I had with Volodya! He took keys from Vadik. It was an old, badly groomed flat where Vadik’s mother recently hung herself. We had some wine and made love. We have done this many times before. Afterwards he had a rest and I was cooling. He is good at making love. We had it twice and the second time he even did not prepare. I did not come. He was preparing in an interesting way. It is strange, but I cannot finish unless I have a real man. He wanted me to make blowjob, but I can’t. For the past 1.5 years, I have been masturbating my customers nearly everyday and to have that in my mouth, I cannot. Roy will never understand my not making blowjob, because he is a man.

“This all happened after you were married, right? Igor asked.

“You’ve got it, about three weeks after the wedding. Ha! She couldn’t come to Moscow because her eye doctor didn’t want her to become excited from having sex or partying. What a low-life lying tart. Let’s continue.”

Roy wrote to me a letter saying how it was difficult for him to be alone. Frankly speaking, I cannot imagine what I will do with him in Moscow. Listen to his philosophy? To wash, to clean and to cook? And leave my mother all alone. And if somebody recognizes me and says something to him than all my work might be lost. If I loved him then maybe. I was infuriated by his words that I consider him just a good customer. I am so tired of his sixth sense. I told him I thought of him as boy friend since our second date. He is such son of a bitch, I was so angry with him. I believe that we have to discuss our relations so I can make him less suspicious. On the one hand, I would like that we remained friends, but he would not hinder my meetings with friends and I would give freedom to him. My God, give me wisdom!!!

For 2 weeks I have been running from 30 minutes up to 1 hour.

“No exercise was another of her doctor’s so-called orders for her three month recovery that apparently took only a couple of weeks.” I interjected

We gave interview about my eye correction for television. I described how many problems I had with bad eyesight. I spoke about transport, acquaintances, inconvenience of glasses, lenses irritate eyes. I had doubts before operation but now I am happy and I don’t want even to think about glasses except for sunglasses. It is so wonderful to see the world with your own eyes! My interview will be broadcasted next Sunday, in the program “Accent”.

It took a long time to make my second passport, because there was conducted an investigation from Maikop where I use to live. But thanks to God, I have now 2 passports. Maybe I will go for a week to Mexico and meet Alfredo to earn some money. But I need a good reason for Roy. It is dangerous, but I will see.

“Looks like my darling wife began planning a secret trip to Mexico after our engagement but before the marriage.” I again interrupted.

Katya and me went to discos. In “Joy” there was “Hit FM”, nice music. Last time some boys wanted to get acquainted with us, but they did not succeed, because we sat to a taxi accompanied by gangsters. I tried to seduce Alexey Smolin, to get him or anyone to help me renovate the ceiling in my flat but without success.

Katya fell ill high temperature and no voice. I had to put keys to Natasha’s flat in post box. I hope that everything will be all right, because I keep there all my secret things with my girl friend.

Alfredo called and I told him everything about Roy, about my plans. He accepted it with understanding.

My God give me wisdom, forces and patience, teach us and help us! My God, bless us!!!

Now I knew why Angel wanted to stay in Krasnodar rather than go on a honeymoon or live with me in Moscow—to party and whore around.

April 20, 2000

Now I am coming back from Moscow and my visit to Roy. I was intended not to take money from Roy in order to prove him that I do not treat him as a customer. When I arrived, he met me with pink roses, 11 flowers. I went to the church and immediately began menstruation – on Wednesday. That should keep him away. I ran along riverside. On April 18 I made a record – I ran for 1 hour and 10 minutes and covered approximately 9 km. I went to casting to “Vidi Vinci” for strip tease. Natasha Gubina liked me. She phoned to me a few times, I agreed and allowed to include me into database which cost to me \$50. I want to recompense this money.

It was warm in Moscow. I bought for myself lacquered shoes; it cost 25 dollars and 20 rubles, I bought as well two blouses, make-up, a pencil, and icons of angel to protect me. Roy presented to me a pot with flowers and in the evening he presented as well yellow and red tulips.

I had casting at Jabrail’s. He promised to me striptease, but I think he lied to me.

On Thursday we went to a disco. First we went to “Hippopotamus”, but it was closed. We wanted to go to another one, but Roy refused. He spends \$100 for a dinner but his greediness does not allow him to spend \$3 for a disco. We went to a disco in Tverskaya Street. There were few people but I had fun.

On Thursday we went to “Hippopotamus”. For an hour and a half I had been studying Latin American dances that they were teaching there. It was marvelous! But at 1 o’clock in the night Roy got tired and we left. He is a bore.

On Friday we went to Leo’s party. There were more girls than boys. I persuaded girls to go to Mexico. Leo said that Salvador felt offended with me, because I had love affair with Alfonso, I abandon him and he informed police. It is foolish. Leo simply feared that I can leave him and work for myself. I had to lie that I borrowed from Roy \$10,000 because I lost \$7,000 from my Mexico money so I could not pay Leo \$1400 commission. I will try to cooperate with him – look for girls ready to work in Mexico. Each girl will pay to me 100 dollars a month. My God, bless me!!!

Then Roy and I went to “Country bar”. There we saw a girl, his friend, Maria from England and her Moscow boy friend. She is pregnant from him. At first she didn’t like me but I remember Roy saying she was religious so I talked about God and won her over. Then we went to another place – there it was all the same. Some foreigners were looking at me.

On Sunday I made Roy take me to club “Dolls”. Entrance fee is 50 dollars per person. Girls are nice, but table dance costs 50 dollars and private striptease with more costs \$100. Roy was shocked by prices. I told girls about dancing in Cyprus and Mexico. Thank goodness Roy does not understand Russian. Then we went to RADISSON to a dance show. It was an excellent show and it continued for 1 hour. Praise to God, Roy did ask about my former life. The salts and sugars still work but his intuition caused him to say that I was cunning. I burst into tears and agreed that I was the worst, the most cunning etc. My tears worked. Roy began to sooth me. He said that he wanted to be nearer to me. For the first time he came in me. Oh, my God, whom I allowed to do it, I must have been drunk!

What will happen if I will not receive a visa to America? I will go – with Leo’s help – to Greece or to Venezuela and forget about Mr. Hollander. In June I am sure to go somewhere!

My God, give us wisdom, forces and patience! My God, bless me!!!  
“Well, my wife clearly keeps her options open,” I remarked.

May 19, 2000

Angel’s entry started with “Now I am sitting in the airport and wait departure for Moscow.”

As Igor continued translating, I wondered what Angel was doing in an airport on 19 May 2000 heading to Moscow? That was the Friday she originally planned to visit her Grozny friend in Kannevskaya village outside Krasnodar, but, as she said, she postponed her visit until Saturday, May 20, to make some money handing out samples. Why would Angel fly to Moscow on Friday, back to Krasnodar to hand out samples on Saturday, the day she called to tell me about the delay in visiting her friend, then take a bus to Kannevskaya, a town that lacked telephones? Something was up.

On April 29 there was a show in dramatic theater. I was so glad to see my acquaintances. A good show, it lasted for approximately 3 hours. There were 50 models participating in the show. There were no free places in auditorium. That night my mum and me met Easter. We were inside church. During procession we were nearly knocked down by crowd. Nevertheless, it was wonderful!

My old boy friend’s mother had never phoned to me. She has now other interest for her son.

Katya and me walked. It was raining; the weather was cool. We went to club “Samson-16”. My former boyfriend, Alexei, was there with his girl; he always takes her along. In the break he disappeared without leaving a trace. He is scared of me. On the way from disco Katya got acquainted with Andrei in white Mercedes. I went with Andrei and Katya to the same place I tried to seduce Alexey Smolin. When Andrei made me ready for sex and I said I was ready, it turned out that what Andrei wanted was a surprise. He wanted sex with Katya and me at the same time. My friend Katya was against this and this upset Andrei and Andrei was left with nothing.

So that’s why I couldn’t reach Angel over Easter—figures.

Ma went away and this time I did not bring anybody home with me although I wish I had. So I came to Volodya. I told him that I want to go to a picnic out of the city and play. He began to refuse; he said that he had already gone out of the city with Vadik. I insisted and he admitted that he is married, he has a child, two years old, and he had married in 1998. His wife is from Kazakhstan but she is Russian. He lied, he wanted me and all the times we had sex he continued to lie. I was shocked.

My “husband” Hollander called Alfredo up. When Alfredo told me about it I wanted to reject everything. Just on that very day I passed money for visa to Italy. Roy felt why on that very day... He said that he was my husband and he wanted to marry me (but we are already married – probably, he wanted something more serious). He began to ask Alfredo about our relations. Alfredo did not answer, instead he called me up and we agreed that Azul was whom Alfredo wanted. Roy asked him how long Alfredo stayed with me in December; what was between us in Mexico and in Moscow. We agreed that Alfredo escorted me in my trips around Mexico, because he fell in love with Azul and they took me with them. Alfredo said that I was only a good friend of his. He was in Moscow for 1 day and half of that day he spent with me cashing the travelers’ checks and taking money off of debit card so I had all the money I earned in Mexico.

I was right about that fat Mexican lying to me that he and Angel were only good friends and the two scheming to deceive me. At least not all my facilities had failed me in Russia, and I assumed her visa to Italy was to go dance in Smolin’s ballet that she auditioned for back in March.

As usual in the Moscow airport there is something interesting. I had problems connected with a strange signature in my second passport. I spent the night not bad. I spoke to Dima who works in the circus and lived in Japan and in Italy. God send happiness to him. I phoned up to Hollander to explain I would not be home for his call on Monday because I was now on my way to the village two days late. He was suspicious and asked what kind of promotion, the name of the product, what exactly I had done. I just said the usual and would explain all details when I saw him. Then he asked how I could go to the train for Moscow and the visa interview without picking up things at my flat. This I expected and said I would bring all things with me to village. I think he is fooled. What will be with Hollander, with visa...

Praise to God, on May 20 I came to Milan.

“Milan!” I interrupted Igor. “What the hell is she doing there? She was supposed to be at Kannevskaya. So that’s what the Italy visa was for.”

“Shall we continue? Igor asked.

“Definitely!”

The man in customs was a fool but I had a ticket and I did not fear. He spoke a little Spanish. He asked: “What for did you come?” That is not any damned business of his. Alfredo met me and we went to “Lloyd” hotel. He was so happy. He gifted to me small diamond golden ring—the first man in my life to gift me diamonds. He presented me earrings and a chain. I gifted to him my portrait, caviar and sweets. We made love. In a few minutes I came.

We went for a walk in Milan, talked to each other. The next day we went to Florence. It took three hours – we went by a speed train. In Florence we visited museums. There Alfredo



gifted to me golden earrings and a golden ring with a garnet. When we went to Florence the train was practically empty and we touched each other, giving a start if somebody was passing by. We returned in the evening, approximately at midnight. We were tired but we went to a disco where they played Latin American dances. I danced so good that a few girls began to dance with us.

The next day (May 22) in the morning we went to agencies for lap dancers but none of them was interested in me: they wanted another kind of girls - dark-haired and swarthy. It means that this is not mine. Then we went to Venice. On the way Alfredo was kissing me telling me he wants me. He was obsessed that I was taking advantage of him—wanted him only for money. We sailed along channel in a little steamer. Then we went to a square where there was a church. We were there only for four hours but it was marvelous. Alfredo kissed me, told me that he wanted me, embraced me. Roy never behaves like that - he always fears something. He fears that I will take his money and he is always tensed. Having come back we went to a nightclub where the girls sell sex. There were a lot of Russian girls, and we chose one for one drink – 25 dollars. Alfredo danced with a girl and then he went away to the private room with her. I pretended to be jealous and he made excuses to me. But after it we had a storm of a night. I could not finish for a long time but he took the first position – when I was lying on the back and my legs were raised in vertical position. Yes and also the drops I took worked and I finished. I performed oral sex on him. We slept only three hours in the night. Previous night he did not allow me to sleep – touched, caressed. And in the morning I again finished quickly. And he is so happy when I finish. A wonder! And Roy is simply a fool. After it I can hardly expect that I will want him!

Alfredo paid me \$600 and wanted to give \$100 more, but I refused. My God, send to him health and happiness! In the street a woman asked him to buy her an ice-cream and he did it! A man at the station asked to give him some money – he had not sum sufficient to buy a ticket - and Alfredo gave money to him. This is what I call humanity. Alfredo has a very generous soul and heart. My God, send to him all the best!!!

And now it is very important to me to extinguish all evidence. I closed package with adhesive tape and tried to hide gold and money. I hope so Roy did not learn anything. Amen!  
I thank you my God for everything; bless me!

Igor looked at me and said, “I’m sorry.”

“So am I, so am I.”

Once again a man is felled by the archetype of the twisted, treacherous soul marked by the prettiest of faces and pretending to be lost and helpless so a man will want to save her.

Angel’s latest but worst deception was now clear. She used her second passport to meet Alfredo in Italy in order to keep the customs’ stamp out of her original passport because I would need to show it to INS during her visa interview. She must have applied for the second passport around the same time she sent me the Valentine Day’s card of love, flowers and inveigling me to have

clean feelings for her. “Clean feelings,” what a hypocrite! Tricks, lies, deception, they’re meat and drink to her.

In April and May while she planned her Italian assignation and committed adultery with one guy after another she sent me cards in which she proclaimed, “My love husband! I’m so miss on you, but I must help my mother. I send you this picture of spring flowers from all my heart. I kiss and hold you. You present me the best moments of my life and with special love. Your wife.” What a mistress of deceit! The story about visiting her friend in Kannevskaya was the cover with the Saturday May 20<sup>th</sup> telephone call coming from the Moscow airport while she waited for her flight to Italy. Her original cover was probably that stuff she told me before our wedding in March about going to Italy to dance at the end of May. For some reason she discarded that one but over the months she maintained a cool pose while waiting to pull off her coup.

What a revolting development this was: my wife of three months rendezvousing with a fat, middle-aged creep from Mexico. I knew there was a reason why I always hated Mexico. Apparently time didn’t flow like a stream in one direction but was more of a swirling gas that could make the future a cause of the past.

When my roller coaster ride hit bottom, the anger came—time to get this slut out of my life and teach her a lesson in justice.

“Well, it’s over,” I said to Igor as we parted.

“That is best. Bad girls like her are a disgrace. They’ll drag you down because they are no good.”

“You’re right Igor. Thanks for the help.”

## Cathy's Clown

I walked back to my apartment on Kutuzovsky Prospect outraged and set on retribution. My plan consisted of showing Leo the section of Angel's diary where she described cheating him out of \$1400—not a small sum in Russia. Knowing Leo, he would intimidate her into paying and then stop doing business with her because she didn't swindle a little—like all his girls—but a lot. Handing over the money would hit Angel where it hurt—in her avarice and, especially, her ego. She fed her arrogance with victories gained by a win-at-any-cost attitude. She ignored all the rules, but like all cheats, whenever she lost, even a minor engagement, she crumbled and pleaded for what she never showed others—mercy. The ending of her business relations with Leo would also block her alternative plan to work in Venezuela or Greece and leave her scrambling to find another agent to provide visas and club contacts outside of Russia. Naturally the marriage was over, and since I had her visa documents needed for entry into America, she wasn't going there. When I walked into my apartment, I declared to Carol and Thelma I was going to get divorced and brought them up to date on the latest from my wife's diary. When I told them about my plans for vengeance, they surprisingly argued against it.

“Why not? She deserves it. Don't you believe in justice?” I said.

Thelma said, “I don't think it's a good idea. It will get you nowhere. It will just come back and hurt you. You only torture yourself by walking around with your anger for her. Your anger doesn't hurt her—it hurts you. Just let her go and chalk it up to an experience.”

“Yea, Roy,” as Carol joined in, “You don't want justice, you want revenge and that will consume you while she's out doing what she wants and making her way in the world. She's like the aliens in the movie *Independence Day* except she goes from man to man taking what she can get and moves on.”

“She should be stopped then, or taught that if she keeps it up, she’ll pay.”

“But she is still a human being and like all people, a mixture of good and bad.”

Her statement struck a chord of understanding and some relief, but it wasn’t in the Roy I knew and alien words came out of my mouth, “You’re right! She’s both good and evil.”

“People like this are their own torture,” Carol continued. “You think she doesn’t feel pain everyday for what she does?”

“I didn’t see any of that in her dairy,” I replied.

“Believe me, she does. How could any human not?”

Thelma than said, “I had the same situation with my ex-husband. He went out with other women, so I left him, but then he came back and begged that I forgive him, promising he would change, so I gave him another chance. For a while he remained faithful, then he started playing around again. He just couldn’t help himself, and I learned that people don’t change and you can’t make them change. It’s best to stay away from them; just let them go their way and God will deal with them in his own way. You should forget her and move on with your life.”

Normally any appeals to God I dismissed as irrelevant and a mere manifestation of wishful thinking. Generally, religion held as much credence for me as magic. But these weren’t normal times for me. Metaphysical realities of good and evil kept breaking through my shields of reason, swamping me in a sea of confusion. The belief system I used for making decisions short-circuited. I was helpless to stop the anarchy sweeping up from my unconscious to rend my logic. I couldn’t stop myself from doing fundamentally stupid things and listening to others who knew less because I no longer felt confident to make decisions. Somehow the words of these ladies swayed me more quickly than I thought possible. Maybe because their growing up in Jamaica made them more attuned to dealing with the basic demons of nature that haunted me in

Russia. To my surprise and contrary to my long held beliefs about justice, I decided not to seek retribution and immediately felt somewhat relieved.

In the evening, my friends and I went to see Maria sing with her band. Maria and Angel had grown close primarily through their talk about God. Angel professed a literal belief, as did Maria. When I told Maria the truth about Angel, her soul rocked back in shock, her face convulsed into the anguish of having a knife sunk into her heart by someone she trusted. Seeing her reaction, I wished I hadn't told her. I never imagined she would take it so hard. Angel's glib words and uncanny knack to assume the persona that caused another person to open their heart to her claimed another victim. The illusion and reality were so diametrically opposite that Maria looked even more upset than me while her Russian boyfriend didn't seem surprised at all. He advised I just move on and forget about her.

Sunday morning June 11<sup>th</sup>, the three-month anniversary of my marriage, I lay awake in bed sensing trouble. I felt an evil presence surrounding me; the continuing metaphysical manifestations from Angel living in my apartment were trying to control me by befuddling my thinking, sapping my will. I finally accepted that magic worked, at least in Russia, as I watched it inexorably drag me into a malevolent maelstrom. Her magic created a fog of apathy and fear in my mind while erecting unexpected obstacles to any saving course of action—the trap kept closing tighter. Carol showed me my horoscope from the paper:

The more you think about a complex matter, the more uncomfortable you become. It doesn't matter how many angles you try to view it from or how many inventive ideas you try to come up with. You just can't seem to reconcile a need with the circumstance you are in.

But I wasn't dead yet. Angel's magic was not all-powerful; otherwise, I never would have found her diary. As with any human being, the magic practitioner can't foresee every occurrence that might interfere with her plans. Angel couldn't predict my friends' visit. I sensed

their roots in Jamaica and their Christian beliefs were keeping Angel's baleful magic at bay as long as they stayed with me in Moscow, but their flight back to London left the next day. Then I saw my escape—go to London with them. I told them my plan, and they said I could stay with them for a few days until they flew to New York where Carol needed to go on business. My escape route from the Dark Angel became clear—London and then New York, all the time in the protective company of my Jamaican friends. I reasoned that once in America, the Dark Angel's primitive earth powers would fail against the bulwark of the world's most modern and enlightened society. I bought a ticket and packed my bags. What I couldn't fit, such as blankets, furniture and a boom box, I gave to the orphanage where Maria worked and said goodbye to the insanity of Russia.

When we arrived at Heathrow in London, I bumped into Kroll's Chief of European and Middle Eastern operations. He always treated the people in Moscow decently, unlike my former boss, the lesbian Tiedemann. When I ran into him, I was planning on exposing the incompetence and criminal activities of Tiedemann to the president of the Blackstone Group that recently took over Kroll. But having relinquished my desire for justice against one female, I relieve the lesbian as well. None of these acts fit my nature as I remembered it before Russia, but now magnanimity made me feel like the member of a cult doing what the cult wanted.

On our way out of the airport, I pointed to the Concorde parked on the runway.

Carol asked, "What's special about the Concorde?"

"It's the fastest passenger jet made. It flies so high that it skirts outer space."

Carol looked at me with surprise and said, "Your whole face just lighted up and your eyes widened when you said that. I never saw you look like that before." And then I knew that my childhood dream of space travel was the direction I should have pursued all my life. Maybe

not as the astronaut I wanted to be but working in the field of space flight was clearly my first best destiny. Why didn't I understand that sooner? How did I forget what I knew as a child? But I didn't forget. All my life different experiences kept reminding me of my desire to explore the heavens through physics and space exploration, but at each opportunity I turned my back on my dreams. Was I so afraid of disaster resulting from the pursuit of something I loved? Did I fear that once I reached my dream, reality would show me the disappointing truth, as it did with Angel, and the dream would evaporate forever? Nothing made sense anymore.

Late one night in my friends' apartment, I told Carol about the time Angel took me to a black magic-man just before I proposed to her.

"You're kidding?" she said. "Why didn't you run out of there when you saw the black clothe on the table?"

"Because I didn't believe in any of that witchcraft stuff, and it seemed important to Angel, so I figured what's the big deal."

"The big deal is you ended up marrying a Russian slut whom I now see would just as soon cut your throat if she thought it would make her money. Face it; she'd follow a dollar to hell!"

"Probably."

"What's with you white boys always letting your girlfriends make chumps of you?"

"It must be in our genes."

"Where's the picture of you that the guy cast a spell on?"

I pulled it out of my suitcase and showed it to her.

"I know what to do with this. We're going to burn it, which is what should happen to that witch Angel." So on a dreary, rainy midnight in an upscale London apartment a young

Jamaican lady with an MBA and a middle-aged American lawyer, also with an MBA, ritually burned a photograph that a ruthless Russian witch used to marshal unknown forces of the universe to marry the lawyer so he would bring her to New York where she could make lots of money as a lap dancer.

Soon after waking the next morning, an epiphany struck my consciousness: Walking around with hostility towards others cuts a person off from fully living his life and pursuing his destiny. All my life I saw other people, even strangers in the street, as potential enemies with whom conflict seemed more likely than cooperation. I understood that, except for my few friends, I didn't like people because they scared me; and when someone is afraid, he hates others for causing him the humiliation and himself for allowing it. But where did this ever-present fear come from—my genes or the way my mother raised me? I opted for the culpability of my mother with some assistance from my father. Both of them were Nazis in the sense that they felt superior to others and believed themselves the sole possessors of the truth concerning any topic. In reality, they were scared little people without the courage or self-respect to say what they believed. Like Angel, they knew what was right; they just conveniently let it slip their conscience. For them every word, every act served their material desires or conformed to accepted beliefs of the small narrow-minded suburban town in which I grew up. The best advice their cowardice permitted them to articulate were the insincere admonitions of platitudes they hypocritically failed to follow in their own lives. Naturally the fear and trembling that ran their lives festered in me a view of the world as unfriendly, manipulative and hostile.

At birth, a child's brain contains virtually all the synapses, the switching centers for thoughts that a child will need throughout life. The newborn infant, however, lacks many of the connections between the synapses called dendrites. These dendrites are needed in order for



thoughts to flow through the brain from synapse to synapse. Most dendrites form in the child's brain from birth until the age of ten, as though constructing a superhighway system. The arrangements of the dendrites significantly depend on the child's environment, and a particular configuration apparently determines the child's behavior in a certain situation. The route that an electrical impulse takes through the brain can be analogized to a thought, so the thought depends on the route and the route depends on the roads it can take or how the dendrites are arranged. Where the dendrites are organized in a manner that allow thoughts that match the reality of a particular social order, than the person should function well within that society because his analysis of any situation will reflect reality and enable him to take effective action.

Another way to understand the crucial importance of the network of dendrites on a person's ability to function within a particular social order is to consider the arrangement of dendrites as the brain's program. When the body's five senses transmit messages to the brain, the program, or particular arrangement of dendrites, provides an interpretation as to the meaning of an event in the external society. The interpretation—whether verbal or emotional, which is the language of the unconscious—provides a person's conscious with an understanding or sense on which the person can decide a course of action. A functional program provides a person with an accurate interpretation and, therefore, effective action; whereas, a dysfunctional program presents a situation that does not exist, so the resulting course of action has no effect or just creates difficulties. For example, many times I wrongly interpreted a girl's look as an invitation when, in fact, it was only a tease to build her ego by tricking me into hitting on her. Consequently, because of significantly different upbringing and slightly different genetic material, some individuals are better able to draw the right conclusions about the world around them and act accordingly.

Lying in bed, my analysis seemed to make sense. The reason for the great success of the human species was its adaptability, which was made possible because the brains of its young were still partially unformed at birth. As a result, a human child born into anyone of different social orders: tribal, feudal, dictatorial, democratic or other, could adapt immediately given a local environment that accurately mimicked the society as a whole. For instance, American parents used to teach their children in words and by example that honesty was the best policy. Such conduct created a set of dendrites that allowed one person to rely on the word of another. This one simple concept programmed into most Americans enabled many people to assume that when another American gave his word, the odds were he would keep it. The former chairman of one of the Big Five accounting firms once said that his most valuable asset was his word. Keeping his word allowed others to rely on his promises and vice versa, which streamlined business transactions and provided a basis of certainty for future actions. America, however, has changed with the win at all cost zealotry of the political correctionalists. The PCers believe that only they know the truth and what is right, so whatever unethical or intolerant means they use is justified. That naturally requires a different strategy and set of dendrites to function successfully. Dishonesty is now the best policy in America, as it has always been in Russia.

Of a child's two parents, usually the mother exercises the most influence on the offspring, at least during the formative years, so the success or failure of an individual within a certain social system largely depends on her. The mother essentially transfers her dendrite structure onto the child by her behavior and words. A dysfunctional mother will probably yield a dysfunctional child. For me, my mother exercised the greatest influence during my childhood. Her unpredictable hysterics, narcissism, deviousness, cruelty and cold heartedness disposed me

to fearing most people but, ironically, not her or someone like her, such as my wife. With either of them, I felt right at home.

My epiphany on that day in London evaporated for a time my ever-present fear that manifested itself in hostility to people. But I didn't understand why this realization occurred now, so late in life. Perhaps taking my friends' advice to forgo retribution against Angel or the burning of my picture on which she had a spell cast or my escape from Russia, a country steeped in the dark underworld forces of a more primitive time, dragged from my unconscious enlightenment that no logic could convince me of believing.

Feeling no malice toward any man, women or witch, I decided the proper thing to do was write Angel a letter telling her the marriage, if one could call it that, was over and why. I was sure her contingency plan to go to Greece or Venezuela would kick in the moment I turned up absent from Moscow. No sentiment held her back when it came to business and money, but my own sense of fair play required I send the letter. I started with the usual opening lines that developed into a habit whenever I telephoned her. She often teased me about those lines by saying she knew who it was by my voice, although she sounded strangely appreciative of my inquiring into her well being as though she thought nobody cared, or was that just another of her feints:

June 13, 2000

Hello Angel.

It is Roy.

How are you?

Perhaps if I had opened my heart more and been more loving, we would still be together. But I do not think that whatever I said, whatever I did, whatever misunderstandings we had—none of those mistakes justified what you did to harm me from the beginning of March to Milan.

But I will always be thankful to the universe, for as long as I live, for bringing me, for a little while, a Good Angel and a Fallen Angel in one person. Your words as the Good Angel coupled with your actions as the Fallen Angel gave me a revelation. If a person goes through life with hate in his heart for other people, then he creates his own prison of self-torment from which

he will fail to see the beauty of life. I deeply thank you for that understanding and, as a result, I sincerely, from my heart, forgive you.

You once said that love meant trust and respect. I trust and respect the Good Angel, I always did, but given what I know now, I could never trust nor respect the Fallen Angel.

Sometime in the future, three little words will become more important than “I love you”. Those words will be “Let me help”. I tried the best I could to help you reach your dreams, but the Fallen Angel was too powerful for me.

I honestly hope your dreams still come true. Don’t give up; you will make it, if you sincerely respect people.

Goodbye my dear one.

I sent the letter by one-day delivery, and the next day flew back to New York City on the same flight as Carol and Thelma using what protection they could provide me against the reach of the Dark Angel’s magic. I planned to go back to college to study physics and spend the remainder of my life exploring the secrets of the universe. But only a fool makes any kind of allowance for hope and happy endings.

## **Stupid Frigging Fool**

By Roy Den Hollander

### Part 2

#### You Keep Me Hanging On

As soon as I walked into my apartment in New York City, my phone rang. I knew it was Angel, but I wasn't playing her game anymore—I didn't answer. Her soft and wheedling voice wasn't manipulating me anymore; besides, I didn't want her to know my whereabouts for fear that her satanic magic might be able to reach me even in America. I still believed magic limited to Russia but I wanted to err on the safe side after her witchcraft and duplicity played me for such a sap. Throughout the day, the phone rang periodically but by early evening stopped because in Krasnodar it was the middle of the night—time for her nocturnal activities. I don't know why I didn't disconnect my telephone. Maybe I enjoyed knowing that with each ring she suffered as she watched her golden opportunity of traveling to America evaporate for unknown reasons.

The next day, I called my American lawyer in Moscow to see how I could get out of this marriage and keep her from entering the U.S.

“Who has the visa?” He asked.

“I do.”

“Without the visa, she will never get into America. But just to make sure she doesn't pull a fast one by claiming to have lost it, I suggest you write a letter to INS at the Embassy saying that she married you solely to go to America, and that you are now in the process of getting a divorce. Send them a copy of her dairy as well. The quickest and least expensive way to divorce or get an annulment in Russia requires both of you to agree to it. If she

agrees then the two of you need to go back to ZAGS in Krasnodar to sign a document and two months later—freedom.

“What if she doesn’t agree?”

“Then it could theoretically drag on for an eternity without any clear cut resolution. Unfortunately, the way Russian civil procedure works, she can prevent any final hearing by just failing to show up—time after time, after time. Eventually you can get a default verdict in your favor, but that’s after spending all the time and money waiting for her not to show. And a default is open to all sorts of challenges on the basis of her absence, even though she’s the one who failed to show. I suggest you telephone her and ask her to agree to a divorce. Tell her she can’t get into the country without her visa, which you have, and that you will contact the Embassy to make sure she doesn’t trick them into issuing her a duplicate visa, which is highly unlikely anyway. With her route to America blocked, she should agree to a divorce to free her to find someone else to use.”

That last part hurt but was true—Angel used me from the beginning. “I’ll give her a call, which is not a task I look forward to doing, but I guess I must.”

On 15 June 2000, I dialed her mobile. When she picked up and started talking, the entire lunacy started again right where I left it in Russia—sympathy for a slut, magic and stupidity.

“Hello Angel,” I said without emotion.

“Roy! Where are you?”

“South America,” I said to keep her from casting a spell on my apartment but sensed she knew I was back in New York.

“Why did you leave Russia? I look for you for three days now. What has happened?” Her words rushed in a torrent of apprehension.

“Milan happened.”

Without skipping a beat she said, “What are you talking about? I don’t hear.”

“Milan. You know it is in Italy along with Venice and Florence.”

“You make no sense Roy. What are you talking about?” She was good.

“I know Angel, I know about you and Alfredo in Italy.”

“I don’t do nothing!” she said in her usual emphatic way when caught; trying to make her accuser doubt the truth.

“Cut the con Angel. Before you came to Moscow, you flew to Milan, Italy, stayed at the Lloyds Hotel, fucked Alfredo repeatedly, gave him a blow job, traveled to Venice and Florence with him, all for \$600, a diamond ring and other brilliants.” I didn’t mention the real source of my information. Let her fear that I kept watch through Kroll’s F.S.B. and M.V.D. sources.

Immediately, and actually sounding sincere, she said, “I very big sorry, please forgive me.” She begged and pleaded, “Roy give me last chance. I will try to correct mistake. Please give me last chance.” Damn she was real good and continued to lie, “I had sex with nobody else except Alfredo. I don’t make any sex in Krasnodar during our marriage. I tell you honestly. I tell you I was with nobody else.”

“What about Volodya?”

Silence.

“What about Volodya?” I repeated.

“I don’t know who you talk about.”

“The guy who took you to the apartment of Vadik’s mother, who hung herself. He fucked you twice. Remember him now.” Anger didn’t enter my voice because I didn’t feel it, just remoteness.

More silence.

“I don’t want to speak lies in the future. I sorry for lies what I told. I have nothing in Krasnodar. There is nothing here for me, please forgive me, please give me last chance.” Now she was dangerous, and I knew it! She continued to lie about her affairs, but her desperation sounded sincere and that or perhaps her magic cracked my resolve.

“I will think about what you said and call you tomorrow.” I felt confused again and wanted time to think, to figure out the right thing to do. “But if I decide to continue our marriage and bring you to America, I expect you to live up to your earlier promises: not to go out with other men, not to try to trick me and no more contact with Alfredo.”

“I agree Roy. I will wait your call,” she said in her contrite voice.

“Goodbye.”

“Goodbye darling,” she said in her most innocent voice.

Once again clarity escaped me. Did she cast a spell over the telephone? Why even consider giving her another chance? She kept lying while claiming to tell the truth—did she even know the difference? I went for a walk.

Later that day, I called my stockbroker and friend for years, Maiya Furgason, to tell her I was back in town. Ironically, it was through my broker, who had done business in Russia under the Soviets, that I found the apartment in the same building in Moscow where I met Angel at Leo’s “model” party the previous July. Maiya invited me to her house on the New Jersey shore for the weekend. I quickly accepted. I could use some sun, surf and



outdoors to make my decision or to escape the decision my intuition told me I already made. I hoped the Jersey shore, where I used to hangout in high school, would return my thinking to a time free from a culture straining to turn men into the paradigm of the forgiving female, which never existed in reality, so women could wreak their evil unopposed and unfettered.

The Roy before Russia immediately dropped any girl who gave even the appearance of cheating. I never cheated on my girl friends, so I expected the same. If fidelity overburdened their weak, self-centered minds, then I moved on. I didn't exist to cater to the irrational whims of any girl, no matter how successfully she convinced herself that royal blood flowed through her veins. With seven billion people in the world, over half girls, that left more than 3.5 billion. I figured one percent were good looking and in their athletic prime of 15 to 25 years old, which came to 70 million. Assuming an active sexual life of 60 years, then each year allotted over one million girls, which worked out to over 3,100 per night—that was plenty for me. Actually, like most guys, I'm still working on my first night. Ah, but what about all the other guys out there I'm competing with—irrelevant. Girls are not consumable commodities such as chocolate bars. After a man eats a chocolate bar, no other guy is going to eat it—it's gone. But girls are reusable like the overnight deposit boxes in banks. Guy after guy comes along and makes his deposit.

From a different angle, I figured if I owned a 1957 red and white DeSoto Fireflite Sportsman convertible with push button drive, I wouldn't want some other guy riding around in it picking up chicks. It's my car, and it's valuable to me, because it's hot, and there are so few of them. But there are millions of hot girls. Why would a guy want to own anyone of them when he can rent dozens? So ownership and possessiveness of a girl makes

no sense. The entire concept of “ownership” of a girl comes from girls thinking they’re more valuable than they are—it’s the princess syndrome.

The next day, Friday, I called Angel to tell her I hadn’t made my decision yet but would by Sunday. The moment I got her on the phone she jumped into a well-prepared monologue—this girl didn’t give up when she wanted something, but the something wasn’t me.

You are only one man with whom I have serious relations. And to forgive is the higher moral principal. If you really love me, give me one last chance to renew my life. Because if you do not give me this chance, I do not have anything. I very big sorry. Only from 1999 do I see world. Before I had nothing. I make a lot of mistakes because I did not know the man. You great man, clever and wise, you taught me things. It was my mistake. I did not take you seriously. I thought you had wind in your head. You smart. But the more I like you is your heart. You very important in my life and I do not have anyone but you. Now we honest before each other. You not only friend, but specially love you. What you do for me is very important. I do not have too much experience. I make a lot of mistakes. I very big sorry. I feel myself very bad. I cry everyday. I have learned my lesson. I must respect you. All things you do, I appreciate. You were close to me. Your heart was not open. Before stupid mistakes, you was in my heart and stayed in my heart. All criminals in jail have chance to start new life. Before you, I am criminal. I ask you for a chance. I will try to change. Nobody wanted me to be honest before you. First man who take so serious honest and truth. In Russia no one wanted to be honest. Remember, I love you. You very important as person to me. Cannot forgive unless problem. If high intellect then forgive. I can change.”

I didn’t believe much of this hooley, especially the parts about my greatness and her not having anything without me—she planned to go to Venezuela or Greece if her American visa fell through. Angel could make lots of money as a stripper anywhere in the world, but only in America could her dreams of legitimate stardom come true. No other country ever provided anyone willing to work hard and with a little luck the opportunity to reach her dreams. The decision I faced seemed rather simple: Do I condemn another human being to an existence where dreams forever remain the bitter musings of her imagination or give Angel the little bit of luck she never had to go for her heart’s desire. Still, I wavered, until

during the weekend at my broker's house while standing on the dock in front of her house, Maiya said, "if you leave Angel in Russia you will always wonder whether she could have changed into a decent human being, and you could have saved your marriage." That comment tipped the balance to bring her here, but I still wanted the chance to change my mind.

Sunday June 18, 2000, I called Angel from my broker's and told her what I decided; she sounded happy even though I made clear we needed to talk more in Moscow and on that depended whether I brought her to America. Once in America, if she kept up her cheating ways, an annulment or divorce within two years after our marriage combined with her diary that exposed her perjury to the U.S. Embassy in order to obtain her visa should give INS legal grounds to deport her. But that required the U.S. government to do what was right, which didn't always happen, especially given the influence of the Feminazis. Since my position would never be as powerful as it was before she entered America, I wanted to leave my options open until the last minute. We arranged to meet in Moscow.

My Jamaican friends, Carol and Thelma, thought Angel's spell still affected me or that she'd cast another spell on me in Moscow. To prevent Angel from using black magic on me in Moscow again, I followed the suggestion of one of Carol's friends and visited a voodoo priestess from Central America who practiced only white magic. I didn't want anything to do with black magic because my goal wasn't to harm Angel but to protect me from her sorcery.

The priestess Carmen worked out of her house in New Jersey doing a thriving occult business, which for America surprised me. After the bizarre decisions I made in Russia, I conceded that magic could work in a country still steeped in medieval superstitions but not

in modern-day U.S.A. The people waiting to see Carmen obviously disagreed. Fine, I just wanted to protect myself in Russia by using Carmen's white magic to nullify Angel's satanic sorcery. I didn't want any more surprises or blatant stupidity on my part in black magic land.

Carmen was in her forties, came from the Caribbean and wore a tropical dress with a brightly colored scarf around her hair. She walked with a limp and smoked an inexpensive cigar; apparently she liked them. Her office, on the second floor of her house, consisted of a couple of chairs and a table or altar loaded with candles, religious ornaments and pictures of Jesus Christ. She kept a large twisted, wooden stick beside her chair, probably in case one of her clients became possessed I thought. I told Carmen about Angel, handed over a photograph and some of Angel's hair that I took from her brush when I last saw her in Moscow. Not sure why I took it—just seemed like a good idea at the time. Carmen muttered some words, blew smoke in front of her from the cigar and tapped the large wooden stick on the floor. Apparently the cigar and wooden stick had purposes I didn't understand.

In her Caribbean accent, she said, "I must drive out the evil spirits that your wife beset you with before we can get to work. If they remain here, they will report back to your wife what we are doing."

Carmen appeared to exert much effort in dispelling my wife's demon helpers. I looked around but didn't see or hear a thing. Carmen took out a well-used deck of tarot cards, shuffled them while reciting something and turned a number of them face up in the pattern of a cross on the altar. This altar had a white cloth on it.

As she began to talk, I felt transfixed with the words that flowed into me without my usual critical analysis. My life-long beliefs in reason and science lay dormant in the back of my mind while I seemed to enter a nebulous realm of intuition and subtle forces.

“You’re saint is Elegua.”

“Who’s that?” I asked.

“Jesus.”

She picked up the cards from the altar, shuffled and laid them out again.

“You must not go back to Russia for it will mean your death! Your wife doesn’t care about you. She only wants you to bring her to America where she can make a lot of money selling her body. She has worked long and hard, using all her powers and evil spirits to trick you into marrying her and taking her to America. If you go to Russia and refuse to do her bidding, she will kill you. If you bring her to America she will turn you into her slave and you will be as the living dead. If you try to fight her, it will consume your life and in the end she will have you killed.”

I mumbled, “She does have F.S.B. connections, which also means criminal contacts, and the going rate to kill someone in Russia is only \$2000 for a Russian and \$5000 for a foreigner. She’d probably throw in some sex to reduce the price. She has the means, and I wouldn’t put it past her.”

“Hiring someone isn’t her only way. I can feel her evil,” Carmen shuttered as she said this. “Her power is very strong against men and her determination set to live the glamorous life. She could kill you as she would a bug. She doesn’t need someone else to do it because she can kill you with her magic or put something in your food.”

“She already did,” and I told Carmen about her putting “salts and sugars” in my food before the wedding.

“You must get away from her for good. It is very dangerous for you to be around her.”

Carmen’s warnings caused me to grin inside with excitement. Now here was a challenge—my intellect versus the magic of a Russian she-devil. What a struggle between the enlightened and primitive forces. How could I turn my back on this? Here was danger cutting across the physical, intellectual, emotional and metaphysical realms—what a battle it would be! If I won, I had a good story to tell; if I lost, then I would be dead—so what? I never liked my life anyway. Not to have been born was passed all prizing best. I knew then I would bring Angel back to America to plant my flag for ego, truth and right.

Carmen continued, “Your wife decided when she was 16 that her goal in life was to make money off of men by using her looks, body and the mask of a pleasing personality. She believes she can get anything she wants with her beauty and lies. For her that is why God gave her a pretty face and will protect her soul from the dark forces she calls on to help her. She hates men bitterly and has created in herself a machine for destroying them. The way she makes money helps her achieve vengeance against men by making them fall in love with, lust after or feel sympathetic to her. She exploits those feelings for money and uses them to cause men pain. Romance is for strengthening her bank account. As a teenager, she promised herself not to be a good girl but a user of men. Her false personality communicates a childish innocence and naiveté that masks a cold-hearted ruthlessness. She intends men emotional, physical and spiritual harm.”

That explained why the photograph of Angel as a teenager showed such a mean and nasty girl—the real Angel. It also explained her pantomime while demonstrating a lap dance to me in my apartment, where she used both hands to simulate a gun, shooting me and then arrogantly blowing away the smoke from the make believe barrel.

“All along your wife tricked you into believing she was a decent person who got a raw deal so that you would feel sorry for her, forgive her and use your time and money to help get her to America. By demanding that you acted decently toward her, she was able to succeed by being indecent. You are just another customer to her. The most important thing to your wife is money, which is why she pretends to show so much concern over saving a man money. She believes it will help win her way into his heart so as to allow her to trick much more from him over time.”

All of Angel’s haggling over carfare and the cheap tickets for the train to Sochi went through my head.

“Your wife would rather have girls, but she needs men for money and to exercise feminine power, which doesn’t work with girls. She has a girl friend for a lover who is tall, with black hair.”

“You’re right, at least it makes sense. When I was in Krasnodar for my wedding, Angel kept going upstairs to visit her friend Natasha for hours at a time. Recently, one of Angel’s friends told me Natasha was a model—tall with black hair.”

“Girls like these always prefer women. I want you to realize that your wife is not stupid. She is very clever and cunning. She understands both the physical and spiritual world, which you don’t, but she lacks any feeling of social and moral obligations—that makes her extremely dangerous. She will do things you wouldn’t imagine, no matter how

filthy to her soul just to get money. She firmly believes the ends justify the means and that her prayers to God will always bring forgiveness, but God is not fooled so easily. The only reason you didn't completely succumb to her powers is because you have a guardian angel protecting you."

That caused an ironic smile as I remembered Angel saying the same thing while reading my palm on our first date at the Park of Victory in Moscow. Like an idiot, I assumed then that Angel was my guardian, which was why I immediately started calling her "Angel".

"I know it isn't my wife, so who is it?" I asked Carmen.

"Your guardian angel is your mother."

"That's impossible! My mother was a mean spirited, nasty person who thought only about herself." I blurted out with intense bitterness. "She's dead, thank goodness, so I guess she qualifies for a spirit, but if there is a heaven and hell, she's in one of the lower circles of Dante's Inferno—at least I hope so. She never cared enough to help anyone but herself. She was a phony who pretended to be the proverbial innocent victim to get others to feel sorry for her, so she could ruthlessly use them for her own ends. She didn't care whose lives she ruined, not her sons, no one, so long as they served her interests. Any sacrifice she tricked others into was fine with her. She valued money as much as my wife does. On my first date with Angel, she found a kopeck lying in the street and picked it up with glee. My mother did the same for pennies. On more than one occasion as a kid, mother refused to take me to the doctor for fractured bones I got from playing sports. Finally, after days of delay, other adults hauled me off for medical help when they saw the pain I was in. Once I had a fractured wrist and didn't make it to a doctor for a week until I collapsed from the pain



in gym class. And it wasn't because we couldn't afford a doctor. Our family had two cars and a Catskill vacation home. It was because every penny mother saved out of the household budget went into her bank account."

"My mother thought more about money and appearances than anything else. I doubted her ever capable of loving anyone. At least, I never heard that word from her. When I was eleven, after taking me to the cheery movie *On the Beach*, she walked me over to the town soda fountain—very strange I thought, since she never did this before. While eating my ice cream sundae, she told me she was thinking of getting a divorce because the only reason she married my father was that he could provide her with a better life style than some other guy she was dating at the time. From the age of five or six until I was a teenager, she often hollered at me that she should have listened to my father and never had me. She finally stopped saying that when I replied, 'I wish you had too!'"

"By the time I was a teenager, her ravings made me realize that the only reason she gave birth was the same reason people buy two cars and park them in front of their house—to keep up appearances. On top of this, she martyred herself over the son she lost to some unknown illness, 'Roger was always very sick,' she'd often say. Her sorrow didn't ring true, since she wished she never had kids. After my parents' deaths, I did a little research into the death of the brother who was born before me but with Down's syndrome. It all looked very suspicious, and I concluded from Roger's death certificate that in order to avoid future medical bills and the continuing humiliation of having given birth to a retarded child, dear old mother and father starved Roger, gave him pneumonia in the middle of summer and ultimately choked him to death in his crib. My mother's hypocrisy and mask of decency disgusted me. She went to church every Sunday because it looked good and probably

wanted to keep her options open in case God really did exist. In her heart boiled selfishness, arrogance and duplicity—she was a nazi, not a guardian angel but more like a tormenting demon.”

Carmen looked a little surprised by my tirade, which made me suspect her for a charlatan. She should have seen the character of my mother as she did with Angel. Of course, what I told Carmen about Angel, she repeated back to me with embellishment. My skepticism of magic still existed in part of my mind, but this was a new adventure, so I went along willing with the new ideas and suspended by doubt about Carmen’s supernatural powers for the time being.

Carmen immediately said, “When people die they realize their mistakes and try to make up for them by helping from the spirit world. Your mother is trying to protect you now from the evil of your wife.”

Not a bad response, but I didn’t buy it, although I said, “Perhaps.” I found it impossible for my mother in any manifestation to do something for someone else, even a son. No, any success at protecting myself from Angel’s witchcraft would result not from my phantom mother but my intellect and will, and, maybe, some white wizardry.

Right after my marriage, I thought I could sense Angel’s spells. They always functioned in the same way, probably because of her lack of imagination. The spell either created or exploited an obstacle, whether internal or external, to my doing something she didn’t want. For example, when I discovered her dairy, my heart irrationally filled with so much fear that I almost didn’t make a copy, and the pages I did copy were only for 1999-2000. The few pages for 1996-98, I left alone—what a bewitched idiot! At the first copy place the machine couldn’t copy those pages she wrote in blue ink, so I went searching for a

place that could—not an easy task in Russia. When I tried to find the black magic-man to shake some information out of him, an unexpected traffic jam popped up that delayed my arrival at his den just long enough so that I apparently missed him by a few minutes. Other tries failed because my interpreter or driver was delayed. Each conjured obstacle attacked me emotionally by creating a despairing sense that my efforts were impossible and I should give up. I noticed, however, that not giving up, that by just trying to move forward again and again, the obstacle and emotional constraints vanished. Magic probably worked through illusions created in the victim’s mind, but by keeping focused and persistent the illusions crumbled. Then again, I might be wrong.

I asked Carmen, “If I go to Russia, can you do something to protect me from her magic.”

“I knew you were going to go and will probably bring her back. When is your flight?”

“I’ve made reservations for July 6<sup>th</sup>.”

“That doesn’t give us much time. But if you bring her back, she will not kill you because you will be doing what she wants and she will need you to serve her in America, for a while at least. She is the type of girl who uses men to do her bidding and help her deal with everyday problems. She will try to enslave you, and we will have to protect you against that. But if you go against her wishes, then she will destroy you, either in Russia or America. I can end the spells she has cast on you so far and give you some protection against new ones while you are gone, but in Russia you must be very careful—many dreadful spirits walk that land. It’s her home and she is most powerful there. If you bring her back, call me right away, or she will turn you into her slave. Living with a person like

this may overwhelm any defense your good heartedness gives you, so we will need to do more work. I also want to give you a cross to keep under your pillow, but that will have to wait your return. And try not to eat any of the foods she prepares in Russia or here! She'll try to use food as a way to bind you to her."

Carmen left the room and returned shortly with a small bottle of darkish liquid, dried flowers of some kind, a candle and a liter coke bottle with some foul smelling brown liquid inside. "Everyday until you leave for Russia and after you take a shower, spread the liquid in this big bottle all over yourself. It smells bad so you should wear a lot of cologne when going out. Before you go to bed put a few drops from the small bottle into a cup tea made from these herbal flowers. Also, before bedtime, light this candle and read from the Bible Psalms 23 and 91. When you finish reading, put the candle out by wetting your fingers and quickly pinching the flame. If you blow out the flame, the protective magic I put in the candle will be scattered—you want it to stay concentrated. Do this for the next 12 days and on the last day before you go to Russia, let the candle burn down until it goes out by itself. When you get home, throw out all the pictures of your wife."

"Why?"

"It's through her pictures that she keeps a presence near you to keep you under her influence." I knew I wasn't going to throw out her pictures, not because I wanted to look at them, which I didn't, but to keep them as mementos, a la the movie *Carnal Knowledge*.

Carmen then said, "Now, I want you to go into the bathroom down the end of the hall and spread some of the liquid from the large bottle all over you."

"Now?" I asked, a little embarrassed.

"Yes. You do not have much time until you leave, so you must start now."

“Okay.” I did as she said and ended up smelling like overly spiced garlic bread in an Italian restaurant. On my way home, feeling as though swimming in a supernatural sea of lunacy, I kept my distance from other people on the PATH and in the subway, not just because I stunk but to avoid evil spirits, as if I could recognize any.

Over the next days, I followed Carmen’s instructions, made the arrangements for my trip to Moscow and a return flight for Angel, assuming it occurred. A number of other matters also occupied my time.

My stockbroker Maiya always wanted to smuggle art objects out of Russia. She had buyers in America but nobody in Russia to purchase the art or transport it out. Russia’s laws forbid the export without special licenses of any art created before the Communist Revolution. These regulations existed to exact bribes for government officials—not to preserve the country’s heritage. Most of the art created under the Commies didn’t require export licenses because the Russian authorities knew nobody in their right mind would pay bribes for those works. Since Angel didn’t give a damn about Russian laws, I suggested her as the smuggler Maiya was looking for. When Maiya told Angel the amount of money she might make, she naturally agreed. Maiya, however, wasn’t so stupid as to trust Angel or any other Russian with a lot of money up front to purchase art, so Maiya organized a test smuggling for a small amount. Angel found a dealer in Krasnodar willing to sell 18<sup>th</sup> century silverware at very low prices and Inessa would arrange for shipment to Maiya’s house in New Jersey after Angel forged the export license. Total cost to Maiya: \$500 with a reputed value of \$1500, according to Angel. My wife made \$100 and the shipping amounted to \$50 with the price of the goods at \$350. Delivery would take about three weeks.

Before leaving for Moscow, I met with some of my friends in New York City whom I had seen nearly a year earlier before my time travel back to the dark ages of sorcery, witchcraft and demonic spirits. After telling them the story about Angel, they all said to leave her in the evil empire where she belonged. One old friend commented that my tale sounded like a 1940s detective movie and suggested I rent one called *Murder, My Sweet*. I did and watched a number of other movies in the same genre. One I had first watched the previous year before going to work for Kroll: *Dead Reckoning* in which Humphrey Bogart tells Lizabeth Scott, “I don’t trust women.” At that time, it struck me as overly cynical because living among all the Feminazis and their sycophants in America had subtly twisted my sense of reality into actually attributing the virtue of integrity to females. But after Russia, I began the long process of weaning myself off of such Kool-Aide. In addition to film noir movies, I picked up the detective novels of Dashiell Hammett and Raymond Chandler from the first half of the 20<sup>th</sup> century before the Political Correctionalists put females on that illusionary pedestal of moral uprightness.

Those two authors knew the real danger of women—their extraordinary ability to trick a man even when he intellectually knew she was running a con. The women in their novels circumvented a man’s reason by attacking through the emotions of compassion and sex. The femme fatales played on evolution’s programming of men as the protectors of women. Evolution wanted the species to survive, which required someone to protect women since they bore the next generation. The only choice was men, but no rational male would jump in front of a saber tooth tiger to protect a duplicitous female unless driven by compassion. Evolution, therefore, hardwired sympathy into the brain of every heterosexual man, making him a sucker for a female’s fake tears and phony hard-luck stories. Females

have added their own gloss over the ages by twisting the different nature of the sexes so that society depicts women as the compassionate sex and men as macho brutes, which make women, not men, worthy of saving. This delusion makes no sense because it's the compassion of men that evolution needed to assure the survival of the species and not the compassion of females. It was no accident that 74% of the females survived the Titanic but only 20% of the men. Females simply use the juxtaposition of that inherent character trait to further manipulated men into believing them inherently worthy of protection no matter how evil their deeds, such as boiling their babes and drowning their sons.

Evolution also created a chemical reaction in heterosexual men's brains that causes desire for women. The drive for sex provides a chain to tie the male to the female so that his protection of her will continue after she bears children while compassion ties him to protecting the child. Evolution is no one's fool and neither are females no matter how much they feign naiveté. Feminine propaganda over the ages depicted men as lower-life forms driven only by sex when in reality women burn to copulate more frequently because they derive more pleasure from it. Evolution required women to enjoy sex more; otherwise, no female would risk the pain, burden and sacrifice of childbirth and rearing just to get laid if the pleasure she felt equaled that experience by a man. Women once again twisted the differences between the sexes to their duplicitous advantage by pretending they were doing a guy a favor by sleeping with him, when in reality he was doing her the favor.

A woman's drive for sex and economic support, which is the modern-day form of protection, made infidelity a way of life for her. Females spread their bets, so if one man bites the dust, either physically or economically, she still had other beaus to depend on. To keep her beaus tied to her, she needed to cheat on all of them but still convince each one

with her tears, entreaties and sex that he was the only one. Over millions of years, natural selection eliminated the faithful females, since they tended to die out with only one male protecting and supporting them. That left modern-day man with only a huge pool of hos—billions of them.

Women understand in their genes that a pretty face, pretense of innocence and the appearance of victimization will enable them to manipulate most any man. Even today's Feminazis adroitly exploit their alleged victimization by claiming years of oppression—tell that to the guys pushing up daisies in the Falkland Islands—and bawling like babies when they don't get their way or someone exposes their screw-ups. But that special interest group can't exploit sexual desire with their unshaved underarms, lack of make up, incessant demonizing of men and trying to act like men. So while the Feminazis threaten truth and justice, the real danger for a man lies in the attractive, ruthless, feminine female. Those are the ones that Chandler described in *Farewell, My Lovely* as “Big league blonds, beautiful, expensive babes who know what they have got. All bubble bath and dewy morning and moonlight but inside blue steel—cold, cold like ice only not that clean.” It's that cold steel that cuts through any sense of morality, allowing the feminine female to justify her duplicitous acts by blaming men for everything that went wrong in her life or rationalizing her conduct as the only means to get what she wants—usually wealth and the glamorous life.

The detective stories led me to vainly identify my situation with Hammett's *Maltese Falcon*. The detective Sam Spade runs into the consummate treacherous female whom he calls “Angel,” what else. Spade's description of his Angel, well suited the one I blundered into, “You are not exactly the sort of person you pretend to be, the blushing and school girl



manner stammering.” Even the evasive answers from the Angel in the book sounded familiar, “I can’t tell you now I will later when I can. You have got to trust me.” As did her maneuverings when caught in a lie, “I’m so tired of lying. Not knowing what is a lie, what is the truth?”

I was no Sam Spade, but more like Miles Archer, and despite all the advice from friends and the enlightenment of detective stories, I still played the sap for Angel, knew it, and couldn’t figure out why. Was it the magic, evolution’s programming to save a pretty girl, the desire for a daughter I never had, a challenge, having a girl like the one that married “dear old dad” or the thrill of living dangerously inside a real-life detective story? At the time, I told a friend who advised me to forget Angel that I felt I was living in a 1940s detective novel, so how could I turn my back on that? Then again, maybe it was just plain stupidity as a fortune teller once told me, “The greatest danger may be your own stupidity.”

Angel sent me a letter claiming to want to make me happy and help change my life, which included an insight seemingly more applicable to her: “If you talk that you change, then you are not changed—it is mask.” “Mask” was a word Angel often used to describe the two-face nature of cozeners. The movie *The Mask* with Jim Carey was her second favorite next to *Showgirls*—a real discriminating filmgoer this girl. The main characters in both movies developed personalities that amplified their darker parts. So was Angel telling me she lied about her promise of fidelity? That made no sense. Did she consider me the guilty party for her adultery and deceit? Girls always blame men for their nefarious conduct. But then she avowed her innocence in not trying to trick me out of my money and warned that I shouldn’t try to take revenge, which at least indicated she understood her behavior wrong.

On the back of the letter, she drew a bunch of symbols and pictures. These included a triangle with an eye in it as on the back of a dollar bill, a winged girl holding a flower growing out of her palm with a three pointed crown above it, lots of six pointed stars and other scribbling. She wrote, “Think about this picture and my wishes and my inside world.” I sprinkled some of Carmen’s potion on the drawing and threw the letter in a draw.

Before flying to Russia, I began researching opportunities for physicists in the space exploration industry in hope of eventually working in the field after obtaining another degree, but even there Angel intruded. On June 28 while in the Columbia University business library, I sensed Angel was about to do something treacherous again. I hurried home and called her apartment between 9 and 10 PM her time, just when she usually left for the discos. No answer, which meant she was not home. I then called her mobile, also no answer, which meant she was out of town or leaving town. The following day, I reached Angel who claimed she went to a disco with her friend Katya and had forgotten her mobile. She assured me she did nothing wrong and that I should not be so suspicious of, as she said, “the new Angel.” I didn’t believe it, noted the incident in my scheduler for future reference.

On July 6, after completing Carmen’s rituals and despite all the warnings and signs of danger, or perhaps because of them, I boarded a flight to Moscow.

#### Don’t Play That Song (You Lied)

My flight took me through Zurich, Switzerland. While waiting in Zurich for my connecting flight to Moscow, I spotted a pretty Russian girl in her early twenties holding tightly her carry on bag. Another master of the art of deception from a country of deceivers who was going home with more money than she ever dreamed of—all in cash in her bag. I wondered in which country she hoed and sold her soul.

Angel flew into Moscow late one night after my arrival. My driver from Kroll days took me to the airport. My lack of a smile reflected a determination to keep her from suckering me again. I sat with my back to the departing passengers not wanting to fall into the blushing groom role again of eagerly anticipating his beloved's arrival. My driver kept watch for Angel and would bring her over to my seat when she exited the gate. Some girl with short black hair touched my shoulder. I looked up twice wondering what this lady wanted, then realized it was Angel.

I rose surprised and kissed her on the cheek, "What did you do to your hair?"

"Do you like it?" she said with a model type move of her body.

"I thought you always wanted to be a blonde? You not only died your hair but cut it short." I was shocked and tried to figure out why. I knew by then she didn't do something without a reason—usually a nefarious one.

"This is the new Angel!" She exclaimed with the same old Cheshire grin.

"You really look different." More dark and menacing than ever I thought.

Driving through the night from the airport, Angel pulled out another weapon, but this one I understood—the guilt trip.

"Why are you so distant Roy? You close your heart to me."

"How would you feel if some girl paid me to go to Italy to have sex?" The moment after I said it, I knew it was the wrong question since she probably wouldn't care at all. She ignored it.

"Why are you so cold to me? I told you, I sorry for that. It was stupid of me and will never happen again. After we talked three weeks ago, I do nothing in Krasnodar but pray you truly forgive me. I don't go out except to shop and walk. I don't go any place."

“So you say.”

Silence, which surprised me. I thought she would try harder; maybe her arrogance prevented her. I softened a little towards her and suggested we go to a bowling ally and pool hall to which she readily agreed. Angel liked pool and bowling. Both brought out the seemingly innocent girl in her, as did amusement park rides.

Under the Soviets, Russians didn't have the opportunities to amuse themselves with such Western games until the late nineties when government officials and their henchmen started building glitzy entertainment complexes and modern restaurants with stolen government funds. The amusement centers offered bowling, pool, video and table games and discos, but only New Russians or foreigners could afford the prices, so most of the places, as with the restaurants, were usually empty. The clientele of one large fancy restaurant I often went to on a Friday or Saturday night usually consisted of only my date and me. These restaurants and entertainment complexes didn't go broke because they weren't built to make money but to wash it.

The Krishas, controlled by powerful government officials generated so much cash that physically shipping the money overseas became impractical. The crime groups needed banks in Russia with correspondent accounts in the West to wire funds abroad. The banks in the hard currency countries where New Russians wanted to invest their gains operated under laws against accepting funds that appeared to come from criminal activities—drugs, prostitution, looting state assets, embezzling international loans, counterfeiting products, extortion and contract killings. These activities are the cash cows for Russian Krisha's, so they needed a way to make their funds appear to originate from legitimate businesses. That's why restaurants and entertainment centers began appearing throughout Russia. The

government racketeers funnel some of their illegal money through these apparently legal operations by reporting a full house of customers every night when there's virtually no one. Now everybody, including Western bankers, know the New Russians launder their money this way before wiring it overseas, but the laws only require a plausible appearance of legitimacy, so the bankers play dumb to satisfy the laws and, of course, their greed.

At the pool hall and bowling alley, Angel boasted, "We have a place like this in Krasnodar, now. It is great with bowl, pool and air hockey. I like it very much."

"Did you go there often?"

"Once a week or more. It is great fun."

"Whom did you go with?" Her smile faded.

"I went with my friend Katya," she said sourly as though realizing she made a mistake by admitting to doing something other than praying, walking or shopping.

"How can you and Katya afford such a place?"

"Stop it Hollander! I told you I do nothing in Krasnodar." I envisioned Angel, Katya and New Russians enjoying themselves in the new Krasnodar amusement center.

After bowling, we went downstairs to the pool hall—rows and rows of tables with only a few patrons on a Saturday night. Angel liked pool more than bowling, probably because of the stick and ball imagery. During one game, I nudged her good-naturedly to which she responded with a headlock and our wrestling match commenced. We battled, partly seriously, partly not, over the table onto the couches lining the wall and down to the floor. I think I enjoyed this part of her the most—wrestling. Sometimes she won, but more often she lost. Still she never said "Amba," which means "curtains" in Russian. Even in defeat, she refused to concede but just lay there pinned, waiting for a sign of weakness on

my part when she would attack again. I admired her spirit and will to renew the fight when the chance arose, which reminded me of Hitler's belief that to keep a Russian defeated meant killing him.

While wrestling in the pool hall, I saw she didn't change her hair at all but wore a wig—a false new Angel? I theorized why the disguise. She probably assumed I concocted some plan to psychologically trick her into divulging more information about her activities. That was the Russian way, so to throw me off she pretended to change her entire appearance believing I would react to that and forget my scheme to trick more information from her. In one move, she hoped to divert my intention from continuing to quiz her about her infidelities, which I didn't have to since I possessed a copy of her diary. But she didn't know that. On the other hand, maybe she assumed I enlisted the help of a white magic witch and the disguise was meant to befuddle the spirits sent against her. Who knew in that lunatic asylum of Russia?

The next day, Maria's boy friend dropped off a demo tape that my rock and roll producer friend Pat expressed interest in hearing.

After he left, Angel asked, "He knows about me doesn't he? I could tell by his coolness."

"Yes. I told Maria about your activities in Krasnodar and Italy. She's a close friend of mine and was a friend of yours but no more. She took it very hard."

"I wish you didn't tell them," Angel said without apparent rancor.

"You'll never see them again. What do you care what they think?"

She didn't respond to this and once again the universe tried to tell me something about her that I didn't understand, so I filed the incident away for future reference.

We then took a walk to the Park of Victory where less than one year earlier we had our first date. My mind seemed fairly clear, but my will weak. I continued taking the drops in herb tea at night that Carmen prescribed but, against her directions, ate a couple of the meals Angel prepared. How much sorcery could a meal carry I reasoned? Angel and I sat on one of the benches looking west, just as we did the previous year.

“It’s time for honesty on the part of both of us Angel. And depending on whether you can tell the truth or not will depend on whether I take you back to America.”

“I be honest with you my husband,” she contritely said.

She still didn’t know I possessed a copy of her dairy, so she could only guess at how much I knew.

“You once said that you considered me your boy friend beginning in December last year when we first slept together. So I am only interested in whether you can tell the truth—the whole truth—about what you’ve done since then. We’ll go month to month. I’ll tell you about my activities, and you tell me about yours.” For me it was easy, prior to and during our marriage there was no one except Angel.

“I understand,” she said, sounding somewhat sarcastically.

“I’m serious Angel!” Still believing my free will in tact.

Angel started talking, but for each month she declared she did nothing bad until I would confront her with the name of someone or an event in which she acted unfaithfully or tried to trick me. Then without batting an eyelash or revealing a blush, she claimed to have forgotten the incident or euphemized it as innocuous. Clearly her strategy was to conceal her nefarious acts until I called her on them at which point she would diminish their seriousness or plead a faulty memory. At the end of our conversation, she apologized again

for her conduct, said the talk very difficult for her because telling the truth not part to her culture and it would take her time to change.

Angel's half-truths and lies were obvious, but the fogginess of my mind failed to foresee any real danger, so, like a fool, I gave into Angel again. As with so many times in my life, rather than pursuing physics, I ended up diverting into what proved another eclectic and meaningless adventure. But at least I tried to make sure as best my hazed enshrouded brain could that she understood my position and hers.

“I am well aware of the anger you feel towards me—some of that anger is my fault, most is not. Some is cultural differences, age differences and some is not. Whether you even like me, or only see me as a fool to be taken advantage of is unclear. People have always lied to you, tricked you and tried to cheat you. You and other Russian girls see each other as allies in arms against a hostile world and weak men who have the material resources you desire. So when you can gain something you want from a man, you feel justified in lying and tricking him and, when necessary, providing him sex though you do not feel emotionally close to him. Generally when you deal with men from the third world: Mexico, Cyprus, Russia and other such places, you may be justified in being artful because they do not care about you as a human being with feelings, hopes and dreams. They just want their sex and to show other people that they have you for a sex slave. This is also true of some American men, but none of whom I have ever known, except Tony. As a result, lying for you becomes second nature, an instinctive reaction. The problem between us is that I am not a man from the third world. I am not perfect and not young, but I am, my woman friends tell me, a decent American man. In America, once you are caught in a lie, it is enormously difficult to regain trust—enormously difficult.”



“After I learned about your lies and your tricks, I decided to divorce you, but then you asked for a last chance. My logic said you would not change and just continue doing what you always did to satisfy your desires and get what you wanted no matter whom you harmed. You even continued to lie today. But something keeps telling me to give you the last chance. I do not know whether it’s metaphysics, evolution, psychology, the God to whom you pray, wanting to save our marriage or what, but something has made me give you a last chance. Now it’s up to you to decide what you are going to do with it. But remember, if you continue to lie and cheat, you will lose in the end.”

She said nothing in response.

We stayed in Moscow another two nights. Angel started wearing her hair in a single braid. Before she always wore it loose and long. The significance would eventually reveal itself. We flew back to New York on separate planes. Angel wanted to come to America as quickly as possible, but I couldn’t find a flight with two seats. I still didn’t understand her rush, so I just filed it away in my mind with the other incongruous information and arranged for different flights. Since Angel’s plane would arrive before mine, I told her to wait at the terminal where she arrived and I would find her. JFK airport consists of a number of terminals and I didn’t want her getting lost looking for me.

#### On Broadway

On the trip over, I couldn’t help but wonder whether Angel planned to disappear in New York City or perhaps fly on to California to work in a strip club run by one of Leo’s business associates.

We landed on July 10, 2000, with her two hours ahead of me. Rather than take the shuttle bus to her terminal, I decided to walk since it was quicker. Part way to her terminal,

I ran into Angel rushing in my direction lugging her suitcase. Obviously, she decided not to follow my advice and wait for me at her terminal. Was she trying to disappear? When she saw me, she smiled and waved. Another feint, I wondered.

“Why didn’t you wait at the terminal?” I asked.

“They told me your plane was late, so I tried to find it,” she said as she hugged and kissed me.

“But what if we had missed each other?”

“Don’t worry, everything worked out. I am now in America—it’s great,” she jumped with glee like a little child.

When we arrived at my apartment, my mail included a card sent by Angel from Krasnodar a week earlier. Mail from Russia to America usually takes about a week, but from America to Russia, it might take months or an eternity. Russian postal workers often don’t bother to deliver foreign mail; a hold over of sloth from the Soviet Union, and they regularly open letters from America looking for something of value, which in poverty stricken Russia might simply mean the blank sides of paper that they can use for their own writing. Before mailing the card, Angel kissed the back with her lipstick-coated lips only once:

Hello my husband!

Interesting, now I’m with you and this card. We are has a lot of difficult situation, psychological, but we are together, what it mean is that we are took lessons. I wish both of us health, clean love, understanding, harmony and good luck in everything.

Your unforgettable Angelina

“Very nice,” I sincerely said, hoping she lives up to her promises to put her wicked ways behind, but still remembering the other fine words she had told as boldfaced lies to manipulate me.

I emptied out a closet and dresser draws for her things. She used the closet but not the dresser. Instead, she kept many of her things in two bags on the floor in front of her bedroom closet as if her accommodations were only temporary. It seemed strange, but I dismissed it. She took up preparing meals, and I felt great about living with her and failed to contact Carmen for the cross to protect me. I especially enjoyed wrestling with Angel in the apartment or public places, like restaurants and Central Park. Guess it made both of us feel like kids before the horrors of our childhoods took hold of our adult lives.

I gave Angel maps of New York City and red lined the neighborhoods she should avoid. Briefed her on how to use the subway, advised her on dealing with New Yorkers and showed her around the neighborhood. When pointing out a copy store, I realized I made a mistake, because Angel stopped and mumbled, “So maybe that’s how.” I knew she referred to how I obtained my information on her. She must have eventually suspected her dairy, but knew I couldn’t read Russian, so then how could her diary have betrayed her? The copy store probably clicked in her mind the answer that I had copied the diary and then got it translated. Still, she couldn’t be sure.

The next day she said, “I want to buy a notebook so I can write my thoughts down. Show me where I can find one.” She never before mentioned writing her thoughts. Now I knew she suspected that I found out about her cheating by reading her dairy. Back in June, when she asked me how I learned about her Italy trip and the other liaisons, I left it to her imagination that I used Kroll’s F.S.B. and M.V.D. agents to spy on her and tap the telephone in her apartment. I wanted to cover my real source of information just in case I needed to copy future entries in her diary and deter her from further un-wifely activities out of fear that Big Brother was watching. But when she made a point of buying the notebook with me and

keeping it in plain sight on the living room coffee table, I concluded it a test to confirm her suspicions that her own diary betrayed her. She probably reasoned that by keeping the new diary in plain view, I would copy it and have it translated. By opening it for copying, carefully arranged pieces of paper would certainly fall out or move, and that would tell her I looked in the diary in order to obtain information. She often used this trick of positioning little pieces of paper that move when someone went through her belongings. So, I let the diary sit and only checked it by prying open the pages from the side with a knife to see how much was written. After buying the notebook, she immediately wrote two pages and then nothing for an entire month. That confirmed for me it was a trap.

Angel wanted to find a lap-dancing job quickly. I tried to talk her out of it, “Look, you said you want to be a model. Working in a dark, smoke filled joint eight hours a night is going to take a toll on your looks, emotions and self-respect. Take a part-time waitress job and concentrate all your energy on modeling. Or do bartending. My friend Tom makes decent money at it, and you as a girl can make a lot more. I’m sure he’d be willing to teach you bartending. Even so, I can support the both of us until your career begins to click.”

“I don’t want to be a burden,” she said. “You always said a person must be independent. I have no money, and this is the quickest way for me to make it. I need to save at least fifty thousand for I and mum to feel secure. Then I will concentrate full time on modeling.”

I couldn’t really argue with her wanting the security of financial independence, “Have it your way, but I’m going to check these places out with you. If I don’t like a place, I’m not going to let you work there.”

“Don’t worry Roy, I do not want to work at a low level club,” as she smiled down at me and put her arm over my shoulders.

We spent a week visiting the clubs in Manhattan that were topless as opposed to all-nude, which I refused to permit and which Angel said she wanted to avoid. She called all nude stripping “dirty work”, but yet she enjoyed the Krasnodar body art contest in which she danced all nude on a stage in front of hundreds and tried out the all-nude Penthouse Club in Mexico City. I didn’t know what to believe, but she wasn’t going to dance all nude in NYC.

Some of the clubs were real sleazy, small and filthy. In one the girls and customers lined up in a not so private hallway to make out and fondled each other. The girls were pretty and the guys all losers.

I said to Angel, “Can’t these girls find some other type of work?”

Her response surprised me, “Not all girls can do this type of work.” Which she meant as a compliment.

“Not all pretty girls would want to do this. There are plenty of beautiful women whose self respect and dignity won’t let them do such trash.” Or so I thought at the time.

Angel didn’t say anything, and we moved on to the next club.

She ended up “auditioning” at three clubs: Scores, Stringfellows and Flash Dancers. These clubs were the best in Manhattan. Their managements made lots of money catering to white collar, upscale professionals. These clubs didn’t want the cash wealth generated by girls’ bodies to disappear, so in order to avoid any problems with Mayor Guiliani’s latest crack down on the seedier side of life, the managers tried to limit the sexual thrills to girls prancing around in tong panties. The auditions consisted of Angel stripping on stage or giving a lap dance. Bizarrely, it all seemed natural to me at the time. At Stringfellows, the

manager told me on the side, “These Russian girls are beautiful, but there is something hard inside them. They don’t strike me as the type I would want to cuddle up with in front of a fireplace.” I never imagined a manager of one of these places ever felt such sentiments. Obviously, the place for him was just a business, as was lap dancing for Angel.

Stringfellows and Scores rejected Angel because a lot of girls had just arrived from Florida for the summer, which gave both clubs more girls than they needed. The Scores manager told me that lap dancers travel between New York and Miami depending on the season. The girls make a lot of money in Miami over the fall and winter, but during the summer, their clients consist mainly of retirees on fixed pensions. The rejections started Angel worrying about finding a job, and me hoping she wouldn’t. After each rejection she resorted to her usual philosophy when something didn’t work out the way she wished, “It is not mine.” She also found solace in her supernatural beliefs, “I have tried two places, now I try a third and the third try usually works. If after three tries, it is not yours, then you must change direction.” I hoped her third try would change her direction.

We visited Flash Dancers on Broadway between 52<sup>nd</sup> and 53<sup>rd</sup> Streets, just north of Times Square. The entrance went down a steep flight of stairs to a small, dimly-lit, smoke-filled cavern filled with female flesh hungry for male money. At the bottom, an inarticulate caricature of a hoodlum from a Peter DeBrugel painting greedily took the \$15 cover. I looked for a sign over the gatekeeper’s head saying something about abandoning hope but couldn’t find it. Wise guys owned and operated the club and thugs with barrel wide necks stood menacingly throughout. The hoods served not only as bouncers but also to allegedly enforce the no-touching rules. Under New York State law, touching a girl’s naked tits, ass or thighs while she performed a lap dance for money constituted prostitution, and nothing

would close a club faster. I estimated that Flash Dancers' owners probably took in at least \$10,000 in cash a night—\$3.65 million a year. Wise guys weren't going to risk that cash flow.

On Sunday, July 16<sup>th</sup>, Flash Dancers signed Angel to work its night shift from 8 PM to 4 AM. Angel was happy—I wasn't.

“These jobs are considered somewhat filthy by Americans,” I told Angel. “So don't tell anyone where you work.”

“What should I say?” she asked.

“Tell them you work as a bartender on the Upper Eastside. Many of those bars hire pretty young girls to flirt with the male customers while serving them drinks. Some of those girls make \$400 cash a night, almost as much as you can make at Flash Dancers.”

Flash Dancers didn't actually hire girls; it just allowed them to dance there for a fee. Flash Dancers considered the girls independent contractors who paid the club \$100 a night so they could strip in the joint. The girls also paid the housemother, who kept these not-to-honest babes from stealing each others' belongings; the make-up artist for painting their faces; the hair stylist; and the disk jockey—all of which amounted to around \$40 to \$50 more a night. The customers paid the girls directly—\$20 for one dance that usually lasted around three minutes, the length of a typical song. The girl kept the entire \$20, which in Flash Dancer thinking made her the independent contractor of the customer, so Flash Dancers' didn't need to provide 1099 tax reports. Typical wise guy reasoning and typically wrong under I.R.S. rules.

A customer could also hire a girl for “dancing privately” in the Champagne room in which cameras allegedly kept watch over their activities. For the Champagne room, the

customer paid the club \$250 of which the girl got \$100 plus any tips she could weasel. The man received a half hour alone with the girl. Angel said nothing went on except stripping and talking, but I wondered. During a night, the DJ would call different girls to a small stage where they stripped advertising their wares and collecting dollar bills from the poorer customers sitting around it. From the stage, the girls headed into the audience hustling individual table dances or private ones in the Champagne room. If a customer was interested in a particular girl, he just mentioned it to one of the hoods standing around, and the girl would appear as if by magic to give a dance.

Flash Dancers required all the girls to wear 5-inch high heels, a long evening dress, tong panties and no bra. Angel went for the tacky style dress with sequins and spread glitter and body wash over her skin. She regularly needed a pedicure because when stripping on stage, the level of the customer's face looked right at her feet.

A table dance consisted of a girl slithering out of her evening dress in about the first 20 seconds of a song, leaving her completely naked except for her tong panties and a garter belt for holding her money. Angel wore the garter belt from our wedding. I ignored the insult, but it began to rekindle my suspicions amid the continuing stupor in which I lived. The naked girl, except for tong panties, would then move her body close to the sitting customer, letting her hair fall over his face and crouch, bringing her tits, crouch and ass close to the customer's face and sometimes use her knee to fondle the customer's genitals. Angel called it art, but I kept my mouth shut—hope and stupidity in me never seemed to end.

Angel liked Flash Dancers but not as much as The Men's Club in Mexico City. To me, Flash Dancers and the other clubs seemed to either bring out the worst of the sexes—



greed for money or sex, or simply stripped away civilized trappings to reveal that sex drove our species.

Evolution shaped girls bodies to invade the emotional part of a man's mind by way of the eyes. A girl's breasts and rear are much larger, more prominent and when in motion capture a man's sight. As evolution wanted, the view triggers emotions and anticipation of pleasure, but is the desire merely sexually gratification or more as expressed in the poem of

Guiraut De Borneilh:

So, through the eyes love attains the heart:  
For the eyes are the scouts of the heart,  
And the eyes go reconnoitering  
For what it would please the heart to possess.  
And when they are in full accord  
And firm, all three, in the one resolve,  
At that time, perfect love is born  
From what the eyes have made welcome to the heart.  
Not otherwise can love either be born or have commencement  
Than by this birth and commencement.

By the grace and command  
Of these three, and from their pleasure,  
Love is born, who with fair hope  
Goes comforting friends.  
For as all true lovers  
Know, love is perfect kindness,  
Which is born—there is no doubt—from the heart and eyes.

The connection evolution created between men's eyes and women's bodies may rest on both passion and compassion. Sure lots of guys say they are just looking for some hot entertainment, trying to fit the media image of a sexual conqueror, but perhaps a deeper desire they can't even articulate—to please their heart—drives them to such places.

Unfortunately for those guys, the girls ruthlessly exploit any hope in men of finding "perfect kindness," even for the short span of a three-minute song.

The dancers understand the power of enticing, tempting and holding out the illusion of emotional salvation like an oasis in the desert. It enables them to connive lots of tax-free dollars from men without any pangs for the suckers they fleece. These girls' motivations crawl up from the baser regions of greed, power and revenge. Never satisfied with their dominion over the realms of emotion and sex that made women the equivalent in power to men, strippers, like most women, lust for superiority. They want not only the power evolution granted them but also that given to men, so they can cozen men into acting the way women always believed men should—as a willing sacrifice to their irrational whims. The female's myopic view fails to perceive that evolution created a balance of power between the sexes in order to prevent either men or women from dominating the other. Women's effort to reverse millions of years of evolution remains an impossible task doomed to failure. It can only gestate into a hatred of men, who, in their view, must surely be responsible for everything that went wrong in their lives.

The lap dancer by displaying her body and pretending to like her customers excites a man's passion and his longing for compassion but she also walks away with a symbol of masculine power—a twenty-dollar bill. Her Pyrrhic victory, however, will never win her the respect on which male power rests and only tarnish her own self-respect for she will always feel herself for what she is: a ho.

On a good night, Angel netted around \$900 and on poor nights around \$400. Angel had an advantage over her competition. In her five-inch heels that the club required, Angel stood six-feet-six, heads above the other girls and most customers.

Flash Dancers averaged around 75 girls every night with the average girl netting about \$500 a night. The club required each girl to work five nights a week. Assuming ten

weeks vacation, not uncommon in the business, the average girl at Flash Dancers works 42 weeks a year and makes an average net income per year of \$105,000. For 75 girls, \$37,500 each night or over \$13 million a year goes unreported or under-reported from just one club.

With her cash flow secured, Angel and I set out building her legitimate career as a model. My actress friend, Cindi, arranged for an agency to hire Angel for a number of corporate events, including Bloomberg's annual picnic for its employees. Corporate events use models for short stage performances, to assist with product demonstrations, as ushers, to hand out samples and leaflets and to just stand around and look pretty. Cindi also introduced Angel to another former model who provided Angel with work at trade shows and enrolled her in the Miss Hawaiian Tropic beauty pageant, in part, to increase Angel's exposure.

Beauty pageants seemed to light up Angel, especially the swimsuit competition. While most of the girls looked stiff and nervous before going on stage to parade their assets before strangers, Angel waited in line smiling and moving her body to the music. On stage she glowed without any hint of shyness; she enjoyed the spotlight and the people involved in these events, such as the muscular bare-chested bodyguards with whom she always posed for a photo. Despite her enthusiasm, Angel's heavy Russian accent prevented her from reaching a finalist position in any corporate America beauty contest—no one could understand what she said. During the question phase in the New York round of Miss Hawaiian Tropic, a couple of guys next to me said she sounded like she just got off the boat, and they were right.

Angel's accent would have to go; otherwise, she was limited to just standing around and looking pretty. American corporations don't choose foreign sounding models to

represent them. After the competition, I tried to convince her to take English lessons but she replied, “Why should I pay money for something I will pick up in time anyway.” This surprised me coming from the girl who was always in a rush to move ahead with her career. I explained that success in entertainment required her to speak without an accent, which meant taking lessons, but she didn’t listen. The lessons were clearly affordable, and not even her arrogance could blind someone wanting to succeed in the entertainment field from understanding the need to speak the native language well—unless, of course, Angel wanted a different career.

She also pursued modeling agencies for photography work. Angel realized she didn’t have the youth, age 24, for fashion runway modeling, so my friends suggested agencies that might hire her for magazine, television and music video spots. We made the rounds until the Grace Del Marco agency picked her up and referred her to a photographer for a new photo portfolio. The photographer suggested she cut her hair short and change to a brunette to fit the current look for models. She refused, saying, “I want to keep my hair long and blonde. It is how I like it.” Once again, Angel ignored good advice for her modeling career. It didn’t make sense. Grace Del Marco found her some one-day jobs, which included a Saturday Night Live show, a rap video and an exclusive corporate promotional party at Harry Winston Jewelers on Fifth Avenue, where she modeled diamonds. “I walked around as a queen with the value of a house on my arms,” she said later enthralled.

Despite Angel’s unwillingness to maximize her marketability as a model, life was looking up, and I felt good. Angel wasn’t yet making much money as a model, but in the long run, it could lead to her dream of appearing on a magazine cover and other

entertainment jobs that proved more rewarding than the cash from stripping, an occupation with a very short life. At age twenty-four, the five nights a week at Flash Dancers started to age and fatigue Angel. She refused to miss a night's work, so she often went to a modeling gig with only a few hours sleep. Lines began to appear in her face that weren't there before.

I kept trying to convince her that in America long-term goals are achievable but often require short-term sacrifice. As with most Russians, she didn't understand building for the future. Russians do whatever they can in the present to make as much money as possible because of the extensive uncertainty of tomorrow in their country caused by most everybody grabbing what they can now. They make commitments and promises they never intend to keep in order to gain some immediate advantage. Most Russians just don't realize that a society in which individuals generally keep their word enables everyone to achieve more in the long run because a person can rely on others to live by their agreements. Instead, nearly everyone in Russia tries to trick everyone else with false promises of the future so that plans beyond the short term are useless. It's as though the Russians modeled their interpersonal behavior on the old television show "Abbot and Costello." These two guys always ran into con artists, usually pretty young women playing the victim. No matter which way they turned, some swindler always marked them for a fall.

Despite the general character of Russians, I still hoped Angel's youth and intelligence would free her from the imprint of her culture. But week after week, her addiction to the quick, easy money at Flash Dancers grew. Angel often complained that the girls at Flash Dancers with big breasts made the most money. "It's so easy for them. All they do is walk around with their tits bouncing and the men give money. They shake their tits in front of the man's face and that is all. I have to use my personality to get a customer

to ask for a dance and then work hard on my body movements because my tits aren't as big. When the club brings in a sex star, she has big tits. The last one danced on stage with a dildo as big as her and held it between her huge tits—the men just threw her money.” Was this my wife talking? What circle of hell had I bounced into? She sounded like a dedicated professional stripper trying to figure out how to improve her business—shades of Mexico? Well, she did promised to change and only do lap dancing until she saved \$50,000, so I would at least give her until then.

I continued to focus on bringing Angel into the American mainstream by giving her a crash course on how to deal with people in the legitimate part of her work, such as always sending thank-you cards to anyone who provided her with assistance. To keep her from running afoul of the Internal Revenue Service, I warned her that in America, unlike Russia, people generally pay their taxes and if they don't, they often get caught. I volunteered to introduce her to my tax accountant who could make sure she took advantage of all the legal loopholes to minimize her taxes while avoiding any trouble with the I.R.S. She only responded with “Maybe later I will talk with him.” She never did, but rented a safe deposit box where she kept most of her cash from Flash Dancers.

I asked, “Why keep your money in a deposit box? You can put it in a bank account where it will earn interest and not worry about losing any of it. What if the bank has a fire that destroys the safe deposit box section? In an account, the money is insured by the government, so if there is an economic meltdown, as in Russia in 1998 when the bankers stole people's deposits, the U.S. government will refund your money.”

“Yes, but if I keep my money in a bank account will the government know how much I make?”

“Kind of. The interest you earn is income, and that is reported to the government, so the government can figure out about how much you deposited and approximate your income.”

“I don’t want the government to know how much I make.”

“Look Angel, this isn’t Russia. The tax authorities don’t alert criminals to how much money people have, they usually don’t take bribes but they do go after people who don’t pay their taxes.”

“But how can they know how much I must pay, if they don’t know how much I make?”

She had a point there since her business was all cash. “All I can say is that in the long run, it will be better for you to pay your taxes.”

“I will pay, but smartly,” she said.

At that point, I decided against filing a joint tax return, which would make me liable for any tax evasion she obviously intended to commit.

“You know that if you take more than \$10,000 out of the country without declaring it, you could end up in jail?”

“I not need to worry,” was all she said. And all I could do was to keep reminding her about the difference between right and wrong in America. Unfortunately, the fear of George Orwell’s *1984* seemed to hold sway over Angel and most modern-day Russians.

Besides the peculiarities of her culture, Angel also exhibited some bizarre personal habits. She always took up the middle of the bed, leaving me with only a sliver along the side.

“I know you are a big girl, but couldn’t you leave me with half the bed?” I asked late one night.

“I am not a big girl, I am a tall girl! Big means stout! Why can’t we move the bed so I can lie against the wall?” Her remark brought up the memory of the way she slept in her apartment in Krasnodar—wedged into the corner between the bed and the wall.

“What’s the problem?” I asked.

“I’m afraid I will fall out of bed.” That didn’t make sense; she wasn’t a child.

“If we move the bed around, when you come home after four in the morning from work, you will wake me up crawling over me to get near the wall.”

“Let’s see if I will get use to it,” she said.

Angel also did some strange exercises when she awoke.

“I tense my muscles, visualize what I want and release my energy to get it.”

“Can I watch?” I asked.

“No, you will come to harm if you watch or interrupt me.”

“Didn’t you tell me the same thing in Krasnodar before we got married?”

“I do the same exercises.”

She also used a set of cards for divining her future, drew pictures with strange symbols similar to the ones in the letter she sent me in June: a female’s left eye inside a triangle in side a circle, a six pointed star and others. And in the bedroom, she did something with two candles, one white and one red, for which she only used wooden matches to light. I couldn’t fathom their use, and she never let me watch any of her rituals. Once, I trimmed some of the wax from one of the candles to make it burn better and Angel hit the ceiling, threw the candle out, told me not to touch her candles again and bought a



new one. Another weird event occurred when I bought her a plant that she put on her vanity table in the bedroom. After one week, the plant was dead.

I asked, “What happen? Didn’t you water it?”

Her reaction transcended into the absurd—she broke down crying like a child caught doing something wrong.

“What’s the matter?” I asked bewildered.

“I didn’t kill it! I didn’t! I didn’t!!” She hit the table for emphasis. “It’s not my fault! Florists put poison in plants to make them die quickly so you will buy another one.” I just looked at her in amazement. Why the cover-up concerning a plant? So what if she didn’t water it, big deal.

#### Secret Agent

With Angel’s legitimate career at least started, I began pursuing what I believed was my first-best destiny—delving the mysteries of the universe. After some further research, I saw two rather than one avenue. The original path meant going back to school to obtain a Doctorate in Physics while the new avenue required using my law and business degrees to find a position in the space exploration field. An extremely helpful professor in the Columbia University Physics Department mapped out the route to a Physics PhD. It would take about six years and to my surprise, didn’t require a Bachelor’s Degree in Physics, just the knowledge of math and physics that undergraduates gain through the Physics curriculum. The professor emphasized that the graduate departments were interested in a student’s level of knowledge—not an undergraduate degree. To acquire that knowledge, I could start the fall semester by sitting in on the requisite undergraduate math and physics courses. If I told the professors my aim, they would probably let me sit in on their courses

unofficially and even grade my work. Once I completed the undergraduate courses in two years or less, I would be prepared to take the Graduate Admission Test for Physics. If I did well enough on that test, I could enter the graduate program at Columbia.

The space exploration field route required learning about the industry and determining where my skills fit. To my surprise, the industry included many private businesses in addition to the obvious government agencies. The field had changed a lot since I first majored in Aerospace Engineering decades ago. I decided to go for a position in the space exploration industry rather than the PhD because of time and money. I signed up for one of the larger conventions in the field for October in order to begin networking with people in the industry and began researching the industry full-time at Columbia's business library.

Angel usually left for Flash Dancers just before 6 PM. She liked to get to the club around 7 PM to do up her face and hair. She really looked gorgeous all made up. One day, I came back from my research at Columbia after she already left and went to make a telephone call. Accidentally, I hit the redial button that flashed a number on the digital display. It didn't look familiar to me, so I assumed Angel must have called it. I went to push down the cradle to get a dial tone when a man with a foreign accent answered. Immediately trouble flashed in my mind.

"Who's this?" I lamely asked, unable to think of anything else.

The man asked, "Who are you looking for?"

"Angelina."

He reacted in surprise and curtly said, "You have the wrong number. There is no Angelina here," and hung up.

For the rest of the week, I came home after Angel went to work and found the same number on the redial button. My telephone company provided me an up-to-date list of all the calls made from my telephone. In Russia, the telephone companies only show the first three digits of any number dialed and can only produce records that are a month behind. American phone companies, however, record the entire number and the statements are available on a daily basis, if requested. Angel didn't know that. Over a five-day period, Angel made seven calls to the number of the man with a foreign accent. I hired an Internet private eye to find out who was registered to that number. The private eye said the number was a prepaid cell phone that didn't require a listing of the owner's name and warned me that such numbers were used for illegal activities. I slipped right back into the underworld I thought I had left behind in Russia. The new Angel began to look like the old Angel—only sneakier.

The phone company also listed a few calls to Alfredo in Mexico, whom she promised never to contact again and some to a St. Petersburg's number. I didn't think Angel knew anyone there, but I called the number and sure enough a man answered.

"Hello, do you speak English," I asked.

"Yes, but speak slowly. Who is calling? You American?"

"Yes," and I gave him my name. "I'm Angelina's husband."

Pause, then somewhat sheepishly, "I didn't know she was married."

"Yes, we have been married since March."

"Since March!" he said with surprise. I concluded from his response that he and Angel played around after our marriage about which he didn't know. Not that it would have

made a difference; Russian men like most third-worlders have no qualms about going out with other men's wives, only about getting caught, and this guy sounded caught.

I continued, "What's your name?" I assumed he'd hang up, but he answered.

"Valodya Gavrilov," he said.

"Are you from Krasnodar?"

"No I just travel there for business." So this was not the same Valodya that Angel's diary mentions.

"Why is she calling you from her husband's house?"

"She calls to say hello and tell me how she is doing. We are just good friends." I heard that before. He must be taking lessons from Alfredo.

"How long have you two been good friends?"

"We just met last month." That meant June for which I didn't have any of her diary entries. Was it before or after she begged forgiveness and promised to change?

"Do you recall the date?"

"No, but what does it matter. Nothing happened between us," a sure sign that something did.

"I don't believe that and neither do you. Needless to say, I want you to stay away from my wife."

"I don't call her, she calls me. I suggest you talk to her."

"Look Valodya. I'm not the usual stupid American without contacts in Russia who falls for a pretty liar over the Internet. I managed a security firm in Moscow. I think you know what that means. If you want problems, I will be glad to provide them."

“I don’t want any problems,” he demurely and probably falsely said. Generally it takes a baseball bat to get something through a Russian’s self-destructively stubborn skull. They often remind me of psychopaths who refuse to allow common sense or ethics to deter them from doing something they can do but shouldn’t.

I confronted Angel about the local mobile telephone number of the foreign man she kept calling. I didn’t mention Valodya, yet. “Who’s this guy you keep calling?”

“What do you mean, I don’t call nobody,” she lied thinking I couldn’t tell which numbers she called.

“This number!” I showed her the number on the telephone statement.

Her eyes widened in surprised, she paused and then said, “It’s one of my customers. A rich Indian man, I call to invite to come to the club.”

I was dumbfounded. “You call men you meet while taking off your clothes to invite them to see you strip! Are you nuts! What else do you invite them to do?”

“It’s my business!” she protested. “I call them to promote my business so they will come to club and buy dances. That is all. There’s nothing wrong with it.”

“So you go after them the way you did me when we first met at Leo’s party in Moscow.”

“It’s not the same. I not give lap dances there.”

“It sure looks the same to me.”

“If you don’t want me to then I won’t.”

“Right! You won’t call from my phone but from the club’s.”

“The club don’t let us use its phone.” Here we go again, I thought, with her Clintonesque tactic of ignoring the reasonable connotation of words by ascribing only a literal or personal definition to them.

“You know what I mean. You will simply use a different telephone.” She went into the bedroom without another word, probably to do some magic.

A few days later, I accompanied Angel on the subway to Flash Dancers, since it was in the direction of where I was going.

Out of the blue, she asked, “Why can’t I go out with some of my customers?”

I looked at her in shock. This was worst than drumming up stripping business, but she was serious. “You’re married Angel. Don’t you see anything wrong with that?”

“All I want to do is go out once in a while for lunch or dinner or to a show.”

Angel still didn’t know I kept a copy of her diary through May 2000, so I knew that these professed innocent jaunts were shades of Mexico and Krasnodar. But what really amazed me was that she thought her husband would allow her to go out with guys. Didn’t she have any kind of grasp on what marriage meant?

“If you want to date your customers, then we will get a divorce, and you can go back to Russia where men apparently put up with such conduct.”

Angel regrouped realizing the mistake she made by meekly replying, “I don’t want to date my customers. I only asked to see whether you would allow me to go out. I don’t want to do anything you don’t want me to. I now try hard to do things the American way, so when I am unsure, I need to ask you my husband.”

That sounded a little too glib; then again, maybe she sincerely wanted to change. But so far, the accident with the telephone belied her sincerity. I didn’t want to rely on

future accidents for exposing her mendacity. Angel usually didn't make the same tactical mistake twice. Since I didn't have her real diary after May to rely on, I needed a system of surveillance to provide me with information. One source was her telephone conversations with her mother. Angel confided in her mother more than any other person. I sensed Inessa her only true friend. Their telephone calls should provide a window on to Angel's true feelings for me and some of her activities.

I approached some of my contacts in Russia to see whether they would eavesdrop on Inessa's telephone in Krasnodar, record any calls between Angel and her mother and provide me an English translation of the conversations. To my surprise, they said the government was already recording calls to and from Inessa because of the family's connections with the Chechens, who the Russians were still at war with. Damn, what had I, a white-boy from middle-class suburbia, got involved with? They agreed to deliver recordings for a reasonable price of anything the government didn't consider sensitive to its war and criminal investigations of the Chechens, but I'd have to handle the translations in English.

In New York, I began taking the faxes from her mother off my machine and making a copy before giving them to Angel. And since I had the only mailbox key, all the letters from her mother also went through my hands. I'd wait until after she opened a letter, then search her bags and make a copy while she worked. Also, every morning, I got up while Angel still slept from her late nights at Flash Dancers to count the money she made, which averaged between \$500 and \$600 a night, and search the bag in which she carried her lap dancing gear. Periodically, I checked whether she actually worked on a particular night by making surprise visits or calling the club.

Flash Dancers was very accommodating about telling strangers over the telephone whether a girl was dancing on a particular night. Most of these girls build their own clientele base from which the club makes lots on drinks and admission, so by telling clients when their “dream lover” or regular “ho” dances, the club and girls profit—very business like.

One morning when I opened her bag, I saw what looked like two small pieces of paper folded many times. I almost ignored them but decided to see what notes she wrote. Angel always made notes on scraps of paper, folded them up and hid them away some place. These, however, weren't notes but business cards. My darling wife who promised not to pursue her customers collected their business cards. I assumed she folded them up thinking I would over look them if I searched her bag. I woke her up.

“Why are you collecting your customers' business cards?”

Still half asleep, she blurted out the truth, “I can't give my customers my telephone number here because then they will know I am married.”

I flipped out. “Are you crazy? What are you doing? Arranging tricks on the side with the guys who buy your lap dances?”

“Stop it Roy! I am tired and need my sleep. You don't know how hard it is to stand on my feet all night long.”

“You mean lay on your back, don't you!”

“I not a prostitute! I a good girl! Let me go back to sleep. We talk about this later.”

“Oh, so you'll have time to invent another cover-up. No we talk now! Why are you collecting the business cards of your customers?”



“I told you before, to get them to come to the club and buy my dances. It is promotion.”

“Oh, I agree, it’s promotion—promoting sexual thrills.”

“I do nothing wrong. I don’t make anything with nobody. Let me go to sleep.”

“How many more business cards have you collected?”

“None. Those are the only two.”

I let her go back to sleep and went back to checking her bag where I found three more folded business cards, two with notes in Russian on the back in her hand writing. The consummate businesswoman who takes notes so as to better remember her customers and any of their particular interests. Then I realized why Angel folded the cards. Flash Dancers prohibited their girls from accepting business cards from customers because it provided the necessary exchange of information for a girl to run her own prostitution racket on the side. If a girl got caught recruiting prostitution clients at the club, the City would shut it down immediately. So some girls simply remember a guy’s number or give him their mobile number, but Angel didn’t have a mobile and couldn’t remember numbers well enough unless they were dollar amounts. After secretly accepting a clients’ business card, she simply folded it up and put it inside her vagina. Tong panties don’t come with pockets; they just hide one. She’d then go to the dressing room, take the card out and maybe make a note on it.

That night with Angel at work, I searched through the bags that she kept in the bedroom. I half hoped to find her real diary, but she wasn’t that stupid. I did find a piece of paper with Russian writing on it and a sealed envelope addressed also in Russian to Valodya in St. Petersburg—most likely the same guy I called. This should tell whether they are just

good friends. I steamed open the envelope to find a postcard of New York City with Angel's handwriting, in Russian, on the back along with four kisses in her bright red lipstick—clearly more than good friends. I also found three condoms in her purse. Why did she need condoms other than the ones I kept in the apartment—for her customers?

Time to have the information I collected, including the faxes from her mother, translated. I arranged to meet my Russian tutor, who had visited me earlier in the year in Moscow with her friend. They're warnings about Angel looked prophetic.

My tutor and I met a number of times between in late August and September. We always sat down in the kitchen of her family's apartment in Queens. For some strange reason, any conversation or undertaking of importance for Russians always takes place in the kitchen. By now, I was used to it.

I filled my tutor in on some of my recent investigations but not the government's eavesdropping in Krasnodar. She reacted with her characteristic bluntness, "I told you she was a slut! And I don't like this spying into other peoples' affairs, even if they are criminals."

I never thought of Angel as a criminal, but my tutor was right—again. I feared, however, she might not help me since as a young, pretty and well-endowed Russian nineteen year old, she might abide by the unwritten code of silence to never reveal another Russian girl's true activities.

"This is important," I almost pleaded.

"But I'll help you out," she continued. "I owe you some money from when my friend and I were in Moscow and this should pay that off. But instead of going through all this expense and heartache, why don't you just kick her out into the street and find another

girl your own age, or at least in her thirties.” Once again, my tutor spoke her mind, no matter how brutal her thoughts. I attributed this to her coming to America as a kid, which enabled her to escape the Russian culture that socializes people into pathological liars—never tell the truth because only falsehoods bring gain.

“We’ve had this discussion before,” I responded. “I don’t dream about thirty-something girls. It’s unnatural for a guy to be attracted to females over 30. Look at all the famous paintings and statues of women, they don’t show over-the-hill flabby females, but girls in their athletic prime—late teens and twenties, like you. The young female form is an express ticket to the male’s unconscious. A young girl’s body is a genetically programmed stimulant whether the guy’s five years old or an octogenarian.”

“What’s an octogenarian?”

“Someone in their eighties.”

“Yuch!”

“Relax, I’m not there yet.”

“You’re still too old for me.”

“Is that your mother or you talking? It surely isn’t Mother Nature.”

“Me, and you’re not getting near these,” as she motioned to her Sophia Loren size breasts.

“Haven’t we been through this before? Anyway, back to what I was saying. I remember how Marilyn Monroe knocked me out when I was all of five and she sang “Heat Wave” in *Gentlemen Prefer Blondes*. I couldn’t take my eyes from the upper half of her body.”

“Boy you are old,” she interjected. “Almost an octogenarian.”

“Thanks. Most men don’t say it, but girls passed their twenties just aren’t physically attractive anymore.”

“Then go to the Philippines for some young thing, but get rid of that Russian whore you brought here.”

“You’re right, I know you’re right, but I keep hoping. She says she can change but needs time. If she can change, I want to give her that chance. But she keeps lying about so many things that were she to tell the truth, I probably couldn’t recognize it. And I do like being with her and going places together—don’t know why. Maybe I don’t have to worry about her breaking down in the middle of a minor disaster.”

“You’re just thinking with your glands.”

“I don’t think so. The sex with her is awful and she smells even after taking a long, hot shower—and I mean hot! I don’t know how she can stand it. I tried taking showers with her, but the water temperature nearly burned me and when I got out, she made it even hotter. It must be her Russian blood.”

“More like her demon blood,” My tutor said half seriously.

“Times I actually wonder whether she is descended from some creature of hell. Every so often I take a photograph of her that turns out to show a face strikingly like a medieval painting of a demon.”

“Or just the evil within someone willing to do anything to get out of Russia.”

“She’s out of Russia and to keep me from trying to send her back, why doesn’t she change?”

“You chump! She’s not going to change for you. She looks at you as a dog that she can make do whatever she wants. Promising to change is just one of her tricks. That’s her

hold on you. She has her claws around your heart playing it so you'll feel sorry for her. She knows she can keep you hanging on by hoping she will change. Wake up Roy! You can't change anybody, especially a Russian slut." My tutor's words cut my heart, but I knew she just wanted to shake some reality into it.

We started with Angel's Russian scribbling on the back of the business cards I found in her bag. Angel needed these notes to remind her of something to say when she turned on those high beams, smiled innocently and mentioned something about a guy from their last meeting in order to make him think he wasn't the usual customer but someone special, maybe even the only one. Without her notes, any guy blurred into a haze of men. Thirty or more lap dances a night added up to 150 men a week or 600 a month or 6000 a year with two months vacation. Among the thousands, Angel knew her marks and zeroed in on them. Lonely men with good hearts and money generally fell for her mask of a decent girl trapped by circumstances that they could help her escape with money or material goods.

On the back of the card from a managing director of Nomura Securities, Angel wrote: "Romantic. Tall. He massaged and kissed my back." On another, "From Mexico. Older man likes Russian girls." I felt disgusted.

Next, my tutor translated the piece of paper with Angel's writing that I found in her luggage. She wrote it after I found out about Italy but before I brought her to America:

"Roy wants to revenge against me for Italy, then he will forgive. But if he takes me to America, he will never forget. He wants something from me. It will probably force him to worry. Why does he want fidelity? Why do I have to be faithful? With such an abnormal person there is a need for another person that would help him. But why should I help him? Really why? To be humiliated and worry sick about not doing what I want? I am a symbol of self-realization. He seeks out to manipulate people (using compromising material), pressure them, so he could experience joy; the same kind of joy that his mother had when she was pressuring him. That is his internal complex (conflict)—being the boss. What is in his soul is to use me. Humiliation of others is important to him. To continue with him I must

change prenuptial conditions on infidelity. I am not a slave and will do as I please. If he loved me he would not want me to be a slave to fidelity.

My tutor remarked, “I told you not to marry her.”

“I know, I know. My memory is not that flawed.”

“Only your judgment.”

“I can’t argue with that. Here, this is a card she wrote to this guy, Valodya, in St. Petersburg. I talked to him on the telephone.”

“I didn’t know you spoke Russian.”

“You know I don’t, but his English was good enough. He said Angel was just a good friend.”

“Sluts don’t have friends, only sex partners and customers.”

“Let’s see which.”

“Maybe it is another Valodya than the guy she was humping in Krasnodar?” My tutor’s Russian pessimism always drove her to point out the worst-case scenario. “There a lot of Valodyas in Russia you know.”

“I know. It seemed like every third guy I met in Russia was a Valodya.”

“It’s because Valodya is a nick name for Vladimir—Lenin’s first name.”

“Alright, so what does she say to Lenin’s namesake?”

“On the top of the card she writes, ‘Good luck, peace, love and all the kindness to you.’ Then goes on:

‘Hello Valodya,

This is Angelina. How are you? I am okay. It was really difficult to come here. It turns out that my boss found out information about me from MVD and FSB. And now he watches me. I began to work. It is interesting. I like it a lot. I work about eight hours a day. (I dance.) It is interesting to meet new people, to learn about different places.

I think a lot about you and I miss you and it was great that we could understand each other. Do me a huge, huge favor, please, don't tell anybody, anybody, that I am here—no way. Only my mum knows about it and now you.

I kiss you, I embrace you, I miss you.”

My tutor pointed to the four kisses plastered on it, “What a retard! You’d think she was ten years old.”

“Only ethically.” I added. “She told me only her mother and Azul, a fellow ho from Lithuania, knew she was in New York City and she’d never tell it to a Russian man unless he was her boyfriend.”

“I don’t think you need that to conclude she’s sleeping with this guy. By the way, what are M.V.D. and F.S.B.?”

“You don’t know?” I said with surprise. “That’s right you left Russia about ten years ago. The M.V.D. is the Ministry of Internal Affairs. Remember the forces that Gorbachev sent into Lithuania to put down democratic opposition and the guys Putin sent to Chechnaya along with the military. The F.S.B. is the former K.G.B.”

“Oh yea, I didn’t recognize the M.V.D. initials in English. That’s who my former boyfriend works for. He ended up in Chechnaya.”

“Former boyfriend, what happened? He wasn’t killed there?”

“No, when my girlfriend and I were in Russia visiting my home town Pskov, he tried to make it with her.”

“Did he succeed? She’s a delicious babe.”

“No way! She’s not an American bitch. She wouldn’t do that to me.”

“I guess you two Russian girls are the exception to the norm.”

“I hate to disillusion you, but your wife is not the norm—she’s a whore!”

“Is that different than slut?”

“Don’t be smart!”

“Forget it. Anyway, you’ve been intimate with a number of guys by the tender age of nineteen. You once told me the number but I forgot.”

“‘Intimate’! Are you a dork? Speak English. Let’s see, one, two, three... eight guys. All..., well almost all of whom, I was in a relationship with at the time. And none of whom I sold my body, like your wife does. Girls enjoy sex as much if not more than guys, so if they are careful and protect themselves, why shouldn’t they enjoy their bodies while they can. You Americans are too puritanical. Get real!”

“You think I should accept Angel going out with her customers?” I said.

“Look, she’s going to go out with them whether you accept it or not. And no, I do not approve of her whoring around. She’s married, and at the extreme—a sex freak in love with money. For her it’s fortune and power, the heart has nothing to do with it. If she even has a heart. But I can understand the route she took. I might have ended up the same way given the circumstances.”

“Circumstances have nothing to do with it—morality is a matter of intent. I remember two years ago when you needed money; you were thinking of dancing in a titty bar but didn’t. You have a lot more to show in the chest than Angel, and your ass is nicer. I’m sure you would have made a lot more money than her.”

“Well my boyfriend didn’t like the idea.”

“That’s just an excuse. He’s not your boy friend anymore, so why don’t you do it now? You’re waitressing job pays peanuts. Here’s your chance to make big bucks.”

“Because something inside me says no.”



“That’s what I’m saying. What’s inside you is a sense of decency, of self-respect. You know stripping is just another form of prostitution—trading vicarious sexual thrills for money. Angel has twisted the concept completely around saying that only a few girls can do what she does, as though she belonged to an enviable female elite that valued money over dignity. She actually believes lap dancing glamorous and a form of art.”

“Now that is delusional. But you’ve got to admit that growing up poor could drive any girl to prostitution. I didn’t grow up as poor as Angel apparently was.”

“That’s the excuse Angel sells everybody. Well she isn’t poor anymore and she could easily get a job as a bartender or waitress and make enough to live on, but she doesn’t. She continues her lap dancing and who knows what else because she chooses to. You make a lot less money than Angel, so why don’t you become a lap dancer? Because you choose not to go that route. I know lots of pretty, poor girls in Russia who chose to work at legitimate jobs instead of the easy wealth of prostitution. Angel simply chose the easy way that didn’t require the will, strength or confidence to put in the long-term effort and sacrifice to succeed at a worthy endeavor. Money, glitz and the superficial ‘Entertainment Network lifestyle’ are all she craves.”

“I’m glad you see it my way Roy. Now isn’t it time to throw her out?” My tutor smiled at having adroitly reversed our roles.

But all I could say was, “Soon, soon, just a little more information to make sure.”

“You’re hopeless. What’s next?”

“Faxes from the motherland.”

Most of the first fax contained little of interest. Angel’s mother mentioned that the totally nude pictures by Dmitri Morosov were beautiful. This was the modeling

photographer Angel and I met in Krasnodar around the time we married. Angel and Inessa's fortuneteller in Krasnodar warned that Angel faced hardships in America but would overcome them.

Then my tutor said, "Listen to this! Inessa says 'I saw one of your customers, Arsen, walking with a girl. He was smiling and did not see me.' Then she ends the fax, 'I wish you good clients.'"

My tutor remarked, "Sounds like mom knows what her daughter does for a living and even encourages it. Who's Arsen?"

"I wasn't sure whether her mother knew. Angel said she didn't, but then again why should I have believed that? Arsen is the guy Angel brought home with her in April, after we were married, and when her mother went to St. Petersburg. She spent two days with him, obviously not playing cards. Angel's diary indicates she is in the habit of bring guys back to the apartment when Inessa leaves town, which made me think that Inessa didn't know. But maybe Inessa knew and maybe the guys weren't just someone to have sex with but to sell sex to. I'm just not sure, yet."

"That's because you are still in denial."

"No, I need more facts."

"Okay."

The next fax also concerned mostly domestic matters in Krasnodar, except for one part. Inessa complained that I only thought about money after learning from Angel that I wanted her to pay part of the household expenses now that Angel made over \$3000 a week. Inessa told Angel to stand firm because it wasn't in the contract.

My tutor looked at me, "What contract?"

“There’s a prenuptial agreement, but it only concerns divorce, and a couple of short written agreements. She had a tendency to conveniently forget her marriage vows and other promises, so I wrote down for her the promises she made not to cheat or trick me.”

“Well she has done plenty of that! Looks like both your wife and her mother see you as a business opportunity.”

“It’s beginning to look like that.”

My tutor needed to get up early the next day for work, so we made an appointment for the following week.

### She’s A Fool

My daily searches of Angel’s lap dancing bag began to reveal hundred dollar bills instead of the usual twenties paid for a dance. The hundreds probably came from the Champagne Room, but she vehemently denied working in it and always lied about making less than she really did.

“I don’t make anything what you don’t know,” Angel claimed.

“What about your call to Valodya in St. Petersburg?”

As always when caught, her eyes widened briefly, then she pretended not to understand. “What you talk about?”

I showed her the number. “Valodya whom you called at his number and whom you met in Krasnodar in June.”

“He is just a good friend,” I was tired of hearing those words. All three billion men in the world were “good friends” of my wife. “He is a boy that sells jewelry. Katya and I met him during the summer at a market. He is very smart. We have a similar philosophy. I felt spiritually close to him.”

“So close that you wrote him a postcard wishing him love with four kisses plastered across the back.”

Angel either freaked or pulled out a ruse I hadn't seen before. She ran into the kitchen and plopped down by the trashcan, “This is where I belong,” she shouted sobbing. “I am garbage and belong here to be thrown out like nothing more than trash. Use me and let fly like an old toy.” She hit the floor with the flat palm of her hand in order to make a loud noise without hurting herself. A simple technique used by wrestlers to deceive the audience into believing the occasion is genuine. I wasn't buying, but my heart kept breaking a little more each time I caught her in a lie.

“Giving your conduct in Mexico, Russia and now here in America, maybe you are right.”

She jumped up, headed for the knives, “You son of a bitch you will pay for what you have said!” She was fast, got her hand on the carving knife, but I used a martial arts move to knock it out of her hand.

She went back to the tears, “It takes time for me to change to American ways. Why don't you believe me? You've got to believe me!” And she stamped that foot of hers again.

The whole lunatic incident reminded me again of Sam Spade in *The Maltese Falcon* when confronting his Angel, although I chose not to say the lines: “That's good coming from you. What have you ever given me? Have you ever given me any of your confidence, any of the truth? Haven't you tried to buy my loyalty with sex?”

Angel promised not to contact Valodya again. But I didn't believe her and knew she wouldn't leave any evidence of communication in her bags.

A few days later the first recording of a telephone conversation between Angel and her mother arrived from Russia. The conversation took place a day after the confrontation concerning Valodya.

I brought the Russian cassette to my tutor for an oral translation.

“Where did you get this?” She accusingly asked,

“Don’t worry.”

“More secret agents, I assume?”

I replied, “Ask me no questions, I’ll tell you no lies.”

“Okay, let’s do this.”

Angel: One of my customers invited me to an interesting show, but I could not go because I had to work that night. Did anyone call for me?

Inessa: Valodya from St Petersburg called. I told him that you were working in America. I explained that you can no longer call him from America because your boss spies on you. He said he looks forward to see you in Krasnodar in September. I told him all you wanted me to say.

Angel: Good. I too want to see him again. If Valodya calls again, tell him I said Hi. Tell him, I will try to call his home from another telephone. I kiss him, I hug him, I miss him. Tell him everything is okay with me and Katya will send him a letter from me.

My “darling husband” wants to go to Cyprus with us—oh God! Here I cannot go out with any of my customers—it is like prison. It is horrible to feel that every step is being watched.

Inessa: He is like a little tail.

Angel: When you send letters use two envelopes and scotch tape the inside envelope. I must make sure that he does not read your letters.

Inessa: Don’t pay him money for rent, you be tough and keep to agreement.

Angel: There was no talk about paying the rent before I started making money but now there is. Paying rent is not normal for Roy and me. In normal family it would be okay, but everybody understands this is not natural. I was upset, because he wants to help me open bank account, now he will know how much I make, but what can you explain to a man.

And I need a tarot reading to help find a way out of this marriage but stay in America. Will you find me someone new? The other person's predictions were not accurate.

My customers offer me a lot of money for sex, but I am worried that he will find out and have me deported. I do not want to lose my chance to live in America. It was hard work getting him to take me here. It is awful, by agreement, I do not have the right to have sexual relations, I do not have right to lie or to call Alfredo or Valodya. I always feel that someone will find out about me. I know living with him is just a life experience and after these tough times, I will have good times again.

Angel might have good times again, but I doubted I would. My own personal hell kept getting deeper and deeper. Angel had said she wanted to take a few weeks off in September to go home but nothing about visiting Cyprus with her mother. Naturally, I planned to go along and wondered how she would try to sneak away to see Valodya in Krasnodar.

A couple of days later, I found her work schedule for the week that listed her off on Monday and Tuesday. But on both days she left the apartment as if going to work and came home the usual time, after four in the morning. She probably spent the two nights with a customer or two going for dinner, dancing and a hotel. When I confronted her with the schedule, she vehemently claimed her innocence once again. If it weren't for the secret telephone recordings of her and her mother, I might have believed her. But her false claims became a caricature of the oxymoron a "wrongly accused woman" who uses a flushed face, trembling voice, tears, anger and the guilt trip to make a man regret he ever doubted her. She was clearly a pro at convincing men she spoke the truth, but I possessed hard evidence of her deceit. She demanded I come by the club to talk to the manager who would tell me that she really did work those two nights. What else would he say? Angel was a club asset he wanted to keep content. I declined her invitation.

On August 11, Angel gave me a card commemorating our five-month wedding anniversary that contained a poem by Emily Matthews

If an angel is someone who's so filled with love, it's a gift that she constantly shares,  
If an angel is someone who looks out for others and gives them a nudge here or there,

If an angel is someone who touches your life with a heart that's both joyful and wise,  
Then even though she doesn't have halo or wings, she's an angel in human disguise.

Did she really believe this baloney about herself? Maybe Angel's problem stemmed from an inability to perceive reality. Perhaps I should pity rather than expose her. But as always with Angel, whenever I began to believe she possessed some redeeming quality enabling her to change, the real Angel reverted to its true gorgon soul insidiously slipping another knife into my feelings for her.

"I want to go to Krasnodar to take a rest and see my mother in September," Angel said.

Thinking about her appointment to meet Valodya, I said, "You mentioned that before, so when do you want to leave?"

"You don't understand. It's mum's fiftieth birthday, which is very special for Russians. I want to present her with a trip to Cyprus."

"I thought you never wanted to go back to Cyprus after the bad memories you had about working there? Remember before our wedding, you refused to tell me what you did there because you said the memories caused you too much pain. Now you want to go back and take your mother. That's a little strange isn't it?" Actually, not strange at all for Angel, she probably enjoyed her lap dancing in Cyprus, and given my level of conscious understanding so far, her mother probably encouraged her in that line of work. Still I

wanted to see how she reacted to yet another inconsistency with one of the former stories she told to convince me of both her and her mother's alleged decency.

Angel just ignored my remarks, "It is sunny and warm, and mum has never been in a place like that."

I persisted, "But won't she want to see where you work? You told me she didn't know about your stripping but thought you worked as a model and dancer."

"I'm not going to show her where I worked, but I finally told her what I did in Cyprus and Mexico.

"When was that?" I said in disbelief. "You said you didn't want your mother to ever find out about your lap dancing."

Angel vaguely said, "Some time ago. I don't remember exactly." I didn't think she would remember.

"What did your mother say about her daughter making money as a stripper?"

"I not stripper, I dancer—it is art!"

"So what did your mother say?"

"She understood."

"That was a major turn around for your mother," I continued with feigned ignorance. "When I was in Krasnodar in March, you told me not to mention anything about your working in a gentlemen's club in Mexico because your mother would be outraged that her sweet Angel took off her clothes for strange men in return for money." I went a little overboard with that last bit, but Angel apparently missed the sarcasm.

"I thought it best that I be honest with mum and she appreciated that and forgave me."



“Will she forgive you for dancing at Flash Dancers?”

“She doesn’t know.” That was a lie.

“I thought you wanted to be honest with your mother?” I couldn’t help myself—the lawyer made me do it.

“Stop it Roy! I want to give my mum a present for her birthday. She’s had a very hard life and she deserves this.”

“She deserves to see where her only child took off her clothes for money?”

“Enough! I’m going and I am taking her with me!”

“Fine. I’ve never been to Cyprus. I’d like to see it and the places where you worked.”

Angel sat close to me, took my hand and said in her fake sincere tone, “Roy I don’t want you to come. I want to be alone with my mother.”

“Baloney, you want me to stay here so you can play with your boyfriends in Krasnodar and in Cyprus!”

“How can I go out with other guys if my mother is with me? Be realistic.”

“Easy, find a guy for her or leave her at home or in the hotel,”

Then she said coldly, “If you come, you cannot stay in my apartment in Krasnodar, and I will not live with you at the hotel. I can’t keep you from traveling where you want, but you wouldn’t ruin my mother’s birthday. I want to be alone with my mother during this special time and that’s it.”

I didn’t believe this tale for a minute. She didn’t want me along so that she could ho with the St. Petersburg’s Valodya in Krasnodar and who knew whom in Cyprus. I didn’t particularly want to go to Krasnodar and Cyprus to conduct my own surveillance, but I

wanted to know what she did in those places. A little more evidence of her lying and cheating would finally end my uncharacteristic compassion for her. Kroll's F.S.B. agents were too expensive for such an extensive, multi-country job, at least for me. I then hit on the idea of forcing her to show me her real diary from when I copied it in May until the end of her upcoming trip to Cyprus. The diary I copied in Moscow had plenty of blank pages left in it, so I assumed when she arrived in Krasnodar, she would record her American activities and take the diary, as she usually did on trips, with her to Cyprus to write about her fun times as they happened.

All I needed to do was confront her when she and mother-in-law got off the plane from Cyprus; demand to see her diary on the spot. If she didn't produce it immediately, I'd threaten to tell the U.S. Immigration and Naturalization Service not to let her back in the country. Of course, I could tell Immigration anything, but it wasn't about to keep Angel out of America, since she had a temporary green card. Angel, however, didn't know that, so the odds were she would turn the notebook over. This way, I would gain a clearer window on her activities from the end of May through Cyprus. A better window than any F.S.B. agents could provide—the window of her mind. Secretly, I arranged my trip to surprise her at the Krasnodar airport on September 25<sup>th</sup>, the day before my birthday.

A couple of days later, the notebook that Angel kept on the coffee table disappeared. I couldn't find it in her bag, which by now she knew I searched regularly. Too cheap to buy a new notebook and having given up on her scheme to deceive me with the bogus diary, she probably took the notebook to record her real life activities. But in order to keep it out of my hands, she likely stored it with her Russian friend and fellow lap dancer, Tatianna. Angel wasn't about to refrain from keeping a diary for very long. Her delusional belief in

her goddess stature drove her to prize every sordid episode in her self-professed glamorous life. She didn't want to lose any of those treasures to her chronically faulty memory. The disappearance of the notebook meant that when I confronted Angel in Krasnodar, I would demand the notebook I previously copied in Moscow and the one from the coffee table.

The second recording from Russia between Angel and Inessa was delivered that same day.

Angel: This is the psychological repeat of Cyprus. Roy does not trust me because of the past; he thinks I cannot change. He thinks my wanting to sleep with other men is sickness, but he doesn't know how Russian girls can go from man to man.

Inessa: Maybe you should move out, find your own apartment.

Angel: Yes in the last possible resort, but apartments here are expensive, and I would have to share with someone unless I could find a man to pay for it. Roy's wanting me to be faithful is like a sickness in him. I never saw this before in my life in a man. It is not normal! It makes me so nervous that I do not want to even try to go out with someone because I will worry about him finding out and then trying to deport me.

Inessa: Asya predicted your troubles in America. Roy's disbelief of you is stupid.

Angel: I think Roy is psychologically sick. I told him not to come to Cyprus. If he comes I will not be able to have fun with the boys I know there and you know what else. He said I was cruel to him by going out with so many men and dishonored him.

Inessa: Let him build a statute to himself.

Angel: Ha, ha, ha. He only worries that I do not have sex with another man. Worst thing is that he does not believe me. I relax when he is not home.

Inessa: I feel so bad that you spend so much of your nerves because of that idiot, dumb ass. If he comes here I will kick his ass. Tell him that. I am serious. I will choke him with my own hands to death.

Angel: Ha, ha, ha. I will help you.

Inessa: If he comes to Krasnodar, I will definitely kick his ass.

Every time I discovered more of the truth—it kept hurting. I didn't understand why I still cared or why her comment about doing “and you know what else” in Cyprus made my

stomach sink. She didn't feel anything but contempt for me. Her heart pumped only ice water, so why keep looking for a sign of concern, of simple human decency? It made no sense, especially given her and Inessa's perspective on the proper relationship between husband and wife. These two sounded like aliens whose beliefs existed only in nightmares.

### Chains

Angel started performing more magic rituals than her regular wake up rites. Often when I came home, strange odors permeated the apartment with candles spread through out. Other times, she locked herself in the bedroom from which I heard her muttering incomprehensible words and smelled the burning of, I assumed, incense.

"What's going on?" I sometimes asked, knocking on the door.

"You will soon understand," she arrogantly replied. "Don't disturb me—it is dangerous. I might lose control."

Lose control of what—Russian spirits, I condescendingly told myself. In the beginning, I dismissed it all as a typical female ploy to distract me from her nefarious acts or some childish game to intimidate me into halting my investigation of her. But then my mind started clouding over, my energy sapped away and I lay in bed until late every morning. I didn't want to deal with the absurdity of my life anymore, hoping for it and Angel to go away. My unconscious, however, didn't give up. It kept prodding me from the abyss of my mind to realize that forces in which I arrogantly disbelieved battled my intellect for control of my life—and I was losing. My intuition once again warned that I faced the specter of Angel's malevolent magic, psychology or whatever it was she did. I needed help and thought about going back to Carmen, whose advice I somehow forgot after returning from Moscow when I started eating the meals Angel prepared, but in which she didn't partake. I

took some of Angel's hair from her brush, knowing Carmen would want that and planned to make an appointment. But as events turned out, I found help from a different source.

One night over a drink with my buddy Mark, who also taught me martial arts, I whined about my disintegration.

"I don't understand what's happening to me. This girl has some power beyond my ability to deal with, which I have never experienced before."

Mark calmly replied, "That's because you don't believe in the spiritual realm. How many times have we discussed the spiritual side of martial arts?"

"Almost all the time," I said.

"Thank you. That's because without the spiritual, the martial arts can't exist. But you still haven't taken that step in believing. You're a lawyer, you're intellectually and physically strong, but you've never been up against someone using the energies of the universe for evil."

"I wouldn't say she is evil."

"Pleaseeee, Roy, I've met her. She's made her choice to use her life for evil."

"So she's a stripper and wants to make money because she grew up poor."

"Excuseeee me. She does a lot more than strip and you know it but still don't realize it. Anyway, the *Tao Te Ching* calls evil a state of self-absorption that is in disharmony with the universal process. Need I say more?"

"She's clearly self-absorbed—vanity to the max and out of touch with human decency," I agreed.

"That means she's evil—period. Believe me this is an area I know about. I've been living the martial arts for nearly thirty years—I trust in the spiritual. It doesn't matter how

you think about it—it exists. For me, I find strength from the Bible and God, for others it's the Koran and Allah or Hinduism with Shiva and Vishnu or Buddhism or what you always talk about, quantum mechanics. But despite your intellectual understanding that there are mysteries science can't explain, in your gut you're still a skeptic.”

“Well it would be nice for some evidence.”

“You see the evidence all the time but refuse to admit it. How many times have you sparred with one of my black belts who messes you up, and then you ask me how it happened? You've played rugby and boxed, how do you explain these guys completely befuddling you? Some of it is that they are more advanced in the technique, but as I always try to get through to the class, the key is connecting with the spiritual. That takes faith in the spiritual and meditation to attune with it. Only then can you move at the last instant without thinking about it, feel the danger coming before you see it and automatically do what's needed to protect yourself.”

“But that's just a sense you develop over time.”

“No. It's a connection you establish with the nature of the world through faith. If you believe in your heart, not your intellect, but your heart that a spiritual world underlies the confused alarms of struggle and flight our senses show us everyday, then you can act in harmony with the true reality of nature. All the surface confusions, fears and distractions melt away. Your perception clears, and that gives a peace and confidence from which you sense not just how to move in a dangerous situation but the way to go in your life.”

“Okay, how can a witch like Angel who believes in God and a spiritual realm use it for evil?”

“Nobody uses God for anything. She may think she is using Him, but that’s just her egotism. It’s the devil that is using her because she chose to use her gifts from God not to contribute to the world but to take. And take no matter whom she hurts. But her belief in the unseen energies of the universe gives her an advantage over you because her belief enables her to twist some of these energies for her own sinful purposes. You, unfortunately, are left only with your reason, and no man can wrap his mind around the metaphysics that she is using to destroy you.”

“Well, I wouldn’t say she is trying to destroy me.”

“Look at you—you’re an emotional wreck. All you think about is her and your investigation for the truth. You’ve got the truth—move on. You can’t even pick yourself up to find a job. You’ve got two graduate degrees with honors from hotshot schools and you’re telling me you can’t find a job. Pleaseeee, if that’s not destruction; I don’t know what is? You’ve put yourself at the spiritual mercy of a Russian whore. And not for nothing, you always told me, ‘Never put yourself at the mercy of a Russian because they don’t know the meaning of the word.’ Am I right?”

Mark was right. I still didn’t want to believe in this spiritual stuff, but it seemed that unseen, unreasoned demons mocked my intellect and laughed as they cavorted around my illusions, tripping me up time after time all in the service of their master—Angel.

“Well what can I do?” I asked. “I’ve thought about going back to this Caribbean voodoo lady I saw before going back to Moscow for Angel.”

“Forget that! When you go home tonight, open up the Bible and put it somewhere that Angel will be sure to see it. Open it to the Old Testament, any book will do, then see

what happens. Also buy a pocket Bible for carrying around with you and stop eating the meals she cooks!”

I didn't like using the Bible for anything because my disbelief made me feel like a hypocrite, but I was desperate and followed Mark's advice that night.

Angel came home, went to sleep and the next day didn't say a word about the Bible that she surely saw opened in the bedroom. She did ask me whether I planned to keep her from reentering the U.S. when she returned from her vacation to Krasnodar and Cyprus. I didn't have that power, but she thought I did. I equivocated in my answer.

Around 10 o'clock that night, Angel called from work. That surprised me. She never called from the club and forbade me telephoning her there because, as she said, management didn't like the girls making or receiving calls. She probably didn't want any calls because it ate up time she could use for hustling money out of some sucker and the calls allowed me to check on whether she was at work.

“What's up Angel?”

“I call to tell you I just sitting here when suddenly it came to me that I been on the downward course. I see now that I start lying and using men when I work in Cyprus. I didn't know any other men except my boyfriend before Cyprus. The world was new to me and I went wrong. I now tell you honestly and truly—I don't want to go out with other men anymore. I see that my life leading me in bad direction and that you try to help me leave this behind. I know now that I must change or great harm will come to me. I don't want to continue my past anymore. I want to live here in a healthy life.”

I was stunned and suspicious but hopeful—again, “I'm glad to hear that Angel. I want you to reach your dreams and hope we can come closer together.”



“Me too my husband, I now completely honest and truthful with you. Thank you for everything. I must go back to work, see you later.”

As I hung up, I thought it feasible for a person to change over night; some do experience a moment of insight that changes their entire life. But the question gnawed at whether Angel was telling the truth or just running another con? Did the opened Bible stir the decency I believed existed in her heart or did it scare her? When we were in Moscow, I told her that I had visited a voodoo priestess for protection from her magic to which she arrogantly responded, “My helpers are stronger!” But now, an open Bible by someone she previously knew as a non-believer may have changed the balance of forces. Was she trying to deter my reliance on the fire and brimstone of the Old Testament because she knew her black magic couldn’t fight Yaweh? Was she now a good Angel or continued as a bad one? Or did the fear of my keeping her from reentering the country after Cyprus motivate her “revelation.” Angel loved money and nowhere else could she make as much as in America. Her past record indicated another scam, and change often takes place incrementally, even when intended. Whatever the truth, I thought it wise to no longer eat the meals she prepared for me. Everyday, I told her to put my dinner in the refrigerator, so I could eat it later. After she left for work, I promptly dumped it in the garbage. I also continued my investigation to see what the facts, rather than her words, showed.

Slowly my thinking process cleared and the oppressive feeling of hopelessness dissipated, but the facts moved in the same direction as before.

Angel knew I didn’t like the idea of her dancing in the private Champagne room at Flash Dancers, so she always denied working there. As I continued to find more and more hundred-dollar bills instead of twenties in her nightly take, I confronted her again with lying

about not dancing in the Champagne room. Since the club paid girls \$100 for thirty minutes in the room, it made sense that's how she earned the hundred-dollar bills. Angel went into cover-up mode again by saying she exchanged her twenties from the usual lap dances for hundreds from the club's cashier. Good story, but unlikely, a couple of the strippers told me the club policy required girls to push the Champagne room, and when a customer requested it of a girl, she had to go because the club made \$150 for a half hour.

Another of the tapped telephone conversations between Angel and Inessa arrived. I again brought the Russian cassette to my tutor for an oral translation.

She started to translate. "You'll like this. Your wife is upset because, 'I do not have the right to sell my body to my customers, I do not have the right to have sex with anyone but Roy, I do not have the right to lie and I do not have the right to contact any of my customers anywhere in the world. I want to go out with some of my customers when they ask me but cannot. Roy only worries about his own interests that I do not have sex with other men.'"

My tutor laughed, "What a wife you brought back. She's complaining that her husband wouldn't let her whore around."

"Did she really complain to her mother about not being able to sell her body?" I asked with what little surprise there was left in me.

"That's what she said. And knowing the type of Russian girl she is, she's probably doing it anyway."

"Damn! Definitely a prostitute and clearly her mother knows it. Angel always said her mother didn't know what she did for a living until Angel planned to take her mother to Cyprus, so then she told her about the stripping."

“You’re a fool! Angel didn’t tell her mother anything because her mother already knew. She just uses that line to make you and others think she is from a decent family. Who do you think raised Angel to be the slut she is? Her mother taught her to live off men. It was the easiest way to make lots of money by Russian standards. Her mother was probably a prostitute herself.”

“Angel told me her mother only knew one man—Angel’s father.”

“That’s just another lie Roy. Like mother, like daughter. Angel probably doesn’t even know who her real father is. She probably comes from a long line of prostitutes, and for them, you are nothing but a piece of business. You of all people with your MBA from Columbia should understand they are just carrying on the family business—nothing personal, only business.”

“That’s the problem—nothing personal.” I dejectedly said and began to see sex as Angel’s service and men with money as her target market.

My tutor added, “Knowing how careless Russians are about sex, I’d get tested for every disease they can test for.”

“Soon, soon,” I said. “What else is in the conversation?”

“Angel says, ‘Sometimes better to sit at work than listen to Roy. He reminds me of Marios, my boss in Cyprus. Marios always wanted to know how many times I met one of his customers, so he could get his commission for each meeting. He always feared we make private deals that he did not know about. Except with Roy, it is not about money already but fidelity. He is a fool and spies on me. His spying is so dirty.’”

My tutor chimed in agreement, “Your spying is dirty. I hope you realize that.”

“Not as dirty as her. Besides, it’s necessary to find the truth. Facing the truth is my only hope. See things as they really are no matter how much it hurts.”

“You’re hopeless.”

“Inessa: ‘Roy is like a little tail. Alexey’s mother said she heard about your marriage and asked to see the photographs.’”

“Angel laughs, ‘What pictures?’”

“Inessa: ‘I told her she was mistaken.’”

“Angel: ‘I want to take a day off, but it is twice as bad to be with Roy always asking me questions. Roy does not believe me probably because he is psychologically sick.’”

“Inessa: ‘His disbelief in you is crazy and senile. He should feel honored. Roy is like a bloodsucker, never satisfied. He only thinks about himself. His prying into your life is like a vampire sucking you dry. He should see that you are not a burden since you make dollars yourself, make food for him—what else does he need?’”

“Angel: ‘Yes, at least he is dumb enough to eat the herbs I put in his food to lessen his suspicions.’”

“Inessa: ‘Keep giving him those herbs. But why does he still dig into your affairs? What is not there for him? Another would have been carrying you in his arms and would have been happy for such a creature as you my little Angel. To have the most caring, loving beauty as you.’”

“Angel: ‘I already put up a magical block against him learning any more about me and from coming to Russia with me in September.’”

“Angel: ‘Did you send my letter to Valodya in St. Petersburg?’”

“Inessa: ‘Yes, he called you and asked for Angela. I didn’t know at first whom he was talking about.’”

“Angel: ‘That’s what he calls me. How is he?’”

“Inessa: ‘He is fine, misses you and hopes to see you in September.’”

I interrupted, “So her date with Valodya is still on. I guess that’s the main reason she doesn’t want me to go to Krasnodar with her, but what’s the reason for not wanting me in Cyprus?”

My tutor replied, “She doesn’t want you along because she is going on vacation—vacation. That means to get away from work, and you are her work.”

“Yeah, you’re right,” I sadly replied.

“Angel says, ‘I hope to see him too. He is very special to me.’”

“Inessa: ‘I think your cousin, Alona, went through your things and saw the nude photographs that Morosov took and your tape of *Showgirls* is missing.’”

My tutor asked, “Who’s Alona?”

“Alona is the daughter of Angel’s aunt—the sister of her mother. After Angel bought her apartment, her mother decided to give their house to Angel’s aunt who, according to Angel, wanted to move from Sakhalin Island to Krasnodar. Alona has been living in Angel and her mother’s new apartment since June to help get the house ready. But apparently, Alona has also been learning about the kind of people Angel and her mother are and is not pleased with her relatives.”

“Smarter than you.”

“Okay, let’s continue.”

“Angel says about her cousin Alona: ‘Young whore, bitch, she needs to get her face beaten. I want to hit her in the face. She is spoiled. For me to buy a mobile phone I have to work to get money from a man, but all she does is ask her father—the little slut. I don’t want her in our apartment when we are gone. Ask Katya to stay in it. I can trust her because I have checked her many times. That little bitch Alona. Tell her if I was there, I would punch her face. Sometimes at the club I play at karate with my clients. They think it is a joke and do not get the real meaning of how I want to punch their faces.’”

My tutor interrupted, “Your wife is not only a whore but a hostile one.”

“Inessa: ‘Smolin called about Japan and asked if you were planning on working there.’”

“Angel: ‘Not now. I make too much money here and have many customers who keep coming back.’”

“Inessa: ‘Be strong darling. I wish you new conquests and, remember, someday you will be famous.’”

My tutor quipped, “Right, the most famous whore in Krasnodar. Both your wife and mother-in-law are retards. Get rid of them.”

“Like mother, like daughter, as you said,” I replied. “But I didn’t realize so much violence boiled inside of her. That part was new.”

“Be careful and get yourself checked by your doctor. I’m off to work. Let me know when you want to meet next.”

The subway ride home from my tutor seemed to get longer each time. The pain, anger and humiliation boiled within me giving no pause for peace. How much more would I take? Why didn’t I just kick her out of the house and move on with my life? What kept pushing me to find out all the truth? Clearly lying was her life, her mother’s life and to everyone, including themselves. Self-righteous psychopaths, a family of mutual deceivers and deceived—I should get away from them but couldn’t let it go just yet. I wanted more of the truth and soon got it.

Maiya, my stockbroker, received the smuggled silverware that Angel purchased in Krasnodar and Inessa sent to America. The alleged \$1500 antique spoons turned into un-saleable collectibles worth at most \$200 for insurance purposes. Maiya lost \$500 and Angel probably profited by \$400, most likely paying out only \$50 to buy the spoons in Russia and \$50 to send them to America.

Maiya knew all about my horrors with Angel and said in disgust, “What’s with this girl? Doesn’t she realize that she could have made a lot more in the long run by being straight with this deal? It seems she can’t help but cheat someone whenever she gets the

chance. One of these days she's going to cheat the wrong person and end up face down in the gutter."

"You're right. I've never met anyone so devoted to tricking people. She seems addicted to taking advantage of others even when it means she'll lose more in the end. I doubt she even realizes her stupidity. I wonder whether she ever had any desire for an honest relationship, rather than one where she just schemed, connived and cheated. To her, everyone is a potential sucker? Perhaps she's just a congenital con artist."

My complaining continued, "Once I borrowed four hundred dollars cash from her and when I returned it, I asked her to count it to make sure I didn't mistakenly cheat her. She counted the twenties, but I could tell there was something wrong. Thinking I paid her less, I asked if it was right. She said, 'Yes,' but not believing her, I took the money back and counted it twice. I didn't want her to feel I pressured her into being cheated by me. Both recounts showed I had actually over paid her by \$20 dollars. She knew it but said nothing. I just walked out of the room in disgust."

Maiya laughed, "You didn't want to cheat her so she cheated you. That's funny. Maybe it's just her culture. President Truman once said, "Those Russians—they lie!"

I added, "And the girls lie most of all. A Ukrainian in my martial arts class described Russian girls as incapable of being honest with themselves, so they can't be honest with anyone. They feel no guilt because they believe they are justified in doing anything to get what they want. They are simply amoral, although they fear the opinions of others and try to hide their actions. When someone learns the truth, the girls feel humiliated but not guilty. And for a Russian girl, humiliation is the worse because to them only the surface appearance matters."

One evening in late August, a coffee cup went missing that I had received when I left WNEW TV News years ago—a prized memento. I looked around and noticed a mark on the kitchen floor. On closer inspection, there were little pieces of the cup spread out in a semi circle of about six feet in diameter. This cup didn't fall on the floor—it was smashed. The next day I asked Angel why she smashed my cup? She said, “You weren't meant to have it anymore.” I didn't even bother to respond. What can one say to such arrogance that would do any good?

Just before she left on her vacation, Angel tried a new ruse—at least she was persistent.

“Roy your suspicions are causing me great nerves. I find it difficult to do my work and do not feel well. You know I have a history of abdominal problems, and they are bothering me again. You must be gentler with me. I am getting rashes on my body, and my customers won't want me. Here look at this.”

She showed me a rash on her stomach that looked more like a hicky than a medical problem.

“Did you go to your doctor?” I asked

“I don't have the time. You must stop giving me nerves, looking in my things and spying on me.”

“Am I giving you nerves, or is it your guilty conscience. Forget that, I doubt whether you have a conscience.”

“Why don't you stop? I told you the truth about everything. I am now completely truthful and honest before you.” Oh not again, I thought.

“Are you going to meet Valodya when you go to Krasnodar?”



“How can I meet him if I do not telephone him? I promised not to call him and I have not.”

“Nice try, even Billy-Bob Clinton would admire it. You agreed not to ‘contact’ him. That includes not only the telephone but the letters and messages you sent him through your mother and Katya.” I knew this would raise her suspicions about my tapping her telephone, but I believed my investigation close to over.

Her eyes widened briefly as usual when the truth slapped her face. She paused to decide which cover-up or avoidance to use. “I cannot work with your spying and aggressive behavior to me. I am sick.” And she grabbed her stomach and sat down with a moan.

“Are you going to meet Valodya in Krasnodar?”

“Leave me alone!”

“What about Cyprus, whom will you meet there?”

“I told you I am going there to show my mother where I worked.”

“No that is not what you said, but it does make sense given what I know now.”

“Roy, our relations are not good—you don’t trust me. I tell you I change but you think I lie.”

“You said that before you trust someone you should check them. I checked you and you can’t be trusted.”

“That was in the past, you must check now.” I was waiting for this.

“Okay, take a lie detector test.”

“No, I will not. You have no right.”

“You just said I must check now, so how else can I check.”

She got up placed her arm over my shoulders, put on her sincerity mask, looked down into my eyes and kissed me, “I kiss you from my clear soul. You are my only lover and boyfriend. I don’t make anything with anyone else. I never go to the Champagne room and will see no boys in Krasnodar or Cyprus. Can’t I make you believe me?”

“I’ll tell you what. If you talk to Maiya and she believes you, then I will believe you.”

“I will do that.” Angel seemed happy, but I didn’t delude myself. Angel couldn’t tell the truth, she had too much to hide. Maiya was in her fifties, divorce and her children grown. During the Viet Nam war, she worked in Saigon for a private firm that provided guns for special operations and flew around with Air America. Maiya knew Angel and Russians and could spot any Russian scam in an instant. Angel couldn’t fool her, but she would try and that would be just one more thing against her.

#### Lover’s Island

All the talk about Cyprus finally made me see an obvious way for finding out more of the truth about Angel, especially why she wanted to revisit an island for which she claimed to have so many bad memories—translate the part of her diary I hadn’t—the section that dealt with Cyprus. Although likely twisted by self-delusions, Angel’s writings about her experiences in Cyprus would bring me nearer the full truth about my wife than any of the propaganda her mouth spewed in my direction.

Angel’s words always rang so fine in my head that they often made me doubt common sense and obvious truths. Whenever I accused her of lying and dishonesty, she always assuaged my accusations with sonorous words that struck directly at my emotions where her tone fabricated convincing rationales that took me days before realizing their

absurdity. Her favorite excuses were: “It part of my culture. I need time to learn your ways to tell the truth. Please be patient with me. I will change. I don’t know the man for a long time. I just go out into the world for a couple of years. I need time to learn what you a man want from his girl. You know I really a good girl,” and then she’d always smile innocently. With Angel the delivery rather than the text carried the power to deceive. But the bare, soundless words of her diary carried no emotional ploy.

After Angel left for Krasnodar on September 9<sup>th</sup>, I met with my tutor to do the translation. I didn’t want to do it with Angel around for fear she might get wind of it from her spirits or I might lose control and confront her with what I was learning. The dairy was still my secret weapon as long as she couldn’t be sure I had a copy. If she learned about my translating the Cyprus portion, it would give her a chance to emotionally duck and weave out of her admissions in a way that, coupled with her magic, might make me shelve my planned confrontation in Krasnodar and never learn about her activities after the trip to Italy with Alfredo. Also the information about Cyprus should help me throw her off balance when I surprised her in Krasnodar, making it easier to obtain the part of her real diary I wanted.

“What date do you want to start at and where do we end?” My tutor asked.

“Let’s start with December 20, 1998, when she flew to Cyprus to work in this club called Zygos in Limassol.”

“Never heard of Limassol.”

“Neither did I until I met Angel. It’s on the Greek part of the island—a small resort town of around 75,000 people on the southern shore. Apparently a pleasant place to live but overrun with the Russians.”

“Watch it, I’m Russian,” My tutor warned.

“But an honest Russian.”

“Listen, just because you got burnt by some devious Russian slut doesn’t mean we are all liars and thieves. And don’t forget, two Russian girls, me and my friend told you in Moscow not to marry her.”

“I remember. Anyway, a lot of Russians set up businesses in Cyprus because it’s the only country Russia recognizes as a tax haven. Your fellow countrymen go to Cyprus, register a legal entity, then go back to Russia and conduct their operations under the name of the Cypriot entity. That way the company operating in Russia is required to pay only Cypriot taxes, which amounts to a fraction of what it would be liable for if operating as a Russian company.”

“Why bother, everyone in Russia lies on their taxes anyhow?”

“Right, all Russian companies keep three sets of books—one for investors that shows a profitable growing business, one for the taxman that shows a company about to tank and one for the managers that shows the truth. But the companies still have to bribe the tax authorities to accept their duplicitous accounting. Russian tax officials aren’t stupid. They have a pretty good idea about what a company makes and base their bribes on the amount of taxes they believe the company should pay. With a Cypriot shell company, the taxes aren’t even owed to Russia, so no Russian tax liability and no bribes.”

“Smart, but why all the money laundering I read about that goes through Cyprus if they’ve already avoided taxes?”

“Because the laundered money comes from illegal activities, such as drugs, embezzlement of state assets, selling military hardware, contract killings—you name it.

Russian businessmen, perhaps I should use the term gangsters, since they're usually one in the same, aren't going to report illegal income on any tax return no matter how small the taxes. They want to keep their crimes secret, so they transport the cash in suitcases or through cooperative banks that don't ask questions to the perfect destination point—Cyprus. It's geographically close to Russia, the officials are susceptible to bribery and bank transactions along with the real owners of an account are kept secret. The U.S. government has called Cyprus a haven for money laundering by terrorists and organized crime. That's why your corrupt politicians and their criminal associates move some of the one billion dollars that flows out of Russia every month into Cyprus.”

“There not my politicians. I'm an American now—remember? And I am also well aware that Cyprus is a favorite playground for the Russian mafia. I'm sure your wife fitted in just fine. How old was she when she went to Cyprus?”

“Twenty-three.”

“Okay, how far in the diary do you want me to go to?”

“Stop at July 23, 1999. I already had from there until the end of May 2000 translated in Moscow.”

“I'm surprised one of your teenage girl translators did it for you,” my tutor peevishly remarked.

“Actually, none of them would, so I found a man.”

“Figures. All right, are you ready?”

“Yeah, let's get this continuing show on the road,” I replied steeling myself, but still hoping the diary would speak of a more temperate, less promiscuous Angel.

I have arrived in Cyprus to the girls' apartment in a basement. It is good here, here lives Michelle, Oxana and me, and as well Zlata who does magic.

Marios Athanasiou the manager of ZYGOS and TRAMPS was going to watch me for 3 days, first at 3 o'clock in the afternoon, then at 3 o'clock in the morning, but only on the third day he has watched me, watched how I move when I take my clothes off. Here we make a pound for every drink a customer buys us while we sit with him. On the first day my result is 7 drinks; I shivered when I spoke to customers.

My tutor stopped, "What's this "pound"?"

"Cyprus was a British colony, so the currency they use is called the Cypriot Pound after the British Pound Sterling. In 1999, a Cypriot Pound was worth around \$1.60. Most people on the island also speak English. Angel studied it for seven years in Krasnodar but didn't practice it until Cyprus."

"So she says."

"Right, anything coming from her mouth is probably a lie. Let's go on."

On the same day I have acquainted with Chris, Marios introduced him to me. After work we have gone in his sports car. It was so nice! We came to a romantic place. I have seen sparkling Limassol, it was all in lights... On the second day he has presented me yellow and red carnations (on the first day he presented me roses). We have gone to a shop. He has bought me a journal and a chocolate. We went to the beach, and while we were talking, a wave watered a little our feet.

On the third day he took me to play cards. Due to my lucky hand we won. If I have correctly understood, we have won 220 pounds. 110 of them he presented to me. I was so glad of it, because I had to pay back a debt.

On the fourth day we went to a mountain and there we kissed for the first time. By the way, on the second day at the club I for the first time danced table dance (taking off my dress and dancing in my tong panties) for a very fat man. He touched me between my legs... After it I came to Chris all trembling. He was surprised and asked what happened. I told and then calmed down. It was filthy and awful. I received money for it.

Recently Chris has presented me 20 pounds - for striptease dance in private so that I did not dance for others. I sat with him practically all evening, and I did not make any striptease dance with other customers, because he does like the atmosphere in here. He considers that such things should be done alone.

My tutor interrupted, "What's the difference among 'drink', 'table dance' and 'striptease'?"

"In the sex industry a 'drink' means the girl is just sitting flirting with the customer, pretending she's interested and asks him to buy her a drink."

“Oh, I do that all the time at bars. What else is new?”

“Yeah, but you don’t get a percentage of the price of the drink. Lap dancers do. ‘Table dance’ means that during a song the customer sits in a chair while the girl takes off her dress and dances in her tong panties. In this place the girls were allowed to touch their customers and vice versus. With the ‘striptease’ the girl also took off her tong panties and danced completely naked before the customer who in this place could touch her and she would touch him outside or inside his cloths. Then there is the ‘private dance’ where the girl and customer go into a backroom by themselves for usually a half hour. The customer plays the club a certain amount of which some goes to the girl. The girl then cuts a private deal with the customer to do what he wants as long as she is willing—the seeder the club, the more willing the girl.”

“Very organized and business like.”

“That’s exactly what it is—a business,” I said with disgust.

It was very interesting yesterday, one customer an artist talked with me. He frankly told me story of his life. I began to dance a striptease dance for him (no panties), but he has categorically refused, he was frightened and paid for a table.

I did not have time enough to write down everything. Remaining details I shall write down in the following year. I am grateful to the year of 1998 with all my heart. This year has given me very much. Let be blessed the year of 1999! Let there be God’s blessing and rule! Let Our Lady send us love, patience and good. Let our guardian angel keep us! Let Nicolas the Thaumaturge help us! And as well let all saints help us! Amen! Forwards, in the kind, clean, fine year of 1999!!!

1999!!!

My God, bless me! Our Saint Lady, give us love and save all of us! Guardian angel keep us! Nicolas the Thaumaturge help all of us! And as well let all saints be with us!

Happy New Year!

So has come the New Year, the year of 1999!

With God’s help!!! I continue.

In the course of approximately our third meeting with Chris we kissed. I like to be with him, we went to hotel and made each other a massage. He wanted me, and I wanted him, but I would not do it. He became angry and told me that from now on he will come

only to look at me, for only 5 minutes, as it will be better for both him and me. I became scared I would lose him and began my tears. It has worked with Chris. I need him. First of all, he is a man whom I trust, and as well he gives me money and each time he presented me flowers (roses).

Last Friday me and one of my girl roommates, went to sea, we chattered, and today I have such a rising tide of energy. And the water there was so fine, and as well sand.

I have purchased a dress for 22 pounds, for this money they have as well shortened it to the length required by the club. Marios' assistant Kostas demands money for taking us to Immigration Service. I will not give him money because this is his job. 1 pound is quite enough for taking us to a shop to buy dresses the club requires.

On December 28 we celebrated Merry Christmas in TRAMPS, the other club that the two brothers Marios and Melios Athanasiou run. We ate salads, meat and danced. Marios and Melios, danced Greek dance. Then girls from TRAMPS danced totally nude. All of them have such cellulite. We have good fun and then began to work back at ZYGOS.

On December 29 I have danced 3 all nude dances, stripteases, and 1 dance in my panties, table. Marios shouted "Bravo!" For the next day I have earned only 35 pounds. And on December 31 we have met in ZYGOS at 11 pm our Russian New year, and at 12 pm - Cypriot New year. It was so fine!

The DJ has presented me red wine, I drank it at home on December 31 with the girls. In cabaret we had a meal of squids, cutlets and I had as well a heap of salads. In the cream pie for desert girls have found 50 pounds. We did not eat all of the cream pie.

Me and all others were dead drunk. I drank Martini, then whiskey with Chris. After it we left for hotel. There we got undressed and kissed, listening to RTR broadcasting. I do not know, but it seems that I am ready to sleep with him. If only I had not my menstruation. I do not consider it unfaithfulness to my boyfriend Alexei in Krasnodar, I do not feel that I am unfaithful, but there is a problem – Chris wants sex without condoms. What, if I suddenly become pregnant? I felt his hot desire. I hardly managed to extract my Tampax and we had sex with no condom.

My tutor said, "Did you get yourself tested yet?"

"I see my doctor the end of the week."

"I told you, Russians were careless concerning sex. They seldom use condoms because abortions are free. But for your wife to have sex with some guy who walks in off the street to a whorehouse is nuts!"

"It's not exactly a whorehouse."

"You wanna bet?"

"Let's` continue," I said knowing deep down my tutor was right—Zygos was a whorehouse.



Me and Chris bathed together. Pouring water was first hot, then cold, and we had fun very much. What will Marios think about our business together since he will not receive money.

O, God, give mum and me wisdom, love, forces and patience!!!

Merry Christmas!!! Happy Christmas !!!

Since the New Year there have already passed 7 days. The club DJ began chasing after me. He presented me toilet water (a magnificent one) and a jacket (which I have chosen myself). And today he presented me underwear (dark blue and white). He as well offered an ordinary dress (lengthy, for wearing in the street), but I refused. Yesterday me and DJ went to the city, I wanted to buy a long evening dress for the club's stage show, but the shop was closed. We had coffee. He is not indifferent to me. We have picked flowers to guess whether one loves the other or does not. We obtained an interesting result – I don't love him but he of course loves me. Still he was touched. It is a pity. He is a pleasant person, but as a man he is not in my taste. I am very much, very much grateful to him. He will soon leave for England, then to Moscow, and to Krasnodar, so what can I gain. He wanted to take my address, but I explained, that I live with mum and that we do not have room for him to rent in Krasnodar. The DJ is a good friend to me and I am very grateful to him, but him to live in my house—no.

Today in the evening Chris celebrated his eighteenth birthday. I wanted to present him a poster, but could not manage to find a good one. So I have purchased him a pie and a picture post card. This night there were no people in ZYGOS. After the nightly stage show, me and Chris went to the hotel. Prior to this (for about 2 weeks) I prepared Chris sexually. He could not suffer any more. Today in the night I made my mind to again have sex with—he has gifted me a lot. Psychologically I was ready (and I do not consider it an unfaithfulness). He has asked me about condoms. I answered: “Why not?” He burst out laughing. It turned out that he himself has purchased them. For about 1 hour we played in love. He entered and left, then from the back. His member was so small - very exotic feelings.

In the same night girls from TRAMPS have met young boys (19 and 23 years old). They got drunk, barfed in the car. Then they went to the girls' apartment. Having arrived, the girls have run and closed the door. These boys started fighting with the landlord. They said they had paid for the girls but didn't get what they were promised. They broke window glass, and somebody called police. There was also one case earlier when Marios beat up two men who refused to pay money. It was awful.

Today I have colored my hair in other tint. I received my alien card. I asked Chris to lend me money for long dress (approximately 30 pounds, but he has given 50 pounds). I told him that I will pay it back, but he answered, that it is his present. I do not know whether to believe him, I do not want to be deceived.

I interrupted the translation, “I don't understand what she means by saying she doesn't want to be deceived?”

“She's obviously paranoid that men are out to trick her or take advantage of her. Something probably happened to her that made her distrustful of them.”

“Or that’s the way her mother raised her. Warning her not to trust any man. To always look out for only herself and try to get the best of men. What a sad life to never be able to trust anyone but your mother, and a mother who encourages her to sell her body for a living.”

“Russian girls always trust their mother. It’s part of our culture and doesn’t matter how bad the mother might be. Shall we continue?”

“Okay”

Today one customer kissed me for 30 minutes, another spoke about his problems with wife (but paid for a table). Another one told me that I am a lady. Others laughed very much and joked, because their friend was going to marry. They laughed and played tricks on my watch, on everything. Inga, Irina and Donna have finished working, now they have holidays. They are going to leave Cyprus next Saturday.

Marios introduced a new system. When leaving with a customer we must register it in a book and call Marios to tell where we go.

Bless me!!!

January 19, 1999

I have been living in Cyprus for almost a month. Yesterday I and Elisa went to gym to go in for sports. For 15 minutes I was running on the racing track. Yes, I have a problem - I had slightly put on weight. Of course, if you each morning eat a croissant you will gain.

I danced for one customer a table dance and then a striptease. During the striptease while I rubbed his member he came. It was funny.

Chris came in when I was sitting with Rikos for the first time. I did not notice him and he passed by. He waited for me for a long time, and then left. The next day he did not come. I rang to him and left messages. When at last he has come, I apologized to him for a long time. We went to play cards. His friend has given me 20 pounds, someone else has as well gave me money, Chris has given 10 pounds - so I got approximately 50 pounds. Later, on January 17, 1999, we also played cards; sometimes we won and sometimes we lost, approximately 5 - 6 hundred pounds.

There sat one man with a lot of golden knick-knacks, three bracelets on each hand, rings on fingers, his girl-friend as well had a lot of golden adornments. They are Russian mafia.

I asked Chris to buy me contact lenses, but he invented many reasons not to do it. Well. The main thing is that I receive money from him, and sometimes it becomes very important for me. Now I have approximately 340 pounds. I want very much 50 pounds

more. It is necessary to me, and I can earn this money. When I yesterday told Rikos about lenses, he at once got troubled, because Marios...

I and Rikos went to make photos near the sea. We made photos and then we wanted to call a friend of Rikos to ride horses. And at this very moment there appeared Rikos' wife on her Jeep. I witnessed the scene of jealousy. He quickly stopped a taxi for me. His wife ran up to me as I entered the taxi, and told that if she once more sees me with her husband, she will send me back to Russia... My taxi drove away but she followed me in her car. My taxi driver turned out to be a good driver, and we lost her. She was funny in her jealousy. In the taxi, I rang to Rikos' mobile telephone to arrange to meet later. Rikos came and we went to restaurant to eat ice-cream. It was delightful. And the restaurant, by the way, seemed to me very cozy.

At the club Marios told me to sit with George. George is a doctor - orthopedist, he liked me very much. I danced to him striptease. He kneeled before me and kissed me between the legs. It was fun. Then he arranged with Marios for me to leave the club with him. We went to Bouzouki. For the first time I saw what it was. There they sang songs in Greek and threw a lot of flowers to me as I danced. Then we went to hotel. There was so beautiful. We bathed, then he slightly massaged my backbone and wanted to make love to me, but I explained that I do not do like this. George told that Marios sold me to him for 100 pounds... He presented me a set of scents Estee Lauder, gave 50 pounds and I left. What wonderful it was that morning at 8 o'clock when I left the hotel.

God bless me! Our Lady save me! Guardian angel keep mum and me! Nicolas the Thaumaturge help me in everything!!! Amen!

"Not a whorehouse, Huh?" my tutor chimed in.

February 02, 1999

3 years and 5 months passed since the day when I got acquainted with my darling Alexei. God, please, send us happiness, love and trust. I rang to Alexei from Rikos' telephone in his car and Alexei got frightened thinking something was wrong because telephone calls are expensive, but I have calmed him. He as always hesitates to tell me about his feelings in his mother's presence. I spoke Russian so Rikos did not understand I called my darling.

On January 27 or 28 Marios shouted at me because of Chris. Chris told to everyone that he was my boyfriend. I just listen without saying anything. Marios said he would straighten me out tomorrow. The next day I had been waiting for approximately 1.5 hours, whining for all this time. Marios told me that I cannot appear to have a boyfriend, because it repels customers. The customers will not buy me if they know I have a steady boy friend. Marios told me that I should not fix time for Chris to come during the club hours. (I ordered Chris to come by the end of performance.) I understood Marios and the importance to our business but I did not understand how Chris could hurt my business by telling Marios? I trusted Chris so much and he has betrayed me, he has disgraced me. But I forgave him.

On January 29 I and Chris went to hotel. I drank some wine and we had a conversation with Chris - a strange conversation full of hints about treachery, about confidence, but at the same time I did not tell Chris that I meant him. He wanted to sleep with me, but I did not give it to him. I excited him and mocked him - so I have to some

extent revenged myself. Afterwards in the morning we went with Andreas to his restaurant for a lunch.

I and Rikos went to store. He presented me a lot of cosmetics, and today I was made a cosmetic mask on face for clearing skin. Rikos presented me a silver ornament with my name. I am grateful to him with all my heart for everything, what he has done for me. For our trip to the farm with horses - there I for the first time in my life rode on horseback. I received such unforgettable impressions. We played a little in the woods and he came. Besides he made to me large photos. Let God give him all good.

Nikolas presented me magnificent flowers and a telephone. I and Regina went to his house, ate shish kebabs. Soon afterwards he and I went by car to the mountain, though I wanted to go to beach. I quarreled with him and he turned his car back to the sea. I got a lot of pleasure while swimming in the sea. Then we went to his house. There I bathed and he presented me a sporting suit, a record player, money and then took me naked and carried me in the bedroom. I stretched my arms to the sides like on a cross, we made sex but I had to pretend I came. I did not like it too much. He was not very good. Afterwards we talked for a long time.

The next day I was sitting with the friend of Andreas. He gifted me many things and told, that he does not want sex, he does not want sexual games, and he just wants to receive inner joy from my presence. He promised me a holiday in Spain. Let all be according to the God's will! After a trip to Bouzouki, he threw flowers to me, washed my legs in champagne and kissed my thighs. He is interesting. Also that day came Chris to the club, but he did not wait for me to return from being with Andreas' friend. I feel good with Chris, but I am very cautious.

Yesterday we made fun of one customer who bought I and Natasha for private room. Instead of playing with him we make masturbation between us two. He was frightened and ran away.

I received a letter from mum. God give me and her all kind, clean, and first of all, love, wisdom, forces and patience. God bless us!!!

February 08, 1999

A lot of events in a very little time. Chris pretends that he did not tell Marios about having sex with me, but he did, and Marios thinks I cheat him out of money. Chris has changed, he loves only himself. When I told him about delay in my menstrual period, he offered to buy a test for pregnancy or tell Marios about it to arrange for an abortion. He is crazy, if Marios thought me pregnant, I would lose business. I am really nervous about it, because the delay makes already 12 days. But now my breasts have already begun to ache, and it is a holiday for me.

Yesterday I and Rikos went to hotel, I allowed him to kiss me between my legs and during sex pretended that I came. It is pleasant to me that he does not pretend to be a great person, for me it is cheerful to stay with him. Sometimes I go with him to a restaurant, sometimes I go with him to a hotel, or I go with him to ride on horseback. It was nice, when I for the first time in my life rode on horseback, the horse went at a light trot. Afterwards my muscles were slightly aching.

The next day, on Saturday evening, Marios prohibited all us girls to go anywhere at all. He says we are all cheating him. We go out on our own to make our own business. Now

we are only allowed to go to supermarket once a week, with his assistant Kostas. No shopping, no gyms. We must go everywhere only with Kostas. We were not allowed even to go to a church for 10 minutes. Looks like we are in a prison.

My tutor paused, “I see now what your wife meant when she compared you with her boss Marios. She thinks you’re interfering in her business the way he did, only he did it out of greed. You’re just a fool husband from another era who believes in fidelity, and she doesn’t like it because it lessens the amount of money she makes.”

“What do you mean?”

“Don’t you see? She doesn’t care about keeping any of her agreements if it interferes with her making money. Whether it’s her contract with Marios, which I assume she had, her marriage vows with you or whatever she had with Alexei. Nothing, no promise, no ethic, nothing matters to her when it stands in the way of money. She’s driven solely by greed. She whores for money, she cheats people for money and she tricked you into bringing her to America where she doesn’t need to pay a pimp. She can run her own business out of Flash Dancers. It all fits. Her name should be ‘Avarice’. She’ll do anything for money and think nothing of it.”

“I’m beginning to think the same. She talks a lot of fine sentiments but apparently only believes in money. Funny, my mother was the same.”

“Your mother was a prostitute?”

“Not that I know of, but greedy and driven by appearances. Let’s continue.” I didn’t bother going into the apparent murder of my Down’s syndrome brother,

On Saturday, February 6, we celebrated in restaurant Lena’s birthday. Kostas arrived there under Marios’ order and took us home, he even did not allow us to eat up our ice-cream. We were sitting so well, we ourselves chose menu, had a fish meal. Marios did not allow us to even eat pie in ZYGOS before work and told us that we should eat the pie after work. And after work the pie was thrown to a waste bin. I have never seen something like this to throw away good food.

After work, I have met Nikolas. When we have kissed each other, he, poor fellow could hardly stand it. He needed quick relief and I gave him it.

Some money - 80 pounds - have disappeared from Sveta's pocket. Some of these notes were marked. In her search she came to me and found one marked note. I have received this note from garçons. After it everyone began to look at me with suspicion. I began crying in hysterics. I wept all the nightlong at work and could only make 5 drinks and 1 striptease.

After, I went with Chris and he even did not make any special effort to soothe me. He spoke only about himself, and my problems were of no interest to him. I made a special torture for Chris. It was a night with wine and with hints of treachery. I pretended that only drinking is of interest to me and I don't want to hear about sex - I was simply tormenting him. And it serves him right - in the beginning he gave me presents and money, but now he only makes faces. But I pretend that all goes well.

Today I have measured myself. Hips - 38.5 inches, thighs - 22.5, waist - 26! I understood - the same already happened to me after past birthday, when I ate many sweets and chocolate. Stop, enough, I will not eat sweets!

I am very much annoyed by Lukas. He has been ringing me up 3 times a day for already 7-th day, he wants more. I went with him to a restaurant. On the way he made me to put on glasses, for no one of his friends to see me in his silvery Jeep. He told me, that he will not ring to me after sex. And now he rings me up again, wants to come to cabaret. He says that without me he becomes crazy, and I answer: "You are in this condition for already a few days."

Andreas wants to buy me tomorrow. We will go to restaurant, to disco. I asked him to take me to a swimming pool.

Oh, God, let our Marios become more kind, let finish with this stupid system that hurts my business, let everything became good! My God, help me!!!

February 11, 1999

Today size of my hips became 39 inches. Andreas has bought me for a day. Me, Andreas and his friend have gone to eat fish to the best fish restaurant. His friend is a man in the age of approximately 60, he is from Italy. We talked about miscellaneous things, then we went to some places (Bouzouki) but all of them were closed. We went to "Runel" to disco, there was so beautiful. I danced with all my heart, drank Baileys. Then we went to Bouzouki once more. Here there was a sea of flowers, whole mountains of flowers. I had to dance under Greek music (during dance all were throwing flowers to me). Andreas said that it seemed to him that he had fallen in love with me. But he felt not so well, because he had very much tired (arrhythmia). Then we went to the hotel, where he for some times asked, whether he should leave but I asked him to stay. He tried to out card in the door many times but was unsuccessful. We slept together. He tried to accost to me, but I stopped him, having lied that I had menstruation. He is a good fellow, he controlled himself very well and paid 50 pounds. We woke up about 10 o'clock in the morning and he had to go to the office.

My tutor said, “What a piece of work is your wife! She’s always cheating people—even her customers. She sells herself, then tries to weasel her way out of performing. This slut is immoral even from a prostitute’s point of view.”

“That’s assuming what she wrote is literally accurate. She may simply use a code for sex when she writes of a guy trying to accost her, that they only slept together or she gave him a massage. Think about it. Would a guy spend a couple of hundred dollars for a hotel room, pay a girl he bought at a strip club an additional 50 to 100 pounds for nothing? I don’t think soooo. Beside, anyone who keeps a diary will paint herself in the best light possible. Angel probably mixes her self delusions and paranoiac drive for secrecy to yield an euphemistic but coded narrative of her real experiences.”

“Right, always leave room for a denial, no matter how ridiculous.”

All that day I stayed in the hotel along. I ate a Kit Kat and also 100 grams of nuts and washed all it down with juice (naturally, it is so easy to put on weight with such foods). Then I went to the hotel swimming pool to swim. In the swimming pool it was very good. The swimming pool was small. I very quickly reached an opposite wall of the swimming pool and turned back. Then I took a walk, made some photos. Then I went to a restaurant, ate some tomato soup, huge plate of salad, squids. In the restaurant they thanked me for everything. They thanked me for order, for my having meal there. They thought I was a star. Then I rose to leave and they have brought to me a present from some unknown admirer of bananas, kiwi, a pear, a tangerine. I had a walk once more, then I again went to swimming pool and went back to the room but I could not open the door. I took taxi and went to the office of Andreas. He was nervous and very tired. I sat and demonstrated how models sit in different poses. Then he took me home, having presented me another 50 pounds. I have arrived home at approximately 7 pm.

Chris began to make scandals. Our relations came to an end. I talked with him for a long time and even burst into tears (feigningly). I understood - all he wants from me is only sex. My problems do not bother him, neither my work nor my state of health. He pays attention to nobody except for himself. Having learned that Andreas has bought me for a day, he got upset. He has no right to interfere in my business. He said that Andreas is crazy, that he gifted hundreds of flowers to a girl who worked here before me. He would better look at himself. Recently he did not gift me any flowers, gave me 10 pounds to buy tights, and that is all. He began to lose in cards, became greedy and began to speak that all this is too expensive for him. I said that if he has any good feeling to me, he would forgive me for spending time with Andreas (he confirmed presence of such feelings having unexpectedly

sneezed). I think, that all this may be for the better, because I become free for other customers, whom I can make more money from. Maybe all this is for the better....

For example, this "little bit crazy" customer Paco has presented me toilet water, besides, he bought to me a toy, then he gifted gold - and he took this gold from himself. And yesterday he gifted me a journal and an organizer (in which there were his personal records). I will give it back today. One customer who wanted to sleep with me, promised to present me a silver bracelet, which I trickily asked for after I complained Chris never made to me any gift.

Now the club has a new system. The girls dance in pairs, one of girls dances topless, the other all nude. Sometimes we make a show rubbing and kissing each other. At this time all the others rest. This system is more pleasant to me.

My God, bless me, give us love, wisdom, forces and patience!!!

March 07, 1999

Here has come 3 years and 6 months since the day when I got acquainted with my darling, Alexei. He called me up in ZYGOS and told that he loves me very much, that he counts days left before my homing. And I do not know, but maybe I will elongate my contract beyond the 3 months.

It is good without Chris. I got acquainted with Stephanos, 3 times went with him to hotel, we only slept together. When we went to hotel for the first time, lighting did not work in the room. For the second and the third times he took with him radio. He is so sensitive, interesting, gentle. But he does not pay much money and does not gift anything. Today I took from him 10 pounds but did not tell him it for massage. He felt offended, I don't know why. I wait him now at the club.

In the studio of Andreas (an artist) I sat in the nude to students for two hours in 20 minutes periods with five-minute breaks. I received 2 pounds from each student - in total it made approximately 16 pounds. I want Andreas to draw my portrait. Here in his studio we twice made love with Rikos - it was terrible, like a dog. For him it is not enough once a week, he wants more than 2 times a week. And I don't agree!!! I have other customers. And he asks, whether he is better, than my boy-friends in Russia. He may not even dream to be compared with them. I solicit from him a video camera for my mum. I put aside 100 pounds for a tape recorder for Alexei. (I will not say about it to mum or she will scold me.) Rikos presented a chain - a silver one, with a little heart made of pearls. By the way, my hips are 39.4 inches. Now I begin to drink purgative tea. Appetite has decreased. I hope, that I will bring down my weight.

I helped Pannikos to make masturbation, he was crying so interesting... I have solicited from him a cream against cellulite. Maybe he will present me a golden chain with my name Alina. This maniac Doctor George raped Oxana, she was drunk. I, Rikos and Oxana went to ride and there saw how horses make love. The ride was so good.

"A little bit crazy Rikos" was engaged in extraordinary incident. I periodically talked to him in the club when other customers want me. So greedy Marios has thrown him out of the club and shouted at me not attending to the club's clients. And Rikos returned with police - he thought, that Marios struck me. Marios doesn't like police in his club... All was settled because I told police that I am all right and no one hit me. It was funny. Rikos said that he will bring me 100 pounds, but gave me only 20.



I will do my best to be in the first place in our business at the club.

Petros has nearly torn my clothes, but promises to buy me expensive clothes. He is just crazy sadist. He promised to gift me a silver chain.

On March 12 we celebrated Vika's birthday. She made a sweet table. Bambos presented to her a gold bracelet and perfumery. We spent that evening well.

In the night of March 13 customers made Natasha and Sveta to dance for 40 minutes without break in private room. Natasha lost consciousness from so much activity. Monika could not stand and refused to work. Oxana as well could not stand and decided together with Monika to refuse from work. Melios came and talked to them, Monika came back, but Oxana did not return.

Yesterday we rode on horseback for 1.5 hours. On the way back I have lost my watch. Many customers did not like my watch, but I hope, that Akhmed will find it.

My darling, Alexei, called me up. He thought, that I will come back next week, but I decided to stay for a while. He was upset very much, but it is a little bit early for me to come back. I need to make more money.

Today came doctor George. He was so glad. In private we just embraced and kissed each other. He was so happy to be with me. Then we went to Bouzouki with Andreas and Masha - that day was Masha's birthday. Andreas presented to Masha a lot of flowers, a pie and a song. It was magnificent. Then I drank wine. I and George went to hotel. I have so relaxed. He kissed me and embraced me and he came in the morning, and then gifted me a watch, an alarm clock, ear-rings with a chain and ORGASM perfumery. It was so pleasant to me. And still he gifted me 100 pounds!!

My God, let everything go properly. God bless me, Our Lady save me and mum and give us love, guardian angel keep us! Nicolas the Thaumaturge help us!!!

I interrupted my tutor, "You know what I don't understand is that Angel has a germ-phobia. She refuses to hold on to the poles in subway cars for fear of contracting someone else's germs but shows no reluctance for pulling the dicks of her clients or allowing them to stick it in her without a condom. It doesn't make sense.

"Sure it does, she's sick—period! Where were we?"

March 21, 1999

Yesterday it was 3 months from the day when I arrived to Cyprus.

Here something happens every day. Once some sucker, a child of approximately 18 years old, sat next to me and Monika. They opened a bottle of champagne. It was good. 1 table dance and 4 drinks. Then we went with them, they have brought us to a cheap hotel. Here Monika began to demand from them 100 pounds for sex - what if there will be a child? My boy tried several times to lay me in bed, threatened me with his arm. I asked him: "What happened to your hand?" So I did not allow any sex to them. We went back to the club by ourselves, for a long time we could not find the way home - we did not know what bus goes to our district.

Once I went with Oxana, a fat man and his small friend. His small friend (to my mind, he had some mental deviations) for a long time (about 30 minutes) could not recollect the road and our car went in circles. Then we have arrived to a hotel. I helped fat man to masturbate, made him a massage. He paid me 30 pounds. The little fool broke Oxana's cosmetics - he wanted to take back the money he paid her for orgasm because he said she not worth it. She climbed over balcony and came to my room. We left from that hotel by taxi.

I asked former customer of Lena who was also named Christopher to take us to Pathos. It's nice to go there, the whole trip takes about 1 hour. There we took photos. He bought me electronic watch, we were choosing for a very long time. And then Eric as well gifted me watch - precisely same model, but of other color. I quickly hide watch Christopher bought me.

"I assume Pathos is a resort on Cyprus?" My tutor asked.

"Right, it's located on the western part of the island. The ancient Greeks believed Aphrodite was born there and turned it into a pagan pilgrimage site long before Christ."

"Your wife probably believes she's a direct descendant of the goddess of love."

"I'm sure she does, all will love her and despair."

Yesterday I talked with Sergey (after masturbating Pannikos) and burst into tears. I told him that I am so tired of it all. Sergey believed me and to soothe me he gifted me a dress, it costs approximately 37 pounds. After it came Pannikos and took me with him. Prior to it I was sitting with Philip. He managed to urge Pannikos to buy a large bottle of champagne - 8 drinks. I thank you, My God.

On March 19 I have received 40 pounds from dances + 10 pounds salary. For the first time in my life - 5 privates 6 pounds each + 10 drinks. Monika began to interrupt my business. She sits with Rikos and does what I usually do. When it is necessary for me to speak with Rikos she says that he is her customer, and that I should hurry my talk with him. Oxana went home.

Today Pamela from TRAMPS at 6 o'clock in the morning left with a customer, and returned at 10 o'clock in the morning without telling Marios. Marios and Melios learned about it and they came to us. Yesterday Marios shouted at me because I went with Pannikos. Marios said Pannikos does not come to club, I have sex with him, I receive something for it but the club does not receive anything. I shouted in answer you son of a bitch, I do not have sex with him and that Marios should not trust to all he hears. Then Marios seemed to trust me.

My God bless me! Our Lady save and give us love, guardian angel keep us! Nicolas the Thaumaturge, help me in my business and in lowering of my weight!

April 03, 1999

It is already the 3<sup>rd</sup> of April. 3 years and 7 months passed since the day when I got acquainted with my darling. God give us all the best (me, Your slave Angelina and Your slave Alexei).

Larisa from the club helped me very much. She took to Krasnodar my things (coat, jeans) and handed over some of my earnings so far to my mum and 200 dollars to Alexei. After it my darling Alexei has called me up and told that my mum was very happy. He told me that I must prepare for a serious conversation about post-graduate courses (that I must continue studying). Besides my darling told me that he cannot take this money and that it will wait till I myself come and take it. It means, that he wants not my money but me myself.

My tutor commented, “Alexei sounds like a decent Russian man whom I’d like to meet.”

“He does seem like a guy honestly concerned about Angel, and she told me no man wanted her to be honest until she met me. Ha!”

“And you, of course, fell for it.”

Last week here came tourists from Kuwait. Marios sold to them me, Regina, Julia and Nadya (40 pounds to each of us). My admirer, Ibragim, and me drank much wine and I was stupid enough to give in to him. Prior to it I asked him to give me 100 dollars – not for sex, I just needed it. He answered that he had left all his money downstairs with security desk. Most awful that he also introduced his member into my anus. It was very painful and terrible. After it I did not feel my fanny for three days - it was very painful. He told me that he will come once more to ZYGOS to pay me or I could myself come later to him and take this money. He left the next day without paying me. Let God be his judge...

“So that’s why Angel would never take it up the ass,” I interrupted.

“You’re a pervert Roy,” my tutor replied.

“And you girls love it.”

In two days I got acquainted with a very remarkable person. I went with him to hotel and made massage. (I told that without sex it would cost 40 pounds, with sex - 100 pounds). I have excited him and he finished before entering me. I received 100 pounds anyway and money for a taxi. Let God give this remarkable person good health and all the best!

Me and Vika have pierced ears, made one piercing each. Thanks to Eric we paid no money. I went to a doctor, because my delay with menstruation has made already 17 days. The doctor told me that I am not pregnant. In 2 days there began menstruation.

In the club, I am glad when a customer comes during a private dance. Some men come this way for the first time.

Andreas has brought to ZYGOS his son. Now I meet both with Andreas and with his son. Andreas is a remarkable man, he is very careful and attentive, treats me with fruits. He gifted me a golden bracelet (the first one in my life).

Sometimes I have problems with girls. They cry that I always run to each customer in front of them, not giving him a time to enter, though I saw, that Amanda and Sveta were making their way to the customers entering. Monika makes with her customers 75 pounds a day, and I 50 pounds. When my customer Eric refused to buy a dance from Monika, she told to her customer not to buy a dance from me.

“Wait a minute,” I said. “Let me figure this out. 50 pounds a day, six-day week for six months comes to 6,200 pounds at \$1.60 is \$9,920! And she always complained about being broke after Cyprus.”

“What do you expect? Can we continue?”

Situations differ. Yesterday one merry man undressed my left leg, sprinkled it with orange juice, put on my shoe and led me to dance on the stage. We danced, he jumped with me, but he did not buy a dance. God’s will is in everything!!!

My God bless me! Our Lady save and give us love, guardian angel keep us! Nicolas the Thaumaturge, help me in rising my business and in losing my weight!!! Amen!!!

My tutor stopped translating; it was early evening. “My head is swimming. I have got to stop for the day. I can take just so much of this retard. Your wife is nuts you know, not just a prostitute, but certifiably committable.”

“I’m disgusted.” I replied. “This is even worse than Mexico, unless she was just more honest about what she wrote when in Cyprus. What a liar, telling me she danced only in her panties, the men never touched her and she didn’t have sex in Cyprus. Men bought her for hours at a time and it sounds like she enjoyed it. All that hypocrisy—pretending she was a good girl. She’s nothing but a two timing, duplicitous slut!”

“Looks like you were just one in a long line of suckers. Why didn’t you listen to my friend and me—you dope?”

“I don’t know. I keep asking myself why I pursued this girl. What was it that made me keep after her despite all the warning signs?”

“You weren’t pursuing her, stupid—she was pursuing you. She’s the wolf—you’re the goat.”

“Okay, okay. When can we meet again to finish this?”

“Let’s see. How’s the day after tomorrow at the same time?”

“That’s fine.”

The following day I received a call from Angel at eight in the morning, four in the afternoon her time, which was strange since she knows I am usually asleep at that hour. Strange, unless she planned to go out for the evening with one of her beaus and wanted to head-off my calling her late at night to find her not at home by calling me instead. She could have saved herself the effort; I was so fed up with her after the latest part of her dairy that I didn’t much care. But as the fates would have it, later that day a model agency called for Angle requesting an interview. I thought it important for her to telephone the agency directly, so I called her at around midnight her time. Her mother answered and said Angel was a sleep. I explained it was important, but her mother refused to wake Angel up. I then called Angel on her mobile and got no answer. Hours later at seven in the morning her time I reached Angel who sounded extremely sleepy. She said she was jet lagged—party lagged was probably more correct. I was cool and didn’t reveal what I now knew about her and told her about the model agency.

Two days later, my tutor and I picked up where we left off.

KALO PASHA!  
(Happy Easter)

April 16, 1999

CHRIST HAS ARISEN!  
REALLY HE IS ARISEN!

My tutor laughed, "When she says 'arisen,'" I can imagine what she's thinking."

"Enough commentary."

"You're such a stiff. No pun intended," she laughed some more.

It was so wonderful! We girls went to Russian church, and for the first time I participated with a candle in my hand in religious procession, we followed the parson. All was so wonderful.

The only thing that we could not manage was to consecrate Easter communion - Kostas arrived and took us from church back to the club.

Later we went to TRAMPS, had a meal, talked and danced. I pitied that I did not go with Stephanos - he could take me in the night from church and we might go somewhere to make love. All girls have bitten off 12 times from 12 Easter cakes to make this year happy for us.

I learned from Sergey that he loves a girl, Liuda, who works as I do in a club, but his parents don't want him dating such a girl. They think she is a whore.

Before Easter Marios sold me to other customer (Anton). Stephanos wanted to take me that night, but the club did not tell him, that I was already taken by another customer. He thought that I decided to get rid of him, became angry and did not want even to speak with me or even see me. I burst into tears, but later, thanks to God, he apologized, saying that he was drunk. To tell the truth I want him.

I am awfully tired of masturbating these fuckers in the private dances.

On Tuesday I had 5 striptease dances.

One boy had to marry on Saturday, he came to us with his friends. We danced for all of them a table dance. Marios gave Julia a wedding dress and she danced for this boy a striptease on the stage. When this boy wanted to leave his friends did not let him.

One customer seized me by hand. With this customer there was sitting a girl in a kerchief. It turned out that she knows how to tell fortunes by looking at hands. At first the customer introduced himself as Mustafa, then as Akhmed. He wanted to buy me for three days. Then he talked to Marios and bought me for three days.

We were all together - Tatyana, her husband, Akhmed and I. In the first night in hotel Meridian he bothered me with sex. He followed me constantly speaking 'please, please.' I did not give it to him. Touching exasperates me, I am tired of it. After it he began to respect me, he said that I am not the same girl as all others. These three days I stayed with him in the hotel and we went to different cabarets, twice swam in swimming pools (in an outdoor and in an indoor).

And what is the most important, he invited me to go to Egypt. He offered to open for me all ways, it is possible to find job and entertainment everywhere, he asked me to marry him. He would divorce his a wife with whom he has 2 daughters and a son, for whom I helped to choose clothes. He offered me everything I might wish - house, career. He could even purchase for me humiliation of my boss and make Marios clean my footwear. I decided

that next week I will go to Egypt with him. Next week he will come for me, I might leave even the day after tomorrow, if visa comes through.

Tatyana is a remarkable person, she is from Rostov. She is only 22, former ballerina, clairvoyant, slim. And I am so fat--restaurants, croissants for lunch. I will bring down my weight.

Now I am waiting for doctor George to buy me for the night.

My God bless my leaving Cyprus for Egypt! I thank You and I ask for wisdom, forces, love and safeguarding!!!

April 25, 1999

It was a crazy week. Marios is going to leave us, he wants to manage his other club TRAMPS and let Jimis run ZYGOS.

We had no business for three days. I had only 1 drink.

I went with Stephanos, got drunk with tonic (40 percents of alcohol). I drank so hard for the first time in my life. It is abnormal. Then I barfed. Poor Stephanos ran after me offering a seat so it was more convenient to me. And it was too bad to me. Stephanos cared for me very much, but then he himself felt bad - his temperature rose.

Marios shouted because there was no business. He discharged Vika and Natasha. We wept, all hoped, that Marios will on Sunday leave for TRAMPS.

On Friday I for the first time had 8 privates and 12 drinks. I was wasted. Before that this one ass hole with a big shlong bought me and wanted me to make him oral sex, I persuaded him to give me 10 pounds in return. I nearly gagged.

Another customer had a house with a lift. He took me just before my day off, it happened very unexpectedly, 20 - 30 minutes prior to closing cabaret.

Yesterday I had 1 private and 10 drinks. Marios shouted at me for not switching up lights during my dances so the customer could see me better, though I did.

Me and Serge went to make love.

At 11:30 in the morning, I met with Pannikos. Prior to it Pannikos presented me a ring of white gold. I dreamed of it so much. He and I went to Aqua-park. There we went boating, swam. Then I for two hours was riding his Harley Davidson motorbike. We greeted everybody, having gone round for several times. We bathed in the sea (my eyes watered after salt water). I myself rode water motorcycle - maximum speed on water is 60 km/hour.

A security guard at the club sold to Eric information that I had sex with Serge. I started my tears for Eric who kept asking me why I did it. I told Marios about that security guard, he became very angry. I took from Eric all my money that he kept in his bank account. I was very much upset. Eric promised to gift me on Tuesday a video camera for my mum and now I will not get it. But Akhmed will come tomorrow.

Leandros paid me with shoes and the rest in dollars. Apartment in the center costs 12 000 dollars (one-room) or 15 000 dollars (two-room).

Yesterday I again rode "Albano" - this is my first horse. I rode very fast, all alone.

My God bless mum and me! Our Lady give us love! Guardian angel keep us!  
Nicolas the Thaumaturge and all saints, help us!!!

May 06, 1999

I have been thinking hard for all 3 weeks. I did not know whether it is good or not to go to Egypt. All discouraged me from this trip. I decided to go and packed my things. Akhmed came and took me. He promised me visa, but said that there emerged some problems.

Before it I went to a doctor and asked him to give me a medical report that I am sick so I could get day off. I told the doctor that I have pains in my abdomen. The doctor gave me some tablets. Then he wanted to make analyses for me, but he did not give me a medical report. My pulse was 80, 110/70- i.e. normal. Horror. Marios got angry because a customer could not buy me because I was getting tests done in the hospital.

“Interesting,” I said. “She apparently has this bag of schemes she uses over and over to fool people into getting what she wants.”

“What are you talking about?” My tutor asked.

“Her fake illness to get off from work. She used the same line about serious abdominal pains before she left for Krasnodar and Cyprus to make me feel sorry for her so that I wouldn’t try to keep her from reentering the country.”

“She’s a grifter. That’s how she gets by.”

“Some times I think you are on her side.”

“Hey, you’re the one who got yourself into this mess—not I. After all your time in Russia you should have learned that the girls stuck in that place are not the little miss innocents they pretend to be. American men idealize these Russian babes as passive and dutiful—they aren’t, they’re just better liars.”

“Hard to blame American guys given the storm-trooper-booted girls they find here.”

“Then let them deal with Russian girls who know exactly what they want from foreign men, which is to take guys for everything they’ve got, especially a ticket out of Russia. These pretty young girls make a living by hooking up with a foreigner, wrapping him around her finger, getting him to buy her expensive presents and dinners, and after he leaves, she repeats the same thing with another guy until she finds one dumb enough to take



her home with him. They have few notions about love. Remember when you were still in Russia, I told you to have fun and not get seriously involved.”

“I remember, I remember. Let’s continue with Dark Angel’s exploits.”

“Ouuuu, I like that name. How fitting.”

This night George took me. Prior to it I made a silly mistake - I asked Andreas to go to hotel “Meromania” and to take there from Akhmed a copy of visa for me. Akhmed got jealous over Andreas and lied that he couldn’t get visa. It was the turning point in my going to Egypt. Akhmed no longer wanted me.

I went with George to “Meridian” hotel. He gifted me a bracelet and ring made of three kinds of gold - white, yellow and red. He gifted as well an alarm clock and a silver frame for a photograph... All was good.

Marios shouted at me about trying to leave to Egypt with Akhmed and my going to the hospital to fake an illness. He told that I must all the next day stay at home and wait for him to decide what to do with me. All day I had been waiting for him, but he did not arrive. On that day I should have a day purchased by doctor George. In the evening Marios called me to office and told that on Sunday I would go back to Krasnodar.

I could not work. I was shocked. All the money I hoped to make gone. Stephanos came and bought me, and Marios told Stephanos that he has me until 7 o'clock in the morning when Kostas would take me back to the club.

Marios threatening to send me back to Krasnodar turned out to be a psychological trick (a lesson for me). I went to office and talked with Melios and Marios. I told them that I understood my mistake. They forgave me.

On May 2, 1999 Marios had his birthday. I signed a congratulatory card to Marios and apologized once again. We ate a pie bought by Kostas. We enjoyed a good time. Marios embraced me in the office and apologized for so much shouting at me. I took him by the hand, but this time he immediately made me leave the office. As boss he is very much pleasant to me. If he is in a good mood, I as well feel myself normally. But sex happens in different ways.

Now business does not go. Yesterday one son of a bitch ordered a dance, but did not pay, because I have not allowed him to kiss between my legs.

Akhmed does not call me up. My God, give me forces that Your slaves Andreas and George still want me!

Good luck! My God bless me! Our Lady save me! My guardian angel keep me! Nicolas the Thaumaturge, help me in my business, in lowering of my weight and in all my deeds!!! Amen!!!

May 16, 1999

There happened so many events in so little time. First, I seriously intend to decrease my weight, because I became as thick as a cow (chest - 37 inches, waist - 27, hips - 40, one thigh – 23, calf - 20.) Am I a strong person or am I not? Now I control what I eat and how

much I eat. I have a very strong will. I will stand it!!! For this week's term I must decrease volume of my hips to 39 inches. I can, I will stand it. I am strong. I control everything.

For this period of time there happened many things. Andreas arrived to ZYGOS, but I could not speak to him. I was busy with another customer.

One fine day Marios organized to drive us girls home after work. He waited, while we were changing our clothes. That day I was very tired, because I had 8 table dances. Marios began to preach that it was immoral for us to cheat him out of money by making our own business with the customers. He managed to irritate me.

The next day he again conducted a meeting. But his income did not improve so he decided to keep close watch on us and the customers. For one week we did not go anywhere with a customer unless Marios recorded the time spent with each customer. He watched the time we left the club and the time we returned.

Monika and Vera were discharged because they still made private business with customers. All of us wept very much in fear...

One fucker has not paid me for dances (I danced two dances). Another lied something about money. I have danced, and he did not pay, and Antonio, the security guard, stood silent and looked at all it, not even trying to help me. Amanda as well danced to the same customer 2 dances, and he as well did not pay. Soon Amanda was also discharged for cheating Marios.

Two other girls came to our cabaret from another cabaret, because their cabaret became bankrupt.

Sonya celebrated her birthday. It is good, that the girls helped her to cook everything, all passed easily.

At club Rikos began to joke, that when I give private dance to his good friend Eric, I allow his friend to put his fingers in me. I spoke with Rikos without tears, very boldly and refuted all he said. Rikos does not know, that we meet with Eric privately.

Once I and Stephanos made love near the sea under noise of wind and sea waves, and then I lay in the sun without clothes. It was so wonderful.

On Friday there was a party. Two persons from one telephone company, but from different countries were going to marry. On that day arrived people from Africa, America, Australia - in total about 20 persons. We danced there. We all put on T-shirts, I strutted and enjoyed a nice time.

Angelos (former customer of Regina) promised to present to Sonya and to me golden rings. Regina promised him very much, but made love with him only once, but received from him many gifts.

The girls are having a good time at the club. They have purchased themselves drinks, Marios was shocked.

Once we forgot Regina at home and left for work without her, after it she was stinking very long. And there was one more case, when she has fallen asleep in the girls room, sitting on the toilet—it was funny.

Now Marios has left for Krasnodar to see my model agent Anastasia Vasilyeva to arrange for more of her girls to work in ZYGOS and TRAMPS, I sent with him my package of money to hand over to my darling Alexei who will pick him up at the airport. Mum will be so happy when she receives the package.

On Sunday Monika and Vika came to us, I spent with them only 1 hour. Now I live with Olya and Sonya. We have more or less good relations.

It is interesting, when my menstruation will begin. Due to my nervous strain my menstruation has already delayed by 17 - 18 days.

And yesterday I made sexy photos in the club "Four Seasons".

My God, bless me to work. Give me forces and patience in all cases, and help me to grow thin. Amen!!

P.S. I rode with Andreas on his Harley Davidson motorbike with the speed of 150 km/hour. I was dressed in his jeans and jacket. And what a miracle is that bike. He is a good boy. My God bless me!!!

May 22, 1999

Time goes fast. Term of my contract ends in one month. I have to grow thin. And I will grow thin! Amen.

I worry very much because of delay with my menstruation. In one week there will be a month of delay. I drink tablets for regulation of menstruation cycle. My God, help me, make so that my menstruation begin!!! According to information received with magic pendulum and cards I am not pregnant (there are even no signs present). Oh, My God....

Yesterday I did not go with girls to walk in the center because one fucker bought me. How he manages to work in a bank, I wonder. I burst into tears when I could not go with the girls. On the other hand, the girls have overeaten. Regina celebrated the traditional day that everybody with her name celebrates in Russia. She brought pies. Well, I also have eaten these pies.

Today I and Pannikos went to a beach and on the way back his car could not start. Well, we pushed it a little and then I went home with him.

Yesterday I had 4 privates, 1 table dance and 12 drinks. And on Wednesday I had 7 privates and 2 drinks. On Thursday it was bad - only 1 private and 2 drinks. (Horror!)

Yesterday I and Stephanos were going to go to Larnaka but Stephanos did not come. So I went with Davie. He wants to gift me an icon (gilded with 24 carats gold) where image of Jesus Christ was drawn by Davie himself. Here I recollected a prediction by a fortuneteller - I was told that I will receive a thing - a gift, which would cause to me many problems in Cyprus and in Krasnodar. This gift is a thing. And yesterday I began to recollect this prediction. I think I will accept it and then sell it in a shop—he will never know. On our way back from Larnaka we rushed with the speed of 130 km/hour on motorbike. I shouted. It was terrible, going so fast was very risky. I did not feel my face.

Eric again promised, but did not arrive at the club.

My God, help me!!!

May 29, 1999

Time flies. When I was with one young customer I have nearly fallen out of room for privates when his member shot fast and furious. It was amusing, some of it hit my thigh.

Eric gifted me - at last! - a video camera, dream of my mum. She so dreamed of video camera. She will be so happy. On the same day I and Masha have gone to the church "St. Raphael", then we swam, ate, had a massage. Eric began to chase after Masha and even does not try to hide it. He bought to her a bathing suit for 39 pounds, bought to her and to

me slippers. He makes to her business twice more than to my, and gifts flowers to her but not me.

Stelios gave me 30 pounds, he put it inconspicuously in my bag. And yesterday I bought to me a dress for 23 pounds and pajamas for 44 pounds. At last, God be praised, there began my menstruation (I waited them for about one month).

I and Stephanos went to Georgio Beach, I wanted to swim so much, but I could not, as he wanted to make love to me. I was tired and as I was in my dress I went directly in the sea, in waves. I half-cried half-wept, and then burst into tears. Stephanos calmed me and gifted to me a towel and yellow flowers. He apologized, if he had offended me. All ended normally the way I wanted it.

By the way, one rich Arab with his friend took me and Masha, then we danced in disco, but in the hotel he saw that I have menstruation. He was offended, called up Marios and complained, rich scoundrel.

Bambos gave me a medicine - if I will take it, then I may lower my weight by 22 lbs. in one month's term. Now I weigh 170 lbs. My God bless me!!!

When Eric gifted to Masha a stuffed monkey, Masha had a conversation with a woman selling flowers. Masha wanted to tell this woman "The monkey looks at you" but the woman heard something like "The monkey looks like you" and refused to sell us flowers. We laughed.

Three days ago Nadya got dead drunk. All girls tried to bring her round. They took her to bathroom, made coffee for her. They worried and feared, that Marios would see her. Regina is a fine girl, she slapped Nadya across her face. Nadya came alert and soon she was again sitting with customers and drinking whiskey.

Bambos gave me a medicine for improving metabolism. My God, help me to achieve hips of 39 inches. Oh, God, let it be so!!!

June 06, 1999

On June 2 there were 3 years and 9 months since the day when I got acquainted with my darling Alexei. He has sent me such a letter.

I asked one Arab customer (he told me that he is rich) for 65 pounds for tape recorder after we went to hotel. He gave me 70 pounds and 5 pounds for a taxi. Let God give him all good!

As for Stelios, I did not give it to him, so he took back the 65 pounds he paid for me by credit card. Greedy son of a bitch! He feels offended and does not want to come to cabaret.

Nadya and Masha got dead drunk. They were wallowing on the floor in toilet. Marios has beaten them black and blue and then forgave them. They were in such condition. Regina was discharged for private business with customers and received 3 days of vacation. She wished me all best and warned me to be artful in my business.

Alexia came to cabaret at 10 in the evening. She wore glasses and a hood. Antonio called her to office and she left. She had such a look as if she was asking "What has actually happened to me?" She lost her salary for 2 days. She had gone with a group of Greek seamen without making them pay Marios for her.

I went with Eric to ride on horseback. I swam in the sea, water was very warm, a girl from Krasnodar made massage to me.

On Thursday came Stephanos, he had been sitting with me for half a night and ordered 2 table dances. It was so cheerful and wonderful! Then after making love in the hotel, I spent a whole hour waking him up, for him not to be late to work.

I have been keeping diet for already four days. Those medicines which Bambos gave me made me bend in convulsion, but then, thanks to God, all passed. I lost only 15 lbs of my weight.

Olga celebrated her birthday, I did not overeat for the first time. Olga wants to leave on Sunday, she is tired of Cyprus. And I still have 3 weeks.

Recently here came so many new girls - about 15 persons. They drank with us, for them it all is a novelty. But each takes a little bit of business - and the whole business goes downwards for me and other girls. May God help me (in my growing thin and in my business).

Lena has left. She is a good girl, she is approximately 34 years old. Another girl came at once to her place. Now in our flat live four girls.

I went to a dentist. All is well, except for my gingivitis. I rinse gums with preparation. I should be more careful with customers.

Stephanos says that he will miss me very much. He wants me to write to him letters. Pierre fell in love with me. Today we sat, talked and he presented me a post card and 20 pounds.

Sasha left two days ago - her husband took to himself her son. He wants to sue Sasha for divorce because he learned she works in Cyprus as a prostitute. She has two times more luggage than me. I went to shopping center and bought a skirt and a blouse.

I thought where to hide my money when I go back to Krasnodar. There are three variants - in luggage, in heels or inside me. To hide in heels, it is necessary to purchase proper shoes.

Doctor George shall arrive at the club today.

My God bless me! Our Lady, give us love! Guardian angel, keep us! Nicolas the Thaumaturge, help me in everything!!! Amen!!!

June 15, 1999

There are only two weeks left - and then I go home. Yesterday, on Monday, I had 4 privates and 5 drinks.

I went to dentist - 2 of my teeth ache. I cried so much - the pain was very strong, my gums were aching. Prior to it Eric paid to cure 3 teeth - it was very expensive. Curing of 1 tooth costs 30 pounds, curing of 3 teeth cost him 150 pounds. He presented to me a dress and as well presented a dress to Julia. He makes more gifts to Julia than to me, she belongs to the next generation of girls at the club, and he pays to her more attention than to me.

I and Christopher (he gifted to me a watch) went to Pathos and for the first time here we made love. It took him 1 minute to come inside me. Then we went to Andreas' restaurant to eat fish. I called up to doctor George but he does not want to talk with me. Why? I am very, very much disappointed for I will lose money. I will insist on conversation with him. Probably, someone has told him something very bad about me. I need to put some herbs in his food.

My tutor asked, "What kind of herbs?"

“Who knows? Probably the same that she put in my food before and after our wedding. I think it’s all part of her bag of black magic tricks.”

“Or drugs?”

“What do you mean?” I asked.

“Look, she lives in the Caucasus, which is a transshipment point for Asian opiates going to Europe and the U.S. Even I know that. So drugs are cheap and easy to come by in her hometown. She slips some to her Johns so that they keep coming back to her thinking it’s she who makes them feel good when it’s actually the drugs.”

“That’s it!” I shouted. “You’re a gem. I could kiss you!”

“Don’t you dare.”

“I couldn’t make the connection. I thought the so-called herbs she slipped me were part of her black magic, but no, they were drugs. That’s why guys fall for her—so simple and so effective. She’s lousy in bed and she has awful body odor. Not exactly the criteria for a geisha girl, which is what she emulates. In fact, one of the reasons I initially thought she wasn’t a prostitute was how bad she was at sex. But she wasn’t selling sex because no one would pay for it from her. She was secretly selling addiction to the narcotics she slipped in the food or drink of the customers she wanted money from. She’s a pusher, but she does it in such a way that the men think it is her that makes them feel ecstatic when it’s actually dope. She made herself the drug of choice for her customers without them knowing it. Ingenious, simply ingenious to transfer the nirvana of drugs to herself, which makes her, not the drug, the object of hunger in the man’s mind. That’s why I always felt bad after she left. It had nothing to do with love or any other psychological reason—she simply used drugs to addict me to her. That’s why I liked just hanging out with her because I was stoned

and didn't realize it. She slipped narcotics into my food and I identified the good feeling with her—amazing!”

“It's also why you brought her to America after learning about her slutting around and why you still haven't gotten her out of your life.”

“But cold turkey from whatever she was slipping me would last at most a week or two. So by the time I was back from Moscow, I was over the drugs.”

“You were physically over them. But drugs also cause long term psychological dependence, and you're not over that part yet.”

“Good grief, what a curse!”

“I'll say,” replied my tutor. “She's one vicious slut. How does she know whether someone is allergic to the dope she feeds them or what their tolerance level is?”

“She doesn't. You just translated about Stephanos who couldn't wake up to go to work after spending a night with her. She probably gave him too much. And Andreas who was having heart problems. You don't give opiates to a guy with a heart condition.”

“She could kill guys doing this.”

“I'll bet she has already, but doesn't give a damn. If she had overdosed me in Krasnodar, she would have started the tears flowing for the police, saying, ‘You know these Americans and their drugs. I tried to stop him but he wouldn't listen.’ Men are less to her than the kitten she once killed. She doesn't want their hearts—only their money.”

“She killed a kitten?”

““Yep, once Angel told me that when she was a teenager, a kitten kept rubbing against her legs, so she stamped her foot on the kitten's hindquarters crushing its back legs. Then she just watched in glee as the kitten crawled away screeching in pain to die. Funny,

my mother didn't like my cat rubbing against her legs either. Always thought mother had finally poisoned my cat."

"Your wife better hope I never see her, I'll ripe her face to shreds!"

I was fully certain my tutor could do just that. "It all makes sense. Most of the guys she writes about were regulars with prostitutes. They're not about to fall in love with one and take them back to their country or give them so many gifts as though they were chasing a regular girl. And they are not about to pay money for intercourse only to get a massage, assuming her diary isn't coded to hide many of her tricks."

"You did."

"But I didn't know she was a prostitute and didn't meet her in a strip club. In the beginning, I thought her a model and dancer, which was probably when she started feeding me drugs. No these guys were too worldly to fall for a pros, but they would have gone after her licking their lips for another fix of Dark Angel's magical brew—dope."

"But why doesn't she write about it in her diary?"

"The possession or use of narcotics in Russia can put you away for a long time. You know that. A friend of one of my translators over there is serving two years for possessing a joint. Would you want to spend two years in a Russian jail?"

"No thank you!"

"Right! And the only time she ever mentions secretly feeding me something was before our wedding and then she referred to it as 'salts and sugars'. When I confronted her, she steadfastly refused to say what the salts and sugars were. Dope is a punishable crime everywhere, prostitution nowhere."



“Dark Angel is too nice a name for her,” my tutor added. I can’t think of a word low enough. What a combination: whore and pusher, but the usual pusher is generally honorable enough to tell his customers what they are getting.”

“I never believed girls like her existed except in the movies. Let’s finish the translation up.”

I have gone to gym. My weight is now 169 lbs. After running and exercises – 164 lbs. There is a lot of water in my body. I must leave with hips of 39 inches. I must! My God, bless me and give us wisdom, forces and patience!!!

June 23, 1999

On Friday, at 6:06pm I called up Stephanos. I told him that I shall go with another customer who bought me to Ayanapa. Stephanos felt offended, has wished me Godspeed and I switched off telephone. I wept so much.

“What’s Ayanapa?” My tutor asked.

“It’s a seaside resort on the south shore of Cyprus where the young, people your age, go for fun and sun.”

“I’ll keep that in mind if I ever travel to Cyprus.”

On Saturday I made a record - 10 privates, including 5 to one remarkable grandpa, and as well 2 table and 12 drinks. In total it made 500 pounds. Stephany took me and we went to Larnaka. I had to leave early because I had to see grandpa from whom I earned 60 pounds for 30 minutes of masturbation. Then grandpa and I ate in restaurant and I sold him for 10 pounds copies of 2 photographs that Leo took in Moscow of me naked.

“Who’s Leo?” My tutor asked.

“He’s the guy who runs the modeling agency in Moscow that Angel worked for.”

“You mean her Moscow pimp.”

On Sunday I worked without much effort - 5 privates, 4 tables and 8 drinks. Three customers wanted to buy me - that son of a bitch Stelios, a fat man and Davie. I preferred to leave with Davie. We went to hotel. I came back by motorbike. It was marvelous!

In Monday morning I went to pose. For 2 days I earned 15 pounds (in total I posed naked for approximately 3 hours).

Later on Monday I and Stephany went to ZYGOS and there I explained to the new girls the best approaches to work (everyone listened to me so attentively). Now Freedom, my contract with Marios and Melios is finished and I hope to go home Sunday. Then me and Stephany we went to beach and swam. After it we went to hotel. (That day the son of a bitch Stelios told my ma that he bought sex from me. He thought mum did not know.)

“So,” I said, “we finally know what we suspected about Dark Angel’s mother.”

“Speak for yourself. I knew all along her mother was an old whore who taught her daughter the ropes. She probably started pimping Angel out when she was a teenager or younger.”

“You really think so? I never even thought about that.”

“An easy way to make money.”

On Tuesday I and Stephany went to amusement park. It was so wonderful to be in weightlessness ride. And I did not fear at all in the horror room, only in the very end we were sprayed with water. We drove small cars. Then I for the first time came to the restaurant “Perfect”. Stephany was telling me his love stories.

Today Kostas promised to take me to Pathos but he did not come. I participated in advertising of exercise training device - they photographed me in clothes and naked, I was paid 50 pounds.

Now there is a problem because there are no tickets to a plane to Krasnodar for Sunday. Maybe I will have to go via Moscow, sit there for a day in the airport, and then fly to Krasnodar. My God, help me to avoid it! Make it so that there appeared one place in the aircraft for me! I beg you!

My God, bless me and help me...

June 27, 1999

Now I am sitting in the plane. Each day I thought about the ticket. I got it all by myself. Marios didn’t help. On Friday one Arab helped me. I went along Anarsthasezia Street. The Arab stopped near me and I went to him. We had a meal, then he begun to accost to me. “You son of a bitch!” - shouted I to him. And he said that I was mistaken and that he was not like all the others. He presented to me a skirt and two T-shirts. I am very grateful to him. He helped me very much and I have saved a lot of money.

Stephany and me again went to amusement park. We twice rode on the upside down attraction. Oh, Stephany, Stepanit. Then I drove a car. On Friday in the evening we went for a walk. In pub I drank cocktail and excited myself. He as well tried the cocktail, became excited, and tried to dispose himself to making love but unsuccessfully. Then we went to Greek disco.

On Saturday I have persuaded Stephany and we went to Ayanapa. We stayed in “Swim Park World” for 1.5 hours. He laughed looking how I was sliding down in water

from a 2-stage slide, how I clumsily tried to walk on rocks. I received so many impressions. Then we went to ZYGOS. We sat at a little table. Instead of DJ there was Marios. It was very stuffy. All girls were dancing together on the stage; it was awful. I said goodbye to everybody. I thought that someone has taken my 500 pounds, but then, after a talk to the girls, I understood that I myself had put aside 500 pounds from the 1800 pounds I would bring back myself to home. It was very shameful to me that Stephany and I had to open Lolita's bag and to look what was in it. My God, forgive me, Your sinful slave. Stephany fell asleep. I wanted to make photos of the disco, but he did not give me his camera, because he was already half sleeping. All this time we each day slept in the hotel.

On Thursday Stephany overslept and was late to his work. In spite of the fact that sometimes he did what I did not like, he is very - very much pleasant to me. I like his odor, course of his thoughts.

On Thursday I went for the last time with Eric to ride Albano. My legs ache for already three days. There was so beautiful there.

I wheedled from Eric 50 pounds and spent them. And today I have also wheedled 25 pounds from him for massage. I am very, very much grateful to him for all he did for me. God give him all the best.

Today in morning we gathered with the girls, we sat, talked and had a drink. Forgive me, girls, for my badly thinking about you. Let God give you good business.

We arrived at airport at approximately 11:50am. We went and bought the ticket. One woman was flying with her daughter. With their help I managed not to pay for extra luggage - I gave them 2 of my bags when they weighed baggage. All happened so quickly. It turned out that our aircraft was taking off at 1:10pm (local time). I had time for only 1 kiss to Stephany. I thank him for everything. Cyprus, Limassol, I thank them with all my heart for everything!!!

My God, bless me! The aircraft began to take off. 1:57pm, June 27, 1999.

June 30, 1999

Thanks to God, I has arrived home in Krasnodar! But I suffered so much with my bags! It was good that I was together with that girl. I had with me 1 package with the tape recorder and video camera, my "Fa" bag, 1 bag of money to Elvira from Marios, and my small bag. And in all I had 2 major bags, 2 green bags "Fa", 1 black bag, 1 package and I had to carry it all alone. Oh, Russians, Russians. They never try to help, they only care about themselves.

I wanted to come back so much. It was raining when I arrived. Thanks to God, customs had no questions to me. They asked whether I carried something valuable. I answered "I have no gold" (though I had golden rings on fingers, money and electronic goods). Mum met me with balloons. It was so difficult living in Krasnodar after Cyprus. Everywhere there is much dirt, and there is no sun in the sky.

My darling Alexei, after Stephany, I could not kiss him. It was difficult to me to stand Alexei's touches. I miss Stephany so much. I miss his laughter, his kisses.

We have celebrated my homing. We made a pie. I was glad to have some melon and to see Alexei's mother.

On Monday I and Alexei went somewhere (I do not remember where exactly).

Yesterday I called up Stephany. I was so glad to hear Stephany's voice. "Its very hot here. Angelina, I have lost 2 lbs!" Stepanit, my dear boy. We talked about my arriving home, about my missing him. Then I went to Alexei and talked to him.

I called up to Moscow. Leo invited me to arrive about July 15 for customers. There will be a festival with participation of Hollywood stars.

My tutor asked, "Is that when you met her at the party in your apartment building?"

"A week later."

"Lucky you."

"All right, let's get the rest of this over with."

July 17, 1999

There happened so many events. I began clearing my intestine in the medical center. I began keeping diet, ate raw fruits and vegetables, and my intestine has inflamed and I had Venus disease. My temperature lifted up to 101.7 F. When my illness ended, my weight was only 161 lbs (in comparison to 172 lbs earlier).

"That means V.D. Roy!" My tutor emphasized.

"Give me a break. I'm getting myself tested tomorrow."

On Thursday I had some purgative tea. On Friday my temperature again rose up to 100 degrees. On Saturday we went with my darling to disco "Joy". We ate ice-cream, drank cocktails. We made love, it was painful to me. In the morning we ate sausages, then we went to choose a gift for me.

On Wednesday I felt gynecological pain. Then we decided to go to the Black Sea. I felt sick, there were shooting pains everywhere in my abdomen. I was sad. We swam in the sea. Water in the sea was warm. I have bought chocolate. We went to discos, it was so wonderful.

The pains did not cease. When we were going to go to bed, I could not fall asleep, pains became intolerable. We went to look for the first aid. At last we have found it. Medical attendant made me an injection (he turned out to be a good fellow). My darling paid to him something, I do not know how much, but he did it on his own will. We continued our trip. I was falling asleep. My darling as well began to fall asleep. We stopped to sleep near the post of the road police for safety. Here I again woke up because of cutting pain. My darling, it was so difficult for him to stand all this. He did not have slept his full, I was crying. He ran to find out, where there was hospital. We came to the hospital and found there two silly woman sitting and saying: 'We cannot make anesthetizing, first you must make analyses and then we shall talk'. And they said it after I had been bending from pain for already 50 minutes! Only when my darling put some money under her journal she reluctantly made to me a pain killing injection. I did not know that he had given them money.

Thus suffering we came home. On the way home my darling banged against a pole when we drove from the hospital. In the morning we called up to First Aid. I was completely examined. There was detected gynecological infection. I was laying under IV, they made to me analysis of urine. I had to go to hospital. I wept so much. They did to me a gastroscopic and gynecological examination. Then there began spasms and began girdling pain. I am very grateful to my mum, she helped me very much. Alexei, my darling boy, as well helped me, I am as well grateful to him for everything - for water he brought me, for everything.

Thanks to God, I was out of the hospital already on Tuesday (diagnosis: inflammation of the gall bladder, inflammation of stomach, duodenum and gynecology disease). Diet: it is prohibited to eat anything fat, fried, I have to eat 6 times a day, each time eating very little + to take medicines including penicillin.

“Well,” my tutor said, “she clearly had some diseases.”

“I’m sure she did, working as a prostitute, but that doesn’t mean she didn’t fabricate a repeat of her symptoms in trying to make me feel sorry for her so that I’d do what she wanted.”

Today I have arrived to Moscow and recalled with Mark my work in Cyprus, my dances. In the end of all these conversations I spent 500 roubles and bought him some food. I have spent 500 roubles, and managed to buy so little! Leo knows everything about my Cyprus work and has work for me here. It is nice in the apartment where Leo placed me (there is a teapot, a radio, a small TV set, black leather sofa.)

My God, bless me, bless me! And give us wisdom, forces and patience! Our Lady save us and give us love! Guardian angel, keep us and save us! Nicolas the Thaumaturge, help us in everything!

At this point, I wearily said, “You can stop there. I had the rest of the diary translated in Moscow.” Then quipped, “Well, maybe she has changed since Cyprus. What do you think?”

“You idiot!” my tutor succinctly and loudly replied. “She’s a whore, a pusher and always will be. That’s how she makes her money. Do you understand?”

“Yes my tender-hearted Russian girl, I was only joking.”

“Good. If I didn’t care about you, who would? I’m just telling you the truth, which I think you see by now. She’s the worst type of Russian girl you could find.”

“And I had to marry her! What a dope.”

“Are you still going to Krasnodar to try to get the rest of her diary?”

“Well it will bring me up-to-date on her activities. Cyprus occurred before I met her and....”

“What’s with you? Why do you keep looking for a way to believe that she is as pretty inside as out?”

“Okay, okay, I’ll admit the marriage is doomed, but I just want to see what she was thinking and doing after she begged for a last chance and promised to change. That’s the issue—what was in her mind for the last four months. This way I will be sure.”

“I don’t think you’ll be sure until she puts a knife in your back or enough drugs to kill you.”

“She does have a violent temper, but I can handle the risk, including the drugs with which I have had some moderate experience.”

“You’re nuts! And I’m sure your druggie days were more than moderate given what I’ve heard about you hippies and antiwar radicals.”

“You had to be there,” I replied.

“What if you don’t get the rest of the dairy?”

“Oh, I will get it. I maybe a moron when it comes to romance, but squeezing information out people I can do.”

“Let me know what happens and good luck.”

“Thanks,” I said as I left for on another painful subway ride home. I swore I would never fall for romance again, I would never do a good deed again and when I wanted sex, I would buy me a prostitute. After all, that’s what I unknowing did with Dark Angel.

## Remember Then

At my apartment, the mail brought a card from Krasnodar dated September 11, six-months to the day after my marriage to Dark Angel: “Always with you belief, hope, love unforgettable, your Angel.” How many guys did she use that line on?

I immediately took down the many photographs of Dark Angel that haunted every room. When she first spread her smiling pictures throughout, I thought them for my benefit—what a fool. No, she arranged them for herself as shrines to her artfulness in using people to gain her ends. Well, her using me was over. I also scrapped off of the mirrors, appliances and cabinets the stickers of Walt Disney’s Lady and the Tramp that she plastered everywhere. I knew who was the tramp in our relationship. At my doctor’s, I told him the story about Dark Angel and he tested me for every commonly occurring venereal disease. The tests turned out negative, and I considered myself lucky.

A week before my flight to Russia to surprise Dark Angel when she and her mother returned from Cyprus, she called sobbing, “Roy, I have just got some very bad news.”

“What is it?” I said upset by the sounds of her crying.

“Remember I told you about the time I was hospitalized after Cyprus?” she lucidly said without having to catch her breath.

“Yes, but you didn’t really explain the problem, only something about your stomach.” Always the trickster, she never mentioned to me that her hospitalization involved a venereal disease, and I wasn’t going to give away what I just learned from her diary.

“I just came from a sonogram,” sobbing again and trying to catch her breath this time, “and, and...and they say...they say... I have a growth on my gall bladder...and growths like this...like this are often incurable.” More sobbing. The dread of cancer seized

my mind, but between her sobbing and imperfect English, I wanted to make sure I understood the situation.

“Relax Angel, relax,” I said and she calmed down rather too quickly I thought. “Tell me again what they said.”

“They said that there is a middle size tumor growing on my gall bladder. If it keeps growing, they cannot do anything for me and....” She went back to the sobbing.

“Easy, easy, what else?”

“It may mean that I don’t have much longer,” she began to whimper and whine.

I was hoping she didn’t start sobbing again because then I would never get the facts. “Take it easy Angel. Breathe a little. Who told you this? Was he a specialist?” Doctors everywhere make mistakes and probably more so in Russia with its antiquated equipment and out dated techniques.

“It was the man who ran the machine that took the sonogram.”

“Is he a doctor?”

“No, he is a technician.”

“Did you see a doctor with the sonogram?”

“I showed it to my eye doctor, and he agreed with the technician that it could be the type of growth they cannot stop!” Her sobbing immediately started again, right on cue. At that point, I began to suspect she was trying to use sympathy to manipulate me into not trying to bar her from reentering the U.S. Her feint meant to raise the specter of a dire illness that only American medical care had a chance of curing and that without it, she might die. Nice try, but I didn’t have the power to keep her out of the country anyway, so the whole apparent ruse was meaningless although she didn’t know that.



“Did you tell your mother?”

Silence.

“Did you tell your mother?”

“No, I didn’t want to upset her before our trip.” How convenient, I thought, and any remnants of the sympathy her crying initially caused vanished.

“Let me get this straight.” I said. “Some technician says that you may be about to die because of an apparent growth on your gall bladder. Then you go to your eye doctor with the sonogram for his analysis and he agrees. Why didn’t you go to a specialist?”

“Because I don’t have time before my trip to Cyprus.”

“So do it in Cyprus. That way you won’t ruin your trip worrying about a problem you may not have.”

“The doctors are expensive in Cyprus, and I don’t want to waste the time.”

“Then make an appointment with a Krasnodar doctor when you return.”

“I wouldn’t have the time then.”

“Okay, I will make an appointment with your doctor here for when you return.” I knew she wanted to here that because to her it meant I wouldn’t interfere with her returning to America. Since none of this affected my plan to surprise her and get the rest of her diary, I didn’t care. Actually, her belief that I fell for her latest scam would put her even more off guard for when I confront her at the Krasnodar airport.

“Okay,” she said. “That is a good idea. The medicine in America is better than in Russia. Do you miss me my husband,” she cooed.

She really has nerve. “Naturally, darling. I don’t think you will need to worry about this growth once you see a specialist here in America.” I said playing along with her latest con.

“I hope you are right. Call me in Cyprus.”

“For sure, have a safe trip.”

As I hung up, I recalled a scene from the Star Trek Movie: *The Search for Spock* in which Captain Kirk, while fighting a Klingon on a disintegrating planet, tries to keep the Klingon from falling to his death, “Give me your hand,” Kirk says. But in the face of such compassion, the Klingon sees only an opportunity to take advantage and grabs Kirk’s ankle trying to pull him over the cliff into the flow of hot lava below boiling up from the planet’s interior. Fed up, Kirk kicks the Klingon repeatedly in the face saying, “I have had enough of you!” The Klingon falls to his fiery death.

From the time I brought Angel to America, until she left for Krasnodar and Cyprus, I tried to salvage our marriage, to help her pursue the dreams she talked about and to believe her words despite her actions. I took her wherever she wanted to go—plays, tourist attractions and, of course, Brighton Beach. I searched for a seed of honesty in her, a sign of change and sincerity, but all I found were the honey dripping words of deceit. I kept telling her over and over that her honesty was crucial to our relationship, but she just couldn’t speak the truth about anything. She couldn’t give up her Klingon ways of always trying to take advantage of people who offer a helping hand.

I took a walk up Fifth Avenue looking for some peace and understanding—how did my life degenerate into the stupidity of this marriage. Here I was, a middle-aged man who belonged to two of the four national academic honor societies, one for law and one for

business. I worked in politics, labor, media, government and a Wall Street law firm but had no career. My MBA in finance with honors from Columbia University's Business School couldn't even help me find a finance job in a fourth world country like Russia. All I found was working for some incompetent lesbian at a badly run, over hyped gumshoe agency in Moscow. In a matter of days, I would board a plane to Moscow, stay with my two nineteen-year old translators because I couldn't afford a hotel, then fly to Krasnodar to surprise my wife when she returned from a place she used to work as a prostitute so as to psychologically pressure her into turning over the parts of her diary I didn't have because I wanted to know with how many other guys she committed adultery during the past four months of our marriage—amazing. Never in my darkest nightmare did I imagine such a situation. Out of all the whores in the world, I had to marry a Russian prostitute.

In the fifties as a kid, I sometimes awoke in the middle of the night to the noise of jet engines and wondered whether Russian rockets were coming to end my short life. It now seemed a Russian prostitute was doing what the Soviet ICBMs didn't. What the hell happened? How did I end up here?

I left Wall Street in 1989 to take care of my two ailing parents—two people I didn't even like, a couple of Nazis. My father was in a nursing home but mother could still handle some of her own matters, except paying bills, taxes and maintaining her house, which fell to me. Cravath tried to talk me into staying at the firm, but I was such a wreck from four years of handling the parents' affairs and the long hours as a lawyer that I didn't know where my self-interest lay. I thought all I needed was six months to place my parents' affairs in order, find someone to handle the chores I did and then back to a career of some kind. Wishful thinking, a stroke incapacitated my mother, and I ended up hiring nurses around the clock to

keep her in her house because she abhorred nursing homes. Why did I do this for such a selfish, cold-hearted person? Was another female using sympathy to play me for a sucker? Mother never cared about anyone except herself.

While managing what turned into a one-person nursing home, I heard about the twenty-fifth annual reunion for my high school class. Like an idiot, I went. Included among my former classmates whom I had not seen since graduation was Leslie. When we were seniors, Leslie was the cheerleader captain, very popular, smart, blonde, blue-eye and large breasts. Back then we knew each other, sometimes ended up at the same parties but nothing more. I still vividly remember the senior class trip when the two of us talked for a short time in the bus. During that conversation, an intense premonition swept over me, warning me to stay away from Leslie because something bad would come through her, although I couldn't imagine what. I heeded the omen that summer, and with the help of life, we never met again until 1991 at the reunion.

It turned out that Leslie and I both lived in New York City. My premonition from 25 years ago laid buried deep in my unconscious, so I saw no reason not to hang out with her, socially—not romantically. Leslie's age and feminazi beliefs didn't make her attractive as a girlfriend. She invited me to a friend's barbecue in Westchester County. There I met a professor from Hofstra University who recently returned from an academic trip to Russia during the failed coup attempt in August 1991, which eventually brought down the Soviet Union. The changes in Russia sounded exciting, and I mistakenly believed the Russians wanted a democratic state ruled by law rather than the self-interested decisions of the powerful. To my comic-book thinking and idiot idealism, that meant a lawyer like me could have an impact. I know better now. The Russians only wanted money so that they could

push around other Russians and feel superior. They didn't give a dam about, nor understand the concept of individual rights and the need for laws to protect those rights. Everyone in the former Soviet Union was out for himself or herself, no matter whom they hurt so long as it wasn't them or someone on whom they depended. The Hofstra professor invited me to a conference for November in Moscow where began my inexorable descent into the failed lunatic world I now inhabited.

My walk on Fifth Avenue took me passed St. Patrick's Cathedral. I thought about going in, but I didn't believe in God, the Father or any of that. The quiet inside, however, might allow me to think more clearly, give me some perspective and understanding of the right way to move during one of the worst emotional situations I ever found myself in. I crossed the busy avenue, climbed the steps and entered a world of apparent peace. I choose a pew midway down the aisle on the left, sat back with my arms stretched out along the top of the wooden bench—not exactly humble, but then again I wasn't a believer, just an interloper.

I didn't think but just took in the beauty and feeling, not understanding the ancient knowledge that the architecture, stained glass windows and statutes represented. Perhaps those symbols communicated to the Jungian archetypes in my unconscious that genes carried from generation to generation down through the millenniums. Such places might carry the wisdom of the ages because men intended that of them. Perhaps they weren't houses of some omnipotent spirit that ruled the universe, but rather the bearers of the best in the spirit of man, as that spirit struggled through countless lives searching, finding and then losing again reasons for the trials of life and how to deal with them. I didn't find a reason for the plague of the Dark Angel on my life, but to my real surprise, I sensed a current of

whispers from men destroyed by the treachery of women over the span of our species' existence stretching forward into the future. I was just one of many, past, present and future. That brought me some comfort. It also made me feel detached from the consuming horror of her influence, as though reading a novel about someone else and at ease over the uncertainty of whether my actions were right and how it would all end. I understood to just move forward and see what my trip turned up.

I left St. Pat's believing I had learned an important lesson—if you need help, go to a church and ask for it; a spiritual realm apparently exists.

#### Diary

September 21, 2000, I arrived at Kennedy airport for my flight to Moscow, the first leg of my trip to Krasnodar. I telephoned Dark Angel's hotel room in Cyprus because I wanted to head off her calling me at home and finding me not there. There was an outside chance she suspected I would show up in Krasnodar or Cyprus to spy on her, so I wanted to allay those suspicions by creating the illusion that I was still at home in New York. At 11 PM Cyprus time, she wasn't in her hotel room, which didn't surprise me, probably out with an old customer. So I left a message telling her I'd try tomorrow and boarded my flight to the land of barbarism.

I flew the Russian Aeroflot airline, as I usually did, because it cost less, provided better service and most Americans believed the carrier unsafe, so fewer flew it, which meant more room to sleep during the nine-hour flight. The airline's flights from New York City are probably as safe as Delta's because it uses western made planes and Delta's maintenance crews. The downside, however, meant that Russians comprised most of the passengers with more than a few unfamiliar with modern day toilets—especially the procedures for using

them on airplanes. I always planned to use the commode in the early part of the flight before too many of the passengers who failed toilet training turned it into the typical foul experience of most Russian toilets. Towns with dirt streets in the Amazon maintained cleaner restrooms than those in Moscow while outside of Moscow, modern day plumbing consisted of a hole without anything on which to sit. I assumed something in the Russian genes enabled them to squat down without losing their balance or soiling their cloths when using these medieval toilets.

On the plane, I hoped no one would sit next to me, or if someone did, then a Russian who didn't speak English because I didn't feel like talking. Naturally, an American, from what I could see, the only other one on the flight, sat beside me. In his mid-forties and with a smile on his face, I knew exactly why he was flying to Moscow—to meet a young Russian girl. I was half wrong; Dennis had already met the girl, in her early twenties, traveled to visit her and her family a few times, and now, feeling young once more and full of renewed hope or illusion, headed to Moscow for his wedding. I didn't miss the irony.

Like most guys in his situation, Dennis first married an American girl back in his youth, but over the past fifteen years or so, his wife bought into more and more of the Feminist special interest group's propaganda that made living with her unpleasant. Dennis and his feminized wife had owned a suburban house, so he, as all men of the house always did, maintained the yard, raked the lawn, shoveled snow and made various repairs around the home, including perching precariously a top a ladder to clean the gutters or repair the sliding. But that wasn't good enough for the Feminazis who demanded he also help with the cooking and cleaning—the wife's traditionally tasks.

As we talked, we agreed, as did virtually most middle-aged American men, that feminism was merely a scam to make men's lives harder by adding to their duties some of the obligations traditionally handled by women. Feminazis always complained about the "glass ceiling" that allegedly kept them from the highest paying and most prestigious jobs. But neither of us ever heard them complain about the "tombstone basement" where men make up ninety percent of the workers in the most dangerous and health damaging jobs. When a boy is born in America, he has a 90% chance of ending up in such a job as compared to a girl who only has a 10% chance. Girls don't have to worry about taking such risky jobs in order to survive or support a family. They need not face dying younger and at higher rates from the ten top killers in our society. The Feminazis, like all self-centered little girls throughout history, want men to give them the best that society has to offer while protecting them from the worse. They don't want equality but preferential treatment. Dennis, like so many American men fed up with dealing with the new American feminist princesses, turned to the Internet one day where he found his possible dream girl, or at least, a young, pretty and feminine one. Off he went to Russia, and after a couple of visits decided to divorce the feminism that had intruded into his life over the years.

Not wanting to trample Dennis's pearls in the dirt, but feeling obligated to at least put him on notice that in Russia evil not only bangs on one's front door with loudmouthed, hypocritical accusations trying to intimidate but also slithers in the back door on a smile of duplicity, I told him my tale of horror. However, I didn't push my belief that although Dark Angel probably represented the worst of Russian girls, all of the young pretty ones in that country exhibit an uncanny proficiency at manipulating western men with lies. He politely listened to my story, but I could see his fiancée's spell of "sugar and spice and everything



nice” clouded his caution, or possibly pessimism warped my perception. Regardless, he invited me to his wedding that Saturday because he would feel more comfortable with at least one other American there. I accepted. Why not, I will see what a real wedding in Russia looks like.

Our flight arrived Friday morning; my driver took me to my teenage translators’ apartment where they put me in Anya’s room for my stay. From there I called Dark Angel in Cyprus to make her think I was still in America.

“Roy, where have you been? I called the apartment three times and no answer,” Rats! Dark Angel sounded suspicious. My scheme of calling her everyday as I made my way to Krasnodar in order to activate her genetic cheapness and deter her from spending the money to call me had failed. Then I realized the fatal flaw in my scheme. She probably used the telephone of one of her old customers—an additional perk for providing sex. That’s what she did when calling her old boy friend Alexei from Rikos’ car back in 1999. Knowing her, she probably used Rikos’ car phone for her calls to New York as well. Dark Angel’s calls also indicated she feared me spying on her in Cyprus, interesting.

Buying time to concoct an explanation, I went on the attack, “I called you late last night, but you weren’t in your hotel room? Didn’t you get the message, or did you stay somewhere else last night?”

“Me and Mum went to a show and then a club.”

Still grasping for a cover, I asked, “Did you take her to the place you worked?”

“Yes, she wanted to see it very much. She approved.”

“I’m sure she did,” trying not to sound too sarcastic while thinking it probably looked very classy to an old Russian whore like her mother.

“Where were you when I called?” By now I came up with a plausible lie—two could play this game.

“I’m at Maiya’s for the weekend down at the Jersey shore. I’ll be back in New York Monday night. Here’s her number.” The perfect story, if Dark Angel telephones, Maiya will tell her I’m out on the boat or something. By Monday, when I’m suppose to return to my apartment, Dark Angel will fly into Krasnodar where I will be waiting to spring my trap.

We exchanged other lying pleasantries, and as soon as I got off the phone with Dark Angel, I called Maiya to clue her in on covering for me.

Saturday, I met Dennis for his civil ceremony at the Wedding Palace, which looked more like a commercial storefront than the fairy tale images the name conjures up. Few Russians married in church, even though after the fall of communism everyone got religion: politicians, racketeers, gangsters and prostitutes. The clergy charged Russians too much for their marriage services, and if an American walked in the rectory, visions of expensive wines would drive them to add exorbitant greed to the list of “thou shalt” commandments. The clergy’s greed, however, does result in very elegant weddings. I accidentally caught one in an old church in Rostov on Don. The couple and a small number of well-wishers stood in the nave beneath a high vaulted ceiling while three older ladies sang in perfect harmony without instruments as incense wafted across the shafts of light from stained glass windows.

Dennis’ bride, Olga, lived in Siberia and brought to the wedding both her parents, which surprised me because the dysfunctional nature of most Russian families often resulted in a single parent household. A few of the bride’s friends also showed, including a hot looking college coed with whom I flirted a little, but restrained myself from stumbling down

that path again. By this point in my Russian travails, I immediately saw through the phony smiles of innocence to the real duplicitous nature of pretty, young Russian girls with shark-hungry appetite for material goods, money and escape from the motherland. These felines knew western men were suckers who easily fell for the illusion of their sexy packaging while most Russian guys didn't. I now understood why Russian men behaved so standoffish toward their female comrades: the guys knew in their genes the viciousness the feminine mask disguised. Russian men from their early twenties to sixties knew how to deal with the young ladies of their country—trade material goods for sex and never, never, never involve their hearts. Olga's uncle knew the game. In his mid-sixties, former diplomat, meaning K.G.B. and now F.S.B., he spent his leisure time buying pretty, young coeds with material goods.

Russians and a few westerners periodically hired a few coeds for Banya orgies. The guys and girls would sit around in towels, talk, eat, drink, use the steam bath and periodically go off into a room for sex with a different partner, usually without protection. The revelry usually lasted until the early hours of the morning. None of the participants needed to worry about AIDS because in Russia the government made up figures that showed the disease was not a wide spread health risk. In truth, the incidence of AIDS in Russia is closer to Africa than in the Vatican.

After the wedding ceremony, we drank Russian Champagne, which is much better than French, while standing on the sidewalk in front of the Wedding Palace listening to a boom box. Following tradition, the wedding party decorated the married couple's car with white ribbons, bows and two large wedding rings about a foot in diameter interlocked together on the car's roof. The rest of us piled into Russian built autos, which always

reminded me of the “Match Box” cars I collected as a child. Off we drove for the customary visit to Red Square and then to the Moscow State University heights that overlooked the entire city. Newly weds in tuxes and gowns usually outnumbered tourists at these two sites during the weekends from June to September. Next was the reception at a restaurant on Old Arbat Street, which no longer functions as a street but a pedestrian walkway where Russians stroll among artists selling paintings and entertainers performing along its expanse of souvenir shops, cafes, theaters and a McDonald’s.

About ten people attended the reception, including a professional hired especially for the occasion who kept everyone entertained by making toasts, telling jokes and organizing little games. Russians are big on toasts, probably because it keeps their lying abilities sharp. Tradition called for everyone at the reception to make a toast. I said, “May the couples dreams come true. Hoping that they each dream for the same thing,” which got a few laughs. After a couple of hours of fun, I said my goodbyes, wished Dennis and his bride luck and kissed the hot young coed on the cheek promising to call her, which I knew I never would. Caught the Metro and dejectedly went back to my translators’ apartment sadly recollecting my wedding day that contrasted so sharply with Dennis’ and wondered why I always stood alone on the outside looking in on these apparently happy events of life.

Sunday evening I flew into Krasnodar, haggled with a taxi driver—Russians always try to cheat Americans—and checked into the Moscow Hotel: the same place I stayed on my first visit to Krasnodar for the Eve of the New Millennium—an eternity ago. I contacted the translator I had arranged for, Natalya, and scheduled her and a driver to take me to the airport the following day to surprise Dark Angel and Inessa when they arrived from Cyprus. I wanted to take a private car rather than a taxi in case Dark Angel tried to use as an excuse

for not handing over her diary that she left it at home, something I doubted. Since I wasn't about to search through her luggage on the sidewalk, a car would allow me to take the two of them back to her apartment while my translator listened for any scheming in Russian to keep me from the diary. I wasn't going to let these two lowlives out of my sight, so they could deep-six the diary.

Monday evening, Natalya, the driver and I set ourselves up at the airport. The Krasnodar airport consisted of one small terminal that looked like it belonged in the 1930s. Disembarking passengers walked from the tarmac into a short enclosed hallway then out one set of double doors onto a small open-air plaza. Straight across the plaza was the parking lot with bus and taxi stands while off to the right a series of small shops. I instructed the driver to watch me, so when I waved, he could bring the car around for our reluctant passengers. Natalya, I stationed in front of the doors where Dark Angel would exit in order to signal me in case I missed her. I showed Natalya pictures and briefed her that Dark Angel's height and blonde hair made her stand out like a beacon. I found a vantage point inside a newspaper shop behind a magazine rack that allowed me to watch the exit doors but made it impossible for Dark Angel to see me. Before I confronted her, I wanted to see whether one of her customers or anyone else met her.

It started to rain some while darkness began to fall. Natalya came over to me to say that Dark Angel's plane had just landed. About a half hour later, Dark Angel and her mother walked out the exit and headed across the plaza towards the buses with Natalya in pursuit. Only a blind man could have missed my giraffe of a wife. No one met them yet, maybe in the parking lot. As they passed my position, they headed along a sidewalk bordering the parking lot. I moved out until about five yards behind with Natalya closer

trying to overhear anything they said. Every time either of them made a move to turn, I ducked into a door or behind some store display. They finally stopped at a bus stop while I hid in a doorway. Natalya walked back looking for me; I motioned to her. “They’re going to take a bus home,” she said. Rats! That meant no one was picking her up—time for the confrontation.

I walked up behind Dark Angel unnoticed, “Hello Angel.”

She spun around and stared at me, speechless with eyes wide open trying to grasp whether she saw a ghost or the real me. Clearly she didn’t know what to think or do. She must have frozen, figuring I followed her from Cyprus and knew all about her activities there.

“Come over here, I want to talk to you,” as I motioned her to a place away from her mother. I didn’t want Inessa, who understood English but like most Russians pretended she didn’t, to give Dark Angel any help in weaseling out of my demand.

“What you do here?” she finally asked.

“I’ll tell you. I want your diary from May of this year to the present, and if you don’t give it to me, I will keep you from entering America again.”

Her eyes narrowed with malice but no tears, hysterics or lies about never having a diary. “It is my private thoughts and they are meant for no one.”

“Then you can stay and rot in Russia because you are not coming back to America. Where is it?”

“Why you want my diary?”

“To see how much you’ve been lying to me and cheating on me—very simple.”

“We have a saying in Russia that it is better not to know too much because then you can believe what you want.”

“I know, and we have a saying in America as I’ve told you before, ‘The truth shall make you free.’ Where’s the diary?”

“It at my apartment.”

I didn’t believe her, but I came prepared. “Okay let’s go.”

“We have to wait for the bus,” she said, trying to play for time and a chance to talk with her mother.

I waived my hand and the driver pulled up, just like the movies. “You have the longest legs Angel, so why don’t you get in the front.” I wanted to keep her and her mother apart to avoid any whispering and make her feel isolated so as to keep the pressure on in order to make it difficult for her to invent some con to escape her predicament. I sat menacingly behind her in the back seat with Natalya between Inessa and me just for insurance against Inessa doing something stupid—like attacking me.

“So how was your trip?” I started to chitchat in order to distract her from the furious workings of her mind on how to con me out of what I wanted.

“It was nice. I saw some old friends.”

“Your old boss?”

“Yes and a friend Stephanos who worked in a bank and two others Rikos and Andreas.”

I recognized the names as guys she prostituted herself to when she worked in Cyprus, but why did she tell me she visited them? She didn’t know I read her diary, so she must have feared I conducted surveillance of her in Cyprus and tried to establish a cover-up

for hanging out with these guys. Either way, I knew she probably engaged in some sexual activity with them in return for money.

Then Inessa started a low boiling rant of which Natalya translated only a little because most of it made no sense or Natalya found offensive, these Russians and their sensitivities. I leaned on Natalya to translate.

“You have no right to come here and ruin our beautiful vacation. What do you want?” Inessa asked.

“Ask your daughter. She knows what I want and why.”

“We just had a very pleasant holiday and you ruined it,” Inessa continued.

“No you had a pleasant trip because I didn’t decide to come here before you left for Cyprus. You should be thankful I ‘m so considerate. Unlike the two of you.” I could be as nasty as any Russian.

“What do you want from my daughter?”

“I want from my wife the truth. The truth about what she did in Cyprus, in Mexico and continues to do while married. I assume at sometime in your life you’ve heard of the word Pravada (truth in Russian), but I doubt you ever knew what it meant.”

Angel interjected, “Don’t insult my mother.”

“Then tell her not to insult me, which she does on a regular basis.”

Inessa continued, “My daughter a good girl—she like little angel. She works hard as a dancer and model in Cyprus and Mexico. You are lucky to have her.”

I pulled out my list of the guys Inessa’s little angel sold herself to in Cyprus and Mexico, waved it around a la Joseph McCarthy—who was right about the Commies, he just



got the individual names wrong. “I have here a list of dozens of your daughter’s prostitution customers. How can I be lucky to have married a prostitute?”

That angered Inessa, “Alina not prostitute. How dare you say that? She is pure as snow.”

“Yeah, New York City snow.”

Inessa continued, “Your papers mean nothing. Take them back with you, they are useless here.”

Speaking to Dark Angel, I said, “Do you want me to show your mother the list of all the guys you sold yourself too?”

Dark Angel replied, “I don’t want to cause any trouble now, put it away.” It wasn’t her mother she didn’t want to know about her Johns, since Inessa knew Dark Angel worked as a prostitute. Rather, Dark Angel feared that the other Russians in the car would learn about her foul occupation and gossip to people in town causing her humiliation—the dread of all Russian females.

Inessa continued raving, but Natalya only translated her repeating that I ruined the trip they already took and the uselessness of my papers. The rest were probably various insults.

At Dark Angel’s apartment, Natalya and the driver waited outside as I went in to collect the diary. As I walked toward the kitchen with Dark Angel, I noticed the Barbie Doll I had bought in January in Las Vegas for Masha, the ten-year-old daughter of the Transneft manager.

“Why didn’t you give Masha the Barbie Doll?” I asked Dark Angel.

“I have no time.”

Baloney, she decided to keep it for herself. Stealing from a ten-year-old, how  
Commie can you get?

“Can I make you something?” my wife innocently asked.

“No thanks,” I replied, remembering her tendency to put drugs in other people’s  
food. She made herself some tea.

“Why do you want my dairy?”

“I told you, but I’m only interested from May to right now. I want to know whether  
during that time you ever told the truth, which I doubt.”

“Oh, and Roy then pure always tell the truth!” She tried to put me on the defensive,  
but I didn’t bite.

“The diary Angel.”

“It has very personal things that I think. It show my inner feelings. It not meant for  
anyone but me.”

“I thought you said back in April that your secret life was over.”

“It over, but my diary looks into my heart, and no one has right to see in there.”

Thank goodness I didn’t have a heart like hers, I thought. Still no tears or hysterics, I  
guess she figured them useless, or somehow I missed another con she was running. “You  
have a choice, give me the diary or you don’t get back into America.”

“Mum,” Dark Angel told her mother to get her diary. Since her mother knew where  
Angel kept her diary, she probably read it. This provided further confirmation, as if I  
needed it, that Inessa knew everything about Dark Angel’s whoring for dollars and  
encouraged it.

Inessa returned with both volumes. I recognized the one I copied most of in Moscow and the one that previously sat as bait on the coffee table in my apartment. To cheap to buy another notebook, she continued her real diary in the notebook she first used as a ruse, which was why it disappeared.

“What dates do you want?” Angel asked as she took the notebooks, and as she did, I notice new markings indicating these books were just two in a series of volumes. Couldn’t make out the Roman numerals, but Dark Angel must have kept volumes from at least before 1996. What trash reading they must make.

“From May to the present.”

“I didn’t write about Cyprus yet. I guess you should have waited,” she said with her Cheshire grin as she showed me the last entry was during her flight from America to Russia earlier that month.

“Can’t win them all,” I said.

She ripped out the pages I wanted, but before giving them to me asked, “I want your promise that when you have them translated, you will only translate what I did and not my feelings. My feelings are personal to me.”

“Okay, if that is what you want. I promise.” I lied and without any qualms—it was time for fighting fire with fire. She repeated her request, and I promised again, but this time crossed my fingers in my pocket.

“I’ll see you back in New York.” I left without bothering to kiss her, since she probably kissed plenty of things in Cyprus. Maybe she and Inessa rented themselves out as a team. Who knew, but I wouldn’t have been surprised.

Outside my driver and translator smoked their ubiquitous cigarettes and warned me to watch myself because, in their words, my mother-in-law was dangerously crazy and of a criminal mind. That surprised me. Although I had a low opinion of a mother who encourages and benefits from her daughter's prostitution, I never thought of Inessa as mentally unsound, dangerous or a hood. My associates were probably right, since it takes a Russian to realize the true nature of another Russian.

The driver dropped me at my hotel. I arranged for Natalya to take me to the airport the next day for my flight back to Moscow.

Eight o'clock the next morning, I abruptly awoke out of a jet lagged induced sleep to loud banging on my door. Like Kafka, I feared the thought police or some such criminals. Generally in Russian hotels only invited guests, prostitutes, the police and criminals are allowed passed the security in the lobby or the matrons on each floor. So who's left to keep out? No use pretending I was out, since whenever a guest leaves his room, he's required to deposit the key with the floor matron who keeps it lock in a metal cabinet. No key in the cabinet means the guest is in his room—a hold over from Soviet times to keep tract of people. Feeling like a cornered rat, I opened the door and in strutted Dark Angel.

“What do you want?” I asked, not at all pleased to see her and immediately on guard for some trick.

“Were you going to have that stupid girl from last night translate my diary?”

“No, why?”

“Her English is awful, worst than mine. She is no good for translating my diary, and I don't want her stupidity to cause me more problems.”

Her criticism didn't make any sense. Natalya spoke excellent English, a lot better than Dark Angel, so why the show, I wondered still half asleep.

"I'm leaving tonight and have no plans to use Natalya to translate your diary."

"You promise me?"

"Yes, I promise," and this time I meant it because I didn't have time for a translation before I left. "What are you afraid of Angel?" The moment I asked, I knew the answer. Russian girls dreaded humiliation and Natalya, a girl living in Krasnodar, might gossip about some of the sorted details of Dark Angel's life that could easily get back to people she knew.

"I just don't want her to make mistakes that will mislead you into thinking bad about me," she said with her innocent, sincere look in an effort to deceive. I countered with the truth.

"You just don't want your fellow models to learn about your prostitution?"

"I told you I not prostitute!" Her image of innocence immediately vanished.

"Come on Angel. A guy gives you money, so you'll provide him some sexual act whether intercourse, which is the only act you call sex, or masturbation or blow jobs or he kisses you between your legs or fondles intimate parts of your body. That's prostitution."

"Not unless you do it everyday."

"Wait a minute," as I shook my head to more fully wake up. "You're telling me that unless you sell sex everyday, than you are not a prostitute?"

"That's right," she firmly said. I couldn't tell whether she actually believed this malarkey or was trying to convince me of it.

“That’s not how the laws in your country, my country, Cyprus, Mexico and your church define prostitution. The key is money for sexual favors, and you’ve done a lot of that.”

“But after I do something, I go to church and ask the God’s forgiveness and the God forgives me, so it is as if it never happened.”

I just looked at her in amazement, then she added, “If the God can forgive me, why can’t you?”

I didn’t even bother to clue her in that my arrogance didn’t reach those proportions and just shook my head in disgust. “Enjoy your meeting with Valodya from St. Petersburg.”

“I don’t see anybody.”

“Right, and you are an Angel spreading love and joy to all. I’ll see you in New York. Goodbye.” She left and I went back to sleep.

Back in Moscow, I arrived at my translators’ apartment just before midnight. Anya was out, but Sasha greeted me with “Happy Birthday.” I had forgotten about it, September 26<sup>th</sup>—what a birthday! We sat at the kitchen table drinking tea and eating a small birthday cake. Russians, especially Russian girls like their sweets. I wondered out loud why I ever married Dark Angel.

Sasha replied, “Because you were lonely.”

“I’ve been lonely all my life, why should it matter now?”

“Because you’re getting older and the older you get the more lonely you feel.”

“I guess you’re right. It’s the best explanation I’ve heard so far. But why didn’t I choose someone else. I’ve been around. It’s not as though I were some nerd who never went out with a pretty girl. All my girl friends were pretty. I even went after you.”

“I remember, and you also wanted Anya.”

“Okay, okay, so I’m a man.”

“And you like young girls.”

“Pretty young girls. But I never went near a prostitute. I was always too conscious of my health and revolted by their lewdness, crudity and lack of class. What was going on in my brain to marry a one?”

“Maybe there’s more to you and Angel than the surface of the pond shows.”

“Sounds like a Russian saying. Well, I have to get up early for my flight. Thanks for listening to my moaning again.”

Sasha giggled, “Not at all. I hope this all ends for you soon.”

“Thanks, but somehow I doubt it. Good night.”

#### Runaround Sue

Back in New York City, I saw my tutor again for translating the remainder of Dark Angel’s diary.

“Glad you’re back safe,” she said, opening the door to her family’s apartment. “I hope this is the last of it. You know it’s not going to change anything but only make you feel worse.”

“The truth is worth the pain; just as justice is worth the effort,” I said.

“Oh no, you’re not going vengeful on me. Are you?”

“No, I still care about her, just not as a lover, or perhaps I should say a customer. I hope she wakes up and straightens her life out before something really bad happens to her.”

“Always the idealist,” my tutor responded, “I think her doom was sealed a long time ago. So where are the last incriminating pages of the glamour girl’s infamous dairy?”

“Here. Unfortunately, she didn’t write anything about her vacation in Krasnodar or Cyprus.”

“Maybe she did, only in a different volume.”

“What do you mean?” I asked with surprise thinking I covered all the bases.

“You said she left the phony dairy in the living room, and then it disappeared. Maybe that was just a trick to make you think she started writing the truth in it. But she really had another volume that covered her real doings in America and her trip to Krasnodar and Cyprus. You did think she might have suspected you of reading her diary.”

“Rats! I never thought about that. She’s as slippery as a lap-dancing poll.

“Very unfunny. Good thing you don’t work as a comedian,”

I ignored her barb. “I think you maybe right. Sure, she had plenty of time at home and in Cyprus to make entries. She generally wrote about her experiences right after they happened because she didn’t have the best of memories and knew it. On our trip to Las Vegas, she wrote on the plane in the airport and the hotel room. Nuts, I should have brought you along. You would’ve enjoyed the ride from the airport when her mother starting going off the deep end. But I still have the truth up until I took her to America in July. I saw her take those entries out of the volume I copied part of in May just before her visa interview. So those entries are probably truthful. Well, let’s see what both sets of entries show. The marriage is over, but I’d like to see how big a fool I really was, and no I don’t need your opinion on that point.”

“No, you already have it. So where do I start?”

“These entries. They pick up when she came to Moscow in May after her trip to Italy with Alfredo.”



“When she visited her husband because she needed to go for her interview at the Embassy to get her visa to America. How sweet!”

June 05, 2000

I came to Roy. My cellular phone was disconnected, I could not call him. I did not have the keys to open the door to his apartment and had to ring. He looked so surprised when he saw me. He began to ask me – How I came, what and where and so on. He was questioning me for a long time and got infuriated because he could not find anything. He thought that I spent time in Moscow with some boy-friend and now came to him. He calmed down after I made him food with my special herbs. He likes my tasty meals.

My tutor sarcastically interjected, “As an old hippie, I’m sure you liked those drug-laced meals.”

“Don’t disparage your elders. Let’s move on.”

After mimicking my remark, she continued.

The next day we went to watch Maria and Alexander’s band in the Country Bar. But I was so tired from my trip to Italy—I did not sleep for a long time. We also went to take photos and when I asked Roy to give me my purse, he took it and began to open all its sections and look what was in (as if it was a joke). I was watching at him perplexedly but very calmly. He was examining me. After it I understood that he was still suspicious and would search my luggage, which traveled to Italy with me. So, when Roy’s driver met me to help me register in Moscow I gave him a package with everything from Alfredo (money, jewelry) to hold for me. I told him I thought someone might break in Roy’s apartment and take these valuables. I feared that he might tell something to Roy.

The rest of the days Roy was annoying to me about the letter from the Cyprus Police for my visa interview. My impresario, Melios, in Cyprus sent the letter, after paying the police for a good one, to my apartment in Krasnodar. But it arrived when I in Italy. Roy bothered me about not having the letter. I called mum to send it to me in Moscow. On the letter my name was written incorrectly but by the time it got too Moscow, it too late to change it before the interview and Roy kept annoying me about it.

On Sunday before visa interview we went out of city with Maria, her boy friend Alexander and their friends (some people were from England, some – from Italy, but there were many Englishmen). I rode horses. We decide to take a boat and I was rowing. We ate shish kebabs. Meat was a bit tough and my tooth ached. It was a jovial man from England who cooked shish kebabs. We went with Roy to the forest, he wanted to have sex with me, but we refused because sometimes there were people passing by. The most important was that his age might be clearly seen. If he were a young boy we would do it with pleasure for people to watch. It was nice out of city.

My tutor paused, “I notice that she often uses the pronoun “we” for the pronoun “I.” Any reason for that?”

“Got me? Maybe she uses ‘we’ as part of her deception. She goes out with guys for money, gifts and to experience new places, but she can’t like all the guys who take her out. So, in her mind she pretends she is with her mother, but uses the plural pronoun to make the guy think she is referring to the two of them as a couple. It’s subtle but works on the unconscious, and she carries it over into her diary. As far as I can gather, the only person she was ever close to was Inessa, her mother, whom she idolizes. Maybe she sees the two of them as a team and mentally takes her mother with her wherever she goes. Having imaginary conversations when away from home.”

“So you get two for one in bed.”

“Don’t make me sick. Her mother is short, dumpy and wears purple eye shadow.”

“That’s disgusting. Maybe Angel has multiple personalities.”

“Could be? I sometimes wonder how she can integrate her prostitution with her alleged belief in God. I once asked her how the Russian Orthodox Church defined prostitution, but she refused to talk about. Now was that to avoid facing her own hypocrisy or to maintain for me the image she uses to sucker people but knows full well is false? Who can say? But she is extremely close to Inessa, so I thought the use of “we” for “I” meant the two of them against men and the world.”

“If she feels that tied to Inessa, then she’s probably living the same type of life her mother lived or what she imagines her mother wants her to live. Either way, the real evil here is Inessa turning her daughter into a slut to support the two of them.”

“You’re probably right, but even though a parent’s incompetence or immoral intent in raising a child leads to the grown child doing evil deeds, the grown child is held responsible, not the parent.”

“I’m not saying Angel is innocent. She’s an adult and knows better unless she’s mentally ill, which I wouldn’t be surprised. But her mother should be punished for raising her daughter as a prostitute. That’s just low! Using her child’s body to enrich herself.”

“I agree, Inessa should be locked up, and Angel forced to see a shrink every day. But our society hasn’t yet reached the point of holding parents even partly liable for the harms caused by their adult children. Probably because psychology is still an inexact science, but someday we may be able to trace with certainty specific behaviors and individual acts back to the parents’ programming of their child. The courts could then hold the parents liable as accomplices by failing to properly raise their children.”

“You mean make it a crime to screw up raising a child?”

“Why not? It should be a crime. I can’t think of any greater harm than destroying a child’s life because the parent thinks the child exists to serve the parent’s interests. Whether the parent acts as the child’s pimp, which I’m sure is the basis of the relationship between Dark Angel and Inessa, or the mother sacrifices the child’s destiny in order to have a companion for when she grows old or some other self-serving aim, the parent should be severely punished. Children can’t fight for their rights—that’s the parent’s job. But when the parent becomes the violator instead of the protector, then they must pay and pay dearly.”

“Uh-oh, sounds like deep seated hostility against your mother is boiling over.” My tutor tried to calm me down.

“And rightly so. Anyway, incompetent and malicious parents should at least be held civilly liable for the psychological harm they inflicted on their children.”

“It’s an interesting idea. That way people would think more seriously about having children and pay more attention to raising them because they could be sued for screwing up. Just like driving a car, you do it badly or recklessly, you can end up in court because you can kill people.”

“Exactly,” I was a little surprised that my tutor actually agreed with one of my ideas.

“But how do you define a proper upbringing?”

“That will probably take decades and a lot more advances in psychology. But we can define certain prohibited acts today, such as angrily repeating to a child, ‘I wish I had listened to your father and never had you. You’re a monster. How could I give birth to someone like you?’”

“Angel’s mother told her that?” My tutor exclaimed.

“No, that’s what my mother always told me.”

“Hello, Roy,” My tutor waved her hand in front of my face. “I’m not your shrink—I’m your translator.”

“Okay, okay. The point is there are certain things no sane person would say or do to a child. That doesn’t mean children can’t be punished for doing wrong, just that parents shouldn’t take their own insecurities out on their kids or manipulate them for the parents’ ends. The parents brought the child into this world, so they are responsible not just for food, clothing and shelter but to help the child find his way, not the parent’s way in this world.”

“Well, such social changes wouldn’t help you or your wife.”

“I know. I’m stuck, let’s go on,” I said.

May 30, 2000. We arrived at 7:30 in the morning at the US Embassy. Roy brought his translator Sasha, a short pretty girl. I found her very attractive. Approximately at 8:30 the window had opened and a man called us for my interview. Questions were asked only to Roy. We passed everything. Visa was ready on the next day. On May 31, 2000 I received visa to America!!! Praise to God! All goes well.

During my other days I got registered in Moscow. That cost \$30 and Roy gave \$40 so I made \$10. Still the \$40 Roy gave is much money especially if I take into consideration that this money would be very helpful to me later. But registration in Moscow will allow me to come here any time and make money with Leo.

To celebrate, I and Roy went bowling. I won 2 games. I had scored 127 balls and 102, and Roy had 101. He won a game in billiards. We went to a disco where we participated in competition. We had to tell or to sing about summer. He sang “Summertime” and won beer. In the next competition I was rolling an egg from one trouser-leg to another and he from one sleeve to another. We won 2 bottles of beer. The third competition was to dance and to kiss. Somebody else had won that competition. Then I left Roy and went to watch men’s striptease where only girls were allowed. There were boys with attractive bodies; among them was one Negro. It was nice and very erotic. Four of them were undressing a girl in the audience.

In sex with Roy I finished only once, when I first arrived, and never more. He is only a way for me to get to America but sometimes I felt pity to him – he spends so much money on me. But I must make my future as I envision no matter what.

When I left for home, Roy tried to give me money but I refused to show I cared about him and not his money. Alfredo paid me well in Italy. I did not need any more money. Still, Roy slipped money in my pocket—1700 roubles. I got my package from Roy’s driver without Roy learning a thing. He knows nothing about my trip to Italy. He is such a fool.

I was happy to return to Krasnodar. Now I will prepare to go to America.

Mum did not get to defend her Masters thesis at the Academy, because professor Vera Ivanovna did not give her a credit. She said mum failed to earn the credit. Mum was not allowed to defend her thesis. Let God be judge to his slave Vera! She will pay for what she did to mum! I will see to it!

My God, bless me!!!

P.S. Roy saw me off up to the very departure of the train. I tried to be attentive to him; I cooked tasty dinners.

My tutor asked, “Is her mother still in college? I thought her a professor.”

“Not a professor, Inessa is just an instructor who teaches gymnastics and aerobics at the Krasnodar Academy of Physical Culture and was trying to get a Masters so that she could earn more money. She failed, but found someone else to fault, typical of her and her daughter to blame everyone but themselves. This P.S. part is interesting. I originally thought she wanted me to leave before her train left for Krasnodar so that she could sneak

off to one of her customers, but apparently she just didn't want me around. Well, the feeling is mutual now."

"I'll bet those tasty meals packed quite a wallop," my tutor sarcastically remarked

"I can't remember."

June 25, 2000

On Friday, June 9, Hollander called me up and asked a strange question whether there was a case when he believed one of my lies. I answered that there was no such a case. But it put me on my guard.

"What was that about?"

"To tell the truth, I don't remember. By June 9<sup>th</sup>, I was already having her diary translated, so when I asked the question, I already knew she lied repeatedly. Maybe I was giving her a last chance to tell the truth. Who knows? I was a wreck at the time between her black magic, my pummeled heart and the drugs she repeatedly put in my food."

On June 10, Katya, Alona, my cousin, and me went to Gelendzhik on the Black Sea to carnival. We had to stay there for a night. We looked for a place to spend a night and found one place—80 roubles for a night per person. Then we found one remarkable woman who allowed us to stay for 60 roubles per person. From 7 at night to 4 in the morning there was a festival. There were performances of sportsmen, dancing groups and circus acrobats. Everyone wore a mask with antennas on the head. Thieves cut Katya's bag but did not take anything. We went to a disco where local boys were looking at us. They thought that we were all from a show group. Everyone wore a mask with antennas on the head. We refused to men who were looking for a girl for one night. I threw at one man some sand and he answered: 'You fool!' It was so cold that we decided to go to that woman, knocked at the door and stayed at hers for 30 roubles. God give her all the best!

On Sunday a surprise waited for me at home but I didn't know until we came back on Monday. Roy disappeared. I telephoned his Moscow apartment where the maid said he moved out. Then I called his old office and they knew nothing about where he was. For 3 days, I could not find him, but then on the 4<sup>th</sup> day he called my mobile. I was in the post office to send nude photos to Alfredo.

I interrupted, "So even while she pleaded for one last chance and promised to change, she was plying Alfredo with her photos!"

"Duh! What do you expect? It's her business."

“I know that now. What’s the slut say next?”

I was shocked. He told me that he knew everything in detail: about Alfredo in Italy, about Valodya in Krasnodar and even the apartment... I think that somebody has told Roy all about it. In March, Roy was with me all the time – in Krasnodar and at my apartment. All of it was so strange...I admitted that it was my fault. I did it. I begged for pardon and cried. I was telling him that forgiveness is the highest moral virtue. I asked him to give me my last chance and that without him I have nothing. I lost hope that he would forgive me. I watched at everything with other eyes. He has an inferiority complex since his childhood, and he looks for truth to control other people. But I am not a slave! He needs a psychologist. The problem is in his real feelings to me. I am a stimulus for him. He sees me as a real wife, but it is absurd... I will never see him as a real husband.

My tutor turned to me and said, “Well that’s pretty clear and should explain everything even to you. She says it right there, she never thought of you as a husband, which means you were just a ticket to ride to America. Don’t feel bad, I’ve met plenty of Russian and American girls like this who use sex for personal power and that power for money.”

“Yeah, she’s a parasite jumping from man to man using her power to exploit money and precious bobbles, wrecking havoc and then moving on to the next fool. That’s why she was always so secretive, hiding her scouting expeditions for new hosts or telling outlandish lies so that I wouldn’t realize she was manipulating me. She was quite good at keeping secret her true motivations for marrying me.”

“Only to you Roy. Everybody else knew she was playing you for a green card.”

“Now I know it but still can’t believe it in my gut.”

“You’re still hopeless.”

On Sunday, when I was at Natasha’s, Roy called me up and told me that he forgave me. He apologized for the time to think, for the pain, which he had caused to me.

“You apologized to her! What is in that brain of yours?”

“Whatever it was, it’s not there anymore.”

Roy demanded that I must cease to meet and to speak to Alfredo. He sees in Alfredo his rival. I will do as I wish but discretely.

What a thing Lena thought of. Roy became suspicious in May because I did not arrive in Moscow by train since I flew in from Italy. When I landed in Moscow, I should have taken a local train to a station outside Moscow and there boarded the train from Krasnodar. He would have been completely fooled. I will learn.

“This wife of yours is hopeless. She thinks doing wrong is when you screw up and get caught.”

“Amazing, isn’t she?” I agreed. “One amoral girl dedicated to perfecting her devious methods so as to more effectively manipulate others.”

I had a good time in “Joy” disco. We danced – there were three of us: Sergey, Katya and me. He offered to take us home without wanting sex.

June 19 I met Roman in the park. I put on a black wig. We kissed a little. He is funny...

This time I interrupted, “What was that date again?”

“June 19<sup>th</sup>. Why?”

“Wait a minute,” as I grabbed my briefcase. “Here it is. I thought I had it. Dark Angel wrote me a long letter in English on the same day she was playing around with Roman, and after I agreed to forgive her.”

“Ouuuu, goody. Let’s hear these lies that you obviously believed at the time.”

“She says, ‘From all my soul I wanted to try to give to you new direction. I wanted to help you find the goal of your life. Help you understand for what you live and how you can be happy. I wanted to help you understand the philosophy of this life and why you have especially this life. I want to tell you again, that I never think about your money—how to get this—for me it not interesting.’”



My tutor interjected, “She’s real good, using your own philosophy against you, trying to make you think she cares about you the way you care about her. What else does your smooth talking criminal say?”

“She lists a bunch of beliefs from some book on Karma by a guy called Sergey Lazarev. She claims he changed her from an egotistical, vengeful girl to the kind hearted Angel she is now.”

“That’s a laugh—she doesn’t have a heart. There’s no way she can believe in Karma with the hurt she spreads around. It must be another trick to sucker guys like you into thinking they can trust her. What does she believe?”

“Some of this doesn’t make any sense, probably because of her broken English or twisted mental faculties:

“Outside equally inside;

Similar magnetic similar;

What you don’t like in other people is presence in you;

If we go away from something, so here to be pain;

Before do something, think about what happen before, during and after and use your thinking, feeling and premonition to learn lesson from situation;

The situation will give birth or magnetize your thinking and blocks;

Our block is what we must know and understand about this world;

If you hit the same situation or problem, it is because you need to learn something from it;

Don’t try to change world or people, change yourself and that will change others around you, will change the world;

If you talk that you change, therefore, you don't change—it mask;

If somebody give you advice or help, don't think it limits you that you can't master it;

When you don't have something what you want to have, you either don't want it or it not advisable yet. If you want to get it, be precise, find description of what you want. Learn limit crystal of mind idea;

Real power includes love and attention to yourself and to people;

Think about what you want, not about what you don't want;

Negative emotions don't give to you what you want, they bring only what you don't want;

If you every time repeat to yourself why you can't have a subject of your dreams, you never get this. Start to tell yourself why you may have what you want.

Concentrate what on what you want to have, but not on the escape what you don't want. Many people knowing what are don't want, but very few knowing what they want.

If you can't believe in the opportunity to have something, you will never have this;

To learn, make well-being in your life—it a process of your growth;

You came in this world to have pleasure from life, not suffer.

You (here she underlined "You," meaning me) cause what happens to you."

My tutor reacted, "What a con artist, trying to make you feel responsible for her whoring around. She wants you to follow her commandments while she's exempt to make it easier for her to sucker you. As though it's not already easy enough. She sure doesn't need

any lessons in hypocrisy. She probably only believes the one about having pleasure, but hopes you'll buy into the rest. As for the ones that talk gibberish, she probably did that on purpose so she could give them whatever interpretation served her purposes at the time. She just wanted to make her goal of getting a green card easier by warping your thinking into believing you were the guilty party and not she. Any other twisted thoughts in that letter from the soulless Angel?"

"You'll like this, 'If something happen to me strange or if I find that you avenge on me, it will be one of your biggest mistakes.'"

"Not only a conning but threatening wench," my tutor said laughing. "I guess she sees in you what is in her—a thirst for vengeance. And what about her belief that real power is love? What trash, this is all intended to distract you from her true nature—a conniving whore."

"There's more, she writes, 'You have difficult childhood. Your parents pressed on you and from this time you have complex—the complex of degradation. Why you need the truth? This for degradation of yourself and to lord over other people, so you can be boss. I'm your good friend but I'm free, I'm not female slave. I have my right, my life. I'm not toy which you can use and if don't need—let fly. All things in this life return. Try to be more open and more trust. If somebody do something, stop and wait and ask yourself why? What the real reason? So, I hope this letter will help you better understand yourself and the goings on around you.'"

"What a phony," my tutor said. "It was just another trick to get to America."

"She's pretty good at turning the tables to make herself out as the righteous innocent rather than the scoundrel," I said.

“Where were we with the unmasked Dark Angel?”

“Kissing Roman.”

At an exhibition I got acquainted with two boys from St. Petersburg who were selling jewelry goods. We went to cafes, chattered, and drank. I and Katya were so drunk, we rode the boys sports bikes. But she hit a pole and I hit people.

On June 24 I and Katya went to the exhibition again to meet the boys and had a party. We sat there and had some pizza and drank. Valodya was squeezing my hand. All the discos were full. They decided to sleep in the hotel. I refused to go with them because I said that I am watched. Katya was jealous because both Vanya and Valodya preferred me. Katya and Vanya went to her home.

I bought from these boys rock crystal ear-rings and Katya bought a ring. A man from St. Petersburg gave to me a picture made of amber – I will present it to Roy. These boys are good fellows – let God send them luck!!!

My God, bless us and give us wisdom, forces and patience!

July 06, 2000

We met once more those two boys on Monday. We persuaded them to stay one more night in Krasnodar. We ate salad, drank some wine and for the first time in my life I was drunk and kind. In the evening we went to Katya’s. We bought shrimps and wine. We kissed with Valodya, and I myself began it. That moment all my hatred to men came to the surface – I was like a tiger. We were in the kitchen, I we had sex on the table. At 5:30 in the morning, I had to leave and Valodya and Vanya went to see me off. I stopped a car and the driver tried to accost to me. I let him rub my knees in order to save some money on the fare.

I stopped my tutor, “So she lied to me about not hoing any other guys when we had our little talk of honesty in Moscow before I brought her here. She never mentioned Valodya from St. Petersburg, and when I confronted her about that postcard to him, she coped that tired line of Valodya being just a ‘good friend’. Even Valodya lied to me when I called him about the postcard, saying ‘nothing happened between them.’”

“You expected this guy and your wife to tell the truth? Look, if you want to see the true nature of your wife, it’s in this line: ‘I let him rub my knees in order to save some money on the fare.’” You can’t get much lower than that. Allowing some stranger to rub her legs to save a few rubles. The driver probably realized the moment she got in his car that she was a prostitute and tried for a quickie.”

“He would have gotten it if he had offered dollars,” I said.

Nadya advised me not to go to America with Roy and said that if I went with him then my fate would come to a collapse. But I decided to go for now and make some money and to get a divorce from him later after I become a permanent resident.

On June 28<sup>th</sup> I and Katya were going to go to Anapa on the Black Sea to see Valodya and Vanya. A friend was ready to take us to the station, but when I rang mum to tell her I was going, she told me that somebody had called me up twice (it was Roy). How did he sense that I was about to go visit Valodya? His spies must be everywhere. We returned our tickets.

“You had spies watching her in Krasnodar?” My tutor asked.

“No, that was too expensive. But while doing some research at Columbia, my intuition told me she was about to do something bad again, so I called her mobile twice but got no answer. Obviously, her mother then told her about the calls, and she correctly assumed it was I.”

“Perhaps there is more to you than meets the eye Mr. Den Hollander,” my tutor said half sarcastically.

I went for 1 day to Kanevskaya, to visit Yulya, my friend from Chechnya and then she came to me. I bought a white wig. We met my friend Dima. Two boys were accosting to him and I thought that there would be a fight. But Dima is a clever boy; he managed to avoid it. We went to Yulya’s husband Igor. He wanted to run from her when she appeared in the wig.

My God, bless me in this difficult way to America! I decided to begin a new diary for Hollander not to use my information.

My God, bless me and give me wisdom, forces and patience!

“Rats! I thought she might have wised up. By July 6<sup>th</sup> she realized my information came from her diary, so her writings in the second notebook I got in Krasnodar are probably sanitized.”

“Your wife may be sick, but she’s not dumb. I’m sure there’s another notebook some place in which she wrote the truth about her fun times in America and her recent trips

to Krasnodar and Cyprus. Anyone as vain as her couldn't resist. You should have forced her to turn over that notebook when you were in Krasnodar."

"“You're right. I just didn't think about it at the time. I underestimated her. This girl is more dangerous than I thought.”

“Well then let her go endanger someone else and kick her sorry ass out into the street.”

“The relationship is over. I just need to work out her departure.”

“Work out what? Kick her out! She deserves it. You know she's always counted on you being a gentleman, which for her means sucker while she use every dirty trick around to get her way.”

“Her day is coming,” I lamely replied.

“For your sake, I hope it's before the Second Coming.”

“Still this second notebook might reveal some things. Often she's unable to stick to a plan and makes mistakes. Let's see. You never know where information, even false information may lead.”

July 12, 2000

### MY GOD, BLESS ME

Our Father in heaven, holy be your Name, your kingdom come, your will be done, on earth as in heaven. Give us today our daily bread. Forgive us our sins as we forgive those who sin against us. Do not bring us to the test but deliver us from evil. For the kingdom, the power, and the glory are yours now and forever.

I began my new diary because the previous one has already ended. It was useless to take it here because it contained a lot of very special information.

On July 08 I has found my Show-Girls cassette – I found it on the shelf which my mum and me had looked through several times. It appeared after my cousin took it. The rest that she took has not appeared – its time has not come yet. I am very grateful to my mum for all her help in getting me to America. May God, send happiness to my dear mum!!!

As I planned, I wore my wig to Moscow to distract Roy. Roy was sitting with a bouquet of orchids... He could hardly recognize me and asked what I had done to my hair.

He was cold, he wanted to speak to me after arrival, and we spoke a little and went to “Bowling”. It was wonderful.

I shamefully won only 68 points. I played billiards not so bad. And I won playing ice hockey. We had some wine and tried to quarrel and to kiss. At home he began to accost to me and then he took me at the table, saying again and again that he was fucking me... I was exhausted and he carried me to the bedroom, tied my hands with my trousers and continued. He wanted me to begin asking him to stop. It was wonderful! All it continued for 1.5 – 2 hours. I felt that all his anger with me, all pain, which he had to stand in connection with me, are pouring out of him at that moment.

July 09 became the most important day because that day there was to be a conversation, according to results of which I would either go with him or stay here. We spoke sitting in that very Victory Park where we first sat and talked nearly a year earlier. The conversation continued for 2.5 hours.

We told to each other what we were doing beginning from December 01, 1999 when we first were intimate. He told me what he had been doing in that period, and then I told him about my deeds. It turned out that he tried to accost to the girl-interpreter the small Sasha who told him no because he was married... All men are fuckers...

“What a hypocrite your wife,” my tutor said with disgust. “She’s out whoring for money, fun and to get ahead, but thinks she’s entitled to loyalty from you. This girl can really compartmentalize her thinking.”

I as well had to tell him everything, but did not tell about boys from St. Petersburg. It is strange that somebody provided Roy with false information that Alfredo was allegedly in Moscow in May after my trip to Italy. It is not true, otherwise it would be senseless for me to go to Italy. Conversation was rather interesting. It turned out that he himself used magic (I myself taught him to my own misfortune) – he went to some fortune-teller in New Jersey and this fortune-teller told him everything – that I was admixing something to his meals before our wedding. (He wanted to sleep even in the day.) I had to tell him I did it because he was too aggressive towards me with all his questions and I wanted to lower his level of aggression.

My tutor said, “Well she admits lying to you about Valodya from St. Petersburg. That seems to indicate a real diary.”

“I don’t think so. She always mixes the truth with lies in order to make her deceptions appear more believable. Admitting she lied to me about Valodya is probably just a trick to make me think the rest of her writings in this notebook are accurate. She’s not going to write down the truth in a book I might get my hands on.”

Well, it was hard to stand but nevertheless interesting. The next day we went to airport. My plane departed 3 hours after his. I saw Roy off.

My flight was good. I worried about customs control. I came to a man and they took me to “immigration office” where a girl took my fingerprints. I worried very much but I had with me wonderful orchids, which had opened during the last 10 hours on the plane. God be praised!!! I am in America.

I waited for Roy but I did not know whether his plane had already come, because it was at another building. I went by Free Bus (some people helped me, let God give them health) to another building and began to look for Roy, though I did not know exact number of his section. And here God helped me – Roy was going in my direction. It was wonderful! Later he admitted: he feared that on receiving my visa I would fly somewhere else, for example, to Mexico – to meet Alfredo, to work in California or somewhere near to Mexico. I did not have in my mind anything of the kind!

After arrival we had a rest. Then we went for walk, studying streets, subways and stores. Roy didn’t want me to work in lap dancing club but I told him I needed to save money for me and mum. We tried to find a job for me in two clubs – in “SCORES”, a highly elite club where you have to pay \$300 to the club for the right to work (they did not take me, explaining, that they have many girls from Florida), and in “Stringfellows” – they refused without indicating reasons (may be, because this is not mine). I returned three times to “Flash Dancers” – I came there alone, in the daytime. The manager was dissatisfied once with a dress, the other time with shoes. Russian girl Nikita helped me with a dress and advised to come to “audition” in the evening. I began working on Sunday night and earned 400 dollars, then 540 and yesterday, on Wednesday, I earned 650 dollars. God be praised!!! One man from India comes to me for 4 days; he wants to have sex with me. He is so funny... I began to mock him. He said: “Come to me in 15 minutes”. I answered: “Fix your alarm-clock or do you need help of 911? Your hair has grown and became gray while you had been waiting for me.”

Yesterday Roy and me had Day of Love – a sexual experiment. And today we met Louisa, Roy’s friend from the Austro-Hungarian Empire, and her boy friend. She use to stay at his apartment. We spoke about clothes. I have to go to shops on Saturday. I hope, I will prosper. God send to me and to my mum wisdom, forces and patience!!! My God, bless me!!!

August 05, 2000

July 23 is a special date – a year ago I met Roy. A lot of events happened with us and between us. He presented to me a pot with flowers. I hanged curtains in all rooms, and they became so cozy. My God, help us understand, respect and believe to each other.

My tutor commented, “This is beginning to sound as though she expected you to read it. The mean, nasty and self centered Dark Angel seems replaced by a normal person.”

“I agree, so I’ll just take it with greater caution.”



I worked for a week and a half so I waited so much this day off. But that day became a heavy one. It turned out that Roy knows everything what happened in Milan – in the room, about my conversations with Alfredo and how we mocked and laughed about how easy it was to fool Americans. How did he manage to learn it? I think that he took information from microphone installed into telephone. It is so dirty...

For all the night I and Roy played billiards, had meals in MacDonald's and sorted out our relations – I wished I had not taken that day off. I could have earned money.

On Monday I had my 2<sup>nd</sup> day off. It was the same, but this time it was better, softer. On Sunday we again began to sort out our relations and went to billiards, because bowling was closed. I had hysterics because he said I didn't deserve to be in America. I was sinking the eight ball on purpose – he so likes to win but the game was not interesting to him. When we played the 3<sup>rd</sup> game, I became a superhero – I scored the black ball. I wish I worked rather than go out with him. But it is so difficult to me...

My tutor asked, "What's this superhero stuff?"

"She pretends at times she is a superhero and goes around saying, 'I am superhero here to save the day.' She picked it up from the other of her favorite movies the *Mask* where some guy goes around pretending he's different characters."

"Maybe your wife should be committed?"

"She needs some kind of psychiatric intervention."

I worked on Friday until 4 am and then at 8 am went to a promotion for Bloomberg's Annual picnic. We met Cindi and Everett. First we had a meal and then make-up. We stood as statues. It was so interesting. First the main speaker, a silly head, was saying some rubbish, and then everything became dumb. Everyone ate, walked and we were standing as statues. One man put a glass in my hand. He ate, then he said "Thank you" and went away. A child began to offer me money – it was funny. In the end we were dancing African dances. It was marvelous! And then back to the work at Flash Dancers. I went around like a vampire – without feelings, I had no forces.

Yesterday (for the night from Thursday to Friday) I earned \$900. It is my record. Though, a biker gave me \$50 but I did not dance to his friend. I danced to the last boy 5 dances non-stop. He gave 150 dollars. I was late to the Champagne Room. I had to dance 5 songs, but I danced 9 or 10. I had a stress and laughed so much. I was tired. One man was looking at me with enchanted eyes and gave one dollar after another. He gave 20 dollars. I did not dance on the main stage. It was wonderful!

I fixed a date for a plane to Krasnodar. I leave on September 09 and come back the end of the month. My God, give me forces not to make silly deeds and mistakes. Give me patience, forces and bless me!!!

August 21, 2000

Though there has passed just a little time, there happened so much events. In the night from August 9 to August 10 Roy woke me up and told me that I had not worked on Monday and on Tuesday and had spent this time with my boy-friend. I was shocked. That sheet of paper, where manager did not make marks for Monday and Tuesday – it changed everything. I had a hysteric and felt pains in liver and gall bladder. I tried to prove. He was not at home for day and night. I waited for him in the club to talk to the manager, so I could prove I had actually worked on Monday and on Tuesday, but Roy did not come. I call him up, but he said that it did not matter anymore. I woke Roy up in the morning and we agreed that we live in different apartments. He was very aggressive, me too. In him woke up former feelings of horror and suppression, everything has changed.

My tutor remarked, “Yeah, this all sounds too phony, too much a cover. It’s not the real Dark Angel. She’s just serving her own devious interests here, especially her sympathy wringing abdominal pains.”

“She was probably with some guys on those two nights and convinced the manager to lie to me that she was working. That’s her business.”

On August 16, we were at the Statute of Liberty. It was wonderful! Nature, we climbed 349 steps, went by a steamer.

At work customers a few times tried to take me to Champagne room, but I did my best to avoid it. One day a few sons of a bitch tried to touch me, but I did not allow. One of them began to say that I was the worst of all. But afterwards I danced 5 dances for someone else, so I am not the worst. Last Monday I earned approximately \$900. One customer ordered approximately 20 dances. It was marvelous!

On August 17 there was the Miss Hawaiian Tropic beauty competition. The day before it I tinted and combed my hair. I was in a good mood. All the contestants had a meal in a restaurant and took photos. We tried to find answers for the questions. It began... The first question was “Why do you think that you may be Miss Hawaiian Tropic?” I answered that due to my long legs I can run round a beach and with Hawaiian Tropic cosmetics so I can help people to avoid being sunburnt. All answered seriously. I showed myself the best I could. Question: “What would you take with you to an island?” My answer: “A toothbrush and a comb”. I did not explain wittingly why. They watched my breasts, my language, how I communicate with judges and with audience.

Now I have a problem with the money. Roy found out that I do not put all the money to the bank. Taxes! Now I have in the bank approximately \$6300 and approximately same amount in cash. I want to take all this money to Russia. Roy thinks I am scheming and he is afraid of the law. I will pay some taxes-I do not want any problems. But I will be smart about it. God bless.

September 09, 2000

Though there has passed just a little time, there happened so much events... In the club I had twice 900 dollar nights. It was wonderful! But later, on Wednesday I earned only 600-650 dollars. On Saturday there were two cases when customers did not want to pay for dances. The first time it was a company – they said that I was dancing a dance which was not ordered. Bodyguard helped me and they paid. And in the second instance a customer took 2 dances, but paid for one. He said that he ordered only one. I was disappointed. But later I told about it to one customer and he gave me an extra 20 dollars. For the first time I went to a single room - I danced to a bearded man from TV in the Champagne Room. On Monday we sat there for 2 hours, I danced (I was so frightened). I allowed him to touch me. I received a pleasure.

“Is this single room the Champagne room?” My tutor asked.

“I don’t know.”

“She told me they had cameras in the Champagne room to keep such stuff from happening.”

“And you believed her?”

“Well, under State law, what those two did constitutes prostitution, and I thought Flash Dancers wouldn’t want to put their license in jeopardy.”

“Get real Roy. These clubs pay off the cops to leave them alone. Besides who cares what these sluts do there. Maybe this single room is an even higher price room that offers more intimate settings, but then why would she include it in this sanitized part of her diary?”

“By then the marriage was pretty much over.”

“She probably just wanted to upset you.”

“Who knows,” I said in exasperation. “Let’s go on.”

People were leaving the club. I was in a good mood. One customer dropped beer when I asked him to free up space for a dance, and accused me, saying, that it was me who moved the beer. For another customer I danced in the place where somebody had spilled beer. It looked like he had made water. When I was dancing for another man, I spilled beer (accidentally) and kicked him in the eye (accidentally). Merry. Each day my business was turning to the worse. On Sunday I earned \$500 but Monday there was Labor Day. I hardly managed to earn \$200 – there were very few people in the club. I worked with pleasure.

In total I earned 17 – 18 thousand dollars in 1.5 months (including everything – expenses, meals and presents). One time I did not manage to control myself and touched a

customer. Manager saw it and warned – one more case like this and he would fine me. God forbid!

I was worrying for mum because of that little snake cousin Alona and her mother Aunt Sveta. Sveta came to Krasnodar to stay in our apartment until they could move into our old house. Aunt Sveta was rude to mum after all her efforts with documents on our house. Mum was sobbing violently with offence. She was offended in our own home. Aunt Sveta began to eat separately, and then, when they found a place in Stavropol, they refused to live in our old house after all our work. I am glad. God be praised! These little snakes will learn something new about life.

I was disappointed with Roy's attitude toward my mum. When I was telling her by phone about my problems, she told in a temper that all would be OK. I miss Roy very much when he is absent. He is very important to me.

“That's it,” my tutor said. “The last part about missing you is clearly for your eyes, but you are important to her—important in getting her a permanent green card.”

“You're right, and the excuse she gave for her mother threatening to kick my ass if I showed up in Krasnodar during her vacation seems manufactured just for me. I'm sure this second notebook is a sanitized version of the truth except for the part about her earnings at Flash Dancers. Her income is pretty much accurate because I used to count her money nearly every morning.”

“I think your wife's sickness has spread to you. So what now my lawyer?”

“Time to get this slut out of my life. Dark Angel returns in a few days, so I'll just tell her to get the hell out. I'll give her some time, but I don't want to see her again.”

“About time. Keep me informed. I wish you luck.”

### I've Had It

I met Dark Angel at Kennedy airport on September 29, 2000 not because I wanted to but because she previously weaseled out of me a promise to meet her. What did it matter to her whether I met her or not? She knew how to get back from the airport—probably wanted to save money by having me pay for part of the taxi, since an American taxi driver wouldn't be satisfied with just rubbing her knee. That one incident with the Krasnodar taxi driver, out

of all her repulsive acts, sickened me the most. For Dark Angel, her body, personality and, although she didn't realize it, her soul were just goods for rent or barter to anyone with the money. She may have also wanted me at the airport for fear she wouldn't be allowed back in the country. It's a lot easier for females to manipulate a man's emotions in person than over the telephone. I could just imagine the act she'd put on to get me to come to her aid.

Waiting for her arrival, I hoped the plane would crash, so I could collect the life insurance I took out on her and put this revolting development in my life behind me. But such miracles only happened in the movies. No, to exorcise her from my life meant convincing her to move out of my apartment and get an annulment or divorce.

To my disappointment, the plane landed safely and she exited from the gate. We didn't have much to say.

"Where are my flowers Roy?" She demanded. Dark Angel always made a point of making sure I knew when she wanted flowers. She viewed me and all the other men, with the possible exception of her old boy friend Alexei, as business transactions, so receiving flowers either served the delusional part of her brain that she was not a prostitute or the exploitative part that her demand for flowers helped deceive her victims into believing she liked them. Regardless of which, my playing her games were over.

I adopted one of her tactics and didn't respond to her question. I knew it would just spiral into the inevitable confrontation that loomed before us, which I wanted to avoid until I knew for certain whether the alleged problems with her gall bladder were serious. More dumb sympathy displayed by me. Unlike her and other Russians consumed with their manic, barbaric ruthlessness, I took no satisfaction in taking advantage of persons when they were down. Where's the honor in that? Besides, even though the marriage vows meant

nothing to her, they obligated me to take care of her when sick. Neither she nor most Russians will ever understand that when you make a promise—you keep it, including the ones made to yourself.

In the taxi Dark Angel said, “Here’s my sonogram. You see there is the growth.”

I couldn’t see anything, including any indications it was of her or when taken.

“I can’t tell anything from this, but we’ll see your doctor next Tuesday.” I said.

“You don’t have to come,” she deviously interjected. “I now know the way and can go by myself.”

“Now, now Angel, this is important and I wouldn’t want you to get lost.” I too could feign concern. I wanted to hear from the doctor, and not Dark Angel, what was the problem—if any.

At the apartment Dark Angel gave me the amber picture she received when hanging out with Valodya and Vanya in Krasnodar back in June. I handed it back to her.

“Why don’t you want it? It very good for your health and cost me a lot,” she lied.

“It cost you nothing,” I retorted.

She didn’t respond but accusingly asked, “Why did you take down the pictures of me and all the little Disney stickers?” Whenever put on the defensive, she usually attacked, but this time it didn’t matter. She possessed nothing I wanted, especially her emotional love of which I doubted her capable.

“Because I decided to.” That caused her to change subjects.

“I want to get my own mobile telephone. Where can I buy one?” she asked.

“There’s a store across the street and a couple more down the block.” I expected this. How could she run her own private prostitution service without a telephone—but that also didn’t matter?

A couple of days later, we visited her doctor for the sonogram. A female attendant took Angel into the testing area for the procedure. A half hour later she came out teary eyed.

“What did the doctor say?”

“It is what they told me in Krasnodar,” she sniffed. “I have a dangerous growth on my gall bladder, and all we can do is watch it and hope it does not grow.” She started blubbing, but I was beyond her cheap tears.

“Are you sure you understood correctly?”

“I talked to a Russian doctor and she told me.”

“What was her name?”

“I don’t know.”

I didn’t hesitate for a minute. I knew she was scamming me and I was going to find out the facts. A white, middle-aged male lawyer in a suit goes where he wants. Pushing through the doors to the testing area, I found the attendant who originally escorted Angel in for the sonogram.

“I’m looking for the Russian doctor who told my wife the results of her sonogram.”

“We don’t have any Russian doctors here,” the attendant politely said.

“Do you have anybody, maybe a nurse that speaks Russian who told my wife about the test results?”

“No. I don’t know who your wife talked to, but if you want, you can talk to the doctor who analyzes the sonograms.”

“Yes, that will be fine,” I said. The attendant led Dark Angel and I into a lowly lit room where an overweight gentleman sat in front of a machine for analyzing sonograms.

I introduced myself and asked about the diagnosis of Dark Angel’s sonogram.

“Here it is,” the doctor said bringing up a computer-generated image. “You see here. It’s a fold in the gall bladder. Nothing to worry about.”

“So she doesn’t have a growth that needs watching because it might be cancerous?” I asked the doctor.

The doctor looked at me in surprise, “No! It’s just a fold. But it can cause some discomfort if she eats too much fatty food. These are very common and there’s no need to watch them.”

I thanked him, knowing now for sure the whole gambit was to make my feel sorry for Dark Angel, so I wouldn’t try to get her bounced out of the country. America meant the most important part of life to her—money. She was one harsh, money-grubbing girl from a country of crass materialism devoid of moral or social responsibility. It was almost time to tell her, “Goodbye Baby Bye Bye.”

That night Dark Angel didn’t work and the movie *The Maltese Falcon* was on television. I thought it appropriate that we watch it together.

Near the end, Dark Angel complained, “You think I am like that Angel.”

“You’ve got it, precious. And this is the part I want you to listen close too.” Sam Spade says to his nemesis Angel, “I won’t play the sap for you. You have never played square with me for half an hour at a stretch since I have known you. I won’t walk in I don’t



know how many other men's footsteps. I have no earthly reason to think I can trust you. I wouldn't because all of me wants to regardless of the consequences, and you counted on that with me the same you counted on that with all the others." I, however, had already played the sap for Dark Angel, but it was over.

Dark Angel just sat with a sour look on her face, probably planning how to get revenge for my daring to offend a goddess such as her.

At the end of the movie as Bogart walked down the stairs holding the "stuff of dreams", the fake Maltese Falcon, I turned to my fake dream and said, "I want you to move out and I want a divorce."

She showed no emotion as she still looked at the TV, but I knew the anger boiled inside of her, "Why do you want this Roy?"

"Just like Humphrey Bogart said—I don't trust you and don't believe your incessant lying. You are a cold-hearted user, and that is being kind. You and your mother think men exist so you can use them for your whim of the moment with no concern for the emotional harm you cause."

"I told you I don't want you talking about my mum." Whenever I criticized her mother, Dark Angel became extremely defensive and protective. It was easy to tell the sincerity of her reaction to criticism of her mother because it differed so dramatically from any of her other feelings, which, except for anger and love of money, were feigned.

"The truth hurts, huh?"

"Don't talk about my mum!"

Fine, I didn't give a damn about her mother, "All you do is hide behind that mask of innocence. Do you really believe that phony visage will continue to take you far? Perhaps

it has up until now, but one day it will be your undoing when someone lowers the hammer of justice on your lying, cheating and conniving head. You line up men like little ducks to be plucked, take them for a sacrificial ride to your own self-aggrandizement and lust for money. I thought you smart enough to change, so I gave you a chance—that is called civility, which you and other Commies mistake for weakness. I even thought you might understand the concept of empathy. But I was wrong. You care not the least for others, so driven by your own self-indulgence for material pleasures that you even congratulate yourself on your deception and dissembling as the accomplishments of a great artist and the will of God.”

“I know what compassion is.”

“What?”

“If you know someone for a period of time and over that time you have tested them for trustworthiness, and they passed all tests and they show that they are willing to do things for you, then you can feel compassion for them.”

“You’re hopeless,” I said. “The point of compassion is not what someone does for you, it’s a desire to help someone in need because they are a human being, not because you have tested them and they are useful to you. It comes from an unconscious knowing that we are all linked together beyond the physical differences and separations of our senses. Compassion is what the German philosopher Schopenhauer considered the clearest evidence of a bond among all mankind; otherwise, why would people do clearly stupid and dangerous things to help others who are strangers. When we first met, and I hardly knew you, I offered to help you get an apartment, but you thought it some hidden motive to take advantage of you. You’ll never get it. By your definition, Schopenhauer is a jerk. And after my

experience with you, I'm beginning to think the same. But maybe he is only wrong in Russia, or only wrong with people like you who use the compassion of others to knife them in the back."

Surprisingly keeping her calm, Dark Angel asked, "What didn't I do for you? I clean apartment and make you meals from my clean soul."

"You call putting 'salts and sugars' in my food to insure I would marry you, to keep me so befuddled I wouldn't see the truth, you call that coming from your 'clean soul'?"

"You were aggressive to me. I had to do something."

"I'm sorry Angel, but there is no justification for putting what I am sure were narcotics in my food. What if I was allergic to them? What if you gave me too much? But you didn't care, because by not giving them to me you stood to lose your chance at lots of money in America. So what if I died or suffered some crippling injury, you wanted the money only America offered, so why not gamble with my life—you didn't have anything to lose."

After a pause of silence, I asked, "What kind of drugs did you use?"

"They were just salts and sugars from my clairvoyant. I don't do nothing."

"Still wouldn't tell the truth. You lied about not being able to live with me in Moscow for three months after our marriage because of your eye operation, fixing up your apartment and transferring the house to your aunt, when the real reason was you wanted to continue your life style of partying and whoring with whomever you wished. You didn't want to live with your husband, because for you I was nothing more than a ticket to America where you could make lots of money in the sex industry. You pretended I was the one and only, even though I was more like 46<sup>th</sup> on your list."

I was on a roll and not about to stop, “Then after I found out about your adultery, you played on my compassion, which for you means suckering people into feeling sorry for you, so they will help you when you don’t deserve it. Interesting, you understand compassion as a weakness to be exploited in others. That’s probably why you never feel compassion for others for fear they will exploit you. You begged me to forgive you, promising that you would change and be faithful, but it was just another lie to trick me into bringing you to America. And I fell for it, thinking how could I abandon another human being to live a miserable existence in the hell of Russia. You knew I would fall for it, because as you once said I have a good heart. You must have laughed with your mother about how foolish I was to feel compassion for a whore like you. But now I realize some people like you and your mother deserve to live in the hell of Russia.”

“Don’t talk about my mum, and I not whore!” Dark Angel replied growing angry.

“But in America, you continued to chase after men to sell sexual favors. When I confronted you with this, you still played those old cards of ‘it my culture’ and ‘I will change, but it take time.’ Well you’ve had your time. There is no decency, nor shame in you.

I saw her insides seething with hate, although outwardly she just stared straight ahead wearing her mask of composure. She knew I was beyond her powers and feared that a divorce would ruin her chance to stay in America permanently so that she could continue raking in the cash from lap dancing and prostitution.

“I’m not your toy that you can use and if you don’t need—let fly. I will not move out and I will not get divorce because then I will not be able to get a green card.”

Dark Angel finally spoke the truth—amazing, but I was ready for it. “No, we can separate, then get a divorce and you may still get a permanent green card.” Dark Angel received a temporary green card when I brought her to America, which allowed her to live and work for two years. After the two years she needed to apply for a permanent green card, which, if successful, she could live and work here basically forever, even bring her mother over, which I’m sure she planned on doing. A separation and eventual divorce didn’t necessarily mean she’d be deported.

Dark Angel responded, “I don’t believe you. I talk to people who say that if divorce, I will have to go back.”

What I did next, I knew was a mistake, but I wanted this demon spawn out of my home. “Go see a lawyer. I’m sure some of the girls at Flash Dancers know immigration lawyers. You have the money, go ask one. I don’t expect you to believe me. See what a lawyer says.”

“I will do this and we will see.”

“One more thing, I want you to get your own bed to sleep in.”

“I don’t want to pay the money,” she objected.

“I’ll pay half, but you’re not going to sleep in my bed anymore.”

We picked up a bed for Dark Angel, and about a week later, she claimed to have talked to an attorney. Sticking to her old habits, Dark Angel reported the attorney told her that a divorce would prevent her from obtaining a permanent green card.

“If we divorce in America, the INS will find out and not let me stay,” Dark Angel claimed.

“So let’s get divorced in Krasnodar,” I countered.

“But ZAGS will tell the INS.” I ran the ZAGS part passed my Russian lawyer Dennis who said, “That’s a laugh. ZAGS can’t afford to contact the INS and doesn’t care.”

Dark Angel was lying and I demanded the two of us meet with this alleged attorney of hers. That forced her to go out and actually find one. She never talked to an attorney in the first place because she didn’t want to spend the money. So, as usual, she just lied about. Unfortunately, it took her until the end of October to find a lawyer. I wanted her gone by then, but the delay with the attorney meant the end of November. My tutor, my Moscow translators, my Slovakian female friends and the girls in Mark’s martial arts class told me to throw her out into the street immediately. They knew an alley cat like her could easily find another sucker, but once again my concept of civility and the way a gentlemen acts prevented me. Men from my generation clearly operate at a disadvantage. We have a strict code of behavior concerning girls; whereas, they have none towards us, which is probably why the Feminazis are so successful.

#### Come And Get These Memories

Dark Angel wanted to arrange her new bed so that the head of my bed pointed north with hers east while one side of her bed lay along a wall.

“What’s the difference?” I asked.

“It is important for the health.”

More magic I shook my head. “To do it your way will make the bedroom impossible to move around. Besides it is only for two months, I hope.”

“All right, but my bed must have one side pushed against a wall,” she firmly said.

“Afraid of falling out of bed?” I derisively asked.

She ignored that but came up with a suitable place for her bed, “Help me put it over there touching that wall.”

With the side of her bed flush against the wall, Dark Angel began sleeping with her face and the front of her body wedged into the ninety-degree angle the bed made with that side of the bedroom. From around 4:30 in the morning, when she returned from Flash Dancers, masturbated and showered, until one o’clock in the afternoon, she lay squeezed in that position without getting up and without moving, as though trying to disappear. It struck me as very bizarre. Maybe she had a childhood fear of mice crawling over her belly. One night, I decided to play a little joke by placing my hand under her pillow as though it were a mouse. She went ballistic, jumped out of bed, turned on the light.

“What do you do!” She shouted, picking up her pillow. “Did you put something in my bed?”

“No, it was just my hand. Take it easy. It was only a joke,” but apparently not to her.

Dark Angel tore off the sheets and the pillowcase pulled the mattress onto the floor and lifted the box spring searching for something she thought I put there. After putting her bed back together, she crawled in, slapped her pillow a couple of times in anger and warned, “Don’t ever, ever put anything in my bed or you’ll be sorry.” She rolled into her corner and I turned out the lights. Before traveling to my favorite part of life—sleep, I wondered about what kind of hell seethed below her calm exterior, which only intermittently erupted.

Around the house, Dark Angel wore her work clothes—tong panties. The next day after doing some mumbo jumbo in the bedroom in her tongs and before going off to exhibit herself in her tongs to strange men, she straddled my lap facing me while I sat on the couch

trying to read. Whenever I tried to work with her around, she seemed addicted to interrupting me with irrelevancies. This time her distraction differed, “Why are you afraid of me?”

Where did that question come from? She didn’t scare me, just disgusted me. But no reason to cause another quarrel, so I lied with the only response I could find, “Because you could kill me.”

She laughed and said, “That would be easy. Before I found the God it would have been easy for me to kill you.”

I didn’t expect that, thought it bravado but was intrigued enough to find out more, “How would you do it?”

“I could put some of the poison I have in the kitchen in your food.”

I already thought she was putting drugs in my food, which was why I dumped her dinners after she left for work, but never imagined she kept it or as she called it “poison” in the kitchen. This girl was sicker than I thought.

“What poison?” I asked.

“The green powder I keep on the counter.”

“I thought that was herbs you brought from Krasnodar?”

“It is from the Caucuses, but you can buy it in Krasnodar.”

“What do you need poison for?”

“I use a pinch for nutritional purposes but too much will kill you!” She said with her Cheshire grin. “I cannot only poison you, but my Russian friends would kill you with pleasure if you interfere with me, so watch out!” And she got up to go prepare for work, which meant changing her tongs.



Her threats didn't bother me, they held no terror, but only made me feel comfortable, as though right at home in the bosom of my mother, which I'm sure I never got near as a baby. So why the homey feeling?

I went into the kitchen and looked at the greenish-brown powder she kept in a small bag that looked like it came from a Russian grocery store. The English translation of the print said "Ice cream or Freeze of the Caucasus." Didn't sound like poison or drugs to me unless she just used the bag as a cover for bringing it into the U.S. These alleged herbs were probably the same she used on me in Russia, put in my dinners here, fed to her wealthier customers and used to get her through the night. I didn't give a damn anymore, but for some unconscious reason, I took a sample and stored it away.

Dark Angel hated me finding out the truth about her because it made her scheme of growing rich in the American sex trade more difficult and costly. Now she needed to hire an attorney not just for the divorce but to do the paperwork to help her acquire a permanent green card. Had I stayed in the dark as she planned, the costs, time and work would have fallen on me. Her lust for revenge raged inside under a cool, calm and collected appearance. One day it burst into the open as we walked across Union Square.

"Look," I started. "You tricked me into marrying you with a little help from your 'salts and sugars' and conned me into bringing you to America with that 'I will change' routine. Those 'salts and sugars' were drugs, weren't they?"

"They only herbs that I use for nutritional purposes."

"Oh, like the herbs you used with Alfredo in Italy to heighten your sexual experience?"

"Stop it Hollander! You cause me nerves!"

“Then tell the truth, you took drugs with Alfredo in Italy to come better.”

“Yes, now leave me alone.”

“Not yet. This lawyer of yours that we’ll see will probably fulfill the scheme you had from the beginning of getting a permanent green card so that you can make lots of money in the sex industry here. Even bring over your mother. Naturally, the lawyer will charge you, but maybe you can trade some sex for his services. I’m sure you’ll try.” Dark Angel just looked straight ahead churning inside. “Don’t you think it would be fair to reimburse me for some of my expenses and time that I put into helping you pursue a legitimate career here? Not the stripping and prostitution but the modeling work. The people I introduced you to, the research, composing your letters, advise on how to deal with Americans, going to meetings with you and explaining them afterwards. When you accepted my marriage proposal and on other occasions, we did talk about my helping you with your legitimate career. So when you used my help, it was the same as a verbal acceptance of the offer. I might even have a lawsuit against you for breach of contract.”

“You son of a bitch!” She yelled, hauling off and slamming me with a haymaker to the back. She just missed my spine probably because my martial arts class taught me to keep my back erect at all times, so the muscles protected the backbone. Still, it hurt. Dark Angel was no weakling at 150 pounds of lap-dancing muscle. Rather than decking her, to my surprise, I just kept walking, assuming she meant “no.” Why didn’t I just punch that whore out? What decayed depths of my unconscious made a girl hitting me in anger seem natural and acceptable—more traditional gentlemanly programming or feminazi intimidation?

“You want me to pay you so I can stay in America,” she accused.

“I didn’t say that. You’re going to get what you started scheming for back when we first met in Moscow. Don’t you think you owe me a little for the hell you knowingly caused me and the time you cost me in your single minded drive for fortune and stripper glory.”

“I’m an artist—not a stripper. I owe you nothing!”

What did I expect from a Russian prostitute? Fairness, they just couldn’t understand. At least she would be out of my life—soon.

She reminded me of the joke where a prostitute accused a customer of rape. Judge to prostitute, “So when did you realize you were raped?” Prostitute to judge, “When the check bounced!” Judge, “Guilty!”

A few days later, I traveled to Washington D.C. for a convention on space exploration to start moving forward with the remainder of my life, since Dark Angel would soon take up residence in my dustbin of history. At four in the morning my hotel room telephone rings, it’s Dark Angel.

“Why are you calling me?” I asked.

“I didn’t mean to call you, just to see what your room number was, but the operator rang your room. I sorry, I wake you.”

“Goodnight,” and as I hung up, I knew she was checking that I was in D.C., so she could go out hoing one of her customers. This slut never stopped running a con.

On October 30<sup>th</sup>, Dark Angel and I made our way around the tickertape parade for the Championship Yankees to the office of the lawyer she found. Peter Petrovich was a Russian lawyer in his thirties working as a paralegal for the firm Kuba, Mundy and Associates, which specialized in immigration matters—largely for Russians. Both Kuba and

Mundy were descendants from Russian Jews. Petrovich told us he still needed to pass the New York Bar Exam before he could start practicing law here.

New York and other states require Russian lawyers to pass the bar exam before allowing them to practice in America. The states aren't worried about the Russian inability to tell right from wrong—few America lawyers are capable of that distinction, or if they are, they see it as a distinction without a difference when it concerns cash flow. The states are concerned that the legal education in Russia consists mainly of knowing who to pay and how much. In America, it still takes some knowledge of the law to effectively advise and fleece clients.

When Petrovich started giving us legal advice, it surprised me because he wasn't supposed to do that. But I didn't complain, he spoke fluent Russian, which helped Dark Angel understand, and I needed Dark Angel's belief in his advice to get her out of my apartment.

I told Petrovich, "We want to go our separate ways, but she still wants to work in America and be able to obtain a permanent green card in July 2002, when her temporary residency ends."

Dark Angel started to cry. I assumed she was trying to pull at Petrovich's heartstrings hoping for a reduction in fees. I was sure later she would pull another part of him for the same reason.

"There will be a problem, if she applies for a permanent residency after a divorce. The INS will likely require her to leave for Russia." Now, I knew why Dark Angel started crying, but she missed her cue and began before Petrovich delivered his rehearsed line. These two refugees from the Communist Block obviously worked out this routine to

convince me to keep Dark Angel in my apartment and the marriage in tact because it would save her money. I was sure she had already pulled that other part of Petrovich.

“No, no, no, no.” I said, “That’s not the law. We can divorce now, and she still can become a permanent resident under the marriage termination waiver [8 U.S.C. § 1186a(c)(4)(B)] or the hardship waiver [8 U.S.C. § 1186a(c)(4)(A)]. We both know that once an alien spouse is admitted to the country, it’s virtually impossible to deport her. It’ll just take more effort and money on her part.”

“Just a minute. Let me run that by Mr. Mundy to make sure, and if so, what we need to do.” Petrovich left to consult with Nicholas Mundy.

When he returned, he said, “All right, Mr. Mundy says it shouldn’t be a problem if we do the following. You two can separate now, but it would look better to the Immigration Authorities to sign a legal separation agreement next year. Since you were married this year, a separation agreement dated next year creates the impression of a marriage that lasted at least a year. The authorities don’t look to close at these things.”

I laughed inside, typical dishonest Russian and crooked American lawyer. Clearly, Dark Angel and Mundy had discussed the marriage termination and hardship waivers but she vetoed both because of the cost. I saw why Dark Angel chose this firm. She, Petrovich and Mundy should get along well together. She’d probably also end up in bed with Mundy in return for free legal work.

Petrovich continued, “One year after signing the separation agreement, the divorce will become effective. Then we will need Roy’s help with immigration to file an affidavit in which he says that the marriage fell apart from cultural differences, incompatibility or some other reason. Is that fine with both of you?”

That part meant my lying to the INS, which I didn't like, so I played for time to do some more legal research and run it by a lawyer friend of mine from Harvard. For the moment, I agreed, not wanting Dark Angel to spend any more time in my apartment than necessary. We made an appointment for January to sign the legal separation agreement.

On our way home, Dark Angel said she would probably not have another boyfriend after we separated. I laughed.

“What is it with you? Do you really think I believe that? Do you think I care? I'll show you how much I care. I'm not going to Disney World with you.” Back in August when I still hoped she'd change, we made reservations to go to Disney World in Florida for her twenty-fifth birthday on November 10, 2000.

She coldly insisted, “We make reservations to go and we go.”

“Go with one of your customers. The plane and the hotel room are already paid for. Invite your favorite customer. Surprise him with the fantasy that you're spending money on him rather than the other way around.”

“I have no one else to go with and I will not go alone. You promised.”

Not this again, I'm bound by my promises, but she's not by hers. I was fed up with keeping my word to a harlot and vowed after Disney World—never again.

It turned out I enjoyed Disney World despite Dark Angel's presence, lots of decent entertainment far from her line of work.

After our Florida vacation, Dark Angel found an apartment in Astoria, Queens and arranged to move out December 4<sup>th</sup>—yes! She told me a few times that once she left there was no return. I hoped so, but on one occasion she added, “Once I am gone, something bad,

very bad, even death will happen to you. All I need do is get my Russian friends to hurt you.”

My mind instantly pulled up a scene from the movie *Casablanca*. After all, like Rick, I too owned a saloon, well, a tiny part of a saloon called the “Casablanca” in Cambridge, Massachusetts. Its main attraction consisted of paintings of scenes from the movie. My response to Dark Angel’s threat seemed appropriate, “Go ahead, you’ll be doing me a favor.” She didn’t get it. She just looked puzzled and went into the bedroom to do magic, which, despite my nihilism, caused my instinct for survival to give me pause to wonder what kind of black magic Dark Angel was now brewing.

I went to the bedroom, pounded on the door until she opened it and confronted her about the rituals she daily performed.

She laughed menacingly and denied doing anything but exercises, “Magic exists only in fairy tales for children, my darling husband.”

“Then why do you practice it with divination cards, candles and incense? Why do you believe in reading palms and in astrology?”

“I don’t believe in such nonsense and never did,” she claimed.

“Now that’s a Nixonian lie if I heard one. You’ve been an advocate of magic since I met you. Are you trying to rewrite history the way the Communists did in your country?”

“She said magic is for scared little children and I not child,” then promptly closed the door and locked it for another ritual.

### Do You Believe in Magic

I finally went to the law library to research what Mundy and Petrovich wanted me to do so that Dark Angel would receive a permanent green card. Their scheme scowled at me

from the law books. In order for Dark Angel to receive a permanent green card after our divorce, she needed to prove to Immigration that she entered into our marriage in “good faith.” That meant she married in order to establish a life with me and with the intention of fulfilling her marital obligations rather than just to obtain a green card. A crucial piece of evidence for proving her “good faith” was an affidavit sworn to by me that the marriage fell apart because of incompatibility or some other innocuous reason, and, as far as I knew, she didn’t marry me primarily to gain entry into the United States. All of that meant perjury, which for the ordinary citizen didn’t matter since the prosecutors rarely went after this type of perjury, but for me, a lawyer, subject to disciplinary actions by a special court committee, it meant the possible lost of my license to practice law. By signing such an affidavit, Dark Angel would always have a club over my head. True, a club that rationally would harm her as well by threatening her residence status in America, but still people don’t always make rational decisions. The thirst for vengeance leads many to desperate acts inconsistent with reason. It didn’t require a fortune teller to imagine Dark Angel’s involvement in the sex industry leading her into a situation where desperation or vindictiveness might overcome reason with her deciding to take both of us down or at least threatening to do so, unless I provided some type of favor—probably money.

My attorney friend Jeff gave me his take on the affidavit Mundy and Petrovich wanted. Jeff was probably the most intelligent guy I knew, a graduate of Harvard Law. We first met working on a state senate campaign of a mutual buddy in Boston. Over the next twenty-five years we kept in touch. I respected his advice.

“Don’t do it,” he said. “She’ll have something on you for the rest of your life. The INS doesn’t care if some alien lies to them, but if they learn that a lawyer did, they’ll lick



their lips from ear to ear and do everything they can to take away your license. It makes no sense to put your livelihood at risk for her. You've got what you wanted. She already paid the deposit and first month's rent on her apartment. From what you tell me about her cheapness, she wouldn't forego that money just because you refused to do what her lawyer wants. Tell her you won't perjure yourself for her. She's the criminal not you."

Jeff was right and I told Dark Angel.

"You told my lawyer you would help me with green card and you will!" She angrily demanded stomping her foot.

"I'm not going to lie to the INS for you. I'm not going to jeopardize my ability to practice law for a slut from the former Soviet Union!"

"You liar! I will not allow this!" She grabbed her purse on the dining room, pulled the black handle steak knife she always carried, but I grabbed her arm before she could start flaying away. "You son of a bitch! You will pay for this!" She shouted, until I made her drop the knife. Then the tears and like a kid she ran into the bedroom slamming the door.

Early the following morning, shortly after Dark Angel crawled into her bed around 4:30 in the morning after a lucrative night of stripping, I awoke or thought I awoke. To this day, I am not sure whether what I saw was a nightmare, shadows in the dark or real. A small dark skin girl, maybe four feet high, wearing only a grass shirt with beads and charms strung around her neck, frantically whirled in a manic dance in the middle of the bedroom equal distance from the sleeping Dark Angel and me. The apparition, spirit or illusion looked around eight years old with its hair standing up like a bunch of straw tied in the middle. Its face, a black cloud with no features except two burning red coals for eyes. The left hand swung a tomahawk menacingly while the right drew symbols in the air. I assumed

it one of Dark Angel's minions either protecting her or casting a black magic spell to make me do something, keep me from doing something or help her get revenge. Unfamiliar with what to do in this situation, I decided or dreamed I decided to keep an eye on it. If it moved toward me, then I would attack; otherwise, wait for the sanity of the sun to arise. But my resolve failed, I immediately fell back to sleep or the nightmare ended—I don't know which.

When I got up later that morning, I realized Dark Angel had once again launched an offensive against me using her Russian magic and psychic powers to manipulate me into perjuring myself before the INS so that she could continue the nightly satiation of her feral lust for the money in America. My decision not to go along with her lawyer's fraud on the INS jeopardized an easy and cheap route to a permanent green card. She would use any means available to make me sign that affidavit. I needed to prepare a defense to Dark Angel's supernatural and female duplicitous influence, so I telephoned Carmen, but the soonest appointment was not until early December, three weeks away and just after Dark Angel moved out. Three weeks seemed years with all the lunacy swirling around me. I felt like an exiled mortal thrown into the mist of the underworld's celebration of Halloween in the "Night on Bald Mountain" section of the movie *Fantasia*. Dark Angel's eyes glaring hatred reminded me of the horned demon directing the madness in the movie. Then, as the fates willed, a longtime friend, Cheryl, called to see whether I wanted to go to Puerto Rico with her over the Thanksgiving holidays. I jumped at the chance. Before boarding the plane for a week in sunny, warm and friendly young girls with brown eyes Puerto Rico, I borrowed a book on Russian magic from my tutor. Time that I studied what the bane plaguing my life used against me.

Ironically—I'm getting tired of this word cropping up in my life—Cheryl and I met on my first trip to Russia at a nomenklatura conference in the Kremlin in 1991 when the allegedly former commie bureaucrats were still trying to figure out how to enrich themselves at the expense of Americans. On that trip, it seemed every one of those bureaucrats proclaimed himself a dedicated capitalist, but was more accurately an incorrigible con artist pushing some get-rich-quick scheme or another in which Americans would hand over cash to Russians who knew nothing about finance but guaranteed returns in the hundreds and even thousands of percent—right out of Abbot and Costello.

Cheryl attended the conference as a professor of accounting from a large university in New York. In her do-gooder way, she believed, as did all the Americans at the conference, including me, that the Communists wanted to learn about accounting, business, economics and law in order to change from state syndicalism to a fair and free market. The world, however, now knows these converts to capitalism just wanted to learn how to cover up their stealing from the scrutiny of foreign investors because they, unlike Westerners, knew Russia was a kleptocracy with them as the kleptomaniacs.

Cheryl actively championed feminist causes while I considered feminists nothing more than modern-day Nazis out to destroy the freedoms guaranteed by the Constitution in order to impose their own self-serving brand of thought, speech and action on all Americans, whether they liked it or not. So to both our surprise, we became friends and hangout ever so often. I actually found Cheryl's feminazi tenet of taking charge of the logistics pleasing. Whenever we did something together, she assumed the burden of making the plans and executing all the little details. She made all the arrangements for our Puerto Rico trip while I just went along for the ride. In fact, I couldn't have picked a better hotel or time. When

we arrived, the Miss Teen Puerto Rico pageant filled the hotel with three days of photo opportunities of lovely young teenyboppers wearing swimsuits, miniskirts and comely smiles. I chatted up a few, what a delight. None tried to censure my speech or demean me for following my genes. They knew why I was talking to them and played their roles with a smile, grace and an attack of pheromones to put me under their spells. However, the curse of Dark Angel kept my heart from further pursuit, so I turned my attention to learning about the Russian occult.

My tutor's magic book explained a lot about Dark Angel:

- Witches must wear their hair long for making magic, which explained why Dark Angel refused to cut her hair even when model photographers advised her that short hair would increase her chances in finding jobs.
- To make a man a slave, a woman puts menstrual blood in his food. Dark Angel already told me about this trick, but now I wondered whether she used it along with the narcotics on me.
- To make a woman fall in love, it was necessary that a charm be secretly placed in her bed, and one type of charm placed under a women's pillow would cause her to confess her adultery. That's why Dark Angel freaked when I playfully put my hand under her pillow one night. She feared my using magic to make her love me or confess her adulterous activities.
- To destroy a sex partner, bury a glove of the lover and he will pine away. I remembered the two pairs of gloves that vanished from my apartment in December 1999 after Dark Angel stayed with me. I guess she took them just in case, and now that the case occurred, one of my gloves, if not all, probably lay beneath the earth.
- Against the evil eye or sorcery witchcraft, wear braided hair—it will entangle the sorcerer's eyes. In the beginning of our relationship, Dark Angel's hair always hung loose, but after I told her about my visiting a voodoo priestess to protect me from her, she always wore her hair braided except at work where the men enjoyed long, perfumed hair falling over their faces and groins.
- A person who sleeps with his head to the north will soon die. What a lovely young lady, trying to dupe me into speeding my demise with the rearrangement of the bedroom to fit her bed.

- Words, numbers and symbols are identified with the forces of nature and of a person's own psyche. Through them the sorceress summons and controls the power of her mind and the forces of nature. Dark Angel always drew symbols and numbers on the letters she sent me, which I stupidly thought cute expressions of her inner child. I now knew the only thing inside her, besides numerous men, was a demon. And when she returned from her vacation to Krasnodar and Cyprus in September, she started using strange words, neither Russian nor English, whenever the conversation turned to her nefarious acts. Most likely casting a spell to muddle my thoughts.
- Two triangles symbolize the spirit that controls the physical body while the drawing of an eye represented the evil spirit. When Dark Angel first moved into my apartment, she put, half-hidden under an end table, a drawing with a huge eye inside of two triangles. Using evil spirits to control me for her evil ends.
- Rings are worn for protection, which explained the plethora of them on Dark Angel's fingers. I never saw anyone with so many rings. At least she didn't put any in her nose.
- Witches take the energy from living things to help fuel their personal magic. That explained why the plant I bought her died so quickly. She just sucked all the energy out of the little thing as she did with men.
- Witches charge candles with their magic that releases when burned, but if someone physically alters a candle then the magic might back fire on the witch. No wonder Dark Angel threw a fit when I removed wax from one of her candles to make it light easier. She feared I had reversed her magic to affect her instead of me.

Looked like I married a witch or someone who believed she was a witch. Drugs in my food, duplicity and infliction of emotional distress weren't enough for Dark Angel—she attacked on all levels. Except for the occult, I believed I could handle anymore assaults for I had grown up dealing with another malevolent female—my mother. But Dark Angel's use of satanic forces gave me pause. I still didn't fully believe in the power of the arcane arts in America, probably out of a premonition that if I did, I was doomed for certain. Assuming sorcery existed, Dark Angel must have studied and practiced it all her life while I knew next to nothing about witchcraft except for reading my tutor's book and a visit to the voodoo priestess Carmen. If Dark Angel could control forces that modern science didn't know

about or manipulate known forces in ways science couldn't explain, how could I defend myself? I couldn't.

On the other hand, if all this mumbo jumbo represented the ravings of a psychopath bent on power, then my believing would pull me into a dark, twisted realm where goblins, gremlins and ghosts ruled the oceans of the mind. The power of magic might lie not in the witch but the belief in the mind of the victim. I chose a schizophrenic course—belief and disbelief. I'd use Carmen and the book to try to protect me from the black arts, but my belief in empiricism to keep Dark Angel from sucking me into a medieval nightmare of the mind. My strategy allowed me to find solace in the warning at the end of my tutor's book in which the author talked about someone like Dark Angel: "If you practice magic to control someone, then someone else will control you. If you practice magic to satisfy your ego, something will come along to crush it." Following my both sides against the middle approach, I conducted a few self-protection rituals in the sand by the ocean as prescribed in the book.

Despite Dark Angel, I enjoyed Puerto Rico. Ever since my first trip to the Amazon ten years earlier, "south of the border" remained close to my heart with its leisurely place of life, friendly girls, sunny days and the jungle—the one place that flowed into my soul making me feel like I belonged there. I actually thought about moving to the Ecuadorian rain forests, but like an idiot ended up going to Russia instead. It was too late to go back. Thanks to the stock market's latest round of thievery, I no longer could afford to live in Latin America without working, and thanks to wasting years with Russia, I had reached an age prohibitive of my finding a job in South America. All employers worldwide discriminate against the middle-aged.

Cheryl and I traveled around the island in the balmy weather to sunny beaches, a tropical rain forest, a jungle farm of a friend of hers and to clubs. But ever present in my mood the unchangeable fact of the stupidity of my life as exemplified by my involvement with a tart like Dark Angel. All my life, I kept making dumb decisions. I went in this direction, then that, then changed again always throwing away opportunities until I reached the age where none apparently existed. Labor, politics, media, law and business management, what the devil caused me to go in all these directions that only resulted in more and more misery? Life was, after all, fundamentally simple. When young, everyone hits on an activity, an endeavor that thrills the heart, widens the eyes and intrigues the mind. All anyone need do then is to go after it and keep after it—simple. But parents, teachers, contemporaries and the mass media always assume the self-righteous, all-knowing mantle of foisting their own biases to turn people around and pressure them to pursue lives they otherwise would not. The social trend of the moment or the selfish designs of others often sidetracks most folk.

To me, since I lived it, one of the most deleterious external influences occurs when a child's primary care giver, usually the mother, uses fear tactics, anger, stinging criticism and pessimism to pummel the child into conduct that serves the image the mother wants to project to a particular community—traditional, as in my childhood, or political correctionalism, as today. Under such an assault of subjugation, the child internalizes a deadly trinity of traits—fear, hostility and negativity—that destroys from within any outward accomplishments the grown child subsequently seeks. All my life this trinity of gorgons kept me from exploring the mysteries of the universe through physics, literature and poetry until I reached the age when nothing more matter than to have spent the most

productive years of my life on the road of those activities, which, thanks to the irreversibility of time was now impossible. That realization tormented me every day.

In the tropical rain forest on Puerto Rico, I felt comfortable thinking about escaping the outrageous fortune of my life. Here, next to nature, the quick solution seemed inviting and easy. But I loathed benefiting the Russian whore with any irreversible acts by me that would allow her to inherit even a kopeck of my depleted wealth while she shed crocodile tears. I needed to sever all the legal bonds between us—then perhaps I could return to the jungle for its peace.

With our suitcases, Cheryl and I flew back to the reality—for me the hell—of our lives in New York.

#### You Better Move On

A few more days and Dark Angel would at least be out of my apartment, but before that day of deliverance, I still had to deal with this nutcase.

“Roy,” she cooingly said with her innocent smile. “Why don’t you help me with the INS? I can do something for you, if you’ll help me.”

“There’s nothing you can do for me, nothing I want from you other than to move your sorry carcass out of here. I told you before. I’m not risking my license to practice law by perjuring myself before a government agency. Offer them sex for a permanent green card, that’s how you get everything else.”

Her eyes squinted in malice, “You better not interfere with me staying here or I will have you broken like your coffee cup!”

The eve of Dark Angel’s departure, her fellow lap dancer, Tatianna, stayed over to help with the move in the morning. I attended an apartment warming party at Mark and his



girlfriend's new abode and used the occasion to celebrate the imminent departure of Dark Angel. When I returned home, my wife and Tatianna were somewhat drunk watching the E! Television channel showing people prancing around with little clothing. It must have made the two feel normal. The show, *Wild On*, featured Italy and one segment showed a famous plaza in Venice.

Dark Angel turned to Tatianna and bragged, "I've been there."

I responded, "Yeah, she was there with one of her boyfriends, Alfredo from Mexico."

Tatianna chided me, "You shouldn't be jealous of Angelina's boyfriends before you went out with her."

That was my opening, "I'm not. Angel didn't go there with Alfredo before I met her. She went there with him two and a half months after I married her."

Tatianna looked surprised, "I don't believe it."

"It's true, ask her," I continued. "When Angel went to Italy with Alfredo for sex and money, we were already married—not just going out, but married! What would you do, if your husband did that?"

"Kill him!" Tatianna replied without a second thought.

I looked at Dark Angel. She didn't say anything, no protestations, no excuses and certainly no admissions, just the usual stony Russian silence when confronted with the truth. But her cheery mood clearly changed as she glowered at the TV set. I had humiliated her. Even though it was before a fellow Russian whore, it cracked the pretense that these sluts live by. I went to bed, disgusted as usual.

Before getting up the next morning on December 4, 2000, Dark Angel asked me to hold her while she lay in bed. I did, but I didn't buy this umpteenth attempted con to exploit my sympathy or make me think the truth false and her lies true. Her feigned affection was not going to con me into helping her obtain a permanent green card.

She said with a few manufactured tears glistening in her eyes, "I liked you in the beginning, but you became too aggressive to me."

"And I have grown weary of counting all your lies and all your alibis. I saw more in you than there was, and that was my only fault."

"When someone causes another harm it is the will of God to clear the victim's soul. The victim should be thankful that something worse did not happen and take a lesson from the injury."

"That's easy for you to say when you're the one causing the pain."

"You caused me pain too, Roy."

"Only when I threatened your scheme to get to America to make money selling your body. That's the only pain you ever felt—the fear you couldn't trick me, which would cost you money. So, according to your philosophy, what happens to the person who causes the pain?" I asked.

"The victim should not worry about it."

"Oh, I guess I should believe that you did something good for me, and now that your low life ways have gotten you what you want, I should not worry about you getting your comeuppance. Man, you're either worst or dumber than the Angel in the *Maltese Falcon*. Okay, goddess, will you ever answer for the pain you caused me?"

"I have enough pain."

She's was impossible, absolutely impossible, I thought. A truck should run over this slut. I went to the bathroom.

Just before the movers came, she went into her crying again.

“Now, what are you crying about?” I said laughing because her whole sympathy routine looked liked the tired old trick she would eventually turn into. To quote a Rolling Stones' song, “By the time you're thirty, gonna look fifty-five. You wouldn't look pretty, and your friends will have kissed you goodbye.”

“Just emotions,” she said.

“When you move into your new address, don't forget to send a change of address card to the Post Office.”

“My lawyers said I should not. It better that Immigration think I still live here until we officially separate in January.” Still running her fraud, but if the INS asks me when she moved out, I was telling the truth.

“How will you get your mail then?”

“You can bring it to me,” she grinned.

I said to myself, no way baby, I don't want to see anymore of you and decided to put in a change of address card for her myself.

She continued smiling, “Once I have my apartment set up and before I go home for the holidays, I want you to visit me.”

My antenna detected something amiss with that. Why did she want to see me in her apartment? It could only be for some scheming reason to further some interest of hers while harming me. Her heart harbored no fondness for me or any man.

“No,” I said. “I hope I never seen you again.”

No response, just more phony tears.

The movers, two guys, showed and I helped load the truck. I watched her drive away with them wondering how she would use her “charms” to reduce their fees.

### Black Magic Woman

Dark Angel was gone, but I knew I needed to cleanse my apartment of her curses and protect me from anymore of her black magic.

I saw Carmen four days later. “Welcome back,” she said. “I see you wish you had listened to me the first time.”

“That’s an understatement,” I replied.

“When did we last meet?”

“Back in June, before I made the dumb mistake of bringing my prostitute wife to America.”

“Ah, yes, the Russian,” Carmen said. “Now I remember all.”

I gave her another photo of Dark Angel and some of her hair. Carmen blew smoke from her cigar, just as she did the last time, to see the evil spirits Dark Angel sent to spy and harm me. She went into a trance shouting at the spirits and banging her wooden staff on the floor to exorcise them from our presence.

“Now we can talk without any prying eyes,” Carmen said coming out of her trance. She shuffled her tarot cards and started dealing them into three rows. “Yes, I see.... Your wife uses three different names to keep people from connecting the acts of one with the others.”

“I never thought about that, but you are right: Angel, Angelina and Alina. She also uses ‘we’ when writing about herself, but I assumed she referred to her and her mother.”

“No, not her mother, although I see great evil in the mother. There are older and fouler things from the depths of the earth. Your wife thinks of herself as three people: good, bad and psychic, which allows her to shift from one to another so as to accept whatever she does and feel self-righteous towards anyone who crosses her.”

“So she’s the good girl when someone accuses her of doing bad, the bad girl when she wants something she doesn’t deserve and the psychic to protect herself and harm others. How convenient,” I remarked.

“Right. She believes herself capable of destroying men while effectively pretending to be a naïve, innocent victim. She loves no man but is only out to get money—that is her love. She wants to make as much money as she can while still young and pretty. I’ve told you this before that she set the course for her life when sixteen to make money with her body, looks and personality. She promised herself that she would not be a good girl but a bitch and make money like crazy off of men. She generally chooses her victims based on their good heartedness and wealth because she knows a compassionate man is easier for her to trick out of his money. Usually her victims fall in love with the false image she creates, and when they do, when they are vulnerable, she springs her trap getting what she wants from them. She is greedy, grasping and duplicitous. Hates men and believes that she has created in herself a machine for destroying men. She likes girls, however. She will soon try to stop you in any way, to destroy you!”

“To stop me from what? I interrupted with surprise. “We’re separated. I’m not going to help her get a permanent green card, but I don’t intend to stop her either. I’d like to see her pursue a legitimate career, but that’s beyond my power. What does she want to stop me from doing?”

“You will do something you believe is just that threatens her getting the green card. But for now she wants vengeance. She wants to hurt you. You were the only one who tried to take her out of her bad life, tried to help her leave a depraved life that she had committed herself to as the realization of herself in this life. She wanted you to accept her in her life style as it was. She wanted you to accept everything she did, but you would not. She resented your efforts to help her put aside her life-long aim of making money from men and getting revenge on them. Your efforts forced her to look behind the mask where she hid from herself to at least glimpse the evil she became and the absurdity of pretending to be three different people. She wants revenge because you rejected her.”

Carmen continued, “She is lying to you. She will try to make you believe she is staying away from you. She will use magic to get into your mind, then approach you with tears and a phony story to get back into your life. Once back in, she will set off on her plan of revenge and try to weasel money out of you. Your wife and the spirit of your mother fight each other. Your mother is the guardian angel protecting you from your wife.”

I didn’t contradict Carmen about my mother this time. But if my “thank goodness she’s dead” caregiver was the only force protecting me, I was doomed.

“You must no longer feel sorry for your wife. She has no feelings of sympathy for you—only hate. She will try to force her mind into you. You must be stronger in mind than her. She will want you to pay her money. She will ask for money based on a phony story. Everything for her is money. “

“Your wife gets away with many things. Do not try to bring her to justice; just keep her away from you. You must be careful in the street because she may send someone to hurt you. Your wife blinded you from the beginning with her magic and fake personality, but

your guardian angel protects you. Let your wife be, stay away from her, or she will send someone to mug you to put you to the hospital. Be careful of a package coming to your door; it will blow up. Be careful of letters you do not expect. She has plans for you if you do not help her get a green card, so let her get it but do no more. Do not warn her about anything. She is now talking to two men about her 'life story' with tears in her eyes trying to get them after you. She is using black magic to get her way."

"Whew," I reacted. "She is one vindictive young lady, and after all I did for her. The guys are probably her lawyer and his Russian paralegal. I'll be honest with you, if justice demands I take her down, then I'm going to do it no matter what the threat or the cost." Carmen didn't realize that all the talk about danger took me back to when I did a little undercover work for the "Village Voice" against one of Roy Cohn's mob judges—the danger made it worth doing.

"Be careful then. As you know, she is not a weak American girl but ruthless and powerful. She has friends. It's better for you to let the past drift away with the water."

"So what do I do to protect against her magic?" I asked.

"Put this cross inside your pillow, read Psalms 23 and 62 in the morning and at night before bed. Take this plant. People who work bad magic kill living things."

"I know. She killed a plant I once gave her."

"But this plant will prevent your wife from doing bad things to you. Keep it near your bed and water it once a week and give it this medicine. For 21 days put in your bath this Cascarella, scrap a little of this chalk into the water so there is a film on it and pour a little out of this bottle. Lie in the tub, pray and relax. Ask the universe to cleanse and protect you while pouring water over your head with your hands three times, then wash

yourself. As soon as you get home today, use some of this potion to wet the floor in front of your door and say, ‘This is to dispel any evil that tries to come into my house.’”

“Thanks Carmen.”

“I hope you follow my advice this time.”

“Maybe, we’ll see.”

### Talk To Me, Talk To Me

I followed Carmen’s procedures to block Dark Angel’s magic but not her advice to help my wife get a permanent green card.

One morning I awoke with a start. It hadn’t clicked earlier, but now the realization of another Dark Angel trick burst from my unconscious onto the surface. Perhaps Carmen’s warnings had released the bubble of danger, or the toll that living with Dark Angel had taken on my health, emotions and metaphysical well-being had so befuddled my consciousness that it no longer functioned effectively. Her trick looked so obvious, how did I miss it? Dark Angel probably found another way to slip me narcotics by putting them in some of the other food I ate that she didn’t prepare such as tea, coffee, creamer or snacks. It made sense; when it came to intrigue, this Commie was a pro. When I stopped eating her dinners in front of her and no longer displayed the subservient malleability of narcotic poisoning, she probably realized I threw her dinners away. Not to allow an obstacle to stand in her way, she found an alternate route for feeding me her “little helpers.” Maybe that’s why I didn’t kick her out right after she returned from Cyprus, waited for her to find a lawyer and even traveled to Disney World with her—yuck! I bolted out of bed to the kitchen—dumped every package, bag and bottle, including the alcohol, whether opened or not because if she



couldn't put drugs in it, she likely cast a spell on it. I also made an appointment with my doctor for drug testing.

The telephone and health insurance bills for November came in and Dark Angel owed me some money. I contacted her about the bills and expenses and suggested she send me a check.

"I don't like to use checks," she said. That's because the I.R.S. can subpoena them from a bank to estimate a taxpayers expenses and, in turn, income. "I have to go to a models show now. Can we meet to talk about this?" Red alert, red alert sounded; not only because of Carmen's warnings, but my own instinct. Still I agreed, hoping it the last time and we arranged to meet a few days later.

In the meantime, I visited my doctor for drug screening. I described my symptoms from when Dark Angel put "salts and sugars" in my food just before our wedding and the intermittent recurrences of these indications throughout the relationship.

"Clearly narcotics of some type," he said. "But I couldn't say which ones, and since she moved out a couple of weeks ago, I doubt the tests will show anything. Narcotics pass through the body's systems quickly." He was right; the tests came out negative.

Dark Angel and I met in front of "Today's Man" on Fifth Avenue—no greeting kisses between us.

"Here are the bills, so what do you want to talk about?" I asked.

"Not here in the street. It too noisy, is there some place to go and sit?" Like every female on this planet, she'd do anything to sit down. Even squeeze her butt into a space on a subway seat too small for a fat rat and then wonder why the people she uninvitingly wedged her ass against didn't welcome her familiarity.

I thought a little and said, “The Association of the Bar of the City of New York is down 44<sup>th</sup> Street. We can talk there.”

At the Bar, a stately building of marble and limestone built in the 19<sup>th</sup> Century, we walked up to the second floor and found an empty, large, sedate, front conference-room with twenty-foot ceilings.

When we sat down, I noticed Dark Angel put her purse in her lap, which I never saw her do before. She always put it on the floor. I immediately suspected the knife with which she once tried to stab me or a tape recorder. Both represented weapons. She might lose her temper, and, this time, succeed at stabbing me, or record our conversation that her crooked lawyers would threaten to twist against me unless I lied to the INS. They might even edit it to make me say something I didn't.

“What's in the purse Angel,” I asked accusingly.

“Nothing,” her tongue snaked over her lips.

“Let me see.”

“No!”

“Let me see!” I demanded.

“No, I don't want you going through my purse.”

“Because you have something to hide, I'll bet. Then put it over there by the wall.”

“I will not!” She carried something inside she wanted close to her.

“If you don't then, I'm leaving.”

She got up and put the bag against the wall and I motioned for us to move to the other end of the conference table far away from the bag.

“Here are copies of the bills.” I said. “You can figure out what you owe me and send me a postal money order, since you don’t like checks.” She folded them up.

“Roy why you not keep your promise to help me with green card?”

Trying to play on a man’s honor again. “I told you. For me to sign the affidavit that Mundy and Petrovich want means I will have to lie.”

“But you lie before.”

“No Angel, it is you who lied before. I kept my promises but not this time. Don’t try to make me out as the bad guy here. I’ve had enough of that Commie reversal routine.”

“But you promised!”

“That was before I realized why you and your two lawyers wanted an affidavit from me.”

“They simply try to help me become permanent resident.”

“Oh, don’t give me that innocent young girl routine. You three knew that once I signed that affidavit you would always have something on me. I’m not going to lie to the INS for you Angel.”

“But I will help you in the future,” she replied.

“You’re real good at making promises, so long as the other person does something to benefit you first. Not this time Angel. I’ve had too much experience with your false promises. You’ll promise anything to get what you want because you have no intention of keeping it. You’re nothing but a pathological lying con artist. I’m not going to lie for you and that’s it!”

I got up to leave, but she lurched at me from her seat, I put up my hand to push her back when she stuck her sharpened pinky fingernail into my finger. Angel always kept the nail on her right pinky finger long and sharp as weapon.

“Damn it! You cut me,” I said as she stood up in front of me a good three inches taller in her street shoes, dressed all in black with her braided dyed blonde hair and glaring eyes of malice.

I shook some of the blood off and Dark Angel recoiled in horror looking to see whether any of my blood got on her. Weird, would she melt if some of my blood touched on her?

“I want you to help me!” she shouted with a stamp of her foot—that horse again.

“I’m not putting myself in a position where you can destroy my license to practice law.” I then tried to leave, but she grabbed my wrist. I could have easily slipped her hold, but then she might yell rape in the quiet, august halls of the Bar Association. If we were in Russia, she could scream her head off, people would come but no one would believe her—not so in Feminarchy America.

“Let go of me,” I said.

“Not until you listen.”

Then I raised my voice, “Let go, damn it!”

She did, I tried to move around her towards the door, but she kept positioning herself in front of me. How unfair of American society that a girl can use violence against a man to get what she wants, but for me to deck her in self defense meant going to jail. To think the Feminazis complain they are oppressed—what a joke. Not only can they use violence because they know the police, and especially judges, will laugh at any guy complaining

about a girl assaulting him, they don't even need to worry about the guy using force to defend himself because then the criminal system will swarm over him, bankrupting him with legal fees and destroying his occupation, which means his life. In addition, females can also resort with impunity to their weapon of choice—the intentional infliction of emotional distress because it leaves no marks, no evidence. Their tongues are their guns and they use them all the time.

“Roy, I can cause big trouble for you if you don't help me,” as her eyes narrowed and stared down into mine in the typical Soviet inquisitorial and threatening manner. “Are you going to go along with my lawyers' plan?”

In the typical America response to commie threats, I said, “Drop dead!”

Then the tears started and she hugs me as the tears fell on my face, “I really liked you in the beginning. It not my fault we didn't work out. I still want to get together with you before I leave for Christmas.”

“No way!” I broke away from her dissembling hug and left thinking what a revolting experience that was, and in the Bar Association of all places.

Just for a lark, I stopped in the Today's Man store to see whether Dark Angel walked out to Fifth Avenue—sure enough. She turned north, and as I watched, she kept looking behind her by pretending to look in store windows to see whether I followed her. Now that was one paranoid whore.

### All In My Mind

Confident that Carmen's rituals protected me from Dark Angel's black magic, I started seeing a therapist in the hope of washing out of my mind the harm caused by my

wife. I never thought much of therapists—I wanted solutions, not a sympathetic ear. So I found a therapist through the Viktor Frankel Institute in Vienna, Austria.

Frankel survived Hitler's concentration camps to establish a third school of psychotherapy called logotherapy, which differed from Freud's psychoanalysis and Adler's individual psychology. Frankel taught that the primary motivation of the individual was the search for the meaning of his life, for a reason or purpose that justified his existence given the present situation in which he found himself. The meaning of life differed from man to man and changed over time for any one man, but at any point in a man's life, he had a specific mission unique to him that demanded fulfillment. Each significant situation in life represented a challenge and presented a problem to solve, so the meaning of a man's life at that moment was meeting the challenge and solving the problem. In doing so, the reason or purpose for life could involve creating a work, doing a deed, undergoing an experience, becoming involved with someone or taking an attitude toward unavoidable suffering that allows a person to bear it with dignity.

Frankel's tenets appealed to me. I needed a new reason for living to help leave behind the emotional damage caused by my stupidly believing that rescuing Angel from the hell of Russia had been my most recent purpose. After a few sessions of filling in my therapist on the facts of my life and the lunacy of my marriage, the rest of the sessions until the end of January 2001 went to the core of my problem with the Dark Angel, provided a psychological explanation for why I married her and helped me focus on my present purpose in life by exploring what I needed to do to pursue it and why throughout my life I had always turned away from that purpose of using physics for acquiring knowledge of the mysteries of existence.

Throughout December, my therapist deduced the following:

“Just because your wife no longer lives with you doesn’t mean you are free of her. She is still a tremendous distraction for you emotionally because of her past manipulation of you. She wanted power over you, and the way she obtained it was by making you feel as if you were the most important person in the world. She used negative means—lies, feigned emotions, pretenses and especially exploiting your sense of ethics and your good heartedness to get what she wanted from you. Spiritually when a person uses negative energy to get something, she is a thief. She stole your will and energy, so when you tried to focus on your own needs, you lacked the desire and power. To extricate yourself, you will have to go against your ethics not to help her anymore; otherwise, she will continue to have power over you. She will be back pleading for assistance again, but you have your own life to lead and cannot let others get in your way.”

“Your wife very effectively exploited the negativity programmed in you by your parents not to pursue your dreams of knowledge but to play it safe. She became your excuse not to go after what you wanted—exploring the mysteries of the universe either by working in the space exploration industry or going back to school to study physics. Your wife knew how to use that negativity. Sure, she told you to pursue the knowledge you desired, but when you look at her actions—not her words—she always drew you away from what you needed to do for yourself. She said go after your dream of learning about space and physics but distracted you with her demands and interruptions. She wanted you to take care of her, to sacrifice yourself to her. She knew those ingrained feelings of negativity from your parents only needed a little nudge to once again deter you, as they so often did, from going

after your dream. She manipulated and cajoled your energy to focus on helping her and not you.”

“She also adeptly used your human feeling of compassion to control you. There’s a Buddhist concept called ‘idiot compassion’ that refers to what happens when you feel compassion for sharks. You think that by acting above board, a shark will change, but it does not. People like your wife intentionally try to get others to feel sorry for them in order to take advantage. You needn’t worry anymore about your wife, she will replace you immediately because she must have a man or men to use. You mentioned that she once told you she could have any man she wanted. Well, she will quickly find another to feel ‘idiot compassion’ for her.”

“When your wife told you that your mother gave you an inferiority complex, she was actually right. Your mother, by repeatedly calling you a monster, wishing she never bore you and blaming you for her failure as a mother created feelings of unworthiness in you that caused you to believe that unless someone needed you, that person would not love you. Your mother made you believe that unless you performed well in school, made yourself useful or sacrificed yourself to her demands, you didn’t matter. Your father simply reinforced your mother because he left your rearing to her. The unconscious voices of your parents still tell you that your value exists in only what you have done that they approve of and that others will not like you unless you do something for them. Your wife clearly realized this and used it to get you to do things for her, which you confused for love when in reality it was merciless exploitation.”

“Your wife plots her every move, as do killers. Never discount her hidden motives. When she needs you, she is as sweet as can be, but beneath, she ruthlessly calculates the



path to her gain. To further her interests she can play the role of mother, wife, lover, nurse, partner and so on—she’s a chameleon. She has the versatility of geisha. Looking at the photographs of her, they appear to be of different women. She can change not just her act but physical appearance to fit the role. But underneath her false images, she doesn’t care what you feel about her, only that you give her what she wants. She takes positive images and imbues them with negative energy, so she can take advantage of someone. She frames a situation in positive terms, so a person will think he will benefit. Basically, she hides her evil behind her many masks. Just look at these photographs, the non-posed ones show the real her: she looks old, wiped out, her eyes empty, cold—no heart, no warmth, no empathy she just feeds off of others.”

“Think of your wife as a detour that took you far from yourself. Look at who you are, your values, beliefs and the things you have done in your life and compare them to your wife. Your wife would never join S.D.S. to oppose the Viet Nam War, never work in the McGovern Presidential campaign, never lead a workers’ strike at Columbia University, never use a position in the media to investigate corrupt politicians and businessmen, never quit a legal position in the U.S. Treasury Department in protest over the improper influence by a wealthy family on the I.R.S. and never travel to a backward country like Russia to try to help create a fair market economy by writing articles, making speeches and giving legal advice. Such deeds never enter your wife’s thoughts. She aspires to emulate the malevolence of those you fought against since your youth—those whom represented the arbitrary use of power and meanness of your parents. She conforms to evil because, perversely, it makes her feel good about herself, that she is in power, dominating and defeating others.”

“So that you understand, your wife is a psychopath. She is cold, cruel and ultimately a deception. She accurately perceives reality—except for her social and moral obligations—and pursues immediate gratification in criminal acts and sexual perversion and addiction. Her disregard for and violation of the rights of others probably began around the age of 15 years. Since then, she has believed herself above the code of civilized conduct. She walks away from situations without remorse by being indifferent to or rationalizing the hurt, mistreatment or theft she has done. Your wife reasons that since she suckered you—you deserved it. Because you got fooled, it was your fault—not hers. She doesn’t think herself responsible. By her rules, she can cheat anyone, harm anyone outside the circle of her and her mother. She deceives by repeated and often outrageous lying. She uses glibness, superficial charm and aliases to con others for personal profit, pleasure and to make them serve her. Her irritability, constant need for stimulation and parasitic lifestyle are overshadowed by her grandiose sense of self-worth. She may even think that her life is wonderful because she gets away with conduct that civilized people do not. Your involvement with this small time criminal made no sense given your life and standards.”

“Another way to understand the dynamic with your wife is to think about your life as having external and internal worlds. Your wants and needs exist in the internal—that’s where your dream of gaining knowledge about the secrets of the universe lies. A person’s internal world forms out of his home life. Too often in your life, you focused on the external by pursuing causes and work that didn’t satisfy your internal desire because for you the internal world is haunted by the discouragement and absence of warmth from your mother who raised you while your father pursued a public life in the external world. Whenever you enter the internal world now, you run into not one but two horrors—a

narcissistic, unfeeling mother and an equally narcissistic, psychopathic wife. To pursue your dream requires stepping back into the internal world that you naturally equate with the dread of experiencing another disaster like your mother or wife.”

“The similarities between your mother and wife help explain your recent behavior. Neither were there for you unless it served them in some way, and to them, you existed only at their pleasure and for their needs. Both did not respond normally to life’s events. Both accused you of doing what they were secretly doing—switching the guilt to you. Both refused to negotiate or compromise because in their arrogance they feared it might unmask feelings of inferiority. They always did the unexpected in order to psyche you out. As with your mother, the same with your wife: you never knew how they would react. This type of person represented real intimacy for you. Since your mother emotionally abused you, such abuse became equated with love, and the emotional abuse you suffered from your wife became confused with love in your eyes. Your psychologically astute wife stepped into the role of your mother to manipulate you, cause you pain and get rid of you when it suited her. Understand, she never would have moved out unless she wanted. She must sense men who were abused by their mothers knowing she can exploit their psychology not just for material gain but revenge. Your wife is seething inside against you and all men. Perhaps her true dream is not modeling but abusing men.”

“Naturally, after the awful impact of these two women, you now feel in your middle age tremendous sadness, not the utter hopelessness of depression, but an ever present melancholy—you’ve given up on your dream of knowledge and long for relief. The experience with your wife was especially traumatic and unfortunately came at a time when you were about to go after the knowledge you sought about space and physics. She is more

than a liar: she is a destroyer of dreams, and it is that which you must stay aware of.

Although she moved out, your anger towards her keeps you connected to her. Anger comes from a sense that the object of the anger, a person, can change, but your wife cannot. If a person is incapable of change, then continuing anger towards them turns into an obsession to bring them to justice. Do not let your anger keep her in your life. Unconsciously, you hope she will change and come back to you because there is still a love, a bond you feel with her. But she feels no such thing towards you and no remorse for her acts. When you decided to marry her, it took you away from your own life. You need to live your life now, instead of reacting to hers. You know how to react against someone or something but not how to move forward towards what you want. You need to eliminate your wife as the organizing principle of your life.”

During one session, I played a message for my therapist that Dark Angel left on my mobile as another New Millennium greeting. Some people thought New Year’s Eve 2000 marked the new millennium, others New Year’s Eve 2001, Dark Angel naturally used whichever gave her an advantage. On New Year’s Eve, December 31, 2000, while on my way to a party, I picked up a voicemail message from Dark Angel. It didn’t click why she bothered calling.

My therapist said, “Her crying sounds phony to me because real crying results in different breathing and makes it much more difficult to talk. But there is an artificial seductiveness in her voice, and I can understand how dangerous that voice could be. If you didn’t know the truth about her activities, it would be very easy to let her back into your life. She must want something, which I assume, based on what you told me, is help in getting her permanent green card.”

“That’s it,” I responded. “She and her lawyers are still trying to maneuver me into lying to the INS for her.”

“You should remove her from your life, not only so you can move on, but also because she will try to hurt you. She probably saw you as part father from whom she craved approval for her perverse life style. When you condemned her conduct, she most likely vowed vengeance.”

“I believe that and I’m not about to perjure myself for her.”

As the New Year unfolded, my therapist dug deeper into the demons assailing me:

“Like your wife, your mother lived in a fantasy world of self denial, self absorption and no concern for others. Your wife probably enters some fantasy realm when she strips. Both your mother and wife made sure no one outside the family saw whom they really were. They concentrated on appearances: your mother the successful homemaker, your wife the model and dancer. Neither ever showed real empathy, but only acted with a false concern to mask their feelings of irritation and annoyance. Both wanted power to call the shots. Both used negativity, arrogance, ignorance, meanness and fear to control you so as to sacrifice you in order to validate their power. When you initiated a need, your mother exercised her power by denying it and your wife by agreeing but never carrying through. Your mother and wife manipulated and coaxed you into doing things against your interest not just to satisfy their selfish ends but for the mere thrill of exercising power—to feel powerful and inflate their self-aggrandizement. They were power junkies. When either didn’t get their way, their rage exploded—your mother by turning hysterical, your wife violent.”

“Your wife’s blatant adultery denigrated you as effectively as did your mother’s verbal belittling. Your mother did it to keep you from growing up and leaving her. She

wanted to keep you within her power, so she never gave her blessing for you to pursue the activities you wanted. Activities such as sports, which she always tried to talk you into quitting, or learning an instrument, which she forbade. Both sports and playing an instrument teach self-reliance and confidence—two qualities necessary for an independent life. Your mother, however, criticized, demeaned and raged at you to thwart your maturing beyond her power. As a result, whenever you felt doubt about doing something later in life, it came from the internal tape of your mother’s discouragement and hostility. In order to assuage the feeling of dread that this replaying of your mother’s reactions caused, you usually decided to pursue status rather than what you wanted. You unconsciously believed status would legitimize you in your mother’s eyes, since she obsessed over appearances, and would mitigate the internal furies she created inside you. But once you got the status, it didn’t satisfy the internalized mother because your mother never approved of anything you did as a child; otherwise, it might encourage you to grow beyond her power. So the entire pattern replayed itself over and over with those internalized furies driving you to leave one position after another.”

“You feel dread about continuing your quest for knowledge by going back to college to pursue a PhD in physics because it involves a social situation that your mother would disapprove of if she were alive, since it would threaten to mitigate her power over you. The more you do what you want, the more dread will come up from your mother’s programming that still functions in your unconscious. You fear standing on your own, doing what you and not your mother want. Also you do not have someone to support you in your efforts. You hoped your wife would be that emotional support, but she just played you

for her own benefit. As long as you do what your internalized mother wants, you don't feel alone—but you are.”

“The voice of negativity you hear about pursuing physics and the criticisms of your life come from your internalized mother. She was wrong when alive, and her negative coaching that continues to affect you is still wrong. An activity is not about an outcome of status, money or appearance but the process. Your mother convinced you that only easy activities were good and hard ones bad, but maybe something that is hard is okay. Maybe that's the only way to grow. You need to face the fact that now you have reached a dead end in life. Despite the harm of your mother, there burns inside of you a desire for knowledge. All your life you've been learning, taking courses and studying many different subjects. Despite your claim of not having a career, you do—knowledge. Not a vocation likely to yield fortune and glory, but it does satisfy an inner drive of yours and not your mother's. It's now time to go back to the core source of knowledge for you by trying to understand what makes the universe tick. Unless you pursue your dream in physics, you will probably continue as a satellite of your wife for you will have nothing else to do.”

The therapy sessions seemed to help a lot—much to my surprise. The process not only gave me knowledge of the parentally induced behavioral patterns that plagued my life, but, more importantly, the new realization that possibly my first-best destiny meant the pursuit of knowledge, a thirst to understand. Perhaps knowledge was my dream, and my purpose now is to pick up on studying physics. Clearly my internalized mother and the external Dark Angel disapproved of the pursuit of knowledge rather than money and status.

My therapist's analysis of learning as my career sent me back in time to the mid-sixties when, thanks to a female, high school English teacher, I first started to use my mind

to learn about the mysteries of life and the universe. Susan, very hot, twenty-two years old with great legs that her skirts revealed more of every time she shifted gears in her Corvette Sting Ray, used my unconscious attraction to Edgar Allan Poe's writings to pry open my mind to the wondrous ideas, theories, imaginings and perspectives pulsating behind the story lines in all great poetry and literature. She animated the previously dormant abilities in my mind to analyze and interpret authors' clues to the metaphysical realm they touched.

Her impact led me to write poetry, and, at one point, caused me to experience a revelation. I wanted to touch directly the metaphysical reality referred to by so many authors in order to glean my own philosophy, my own worldview. Late one rainy night while concentrating on this desire, I slipped into a trance in which my mind sped through darkened clouds of manifested forms to the overwhelming abyss of darkness that pulsed with absolute power beyond the dualities that defined the empirical universe. There was no fear—just awe and jubilation at the invisible living realm that surely must generate the time-space continuum we perceive as the universe. Instantly, without words, I knew that I wanted knowledge; wanted to understand some of this fundamental nature of the universe that my mind tentatively touched. My best destiny sprang full-blown, filling me with joy and purpose. My mission in life meant acquiring knowledge in order to delve the transcendental mysteries; anything else would be a waste of material.

Spurred by my epiphany, I tried writing a fictional story with a Poe type tone about this fleeting experience beyond the world of shapes and forms. Susan thought it impressive for a seventeen year old.

'The mind is limited by environment and natural born ability.' That must be the most thoughtless statement ever printed. The horror of it all is that the world's populace accepts this theory as fact. Well, here is one person who doesn't believe the mind has boundaries. I believe the mind contains two realms: one with the abilities to accomplish



worldly tasks and the other, an unheard of realm, consisting of complete knowledge. Somehow, some way, I must enter that realm of ultimate knowledge to prove that the environment and genes do not chain people.

This marked the start of my unceasing quest for a dream like world. The finding of it will be my life's accomplishment. A place of ultimate knowledge must exist within the mind because the efforts of the mind created all knowledge that man now possesses. All knowledge gained through out history came from thought within the mind. Most people view the mind as part of the unknown, which causes them to shy away from the abilities that lie within. It is not a mystical force from outside that stirs the mind, but from within man come the thoughts that create knowledge. Ingenious thinking and concentration consistently create miracles never before dreamed. The mind produces imaginings beyond what exists, and men obsessed with such dreams have made the world.

Since all knowledge comes from thought, the mind must contain all knowledge. Beyond conscious thought there must exist a place that guards the universe's secrets. If this realm is entered, answers will undoubtedly overwhelm questions. But how can one achieve this realm? Perhaps one idealistic way requires freedom from all mortal needs and influences since ultimate thought and concentration can only exist without distractions. But such a method is impossible for the body lives mortally, which hinders the immortal mind. Without the body, the mind may achieve any idealistic goal, but such is not practical. Perhaps the exercising of one's will can lessen this obstacle, the physical body. There must exist a method in which the body poses only a superficial hindrance. But where within my own thoughts lurks this way. I need to learn more in order to stir my mind to perceive a route to knowledge.

I spent years studying in the hope of discovering new types of thought in order to achieve my theoretical realm. Many courses bolstered my dream like ideas. Such subjects as Philosophy and English Literature developed my mind to better understand abstract ideas and taught me to search longer and deeper into a passing thought. I resolved that hypnosis might hold the key. Hypnosis provides a practical way of freeing the mind from the mortal body. It creates a medium of near complete concentration by blocking out all other disturbances. Here was a possible gateway to complete knowledge.

I set out on a crusade of knowledge about hypnosis. Eagerly attending lectures, reading and studying, I finally felt myself ready for the true test. Cautiously I progressed into deeper and deeper states. In a trance, my mind seemed to float above a confused and whirling wind. The feeling of immortality overcame me with the thought of being able to dive endlessly into the darkened sky above. But often my hesitance to peer beyond stopped me. I wondered what would I find there and should I a mortal be doing this? Was the body's sole purpose to prevent the acquiring of such knowledge or was it just an accident that kept the mind from such thoughts? Finally the agony of not knowing overcame my hesitancy, and I entered deeper and deeper into the darkened sky of these trances, but never reached the source of energy creating the dark. I concluded that hypnosis kept the mind enslaved to travel in an endless circle.

My quest for the realm of knowledge began to crumble. All seemed hopeless until one day while reading a book about Samuel Taylor Coleridge, the British poet, I came across the statement, “During a waking dream, he composed some three hundred lines on Kubla Khan. All the images arose up before him without any conscious effort.” Here was a man who during a twilight state of sleep and consciousness, composed in his mind and remembered 300 lines of magnificent poetry. The poem contained such hidden and mystical thoughts that Coleridge must have touched the world for which I searched somewhere between mental activity and the passivity of dreaming.

With this new spark of hope, I tried to analyze a way to duplicate Coleridge’s journey. Sleep creates dreams but wakefulness consciousness. The door to combining the two to reach beyond the unconscious must lie through the dream world. Most dreams seem nonsensical and uncontrollable, so the key required transforming some of the dream energy into probing thought to find the truths below the surface. The dream emitting from the unconscious was the medium for entering the universe’s vault of hidden secrets. But how was it possible to create a thoughtful dream to release the hidden secrets? Coleridge read the story of Kubla Khan before composing his poem, so by analogy, immersing my waking hours studying the processes of thinking and dreaming while analyzing my own theories might take my consciousness to the land of the hidden sun.

One night I slept half awake or half awake slept with my thoughts moving in the direction I willed and sensed they should go. Traveling upward through the dark clouds of forms, I burst upon a night of pulsating energy, terrible in its power and awe. I hesitated, but then willed my thoughts into the abyss. The darkness began retreating; I saw a glimmer of light, but an odd sort, neither bright nor dull—just perpetual. As I moved closer to my goal, the darkness continued to vanish. There appeared a hue of countless dimensional waves.

‘The scene is becoming clearer now, yes, I can see it. I can see it! This endless realm makes my wildest speculations seem puny. At first glance I perceive the most beautiful poetry ever written, countless mathematical equations, completely different and profound literature, and secrets on life, science and the entire universe all a part of me. Mankind must know of this realm of knowledge that can lead to immortality of the mind.’ I descended from this realm of beauty with my mind yearning to awake an ignorant world. ‘But something is wrong; I seem to be so free, yet my body refuses to move. It looks so cold and gray just lying there. Oh my God, No!’

A little sophomoric that story, but apparently the revelation that occasioned it decades ago had caused my unconscious to drive me over the landscape of knowledge in a seemingly random process of learning through out my entire life. However due to the obstacles programmed in me by my mother, I never consciously pursued a systematic approach to delving the mysteries of the universe, the abyss I originally had touched, with a

concerted study of physics augmented by philosophy, literature and the arts. Now, according to my therapist, events provided me with the opportunity to resume my studies of physics in an effort to focus on my first-best destiny.

Still, subtle wisps of feeling out of time wafted over my being bringing back a summer night in Moscow a few years earlier in 1998. After a weary day of looking for a job, I fell into a waking dream that took me to the same abyss of elemental power I visited thirty-three years earlier. Once again, I experienced the terrible awe without fear. But now a life crushing sadness of failure replaced the joy of promise offered by the first epiphany. In my inner being, I knew that I had wasted the most capable years of my conscious existence by skirting the edges but never going for the heart of my dream to use physics to bring back from the unknown an understanding of one small mystery of nature. Now the abyss just waited with eternal patience for my inevitable assimilation back into the darkness from where I originated.

#### Last Kiss

As is true with all therapy patients, my troubles, especially with Dark Angel, consumed my conscious and unconscious minds that even at cocktail parties I babbled on about my travails to friends and strangers alike. They all must have thought me nuts but laughed at my punch lines while apparently empathizing with my plight. What surprised me, however, was that everyone to whom I told my tale, said I should write a book. I didn't think my experiences with Russia very interesting, but if the public wanted a book, I would give it a try. At first I thought of writing a Dashiell Hammett detective story to try to make some money off of my costly and revolting experiences. But then decided not to but rather to tell the truth, all of it, with the real names and words, as best I remembered them of

everyone involved. To hell with the political correctionalism malaise for euphemisms that delude people into thinking the world kind and gentle at the expense of the truth. I didn't care whose sensitivities I stepped on, if the truth hurt, then put up with the pain or sue me. At the suggestion of Pat, my rock 'n' roll guitar-playing friend, I also decided to include side stories and observations of my experiences in the lunatic asylum called Russia. Ironically, I started writing on the nine month anniversary, December 11, 2000, of one of my dumbest mistakes—marrying Dark Angel.

Between writing, I took in movies and social events such as Cindi and Keith's wedding anniversary. Cindi was my acting friend who had helped Dark Angel find modeling jobs. I updated both her and Keith on the situation with Dark Angel, which shocked Cindi but not Keith. Keith, also an actor, told us about a corporate event he worked with Dark Angel. He kept noticing Dark Angel giving out her number to strange men, so he asked her, "You're not giving your number to these guys are you?" Dark Angel responded with, "I give them a special number." I reacted that she obviously used these events to line up prostitution clients. Keith said it figured. When he first met Dark Angel, he thought of her as six feet two and all evil. How did I miss what he immediately saw? Perhaps it had to do with his Russian heritage.

At the movies, the young female antagonist in *Crouching Tiger, Hidden Dragon* reminded me in the arrogance and thirst for power of Dark Angel. The truly evil character in the movie, however, was the nanny to the young female antagonist. The nanny despised men for not rewarding her with what she didn't deserve. The nanny believed in the alleged divine right of females to get what they desired even though not qualified. When denied a position fit mainly for men, the nanny vowed vengeance on men, blaming them for an

accident of nature that made her a woman instead of a man. She sounded like a modern day Feminazis and Dark Angel's mother.

The nanny poisoned the young lady by burning into her soul a delusional conviction in the superiority of women over men in all aspects of life and instilled a maniacal drive to power, not for self-defense or to fight injustice, but to dominate men—make them cower at her wrath, tremble at her feet, to love her and despair. The young lady used her power in battle to injure many guys who never emotionally matured beyond adolescence. But the young lady could not overcome in combat or with sex the man her nanny most hated—a compassionate seasoned warrior. He saw great promise for good in the young lady—a hidden dragon, which means in the east a potent force for good fortune, happiness, immortality and transformation. However, the young lady's arrogance and hunger for misplaced revenge threatened to turn her into a poisoned dragon that uses its power for self-aggrandizement, power and barbaric purposes. Not unlike my wife, so from then on I referred to Dark Angel as Poisoned Dragon.

In the movie, the young lady's adamant refusal to change led her to causing harm to everyone who tried to help her, including the death of the compassionate warrior. After his destruction, she finally realized her goal of beating men in their own arenas turned her not into a superior person but into her own misconception of the nature of men. The young lady twisted men's role in evolution from provider and protector to exploiter and oppressor. She emulated her perception of men by transforming herself into a heartless, hate-filled engine of blind vengeance—not unlike Dark Angel. In the end, the decency of those she injured caused her to realize that neither of the sexes lords in superiority over the other. Each brings its own unique strengths that compliment rather than conflict with the other. Overcome by

remorse, realizing she cannot undo what she has done, she jumps into oblivion. A just ending as the movies usually provide, but real life rarely ends that way. I knew Poisoned Dragon, a.k.a. Dark Angel, could never admit to herself that she was anything but a victim acting in self-defense.

The end of January 2001 marked the beginning of the Year of the Snake in which life allegedly turns to discovering the reasons behind things and covert warfare, which relies on secrecy and infiltration, circumvents conventional defenses. The ending months of the Year of the Snake strike with a deadly bite, so to prevent such, the Snake must be beaten to death. Mythology warns that if evil is not eliminated completely, it will not rest until it has destroyed us.

Speaking of snakes, one last task remained in order to disentangle my affairs completely from Poisoned Dragon. When she came to America, I added her to my health insurance HMO policy. The HMO provider would allow me to cancel her from my policy, but that would leave her without coverage for a period of time. I decided to do the right thing and not cancel her from my policy until she had time to arrange for own coverage. After all the warnings from Carmen and my therapist, I had no desire to meet with her to explain the procedure and hand over the forms for setting up her own coverage, so I arranged for my friend Alan, whom she knew, to do it. Poisoned Dragon didn't refuse to meet with Alan, she just hung up the telephone on him or pretended not to understand his English—one of her favorite tactics when she wanted to play dumb or claim a premeditated act as an innocent mistake. I called her to ask what the problem was with meeting Alan.

“There's no need for Alan to call me. You can call me yourself. Why can't you bring the forms? Alan has trouble understanding me, and I don't want to make a mistake

because insurance is very important in America.” Now that was new for Poisoned Dragon. It originally took a lot of explaining to get her to agree to health insurance because of the cost.

“Okay, let’s meet at the Virgin Coffee shop on Union Square.” We set the date and time.

“Roy,” she said in her most seductive voice, which immediately told me to watch out, “Why wouldn’t you help me get green card. I will do something for you in the future.”

Déjà vu again, but looking back, I realize she and her lawyers were trying to set me up. All three of them were probably confident I would do what they would have done: demand money from her in return for my helping her. That meant extortion, and by recording the telephone conversation, they could use it as a club to force me to lie to the INS. But when I made the call, I didn’t even think of a trap and they hadn’t planned on my honesty. How could they? They didn’t know what the word meant.

“I’m not going to lie for you. I told you before. I will not lie for you.”

No response.

“One more thing Angel,” I suggested, following some of Cheryl’s advice. “Why don’t you try seeing a psychologist?”

She laughed, “You need one not me.”

“I’m already seeing one. Look Angel your life style is not healthy. A therapist could help you get out of it and make your life productive.”

“They will just give you information about me. That is why you want me to go to one.”

“That may be true in Russia but not here. The law requires therapists to keep a patient’s communications secret, or they will lose their license to practice. Even the courts can’t force a therapist to talk about his discussions with a patient.”

“Your laws mean nothing, just like in Russia.”

“Well then, go to the therapist of your choice.”

“They cost too much.”

“I’ll pay for the first few sessions. You can then decide whether it’s worth the cost to continue.”

“I will think about it,” which for her meant no.

“Okay, I will see you Sunday at the coffee shop.”

After our conversation, I again mistakenly wondered what to do with this girl, as though I was responsible, which I wasn’t. But idiot compassion still made me think she could do so much with her life in America, if she just got out of the sex industry, which only reinforced her paranoia towards people and confirmed in dollars the benefits of duplicity. There must exist a way to get her to concentrate on her legitimate modeling career. I had tried reason but it proved useless, maybe now I should try threatening. A threat worked before in getting a copy of her diary. I decided at our meeting to give her an ultimatum to leave lap dancing for a legitimate job, or I would have to decide whether to go to the Immigration Service to try to get her deported. I didn’t intend to go to Immigration, but hoped the threat might shake her up enough to get her life on a track with a future. If she refused, then I had done all I could to help her. It was Time to move on and leave her to her own sorted existence while I pursued my own dream of studying physics, which I had begun a week earlier at Columbia University.



Sunday, January 28, 2001, Poisoned Dragon and I met. Uncharacteristically, she was late. Another anomaly that I filed away in my mind knowing the reason would eventually reveal itself. Once again she sat down with her purse in her lap, probably with a knife or recording device in it but I didn't care.

She immediately kissed me full on the lips with an open mouth, long and hard. During her Judas' Kiss, intermittent but resigned concerns flashed through my mind expecting her to plunge a knife into my belly at any moment. The knife never came, but the sensation of kissing a sewer did and stayed throughout the ordeal. I couldn't help but wonder the sheer quantity of all the toilet related places that mouth visited. When she pulled those filthy lips away, I wanted to spit, but the absence of spittoons prevented me. She then proceeded to playfully pull the hair on my head while smiling her Cheshire grin.

"Don't do that!" I wasn't in the mood for her false pretenses to get me to drop my defenses.

"I will if I want," she arrogantly said.

"What if I started playing with your breasts?"

"I wouldn't mind."

Naturally, what else would a prostitute say, I thought.

She continued, "In the future you can call me yourself, you don't have to have someone else do it."

My suspicions sharpened at that statement. If anything, Poisoned Dragon never forgave a slight, and in her mind, I had slighted her plenty—so why the false pretense of wanting to hear my voice over her telephone? I dropped my misgiving and got down to

business, giving her the insurance forms and explaining what she needed to do to continue her health insurance.

With that done she asked, “Why did you send me the Sarah Brightman CD, writing on it that I should listen to “Time to Say Goodbye”?”

“Because it’s time for us to say ‘goodbye’! Part of me still loves you, but we will never have a romantic relationship again, assuming we had one in the past. It’s over. You go your way, and I’ll go mine.”

“But you promised to help me get a green card. You tricked me into coming to America with you by promising to get me a green card, now you want me to pay you money for your help.”

Now I knew she was carrying a tape recorder and her lawyers probably scripted that line for her. “Wait a minute. I never asked you for money in return for my help to get you a green card. I brought you to America because you were my wife and because I wanted to help you pursue your professed dream of modeling, not selling your body to strangers. It’s time you straighten your life out, stop stripping, stop going out with your customers and stop prostituting yourself!”

“What I do is art!”

“Taking off your clothes for \$20, so some guy can get a hard-on is not art! There’s nudity in works of art, but the purpose isn’t to sexually excite someone. The intent is to communicate a story, a theme or atmosphere, not to sexually arouse people for money, which is what you do.”

“How will I pay my bills now that I no longer live with you?”

“I told you back before you started working at Flash Dancers that you could make \$400 a night or more as a bartender, and my friend Tom would teach you bartending and suggest places to find a job.”

“Lifting the bottles will hurt my back,” she complained.

“You spend eight hours a night walking around on five-inch heels, contorting your body giving lap dances. Don’t tell me that doesn’t hurt your back. Remember you always wanted a back massage. Look, instead of working as a bartender, work as a lap dancer one week out of the month. That’s \$2,500 to \$3,000, enough to pay your bills. And get a temporary job as a waitress or something legitimate. That way you will have more time to pursue modeling and an entertainment career and will look a lot better by not working four weeks a month in a smoke filled pit.”

She didn’t respond, but went into the old Soviet tactic of looking down with false tears in her eyes in an effort to show contrition while probably cursing me and vowing vengeance the whole time.

“If you cut down on the stripping, stop prostituting yourself and get a legitimate job, I won’t contact the Immigration Service.”

“What will you tell them?” she asked, trying to fine out what I had on her.

“About you, of course,” I evaded. “If you don’t straighten out your life, then I will have to make a decision whether to tell them or not. I don’t know how I will decide and I don’t know when.”

She leaned close to my ear and whispered, “You son of a bitch, if you do not help me get a green card my Chechen friends will put you in the hospital or kill you or I will do it myself!”

Now its Chechens, before it was Russians, can't this girl keep anything straight. Anyway, did she actually believe a female could scare a man? Fed up as usual with this slut, I just got up and left thinking: goodbye, and no I am not glad I met you, and no I do not wish you luck although you are going to need it.

That Friday my stockbroker and I went to dinner. I updated her on the latest with Poisoned Dragon.

Maiya said, "You know, back during the summer she called me three times, but I never got back to her. I couldn't understand why she was calling me."

"I told her that if you believed she had changed, then I would give her another chance. But since I never heard anymore about it, I just assumed she never called you."

"I'm sorry now I didn't call her back. Maybe it would have made a difference."

"I doubt it. She would have tried to con you like she cons everyone. It wouldn't have mattered, she's beyond all hope."

"So tell me, what are going to do now? Do you believe her Chechen threat?"

"I don't know. She grew up in the capital Grozny. She has friends from Chechnya whom she hangs out with in Krasnodar. There's one Chechen guy she introduced me to twice as the man who helped her and her mother move from Grozny to Krasnodar. He's probably one of her prostitution clients. And she knows a lot of the rich and powerful in Krasnodar who, not surprisingly, are all criminals. I guess I believe her threat, but it doesn't bother me."

"Well, I would be careful. If you turn up missing, I'm going right to the police."

"Thanks, but what's troubling me now is what to do about her. Clearly she's not going to change, so do I go to Immigration and try to get them to deport her?"

“Why would they deport her?”

“She lied on her visa application when she said she never worked as a prostitute within the ten years before filing the application and lied about never being arrested or imprisoned. Her diary shows she worked as a prostitute in Cyprus and Mexico and was arrested and deported from Mexico for working without a visa.”

“You know she’ll just tell Immigration that you told her to lie and may even tell them that you brought her over here to pimp her out.”

“Ha, that’s her all right! But I doubt they’d believe her.”

“Don’t be so sure with bureaucrats.”

“Maybe, but I have to decide this not out of fear but what is right.”

Maiya advised, “I’d just forget her, and get on with your own dream of learning physics. Chalk Angel up to an adventure.”

“I’m leaning in that direction. The physics and math courses I’m taking require a lot of time, and I don’t want to be distracted with dealing with a government agency. Besides, I’ve put off going after my first-best destiny for most of my life. Now with what little time I have left, I might as well do what I want instead of what the ghosts of my parents or the media say I should do.”

“So do you like your courses?”

“Actually I do. I’m surprised at how much I remember from thirty-five years ago. I don’t understand how I could have let this go for such a long time? Anyway, I really enjoy learning the theory and applying it to problems. The students are all young enough to be my children, but they seem to accept me as another student. It’s fine, and since I don’t foresee

any major expenses looming in the future, I might make it to a PhD. Even if I don't, the knowledge will be worth it."

"What about a divorce?"

"She can have one whenever she wants. I don't care. I'm just not going to commit perjury for her."

"Given her ruthlessness that seems best. You don't want her to have something on you."

"Yeah, all I want is to let her drift into the past. Hmmm, if that's all I want, then it makes no sense to keep her in my life troubling my thoughts by trying to get her deported. She deserves to be bounced out of this country, but given the incompetence and laziness of our government bureaucrats, it would probably be a waste of my time. No, I'm tired of reacting to her primitive life form. She can live in whatever prison her delusions make for her, I'm going after my much delayed dream."

Maiya added, "I just hope she doesn't do something stupid. We both know Russians: sycophants, outlaws and hypocrites who just don't understand the civilized world."

"Ha, you're right."

Walking home that February 1<sup>st</sup> evening, I felt relieved of a burden I had carried since a warm July night over a year and a half ago. It seemed appropriate that on the eve of the first anniversary of Poisoned Dragon's acceptance of my marriage proposal, she was finally out of my life. Actually in Russia, it was now the first anniversary: Candlemas, February 2<sup>nd</sup>. Poisoned Dragon could do whatever she wanted, I didn't want anymore of

her. Perhaps the universe evolves in a beneficent manner, the Poisoned Dragon gets to pursue her heart's delight: money, while I pursue mine: knowledge.

## **Stupid Frigging Fool**

By Roy Den Hollander

Part 3

War

*“Now is the time for all good men to fight for their rights before they have no rights left.”*

Minutes after I entered my apartment, someone knocked on my door. As usual I opened it without checking through the peephole, which always provided a minor thrill of the unexpected. Two overweight female cops, one standing off to the side of my door, the other peeking from around the corner as though she expected a shoot-out.

The one nearest me asked, “Are you Roy Den Hollander?”

“That’s right,” and she handed me some papers.”

“What are these?” I asked surprised.

“Your wife took out an order of protection against you. These are the complaint and summons to appear in court.”

The thought shuddered its way home. Dread, hurt and fear crushed me. I took the papers, closed the door and retreated into my apartment to enter a life changed forever. The furies quickly came wailing inside me, careening for a safety value that didn’t exist. My emotions hopscotched up and down the spectrum from rage to a mournful sinking of the heart—drinking misery to the dregs. How could she do this? All I ever did was try to help her. My soul felt blasted by betrayal. The great heel of fate had come down to destroy the remainder of my life.

I knew about Temporary Orders of Protection that the Feminazis ruthlessly used to intimidate men into doing their bidding. All a girl needed to do was go before a judge, pretend



to cry, tell a lie—a female’s favorite and most effective weapon—about some man threatening or harassing her, and the judge immediately issued a domestic Temporary Order of Protection. The law, a product of Feminazis lobbying, prevented the accused from appearing before the judge in order to counter the charges; that is, defend himself against the Temporary Order of Protection. The procedure violates due process rights, but the states’ legislatures and courts don’t care because females usually bring them against men. Public officials in America these days nearly always give girls preferential treatment because men are considered less-than human and the bureaucrats are scared of the Feminazis.

The Feminazis created domestic Temporary Orders of Protection out of the traditional temporary restraining orders, or TOPs, which were used to prevent an immediate harm before both parties could appear in court.

For example, assume the Feminazi next door is clearing trees from her property. Instead of cutting them down, she’s using dynamite to blow them up, and parts of the trees are raining down on a guy’s property. He politely asks her to stop, but she replies she will not be intimidated by a male chauvinist pig. The guy jumps in his car and goes to the local court. The clerk sends him before a judge that same day because he is asking for a TRO to put a stop to the immediate damage to his property until there can be a full hearing on the matter.

The judge tells his clerk to try to reach the Feminazi. In domestic dispute cases the judge doesn’t bother. The Feminazi doesn’t answer her telephone because she’s doing psychotropic drugs with her girlfriend and sticking pins in voodoo dolls of every man she ever knew.

The judge issues a TRO directing the Feminazi to stop dynamiting and to show up in court for a hearing, usually seven or ten days later to resolve the dispute. In domestic dispute cases, it’s often two months or more, and the man is usually thrown into the street because he is

no longer allowed to live in the same house, which he bought, with the lying female who got the domestic Temporary Order of Protection.

Under the traditional TRO, if the Feminazi keeps dynamiting during the time before the hearing, then the police, at their discretion, can arrest her, but usually a warning suffices. Under the domestic Temporary Order of Protection in 33 states and New York, the female can call the police, make up a lie that her husband or boyfriend violated the TRO and the police must throw him in jail. She essentially has a “send him to jail whenever I want” card. Or the guy can be stupid enough to send her flowers as a peace offering, and the police will throw him in jail for that. He should have saved the flowers for his early grave.

Once arrested, the man has an arrest record that goes into the FBI database and is available to all law enforcement agencies, to officials of state and local governments for employment and licensing purposes, and to private detective firms. He will never be able to have that record expunged.

On receiving a domestic Temporary Order of Protection, the man can appeal, which costs around \$10,000 and usually fails because an appeals’ court determines only whether the judge followed the law, not the accuracy of the alleged facts, or he can wait a few months when the court holds a hearing to decide whether the girl originally told the truth. At the hearing, the judges usually believe the girl over the guy and he ends up with a final Order of Protection, which, along with the Temporary Order, also goes into the FBI database.

Besides violating procedural due process, domestic orders of protection violate a man’s civil rights because before the hearing, the judge, based on unsubstantiated allegations from only one party, transferred to the female the state power to decide whether the man goes to jail. If the currents of fate accidentally bring a man within 500 feet of the girl, her home or place of

business, or she lies, she—not the state—determines that he goes to jail. The police have no discretion in 34 states. They must lock the man up if the girl says so. For the man, every move carries the specter of jail merely because of the claims of some vengeful, lying female. Stepping into a subway car, eating in a restaurant, going to a movie or merely walking down the street, if she's there, she can call the police and they will arrest him. Some girls also intentionally go to places they know a man frequents just to have him arrested. In New York City, an arrest means a day in close confinement with robbers, muggers, pushers and murderers, not to mention the cops.

A man can obtain a similar order against a girl. But in reality, guys generally don't bother, and if they do, often times they are denied. In New York City, where the Feminazis and their fellow travelers the Political Correctionalists control the domestic relations courts, a man rarely receives equal protection under their brand of injustice. The Feminazis' argue the necessity of such violations of men's rights in order to protect females from physical violence by men but overlook the increasing use of armed violence by women against men and females suckering some other guy to kill or injure their boyfriends, not to mention the traditional razor tongue emotional violence that females habitually assault men with. Orders of protection allow females to hide duplicity behind the modern day propaganda that females are more moral than men—the same type of bigoted thinking that determines the content of one's character by some physical trait.

In New York City, the most biased court against men, which even women lawyers admit, is the Family Court of Queens County. Feminazis run this institution like the Spanish Inquisition to stamp out any incipient heresy to feminazi tenets, which they hold as eternal truths. Beneath their delusional, crusading self-righteousness squirms the ugly truth—a band of hijackers using

state power to vent their vengeance on men for all the imagined wrongs they suffered. Rather than a system for retribution against guilty persons, whether male or female, the Family Court embodies a systematic torture chamber for all men because the Political Correctionalists running the institution seethe with the conviction in their lower parts that all men are guilty of not voluntarily enslaving themselves to females. Poisoned Dragon, following the advice of Mundy and Petrovich, went to this court to begin her war against me with a few of her lawyers' well-chosen and rehearsed lies accompanied by phony tears for the judge:

On or about January 28, 2001, at a music store in New York County at approximately 2:30 PM, Roy Den Hollander committed an act or acts which constitute aggravated harassment in the second degree, harassment in the first degree, harassment in the second degree, menacing in the second degree, menacing in the third degree, assault in the second degree, assault in the third degree, attempted assault, disorderly conduct, reckless endangerment, stalking in the first degree, stalking in the second degree, stalking in the third degree, stalking in the fourth degree toward Alina A. Shipilina who is the spouse of Mr. Den Hollander in that Mr. Den Hollander threatened Ms. Shipilina.

Ms. Shipilina states, 'My husband threatened to have me deported. He said that America was not for me and that it was his decision where I live. He makes me very afraid because he threatens to send me away without telling when. He tells me that he know people in the Embassy and Immigration, both here and in Moscow. Ms. Shipilina states that about a month ago her husband grabbed her by the arm and left a scratch on her arm. That her husband wants her to pay him between \$13,000 and \$25,000 to stay in the US. Ms. Shipilina states that her husband once showed her a gun and that he sleeps with a knife. She is afraid of her husband and seeks that husband stay away from her residence and stop threatening her.

Through my misery and grief, rage finally smashed aside any feelings of self-pity after reading and re-reading this concoction. The clarity of hate crushed the muddled proverbial plead of "Why me?" Poisoned Dragon used the traditional female powers—sex, emotion, duplicity, black magic and narcotics—to manipulate my compassion, to entice me into marriage and to bring her to America, home of her now allies in crimes against men—the Feminazis. With her feminazi-sycophant lawyers, she exploited a prejudiced legal system created by females who claimed they represented the "new woman," one who no longer used sex, feigned innocence or lied to get ahead, but who shown like a beacon of honesty, humanitarianism and equal justice for

all. The hypocrisy of Poisoned Dragon and the “new woman Feminazis” disgusted me. It’s always sex to attract and sex to attack wrapped inside deception for any female—ho or Feminazi. Both used the same tactics for the same end: power over men for use in an arbitrary and self-serving manner. Fairness, truth and self-respect meant nothing to them as they used sex and institutional intimidation in order to manipulate men. I wanted to nuke them all.

Poisoned Dragon’s use of Feminazism to force me into lying to the INS convinced me in the very fiber of my being what till then I only intellectually understood: she didn’t care whom she harmed, whom she stepped on to satisfy her greed. For her it was all about money—that was her only ethic. Instead of a misguided girl, I now saw a pathological predator with morals as debased as her lineage. The lust for money festered at the core of her soul driving her ruthlessly to squash anyone that dare interfere with her love of wealth. A line from the song “People Get Ready,” which Maria used to sing in Moscow, nailed Poisoned Dragon as the “hopeless sinner who would harm all mankind just to save her own.” She didn’t fight for survival, art or destiny but the base obsession for money and the status and power it bought.

The reason Poisoned Dragon wanted me to meet her about separating our HMO insurance policy was clear. Mundy, Petrovich and she knew I wouldn’t lie to the INS, so they needed a one-two punch to put me on the robes before knocking me into submission. Poisoned Dragon couldn’t threaten me with Chechen intervention over the telephone because I might record it, and not even the Feminazi Family Court would grant her a restraining order unless there was a recent meeting at which she could lie about me harassing, menacing, assaulting, stalking and endangering her preciousness. She couldn’t claim I did any those things two months ago when I last saw her because the court would want to know why she didn’t seek an order then. So her lawyers and she schemed for a face-to-face meeting. They probably recorded

the meeting, and the reason she was late was they were wiring her up. That must have been fun for all three. But at the meeting I didn't do what they expected, so the recording was no good. Can't go before a court claiming harassing, menacing, assaulting, stalking and endangering when the purpose of the meeting was to separate insurance policies and the husband showed only concern by trying to pressure his wife into giving up stripping and prostitution. So the trinity of evil, her lawyers and her, didn't use the recording but made up a few lies instead. In effect, the domestic Order of Protection said we are going to drag you through the Feminazi inquisition unless you do what we want.

I knew the dangers of fighting for justice against a female in a culture that considered every man guilty until he proves himself innocent and every girl innocent not only before but after she's proven guilty because some man or men made her do it. Justice doesn't exist as a law of the universe, but as a human creation that humans must enforce. Unfortunately, justice for a man in modern day America rarely wins in a conflict with a duplicitous whore or dissembling Feminazi. But unless I tried, she would not only get away with the harm she caused me but also the destruction she would wreck on guys yet to come. Perhaps my karma gave me the duty to stop her or perhaps not, whichever didn't matter.

My female friends and therapist, consistent with Carmen's warnings, advised me not to try to bring Poisoned Dragon to justice. They suggested that I only defend against the orders of protection, get a divorce but continue with my studies; otherwise, a personal jihad, or more accurately jihada, in the name of justice would destroy my last chance to pursue my dream in physics. I realized the price, but chose justice. Whether the fault lay in my stars or the behavioral pattern ingrained in me by my mother so many years ago didn't matter. I quit my

studies and said farewell to my therapist with the remark, “Not all lives work out.” My therapist did a good job, but I didn’t want her reasoning me out of my quest for justice.

Most people, as do I, long for anthropomorphic deities, an insight into life or a law of nature that assures the eventual victory of justice. I looked to find a reason to believe in Christianity, Hinduism, Buddhism, Tao, Zen, Islam, Shambalaism and Western philosophy but they only made me feel weak and helpless in counseling me to leave Poisoned Dragon’s much deserved punishment to the dynamics of ideas conjured up thousands and hundreds of years ago by men ignorant of all the knowledge gained since. I doubted anyone of these seers, given a modern day education, would believe what they wrote. The trinity of subjective musings—religion, philosophy and mysticism—seemed to exist merely to comfort those who could not achieve justice or were unwilling to pay the price. These belief systems offered as compensation only the twin illusions of forgiveness as the higher good and that somehow justice wins out eventually. I wasn’t drinking any of that Kool-Aide. When justice lies within reach, men must fight for it and pay the price or forever live the ignominy of the meek.

Ideally, the legal system of the modern state fairly executes the law to render justice when people premeditatedly and with malice violate another’s rights. But even under an effective system of laws, it takes a long road to reach retribution and justice. As I began to drag myself down that path, hurt and anger consumed my waking hours well into the night, when the only solace came in short periods of fitful nightmares. Through February and March, I slept little, plagued by emotions and a constant pain in my shoulder from either swimming or Poisoned Dragon plunging needles into a small doll with my resemblance. I continued to pay the price and worried that the people appointed to enforce the laws too lazy, complacent or uncaring to do their duty. If that proved true, then one has the right, even the obligation, to take back the

powers granted to government and use those powers to assure that justice wins out over timidity, the love of ease and the trendy feminine acceptance that values no longer matter.

Poisoned Dragon and her lawyers personified a Russian trinity of evil: perjury, intimidation and violation of the rights of anyone who dares not to cooperate with their nefarious schemes. Money flowed from the wellspring of their willingness to win by any means. For Poisoned Dragon it meant continuing to strip and trick in a county whose laws she violated to enter. For Mundy and Petrovich it meant an hourly fee to keep her in America regardless of the laws she violated—the lawyerly form of prostitution. To the trinity, any means, no matter how degrading to a civilized human being, no matter how harmful to others, was acceptable in their pursuit of money. I was not going to stand by and allow these low lives to benefit from trampling my rights. I vowed to have my justice, even if it took my last dollar, my last breath. For me, the war had begun.

Taking a page from business school, I formulated my objective, strategy and tactics. I knew my tactics would change with the fluidity of the situation as unforeseen opportunities arose or surprises broadsided my neatly arranged plans. Even my strategy might need modification in order to adopt to changing situations, but no matter what, I knew my objective must remain unshaken—justice. My strategy comprised three phases. First I'd give the law a shot; after all, I was a lawyer and sometimes, just sometimes, the courts do what they're suppose to, but if they don't, then mass publicity, followed by civil disobedience.

On the immediate legal front, I retained a female lawyer recommended by a friend who was a judicial delegate, which meant he, along with other delegates, chose judicial candidates for the Democratic Party in New York City. My friend knew lots of lawyers who wanted to become judges, so I figured anyone he recommended was competent. I didn't like using a female lawyer



because I feared their innate bias against men caused them to side, at least unconsciously, with women in divorce cases even when not their clients. Unfortunately, the reality of prejudice against husbands among the judges in the Family Court in Queens virtually demanded that a man use a female lawyer. The general incompetence of females and their abuse of positions of power by carrying out their own personal agendas put any man before them in a difficult position. Using a female lawyer allegedly sent the Feminazis on the bench the message that the husband held the same philosophical beliefs as they, so there existed no reason to legally cut his throat being he was an ally in their righteous struggle against the brute beast inside other men. I should have realized that hiring a devil to deal with a devil meant only that devils won.

Just days after the Temporary Order of Protection and before my first meeting with my female lawyer, I received a letter from Mundy, my wife's lead lawyer and Petrovich's boss.

This office has been retained by your wife, Alina Shipilina. Ms. Shipilina has requested that we commence divorce proceedings, but not before giving you the opportunity to contact us, or to have an attorney contact us on your behalf, to discuss the possibility of resolving this matter amicably.

Divorce proceedings can be difficult for both parties. Recognizing this, our client desires to discuss the issues with you in a mutually agreeable setting, in the hopes that reasonable solutions can be reached.

Nonetheless, if I do not receive a response from you or your attorney within seven days from the date of this letter, my client has instructed me to commence action without your cooperation.

Please be guided accordingly.

The letter just confirmed Mundy, Petrovich and Poisoned Dragon's strategy to pressure me into helping her obtain a permanent green card by perjuring myself. Those were the only "issues" they were interested in discussing. A logical, although underhanded, three-prong attack: first, the threat of harm from Poisoned Dragon's Chechen friends; second, the domestic Temporary Order of Protection; and now the not-so-subtle warning of the "difficult" public wringer her attorney intended to put me through in a divorce proceeding. The trinity obviously

assumed that when faced with these assaults, I would fold by agreeing to commit perjury before the Immigration Service.

Her lawyers' reasoning was that I'd concede in order to keep the orders of protection and a divorce preceding quiet. Lawyers don't like unfavorable publicity—it hurts business. They also find physical violence especially scary, since they are always hiding behind the law. I, however, used to play rugby, boxed a little, was taking martial arts courses and didn't have much of a legal business left after my wife.

Poisoned Dragon's reasoning was unmistakable. Russian girls believe American men softer and weaker than Russian guys because American men fawn over women and grow up in a comfortable society without the many hardships of the former Soviet Union. Russian girls also think of themselves as stronger than Russian men, since the Communists and Czars pretty much weeded out any man of courage. So to Poisoned Dragon, I inhabited the lowest level in the food chain with Russian men next up the ladder and her on the top—very logical, but very wrong. Too much of nothing breaks people as it has most Russians. Only a few of Poisoned Dragon's fellow citizens grow strong from an overdose of adversity and that strength lies not in the courage of standing up for what's right, but the cowardice of the criminal slinking around to harm anyone who gets in her way. Unlike with Americans, centuries of Kafkaesque fear liquidated the ability of most Russians to boldly act out of moral outrage in the face of the wrongdoings by the powerful. This middle-aged former member of Students for a Democratic Society wasn't yielding.

My attorney, Judith, bore a striking resemblance to the orlocks I read about as a kid—long kinky hair hanging well below her shoulder, round as a medicine ball, seriously ugly and highly obnoxious. The last part I liked. I figured she would easily take Poisoned Dragon apart

on the witness stand. We decided to initiate an annulment and divorce suit right away as answer to Mundy's letter, but to bring it in the New York State Supreme Court in Manhattan because the judges were slightly less biased against men than in the Queens Family Court. After beginning the annulment/divorce case, Judith suggested I try to obtain an order of protection in the Queens Family Court, always a long shot for a man, against my wife for threatening to have her Chechen friends put me six feet under.

Winning an annulment under New York State law required I prove that my wife lied about or failed to tell me something of such importance that had a reasonable man in my position known the truth, he would not have married her. Easy, since no man, reasonable or seriously deranged, would tie his life to hers knowing the full truth about the real Poisoned Dragon. Her misrepresentations and omissions included working as a prostitute, dancing completely naked for money while men touch parts of her body, pretending she loved me but actually marrying me only for a green card, secretly putting narcotics in my food to assure I went through with the marriage, planning before our marriage to commit prostitution with Alfredo in Italy after our marriage and being infected with the neuroses of congenital lying and cheating. Two obstacles lay in the path for an annulment. First, the defense of cohabitation, or in plain English, forgiveness, which meant that if after learning about Poisoned Dragon's lies and concealments, I engaged in sexual intercourse with her that meant I forgave her. My drive for the truth apparently doomed succeeding on the annulment charge unless after our last cohabitation of December 4, 2000, I found additional facts that occurred before our marriage that she had lied about or concealed in her scheme to induce me into marriage. I decided to go looking for those facts. The second problem amounted to ideology. The Political Correctionalist judges in Manhattan rarely granted annulments because the most likely spouse to engage in deception was

the wife. Finding lots of women guilty of fraud would contradict the modern day belief that possession of a vagina conclusively inferred an ethical character, rather than the opposite.

Feminazi judges were unlikely to do that.

The two possible grounds for a divorce, adultery and cruel inhuman treatment, offered different chances of successfully showing Poisoned Dragon at fault for the break up of the marriage.

At first blush adultery seemed the easiest, since any near-sighted nitwit, other than me, knew by just looking at Poisoned Dragon that there slithered a slut, no more capable of fidelity than a female dog in heat. But a major problem in proving adultery came in the form of the defense called condonation, or in plain English: forgiveness once again. By sleeping with Poisoned Dragon until she moved out in December, I condoned all her previous adulterous escapades that I knew about. Unfortunately, once again my investigations gave her a complete defense unless other adulterous affairs occurred that I didn't know about. I assumed her diary, my key source of information, didn't fully detail all her infidelities. In her diary, Poisoned Dragon at times regaled in recounting her foul deeds but at others left information out. The only way to make an adultery case fly required further investigation in the hope of discovering any adulterous liaisons not fully detailed in her diary. Even with such new evidence, I still faced the Feminazi belief system that only men should receive punishment for adultery, since they are natural philanderers. Once again "new age women" got their facts wrong.

Over millions of years of evolution, natural selection favored promiscuous hominid females. Prior to ten thousand years ago, humans lived in tribes with the men providing the meat by hunting animals and women providing berries, roots, nuts and other staples from foraging. Survival required the protein from meat, which women generally could not acquire themselves

because evolution provided men with greater upper body strength and the spatial acuity that facilitated hunting wild animals. Men's more athletic bodies also enabled them to provide protection to women, especially during pregnancy and afterward when both the nursing mother and newborn were highly vulnerable to the dangers of the wilds. To assure their survival and that of the species, women and men entered into long-term relationships, generally four to five years, in which the man provided for and protected the woman and her offspring. The main occupation at the time for men, hunting wild animals or fishing, carried a high risk of death. A woman quickly realized that the man on which she depended, not just for her survival but the survival of her genes through her offspring, might one day end up as an animal's lunch or swim with the fishes. In order to assure a continual supply of protein and protection, many women simply used the currency of their bodies—sex, to make “special” or “good” friends with other men. Naturally, these women tried, with varying degrees of success, to hide their infidelity from their respective main man, but over time, men, initially at the disadvantage by willing to give someone the benefit of the doubt, eventually realized the slut-like nature of their trusted confidants. Men, just like women, wanted their genes to survive through their offspring, but unlike women, a man could not know for certain whether an offspring was his due to the promiscuity of the mother. So to compensate, men engage in sex with other women figuring one of them will bear a child with his genes. As the millennia passed, the genes of the more successful tramps survived while those of faithful women went extinct, which left us today with a whole lot of hos.

My best argument for a divorce based on Poisoned Dragon's inability to act as a wife was “cruel and inhuman treatment.” This catch all provision in the law allowed the court to base a divorce on any type of conduct by one spouse towards the other that the court deemed would

make their continued cohabitation physically or mentally harmful or just improper. Many of Poisoned Dragons acts fell into this category, including hitting me in the back, making threats, refusing to give up lap dancing after she made the \$50,000 she wanted, refusing to live with me right after our marriage so that she could party in Krasnodar and Italy, saying she didn't want me vacationing with her in Russia and Cyprus and afterward flaunting that she met with three of her former customers in Cyprus, and finally, her extensive sexual misconduct. Unlike annulment or adultery, cohabitation or forgiveness after an act of cruel and inhumane treated didn't amount to a defense. Actually, I could use evidence of her adultery to obtain a divorce for cruel and inhuman treatment even though my cohabitating with her after learning about her sexual liaisons prevented a divorce for adultery. Weird, but that's New York law. Divorce for cruel and inhumane treatment amounted to New York's version of a no fault divorce, and the courts pushed for such divorces out of ideological and slothful reasons.

To officially start the annulment and divorce proceedings, I needed someone to physically hand Poisoned Dragon a court document that included a summons and notification of my reasons for seeking an annulment or, in the alternative, a divorce. My wife always carried a knife and under stress often lost her temper and control, so my main concern was assuring the person serving the papers didn't get hurt. Mark came up with the idea of having two of the women black belts in his martial arts class serve the papers. I knew either one of them could handle Poisoned Dragon if she turned violent, but the two of them together could take her apart in seconds without any injury to them. The two agreed, and I suggested they hand my wife the papers at her subway stop: 30<sup>th</sup> Avenue on the N line in Astoria, Queens. I assumed Poisoned Dragon probably entered the station some time between 6 and 6:30 PM in order to make it to Flash Dancers by 7 PM to put on her face and body makeup. Both of the black belts had met my

wife before, so they would easily recognize her. At around 6:15 PM, Poisoned Dragon galloped up the steps in a rush to catch the train, one of the black belts handed her an envelope saying, “You’ve been served!” My wife took it without question and without understanding and continued in a hurry to catch the train. A nice and smooth job for which I gave my friends boxes of Godiva Chocolate, a girl’s favorite.

With my first shot in the war fired, I joyfully imagined the sinking feeling Poisoned Dragon felt when she read the notice on the train. Her distress would come from realizing that her and her lawyers’ connivance and intimidation failed, that now, probably for the first time in her life, a man chose to hold her accountable for her conduct. She must have bounced from rage to fear and back again. Rage that a member of the sex of fools, on which she preyed with honey words of deceit, dared to fight back, and fear that a court proceeding would cost lots of money, which Poisoned Dragon was less willing to lose than her soul, and might also result with her back in Russia where she belonged. She probably already tried to pay Mundy and Petrovich with sex, but Mundy, the typical profit driven American lawyer, was not going to accept sex instead of the thousands of dollars a disputed case brings. She would have to shell out cash to Mundy, but sex would likely still payoff the Russian lawyer Petrovich.

The trinity of evil made the classic mistake that International Affairs’ courses refer to as “mirror image.” They assumed I would react the same way as they in a similar situation. Most lawyers and Russians value money above all else, which meant doing anything, no matter how revolting, to hold on to it. But I wasn’t like them. For me, when faced with a choice between money and justice, I chose justice, something they, especially my wife, would never understand.

The summons required a response in twenty days, but the domestic relations’ courts don’t enforce deadlines. Too bad because the failure of my wife’s attorney to respond within the

allotted time would have entitled me to an annulment or divorce by default. Historically, all New York State courts strictly enforced deadlines in order to prevent unscrupulous lawyers from denying justice by delaying it or intentionally inflicting emotional distress on an opposing party by not only dragging out the proceedings but also increasing the opposing party's costs by requiring him to make motions to force obedience to deadlines. Unfortunately, the take over by Feminazis and Political Correctionalists of the domestic relations courts resulted in making a joke of procedural deadlines. The courts generally deny motions for adherence to legal deadlines or fail to provide any meaningful sanctions against their violation, so the lawyers practicing in the field no longer bothered trying to enforce deadlines against their opponents. The deadlines remain on the books, but the judges in their arrogance ignore the laws. It's similar to a girl trying to show up on time; she can't, so she doesn't and thinks that's her right.

Behind the courts' failure to abide by legal procedures is incompetence, always the mother of sloth. Since the mid-seventies, females have flooded the domestic relations courts as judges and employees. Many domestic relations judges graduated from the bottom half of their law school class, which means the only reason they made it through was because the professors graded on a curve. Law school students with high grades earn them, the rest receive additional points they don't deserve on an exam just to push them through to graduation. A communistic type of mentality, which I also found in business school, that punishes high achievers while rewarding slackers in order not to offend the dumber half of our population. For example, a student who gets a 90 on an exam will not receive any additional points, but one who funks with a 50 might get another 20 points so she can pass. So in reality, often the failures end up as judges, and many of them are females. The courts, as with all traditionally male professions are now infested with females, hide behind the ludicrous depiction in the media and movies of



women as strong, smart and independent heroes in order to mask the reality of the pervasiveness of female incompetence, sloth and cowardice.

At a meeting with my lawyer to prepare my request for a temporary order of protection, I mentioned my plans to inform various law enforcement agencies of my wife's criminal conduct and to contact various people in order to authenticate her diary. Judith, always a disagreeable person, launched into her usual monologue, her idea of a conversation, but this time she turned it into tirade of hostility filled with venom and vituperation against me. Shouting, she railed I couldn't do that, and warned me to stay away from law enforcement agencies and anyone connected with the diary. She accused me of feeling anger towards my wife, as though that were a crime. Judith raged on with vindictive words of guilt and shame while insisting I see a psychiatrist because my anger wasn't natural but a sickness. Her vitriolic mouth spewed forth emotional hammers trying to pound me into submission by making me the criminal for wanting my wife to obey her vows, which for primitive life forms like Judith only men must obey—not females. She censured me with the female equivalent of the capital crime “controlling” in how I treated my wife. This lawyer let out all the anger inside of her at me, her client and the one who paid her, because she blindly hated men and wanted an easy case.

She tried to rationalize her rant by saying that because I was a man the judge would hold it against me for informing other authorities of my wife's violations of the law, and see my attempt to authenticate her diary as nothing more than an effort to harass her. That was most likely accurate, but not an excuse for her behavior. She also added that the diary couldn't be authenticated anyway because it required testimony from people outside the court's jurisdiction. I corrected her on that point because the law specifically allows for a number of different methods to obtain such testimony. Realizing I knew more about the law than her, she

combatively countered that the judge wouldn't allow it. I felt sick after this lambasting. I came to this woman for help, and all she provided was nastiness and emotional abuse. She wanted me to lie down so Poisoned Dragon could trample me while Judith collected thousands of dollars from me by sacrificing another man to the "goddess of womanhood."

After that emotional assault, I decided my lawyer more revolting than my wife. Besides Judith's personal obnoxiousness, she exhibited the greedy trait of filling in time on the telephone with non-legal conversation because she billed in fifteen-minute intervals—give me a break, even my wife danced for the whole song. With Judith, however, if it only took five minutes to give legal advice, she continued to talk for ten more minutes about non-legal matters for which she billed a total of \$75 when she only provided \$25 of attorney value. She even admitted doing this with all her clients. I guess her female brain couldn't work out the math for shorter time periods. For my emotional sanity and monetary reasons, I avoided as much as possible seeing her or talking to her over the telephone and decided to proceed with my plans for justice despite her repellent tirade. But first, Judith's suggestion of trying for a temporary order of protection against Poisoned Dragon seemed worth the shot.

On a dreary, rainy, cold afternoon I took the forty-five minute subway ride to the outer reaches of Queens where the Family Court occupied a dilapidated, ancient building that looked better suited for railroading than the rendering of justice. On crossing the threshold into that mean-spirited cavern of civil servants who cared about nothing except their extended coffee breaks and lunch hours, I knew my chances for justice slim but my humiliation assured. The process took about three hours, short by that court's standards. First, I wrote out my reasons for requesting a temporary order of protection then took it to the typist, a fat, greasy, clearly homosexual black man who clearly hated his job, himself and white heterosexual men. He

pounded the typewriter keys with oversized fingers swollen from too many Twinkies, every stroke an expression of his boiling hostility. From there I traversed filthy corridors to a waiting room filled with people from the lower economic levels of the uneducated who were doing a poor job of passing themselves off as sentient beings.

Finally my turn came. I entered a tiny room with low ceilings that made the judge's elevated bench look comical. She probably hit her head every time she adjusted her underwear. Behind the bench sat judge Fran Lubow and her female clerk filled with self-importance and few abilities; otherwise, they wouldn't be in such a dump. I could easily beat these enemies of men anywhere on an even playing field, but fairness and rules didn't reign in that closet of vindictiveness.

The clerk swore me in, I stated my name, but before I could present my argument for a temporary order of protection, Lubow cut me off accusing me of seeking one just because my wife obtained an order against me, and now I wanted one out of retribution. Typical lame female believing she could read men's minds. She and her clerk then laughed derisively. To them, men didn't deserve the protection of the law because orders of protection were only for women to bludgeon men into submission. I tried to interrupt the judge, to state my case, but this female cut me off again, telling me with a snicker to try the divorce court in Manhattan. She denied the temporary order of protection because the law allowed her sufficient discretion to abuse her public position of power for her own personal agenda against men, but it didn't allow her to refuse the issuance of a summons to serve on my wife with a complaint outlining Poisoned Dragons' threats.

Summons in hand, I left that joke of a court of justice, seething not only at Lubow, the kangaroo court system, and Feminazis in general but my own attorney for putting my through

another emotional wringer. So far, Judith had only caused my more distress, probably in an effort to make me give up without a fight. Many years ago, I told myself never hire a female for anything because they're probably either incompetent or, worst, will sell you down the river in order to win a victory for sisterhood. Yet I still ended up with them in my life, why? Well, I decided to fire Judith at the appropriate time and hire a man to represent me—enough with trying to placate the Feminazis, they're my enemies to the death.

The Temporary Order of Protection against me scheduled a hearing for April 6, 2001, in the same Feminazi infested court before another female, ax-grinding, male-hating judge in order to determine whether my wife should receive a permanent order of protection. The way these orders work, Poisoned Dragon could have decided not to show without notifying me while the law still required me to show or face arrest by the police. She could fail to appear a couple of times at no cost to her before the court dismissed the case, but I had to show every time and bear the cost of my lawyer, the lost time and the distress. Not a bad procedure for harassing me. However, with the summons I received from the Queens court, Poisoned Dragon would also have to appear in court on April 6<sup>th</sup>, or the judge would immediately dismiss her claims against me and might even enter a default judgment on my complaint against her for threatening me, which meant a permanent order of protection against her. I could then show up at Flash Dancers and have her arrested, ho, ho, ho. Poisoned Dragon couldn't chance not showing up in court without an attorney or without incurring the attorney fee necessary to prepare her testimony. The added expenses and public exposure should fuel her rage.

All I needed to do before the April 6<sup>th</sup> hearing was to have someone serve my wife with the Queens court summons and complaint concerning the threats she made against me. She was too savvy to be caught again at the same subway station or allow the same two lady black belts

to get near her. In New York State, serving a summons and complaint didn't require the target to actually accept the papers. If Poisoned Dragon refused to take the documents, a person could just drop them and walk away, but he needed to get close enough to offer the papers. If Poisoned Dragon saw a process server coming, she'd used those long legs of hers to bolt. After some brainstorming, a mischievous grin spread across my face—serve her at Flash Dancers, perfectly legal, a public place, no concerns about trespass violations and nowhere for her to run, unless she bounded out onto Broadway in her tong panties. The tourists would like that. All I needed now where a couple guys to do the job, since I didn't want to ask a couple of decent girls to descend into that sleaze pit.

During a Friday night martial arts class, Jesse and Moody, both black belts and in their early twenties, willingly agreed to serve the papers inside Flash Dancers. They thought the idea cool and a challenge. I warned that the bouncers might try to interfere, but that didn't phase them. They two guys together could probably take out every hood in the joint. Jesse met Poisoned Dragon before, so he would easily recognize her and give her the papers. Moody, the taller of the two at six-feet two-inches, would back him up. After class, Jesse and Moody went to visit my wife at work on March 14, 2001.

They descended the steps into the dim lower reaches of human aspirations, where Jesse spotted my wife giving some older guy a lap dance over in a corner and pointed her out to Moody.

With a laugh, Moody said, "Hey that old guy looks like Roy!"

"Yeah, he kind of does," Jesse agreed with a smile. "Let's wait 'til she's finished and walk up from behind so she doesn't see us coming."

"That should be easy," Moody remarked.

When Poisoned Dragon finished her lap dance, Jesse in the lead with Moody right behind him walked over while she put on her dress in front of the guy she had just sexually excited for \$20.

Still with her back to them, Jesse said, “Angelina, this is for you.” And extended his hand with the envelope containing the summons and complaint.

She turned around and focused on the envelope, probably thinking Jesse just another fool customer wanting to reward the goddess of beauty. She instinctively took what her greedy, green heart likely thought contained cash or something of value. But as her eyes shifted to Jesse’s face and narrowed on it, the recognition screamed her mistake through her diseased mind.

“This from Roy! You take back!” and punched her hand with the envelope into Jesse’s chest letting the envelope fall to the floor. Jesse didn’t flinch and wisely didn’t pick up the papers. Poisoned Dragon was legally served.

The “older guy” who had just paid for a lap dance apparently figured my wife was in need of assistance, so he started to get up remarking in an authoritative tone, “What’s going on here?”

“Sit down!” Moody ordered. The guy wisely complied.

Jesse and Moody turned to leave but Poisoned Dragon picked up the envelope, hooked her fingers into Jesse’s sleeve and stepped in front of the both on them blocking their exit.

Moody looked up at her, six-feet six-inches in her Flash Dancers heels, thinking damn she’s tall.

Holding onto Jesse, she threatened, “Take this back!” Others might have done so, but not these guys—no one intimidated them, especially some overly tall ho. Still, Jesse faced an interesting predicament, what to do with a girl using physical force against him. If it were a

man, he'd simply deck the guy, but in modern day America any physical force used against a girl, no matter how justified, gets the man, not the female into legal trouble. How unfair this hypocrisy of females hiding behind traditional beliefs of them as the weaker sex while asserting themselves as new age women using physical force. Just then a bouncer swaggered over with self-importance and illusions of rescuing the not-so-fair damsel.

“They try to give me papers I don't want.” Poisoned Dragon angrily declared.

“You can't serve legal papers in here; it's against the law so take them back!”

Moody responded, “You don't look like a lawyer to me.”

Jesse said, “She's been served. And now she's stopping us from leaving.”

The bouncer realized he couldn't intimidate Jesse and Moody, so in a lame attempt to save face said, “Get out of here and don't come back—ever. I'll remember you guys!”

“Don't worry, we wouldn't remember you,” Moody replied.

Poisoned Dragon released her grip, Jesse and Moody left laughing but banned for life from Flash Dancers.

When I heard what happened, I contacted a criminal lawyer friend of mine to see whether the district attorney would prosecute my wife for her assaulting Jesse. In serving the papers, Jesse and Moody were carrying out court business. Any interference with that task, not to mention assaulting the process server, is a crime. My attorney friend just laughed, “Maybe if the process server was a woman and the assaulting person a man; otherwise, forget it!” Once again I ran up against the dual standard that Poisoned Dragon so effectively exploited in America.

After the Flash Dancers service, my attorney received a letter from Poisoned Dragon's lawyer Mundy that was sent before Jesse and Moody's excellent night at the strip club.

It started:

Enclosed please find defendant's Demand for Complaint.

In the interest of sparing our respective clients embarrassment, time and expense, my client has asked that we attempt to resolve divorce and financial matters amicably. My letter to your client dated February 5, 2001 offered to proceed in that fashion, but was responded to with an Annulment and Divorce Complaint and Summons alleging, among other things, cruel and inhuman treatment.

How sensitive of Mundy to leave out the accusations of marriage fraud, something the INS frowned on, and adultery, something that humiliated Poisoned Dragon. The trinity of evil, now with the Order of Protection hanging over my head, must have reasoned it worth one more try to threaten me with embarrassment and costs in order to push me into lying before the INS. They still didn't realize: no surrender and never give in to evil. Mundy's letter continued:

In a final effort to avoid public disclosure of certain familial facts and circumstances, which by their nature should remain private and personal, I am once again extending the opportunity to engage in non-formal discovery and exchange of financial disclosure and documentation pertinent to equitable distribution and maintenance issues, prior to draft and filing of a Complaint, Answer and Counterclaims in this matter.

Please be guided accordingly.

What "familial facts and circumstances" I wondered? My wife's hooking and defrauding the INS? Public disclosure of those acts didn't mean a damn to me. I married a ho; I admit it. Maybe the sentence came from part of a form letter that Mundy accidentally left in. The part I really liked, however, was the "non-formal discovery" in which they could manufacture any lie without court sanctions, since no oaths or authenticate documents would be involved. The "equitable distribution and maintenance" jargon was a childish attempt to panic me into believing my wife had a claim on my income and assets. The marriage was too short, and extrapolating out to a year from her arrival, she would net well over \$100,000—more than me. So if anyone deserved equitable distribution, it was me. The last part about drafting a Complaint made no sense. The plaintiff, me, serves a Complaint, and the defendant, Poisoned Dragon,



serves an Answer with Counterclaims. Defendants don't bother with Complaints unless there are third parties. More sloppy drafting by Mundy.

### The Mountain's High

With my court counterattack under way, I began prodding various law enforcement agencies to hold Poisoned Dragon responsible for the laws she disdainfully violated in her drive for money and kicks. I wanted to bring her to justice or justice to her. My female friends said let it go, arguing that in the end she will get her comeuppance. Their convictions were easy to hold. They sat on the sidelines in this war, and females always advocate that a man give in to a female, so long as it costs the guy and not them. But I had little faith in advice from females or "what goes around, comes around." Unless I brought her to justice, no one would. Sure anger drove me, but what a great motivation—look at the revolutions throughout history. Those guys raged for justice—no girlie-men they. Who cared if today's Political Correctionalists demanded adherence by men to the emasculating belief that anger, acting as a human being when wronged, was evil. The only evil at work was girls and their sycophants tricking guys out of fighting for their rights. Poisoned Dragon and her lawyers were so self-absorbed with themselves and their greed that they willingly harmed others and broke the law to further their ends.

In my gut, I knew that the bizarre twists and turns of events that brought me into Poisoned Dragon's orbit meant the fate Atropos had condemned me to fight her, her allies and tie me to wherever that might. Back when we first met, Poisoned Dragon played the con that our meeting was preordained because of all the events that had to occur for us to actually run into each other. She used the fates to make me more susceptible to her schemes, but the fates really made me susceptible to their scheme.

In 1997, when I graduated business school, I made a few trips over the succeeding year in search of a finance job in Russia. On the last trip, when walking out of a Moscow fax center, I spotted an employment weekly written in English. I nearly kept going, but a whisper from my unconscious caused me to pause and actually debate with myself whether to pick up an issue. I grabbed a copy, which contained nothing concerning finance positions, but the lead article talked about a famous American investigating and security agency in Moscow—Kroll Associates. Many years earlier, when I worked on some undercover stories for the news media, I considered applying to Kroll for a job, so I could work on investigations full-time. Nothing like exposing crooked politicians and businessmen, but I remained in the media instead.

Kroll had nothing to do with finance, but investigations still excited me, so I sent off my resume, and the manager, Joe Serio, scheduled an interview. Before our meeting, the economy in Russia took a dive in the financial market melt down of 1998 as a result of the thievery and stupidity by both Westerners and Russians. All my scheduled interviews with financial institutions dried up because cutbacks, rather than expansion, became the order of the day. Kroll's manager, however, still wanted to meet even though the firm was not hiring at the moment. Joe and I hit it off. We both understood Russia as a lawless society where doing business required criminal activity ranging from bribes to murder. Joe's assistant was leaving, but before hiring a replacement, the firm needed to see how the financial crisis shook out. He asked me to keep in touch, just in case business picked up. I left Russia that summer certain never to return, but told myself that if one of the companies that interviewed me offered me a job, I'd take it.

Back in the states, pretty much fed up with this society and my life, I began making preparations to head for the jungles of South America again, but this time never to return. Fresh

with the memory of the second revelation in my life, I accepted the fact that I had missed my calling, which made my efforts on this planet a failure. Just before Christmas, Joe from Kroll Associates called to say the company had started looking for a new assistant manager in Russia and was I interested. I said sure and began the process of interviews. The key interview was with its Director of European Operations, Tiedemann. During the interview with this overly compensating, insecure half-pint, I kept thinking I'd never even consider this job if she were going to be my boss, but since I would report to Joe, it didn't matter. I did wonder, however, how Joe could put up with such a dumb nazi female for a boss.

Kroll ran me through their background check, offered me the job and I accepted. In order to obtain a Russian visa, the Moscow office needed a copy of my passport. One of the Russian guys in the office pointed out my age to Joe, who notified Tiedemann. Both Joe and the lesbian Tiedemann called to tell me they were surprised; they thought me ten years younger. So much for the infallibility of Kroll's background check—they couldn't even get my year of birth right. Tiedemann then withdrew Kroll's offer of a job, lying that the firm decided not to hire an assistant manager for economic reasons. Off went an angry letter from me to the President and founder of Kroll accusing his company of age discrimination. The letter should at least have the effect of teaching his two moronic employees a lesson in how not to treat people. At the same time, I began researching a possible suit against Kroll while debating whether to move on to the jungle. Proving age discrimination in court is very difficult, especially when the person does not already work for a company, but a suit against Kroll might prove fun.

Shortly thereafter, much to my surprise, Joe and Tiedemann offered me a six-month contract as assistant manager in Russia. My letter probably prodded the firm into buying legal peace with this short-term consultancy offer. They probably didn't think I'd take it, but I did.

Why not? One more adventure, then I could go lose myself in the jungle. Maybe I'd get lucky and aggravate some Russian organized crime figures as I did with the Gambino and Managano crime families that supported the Surrogate Judge Marie Lambert by providing Joe Conason of the Village Voice with evidence of her malfeasance.

Kroll wanted me to start work in Moscow as soon as possible, which didn't present a problem except for finding a place to live. My translators from previous trips usually knew friends or relatives that could rent me a room or an apartment whenever I traveled to Russia. I only needed accommodations for a couple of weeks or a month on my arrival, because once there, I could easily find something more long term. Surprisingly no one knew of any places for rent. Then one day while making arrangements with my broker, Maiya, for the wiring of Kroll's salary checks into my account, she suggested I contact a friend of hers in Moscow. Her friend found me a place on Kutusovsky Prospect, one of the more fancy parts of town.

As irony once again arranged, I arrived in Moscow on July 4, 1999, and moved into the very large apartment where Joseph Stalin's daughter once lived. To my surprise but not the fate Atropos, Joe told me he was leaving Kroll at the end of the month, and that I was now the acting manager for the company in Russia, still on a six-month contract to win new clients but with the added task of improving the firm's operations in what was left of the evil empire. It's always better as the boss than an underling, but now I had to deal directly with the Feminazi Tiedemann. But I was already in Moscow, and how bad could the next six months be?

Nineteen days later on a warm Friday evening, Joe and I went to hear Maria sing in her and her boyfriend's band. Joe sat in playing the harmonica on a few songs. The band finished before 11 PM, and I was ready to party some more, but Joe and everyone else went home. So I hurried back to the party at my apartment building that I had passed earlier in the evening.

Hopped the wrong Metro train, then flagged down a car and made my way back just in time to meet Poisoned Dragon, who, just before my appearance, had decided to call it a night and was leaving the hookers' ball for the apartment where Leo put up his out of town prostitutes and shot porn videos—what timing!

Twenty months later, my last adventure mercilessly drove me on, providing letters with accompanying exhibits about Poisoned Dragon's illegal activities for the Internal Revenue Service, New York State Department of Taxation, Krasnodar Tax Inspectorate, Immigration and Naturalization Service in New York City, the U.S. Embassy in Moscow, Immigration's Commissioner and Audit Office, Senators Hillary Clinton and Charles Schumer's offices, the Federal Bureau of Investigation, the Drug Enforcement Administration, U.S. Customs and the New York City Board of Elections Commission.

To the American, Russian and New York tax authorities, I provided information showing that Poisoned Dragon evaded paying taxes on over \$150,000 in net income that she earned in the U.S. from July 2000 to December 2001. That's factoring in the four months vacation she took during that year and a half, but not the amount she made on her back working as a prostitute. Not bad by any standard and virtually all tax-free. To each tax authority, I sent as exhibits Poisoned Dragon's diary in which she tells how much she made on various nights and the total for her first month and a half of \$18,000; an internet site created by lap dancers that published the average nightly income for strippers at Flash Dancers: \$500; the number of days she worked in 2000 and 2001, which I calculated using her work schedules and an undercover operative who befriended my wife at Flash Dancers; a copy of her bank contract for the safe deposit box in which she kept her cash before smuggling it to Russia and Cyprus; her U.S. bank accounts and credit card number; even the mutual fund account she set up in Cyprus to hide some of her loot,

which I found through Elaine White, a Canadian detective. When Poisoned Dragon traveled to Cyprus in September 2000, she met with a former customer from her Zygos Club days: Stephanos. He worked in a bank, so my wife likely enlisted him to help with smuggling her cash into Cyprus and then hiding it in various accounts she never reported to the I.R.S.

The divorce court eventually forced her to disclose her tax return for the year 2000. She first filed a return reporting an income of only \$7,600 but someone, probably her lawyers, had her amend it up to \$18,800, so as to explain her diary's statement of earning \$18,000 in a month and a half. Her amended filing still failed to include at least another \$40,000 she earned in 2000, mainly at Flash Dancers. My evidence to the I.R.S. and New York State Tax authorities included copies of her work schedules for 2000 that showed she worked four and a half months at Flash Dancers, so she obviously failed to report at least three months of income. The work schedules also showed she lied on her 2000 tax return about her occupation as bartender and listing herself as "single" rather than "married filing separately." The "married filing separately" category would have required her to pay more taxes.

Poisoned Dragon also violated Russian tax law because as a Russian citizen she was required to report all her income no matter where made. Consistent with her criminal nature, she didn't even report her fraudulently low earnings of \$18,800 in the U.S. for 2000 just as she had evaded reporting her Cyprus and Mexico income for 1999. The Krasnodar Tax Inspectorate was not about to do anything, since all Russians considered tax evasion a genetically given right with an estimate of over 90% of income earners evading taxes.

Another government agency through which I tried to bring Poisoned Dragon to justice was U.S. Customs. She usually worked for two or three months, saved up conservatively speaking twenty to thirty grand, then took the money to Russia or Cyprus without declaring any

of it—a federal felony, and her money from prostitution, an illegal act, made the transporting of those funds money laundering. My wife didn't take bundles of cash out of the country, but very sophisticatedly put the money on a debit or credit card, which was a lot easier to fit into her favorite hiding places, the heels of her shoes or her vagina. I thought the last hiding place might entice Customs to take a look, but it didn't—probably infested with too many females.

Once in Russia or Cyprus, she simply withdrew the money from the card at a bank or any number of ATMs that dispense dollars. Through an informant, I knew the approximate dates of my wife carrying cash out of the country, and because it was the cheapest, she always flew Aeroflot. On two occasions, I notified the Customs' agent at JFK who ended up with the case of approximately when she was departing, but nothing ever happened. The fault lay not in my information because my informants in Russia always pinpointed Poisoned Dragon in Krasnodar, Moscow, St. Petersburg or Cyprus at times consistent with when Customs knew she would be traveling. All Customs needed to do was check the Aeroflot manifests during a short window of time to find out the exact dates for her leaving the country.

Most of my hopes for justice from the executive branch, however, rested with the Immigration Service. By instituting the annulment and divorce proceedings, Poisoned Dragon's immigration attorney, Mundy, would file what Immigration called a Waiver of the Joint Petition. Whenever annulment or divorce proceedings begin, an alien spouse can go to Immigration to ask for a permanent green card, so long as the alien shows that she married the American in good faith, which meant she wanted a husband not just a visa to America, and the American refused to help her file papers showing they were married in good faith or the American abused her physically or mentally. Once the court terminates the marriage, Immigration will make a ruling on whether to grant a permanent green card.

My strategy was to provide immigration with the evidence from her diary that she married me just for a green card and committed perjury before Immigration by not admitting she worked as a prostitute in Russia, Cyprus and Mexico and was arrested in Mexico City. Immigration didn't really care whether an alien married an American in good faith because it was so difficult to prove the alien only wanted a green card. But lying under oath was another matter.

Initially, I only considered approaching the Immigration authorities in New York City because I assumed they had exclusive jurisdiction since my wife lived in the City. But the part in Poisoned Dragon's Temporary Order of Protection about me threatening to use contacts at the U.S. Embassy in Moscow to deport her remained highlighted in my mind. It didn't make any sense to me. Not only didn't I say it, I never even thought it and didn't have any contacts at the Embassy I could use. As so often happened throughout the revolting experiences with Poisoned Dragon, when a statement, event or piece of information didn't make sense at first blush, it always came around later to fit into fate's puzzle.

The lie concocted by my wife's lawyers germinated into an idea that jumped into my conscious early one morning. The Immigration Office at the Embassy approved her temporary green card, so it must have the power to initiate deportation proceedings when new information shows she violated Immigration procedures, such as lying under oath when she submitted her application to the Embassy. An end run around New York City's INS office would allow me to avoid the inundated, overworked, inaccessible, massive and uncaring employees of the local INS bureaucracy where most complaints against aliens went to die. The Immigration Service at the Moscow Embassy obviously received few, if any, complaints against immigrants already in the America. The small size of the operation and the camaraderie that Americans overseas generally



feel with other Americans should increase my chances of finding a sympathetic official willing to do his duty. The emphasis is “his,” since few American females, and even fewer Feminazis, worked at the U.S. Embassy, which reduced the chance of some malicious, ax-wheeling woman abusing her authority by denying another man justice.

For advice on how to notify the Embassy, I contacted my American lawyer in Moscow, Dennis, who had previously briefed me on Russian divorce proceedings. Dennis knew the Embassy’s Chief of the Department of State’s Visa Unit—bingo! Thank you Mundy, Petrovich and Poisoned Dragon for your suggestion.

It also finally dawned on me as to why the trinity of evil included in the Temporary Order of Protection the lie about my threatening to use Embassy contacts to deport her, which wasn’t needed to obtain the Order. In the former Soviet Union, getting officials, such as Russians who worked for foreign embassies, to do something meant bribing them. Mundy and Petrovich did Russian immigration work, so they probably bribed their Russian contacts at the Embassy to help their clients. Naturally these two lawyers figured that I would do the same to initiate deportation proceedings. So in order to deter me, they included the allegation in the Order of Protection under the misguided assumption that I functioned the way they did, and if they saw such an allegation they would refrain from their usual dishonesty.

Russians and most lawyers just don’t know how to live in a civilized world. The rule of law and honesty apparently still predominated in the U.S. because inside most Americans, except Feminazis and lawyers, lay a deep-seated hatred for injustice, scoundrels and cheats. Mundy, Petrovich and Poisoned Dragon didn’t understand this or chose to ignore it, so their using Russian ways against an American who hated lawyers backfired by leading me to the one

Immigration office most likely to initiate deportation proceedings for Poisoned Dragon's violation of U.S. law.

### What's Going On?

Under the Immigration and Nationality Act, a foreigner who marries an American can apply for a temporary green card that allows the alien spouse to travel to and from America and to work here. The Federal Government takes months to process an application for a temporary green card because, as Immigration claims, it carefully scrutinizes the applicant to make sure criminals, drug dealers, prostitutes, lunatics, terrorists and other unsavory characters don't immigrate to America. Actually, the U.S. General Accounting Office found the INS routinely failed to investigate fraudulent applications.

In order to initiate an investigation by Immigration into Poisoned Dragon fraudulently obtaining a temporary green card, I prepared the usual lawyerly letter for the New York City Immigration Office and for Dennis in Moscow. The letter detailed Poisoned Dragon's violation of the Immigration and Nationality Act and included documents that supported my accusations. Using mainly my wife's diary, the letter showed she married me with the primary purpose of first obtaining a temporary and then a permanent green card, lied about not working as a prostitute, lied that she was never arrested or imprisoned by conveniently forgetting about her deportation from Mexico and lied when she stated she worked as an artist in Cyprus unless prostitution and lap dancing are considered art. Under the law, any of the lies amounted to perjury that my wife used to intentionally trick—defraud—the State Department into issuing her a visa to enter America and Immigration into granting her a temporary green card. Each lie she made to defraud the Federal Government and marrying me just to obtain a green card were individually enough to bounce her back to Russia, or so I thought.

Before sending off the letter, I tried to obtain copies of the records of Poisoned Dragon's arrest and imprisonment in Mexico, but someone had gotten to the Mexican Police and Federale Immigration files and tore the pages out of the ledgers. My investigator said he could still see the jagged tops of the pages ripped out. He warned that my wife must have well-connected criminal friends in Mexico in order to eliminate these records of her arrest and imprisonment—so much for the integrity of Mexican law enforcement. Poisoned Dragon's friends, however, weren't too smart—they missed the Mexican immigration prison's visitor files. Alfredo visited her in prison a few times, and the records of those visits were not disappeared. The copies at least proved she was incarcerated for immigration reasons about which she lied on her green card application.

A former Lieutenant Colonel in the M.V.D. used his contacts in the Russian government to check on any possible criminal violations by her in her home country. They ran her name through the Ministry of Internal Affairs nationwide database—no arrests, no convictions and no ongoing investigations—rats! I married a criminal too small to show up in Russia's law enforcement files or smart enough to cultivate friends able to expunge her records, not uncommon in the former Soviet Union.

Dennis turned my case over to his partner, Xenia, a Russian lady lawyer in her thirties, who spoke English. Initially, I feared Xenia would sympathized with my wife, as did a few of my younger Russian translators, but she didn't. Poisoned Dragon's diary shocked her to the core. She saw my wife as an insult to all Russian women, the very worst that Russia possessed. Ironically, I found in this Russian woman the best of all the attorneys I had, a true advocate who believed in my cause and sought justice rather than just taking my money—unlike my American divorce lawyer, Judith.

Xenia prepared a letter based on mine and organized a package of documents, including a typed English translation of Poisoned Dragon's diary, for Dennis' contact at the Embassy. The contact personally turned the matter over to the Embassy's Chief of the INS office—bingo once again. Back then, INS did the law enforcement functions for violations of the Immigration Act that included fraudulently obtaining green cards from Immigration and visas from the State Department.

Access to government officials willing to take the time to consider a citizen's case always makes the difference. The hire up the official the better. The personal handing over of documents accompanied by a few words from one person on the inside to another helps immensely because a case no longer languishes out of sight and out of mind of the person responsible for handling it. There are, however, always exceptions, mostly with female American officials. Whether in Moscow or the states, females in institutional positions with even the smallest amount of power use it only to serve their own interests. They just don't understand how the America built by men works. And make no doubt about it—men, not women, built America.

When someone with a legitimate request is able to directly contact an American man in a position of influence, he usually takes the time to help because he understands the very structure of the institution in which he works often thwarts the purpose for its existence. He also knows the person he helps will owe him a favor. He may never collect on it, but it's always there. Girls, however, with their inbred selfishness and pedantic fears don't provide favors unless someone helps them first. In addition, females almost always refuse to make judgment calls in situations not specifically covered by an organization's rules. Their insecurities keep them from doing the right thing when to do so means circumventing some inane procedure. Like Russians,

most American girls just don't comprehend how societies are supposed to function. Fortunately for me, the small size of the American community, somewhat isolated in the alien outpost of Moscow, increased the chances of Dennis knowing a man high up in the bureaucracy, which allowed me to avoid the ubiquitous one-neuron bureaucratic-gatekeeper programmed only to bar admittance.

While Xenia lobbied the Moscow Embassy, I tried to prod the New York City Immigration Office into taking action. Unfortunately, I didn't know anyone in the New York City office, so my efforts to circumvent its intentional obfuscation and Neanderthal gatekeepers who bar access to sentient officials met with little success.

New York's Immigration did list a local telephone number for the Enforcement Division, but I knew it couldn't be that easy, and I was right. Human beings no longer answer telephones at the Federal Government, only answering machines. This frees up civil workers for less work. The answering machine at INS requested my name and number, which I left about five times, and promised to call me back, which the machine and INS never did. Immigration also published an 800 number that gave out only the street mailing address for the New York City Enforcement Division, no room number. Naturally, as with most Federal agencies that the taxpayer pays for, local Immigration officials wanted to minimize their work load and shift their responsibility for enforcing the laws into a bottomless pit of unanswered telephone calls and mail drops where legitimate complaints waited for the second coming. The safety of American citizens never came before the comfort and convenience of government bureaucrats. No personal interaction with the public meant no accountability, which freed the bureaucrats to put in their time with as little effort as possible until their pensions vested.

The vaunted Immigration service that struck fear in the hearts of aliens as a tough, no nonsense, professional outfit that tracked aliens within America's borders and summarily deported them for violations of U.S. law was nothing more than a "Club Fed": a bunch of bureaucrats busy shuffling papers, pretending to work and dodging the public who paid their salaries. Federal officials always claim their heavy workload requires such obstructionist procedures, and they are right. To them their workload must seem insurmountable because it requires more than a few hours of effort a day when they would rather spend their time stuffing their faces or running their mouths. Government employees work in government not to help the public but because it's the limit of what they can do. Government is the employer of last resort.

Scouring the INS web site, I found a room number for the New York City Enforcement Division at One Federal Plaza—their mistake. No way was I going to mail my complaint to some bottomless pit. I was going to visit them in person in my lawyer's suit and demand to see an officer. All I needed was to get to the right elevator banks in the building, which meant circumventing another commonly used obstacle by Federal agencies. The entrance to every agency sported pseudo-security persons in cheap uniforms asking visitors where they were going in order to channel them to overly crowded, sense-assaulting pens that processed any request into a bureaucratic nightmare in order to discourage the stoutest of hearts. But armed with a room number, the security officer pointed me to the appropriate elevator probably thinking I had an appointment.

When I walked through the Enforcement Division's door, the officer sitting behind a Plexiglas shield looked surprised. I doubted few of the public ever traversed this threshold, not because they weren't permitted, since the office clearly reflected a place for taxpayers to lodge complaints, but because Immigration tried to hide its location from the public. Well, I found it,

and now I wanted to see someone. A young guy with a gun politely took me into an interview room the size of a large closet, probably wired for sound, and I presented him the package of papers, explained the complaint and answered questions. I intentionally included in the documents Poisoned Dragon's modeling card that showed her in eye-catching lingerie outfits. I figured it would attract a government employee's attention whether a man or a lesbian of which many seem to gravitate to enforcement agencies. But it also provided an effective way of identifying her since lap dancers work in their underwear. The agent thanked me for filing the complaint, and told me what I expected: because of the Division's heavy workload, they would probably never get around to acting on the matter. Modern day American justice began to make Russia look inviting.

When I got back home, I was surprised to find a message on my voicemail from an Immigration agent, different from the one I just met, asking me to call him back. The message came in literally minutes after I left the Enforcement Division—now that's quick service. It must have been Poisoned Dragon's pictures. I returned the call to a young sounding agent named Gene Kazenko who said he read through the complaint, meaning he looked at the half-naked pictures of my wife, and decided to conduct an initial interview with Poisoned Dragon. Did he really intend to interview her or hustle her for a quickie? It just didn't make sense the Federal Government responding so fast. He wanted to know her daily routine, which I gave him, and suggested the best times and places to approach her were when she took the subway to work or at Flash Dancers. The later must clearly have appealed to him. I added that according to my wife, some of the other girls at Flash Dancers worked without visas, and warned him that she carried a knife. I don't know whether he ever dated her, but I doubt he ever considered the case

seriously since repeated telephone calls and letters to him with additional information uncovered in my continuing investigation never even elicited the courtesy of a response.

Months later, I contacted U.S. Senator Hillary Clinton's office to complain about INS' do nothing attitude. On a lark, I thought that one of her Feminazi storm troopers might see an opportunity of using my case against Poisoned Dragon to push Immigration to tighten up its procedures in order to reduce the female competition streaming into the country from Russia and other foreign nations. I based my attempt on a curious hypocrisy that while Feminazis regaled in castigating, criticizing, demeaning, defaming, demonizing, denigrating, dissing and blaming men for all the world's ills and the wrongs they may have suffered, the non-lesbian ones perpetually bawled like babies that they couldn't find a man.

To my amazement, these man-haters didn't comprehend that after decades under the Feminazi lash, men didn't want to date them. No guy desires some girl constantly insulting him who at the same time scolds him over what he thinks, says and does. American men aren't that masochistic. Instead, they set their sites on girls from South America, Asia and the former Soviet Union because those girls don't continually berate men for exercising their freedoms of speech and thought or challenge a man's right to exist as a man because some Amazon's sensitivities disapprove of him. Men find a lot of genetic behaviors in girls offensive, but so long as they don't harm anyone, emotionally or physically, most guys figure it's just part of life and let the annoyances go. But not so with the Feminazis who embarked on a 40 years war to bludgeon half of the population into a schizophrenic behavioral pattern that placated fickle female whims, which wanted men strong when danger threatened but submissive in competition with girls. The Feminazis' "new man," or "androgyny" had to be sexually faithful, but accepting of her infidelity; aggressive or submissive in bed, but only when she wanted it so and telepathic



enough to know which; willing to die in the wars to protect her and her children, but give her the best jobs even when not qualified; accepting of her every insecurity and irrationality while having none of his own; and willing to do exactly what a girl wanted, when she wanted and whether consistent or contradictory to her previous demands.

Clinton's office didn't bite. They weren't even interested in Poisoned Dragon's tax evasion; probably they considered her a victim of male oppression that gave her the right to violate the laws. I never even met anyone in person from the office, not even a receptionist. When I tried to drop off my letter and exhibits showing Immigration's inaction, they refused to allow me in their office for which my taxes paid part of the rent, and dismissively instructed me over the intercom to leave my complaint with the message desk in the lobby. Over the telephone, they were just plain rude as though it was always that time of the month for them.

A week later, I went to Senator Charles Schumer's office to complain about INS' inaction. The ladies there didn't spend their waking hours locked in some inaccessible vault sharpening their knives for use on men. The receptionist met me with a smile, tracked down the lady in charge of immigration matters who couldn't meet with me then but promised to look over my letter and exhibits and call me back. A couple of weeks later she called, politely asked some questions, but in the end, neither Schumer nor Clinton provided any help, although Schumer's office at least treated me like a person rather than garbage.

Still trying to get Immigration in New York City off its butt or perhaps my wife, I sent my complaint about its sloth to the INS Commissioner in Washington, might as well go to the top, and the Service's Internal Audit Department, which allegedly scrutinizes the operations of all the nation's Immigration offices. The Internal Audit Department referred my accusations of inaction against the New York office to, of course, the New York office and some unknown

person at that office. Why did I think my complaint would not receive an impartial review by some unknown, unaccountable person in the very office I was complaining about? The Commissioner referred my accusations to the Eastern Regional office that promptly whisked it off to some unknown official at, you guessed it, the New York office, probably the same Ms. Unknown, a.k.a. bottomless pit.

Obviously, no one cared and no one did his job. The non-Feminazi bureaucrats saw a middle-aged guy lusting after some pretty young thing and getting his fingers burnt. They figured I should have known better, had my fun and moved on; only an idiot would marry such a slut. The Feminists obviously thought I got what I deserved for violating one of their sacred commandments that condemned older guys pursuing pretty young ladies instead of mature, intelligent, strong and unattractive females like themselves. Whatever a person's ideology, the harm Poisoned Dragon caused me, the harm she would cause other men in the future and the U.S. laws she willingly violated didn't seem to matter because it all revolved around sex.

Since the ascendancy of political correctionalism in the 1970s, American culture has reduced the importance of relationships between guys and girls to the common denominator of sex. Guys and girls feel driven by a fear of missing out on something if they don't have sex with a lot of different people. Everywhere a person turns, the popular images foisted by the media, which knows better than any business that sex sells, depict people caught up in a frenzy of sex whether in real life or the land of make believe. Such public pervasiveness and mass profiteering off of sex make it about as significant as going to the movies. So when a President of the United States lies under oath to a grand jury or a Russian prostitute commits perjury to gain entry into America in order to sell her body for dollars, it doesn't matter, because it involves sex. Somewhere America lost the understanding that an act of such intimacy meant more than a

momentary kick. Beyond procreation, sex gave humans the ability to touch the underlying flow of life in both the separation from and union with the lives of others—combining the duality of our natures without losing either. I didn't understand why my society considered acceptable the conduct that exploited for selfish material gains the ability to reach to the very core of our existence. If anything constituted crime, that did.

My last attempt to pressure New York City Immigration involved using my status as a former associate of the Wall Street law firm Cravath, Swaine & Moore. The title “former associate” doesn't sound like much, but since Cravath is one of the best law firms in the country, my stint there usually helped open doors, especially with other lawyers who worked at the firm but subsequently left. A camaraderie of the “also-rans,” who nearly made it to the peak of the legal profession. Using the firm's alumni directory, I tracked down a middle-aged male alum working in one of the United States Attorney's offices in New York City. Whenever Immigration brought charges against an alien, the local U.S. Attorney's office generally prosecuted the case.

A call from an Assistant U.S. Attorney inquiring as to the status of Poisoned Dragon's case might prod the Immigration agent Kazenko into action. The Cravath alum graciously made the call to Kazenko who said he had conducted an interview of my wife at Flash Dancers right after I filed the complaint, but resolution of the investigation depended on whether Immigration could prove the Russian organized crime connections with my wife. That surprised both me and the Cravath alum. What did Russian organized crime have to do with anything? They weren't involved—the case was about a lying alien ho. My wife committed perjury when she applied for a temporary green card and an immigrant visa that defrauded both Immigration and the State Department. Immigration had the proof in the form of her diary and the Mexican immigration

visitor documents. The Government didn't need anything else! The stuff about establishing Russian mob connections was probably just a way out of doing his job. Kazenko also told the alum that he would contact me with the results of INS' investigation when it ended. I doubted Kazenko would ever inform me of anything. Needless to say, I never heard from New York City's Immigration office.

### Can I Get a Witness?

During the same period that my fight for justice traveled down the Federal Agency track, the second prong of my pincer counterattack focused on a costly effort to not only authenticate Poisoned Dragon's diary for use in court but to discover new information about her misdeeds that might lead to admissible evidence needed to show fraud for an annulment or adultery for a divorce. The diary, once authenticated, would provide more than enough evidence for a divorce on cruel and inhuman grounds, but I preferred an annulment or divorce for adultery because the INS could use either in a deportation hearing to show she married just for a green card or lied about not working as a prostitute. Although the annulment and adultery actions might not fly because of the defense that I cohabited with Poisoned Dragon after learning about the debased conduct described in her diary, my intuition and understanding of the energetic nature with which my wife pursued immoral activities convinced me I didn't know anywhere near the full extent of her lies and debauchery.

Gathering admissible evidence posed a daunting task since it lay strewn across a good portion of the globe: Moscow and Krasnodar in Russia; Limassol, Cyprus; Mexico City, Acapulco, Cancun and Puerto Vallarta in Mexico; Milan, Venice and Florence, Italy; New York City and who knew where else. How easily a girl using the currency between her legs can travel the world. Language also presented an obstacle because many useful documents were likely

written in a foreign language for which the New York State court required a written translation accompanied by an affidavit in which the translator swears he knows the language and accurately translated the document. Many potential witnesses probably didn't speak English and lived outside the reach of the New York court, so the court couldn't simply issue a summons requiring them to show up and testify. Nevertheless, the *Hague Convention on the Taking of Evidence Abroad in Civil or Commercial Matters* made it possible, but difficult, to obtain testimony in the countries of Poisoned Dragon's nefarious activities. First, however, I needed to discover the documents and people who might provide useful testimony for my annulment and divorce case. In trying to do that, I ran into a major obstacle in the New York court's procedural rules for terminating a marriage.

Generally when someone starts a court action, they do so to redress a wrong, like the wrong headedness of my marrying Poisoned Dragon. Initially, both sides know some facts but usually not enough to win at trial. The law, therefore, allows plaintiffs and defendants to use a court enforced process called "Discovery" in which both sides, or as the court calls them parties, try to find documents and locate witnesses that may help their respective sides. The court allows a number of techniques for Discovery, but the heart of the process that makes it work, requires each party to turn over relevant facts they possess that the other side requests. For example, many times only one party knows how to find a witness potentially useful to the other side, such as my wife's customers and other people mentioned in her dairy. Under Discovery, the opposing party must disclose that information if asked. Naturally, lots of parties don't, but if caught, the court will slam them with fines or give victory to the opposing side.

Unfortunately for me, New York State courts dramatically limit discovery in matrimonial proceedings because of the alleged fear that preying into personal affairs might exacerbate the

acrimony and strife between the parties, making any reconciliation impossible. The real reason, however, is to protect the wives from the embarrassment of the truth leaking out about their lascivious life style and other personal foibles. After all, both hos and Feminazis hide behind the visage of virtuousness to wreck their evil. It's tough to play the victim when the world knows the female is a two-face slut. Husbands generally don't give a damn over such false fronts; therefore, the limiting of Discovery into personal matters more often than not favors the wife. Why was I not surprised? The judges also fear the type of extensive Discovery used in every other type of civil litigation for getting at the truth might place unfair pressure on parties in a matrimonial case, unfair to whom—the wife. What about the strong and independent modern day female, or do those qualities only apply to when she wants a high paying job? What about all those females in the news, television shows, commercials and movies doing super deeds nearly everyday? Why should the courts go out of their way to protect them unless all the hype is just more lies that allow girls to take advantage—strong woman or fragile girl depending on which role serves their selfish interests.

So the courts limit discovery into personal matters because that's the realm females want to keep private, but when it comes to delving into personal financial affairs, the courts, incongruously, not only allow it but require extensive Discovery. Now, if anything will cause acrimony and strife and unfair pressure, it's tracking down a man's assets in order to loot them. But the courts don't see it that way. The not so subtle hand of the Feminazis created a system by which the wife, usually the financially dependent spouse, uses the power of the court to expose the husband's assets in order to expropriate an unjustified percentage. Meanwhile, the courts all but prevent husbands from laying bare the moral turpitude of their wives. And, just in case the husband manages to somehow prove his wife at fault, the courts say never mind and still reward

her a large chunk of the assets the husband earned while the wife lived off his largess and cheated behind his back.

A guy works hard during his marriage to save money for retirement, discovers his wife's a slut or a shrew, but the judge hamstringing him from proving it, and even when he does show his wife's revolting conduct destroyed the marriage, she still gets a lot of his money—a classic Feminazi Catch 22. The domestic relations courts, as with other government bureaucracies, simply believe females have the right to engage in whatever conduct they wish without paying the price—that's left to those they harm. The rules and the discretion given to the many man-hating judges in matrimonial courts result in those courts harming mainly men.

The odds were slim to none for a judge in the New York Supreme Court in Manhattan to direct my wife to provide me with names, telephone numbers and addresses for potential witnesses or documents to help prove my case. I'd have to find them myself and hope a jury would consider them. Using Poisoned Dragon's diary, my telephone logs, the Russian telephone recordings and other investigatory results; I drew up a list of people, many identified only by their first names, others by a description or when and where I met them, and next to each noted the issue or issues about which they might have information.

With an annulment, the court wiped the legal record clean, which was what I wanted to do with my memory. But to win an annulment, meant finding more revolting secrets about Poisoned Dragon of which I didn't know before we last cohabited together on December 4, 2000. Adultery ranked next in my choice for ending the marriage, but the New York courts make it difficult to prove. Neither spouse can testify against the other, so the evidence of adultery must come from other sources such as her sex partners—fat chance, but I had to try. Since her dairy chronicled her previous affairs before and after our marriage, by showing she

continued to associate with these lovers and clients, a jury could infer she also engaged in further sexual activity for which I didn't forgive her because I didn't know about it. But I needed testimony to support her continuing association with former lovers and customers. Even better would be testimony that she continued working as a prostitute throughout our marriage.

Even if I didn't win on annulment or adultery, I felt confident in obtaining a divorce for cruel and inhuman treatment no matter how biased the judge was against men. Under a claim of cruel and inhuman treatment, the adultery defense of cohabitation didn't apply. I could use the adulterous acts detailed in her diary to show she treated me in a despicable manner harmful to my emotional well-being for which the court should grant a divorce. Before the court, however, would admit the diary as evidence, I needed to authenticate it.

Authentication required a sample of her handwriting to show she wrote the diary and not someone else or testimony by people who could recognize her handwriting, preferably both. The letters she sent me wouldn't do to identify her handwriting because they were written in English, which uses a completely different alphabet than Russian. A writing sample in Russian by her was needed. I also needed testimony verifying a fair number of the events in the diary as accurate so that the court could conclude the writings expressed her thoughts and acts rather than just a girl's fantasies or the draft for a novel. Secretly making a copy and intimidating her into giving me part of the original didn't prevent its use as evidence.

My first step meant showing Poisoned Dragon's diary to various people she wrote about in order to confirm it mirrored her sorted reality. Showing Poisoned Dragon's diary to her friends and acquaintances meant endless humiliation for her, a pleasing prospect, and my traveling to Krasnodar to track down some of these people, not a pleasing prospect. Another way of showing she actually wrote the diary required taking her fingerprints off of the original



pages I forced my wife to give me in September 2000 when I surprised her on returning from Cyprus. Since Immigration had her prints on file, the presence of them all over those original pages implied she wrote those pages and the handwriting could then be compared with the rest of the diary of which I only had a copy. But could I get her prints from Immigration or convince a Feminazi judge to order Poisoned Dragon fingerprinted—all iffy bets. Better to try to find someone in Krasnodar who might recognize her handwriting or obtain a sample of her writing in Russian.

Looking for evidence in her backyard would likely stir up some trouble, so I wanted some Russian guys with clout to call on in case something stupid happened. Kroll won't do because by then my former boss, the Feminazi-lesbo, and her girlfriend had turned the firm in Russia into a timid, feminine operation to insecure to help me and that acted irrationally. I needed some guys with guts and honor, and I knew exactly where to turn.

During one of my prior trips to Russia in the early 1990s, I had met at a conference the boss of a Russian private eye firm that handled especially dangerous or difficult cases that other firms were too scared or incompetent to carry them off. The firm included former military intelligence (G.R.U.) agents, but in Russia, once a member of the G.R.U., always a member. During the cold war, the West knew about the K.G.B., which spied on Russians and foreigners, and the national police force the M.V.D., but few ever heard of the elite G.R.U., a secret group, independent from the K.G.B. and M.V.D. and beholdng only to the military's general staff. No one applied for a G.R.U. post—they were chosen. The G.R.U. held a more practical view of the world than the Communist xenophobes in the K.G.B. or M.V.D. After the Soviet Union collapsed, the G.R.U. continued to protect Russia's interests as seen from a global, long-term perspective within a civilized world order while the K.G.B., turned into the F.B.S., used its

crime-control functions largely to protect criminal syndicates that looted the nation. In the M.V.D., corruption ran rampant with some policemen acting as contract killers for the syndicates. The G.R.U. remained a cohesive, highly efficient and professional military intelligence agency trying to keep Russia from sinking to the level of a third world bandit country. G.R.U.'s symbol is identical to the one used by Batman.

My G.R.U. contacts provided me the name of a high-ranking law enforcement official in Krasnodar to contact in case the forces of destruction decided to pay me an unfortunate visit in Southern Russia. The official eventually sent a warning to Inessa in the form of a couple of police officers that the local M.V.D. knew about Poisoned Dragon's threats against me, her work as a prostitute and was keeping an eye on Inessa and her daughter's activities. The officers reported back that Inessa didn't appear intimidated but a rather hard woman who was not completely sane. Inessa's posture didn't faze me. I knew both her and Poisoned Dragon masters at appearing tough while inside the fear and hatred bubbled to borderline lunacy. Thanks to my G.R.U. guys, I didn't need to worry about Russian toughs waylaying me on a dark Krasnodar street.

As part of my home front offensive in New York City, I enlisted a young, good-looking Russian guy to work undercover for me by going to Flash Dancers periodically in an effort to befriend Poisoned Dragon to see what information she might unwittingly drop. A mission unlikely of success given Poisoned Dragon's propensity for secrecy but worth a try, since the young age of my agent and his ability to speak her native tongue might cause her in a moment of loneliness and weariness to drop her guard. In order to make her feel closer to him, it was better that he didn't appear as the usual customer, virtually all of whom she hated. I instructed him to

pay her money just to sit and talk and not for any lap dances, to try to create the image of a younger protective brother.

### Shape of Things To Come

Before my excursion to Indian territory in Krasnodar, I had to appear at the April 6, 2001 hearing in the Feminazi infested Queens Family Court for a determination of whether Poisoned Dragon, I or the both of us received Permanent Orders of Protection. About ten days prior to the hearing, the trinity of evil switched their objective. Finally realizing they couldn't bludgeon me into committing perjury before the INS, they tried to intimidate me into caving on the order of protection hearing and settling without a trial the annulment/divorce case. Poisoned Dragon and her lawyers didn't want to risk through the hearing or a trial the exposure of her fraud on the INS and State Department, tax evasion, smuggling money overseas and prostitution. So Mundy lied to Judith, still my lawyer, that he had obtained medical records proving I repeatedly beat my wife. Unfortunately for me I didn't, but should have. When I was a Kid, I quickly learned that if you are going to be blamed for something—you might as well do it.

Judith, as with most modern-day female cauldrons of hostility boiling with certainty in the perpetual guilt of men, grilled me over the telephoned in her loud, nasty voice trying to beat me, her own client, into confessing misdeeds for which she only had a two-bit opposing lawyer's accusation. It never occurred to her that maybe Mundy lied. Why she was doing Mundy's work for him by giving her own client the third degree? It didn't make sense. Did she want me to cut a deal, so Poisoned Dragon could avoid a hearing on the orders of protection and a trial in the annulment/divorce case? Or had the Feminazis turned my country into a land of mean-spirited twisted female gnomes yelling for the above-the-neck head of any man.

Angrily I said, “It never happened. The only person who ever got hit was me when my wife slugged me in the back. Did you ask Mundy for copies of the medical records?”

“No,” she curtly answered.

“Why not? How do you know he’s not lying?”

Silence. I continued, “Call Mundy and ask him for copies. Anything he produces will be a phony. He might get some Russian doctor to falsify documents but then we can subpoena my wife’s HMO records to show she never used it for any medical treatment and cross-examine her on why she paid a Russian doctor instead of using her HMO doctor for free.”

Having failed to make me cave, Judith changed the subject, “Let’s discuss the upcoming hearing.”

Like so many attorneys, Judith didn’t realize whom she worked for. She thought I should do whatever made her life easier, regardless of the truth or justice. Judith looked on me the way my wife saw the thousands of men for whom she stripped—suckers. I’d keep Judith through the hearing on the orders of protection, then dump her for a male lawyer.

We decided to request the female judge in the Queens Family Court to transfer both of the protection order cases to the Manhattan Supreme Court where the annulment/divorce proceeding was. Judith would argue that it made more sense for one court rather than two to deal with the disputes between my wife and me. All courts try to save time, money and energy by transferring cases between the same parties that have related issues to one judge.

Personally, I didn’t give a damn about making life easier for the troglodytes in the Queens court, I just wanted out of that den of male malevolence to a place where Judith told me the truth stood a better, although slim chance, of winning. In the Manhattan Supreme Court, we would proceed to a trial on the annulment, divorce and orders of protection before a jury. If the

Queens Family judge denied the request, then at the hearing, we would try to paint a picture of Poisoned Dragon as a ruthless professional prostitute willing to do anything to remain in America in order to make big bucks in the sex industry, which included lying to the court to obtain a Temporary and Permanent Order of Protection in a scheme to intimidate me into helping her acquire a permanent green card. I fully expected my wife's lawyers to oppose transferring the case to a slightly less biased court.

Before the hearing, I started searching for a male attorney. Unfortunately, in New York City in the new millennium, it's impossible to identify a man from his biological characteristics. One well-respected lawyer sporting a beard actually told me that the current generation of men must pay the price for thousands of years of treating women badly. This clown epitomized the Feminazis' "new man"—ignorant, emasculated in mind and soul. What a dope. He knew neither history nor how females work.

About 10,000 years ago when females controlled the technology of farming that had replaced hunting as the primary source of food, they brutally ruled over the fates of men's lives and deaths. Their drunkenness with power drove females to treat men no better than dogs as Frederick Engles described in *Origin of the Family*. As civilization grew in complexity, females relinquished to men the control of institutions for defense, the administration of public works and the functioning of the markets. Women no longer sat astride the levers of society's power because they realized it was easier to dupe men into doing the hard and dangerous work. Besides, guys were better at dealing with complexity. Mothers simply molded the pliable minds of their young boys into believing a man's purpose in life was to sacrifice himself for females. That allowed the little misses to greedily enjoy the fruits of men toiling their lives away or, as in

America since the 1970s, to use affirmative action to force men to step aside so that females could enjoy all of society's benefits while men shouldered most of the burdens.

Whether traditionalists or Feminazis, females created for themselves a privileged position out of an insidious false belief perpetuated by indoctrinating young children that women belonged on a pedestal whether as the weak, innocent, gentle girl in need of manly protection or the independent and strong super-heroine in need of obsequious worshippers. Consistent with female irrationality, the logical contradictions of the two pedestals don't prevent modern day females from alternating between the two whenever it serves their selfish aims. The traditional girl laughs as men go off to work in hazardous occupations to bring home enough money for her to purchase the useless bobbles, fashions and cosmetics that satisfy her vanity or secure the social status she desires. The Feminazi laughs as she claims the most desirable jobs for which she's not qualified. And they both laugh as war, the greatest of man's horrors, is still fought for land, riches and society's self-aggrandizement that the traditional girl yearns for and goads men into fighting for while the Feminazis relish the reduction in male competition for society's perks that war brings through death, injury and the lost of time.

A chief cause of war has always been stealing another tribe, city-state or country's natural resources so that females could enjoy a plusher life style. Most of the clothing stores and other retail shops on Fifth Avenue and lower Broadway, known since the 1800s as the ladies' mile, cater to females, since the average girl consumes more than the average guy. Fashion for females changes every year, so for a girl to stay fashionably attired in order to satiate her vanity requires buying the latest and dumping the old. In the end, the average girl causes not only the depletion of more natural resources, whether won by war of arms or business, but also causes

more pollution than the average guy—don't forget the tons of cosmetics and other girly products washed down the drain everyday.

For the Order of Protection hearing, a couple of pals, Jeff and Alan, accompanied me to the Queens Family Court to make sure Poisoned Dragon didn't corner me in some hallway or elevator so she could falsely yell rape or claim assaulted in order to once again exploit the modern American version of justice that all men are guilty when accused by a woman. By now, I understood why some men chose to circumvent the courts by just blowing some lying ho away—it was the only way they could get justice. Alan pointed out my wife as we entered the waiting room that looked like an early, retro motor vehicle office. She was dressed all in black, as usual, and her breasts looked bigger, most likely thanks to foam rubber. She probably hoped the judge was a lesbian—a good chance in New York City. She didn't look stressed and seemed rather confident, and so she should for American courts are the inquisitional engine used to destroy men who refuse to believe as do the Feminazis. The orc, my attorney, finally waddled in. Judith talked with Poisoned Dragon's attorney who wasn't Mundy but a girl lawyer from his office. Mundy ran the show, but for appearances, he used a girl lawyer as a front to appeal to the usual judges' biases against men. To my surprise, Poisoned Dragon's attorney agreed to move the case to the Supreme Court where the annulment and divorce proceeding was filed.

The bailiff called both sides into a large closet masquerading as a courtroom with a female judge, who was propped up behind a bench that couldn't weather a strong sneeze. The ever-present officer with a pistol stood off to the side in case a man decided he wanted justice instead of persecution. The bailiff directed Poisoned Dragon and me to sit in two chairs smack next to each other in front of the higher-seated, man-hating judge. Always wanting to be on top, Feminist judges usually positioned the chairs to further belittle the men whose rights they

violated on the say-so of a duplicitous female. I pulled my chair away from Poisoned Dragon's and sat down. Both our lawyers requested the transfer of the hearing to the annulment/divorce court, which the judge, seeing an opportunity for less work, quickly ordered.

Jeff, Alan and I couldn't figure out why Poisoned Dragon's attorney agreed to have the case transfer. Something wasn't right. The transfer did extend the Temporary Order of Protection against me to the end of July, but that meant next nothing, since the odds of my accidentally coming within 500 feet of my wife were slim to none. Perhaps Poisoned Dragon's lawyer thought that in opposing the transfer, the judge might go ahead and grant both sides a permanent order of protection, which would cause Poisoned Dragon problems with Immigration. In any event, although my wife didn't know it yet, a delay in the hearing helped me because now I could travel to Krasnodar, scheduled for the following week, without being under the cloud of a court finding that I had threatened my wife.

A permanent order of protection would reduce my credibility with potential witnesses while the Temporary Order provided a laughable example of how twisted America had become under political correctionalism. Russians, men and women, thought temporary orders of protection typical American hypocrisy for the world's alleged bastion of liberty and due process. Even Stalin allowed his purge victims their day in court before the judge inevitably condemned them, but in America, where the rest of the world knows women rule in order to destroy men, a man might end up in jail if a duplicitous woman decides to put him there—even without a show trial. Sure he may be exonerated later on, but he'll never get off of America's newest black list, more accurately called the "pink list" or the domestic relations offenders roll, which predominantly consists of men put there by lying hos and Feminazi judges. The government, media and business use the list to grind into the dust any man who dares go up against a



scheming female. All it takes is a temporary order of protection—no trial, no hearing, no right to defend to put a man into the F.B.I.'s data base.

## Help

The next day, Saturday, I met a friend arriving from Europe. Traviesa, twenty-four and hot, needed a place to stay, for free naturally, and to hide from her former boyfriend, Bobby, a cousin of the deceased mobster Joey Gallo. The fall of the Soviet Union cried havoc to an unsuspecting world as it let loose a flood of pretty young girls bent on conniving their way into the good life in America.

Traviesa and I first met in my Russian language class at Hunter College in 1998. Right from the beginning, I knew she was trouble. She first arrived in New York City the same year at age nineteen to nanny the kids of Bobby and his wife, who was related to the mafia don John Gotti. Traviesa quickly replaced the wife as the apple of Bobby's thirty-something eyes, and over the next few years, he ended up broke, divorced and addicted to cocaine. During her adventures, she periodically hid out in my apartment from her jealous, and rightly so, boyfriend. As with all pretty, young things, she wanted to have fun and did. Some of her stories sounded more dangerous than fun, such as when her fellow European girlfriend picked up a stranger at a disco and had unprotected sex with him just to get back at her boyfriend for some alleged slight while Traviesa laid awake in the same bed.

Traviesa's hoodlum associates didn't concern me because of my past encounters with goons during my media days. Like Russian gangsters, they're cowards at heart, but can be real annoying, like spoiled children.

One night, during her periodic hiding from Bobby, Traviesa and I took in the Old Blue Rugby Football Club's annual spring dinner. In younger days, I played mediocre rugby on one

of the lower squads for that very good team. After dinner, Traviesa asked me to take her to a bar in Bobby's neighborhood, not any bar, but Bobby's favorite. Traviesa hoped to find some wealthy guy she had previously met there.

"Get one of these 220 pound ruggers to take you. I only weigh 160. Both Bobby and his ex-con brother are bigger than me, but not these guys." I said motioning to the thirty odd guys at their physical peak after a year of rugby.

She chimes, "Oh Bobby won't be there. Besides, I'm too shy to ask one of these guys. You know I have a hard time meeting guys."

"Since when?"

"Stop," as she slapped my arm in knee jerk protestation.

"Look, not a problem, I'll get the coach to introduce you to whomever you wish, and have him say you're my niece. You're a good-looking babe Traviesa, and as I told you before, your breasts and ass are just right. You can have your pick of these guys. I'm sure one of them will take you to the bar, act the gentlemen and the rich guy will see you with him and become interested in you. Isn't that the way you girls think?"

Whispering in the chronic conspiratorial tone of her seductively husky voice, "No, anyway I'm too fat, and too shy to ask any of them. Wouldn't you take me to the bar? I'm really interested in this guy."

"I thought this guy was gay."

"I think so, but he's rich. Pleaseeeee."

Bored, I took her to the bar after the rugby dinner. Naturally the guy's not there, but within minutes of our arrival in walks Bobby and his ex-con bother Viny. Bobby and Viny came from the lower order of the intelligence scale and diligently worked their way down from there.

Traviesa, a smart, shrewd girl played Bobby because at this point in his life he still had money. Traviesa and I never fooled around because I knew she was nothing but trouble. Just look at this fix she got me into without sex.

As Bobby and Viny approached, I went on red-alert and decided not to play the obsequious weasel to her Neanderthal boyfriend by explaining my relationship with Traviesa, which he wouldn't believe anyway thanks to Traviesa previously confessing to him that she was staying in my apartment. To my surprise, neither of these mob-related guys with over-active mouths came close to fighting or even verbally provoking it. They reserved their epithets for Traviesa, and I didn't care; she wasn't my girl. If she wanted to protect her honor, she could do it herself. The three of them moved to the sparsely occupied back of the bar to conduct prolonged negotiations while I sat with my drink in the crowded area, just in case. Traviesa decided to stay, and I with some relief immediately took my opportunity to escape this mafia domestic-relations dispute and went home to sleep.

Bobby, however, felt differently and telephoned me at two in the morning saying he was coming over to pick up Traviesa's belongings and that I'd better have them ready! This idiot apparently saw too many gangster movies.

I replied, "You can go wherever you want, but if you knock on my door, I'll have the police through you in jail, and if you breakdown my door, I'll take out both you and your jailbird brother."

That ended the calling for that night, but periodically throughout 1998, even after Traviesa moved out, he'd call around four in the morning after a night of shoveling coke up his nose looking for Traviesa. He became an annoying joke, so I had to call his third brother, the

older and smarter one, to tell Bobby to knock it off, or I'd go to the police. The calls stopped, and Traviesa returned to Europe in December 1998.

The next time I heard from her was September 1999. She telephoned me at Kroll in Moscow to say she was working and partying in Majorca, but had spent all her savings from work on clothes and now needed \$400 to get back home to the Austro-Hungarian Empire.

“Why don't you ask Bobby for the money, he's your boyfriend,” I said.

“I can't ask Bobby because he thinks I'm working in the grape fields at home,” she cajoled.

“So you lied to him about partying in Majorca?”

“No, I just didn't tell him. Besides Bobby is nearly broke anyway, except for his small loan sharking business and that money he uses to buy coke.”

Begrudgingly, I sent her the money, which to her credit, she promptly repaid.

When I returned to America with Poisoned Dragon nearly a year later in 2000, Traviesa's was back in town legally working under a visa Bobby got her through his father's parking garage business. Bobby was off the coke and making some money again. The four of us went out to lunch together, which finally got Bobby off my case after he met my wife. The only benefit I ever received from marrying Poisoned Dragon.

In the fall, Traviesa dumped Bobby, again; he was completely broke, and she went back to Europe for college. After a couple of semesters, she needed money, so with her visa about to expire, she flew back to New York in April 2001, and like the soft-hearted jerk I am, agreed to let her stay in my apartment for free.

At JFK, I spotted her coming out of the arrival gate. She looked better than last time I saw her nine months earlier. Back then, I still hoped Poisoned Dragon would metamorphose into a human being. I made my way over, we kissed hello on the cheeks.

“How was your flight?”

“I almost missed my connecting flight because the flight to Frankfurt was delayed.”

Frankfurt, I thought, the same place Poisoned Dragon flew into when returning from whoring in Mexico. Would reminders of her forever haunt me?

“Well, you’re looking good. Your breasts are bigger. What happened?”

In my middle age, I had discovered that young girls willingly talked to me about their most intimate and nefarious matters. They no longer saw me as belonging to the pool of eligible suckers whom they needed to deceive into thinking they were good girls of marriageable quality, and they likely wanted me to know of their availability for seduction by a middle-aged guy willing to spend money on them. These girls confided in me about their boyfriends, their one-night stands, guys who came to fast or were otherwise lousy in bed, guys they used, guys they conned drinks out of, girls they sexually played with, drugs and general stupidity, but the key themes were always boys and sex. It didn’t take me long to conclude that the pretty young things I idealized in my youth, regardless of nationality, were incapable of fidelity. They constantly deceived their main boyfriend into believing he was the one and only. They were all hos. The only difference, the degree of hoing and the form of compensation. My wife went for cold hard cash, while most conned favors and gifts. Not a one knew anything about morality; they firmly believed in survival of the sluttiest. Had I only known that when younger?

Traviesa answered, “My mom has been stuffing me with food and I got fat especially my rear.” She turned to show me her ass. It didn’t look fat to me.

“You’re not fat. You’re just the right size that guys want. So how much longer until you get your undergraduate degree?”

“Two semesters, I’m the oldest in my classes. I feel I’ve wasted so much time, and now I have to skip a semester to make some money. You said a friend of yours might teach me to tend bar?”

“I’m sure he’ll be happy to and try to sleep with you at the same time, but that’s up to you.”

“I can handle that.”

“I’m sure you can.”

“Stop it Roy. I’m not like your wife.”

“Well you do come from Eastern Europe, the former Soviet Union.”

“I’m not from Eastern Europe but Central Europe, and we were not part of the Soviet Union. I despise those Russians. They destroyed my country’s economy and acted like pigs when they occupied my country. When I was a little girl, I had to walk past the Russian soldier barracks to get to school. I was so scared they’d rape me that every day I ran as fast as I could pass the barracks, praying no one grabbed me. When they finally left, we were so happy. We cheered them leaving.”

“I’ll cheer when the INS makes Poisoned Dragon leave America for good, if it does.”

“A new name for your loving wife. How appropriate, but I still like your original endearment of ‘Angel,’ she mockingly said.

“Be nice, or I won’t call my bartender friend Tom.”

“So tell me about you and Angel. What happened?” Young girls always liked to talk about relationships.

“I finally kicked her out of my apartment. She and her attorneys tried to get me to lie to Immigration to help her get a green card; I refused, so they had her take out a Temporary Order of Protection against me hoping it would pressure me into doing what they wanted. That’s when the war started. In response, I filed an annulment and divorce action that they’re trying to force me into settling so they can avoid a trial that will expose her having lied to the Government to get into the country.”

“Nice people. What happened with the Temporary Order of Protection?”

“The hearing was yesterday, but both sides agreed to transfer it to the annulment and divorce court.”

“Why didn’t you expose her at the hearing and use that with the INS.”

“My lawyer said I’d have a better chance in the other court, the divorce court.”

“Well, from what I saw with Bobby’s divorce, men don’t have a chance in any New York court.”

“You know, you’re right. Hmmm, so why then did my lawyer say I would?”

“To get you to agree to the transfer, of course. Even I can see that. Maybe your lawyer and Angel’s lawyer cut a deal?”

“Of course! Why didn’t I see it? Mundy calls my attorney with this lie about medical records showing I beat my wife; my lawyer uses that to try to hammer me into a settlement, but when I refuse, Mundy and my lawyer concoct a scheme to switch the Order of Protection hearing to another court. That way it buys Poisoned Dragon time to apply for a permanent green card without a court record of any criminal activities hanging over her head.”

“I think you need a new lawyer,” Traviesa advised.

“I’m already looking for one. But the INS takes months, sometimes years before deciding to grant a permanent green card, and by then the hearing and trial will have occurred, so the INS will end up with a court record anyway.”

“But in the meantime, Angel continues to make big bucks at Flash Dancers.”

“I should have used you for my lawyer instead. Looks like another goof on my part, or more accurately, another sellout by an American Feminazi! I’d like to nuke them all! But why would my lawyer conspire with Mundy? She’d make more money with a hearing. Maybe she just hates men so much; she uses every chance to knife them in the back.”

“Or something is going on that you don’t know about.”

“What do you mean?” I asked.

“In my country, when things happen that don’t appear to make sense, it’s because people behind the scenes are controlling peoples’ actions.”

“But this is America, not a former communist country. Who could possibly pressure my lawyer to sabotage her own client?”

“I don’t know. It’s your wife, not mine. Maybe she has powerful friends?”

“In Krasnodar yes, they’re all her Johns, but in New York City, I don’t think so. It’s probably just Feminazi dictates that require females to harm men at every chance. Well, I’ll just have to wait a little longer to expose my wife in court.”

“Are you sure you’ll get the chance?”

“My next attorney is going to be a man, no more relying on these scheming Feminazis. I’m not settling anything without a trial.”

“I hope you’re right.” Traviesa asked, “Is Angel still working as a prostitute?” .

“It looks that way.”



“What a slut, to her money is more important than another person’s feelings.”

It still hurt when people called my wife a slut, but it was the truth. “She’s quite adept in her scams. She can take your last dollar from between your teeth and then look at you like you stole it from her.”

“When I met her, she didn’t seem like a tramp or a crook, which, I guess, meant only that she could be both with more success than if she had.”

“You’re absolutely right. Her innocent face hides more than a lying tongue.”

“She seems very good at sizing up men accurately and quickly. Moving from one to another, using sex as both sword and shield and always leaving them poorer—just a shallow machine for making money.”

“Once when putting my fingers inside her, I was surprised at not being able to feel the walls of her vagina. That experience, more than any other, brought home to me the reality that she’s as hollow and empty as the spaces between the stars. There’s nothing inside her but cold malicious darkness.”

“She probably uses it to smuggle drugs and money.”

“Money, yes, and likely drugs. I don’t even want to think about what else she’s put inside her. How can a girl live like that?”

“Easy if she’s Russian and greedy, and she’s both.”

I changed the subject. “So is Bobby going to start waking me up at four in the morning with more annoying telephone calls?”

“No, he doesn’t know I’m here, and I want to keep it that way.”

“Well, I’m not about to tell him.”

Traviesa took up residence on my couch. That night alone in bed, I felt somewhat at ease for the first time in two months as though Traviesa's presence protected me from Poisoned Dragon's endless black magic curses aimed at destroying what was left of my life. Ever since the Temporary Order of Protection, I felt under assault, not just from the typical attorney exaggerations of imminent doom, but also from unnatural feelings of dread. Unnatural in that they didn't seem to originate from me. I'd experienced stress before, but never such feelings of hopelessness and powerlessness. My despair grew strongest near the full moon, which, according to Poisoned Dragon, her black magic powers were at their strongest. My tutor's magic book stated that Russian witches cast spells after the new moon so the spell will grow in power as the moon turns full, but after the full moon, the spell fades away as the moon wanes and needs repetition after the new moon. For two months, I had put up with this roller coaster of metaphysical assault on my psyche trying to push me into giving up. Many of my so-called friends didn't help either by advising I should let this Russian criminal get what she wants and move on with my life. But now, Traviesa's presence seemed to lessen the black magic turmoil.

Did the powers of pretty, young girls actually reached into the metaphysical realm to battle each other? Traviesa needed me alive, at least temporarily, to provide her a place to live while she learned bartending. Poisoned Dragon wanted me dead because under the Immigration law, a wife, even a separated one, with a dead husband was a shoe in for a permanent green card. And in our case, my death meant the elimination of the only person who cared enough to keep after the Government to enforce its laws by deporting her back to the medieval ages of Russia, where she belonged with all the other refuge of a failed civilization. Whatever magic Traviesa practiced or carried as her birthright staved off Poisoned Dragon's curses and allowed me to sleep normally once again, although my dreams still consisted solely of nightmares.

Through out my tribulations, I tried to understand how other people handled doomed situations. Years earlier a television reporter friend for whom I worked as a producer at WABC-TV News ran into a hopeless situation with death as the only way out. He contracted terminal cancer while at the same time a female writer in the newsroom falsely accused him of striking her. This girl writer, renowned for her incompetence, decided to use the modern day female weapon of combining the traditional view of women as the weaker sex in need of extra protection with the modern belief that all men were brutes, and, therefore, automatically guilty whenever accused by the alleged fairer sex. In order to avenge herself for my friend's frank reminders of her ineptitude and most likely against all the men who rebuffed her crude sexual advances, she lied about receiving a blow she most roundly deserved. Her false accusation required my friend to change jobs, pushed him into financial difficulty, aggravated his illness and caused him to die sooner than he would have. Leave it to a female to hit a man when he's down.

Not unlike the 1950s, when low-lives used false accusations about communism to destroy peoples' lives; today females use lies about assault or harassment to decimate men because then as now the accused are considered guilty until they prove themselves innocent. Feminazi-McCarthyism has destroyed more lives than Joseph McCarthy ever did. Such a tactic contradicts one of the primary reasons for the American Revolution: due process, a person is presumed innocent until proven guilty. The Kings and Queens of Europe and the Catholic Inquisition torched countless people because of the impossibility of proving a negative, that a person did not do what the state accused him of doing. America's founding fathers knew how humans tended to abuse power for selfish gains, how the powerful summarily eliminate their critics with witch-hunts, so they included in the Bill of Rights a guarantee of due process of law in which the crucial tenet held that the accused are presumed innocent until proven guilty, rather than the

other way around. But today that keystone of justice has crumbled for men, leaving them vulnerable to malicious females that make false accusations for vengeful, vain, monetary or other wrathful reasons.

In the case of my reporter friend, the girl writer said that when the two of them were alone in an editing room, he struck her. Funny how the acts that females falsely accuse men of always seem to take place without any witnesses other than the man and the girl. Her mere accusation made my friend guilty. Without a witness or big brother's all Seeing Eye, he couldn't possible prove himself innocent. It was a shame that his family obligations prevented him from taking matters into his own hands by bringing the swift sword of justice to that duplicitous, empty-hearted female. At the time, I sensed my friend's plight vaguely foreshadowed a similar situation awaiting me, and vowed that when my time came to battle feminine treachery, I would not find myself in a similar position where duty to others prevented me from exacting justice.

Now that my war had started, the full emotional travail became clear when all a person's joy dies with the termination of hope or pleasing thoughts for the future. On the other hand, everyday hammered my character a little bit meaner, especially toward the Feminazis.

#### Image of a Girl

Leaving Traviesa in my apartment along with two other friends who needed a place to crash for a few weeks, I again arrived in Moscow to stay with my translators, Sasha and Anya, both twenty now. In return for the accommodations, I paid a reasonable rent in dollars, bought groceries, which they promptly ate, and gave them some Macy's silverware to replace their dysfunctional Soviet tin utensils. They were thrilled with the spoons that didn't bend and the knives that didn't need sharpening. Moscow still had "grinders" roving the streets putting cutting edges on kitchen knives.

Sasha and Anya, as with the vast majority of Russian college students, lived exceptionally poor, skirting the line of constant hunger. They really loved sweets, probably because sugar dulls the appetite. Their their refrigerator often contained only cake and bread. Both came from middle-class families with the fathers and mothers working at what Americans consider respectable jobs. In Russia, however, such jobs didn't pay enough for parents to significantly help with college costs even with free or nominal tuition, a holdover from the Soviet era. The well-educated middle class in Russia was poor, so students often worked at full time jobs while in college just to make enough for survival. No wonder many pretty coeds went in for part time Banya orgy work under New Russians and foreign executives. Coeds also made ends meet by dating older, wealthier guys who favored them with material favors. I don't think Sasha or Anna went in for Banya work, but they did date older, more established men.

The night before my flight from Moscow to Krasnodar, my buddy Tony and I hit a disco with his latest non-pretty Russian concubine. Tony commiserated over the disaster of my marriage to Poisoned Dragon and, to my near shock, bought me a few drinks. Tony's reputation for frugality surpassed only his notoriety for hustling his buddies' girlfriends. Even at strip clubs, whether dating the stripper or not, Tony only paid the girls 40 rubles for a lap dance, which was about two dollars, when the going rate was 100 rubles. There had to be some ulterior motive for his largesse in buying me drinks. Sure enough, he wanted Anya's telephone number. Tony met Anya, the little red haired girl as I called her, when she and I were in a disco in Moscow. Ever since then, he badgered me for her telephone number. I agreed to give it to him, if she okayed it.

American executives in Moscow struck me as a sorry bunch of losers by American standards, whether on the girl or occupation fronts. Of course, who was I to talk? Anyway, they

couldn't compete in America, so they gravitated to Russia where they appeared as big shots, at least in their own heads.

In the evening on Easter Sunday, April, 15, 2001, I took the two-hour Aeroflot flight to Krasnodar. After landing at the same old airport out of the 1930s, I negotiated a taxi driver down from the usual astronomical fee they asked of Americans to about twice the going rate for natives. With Russian taxi drivers, or more accurately ordinary citizens freelancing as taxi drivers, the lone passenger always sits up front. Russians, especially outside of Moscow and St. Petersburg, seldom run into Americans, whom they hold in a mixture of awe, envy and dislike. Most Russians, given the opportunity, will launch into a lot of questions in the hope of salvaging some of the old pride that still lingers from the lies they once believed under the Soviets. As a guess in their land and not wanting to end up in a ditch, I always tried to accommodate them with a few criticisms about America of which I had plenty. Between my driver's poor English and my poor Russian, I explained my situation—he laughed, warning me, as if I didn't know, that the greatest evil on earth was Russian prostitutes, but that an honest Russian woman, which I doubted existed, was one of the greater goods. He advised I should find me one and forget about Poisoned Dragon.

Monday morning, April 16, 2001, consciously eager to start finding information and unconsciously to start causing trouble, I began to worry, as Natalya, the same translator I used the previous September, didn't show on time. Russians are notorious for backing out of an arrangement, when it suits them, or showing up late, when it suits them. I didn't know which was the case here and began to worry about finding another translator. Natalya finally appeared, two hours late, explaining she visited her parents out of town over the Easter weekend.

Normally, the Russian weekend unofficially starts on Thursday as everyone who can escape a city, as though from a sinking ship, bolts until late Monday morning, when they trudge back to the serious urban health hazards of all Russian population centers. On holidays, however, even religious ones in this previously atheistic country, all Russians become believers overnight in order to take advantage of an extra day off from work and leave the cities by starting, in this case the Easter weekend, on Wednesday.

In the lobby of the Moscow Hotel, Natalya beamed her smile as she greeted me, “So what is our mission this time?”

“I’m trying to gather information I can use in the divorce court back in America.” I went on to explain the legal reasons and methods for authenticating Poisoned Dragon’s diary and why I needed more information about her adultery, prostitution and the life she lived before our wedding.

“Well, let’s go. Where’s our first stop?”

“When I came to Krasnodar to marry Alina last March, she took me to a masseur to treat a martial arts injury to my shoulder. He worked in a one story building at a small old fashion stadium with a track and soccer field on Krasnaya Ulitsa.”

“I know where the stadium is. Do you know the name of the masseur?”

“No, my wife often didn’t introduce me to Russians we met in order to keep their names from me. She obviously feared I might run into them again or track them down and find out some of the truth about her. And I didn’t understand Russian well enough to follow any conversations she had in Russian. So, I don’t know his name, but I will recognize his face.”

“Well then all we have to do is look at each masseur,” Natalya concluded.

We walked out of the drab, dark, Soviet hotel lobby into a sun filled day where birds sang and a warm spring breeze touched the hearts of lovers with a joyful anticipation that I would never feel again. Natalya flagged a car.

At the stadium, I immediately recognized the squat building where the masseur worked. We went inside, no receptionist, so we wandered into the rooms where customers were receiving treatment. I didn't recognize anyone—rats! The receptionist magically appeared on our way out and said one of the masseurs was outside on the track.

Outside he recognized me at the same moment I did him. We shook hands while Natalya translated our greetings. His name was Andrey. At his suggestion we went back inside to his office where thirteen months earlier he miraculously did what American orthopedists couldn't—fixed my shoulder so that I could continue with the martial arts.

Inside, I slowly recounted my tale of woe with Natalya translating and explained why I came back to Krasnodar. Natalya and I pretty much ran through the same routine with all the other people we interviewed that week. People in Krasnodar knew Poisoned Dragon by her given name Alina, so I used that instead of Angelina. Didn't want them to become confused about which prostitute we were discussing. My narrative recounted Alina and I marrying the previous year in Krasnodar, my taking her to America where she made around \$14,000 in cash a month just as a stripper and more as a prostitute. It was important that people in Krasnodar knew the truth about the amount of money she made so that the lingering communistic belief in economic equality, coupled with envy for those better off, might motivate some of her associates into ratting-out a fellow citizen to an American. My narrative also mentioned in passing that she kept most of her money hidden in her apartment. Naturally gossipy Russians would hopefully spread the word until some criminal took it upon himself to relieve her of it. No half intelligent



Russian kept hard currency in a bank because the bankers were even bigger crooks than the average Russian.

The monologue recounted the discovery of her diary from which I eventually learned about her prostitution and that she married me for a green card. These revelations made me decide to obtain an annulment or a divorce, but in order to use her diary in court to prove my case, I needed to authenticate it, which meant people identifying her handwriting and stating that the events she wrote about actually happened. Most Russians didn't understand why I couldn't just get an annulment or divorce without all this trouble—like in Russia, but the New York courts thought differently. As I explained, when both sides disagreed on the reasons for ending a marriage, each had to present evidence at a trial to support its position in order for the jury to decide.

On finishing the story, I gave a copy of Alina's handwritten diary to each person, politely asked whether the person could recognize the handwriting and would that person take the time to read it. Natalya would contact him or her in a day or two to arrange another meeting depending on whether any of the events Alina wrote about rang a bell or by then her handwriting looked familiar. Before letting a potential witness go, I asked a number of questions about Alina in order to come away with something useful just in case the person decided not to meet with me again or not read the diary. Russians often say yes when they are in your presence while inside they're telling you to go to hell. The additional questions usually asked about Alina's reputation, what she did for a living, the names of other people who knew her and any other information they might have about her. During the first interviews, I assumed most people wouldn't bother to read the diary, but nearly everyone we approached did. Natalya later explained that Russians are always looking for interesting reading; especially about someone they know when it lifts the

false veil that everyone uses to deceive each other. Even in Russia there existed a thirst for the truth—about others at least.

After my spiel to the masseur, Andrey said he'd read the diary that night and try to help as much as he could, but added he didn't know Alina very well since he was only her masseur. Then he apologized to me.

“What for?” I asked through Natalya.

He said, “When you were here last year, Alina told me you two were getting married and I joked about it by saying ironically that I was sure she would be very happy. In Russia it is bad luck to joke about such important events.”

“I doubt it had any effect. Any marriage to someone like Alina is doomed.” Andrey's superstition didn't surprise me; it seemed to lurk in the hearts of all Russians, but that Alina told him she was getting married did. None of the other people I subsequently talked with knew or at least admitted they knew of Alina's marriage before it occurred, and most didn't even know about it until I told them. Obviously, Andrey knew Alina a lot better than he let on.

“What else do you know about Alina? I asked.

“She competed in various track and field jumps until she injured her foot, which was how I met her. After the injury, she started working for a model agency. She was around eighteen then. That's when she probably started working as a prostitute also.”

“How do you know she worked as a prostitute?”

“Everybody knows Alina is a prostitute, including her mother Inessa who encourages her to make money that way.”

“I thought as much. Could you tell me who some of these people are, and how I can contact them?”

“I will ask them if they want to talk to you. There’s one man, her trainer, who knows more about her than I. He is usually here early in the morning training his athletes of whom Alina was one. If you come by tomorrow morning, I will point him out to you. He is in his fifties. But be careful, he is a very influential and tricky man. Don’t tell him you talked to me.”

“Fine,” I said, and filed away in my mind the warning that applied to every person who had reached an influential position under the former communist government. Such persons still carried clout because membership in the good old boys and girls’ club that ruled Russia didn’t change just because the name given to the political system under which they abused their power did. Alina’s trainer must have made it up the ladder with other commies to where he still exercised significant power through his connections as a result of the former Soviet Union’s emphasis on athletics.

Andrey added, “Also, there is a beauty shop located in the stadium run by a man who may know her.”

“Thanks, we’ll check it out. Do you know which model agency Alina worked for?”

“No, but there aren’t that many in Krasnodar. I’m sure they’d recognize her picture.”

“Did Alina ever win any national track championships?” I asked as an after thought.

Andrey laughed, “No, not even any local titles. She wasn’t very good, always finished well back of the first three.”

She had even lied about her athletic accomplishments—always the phony. Once, while still living together, we went to the beach at Montauk Point on Long Island where she did some of her hop, skip and jump track routines. Her form looked lousy and the distance didn’t amount to much, but what did I know about Russian athletes. In her mind, however, I’m sure she envisioned herself flying like the X Man’s “Storm.”

“What about beauty contests?”

“In 1997 she took a runner up in the “Golden Hair” pageant here in Krasnodar.”

We agreed to meet the next morning, and he would point out Alina’s trainer, Yevgeny. I thanked him for his time.

Natalya and I stopped at the beauty salon in the stadium. The manager didn’t know my wife’s name, but the moment I showed him Alina’s New York City modeling card with her wearing only underwear, he immediately recognized her, saying he saw her around.

Saw her around, I said to myself, what, in her underwear walking the streets? Something strange here again—another red flag flying in the face of my intuition, so I filed it away knowing it would eventually make sense.

“Where next?” Natalya asked.

“I want to stop at her model agency.”

“What’s the address?”

“Don’t know.”

“Do you know the name?”

“No, but once when Alina and I walked past some buildings on Krasnaya Ulitsa, she pointed out one of the storefronts saying she used to work as model there. I remember asking if she wanted to go in and talk to her former employers, but she said the agency had moved. If we can find the building, we can ask the new tenants about the model agency. Maybe they’ll know its name or address.”

“But you don’t know the address. How can we find the building? Krasnaya is a very long street.” Natalya sounded a little hopeless. Most Russians generally give in to negativity.

When one avenue appears block, they just quit as though the fates interceded. Only the criminals seem to possess the American “can do” attitude.

“I remember the store front was on the opposite side of the street from where Alina and I often ate. That means it’s on the same side as the stadium, which is where we are now. And the place was not far from where the park that runs down the middle of Krasnaya ends with a statue. So which way is that?”

“North, right by the Intourist Hotel. Let’s go.”

Across the street from the Intourist Hotel, we began walking south on Krasnaya while I tried to pull up the faint memory of a nondescript storefront. We went a couple of blocks. I paused thinking a particular storefront looked vaguely familiar. There was no sign, no street number, and we couldn’t see inside because of the heavy curtains hanging in the window. The place looked deserted.

“I think this is the one.” I tried the door—locked. Rats, a dead end, but then Natalya, knowing Russian nature better than I, instinctively went to the next door that looked to me as part of a different store. To my surprise, that was the main entrance to the building’s entire storefront. I knew that Russians were masters of false impressions and illusions, but why the camouflage? Was the clientele for the business in this storefront that exclusive?

When we walked in a tall, very pretty girl in her twenties lazing away the time reading a magazine jumped up to greet us. Presumably her attentiveness resulted from immediately identifying me as an American, which usually excited the abacus in any Russian shopkeeper’s mind. Natalya told the girl we were looking for a model agency that previously occupied that store. To both our surprises, that shop was the model agency, in fact, the most famous one in Krasnodar founded by a well-known model named Tatyanna Vasilyeva. Guess its fame meant it

didn't need to advertise its location. Behind the curtained windows stood manikins wearing strange, dated apparel only visible from inside. We were asked to sit while the girl, easily six feet, fashionably walked into the adjoining room to announce our presence to the manager.

In seconds, an auburn haired, over the hill, overweight lady in her thirties, apparently still believing she was twenty, introduced herself as Anastasia Vasilyeva, the daughter of the founder. With Natalya translating, I said I was the husband of one of her former models and asked whether she remembered Alina Shipilina. Anastasia answered of course and invited us into a small office where she offered us the inevitable tea or coffee and cakes with which all Russians traditionally start off any meeting. A day of meetings meant an excessive infusion of caffeine that gave Russians their overly wired nervous look. Anastasia instructed the girl to ask her husband Dima to join us. Anastasia volunteered that the girl was a model, twenty-two years old, and didn't I think her very pretty. I concurred, but wondered why Anastasia pointed out the obvious, and why the girl just sat around the agency reading a magazine looking pretty.

Dima entered with the proverbial Russian grin that mentally made me grab my wallet. Short, a little chubby and looking much younger than Anastasia, he carried the self-confident air of a New Russian experienced at making money from one criminal scheme or another. Natalya and I went into our routine, me in English, she in Russian. At the end, I handed Anastasia a copy of the diary.

Anastasia responded in English, "I will read this tonight. You call me tomorrow and we will talk more about it."

I started to ask my other questions about Alina.

"We can talk more tomorrow," Anastasia interrupted. "But what I can tell you now is that Alina came to us when she was around fifteen. She was very fat. I told her to lose weight

and she did. She has a very strong will. She didn't have any money then, so we financed her training as a model, and she won some small contests plus a second place in the Miss Krasnodar contest in 1997. I can give you a photo of her from the contest tomorrow. All Alina ever wanted was money and the luxury life. We spent a lot on her, and she never paid us back. She just used us and moved on."

"Sounds familiar," I said grimacing through the reminder. "Alina said she regretted not having started modeling until she was 23 because that meant she missed the years in which she had the best chance for success."

Both Dima and Anastasia laughed, "No, she started young enough at fifteen. She had plenty of time and all the advantages for success. She just wasn't that good."

I kept pushing while I had them talking, "She also told me the only reason she didn't win the 1997 contest was because she was poor."

Again they laughed. "Alina was always full of excuses. She lost because the other girl was prettier and more talented. It had nothing to do with being poor or the girls playing around with the judges, for if it did, then Alina would have won! But we will talk more tomorrow."

That gave me pause. So, she tried sleeping with the judges to win the contest, but it only got her the runner up spot. Why did new examples of Poisoned Dragon's willingness to do anything to get ahead, so long as it wasn't honest, keep surprising me? One would think that by now I knew my wife lacked the ability to win at anything fairly, so she needed to cheat in any way possible—a true heir of the evil empire.

"Fine, but do you know any of her friends such as her old boy friend Alexei and a girl named Katya that she often picked up guys with?"

“We can give you Alexei and Katya’s numbers tomorrow.” Anastasia said. “Call me and we’ll arrange a meeting.”

Natalya and I left. I asked my interpreter what she thought of Andrey, Anastasia and Dima. Years ago, I learned that it took a Russian to read a Russian. Americans just can’t tell which Russians are relatively straight or the hard-core con artist. Natalya thought Andrey, the masseur, was hiding something, and that Dima and Anastasia, were only out for money. I gave Natalya a copy of Alina’s diary to read because it might help with further interviews and keep Natalya in my corner. My experiences in the former Soviet Union taught me not to count on any Russian’s continuing loyalty unless the person believed that by switching sides she would lose more than gain. Poisoned Dragon’s dairy clearly depicted a person who used and discarded others while always coming out on top. No one after reading it would ever trust her or believe her deserving of help.

“I’ll read it tonight before I go to sleep,” Natalya said.

“I hope it doesn’t give you nightmares. Also, do you know any reporters who might want to do a story on Alina and me?”

“Of course, I do. That was my profession before I started working for Millennium as a translator. I know one who I will try to contact tonight,” she enthusiastically answered.

We arranged to meet at eight the next morning at my hotel. I headed to a restaurant for dinner while Natalya went back to her office. Typical of Krasnodar, the waitresses were beautiful, young and all giggles when they heard my American accent. But I had walked down that road before, and no matter how enticing and flirtatious these girls acted, I knew only hearts of ice beat under those upright bosoms. The food stunk as in most of Russia, but an extra order of bread filled me up. Walking back to my minus five-star hotel along a crowded Krasnaya



boulevard, I wondered whether the people stuck in this dead-end town or me were the sorrier case.

Tuesday, April 17, 2001, Natalya and I started out on another beautiful spring day by going back to the stadium to talk with the masseur Andrey, and hopefully find Poisoned Dragon's trainer Yevgeny. Andrey said he read the diary but couldn't say whether any of the events depicted were true. He did, however, recognize her writing, which would help immensely assuming he was also willing to sign an affidavit to that effect. I planned not to raise the issue of affidavits with any of the people I interviewed until I exhausted their knowledge about Poisoned Dragon. Most people, Russians or Americans, don't want to get involved in any type of court case, not to mention a divorce proceeding in which they testify against a lucrative, vengeful prostitute. For Russians, such testimony actually posed some danger because prostitutes in their country service mainly the wealthy criminal elite; they're the guys with money, they run Krasnodar and other cities, and they don't want to risk any embarrassing publicity. Accuse a Russian hood of Hitler and Stalin type crimes and they'll puff with pride, but mock their need to pay a girl for sex, and they'll launch a vendetta. Many of the people we would interview would probably beg off signing any documents, but under the Hague Convention I could force them to appear at the local court house to testify. Assuming most would try to lie by saying they knew nothing about Poisoned Dragon's affairs, I could threaten them with perjury—thanks to a handy pocket tape recorder. But all that was farther down the road.

At the moment, I thought Andrey's recognition of Poisoned Dragon's handwriting as weird in that he claimed knowing her only as a masseur. Since when did a masseur gain such familiarity with his patient's handwriting? Didn't he spend his time with her massaging her

muscles and injured foot? Even if Poisoned Dragon paid him with massages of her own, where did familiarity with her handwriting come from? It didn't make sense.

In Andrey's office at the stadium, he said Alina's trainer Yevgeny was out on the track. On our way out, he added that Yevgeny was the man who visited Mexico City for a conference when Alina was working as a stripper and prostitute at The Men's Club. Alina had written in her diary that her mother, Inessa, warned her to keep a low profile while a man she knew from Krasnodar visited Mexico City. Andrey pointed out Yevgeny, I thanked him, and he went back inside.

We walked over to a man in his fifties, concentrating on a stopwatch, timing various athletes. Natalya made a brief introduction. Yevgeny asked us to wait a few minutes while he completed his timings. We sat in the shade and watched. Natalya told me the stadium belonged to the town government, which funded all the sports programs in Krasnodar in which Yevgeny held an important position. I couldn't help but smile, wondering what position my wife held with him. In Russia the main sporting competitions occurred between towns or districts within towns rather than universities or private professional teams, and government officials continued to run the show concerning athletics, just as they did under the Soviets.

After a few time trials, Yevgeny hustled his way over to us. Coaching clearly excited him—nice to enjoy the work one does. I began my monologue, paused for Natalya to translate my first few sentences, but she just kept going. She had the routine down pat by now, and for the rest of my trip, I let her give the monologue. It saved time and came out more coherent for the listeners.

Yevgeny knew how to turn on the charm, make people feel comfortable, disarm them and then provide no significant information while seeming to talk much with great earnest. He

expressed the sympathy of the consummate politician for my situation, promised to read the diary and suggested Natalya call him to arrange for us to meet later in the week. Before we left, he said his only involvement with Alina was that he trained her in the long jump until she injured her foot at eighteen and confirmed that Alina never won any championships, not even local ones, and was mediocre at best.

Next stop, the Krasnodar Academy of Physical Culture where Poisoned Dragon graduated college in 1996 and Inessa worked as an instructor of aerobics and calisthenics. Poisoned Dragon mentioned in her diary a woman named Vera Ivanovna who prevented Inessa from acquiring her master's thesis because Inessa failed to take a required credit. At the time it occurred, my wife bitterly criticized Vera. Presumably, Vera and Inessa were two implacable academic enemies. The inflated, infantile egos of people in academia likely made these two enemies until death, and after the death of one, the other will continue the defamations. Not even businessmen, lawyers or politicians, where so much more lay at stake, carried grudges as intensely as academicians. Hopefully, Vera would jump at the chance to deal a blow against Inessa.

The problem, however, was finding Vera since Ivanovna was not her last name but her patronymic or middle name. So we had to go to the academy and ask some students whether they knew a professor named Vera with the middle name Ivanovna. We couldn't contact the administration because the same old totalitarian tendencies and myopic secrecy of Soviet times still ruled in Russia. Although the Soviet Union sat on the ash heap of history, bureaucrats across the land continued to jealously protect their turfs with the added zest of a siege mentality since now power meant bribes—dollars to buy a lifeboat for escaping the lunacy of Russia. The

Academy's officers would never give out any information on Vera, and probably kick us off the campus unless I paid a substantial bribe.

The Academy occupied an entire block consisting of an ornate, but in need of repair, red brick building from Czarist times and a disharmonious stark, concrete slab addition built under Stalin. We decided to start in the Gymnastics' Department in the Stalin building where Inessa worked. The guard, a middle-aged woman, let us in without difficulty after Natalya told her I was an educator visiting from America, which overrode her desire to exercise the only power she and others like her would ever know—to deny access. Many university and office buildings outside of Moscow use petite bureaucrats for screening anyone entering, another hold over from the paranoid communist days and the Soviet desire to brag about full employment.

Inside, a low ceiling, dimly lit, aesthetically barren lobby oppressed the spirit as though Stalin's hand reached out from the grave. A couple of students told Natalya that Vera was a very popular and important professor in the Department of Gymnastics and directed us to her office. At her office, a student pointed out Vera talking to a group of her students in the hallway. We interrupted and Vera asked us to wait. Standing off to the side, I took in the sight of young, athletic Russian girls, pondering how many of them worked part-time as prostitutes. Also on my mind was what to do if Inessa blundered into the hallway to interfere with her craziness.

Vera finished with her students, and Natalya launched into the story as we stood in the hallway. Students, mostly girls, began to crowd around listening to the real life soap opera with looks of amused surprise and feigned shock. Good, let them hear the truth about one of their own, an alum and daughter of a current instructor. At Natalya's direction, I handed Vera the diary, she promised to read it, and said to call her in a couple of days. We left with Vera shooing

off a group of giggling, gossiping teenage girls. The story should spread through out the department in a matter of hours—yes!

Natalya and I went for lunch during which I asked her what she thought about Alina’s diary?

“She is a lonely and cruel girl.”

“Succinct and insightful, but I never thought of her as alone. Only a Darth Vader pretending to be a Princess Lea.”

“Why did you marry her?”

“I guess I saw more in Alina then there was. She’s a rather good actress you know, and it was the role she played, the image she created that I fell for. As you can see from the diary, the real her is a cold-bloodied, soulless machine that wants only money. And, of course, there were the drugs she secretly fed me, so when she was around I felt good but after she left I felt lousy.”

Natalya asked, “What kind of drugs were they?”

“As you can see from her diary, she doesn’t say which ones she used.”

“I don’t think she is very smart keeping a diary and trying to fool you while she went to Italy. I don’t understand how she thought she could keep that a secret, especially since you worked for an investigation firm.”

“I thought so too, but finally realized it was her arrogance. Alina is a predator who lives off of men, and all predators believe themselves superior to their victims. She naturally thought I was just another victim who would go sheepishly into the night. The irony is that if Alina had been faithful, I would’ve done anything for her. But she never intended to be. She just lied and used me. And her arrogance assumed she would get away with it. But I’m angry, hurt and will fight her until my last dollar, last breath and perhaps even after that.”

“I hope you win, but it will be difficult,” Natalya said. “This is the best chance for her to become a citizen of America, so she can make lots of money. She will fight with every lie she can make up.”

“You’re exactly right. It’s going to be a long, hard battle, and the truth has no guaranty of winning.”

“So who’s next on your list?”

“Let me call Anastasia at the modeling agency to see whether we can meet with her today.”

Anastasia was busy all day, so we arranged to meet the following morning. She asked me not to bring Natalya because Anastasia wanted to talk about things that were no business of “that little girl.” Anastasia and Dima obviously didn’t want any witnesses. Anastasia considered her own English good enough for us to understand each other. That was fine with Natalya; she didn’t think much of those two anyway.

Not wanting to waste the afternoon, I decided we’d try to find the manager of the movie theater and amusement rides at the end of Krasnaya Street. The previous year just before our marriage, Poisoned Dragon introduced me on two different occasions to a short swarthy man at the amusement complex as a very “good friend,” that euphemism again, who helped her and her mother move from Grozny, Chechnya to Krasnodar. At the time, the man didn’t charge Poisoned Dragon to ride the main attraction: a virtual space shuttle. It wasn’t clear whether the ride or the freebie thrilled her more.

Natalya said the place was called “Aurora” and Chechen criminals owned it—figured. Once again, I didn’t know the man’s name but would recognize him if I saw him. At the southern end of Krasnaya Street, we walked around the complex looking for the man but no luck.

We stopped at the manager's office, where some young tough refused to let us in claiming he didn't know where to find the manager or when he would come back—likely story. Before I left Krasnodar, we tried a few more times but never found the presumably Chechen manager of the Aurora. Apparently, Russia's ongoing war with Chechnya caused most, but, as I soon learned, not all Chechens to make themselves scarce.

On the way back to my hotel, we stopped at the disco "Club Imperio." Poisoned Dragon mentioned in her diary going to the club with its manager, another guy named Andrey. At four in the afternoon, the club was closed, but my American persona not only got us in, the staff immediately called the manager, who came right over to talk with us. At first, Andrey didn't recognize Alina's name, but like the beauty salon manager, when I showed him her modeling card with the semi-nude photos, it obviously rang a bell of more than just recognition.

"Yes, I know her," Andrey said. "She comes here once in a while, but that is all I can tell you." An obvious prevarication, but I didn't have anyway to make him more truthful.

Back in my dormitory-like hotel, I couldn't shake the feeling that despite all the information I had about Poisoned Dragon, the filth of her life ran deeper and wider than I imagined. Red flags were always popping up as though tied together with previous strange events recorded in my memory. The first time I saw her naked, her labia minora hung outside her genitals as though from over use, but at the time, I quickly dismissed the thought of her as a prostitute. Not anymore, Poisoned Dragon definitely works as a prostitute, secretly feeding drugs from the Caucasus's to her wealthier and more naïve customers, but how far back in time or varied did her criminal activities reach? So far the evidence indicated she started hooking at eighteen in Krasnodar. My intuition, however, sensed much more to her saga.

Wednesday, April 18, 2001, while walking down Krasnaya Ulitsa for my morning appointment with Anastasia and Dima, I passed the Academy of Physical Culture when a great idea flashed into my head. Why not try to find some students who remembered my wife? Although Poisoned Dragon graduated from the Academy in 1996, five years ago, she continued to pursue graduate studies and even worked as an instructor in 1997 and 1998 in the Department of Gymnastics. While thousands of students went to the Academy, based on what I saw from our search for Vera, relatively few attended the Gymnastics Department. Those students remained somewhat isolated in their own little fiefdom on the first two floors of a separate building where apparently everyone knew everybody else. Some of these students must still remember my wife, the daughter of an instructor. By randomly stopping students in the Gymnastics building, we might find some who could tell us more. They might even be able to authenticate some of the events in her diary or provide us with useful leads—yeah, great idea!

Anastasia and Dima offered me the obligatory tea or coffee and cakes. Russian cakes looked like fat cookies but tasted much better than the overly processed American fare. But the consumer of American cookies didn't have to worry about the ingredients including traces of heavy metals, radioactive isotopes or other toxic substances.

Anastasia said, "You understand why we didn't want to talk in front of that girl, your interrupter. These matters don't concern her."

"Okay," I diplomatically agreed, anticipating what they didn't want me to have a witness to. Anastasia did virtually all the talking.

"Here's the photograph of Alina when she came in second in the 1997 Miss Krasnodar contest." She handed me a Krasnodar newspaper. "It's on the back as part of an interview with



my mother who founded our agency. Please don't mention anything about our discussions with my mother. She handles only the creative and fashion part of our business."

"Fine with me," I said thinking her request somewhat strange since the founder of any Russian business not only knew the details of the operation but most likely initiated all its activities. The back page contained a picture of a beautiful, virginal looking blonde. It didn't look like the Poisoned Dragon I knew. What a pretty prostitute, I thought.

"So is the dairy accurate as far as you know?"

"I only know about her working in Cyprus, and her boyfriend back then was the Alexei she talks about. The Katya she mentions worked as a model for us, and the two of them often partied together. They looked alike with the same build only Katya was younger." Just what I needed: a Poisoned Dragon clone to track down.

"Can you tell me how to find them?"

At this point Dima interjected, "We can sell you their addresses for \$100 each."

The typical New Russian, the only important things in life: money and sex. "I'll give you \$50 for each."

Dima agreed. Anastasia said, "I can call Alexei right now, and you can meet him here if he can come by." Anastasia made the call and Alexei arranged to stop by in an hour. Dima gave me Alexei and Katya's home addresses, work addresses and telephone numbers. I handed him a hundred that he put in his pocket with a smile.

"How did Alina end up in Cyprus?" I asked.

Anastasia answered, "Alina wanted money above everything else, and girls could make a lot more in Cyprus than in Krasnodar. She wanted to go to Cyprus, so at the end of 1998, I sent

her and a girl named Nadya. But Nadya came back two days later saying the work included prostitution, which surprised me.”

To myself I thought: I’ll bet it didn’t. Anastasia, Dima and the Fashion House of Vasilyeva obviously made money, probably a lot, from sending girls to whore in foreign countries just like Leo’s agency in Moscow did. Only these folks did it from a camouflaged storefront rather than hiding in the basement of an apartment building like Leo.

“Did Alina work as a prostitute in Krasnodar?”

“No, she didn’t start doing that until Cyprus. Alina came back six months later and told Dima and me that part of the work included prostitution, which she did voluntarily. She was not forced into it. We sent another model, Elvira, who only worked as a dancer—no prostitution. Alina’s mother, Inessa, came to us while Alina was in Cyprus and said she knew all the details of the work her daughter did there. She asked us not to tell anyone about Alina’s prostitution, which was the only way they could make enough money to buy an apartment. You can understand it’s important I know what kind of work my models do there and that it is legal.”

I nodded my head in feigned agreement and asked, “Alina and Inessa already had a house. Why the need for an apartment?”

“The house was outside the city in a bad neighborhood. They wanted a place in the center where it is safer and the neighborhoods more luxurious by our standards. I told you, Alina always wanted the luxury life.”

“I’m now sure of that—anything for money. I wish I had met you two before I married her. She even pointed out your agency to me but said you had moved. I see why now. She was probably afraid you might tell me something she didn’t want me to hear since you can speak English. The few people she did introduced me to only spoke Russian. Now I understand why

she didn't bother to introduce me to others; they probably spoke English. It all fits, what a master of deception. Can you tell me how to find Nadya, for another \$50 of course?" As I looked at Dima

His answer surprised me, "You can give me the questions and I will ask her."

"I'd rather talk to her myself."

"Unfortunately, she is very nervous around strangers and just had a baby. She is not very well, but I will call her now to ask if she will talk to you."

That was baloney. I had heard that excuse about nerves before when Poisoned Dragon wanted me to wait in the street while she visited some mysterious person, probably the clairvoyant who provided her with drugs for her customers, including me. Even if Dima told the truth, I doubted his mercenary soul included a heart that cared about his models. He must fear my contacting Nadya directly; maybe she will tell me things he wants to keep hidden. Dima went to call Nadya, but came back saying she didn't want to talk directly with me. I'm sure Dima didn't even bother dialing her number.

I continued with Anastasia, asking, "Can you give me the names of any of Alina's friends?"

Anastasia answered, "Alina has no friends. She used to socialize with some of the models, but there is no one else we could refer you to."

"Did she associate with any criminals?"

"One of our models, a guy, saw her with some local mafia guys last September. He said she was acting very friendly with them."

"Do you know where he saw her?"

"At the bowling club called 'Strike'. A lot of the bandits go there."

“Could I talk with this guy?”

“I don’t think he can tell you anymore. Besides no one in Krasnodar wants to talk openly, especially to strangers, about mafia. But I will ask him and call you at your hotel.”

“Where do you think she keeps her money from America?”

“She probably buys jewelry and hides it in her apartment. Most Russians with money do that.”

“Have you been in touch with Alina or Inessa recently?”

“Inessa called a few weeks ago asking for a paper from us saying that we forced Alina to go to Cyprus. We refused. Alina went there because she wanted money, not because we told her.”

Most likely Poisoned Dragon’s attorney Mundy wanted the paper so that he could argue in court or to the Immigration Service that my wife was forced into prostitution rather than volunteering for it. Immigration would not deport an innocent, teary-eyed Russian girl enslaved as a prostitute, and no jury, if it believed such garbage, would award me an annulment because she did not disclose her sexual servitude. Inessa’s request for the paper also indicated Mundy and my wife knew for certain that I had information about her activities in Cyprus. And the only way they could have found out was from the INS agent Kazenko to whom I gave a copy of her diary. Immigration agents aren’t supposed to leak evidence to aliens during an investigation. Mundy or Poisoned Dragon must have gotten to Kazenko somehow. No surprise there, since INS like most Government agencies is institutionally corrupt.

“Did Inessa ever say anything about me?”

“She said she had doubts about Alina marrying you because you weren’t materially generous enough.”

“I see where Alina’s greed comes from,” I laughed. “What kind of reputation does Alina have?”

“Melios is the owner of the Club in Cyprus where Alina worked, and he said she was a good worker but had two faces.”

“A very accurate description.”

“In Cyprus, everyone in the dance club business are mafia, including Melios and Marios. Marios managed the club. The two come to Krasnodar regularly looking for girls. We and other modeling agencies worked with them, but now that we know their business, we will stay away. We don’t need their money.”

These Russians never give up trying to paint themselves as virtuous.

“Here’s an early photo of Alina you might want,” Anastasia said as she handed it over the desk.

It showed Alina with her natural hair color, chestnut, and heavy, unshaved legs. What had I seen in this oinker?

Poisoned Dragon’s old boy friend Alexei finally showed. I saw why she went out with him, not only tall, broad shoulder and good looking, but, after talking with him, an obviously decent guy whom she could take advantage of as she did me. He spoke fair English and showed no malice toward me or, to my surprise, Alina. Just a little sadness over the soulless creature he planned to build his life around years before. I gave him a copy of her diary, and he told me to call him in a day or two, which should give him time to read it. I thank Anastasia and Dima for their help, and told them I would probably be back in another month or two.

“We may not be here then,” Anastasia said. “We are moving to America very soon.”

“Where are you going?” I asked surprised.

“We’re going to live in Wisconsin and start up a fashion business.”

“But you run, from what I hear, the top model agency in Krasnodar.”

“We want to expand to America.”

“Good luck,” I insincerely said thinking that a fashion business in Wisconsin made no sense—Chicago, New York, L.A., yes, but Wisconsin? More likely, they were going to Wisconsin to smuggle some Russian models across the Canadian border for prostitution and lap dancing in Milwaukee.

Alexei and I left the Vasilyeva agency together making small talk.

“Your English is very good,” I said.

“Yes, I even taught Alina your language.”

“She told me that she had learned to speak English in Cyprus.”

“No,” Alexei laughed. “She learned it from me. I didn’t understand at the time why she wanted to learn, but now I do.”

I warned him that he might find the diary painful to which he replied, “Alina always brought pain.”

I agreed and left him to meet Natalya.

The meeting with Anastasia and Dima made clear that the Russian terms “models” and “beauty contestants” translated into “prostitutes” for the civilized world. The sex industry of Russia operated through modeling agencies sending greedy, young, amoral girls all over the world to sell their tails. I laughed about the stupid American media stories depicting these Russian whores as victims of ruthless male pimps. These media lies always showed some Russian ho claiming some man took her passport away until she made enough money as a prostitute to return home—typical female duplicity that the politically correct idiots in America

bought. Russian sluts knew how to elicit sympathy and play the U.S. Feminazi game by alleging themselves innocent victims while raking in tens of thousands of dollars happily selling sex. The U.S. media also never reported that the Russian pimps for these money hungry tarts were just as likely female as male, driven to make what nearly every Russian valued most—dollars.

Natalya was in the park that ran down the middle of Krasnaya Ulitsa near the Vasilyeva House of Fashion or more accurately “House of Hos”.

“Was your meeting successful?” she asked.

“Yes, Alina confessed to them that she voluntarily worked as a prostitute in Cyprus, which, if I can get them to say that under oath, will help immensely in court.”

“I doubt they will.”

“So do I, since they make their money finding so-called models willing to work as prostitutes overseas. But they are moving to America, and I don’t think they’ll want U.S. Immigration to learn about their business practices. I’ll have to figure something out that will convince them to testify, which they might, since proceedings in domestic relations cases are kept confidential and INS would not find out about it. I also met Alina’s old boy friend, Alexei, the one she went out with while prostituting herself in Cyprus and Mexico.”

“I remember. She kept saying in her diary that she didn’t think she was cheating on Alexei by having sex with other men, but blamed him for finally leaving her for another woman.”

“That’s right. Once Alexei wised up that Alina wasn’t about to forego the money she made from whoring, he moved on to an older woman and seems happy with her. Alina always blames someone else. She just can’t accept responsibility for the results of her wicked ways.”

“Now where?” Natalya asked.

“I want to try to talk to the wife that lives with her husband and child in the apartment next door to Alina’s. When I stayed at Alina’s before our marriage, the two families were always running into each other because their apartments opened on to a common area where they kept boots, coats and other outdoors’ stuff. The wife also talked with Inessa and Alina a fair amount, so I assume she may have some useful information.”

“Isn’t there a chance we’ll run into Inessa?” Natalya asked.

“Maybe, but its three o’clock now, and as I remember, Inessa didn’t return home from the Academy until around five. But in any case, be ready for a confrontation in which she will try to distract us while gaining some information that she can twist into a lie later on. Oh, and here’s the newspaper with Alina’s photo. Would you translate the article for me when you get a chance?”

“No problem. Let’s hail a car.”

Like most apartment buildings in post-communist Russia, the main entrance to Poisoned Dragon’s was locked with a massive steel door to keep criminals out of the building while inside each apartment had its own reinforced metal door, sometimes even two, to keep criminals out of one’s apartment. In Russia, the word “trust” like “truth” means “sucker.” The building’s entrance didn’t have apartment buzzers, so we waited until someone opened the door on his way out and slipped in behind him—so much for Russian building security.

We made our way through the dark, foul smelling, filthy hallway and up a flight of stairs to the second floor where Poisoned Dragon and her mother lived. The hallways and stairs in apartment buildings throughout Russia looked and smelled pretty much the same because no one cleaned them. After the fall of communism, local governments, which owned all residential buildings, sold the apartments to the tenants for a minimal sum but retained ownership of the rest



of the building and the land. Maintenance responsibilities still fell to the local government, but because the bureaucrats, no longer in fear of the Communist Party, preferred pocketing the budget for building upkeep, filth and darkness commonly enveloped the hallways of even the most prestigious buildings.

When we rang the neighbors' bell, I assumed only the wife was at home with the husband still at work. To my surprise, both husband and wife answered the door. Rats! I knew the husband's presence would inhibit the wife from running off at the mouth as most women do whenever they get the chance, especially if it concerns sex and someone they know. Both recognized me and invited us to sit in their kitchen.

These two people were poor, the inside of their apartment dilapidated, and their eyes betrayed a landscape that hope no longer walked. I felt sorry for both, the wife with her dead fantasies and the husband trying to salvage his pride in the middle of their mind-numbing poverty. In the old days before the fall of communism, working hard and keeping his mouth shut assured his family a decent life style and some pride that no one did better other than the Party bosses. But under today's criminal economy, only the worst traits of human nature prosper, as they did next door. Corrupt officials, racketeers, prostitutes and the like were the sole people with enough money to make apartments livable and avoid hunger.

Natalya told them the story. The wife expressed surprise, probably out of feigned social propriety. The husband stood leaning against the wall with an expression of I knew it all along. As I feared, the wife told us nothing useful because of the presence of her husband. I gave her a copy of the diary, and through Natalya said we would contact her later to see whether she could recall any events mentioned or any other helpful information. Perhaps, if Natalya got her on the

telephone when the husband was not around, the wife would unleash the bounty of her inevitable spying and gossiping with other neighbors in the building.

On our way out, Natalya approached two older ladies standing in front of the building. She figured it worth a try since older Russian women know everything about everybody in their apartment building. The two said they remembered me from when I helped Alina and her mother move into the building. They added they didn't need to hear my story or read the diary because from the minute they saw Alina, they knew she worked as a prostitute, and that I was the foolish American man who didn't realize the hell awaiting him. To which I joking asked, "Why didn't you warn me?" They laughed, but didn't want to get involved in a marital dispute by providing me any specific information or leads, so we left.

Back at my hotel, a hunch told me to compare the telephone numbers and addresses that Alexei gave me for contacting him against the one my wife gave me when we first met in July 1999. The number for Alexei's mother was the same that Poisoned Dragon told me to call her in Krasnodar. So the woman I talked with for a few minutes was Alexei's mother. My extended conversation violated Poisoned Dragon's instruction not to talk to anyone but her and threaten exposing her two-timing of Alexei, so she told me never to call that number again. Poisoned Dragon must have done that a lot: using the telephone of her boyfriend's mother to make arrangements with her customers of whom I unknowingly at the time was one. But whose number was the one she told me to use after canceling the number for Alexei's mother, and whose address did my first letters go to, which I knew now wasn't that of Alexei's mother? Both would have to wait for the turning of more cogwheels, maybe.

Thursday, April 18, 2001, Natalya and I met with her reporter friend, Victoria, young and pretty, who wrote for the newspaper Ulitsa Krasnaya, which meant Red Street. After an hour or

so interview in the dreary lobby of my hotel, Victoria, said her paper would print my tale of misery. I assumed Victoria would at least try to talk to Alina by telephone to get her side, so that, in the true tabloid tradition, the paper could use our real names without getting sued for libel. But she told me the press worked differently in Russia. In stories of this sort, the press did a Jonathan Swift type satire, accurate in every detail except the names, which are made up. The reason was another hold over from Soviet times of a law against harming the honor or dignity of an individual.

The law didn't require, as with libel, that the paper report falsehoods about a person, rather the law aims at keeping the press from reporting the truth when the truth would harm a person's existing reputation. A nice Catch 22: report a lie, get sued for libel; report the truth, get sued anyway. The law originally prevented media exposes about lying and thieving communist officials but now protects all sorts of criminals, including my wife. All the Russian press can do is publish a story with the names changed to protect the guilty and hope the public guesses their true identities. Victoria apologized for the restraints. It was a minor disappointment, since I originally hoped the article with Alina's name in it would stir up the situation, put pressure on Alina and bring letters from readers with potential leads who knew her, but now I doubted anyone would even recognize the characters. Still, how many girls in Alina's circle of models, beauty contestants and sellers of sex worked in Cyprus, Mexico City and New York City, so it was worth the shot.

After the interview, Natalya and I went to the Academy to put into operation my idea of handing out copies of the dairy to students who remembered Alina in the hope her autobiographical exploits might jog loose some useful information. The same middle-aged woman guard didn't even bother to ask our business this time, not too many American men in

suits visited the Gymnastics' Department, but if they saw what I was about to, they would. Natalya stopped one student after another, most didn't remember Alina but a few did. We wound our way down the hallways accosting any student in sight. Natalya and I turned a corner and nirvana. We were standing at the entrance to the showers of the girls' swim team as its members walked in and out adjusting their suits, not even noticing this guy in a business suit with fogging glasses whom they almost bumped into. I expected any minute for these girls with firm, young, glistening bodies stuffed in skintight suits to start screaming for the Feminazi police, but those that noticed me handled my presence as a normal daily event. As far as I knew, maybe it was. Natalya interrogated some of the dripping wet girls who showed no aggravation at all by our interruption. One of them even remembered Alina and took a copy of the diary back to her locker. A land without political correctness is a wonder to behold.

After exhausting the swim team, we headed back toward the building's entrance to leave but never made it before two, young, muscular Russian guys in suits stopped us. They were from the administration office, and blocked our exit. The two reminded me of the typical New Russian goon, pumped up with weights, scowling face and always trying to stare somebody down. I wasn't impressed. The fools didn't realize that the last place you look is in your opponent's eyes. I thought of going through them, just like on the rugby field, but what would I do with Natalya. Then an older, gray haired man showed up, clearly the boss. He insisted we talk in his office while the two goons stood behind him emanating their below 80 I.Q. They were lucky Moody and Jesse from my martial arts class weren't with me. They'd take out these commie clowns in seconds. The older guy grabbed Natalya's arm, I started to move on him, but she said there was no problem and we should go along. I followed her lead but felt frustrated that my inability to speak Russian prevented me from engaging in some vituperative remarks.

In his office, the older man, Vice Rector Vladimir Gavrilovich Minchenko, sat down on one side of a table beaming his commie smile of extreme insincerity while the goons sat on the side ninety degrees from him pretending they were incarnates of the Spanish Inquisition. Natalya and I sat with our backs against the wall, a not very subtle psychological attempt to deflate a Russian's will to fight. For me, it just increased my anger. If only I knew this language, I had a few connections I could bandy about in this intimidation game, such as the local official who sent the police to interview Inessa.

Natalya went into the usual routine explaining my presence in Krasnodar and at the Academy. The three started asking Natalya questions that she answered without translating for me, which only added to my frustration. I could handle any questions put to me, but wasn't so confident about a twenty-two year old Russian girl answering for me. The Vice Rector stopped the third degree of Natalya and got on the telephone. Natalya said he was trying to reach Inessa, and it sounded as though the two worked closely together. The goons started the questioning again, and I watched Natalya's demeanor change to one of fear. The situation was spiraling out of control because Natalya thought she could finesse these guys. I put a stop to the interrogation right there with a few belligerent gestures, and demanded Natalya translate what the goons said. They claimed we had violated the law and could go to jail for handing out Alina's diaries. That was it. I launched into English, figuring the Vice Rector probably understood it, demanding to make a call my G.R.U. contact. At the sound of the individual's name and G.R.U., the Vice Rector put his phone down and calmed everyone with a smile.

He said in English, "We can probably work this matter out. Would a notarized copy of some of Alina's handwriting samples out of her school file help?"

"Most definitely," I responded.

“Okay, we will provide them, but you must stop spreading information among the students about the sorted affairs concerning the daughter of one of the Academy’s instructors.”

“I can live with that. It was a long shot anyway,” I answered. Clearly he wanted to prevent a scandal that might lead to accusations that his administration trained prostitutes rather than athletes.

“Good the papers will be ready tomorrow. Have your translator call us then to pick them up.”

I thanked him and we left.

Outside the Academy, Natalya gave out a sigh of relief. She actually thought they might have us arrested.

“These people belong to the criminal class that runs Krasnodar,” she whined. “They can do whatever they want; no matter what the law says. We were lucky that you are an American. That kept us out of jail.”

“Perhaps, but I also think my mentioning my contact’s name made the Vice Rector at least realize I had some connections. Anyway look on it as an adventure.”

“Well, it’s not an adventure I want to have again very soon.”

An American couldn’t really imagine what it was like to live in constant fear that some criminal or crooked politician with the power of a feudal baron would arbitrarily set his sites on you. There was nothing a Russian could do but to submit because the institutions of that country served only the rich and powerful. Society gave the average citizen no power to fight back. What a horror!

Back to the investigation, I asked Natalya to try to set up a meeting with Katya, the girl with whom Alina picked up the guys from St. Petersburg a few months after our marriage.

Once again to my surprise, another Russian, this time Katya, agreed to talk about Alina. Why, I wondered? Did all these people dislike Alina because she used them too? Natalya arranged for us to meet Katya in a couple of hours at my hotel. I went for a late lunch while Natalya returned to her office.

During lunch, I happened to glance out the restaurant's open door and saw, just for a fraction of a second, what looked like Poisoned Dragon. Could it be? I rushed to the door, saw overly burnt blonde hair and an ass similar to hers turn to enter the next shop down, a jewelry store. The quick glimpse of the facial profile as she entered the store sure looked like my wife. I debated whether to go make sure it was she, but concluded it would just prematurely alert her to my activities and returned to my lunch pondering the irony.

Katya showed at my hotel with her husband, a Greek, at least twenty-five years her senior who for some unknown reason lived in Russia. She looked a lot like Poisoned Dragon, but was younger, twenty-two and just as tall. After hearing the story from Natalya, I told Katya without stating any specifics given the presence of her husband that Alina referred to her in the diary. Her face momentarily turned to fear. Obviously she didn't want to talk in front of him, so I held off on any further questions until Saturday when we agreed to meet again. Her husband wouldn't be with her then.

The diary showed that Katya regularly cheated on him. Once she took one of the guys from St. Petersburg home for an evening, presumably when hubby was out of town. Her Greek spouse wouldn't take kindly to his darling young wife hooking up with some young guy in their marital bed. These Russian girls were like the Lincoln Tunnel: opened twenty-four hours a day and thought nothing wrong with it.

In the evening, Natalya called to say she contacted Alina's neighbors, but the husband answered the phone and turned it over to the wife. He obviously listened to his wife's every word to make sure she didn't say something that might come back to haunt them. The wife only confirmed the part in the dairy about when Alina and her mother moved into the building. Natalya also said, Yevgeny, the trainer, could meet us the next morning, but so far no luck on reaching Vera, the professor at the Academy.

Friday, April 20, 2001, as usual I ate breakfast in the hotel café on the same floor as my room. Old style Russian hotels religiously shunned efficiency and economies of scale by operating a café on every other floor rather than one large restaurant in the lobby. Usually the café was empty early in the morning, but today three men in their thirties sat with one of the hotel's prostitutes. Nearly all Russian hotels allow a select number of hookers to keep the residents entertained. They even come around knocking on your door plying their wares. It provides employment for the local sluts and a few extra rubles for the floor matrons and hotel administrator. During the decades of communist control, only the sex industry kept the spirit of capitalism alive.

I sat down near these folks, not out of choice, but because the café fitted only three tables. As soon as I ordered my breakfast in broken Russian, the man nearest me turned to ask in broken English whether I came from England. "No, America," and got the usual reaction of a con artist spotting a hundred dollar bill.

The guy struck up a conversation, introduced the other two as businessmen from Turkey and himself as a Chechen gangster. The girl, mere furniture, he didn't bother to introduce. His admission of criminality was believable because the twisted standards prevalent in present day Russia made stars out of hoodlums. Guys like him did the dirty work for the real bosses behind



the scenes—high-level government officials. In return, the hoods sped around in Mercedes Benzes, bought the girls they wanted, pushed people out of the way and enjoyed immunity from prosecution. Many of these goons even moonlighted as cops.

He asked what I was doing in Krasnodar and I recounted my tale of woe about Poisoned Dragon. The prostitute gave me that stereotypical Russian female look of understanding that reminded me of all the lying faces my wife ever wore. These Russian hos must all go to the same school to learn how to play foreign men. Showed them a photograph of Alina on the odd chance that one of them might recognize her, but no one did, or, at least, that's what they said. The picture included in Russian information on her address and the amount I estimated she made up to that point in America, \$100,000. The Chechen looked at the picture, turned to me, made a cutting motion with a hand across his throat and then another cutting movement through the dollar figure. "I will kill her for you for \$50,000," he said in front of his friends. I thanked him, but declined the offer.

In the lobby, I met Natalya and we went to meet Poisoned Dragon's trainer again.

Yevgeny, true to the Russian habit of pretense, said, "The dairy is shocking. How very sad that this once decent girl has descended so low. But these are troubled times in Russia. Many people now chase the dollar while forgetting the old traditions that fell by the way side with the end of the Soviet Union."

Older Russians often yearn for the "good old days" of the Soviet Union, even the Stalin era, because back then power depended solely on a person's position in the government hierarchy. Today power depended on the amount of money that such a position in the hierarchy enabled its occupant to steal from the country, but not every high-level position enables large-scale theft. For example, one of my translators, twenty-two years old, made more than her father

who was the head of Russia's wire services, the equivalent of Associated Press and Reuters combined. Some Russians who spent their lives climbing the communist ladder ended up in positions that didn't translate into dollars, which left them understandably bitter as well as powerless and poor. Some young people, like Alina, relished the change because they quickly adapted to the new game by ambitiously setting out to make as much money as they could free from any ethical restraints.

Yevgeny couldn't or wouldn't provide any useful information. He claimed not to recognize any of the events Alina wrote about, nor did he ever travel to Mexico City for a conference during the time Alina worked in The Men's Club. He did confirm that Alina stopped competing as an athlete after hurting her foot and added a side note that he had helped Inessa obtain a job at the Academy when she and Alina moved to Krasnodar from Grozny. Yevgeny asked me not to tell anyone about our conversation but volunteered his assistance if the need arose. Neither his offer or answers were likely truthful, but at least he acted the gentleman.

Alexei, Alina's old boyfriend, met us at the hotel early in the afternoon. He didn't seem hurt by the diary's confessions. Perhaps they just confirmed his suspicions or he maintained the traditional Russian mask that hid his true feelings. Alexei said he knew Alina kept a diary since before they started dating in 1996. That confirmed there were earlier volumes than the one from which I copied the years 1999 and 2000. Alexei recognized her handwriting and confirmed the events she recorded concerning him but added that the interpretations were hers. One incident was when I left a message on her pager in August 1999 closing with "Love Roy." Alexei saw the message and demanded to know who was this guy "Roy." Alina said I was just a "good friend", which for her meant customer.

Alexei told us that

- before Alina went to Cyprus she advertised herself on an Internet site but didn't recall which one. She used to receive mail at Alexei's address instead of her own, and one day a letter came that Alexei opened. A man in the Ukraine sent it in response to the site where Alina offered to meet any man for \$20;
- when Alina returned from Cyprus, she was so upset at being back in Russia that she wanted to return to working in the club there immediately;
- when she traveled to Mexico, it was suppose to be for only three weeks, but she decided to stay three months; and
- Alina always had one aim: to leave Russia.

In response to my question about other people mentioned in the diary, Alexei said, "She auditioned to dance at the Imperio Club. She knew Andrey very well." So, Andrey had lied to me about only vaguely knowing Alina.

Alexei continued, "Toward the the end of our relationship, I realized that the many auditions Alina went to in Krasnodar weren't for modeling but striptease—dancing totally nude dancing."

More likely for prostitution I thought but didn't mention that to Alexei. He believed Alina didn't start selling her body until she went to Cyprus where the easy money corrupted her. Never underestimate the power of denial.

"As for the 'Alexey' she tried to seduce after you married her, he was the manager of the Joy disco."

"Ha," I laughed, "the same guy she introduced me to before the wedding."

"Also, Alina's professional photographer in Krasnodar is Dmitri. He took the nude pictures of Alina that Inessa tried to hide from her cousin staying in their apartment."

Both Alexey and Dmitri were added to my list of people to contact.

Alina never mentioned to Alexei her marriage but did finally tell his mother in September 2000. During that same month, Alexei saw Alina walking with a short man with his arm around Alina's waist toward the Moscow Hotel. Presumably, the same day she woke me up in that hotel after I confronted her at the airport on her return from Cyprus. Her arrogance likely drove her to bring a client to the same hotel in which I stayed. And that's probably how she got passed security and the floor matron to show up at my door, which I thought strange at the time since she was able to reach my door unannounced.

On Alina's move from Grozny, she told Alexei that her neighbors in Chechnya helped her and her mother. Alexei didn't know the man who managed the Aurora, who was obviously another of Alina's clients.

Alexei recalled that Alina always used this one "witch" for advice and "herbs," but he never met her because Alina made him wait in the street while she went inside the apartment building. The exact same thing happened to me just before the marriage, Alina went to visit someone for whom she said I would have to wait outside in the street because the individual was "sensitive to strangers." Following that visit, I began experiencing the symptoms of drowsiness, euphoria, befuddled thinking and constipation that my doctor believed had resulted from narcotic-poisoning.

This witch must have been the "clairvoyant" from whom, according to Alina's diary, she purchased the "salts and sugars" to slip into my meals so that I wouldn't call off the wedding. If I found this witch, I had a chance of obtaining admissible evidence that Alina put narcotics in my food, and that would assure an annulment. Alexei, however, only knew the street and the building. Alina never told him the apartment number. I doubted that staking out the building for

someone with a pointed hat and a broom would work, so I hoped some of the other people I still intended to interview might know the apartment number for this witch of Krasnodar.

When we finished, I thanked Alexei for his time, and said I would probably contact him with more questions in the future. He agreed to help me in any way he could, and I believed his offer genuine.

Natalya remarked that Alexei surprised her by not sounding bitter about his four-year ordeal with Alina. It surprised me too, and made me realize that there walked a better man than me. Alina cut Alexei more deeply than she did me. We were together for only a year, December 1999 to December 2000, during which she cheated on me with around five guys of whom I knew, but while dating Alexei, her prostitution hoed a path through Krasnodar, Moscow, Cyprus and Mexico.

Alina clearly missed her chance at happiness by not marrying Alexei. Even after her whoring in Cyprus, he still wanted to build a life with her, raise children and tried to convince her to go back to graduate school for the training she needed to teach Gymnastics. But by then her greed, promiscuity and lust for the glamorous life had so ensnared her life that even the Graces probably gave up all hope for her. So where did the fault lie for the time wasted and a life gone wrong? Did Alina or her mother push her into prostitution? Probably the two of them reinforced each other's greed—what fools.

With no more interviews scheduled for that sun lit afternoon, I went for a walk in the park running down the middle of Krasnaya Ulitsa while Natalya went to her office to make some follow-up telephone calls. Before Poisoned Dragon, the stirrings of spring always buoyed my spirits—but no more. Strolling in the warm weather, I concluded that never in my life had I meet anyone as evil as my wife. The Tao defined evil as a state of self-absorption that was in

disharmony with the universal process. Like a dirty window, and my wife was plenty dirty, evil kept the light of life from shining through to touch the person within. In the darkness of her soul, Poisoned Dragon only thought of herself without any concern for the people she harmed in her single-minded quest for money and domination.

Girls like her existed in the 1940s film noir detective movies, but I thought them just caricatures. Never imagined such depraved females actually walked the earth, or that I might meet one, not to mention marry one. But exist they do and often succeed with the treachery behind their innocent smiles. In the movies, the bad girl always got her just deserts, but on that sunny April day in Krasnodar, the future whispered that no court or government agency would ever hold Poisoned Dragon accountable for the laws she violated or the frauds she perpetrated. She had enough money to buy justice in Russia, and her sex made it virtually impossible for any man to convince an American court or executive agency to enforce the laws that she flauntingly violated. Thanks to the Political Correctionalists, American governmental officials, many now females, considered men evil and women, no matter how revolting their conduct, deserving of sympathy and forgiveness because, as the ridiculous argument went, it was really men who caused girls to commit reprehensible acts, such as drowning their children, usually boys, or killing their husbands or boyfriends whom they cuckolded for years. No, all the advantages lay with Poisoned Dragon. Although tempted, it did me no good to implore or curse the gods, whether they existed or not. Justice wasn't a law of nature or gods, man and man alone created it. In the end, I and I alone would have to bring justice to her, no matter the cost. But for now, I played the lawyer's delusional game that the executive agencies and the courts really carried out the laws passed by the legislative branch.

Anastasia called in the evening to say the model of hers that saw Alina with Russian mobsters at the club Strike didn't want to talk with me—too dangerous. For him, it probably was.

Natalya then telephoned to say that she still couldn't reach Vera for comments on the diary or Vice Rector Minchenko of the Academy for the notarized copies of Alina's handwriting. Apparently, Vera didn't care to become involved, and the Vice Rector lied hoping I'd go away. Typical commie con artist that Vice Rector. In order to avoid any scandal resulting from further confrontations between an American lawyer and the Academy that would inevitably result if I pressed my investigation among the students, Minchenko appeased me with promises he never intended to keep. When was I going to learn to never, ever, ever rely on a Russian's promise? It was now Friday night, no classes, no students and my flight for Moscow left Sunday evening.

The Vice Rector obviously figured it unlikely I would return to Krasnodar to cause him any trouble, and even if I did, he probably felt certain that his goons had sufficiently intimidated me not to trouble his Academy again. I made a mental note to figure out a way to cause this liar some grief, hopefully when I came back. Natalya did have some good news, however: Katya agreed to meet with us the next day, Saturday.

Saturday, April 21, 2001, we again met Katya in the hotel lobby, but this time she left her husband at home. Smart move, considering the carnal secrets exposed about her in Poisoned Dragon's diary. Katya, however, claimed she didn't get a chance to read the diary because she needed to study for college exams, but she did have some information about Alina that she didn't want to mention in front of her husband because, as she said, "He wouldn't understand." These Russian girls all used the same specious excuse for cheating on their boyfriends: men are too

immature to understand us women. Her husband would not only understand but also probably box her ears.

If I had decked Poisoned Dragon—just once, when I first found out about her adultery in Italy, the relationship would have ended there or turned out dramatically different. But no, I had to act the gentleman, even when dealing with a slut. Why do men have to relinquish the strengths that evolution gave them while females ruthlessly use every weapon in their arsenal against them?

Katya told us she first met Alina in 1994 or 1995 at the Vasilyeva House of Fashion where the two of them worked as models. Since they had the same figure, they often shared clothes and started hanging out together. Poisoned Dragon obviously schemed to use Katya for clothes because Katya's parents were better off. In 1998, Anastasia sent Alina along with another model, named Nadya, to work at the Zygos Club in Cyprus. Nadya returned just two days later saying the work involved prostitution with which Nadya wanted nothing to do. Alina, however, decided to stay for six months.

I asked, "Do you know how I can reach Nadya?"

"I'll look through my papers. I think I still have her number. If I do, I'll call her to see whether she's willing to meet with you."

"When do you think Alina first start working as a prostitute?"

"Probably when she first went to Cyprus, but I can't be sure. Alina traveled to Moscow a lot before Cyprus. She said she worked as an English translator, which didn't make sense because she could barely speak it."

Alina was really working as a prostitute for Leo. Katya didn't know how many years she traveled to Moscow before Cyprus.



Katya continued, “The last time I saw Alina was in September 2000 here in Krasnodar. She told me she was going to Italy.”

“She probably lied,” I replied, “since she went to Cyprus, but then again, she may have spent some time in Italy for another lucrative weekend of prostitution. I’ll be back in a month or two and would like to talk to you some more, especially after you read the diary.”

Katya agreed, and my final interview for this trip to Krasnodar ended.

In the evening, I read Natalya’s translation of the newspaper article Anastasia gave me with Alina’s picture from the 1997 Miss Krasnodar contest. The reporter had interviewed Anastasia’s mother Tatyanna Vasilyeva, a “world famous” designer of lady’s fashion. That was surprising, since I had assumed her fashion agency and exporter of loose girls mainly a local operation—but it wasn’t. Like Alina, Tatyanna, in her youth, did track and field. Tatyanna extolled the virtues of athletes, which made them excellent models, and used as an example Alina. According to Tatyanna, Alina worked hard to “become a beauty with a true model figure” and was, at the time of the interview, working in the West. Tatyanna didn’t specify the work: stripping and hoing at The Men’s Club in Mexico City. Tatyanna also had a school, run by Anastasia, for turning young “fresh” girls into models—more likely hos. The rest of the article just wasted the resources of paper and ink with empty-headed ditz concerns.

The next day, I flew back to Moscow to meet with Leo before leaving for New York. In March, I had sent him a copy of Poisoned Dragon’s diary and highlighted the section where she recounted cheating him out of part of his commission, around \$1400, for the “work” she did at The Men’s Club in Mexico City. Hopefully, that would at least move Leo out of my wife’s camp.

Early Monday evening with the sun still in the sky, I walked down the speakeasy steps to the bolted door of Leo's establishment that I first had entered nearly two years earlier on my way to the hell I now inhabited. As always, a pretty young whore opened the door and escorted me to Leo's office with the chair that seated his guests about a foot below his desk.

Leo thanked me for the information about the money Alina owed him.

He asked to my surprise, "Is this all of her dairy that you have?"

Why was he asking that I wondered unless the earlier sections of her diary referred to her prostitution activities with him? I now wished I had force Poisoned Dragon to give me all of her diary.

"That's all of her diary that I have," I answered. "Are you going to collect on the money she owes you?"

"I called her up, but she denied owing me the money and said that you forced her to write the diary."

"The whole diary?" I asked and we both laughed.

"It is the way some Russians think, but no sane person would believe her. Anyway, I don't see how I can make her pay since she lives in Krasnodar and New York." This remark didn't ring true to me. Once I had met Leo's mafia connection, and that guy could easily wring the money out of Poisoned Dragon.

Leo continued, "How much does she make now?"

"Around \$14,000 a month, not counting prostitution."

"She is very rich. I read the diary, and the events she talks about when I took her and my girlfriend to Mexico are all true along with the times she talks about visiting my office here."

"That's helpful. Did she ever tell you about what she did in Cyprus?"

“I knew she worked as a stripper and sold sex. She did send me a couple of letters.”

I jumped at the mention of evidence of her handwriting, “Do you still have them?”

“Sure, let’s see, here they are.” Leo kept a file of information and correspondence for all his girls. Russians keep files on everything.

“She sent one just before she left for Cyprus and the other after working there for a month. In one she asked that I send her copies of the nude pictures I made of her. I think she wanted to sell them to a customer. She liked the work in Cyprus.”

“That’s the grandfather she masturbated. She sold him the pictures for ten pounds. Besides the nude pictures, why did she keep in touch with you from Cyprus?”

“Alina always called or wrote to see if I had any work up her alley.” I knew what alley Leo meant. He continued, “She was always interested in meeting foreigners and working overseas. That’s why I sent her over to you when you first walked into my party.”

“She knew where the money was, but I wish you had sent someone else.”

“These girls are all the same Roy.”

“Now I know that. Can I have copies of the letters?”

“Here,” he said handing them to me across the desk. “You can keep them. Do you want the pictures?”

“Sure.”

Leo got up from his desk and turned around to the bookcase of notebooks against the wall in which he kept photographs of his girls. The notebooks showed girls from fifteen years old into their thirties usually wearing underwear or a bathing suit and all looking for money. He had shown me some of the notebooks before when I had stopped by while living in Moscow. He always pointed out shots of girls just added to his stable, asking whether any of them could make

it as a model in America—as if I knew. But this time Leo did something I never saw before; he moved a lever and part of the bookcase vanished leaving an opening into a dark, hidden room behind a false wall at the back of his desk. So that was why his office seemed so small. These Russians keep secrets within secrets.

Leo stepped inside and pulled out a notebook that he handed to me. This book, one of many that I could glimpse in that secret room, contained completely naked photographs of the girls whose names fell under that part of the alphabet. Clearly, he used these books for selling his models to prospective clients for prostitution. Why was I surprised? He showed me my wife’s page. Four shots of Poisoned Dragon, completely naked with her crotch shaved, standing in black high heels, trying to look demure and holding the same posed she used in the Miss Krasnodar contest, only there she wore clothes. I felt disgusted.

“Here keep them,” Leo said

“When were they taken?”

“I think in 1996.”

So, Poisoned Dragon worked as a prostitute at least in Moscow since she graduated college and probably before. The letters and nude photos would help my case if I could trick Poisoned Dragon into admitting in court that she wrote the letters and Leo took the pictures. No way Leo would swear to taking the photos or receiving the letters. The court, however, could at least force my wife to provide a handwriting sample, but her proficiency at calligraphy allowed her to disguise her writing to some degree. I still needed more evidence. After thanking Leo for his help, I went back to my translators’ apartment.

Anya was out on a date while Sasha sat in the kitchen eating sweets. I joined her and showed her my wife’s pictures.

“I don’t understand how I could marry such filth. What the hell was wrong with me?”

“You were lonely and picked the wrong girl,” Sasha empathized.

“I sure picked the wrong girl! But I’ve been lonely my whole life. Even when I was a kid, I learned early on to avoid my parents, especially mother, as much as possible. What a couple of self-righteous, cold-hearted frauds they were. Mother always complained when as a child I wanted to sit on her lap, so at five I gave up trying. Guess her narcissism forbid children parking themselves on her since it detracted from the image of feminine beauty she pictured herself projecting to the world. She was all surface and no substance other than a mean and nasty nature and lust for material goods.”

“Sounds like your wife,” Sasha wisely observed.

“Think so?”

“I read the copy of her diary that you left with Anya. Your wife sounds infantile. By that I mean she never psychologically developed beyond the infant stage in which a person’s own body is the main object of their interest. That’s narcissism. Coupled with Alina’s cruelty and greed, she seems like the same type of person you just described as your mother.”

“Yeah, I considered that before. What a curse!”

“Maybe in your unconscious mind you saw Alina as a way to relieve the loneliness you always felt because your mother never gave you any affection.”

“But how could loneliness drive a man to such stupidity. Every time I learn something new about her—it’s foul. I don’t think this girl ever did anything decent in her life or ever allowed a centesimal of truth to cross her lips. She lies about being a track star, about not being a successful model because she started late, about her mother not knowing the truth about her work and nearly everything else to create an image that doesn’t exist.”

“And you fell in love with that image,” Sasha replied.

“Ah, you’re right, I did, but I should have seen it was all a mirage.”

“But you did see it as a mirage at least your rational mind did. I remember you telling me before you found her diary that you were certain she was playing around in Krasnodar while you waited in Moscow for her visa to come through. You suspected all along the type of girl she was, but your unconscious yearned for the affection your mother never gave you and that’s why you bought into her illusion.”

“You’re losing me.”

“Roy, the moment you sensed that Alina and your mother were similar, and by that I don’t mean you logical analyzed the two of them, but something in you told you they were alike. At that moment, you were doomed to overlook all the warning signs because she represented your last chance of receiving the affection your mother never gave, of alleviating that loneliness you’ve lived with since a child. I mean look at what you did with Alina compared to your other relationships. You went out with girls from Russia and South America. You always told me that they were probably interested in you just to get a green card, and your vanity while dating them temporarily blinded you to that. But you never got serious with any of them probably because they didn’t remind you of your mother. Still, you knew the score with, as you call them, third-world girls, and yet you unconsciously used the attraction of a green card to win over Alina. First you take her to America and the city where she dreamed of working, Las Vegas. Then when you are back in Moscow, you ask her to marry you and move to New York. Of course, she’s going to agree. What girl living in this country wouldn’t?”

“So I’m to blame for the mess I’m in?”

“Don’t be so defensive. Your mother’s failure to be a mother left you vulnerable for a con artist like Alina. I’m not justifying Alina’s actions. She’s a scheming ambitious girl who saw your weakness and took advantage of it—not caring how badly she hurt you. You were nothing but a toy for her to play with. An evil person if there ever was one.”

“So was my mother, but there’s nothing I can do to her since she’s dead, but I can do something to Alina.”

“And what will you do?”

“Try to get justice.”

The next day I flew back to New York, miserable as ever.

## **Stupid Frigging Fool**

By Roy Den Hollander

### Part 4

#### Mother-in-law

During my fact finding in Krasnodar, two other friends stayed with Traviesa in my apartment. Jesse, one of the black belts who had served the Family Court summons on Poisoned Dragon at Flash Dancers, needed a place to live while he looked for an apartment. With Traviesa's okay, I let him camp out at my place, and wherever Jesse went, so did his girl Kristi, another pretty young babe from the former Communist Block, this time Hungary. Perhaps I should have opened a hostel to finance my war against Poisoned Dragon.

On returning home, I expected to find my three adopted children in residence, but Jesse and Kristi no longer slept there. Traviesa greeted me with a smile and what she considered a home cooked European meal: spaghetti, still a step up from the boiled rice, hot dogs and drugs that Poisoned Dragon served as dinner. Apparently, in the former Soviet Union, the route to influencing a man isn't through cooking.

As I ate, Traviesa recounted a bizarre event in the apartment concerning Kristi, which caused her and Jesse at her insistence to leave.

My apartment is on the tenth floor and faces north. At night, you can easily see the Chrysler Building and other brightly lit skyscrapers. On one night while in the bathroom brushing her teeth, Kristi felt something strange. She turned and saw outside a jet-black form slowly moving toward the opened bathroom window until it completely blacked out the lights of the New York City skyscrapers. The shape, according to Kristi, stopped without entering and uttered unintelligible words in a guttural, menacing voice that froze her heart. Kristi freaked,



bolted into the living room for Jesse's arms, and through stammering words explained what had happened. Jesse ran into bathroom ready to take apart whatever it was that frightened Kristi, but he found nothing, looked out the window—nothing. Whatever it was, if it was anything, it didn't want to deal with Jesse.

Kristi refused to ever set foot in my apartment again. She believed a demon tried to enter through the bathroom window that night to steal hers and the souls of everyone in the apartment. If Kristi was right, we all knew that the only person malicious and arrogant enough to summon up demons was Poisoned Dragon. It was easy for all of us to imagine my wife gnashing her teeth, contorting her face in hate as she spewed out the evil in her to animate the long forgotten nightmares buried in the unconscious mind of modern humans.

The incident didn't particularly bother me because by then I had accepted my grasp on reality as tenuous at best. Poisoned Dragon had so crippled my view of reality that the image of demons cavorting outside my windows seemed like business as usual. Traviesa found the episode amusing; probably because she believed in her own supernatural power that she confidently thought more than a match for some retarded Russian's.

The tentacles of the unearthly, at least from my degenerating view of reality, continued to slither out of the darkness, where logic and proportion failed to tread. Natalya mailed me a copy of the Krasnaya Ulitsa newspaper article about Alina and me that hit the streets on April 30<sup>th</sup>, Walpurgis Nacht: the medieval European witches Sabbath in which the forces of darkness run rampant in nightmarish abandon. A fitting representation of Poisoned Dragon's life, but of all the days, why did it come out on April 30<sup>th</sup>? Were the forces of evil that Poisoned Dragon allied with tapping into my childhood fears of Walt Disney's *Night On Bald Mountain* with its elemental music of the Russian composer Mussorgsky pulling me into the insane world that my

wife ruled as a Goblin queen? Given the lunacy of those days, any thing irrational seemed likely.

The article included a picture of a stripper covering her breasts with a hat, wearing panties and her facial features partly disguised, but it sure looked a lot like my wife. I appreciated the subtle mockery that a stripper and prostitute's only value was her body. Poisoned Dragon clearly saw her body as the source of all her material wealth.

The article used fictitious names for Poisoned Dragon, once again because of a holdover in Soviet law that protected a person's honor even though the truth showed her to have no honor. The article called my wife Svetlana Bondarchuk and me Michael Lamer—lame for marrying her, I guess. The following is a translation:

### **The Spouse for Common Use.**

I would like to divorce my wife, who instead of performing her marital duties, is working at the strip club, and after work is a prostitute. She is also involved in with bandits. I took her to the U.S. from Krasnodar in hopes of creating a nice family, but it turned out to be an illusion. For the last four months, she managed to earn \$ 60,000 as a prostitute.

Don't think that this is a confession of one of the Americans online, even though there is plenty of information like that. This information was taken to "Krasnaya Street" by the U.S. citizen Michael Lamer. In the big folder he had copies of documents, detective reports, and his wife's diary. Mr. Lamer did not speak Russian, but the documents were in Russian. The heroine of this half-detective and half-love story is also Russian. And maybe this explains everything.

Svetlana Bondarchuk used to work in a modeling business in Krasnodar. Having good looks and a nice figure she could have become the next "face" of the local advertisements. But she did not.

With the rest of the girls she went to Cyprus to work in a strip club. The work is harmless: the client could look at the dancer all he wants; however, he does not have a right to touch her, unless he orders a private dance- especially for him in a closed room. The work is hard: both physically and morally. Sometimes they had to dance 20 times in a row and still stay attractive and desired. Apparently Svetlana was good at it.

But the main income of Svetlana was from prostitution. She worked as a prostitute at night and on weekends. "I went to his hotel, gave him a massage (40 pounds, if sex- 100 pounds). I got 100 pounds and the money for the taxi... Help G-d this man!" Essentially that was

written all over in Svetlana's diary. Reading someone's diary – that is not a fine-looking thing, but in order to get a full view of the picture, we looked at its copies. Its surprising and amazing how this naïve girl from a Russian high school, in whose head everything is messed up, is so confused with virtues and vices, right and wrong....

“... Last week these businessmen came from Kuwait, filled with money. Marios sold me, Regina, Julia and Nadya (40 pounds each). We went to an expensive restaurant. Mine said that he does not want sex. With the good news, I got drunk from wine and by mistake gave myself to him (before I received \$100, let G-d be his judge!)....”

“We have some weird clients. Yesterday one took off shoes from my left foot, spilled some orange juice on it and kissed it. Then he put on my shoes and took me to dance on the stage. But he didn't pay for the dance. There is a God's will for everything!!!)

Despite the costs of her profession, Svetlana was satisfied with it. Her clients gave her presents – jewelry, clothes, home equipment, lotion from cellulite, perfumes. One affluent Arab “bought” her for three days and took her to Egypt. Through her life in Cyprus went “amazing man: 100 pounds sterling for sexual intercourse; Andrew: 60 pounds plus 10 pounds for two nude pictures; Dr. Brown: perfume, 50 pounds sterling, watch, alarm, earrings and a necklace, 100 pounds, bracelet and a gold ring” (from the detective's report). In short, she came home with a lot of money and presents. But she did not stop with this; she went to Mexico.

Mexican prices turned out to be better- for the day club- \$250, night-\$300; table-dance- \$140. In Mexico, Sveta earned \$28,000. But she had to go to jail, when a lot of strippers were taken after a police round-up. But she didn't have to worry about anyone learning the truth about her in faraway Krasnodar.

She got acquainted with Michael in Moscow, before she went to Mexico. Everything started out very romantically. An affluent lawyer, tired of pragmatic American women fell in love with a young woman who could have been his daughter. And for Sveta, it could have been the next step to success. After her return, the “Hollywood” courtship started: flowers, acquaintances with families, trip to Sochi before the wedding. Michael had never been that generous and his heart had never beaten that fast...

After a visit to New York City and Las Vegas, U.S. citizen Michael Lamer and Russian citizen Svetlana Bondarchuk got married in Krasnodar. After that Michael went to Moscow to prepare a visa for Svetlana. His wife went to Italy, where she had a honeymoon with a Mexican lover, who had not forgotten about the dancer at the Mexican strip club. Don Pedro [Alfredo Ibarra Sotelo] took the unfaithful wife to Florence, Milan and Venice, gave her a diamond ring, \$ 1,000... and returned the wife.

In America, Mrs. Lamer liked New York City. But her husband was not as generous as before. Americans are very pragmatic, and after the romance, Michael decided to find his wife a job. They went to a couple of model agencies, but Sveta knew how to dance next to a pole really well. But prostitution was her secret. Therefore, she found such jobs through a strip-club surreptitiously.

Her husband became very suspicious of her constant absences. And then he found her diary where she listed all her clients and her profit from prostitution. What would a Russian man do in his place? Well, you know yourself. But not the American man! When Sveta told her husband that she wants to go on a vacation with her mother, Michael did not protest, but rather hired a detective and translated the diary that had all of his wife's experiences. A visit to a doctor cleared the head of Michael – the doctor gave him a reason of his malaise after dinner: his young wife added some opium substances in his food...

Michael met his wife at the airport in Krasnodar after her vacation. He threatened a divorce, but Mrs. Lamer did not want to leave a comfortable life in New York and go to a provincial Paris. She followed her husband to New York, begging him to give her another chance....

What would a Russian husband do? Beat her up and let her in again. But the American man kicked her out of the house. Later on, he regretted it because dangerous people started to threaten him. Then Mr. Lamer became nervous; on his death the widow would receive citizenship in America, and he wanted her deported, so he began a divorce case.

That's how after looking for the arguments against his unfaithful wife he turned up in Krasnodar. How this story will end- only God knows. Maybe some day we will tell you about it. But now there is an excerpt from Mr. Lamer's letter to us: "I hope you liked the story of how a very talented young woman went after the money, and how a stupid American man fell for a feminine Russian beauty, trying to escape from the American girls." P.S. All the names were changed in the article.

Besides changing the names, it was too bad the reporter couldn't change my role in this stupidity to a member of the audience.

While I was in Russia, my undercover operative started visiting Flash Dancers in the hope of befriending Poisoned Dragon, but he didn't find her working until the middle of May. That meant she took a month's vacation starting the middle of April, which supported my belief that the girl I saw entering a jewelry store in Krasnodar was she.

My operative made first contact sitting at the bar when Poisoned Dragon came up and said, "I know you." He thought his cover blown, but it turned out to be just one of her lines. She told him she was twenty-two—a lie, she lived in Sochi—a lie, said Russian men didn't realize how good Russian girls were—another lie, until they met American girls—a half-lie. My agent

thought she appeared troubled. For me that was great and probably meant she knew about my investigation in Krasnodar. My operative would continue visiting Flash Dancers periodically to try to gather information from her.

Xenia, my Moscow attorney, delivered to Dennis' contact at the U.S. Embassy a letter with exhibits detailing Poisoned Dragon's violation of U.S. Immigration law.

Judith, my New York divorce attorney, a.k.a. the Orc, actually sounded surprised when I gave her the boot. Just another delusional female believing she had a god given license to treat men like garbage and that they should thank her for it. Not much different than Poisoned Dragon except for looks and about two feet in height. No more American female attorneys for me; they all conceitedly thought they understood men but didn't.

After finishing my interviews with a handful of male lawyers, I hired my second annulment/divorce attorney, Steve Silpe. He seemed obnoxious and sharp enough: both good qualities in a litigator, assuming they are used against the opponent. His handlebar mustache and baldhead displayed the self-tailored image of a gunslinger, albeit a short one.

At our first meeting, I noticed he used the same type of seat for his guests as did Leo in Moscow. Maybe they were related. The deceptively normal chair in front of Silpe's desk sank its occupant well below the level of Silpe who sat throne-like behind his desk. A tactic my instincts told me he used to make himself appear more authoritative and imposing in order to browbeat clients into doing what he told them so as to make his job easier rather than serving his client's interests. Many lawyers manipulate their clients in order to fit cases into a cookie-cutter mold that permits the attorney to run an assembly line operation that maximizes revenue without the distraction of dealing with unfamiliar issues. Once again, I should have listen to my instincts, but didn't.

Silpe listened to my story and said the first step was to draft a complaint that listed my wife's worst deeds by showing she tricked me into marriage, committed adultery and treated me cruelly. Judith never got around to drafting a complaint, since she was likely trying to bludgeon me into a settlement. After Silpe served the complaint on my wife's attorney, he would request a Preliminary Conference before a judge. The court would choose the judge, not us. The alleged purpose of the Preliminary Conference was to simplify the issues, set a schedule for obtaining evidence and determine a trial date, but as I found out, the real reason was for the judge to hammer both sides into not going to trial. Bureaucrats, especially the judges in the Supreme Court in Manhattan, around 60% female, don't like work.

While continuing my investigation into Poisoned Dragon's nefarious life, I tracked down Azul, who had worked as a hooker and stripper at The Men's Club in Mexico City and double-hoed on weekend trips with my wife. Azul and my wife whored around Mexico together, so she clearly knew a lot that might help my case, although I doubted she'd tell the truth, but it was worth a shot. After tracking her from Lithuania, her native country, to Holland, I reached her by telephone. She was living with her boyfriend, meaning latest customer.

After politely listening to my narrative, Azul said she wanted to read Poisoned Dragon's diary first before answering any questions. She gave me her address and a date to call her back. To my surprise, she was at home when I called back on the appointed date. Probably didn't want me talking with her new chump. Azul couldn't remember any useful details about my wife's open-to-all-comers' days in Mexico, even though she was with her most of the time, apparently another slut with selective Alzheimer's.

"Alina didn't sell herself and none of the girls at the Men's Club did. We just danced," Azul smoothly said.

“What did Alina do when not working at the club?” I asked.

“All her spare time she was alone.”

That technically meant when not stripping or hoing, which were her chosen professions. These commie prostitutes could manipulate words as well as Billy Bob Clinton. They know the truth a man thinks he hears is not always the truth that is said.

“If she was alone, how did you know that?”

“I just knew!” I like Angelina very much and cannot say anything wrong about her.”

Azul, however, did admit that the episodes in the dairy mentioning her were correct. She probably wanted to placate me enough so as not to have a long talk with her latest mark, but refused to provide me with a sworn statement.

Azul claimed she more or less kept in touch with Poisoned Dragon with whom she had talked recently, but couldn't remember that conversation except for the prepared text on which only my wife could have briefed her. Azul repeated the exact same garbage Poisoned Dragon told me right after we separated in a con to make me lie to the INS for her:

“Alina liked you in the beginning. She did not marry you for a green card, but the marriage just did not work out. You shouldn't waste your time and money in fighting her. Just let her have what she wants.”

This obvious connivance of my wife and Azul confirmed these two whores stayed in close contact with each other. To make Poisoned Dragon realize she made a mistake, I told Azul about the night I received the Temporary Order of Protection. Poisoned Dragon would learn from Azul that had she not listened to her cocky lawyers and hatred of men to strike at me with the Temporary Order of Protection based on lies, none of what will happen would have happened

because before receiving the Order I had decided to forget about her—let her go her crooked way. Azul would tell her that the Order of Protection had started a total war.

“What does this fat Mexican named Alfredo do?” I asked

“I don’t know what he does, but I went with him and Alina on a few trips around Mexico.”

“Who else went along?”

“It was just the three of us. We were good friends. Alfredo even visited me and my boyfriend here in Holland last year.”

Probably on his way to meet my wife in Italy, I concluded.

Azul repeated the same excuse Poisoned Dragon used for breaking up with Alexei in Krasnodar—that he cheated on her. These sluts, just like Feminazis, can’t accept any responsibility.

Azul also puppeted my wife’s tired, old ploy for sympathy: that Alina and Inessa had a hard life. Who doesn’t? As for what my wife mentioned about Cyprus, Azul only commented the work was hard and Poisoned Dragon didn’t like it. I had heard all these lines before and no longer believed any of them.

Azul then launches into her own sympathy ploy by telling me that when she returned home to Lithuania, she discovered her husband had cheated on her, which hurt her so bad that she started divorce proceedings. The hypocrisy of this prostitute was astounding. She spent seven years whoring around the world, lying to her husband and still had the audacity to fault him for finding another girl—give me a break! These hos went beyond self-delusion. Next she told me she was now working in a bed and breakfast, probably as an expensive mattress, and invited me to visit her. I politely declined and said goodbye.



After Azul, I telephoned Alfredo to try to pressure him into giving me a sworn statement about Poisoned Dragon's adulterous liaison with him in Italy and any place else he might admit. My hand held only two cards.

Technically, under international law, I could subpoena Alfredo for a deposition in Mexico to grill him about playing around with my wife. To avoid such, he might provide a sworn statement, but I doubted it. If he refused, then papers noticing a deposition and including the annulment/divorce complaint could be served at his home when he wasn't there, so his wife, assuming he had one, would receive them. Being a female, she would read them, leading to lots of trouble for Alfredo. It was likely Alfredo was married because once when I called to confront him about Poisoned Dragon, I heard children in the background.

My second card depended on psychology. I had sent Alfredo at his work address my wife's diary with the hoped that after reading the insults she wrote about him, he would want revenge. In order to entice him into reading the diary, I sent it under Azul's name. If it came from me, his suspicious Mexican mind would likely cause him to either not read it or dismiss Poisoned Dragon's insults as my creations. The cover letter purportedly from Azul stated, "I believe you will find the enclosed bed time reading interesting. Love Azul," and listed the pages recounting his escapades with my wife and her mockery of him but not the pages about their fling in Italy.

When he received the diary, Alfredo would eagerly flip to the cited pages certain in his ego that Poisoned Dragon praised his sexual prowess and confessed her love for him. But on reading her remarks, such as "I wanted to laugh" or "Oh god, that night was such a torture to me" or she needed a stiff drink before screwing him or his pawing and smell revolted her would send his ego crashing. He'd search through every page listed in Azul's cover letter hoping for

redemption from the fair skinned, blonde hair girl he fell for but would find none. Struggling to salvage his manly pride, he'd realize that the pages Azul referred him to didn't include the trip to Italy where Alfredo surely believed his performance, both in and out of bed, exemplified the legendary Latin lover that won him forever a hot place in Poisoned Dragon's groin and a tender place in her heart no matter what she said about him earlier. It just took her some time to appreciate his outstanding qualities.

Wondering whether the dairy he clasped in his hands even included the Italy affair, Alfredo would hurriedly flip through the pages praying to find salvation from the mental torment of Poisoned Dragon's derision. Once he found the Italy section, he'd immediately suspect a vicious plot by Azul to hurt him by referring only to the sections where my wife ridiculed him. His ego on the upswing would fancy Azul jealous of Poisoned Dragon; that Azul really wanted the knightly Alfredo and this was her way of getting back at him for not banging her. But while reading about the Italian fling, his vaulted hopes would dash utterly because I rewrote my wife's dairy to heap even worse insults on him than in the earlier sections. That fatso Mexican deserved the pain and worse, but more importantly, it might convince him to seek a little vengeance and make a statement against my wife.

On the telephone, Alfredo sounded very bitter about Poisoned Dragon, so my scheme had caused the intended emotional distress, but he wasn't willing to give a sworn statement. Apparently he was use to girls walking all over him. I played my second card and threatened to subpoena him to appear at a deposition for questioning, but he didn't change his mind.

Okay, time to involve his wife, assuming he had one. My private detective in Mexico City set out to find Alfredo's home address and, thereby, his wife's. The detective tried following Alfredo after work but lost him every time because of Alfredo speeding down

alleyways, quickly changing lanes and making hairpin turns to shake any tails. My detective found Alfredo's paranoid driving bizarre, so he looked a little further into Alfredo and found a narcotics trafficker. No wonder he didn't want anyone following him.

Alfredo's real business as a trafficker fit. Poisoned Dragon said Alfredo exported dried fruit, which sounded strange to me at the time, so I noted it even though I did not understand it. Also, during the Italy affair, my wife wrote about taking some substance with Alfredo that heightened the sexual thrill. Apparently, he exported the dried fruit of the coca plant.

My detective found Alfredo's home address and paid it a visit while Alfredo was at work, but unfortunately no current wife since according to the housekeeper Alfredo had recently divorced—rats.

The next day an email from Natalya brought troubles concerning my investigation in Krasnodar. The week after I left Krasnodar, Poisoned Dragon's mother, Inessa, burst into Natalya's office ranting and raving, threatening and intimidating:

She told me very bad things, also she told you are criminal, crazy, etc... In addition, she told me that you'll never visit Russia again, 'cause you are criminal and our police know it. I saw that she had some copies of Alina's diary in her bag. I can't tell you how many exactly. She told me that everybody who were given of these copies didn't believe in such "trouble things". I'm sure she told them that you are crazy and criminal. She forced me to say with whom you met in Krasnodar. Inessa told that Vera, the masseur, Anastasia and the trainer called her and said, "It is impossible!! We don't believe in it." She told about her "her beautiful and kind girl."

After this she tried to force me to write a paper with number of my passport and current address for Court with detailed describing of your last visit into Krasnodar: each meeting, with whom, when, who else has a copy of the diary... I said, "O.k., see you tomorrow, I'll make this paper."

When she left our office I call my lawyer, and she refused to make any paper without special request from Court. When Alina's mother came again, I told her: "Fuck you, I agreed to help to show the real matter of justice but you haven't any possibilities for this." She was very angry, she promised to locate me at the prison very soon.

Yes, it was very unpleasantly, you know. Also she told that you forced Alina to write this diary. Of course, I didn't tell anything about newspaper, she could kill me! Also she told me that she has a strong connections in Police and with criminals and I believed her because she has a money and she can buy any friends, you know and she once lived in Chechnya. Yes I was scared.

Natalya's email came at least three weeks after Inessa's lie-filled intimidation. Why so late? Anyway, I saw the hidden hands of Poisoned Dragon's attorneys, Mundy and his Russian assistant, behind Inessa's actions. Someone to whom I gave a copy of the dairy spilled the beans to Inessa and Alina, who was likely in Krasnodar at the time of my visit.

The cabal of forces arrayed against my quest for justice now knew I possessed a copy of my wife's dairy going back to December 1998 and that I was looking for people to authenticate the record of her sordid existence. Poisoned Dragon and her attorneys needed to prevent the Russians I interviewed from providing the necessary sworn statements about the validity and accuracy of her diary; otherwise, it would be admitted as evidence in the divorce court. Sure the INS had a copy of her diary, but before using it in a deportation hearing, the Government would also have to authenticate it, which meant work for bureaucrats that didn't work. However, if all the INS needed to do was subpoena court records that included an already authenticate diary used as evidence, then that much less work would look attractive to the bureaucrats.

Poisoned Dragon and her attorneys may have also suspected that I had acquired a copy of the dairy while still living with her, which gave her the defense of cohabitation—meaning I legally forgave the events in the diary. In order to prevent an annulment or divorce based on adultery from prostitution, they would have to raise the cohabitation defense. Such proof would attract the attention of the INS because it meant showing that I had “forgiven” the acts of marriage fraud and prostitution.

If Poisoned Dragon's attorneys couldn't prevent the authentication of the diary and didn't use the cohabitation defense, then they would face making the ludicrous argument that I forced her to write it or that all the nefarious scenes were id inspired fantasies. In addition, they would have to stop me from acquiring any additional information not in the diary that might help prove

my allegations and provide the INS with additional court evidence of marriage fraud and prostitution, both of which even Immigration didn't look kindly upon.

So the trinity of evil needed a strategy. Easy enough, just tell my Russian witnesses I was crazy and a criminal, which, if they believed it, would keep them from helping me. If they didn't believe it, then just threaten to send the police and prosecutors after them. Everyone knew the Russian criminal-justice system went to the highest bidder and nobody, especially Russians, wanted the police and prosecutors looking into their affairs. Whether poor or wealthy, all Russians try to keep a low profile. The poor because the laws protecting individual rights are useless, and the rich because their money comes from criminal activities. Not that the wealthy fear prosecution, but they would rather avoid the bribes demanded by the police and prosecutors to leave them alone. If threats of police and prosecutors didn't work, then Poisoned Dragon could easily hire some hoodlums with sex or money to use more vigorous intimidation.

Poisoned Dragon couldn't arrange the intimidation of potential witnesses herself because she was under the jurisdiction of the New York Supreme Court and such conduct, even by a wife, didn't go down easily with the court. So her attorneys likely instructed her to find someone else over whom New York laws held no power to obstruct my investigation. Naturally, she turned to her mother.

Even though Poisoned Dragon's mother didn't fall under the court's authority, I still thought the divorce court wouldn't look kindly on the mother of a party to the proceedings going around intimidating and threatening potential witnesses. So I telephoned my new attorney Silpe to determine what we could do to deter Inessa's interference. He sounded like he didn't want to be bothered, and said I couldn't do anything at all because my wife's mother was outside the court's jurisdiction. Silpe's attitude made me feel that I, the man paying him, was disturbing

him. Was my new lawyer hoing my wife or just a wimp from a younger generation suckled on Feminazi propaganda? White men in their twenties and thirties are generally incapable of holding their own in an argument with some loud mouth, usually ugly, female zealot. It's as if the Chinese brain washers from the Korean War passed on their techniques to American mothers of the late 20<sup>th</sup> century who vowed to turn their sons into pseudo pussies.

Okay, if my modern-day, emasculated American lawyer wouldn't help me, maybe my Russian woman attorney would. I telephoned Xenia about obtaining a restraining order, or whatever they called it in Russia, to stop Inessa from interfering in my investigation. Xenia told me the Russian courts couldn't restrain anybody from saying what they wanted regardless of the consequences. Threats, intimidation and harassment, as long as such consisted only of words could not be prevented beforehand. An interesting freedom of speech concept for a country that recently sent people to the Gulag for the mildest of political criticisms. For example, my former maid in Moscow, the one with the PhD in public health, told me that her grandfather ended up in the Gulag for saying that Americans built better cars than the Soviets. He never returned.

Xenia explained my only recourse was to use the law of defamation against Inessa in Krasnodar once she defamed me to others—not much of a deterrent. Even winning a monetary judgment, which in Russia would amount to peanuts, I would still have to collect from a Russian adept, like most Russians, at hiding assets. But, I decided to go ahead anyway. It's always impossible to tell where a court action may lead.

Xenia suggested a Krasnodar lawyer she worked with, Svetlana, but before she could represent me, I needed to fill out and get notarized the Russian form for hiring an attorney. Since, I planned to return to Krasnodar in mid-June to continue my investigation; I'd meet Svetlana then to complete the forms.

I contacted Natalya to tell her of my hiring a lawyer in Krasnodar to deal with Inessa. It allayed some of the doubts Inessa had put into Natalya's head about me and calmed some of her fears that I would leave her to face the wraith of Inessa and Poisoned Dragon alone. My wife and Inessa clearly intended to sow doubt and fear in Natalya because they knew my investigation would stop in its tracks without a translator. Still, Natalya remained upset from the experience, not only because my wife made lots of money, but, as Natalya said, my wife and Inessa had lived in Chechnya for over fifteen years, which to Russians meant connections with some of the most brutal criminals on the planet.

Chechnya lay only four hundred miles from Krasnodar, so many Chechen gangsters set up business in the city to ply their savagery. To make matters scarier, Poisoned Dragon's apparent prostituting in Krasnodar probably meant she also associated with local criminals and officials capable of causing much trouble for the average Russian. As a result, Natalya stopped following up on the people I originally contacted, and even tried to dissuade me from continuing my investigation. Time for another translator for my next trip thanks to the fear my wife and her attorneys heartlessly caused a twenty-two year old girl trying to eek out a living.

#### Telstar

The most troubling development of Inessa terrorizing Natalya was the copies of the diary in Inessa's bag. My wife's mother must have convinced or threatened some of my potential witnesses into giving up the very document that they needed to recognize the events recorded. This cut to the heart of my efforts. Without a copy of the diary, any potential witness still willing to help me had nothing with which to refer. I'd have to fly back and forth to Krasnodar or set up shop there for weeks to handhold each potential witness while we went through the diary, composed their sworn statement and obtained notarization. If I let the witnesses out of my

presence, my wife's mother, the corrupt police or hired hoodlums might pounce, eliminating my chances to authenticate the diary.

Poisoned Dragon and Inessa could easily keep track of my visits and activities in Krasnodar. Two planes a day flew into the city from Moscow and only two hotels permitted foreigners as guest. A few dollars to an airline official and hotel employee or tens of dollars to an F.S.B. agent and my nemeses would know of my arrivals, departures and local residence. Once I landed in Krasnodar, they could use some of Inessa's students or former students, such as the guys who helped the two move into their apartment, to stake out the hotel and follow me around Krasnodar. These guys won't cost much, probably a few bottles of vodka and maybe some sex from Poisoned Dragon. Some of them were policemen who could easily keep me under surveillance the entire time. After I talked to a witness, Inessa would show up to expropriate the diary by smilingly suggesting the witness shouldn't get involved with a crazy, criminal American. If her ingratiating con didn't work, then she'd turn to her Janus face of rage, threatening the person with the police or gangsters.

Without sworn statements from witnesses to authenticate the diary, not to mention any new evidence, my wife could resort to her strong point before the court—lie. She wouldn't have to claim the absurdity that I forced her to write the diary, just that the diary represented the draft of a novel and all the evidence in it would go down the drain.

In addition to stopping the intimidation, which a defamation action might do, I also needed a way to circumvent Inessa's ability to confiscate copies of the diary from my witnesses. Neither American nor Russian law could prevent Inessa's expropriations, but modern technology could make them useless by putting the diary on the Internet. Let's see Inessa expropriate that.



Natalya told me that Krasnodar had a couple of Internet Cafes used mostly by students and younger folk while Russians with money, criminals and old-line bureaucrats, owned their own computers. That comprised the pool of my potential witnesses: Poisoned Dragon's fellow models, students and disco crowd probably all used the Internet Cafes while her prostitution clients made enough money to buy their own computers. Anyone of them could go online to check out which events in the diary they recognized. An added benefit was reducing the number of copies of the diary I planned to lug from New York to Krasnodar on my next trip. Just twenty copies really weigh me down, but with a website, I could replace most copies with flyers.

The flyers would provide the web site address, introductory information that showed I knew Poisoned Dragon and answers to questions that people usually asked about her, such as what she did in America, how much she made and where she lived in Krasnodar. An Internet site also gave me the opportunity to reach more people by following up on leads. My first trip to Krasnodar taught me that I needed a longer presence on the ground in order to track down others with useful information. By leaving a number of flyers with my new translator, whomever she ended up being, she could follow up the leads to other potential witnesses, give them a flyer and I could interview them by email. The public nature of an Internet site might even turn up people I didn't know about.

An Internet site also allowed me to counter, to some extent, Inessa's lie that the diary was false by including the naked photos that Leo gave me. The staged nature of the photos showing front and back fit the modern-day trend in Russia for promoting commercial goods. One look and any Russian would know the pictures showed a prostitute advertising her services. Since the diary recounted much of Poisoned Dragon's sex work, the photos showing an obvious prostitute made the entire sorted tale credible.

An added benefit came from showing my wife in one of her her work uniforms—no clothes at all. As a result of my interviews with the two guys who didn't recognize her name but did her photos, I realized pictures were the only way some people could identify her. Poisoned Dragon worked retail selling her body, so her customers, those that might provide some useful information, were more likely to recognize her in her birthday suit as opposed to a real suit. The naked photos on the Internet, as well as on the flyers, might catch the eyes of those who knew her body but not her name.

The Internet site would make public private facts that made me looked like a fool, but then again, I was. It would also publicize many doings and schemes that my wife wanted to keep secret—good. She and her attorneys had plotted and used threats to intimidate me into assisting them in defrauding the Immigration Service, had obtained a spurious Temporary Order of Protection, had lied about possessing medical records of battery, had threatened a “difficult” divorce proceeding and were now using Inessa to threaten my witnesses in order to subvert the workings of the New York Supreme Court. By engaging in such acts, they “assumed the risk” that unflattering facts about Poison Dragon would become public. Just because she was a girl didn't mean the truth about her should remain locked away while they engaged in criminal acts to gain her permanent residency.

The real beauty of my plan was that she couldn't sue me for defamation because then all the facts would come out in court since truth is an absolute defense to defamation. Although, some man-hating judge might convict me of harassment based on the lame belief that alien sluts can do what they want so long as it harms men, but I doubted it. Even the naked pictures didn't amount to harassment because they simply re-publicized my wife's advertisements for the services she sold through Leo—sex.

My Flash Dancers' undercover operative kept reporting back to me, but nothing of much use. Poisoned Dragon kept playing her sympathy card with him by saying she has to support herself, nobody helps her, she lives alone, wants to become a model but has to work at Flash Dancers so much to pay her bills, sometimes there's not enough customers to make money, the club sometimes raises the fees she has to pay management to dance—boo hoo hoo. The consummate deceiver, raking in easily \$3500 a week but still trying to weasel money out of others with her “pity me” routine.

A couple of side comments, however, illustrated either the extent of her self-delusion or capacity to tell outrageous lies: she cooked great meals and stripping was glamorous, which particularly amazed my operative as he looked around the seedy, dark basement full of men emotionally drooling over the flesh of whores. Poisoned Dragon also repeated her lie about winning the long jump championship of Russia three times and added a new one about reaching the finals in the Miss Commonwealth of Independent States pageant—a type of Miss Universe contest but only for the countries of the former Soviet Union. She told my agent that often customers wanted to take her to a hotel after work. A subtle way of informing a customer that he had to make the proposition. She probably used that approach to avoid breaking the law on soliciting prostitution in case a customer happened to be a cop. Poisoned Dragon also emphasized to my agent that she wanted to stay in America. During her plying tactics with my agent, Poisoned Dragon always situated herself to keep a sharp eye on Flash Dancers entrance to spot any new suckers entering—the real reason for her laser eye operation the previous year.

On the legal front, Silpe had me meet with his associate to go over the annulment/divorce complaint. Why wasn't I meeting with him? Okay, I rationalized: it'll cost me less money, and I'll see whether this associate is competent. After a few minutes into the

meeting, a sinking feeling of dread swamped me. The associate, a middle-aged female, must have been in the beginning stages of Alzheimer's. Her mind was like a Swiss-cheese trap. She mixed up facts, couldn't remember important points, confused the law, passed on making any decisions, overflowed with negativity, implied I should give up without a fight and didn't know the status of the Temporary Order of Protection, which meant if it wasn't transferred to the Supreme Court and I missed a hearing in the Family Court, the police would arrest me. My instinct told me to dump this law firm, but then, like a chronic fool, I rationalized that Silpe, who had a good reputation, would oversee her work.

Before the meeting ended, Silpe came in the office to tell me the name of the judge for my case, a female of course, since only one male judge heard domestic relations cases for all of Manhattan. Silpe also lobbied against pursuing alimony or some of my wife's assets, both of which he originally suggested we go for and I thought I deserved. After all the help I gave Poisoned Dragon, after the hell she put me through, I deserved some of the money she was making. It wasn't fair that this duplicitous whore should benefit from defrauding me, the Immigration Service, the Department of State, the Internal Revenue Service and Customs while I ended up losing money, time and opportunities: first in bringing her to America and then in finding out the truth. Where was the justice now that my good heartedness ruined my business, my time wasted by her selfish schemes, my emotional health traumatized by her secretly feeding me drugs and treating me as though I were some animal with which to toy or destroy at will and all the while my money evaporated on useless lawyers? Silpe argued that the judge wouldn't grant me any financial assistance from my wife because of the shortness of the marriage. What about the degree of harm she caused me, I countered? It didn't matter how much I suffered only

how long. If I had been dumb enough to stay married to her longer, then I might have a chance of some reward for long-term stupidity but not short term egregious injury.

After the meeting, I contacted my friend Alan who helps select nominees for judicial office in Manhattan to see whether he knew anything about Judge Joan B. Lobis. Lobis was in her fifties and had campaigned for her judicial office as an out-of-closet lesbian. I was doomed! All Poisoned Dragon needed to do was smile, cross and uncross her legs a few times and the judge would droolingly give her what she wanted.

The evil that lurked in the female soul since creation surrounded me. Personified in my wife as the unscrupulous vamp who uses her charms to exploit men while assuming the role of victim violated by the men she exploited, and in the judge as the she-male who abuses power to carry out a personal agenda of punishing men for crimes they didn't commit because they are what she'll never be—a man. Naturally, Lobis, as do other she-males or Feminazis, justifies her vendetta against men through bigotry: anyone belonging to or sympathizing with the group labeled “men” is malevolent and barbaric. Such generalized dehumanization makes it easy to deny the rights of any man, even one who never hit a girl, although now wishes he had, and who always try to judge people by the content of their character and abilities, not by their sex, although that will never happen again when it comes to females. Actually, my only crime was trying to help a girl out. So I didn't expect any justice from the divorce court but would try to put up a fight anyway.

Besides the courts, the Feminazi infested media also propagated this psychological sea change of the past forty years whereby men only brought brutality while women graced the world with “clean love.” Today, American institutions assume nearly all female wrongdoings result from a man making her do it, or just as absurd, from a man not stopping her before she

does it. The mainstream media paints females as the hapless victims of male depravity. For instance, the TV show 60 Minutes aired a story, reported by a female—naturally, about “innocent” Russian girls falling into the clutches of villainous male pimps who sent them abroad to work as “artists.” Once out of Russia, these “naïve” girls, to their alleged surprise, found themselves “forced” into prostitution when their male employers, always men—no women pimps, confiscated their passports and wouldn’t return them until they spent the requisite amount of time selling sex. The Russian girls interviewed adeptly played the role of the wronged woman complete with tears and sobs for the female reporter who was too ignorant to know or too zealous a feminist to care about the truth.

Every Russian, as did I, knew 60 Minutes missed the real story, so I sent a letter with my wife’s dairy to the President of CBS News for whom I had worked twenty-five years earlier at WNEW TV, now FOX News. The letter explained that most Russian girls know they can simply walk into a Russian consulate or embassy overseas to obtain a new passport. The case at Kroll in Moscow, which involved Miss Russia of 1991, had her obtaining a second passport at the Russian Embassy in London by claiming she lost her original, which she hadn’t. My letter continued that these pretty young Russian girls, like my wife, aren’t naïve but masters at the art of deception. They know the return that their assets can bring not only in Russia but also in other parts of the world because there exists a worldwide subculture of hos sharing information, experiences and tips on where to make the most, how to cheat employers and customers, dealing with the police and anything else a successful international prostitute and stripper needs to succeed. Most of the Russian hos started hooking in their hometown as teenagers for the easy money from the ever-present criminals and corrupt governmental officials. The cream of the ho crop eventually goes overseas for better money. The modeling agencies that arrange for the

visas and transportation don't need to force any girls into prostitution because there are so many volunteers. But when caught at prostitution or lap dancing, these girls, true to their genes, blame men for forcing them into such dirty work. They lie in order to avoid the humiliation of the truth, con the media and trick the Government into allowing them to stay here so that they can find some fool-hearted western guy to relieve of his money. The one time Russian Presidential Candidate Vladimir Zhirinovsky spoke the truth when he said, "The women of Russia are populating the brothels of Europe" and now the world.

In suggesting a story closer to the truth, I volunteered to introduce a CBS producer undercover to both male and female Russian procurers and tell the producer how to gain an inside look at the Russian sex industry. My old boss thanked me for the information and said he referred the diary and story angle to Betsy West the vice president who oversaw 60 minutes. Not surprisingly, nothing came of it in these times of "women can do no wrong."

Before my flight back to Krasnodar, I put together a flyer for potential witnesses but didn't finish up the web site. That would only take a day or two when I returned, so I planned to tell the Krasnodar recipients to wait a week before accessing the site. The flyer, a two-sided, displayed both sides of my wife the way her Moscow pimp advertised her. The text on the front and back aimed at attracting the reader's attention, as if the photos didn't already do that, and making him or her want to learn more while providing enough information about my wife so that most with some acquaintanceship could identify her. The topside, graced by Poisoned Dragon's naked front with a black box covering her crotch, stated:

This New Site Will Tell You All the Truth About a Girl from Krasnodar Who Lives Luxuriously in New York

Alina Alexandrovna Shipilina, daughter of Inessa Alexandrovna Shipilina, who teaches at the Academy of Physical Culture in the Department of Gymnastics, is making big money in New York City using her naked body. Visit Alina's web site [www.AlinaShipilina.com](http://www.AlinaShipilina.com) and read her

intimate Russian diary on how she succeeded in using her body to earn 15,000 U.S. dollars a month.

On the bottom-side, the flyer showed her derriere while holding her hair up to provide any admirers an unobstructed view of her back:

Alina Alexandrovna Shipilina graduate from the Academy of Physical Culture in 1996 and after working as a prostitute and stripper in Limassol, Cyprus, and Mexico City, Mexico, moved on to New York City. She made enough money in Mexico to buy her apartment at Rashpilevskaya Ulitsa in Krasnodar. In New York City, she has earned over 100,000 US dollars in less than a year. Read how she did it on her Internet site [www.AlinaShipilina.com](http://www.AlinaShipilina.com).

If you have any information about Alina, please email to [alinashipilina@hotmail.com](mailto:alinashipilina@hotmail.com). All sources will be kept confidential.

### Traveling Man

The trip to Krasnodar in mid-June took me first to Moscow for a convention of international Private Detective firms—how appropriate. Unlike the days of Spade and Archer when most P.I. firms worked pretty much on their own, modern day detectives formed worldwide associations to keep pace with the global economy, global crime and lobby governments, mainly in the West, for less restrictions on acquiring information. While managing Kroll in Moscow, I often wondered how the managers of the European and American branches stayed out of jail. Some of the methods they used to obtain information on private bank accounts or from law enforcement agencies didn't sound legal to me, and they weren't. Kroll always warned its clients which information not to use in court. In Russia and the rest of the third world, however, anything went because the laws on privacy and confidentiality of government information didn't exist or weren't enforced.

The convention proved useful for it led me to Elaine, the Canadian detective who found one of my wife's secret financial accounts at the Bank of Cyprus. Before the war, Poisoned Dragon told me that when she had worked in Cyprus, she had set up a bank account, and after



her visit there last September, had met with Stephanos, one of her old customers, who worked in a bank. Both pieces of information inferred she still kept the account, but I had no idea at which bank. When Elaine found the bank, the mutual fund account only contained \$20,000. What did Poisoned Dragon do with the other \$130,000 that I knew she had made from stripping and who knew how much from prostitution? Elaine checked the other banks on Cyprus but no luck. I didn't think my wife stupid enough to keep over \$100,000 in her apartment in Krasnodar, especially after me blabbing to Russians that she did, and I knew she didn't keep it in her safe deposit box at Citibank on Fifth Avenue. Wherever she hid the rest of her money smuggled out of the U.S. still remains a mystery.

In Moscow, I once again stayed with Sasha and Anya. Since my last trip, Anya began dating my buddy Tony, but she kept complaining that he only thought about himself. No argument there, but then again, Anya only thought about herself as well. Both dated other people in their search for better opportunities while lying to each other about it. Clearly a match made in third world heaven: Tony whose parents came from China and Anya a Russian.

Before flying to Krasnodar, I met Xenia, my Moscow lawyer, at an English style pub not far from Moscow's most famous den of prostitutes "Night Flight." More irony, and I understood that no matter where I went in Russia, reminders of Poisoned Dragon would haunt me because that land was awash with hos. Xenia gave me the name and number for Svetlana, the Krasnodar lawyer who was willing to help me battle Poisoned Dragon and Inessa on their home turf. Xenia also mentioned an interesting fact about my wife's birth certificate that escaped my attention.

"The certificate lists Alina's last name as that of her mother, Shipilina, not that of the father who is also listed on the certificate. In Russia, many single mothers list the name of the father while giving their out-of-wedlock children their own last names."

“So my wife’s a bastard,” I laughed. “Both technically and in the broader sense.”

“Well yes.” Xenia politely responded. “It is not uncommon, and I am sure Inessa raised Alina by herself, since she obviously didn’t have a legal husband. But the man on the birth certificate is probably Alina’s father or believed himself to be, and he probably supported the two until Alina went to university in Krasnodar or even later.”

“To do that, he would have had money, right?”

“Remember, when Alina grew up from 1975 to 1991 in Grozny, all the important officials were Russian and belonged to the Communist Party. These guys had mistresses and usually took care of the woman and their illegitimate children.”

“That makes sense. Both Alina and Inessa talked about Alina’s father as an official in the M.V.D. in Grozny. Alina even said he was the chief. I wonder if he’s still there and would talk to me?”

“It’s not possible that he is still there. After the Soviet Union fell apart in 1991, the Chechens displaced the Russian elite that ran the country and took over all the positions of power, which eventually led to the first Chechen war. Many Russians, like your wife, left the country in the early 1990s. And don’t even think about going there to track him down, all records have been destroyed by the two wars, and you’ll end up with your head in a basket,” Xenia kindly warned.

“I believe that. So, Alina and Inessa didn’t leave Grozny because her father beat her or molested her or treated her mother badly, which Alina claimed caused her parents to divorce.”

“There couldn’t have been a divorce because there was no marriage. They left because all the Russians left. Those on top were now on the bottom.”

“So Alina probably lived the good life as a kid in Grozny?”

“If the man on her birth certificate is the natural father or believed himself to be and was Russian—yes. But maybe Alina’s father wasn’t Russian.”

“What do you mean?”

“Alina has some of the Chechen facial features, so perhaps her real father was Chechen. There was a lot of intermingling between the Russians in Chechnya and the Chechens, and many Russians continue to work with Chechen gangsters even today making lots of money from the two wars and running various criminal activities in Russia.”

“So, greedy little Inessa probably mistreated herself out to a number of guys, Russian and Chechen, didn’t know who was Alina’s real father but probably told all of them that they were in order to shake them down.”

“Such things do happen.”

“I wonder whether any of her stories about Chechen guys grabbing her on the bus and her father, whoever he was, smothering her with a pillow or starving her were true, or just to make men feel sorry for her?”

“Or delusions,” Xenia added.

“No one can be that blind,” I responded.

“Maybe Alina really believes the fairy tales she tells. It gives her an excuse for her actions. She can blame men for everything she doesn’t like about her life, which justifies her using them like she did you.”

“She sounds like an American Feminist. Both create the false image of a decent girl victimized by evil men in order to get preferential treatment, and both believe they shouldn’t be held responsible for their acts. For the Feminists that means abusing their positions in the government, media and education, murdering their husbands and even their children for which

they blame their hormones. In the case of my wife, it means prostitution, defrauding Immigration, evading taxes and any evil act that serves her purposes. Both believe they deserve compensation for the fantasized harm done to them and members of their group. The Feminists steal jobs from men and give them to incompetents, while my wife sucks money out of men. Both seek to gratify their desire to wreck vengeance on men. Damn, these young Russian prostitutes are every bit as mean, nasty and hateful of men as American Feminists. They just package it differently.”

“Well I don’t know about that,” Xenia diplomatically said. “What’s going on in America seems strange to us Russians and a little childish. But Alina most likely never had a father in the traditional sense, and both mother and daughter live off of men.”

“Right, and the absence of a father supports my belief that Inessa started pimping Alina out when she reached puberty. It all fits. Alina was very tall, so her mother passed her off as older than she really was. Alina always complained that being taller than everybody else in school kept boys from dating her while the girls taunted her. But in truth, she was complaining that her height turned her into a prostitute, which destroyed her ever having a chance at a normal life. You know in a twisted sense, she rightfully blamed her height, but in reality it was her mother. The molestation stories she probably used to cover the reality of male strangers entering her bed by making them all the father that never existed. The puzzle is falling into place. She always slept as though cowering with her body pinned between the bed and the wall in order to ward off the childhood terror of customers coming for sex. She told me to never touch her while she slept, probably because it would bring back memories of the past and she always wore panties to bed, most likely as another unconscious protection from her past. What a sad little girl. I almost feel sorry for her, but I’m not going to make that mistake again. Alina should hate

her mother for destroying her life, but I guess she can't allow herself to see the truth, since her mother is the only person with whom she ever had close emotional ties. The only one she believes she can trust is the one who utterly betrayed her."

Xenia added, "That would explain the infantile nature of her dairy. It's as if she stopped her emotional development at puberty. Emotionally, she sounds like a little girl, thrilled by childish amusements, upset by trivial matters, superstitious, unable to feel for others and extremely nasty when she doesn't get what she wants. She's an adult intelligence ruled by a hurt and angry little girl—very dangerous. I'd be careful."

"I've been told that before, but to tell you the truth, for some reason she just doesn't scare me. I know she'll do anything she can get away with to get a permanent green card and afterward probably have one of her hoodlum friends try to liquidate me, but it just doesn't bother me. What I'm really afraid of is her winning. Her getting what she wants: lots of money and to stay in America. It's too bad she didn't take my suggestion to see a psychologist. She could have straighten her life out, pursued a legitimate career and saw her mother for what she really was—a pimp. Perhaps, if I had been more patient, she would have eventually changed, but somehow I doubt it. Why did I end up involved with such a person?"

"There's nothing you can do, it's Russia," Xenia empathized.

On Sunday, June 10<sup>th</sup>, feeling like a commuter, I boarded the packed flight to Krasnodar hoping one of the innumerable fat, deodorant-less Russian businessman, a.k.a. crook, didn't shoe horn himself into the matchbox sized seat next to me causing an overflow of blubber into my space. But a more pleasant, although more dangerous, type of Russian sat next to me: a pretty English speaking Russian girl from a family that owned a classy Moscow restaurant, that is, money-laundering operation. In between our chatting, which did not include my hitting on her, I

reviewed my “To Do” list that included the names of people mentioned in Poisoned Dragon’s diary whom I especially wanted to track down. At the top was the witch who provided the drugs for my meals before and during the marriage, followed by the manager of the Aurora movie theater, the photographer Dmitri, the girl who went to Cyprus with Poisoned Dragon but came back after two days—Nadya the Good and Alexey the manager of the Joy Disco. Also on my list were some of the people interviewed in April for additional questioning, determine the extent of Poisoned Dragon and her mother’s interference in my investigation, try and interest the Krasnaya Ulitsa reporter into doing a follow-up story and meet my Krasnodar attorney Svetlana.

On landing in Krasnodar, I said goodbye to my pretty, young flight-companion for whom I had no interest in looking up back in Moscow. Ever since I separated from my wife, pretty girls no longer held the promise of kindness and understanding. Behind all the bubble bath and dewy morning and moonlight, I now saw only vicious predators. Whenever one of these engines of destruction turned her lights on me, I wanted to run down the block screaming. My genes still lusted for those soft, nubile bodies but my reason feared the seduction of their whispered lies turning me once again into a fool. What if some pretty young thing with her soft, smooth flesh, perfumed hair and honey dripping lies put my heart back together just to rip it apart again? I was better off alone. Marrying a prostitute made clear that romance was nothing more than a feminine con to make men suffer body and soul and deplete their bank accounts. The incongruous conclusion of my new understanding meant that the only girls left for me were hos, amateur, not professional like my wife. Still, the amateurs cost money to date and required feigning empathy to collect on the enjoyment produced by the drugs they caused the brain to pump out. Such looked too much like the traditional matting pattern, so out of the fear of falling

into another snake pit laid by a slut or a good girl, which I knew didn't exist, I chose celibacy and put away for the time-being the illusions of love as a verb and forever as a noun.

As I walked out the airport gate, the same taxi driver who took me to the hotel in April greeted me like an old friend. How did he know I was coming? He didn't, he just picked up extra money every weekend using his car as a taxi. As we drove to the hotel communicating in his broken English and my broken Russian, he again laughed about the trouble this Russian prostitute was putting me through but didn't offer any advice this time. He likely assumed it too late to do any good.

The staff at Krasnodar's Moscow Hotel greeted me as though I were a regular: smiling rather than frowning this time. The moment I entered my room, the telephone rang. Natalya, my translator from April, welcomed me to Krasnodar, and said she had a new translator for me named Nadya Sanchez. At first, I assumed the incidents at the Academy and with Inessa's mother scared Natalya off, but the real reason for her not doing my translating again was her promotion to manager of the firm that provided translators. Apparently, this girl had more guts than she let on.

The next morning, Monday, June 11, 2001, I met Nadya in the still dim and still dreary hotel lobby. She had just graduated college, very pretty, petite and nice legs. I buried my impulse to flirt. Nadya had already contacted Svetlana, the attorney recommended by Xenia, but Svetlana could only meet me at the end of the week on Friday morning. I had wanted to meet my Krasnodar counsel sooner so that we could at least start the defamation court proceeding against Inessa in the hope it would put an immediate stop to the obstructing of my investigation engineered by Poisoned Dragon, her attorneys and Inessa. But my purgatory in Russia taught me not to push my own scheduling desires because virtually all human efforts in that disorganized

society evolve in a direction and at a speed independent of individual will or frustration.

Whether caused by the bureaucracies of the Czars and Communists or resignation emanating from the minds of a people accustomed to not making their will felt, the fabric of reality in that savage land laughed derisively while thwarting the attempts of men, especially Westerners, to impose their wishes on it. Only patience and acceptance worked once a decision crossed into action; otherwise, all goals eluded realization and the sense of powerlessness spiraled one into madness. I went with the flow.

Nadya and I first stopped at the stadium on Krasnaya Ulitsa to follow up on my first interview with Andrey, the masseur. When Andrey saw me, his face dropped into a distinct expression of displeasure. Lawyers are used to that, and I never let the displeasure of others deter my aims. In this situation, it only confirmed my suspicions that he knew more about Poisoned Dragon than he cared to say. Andrey claimed he contacted some of the guys who knew Alina but none of them were willing to talk with me. He last saw Alina in Krasnodar, running around the track, in late April or early May, which fit with her absence from Flash Dancers during the same time and my sighting of her in Krasnodar in April. Assuming Andrey was truthful, she was at least in town when her and her lawyers embarked on their plan to obstruct my investigation.

Andrey continued that neither Alina nor Inessa contacted him after we talked in April, which was clearly false because his willingness to cooperate had turned to reluctance. Inessa's ranting to Natalya that Andrey and the other interviewees had called Inessa to proclaim their allegiance by not believing the diary was also clearly false. Andrey wasn't the type to go looking for trouble. More likely that after Inessa tricked the names of my informants out of Natalya, Inessa, Poisoned Dragon or others contacted Andrey and successfully intimidated him



into keeping his mouth shut. This looked like the beginning of a pattern where my wife, mother-in-law or hired hoods successfully tricked or threatened my witnesses into silence about not only Alina but also Inessa's defamation of me. I gave Andrey a copy of the Krasnaya Ulitsa newspaper article as I did everyone on that trip to convince them, if they needed any, that I told the truth.

We went outside and on the track found Yevgeny still dedicatedly timing his athletes. He greeted us with his warm, insincere smile and asked that we wait while he finished with his athletic protégés. Nadya and I sat down on the same bench, beneath the same tree as I did in April, but now the calendar read summertime. Russians believe the seasons change with the beginning of the month, so summer begins the first of June instead on the summer solstice, June 21, as it does in most countries that follow modern science.

More enjoyable than the warmth and humidity in Krasnodar was the peacefulness of a different time as I looked out on a green field of grass, not plastic, and a dirt track, not some synthetic polymer. New York City's noise, drive and psychic bustle no longer attracted me, maybe because my thirty years of involvement with that place had left me with a failed and useless life, although most the blame lay not in the City but in my stars. Krasnodar attracted me then, as did most places out of a past era or away from the centers of worldly hustling. If I could find something to do in that town, and the crooks in the stock market hadn't pushed me to the edge of bankruptcy, I'd consider living for a while in that southern region of the physically largest country in the world and one of the few nations with a negative population growth.

After timing one heat of sprinters, Yevgeny hurried over to talk. "About four or five days after I saw you in April, Inessa called me to say that she knew I met with you. I told her that she was wrong that I never met you. She kept talking anyway and asked whether you showed me

some papers. I assumed she meant the diary. I told her again I never met you. It's a very old trick for someone looking for information in Russia to pretend they know something when they do not in the hope that someone will be intimidated into telling everything."

I laughed, the old whore Inessa couldn't trick and dared not try to intimidate the old fox Yevgeny. "Did she say anything else about me?" I asked looking for evidence of defamation.

"She said you were a crazy person, not normal, and if I hear from you, I should contact her right away."

Yevgeny's account made more sense than what Inessa told Natalya. It was clear now that Inessa's confrontation with Natalya was nothing more than a fishing expedition to scare Natalya into giving up the names of the people I met. Mother and daughter were quite the tricksters. We gave Yevgeny a copy of the newspaper article, and he responded telling me to contact him if I needed help of any kind, which I still didn't believe.

Nadya and I then took a ride to the Aurora Theater at the end of Krasnaya Ulitsa looking for the Chechen manager who allegedly helped Poisoned Dragon and her mother move from Grozny. The same young hood answered the door. He told us to wait, closed the door and came back handing me the diary copy I had left in April for the manager as though diligently returning a borrowed book to a friend. Nadya asked about the manager, did he read the diary. Yes, but he was not in, no surprise, and the young man didn't know where he was or when he would be back.

We walked around the place and ate a late lunch in its restaurant looking, unsuccessfully, for the short, swarthy Chechen who gave my wife free amusement rides. We checked the place a couple of more times that week but no luck. In Russia, criminals live very well but usually for a short time because of the tough and literally deadly competition. Maybe the manager met his just rewards and presently comprised part of the cement foundation of some new building.

On a hunch, I asked Nadya to track down the home address for Andrey, the masseur, before we met the next morning and took a car back to the hotel.

On this trip, I came prepared for the boring evenings by bringing a few detective novels by Chandler and Hammett. Krasnodar didn't offer much to do at night except pick up some ho at a disco, which I could do without at present. Besides, maybe I'd learn some useful tricks from these authors for my own detective story, although in theirs someone always ended up dead. Well, mine still had a ways to run yet.

Detective and other stories of human tragedies never even partially convey the internal torment of the characters. It's just impossible for the reader or observer to comprehend the horror, hate and despair swirling within the people involved. For me the hell not only tore at my mind but also made my entire body feel under assault every second, every minute of the day. Even at night my dreams screamed hopelessness.

Tuesday, June 12, 2001, Nadya handed me Andrey's address.

"Well, well, well, so this is what Andrey was hiding."

"What?" Nadya asked.

"One of the addresses Alina gave me back in 1999 for mailing her letters is also the address of Andrey the masseur. So there relationship was a little closer than he let on, and it explains how he could recognize her handwriting."

We went to the Academy of Physical Culture to find the professor Vera: another one of the people Inessa claimed called her to declare disbelief in the diary. Natalya had never reached Vera after I gave the professor a copy of the dairy in April. The confrontation with the administrative goon squad on my last visit made me anxious to interview Vera and leave before the intruder alert alarms went off.

At the entrance, the guard booth was empty this time, probably cutbacks or an extended coffee break. We walked through the still bleak lobby to the Gymnastics Department where Nadya boldly started opening the doors of classes in session while asking me if I recognized Vera. The teachers and students all looked quizzically at us but without protest as an obviously American in a suit turned to a Russian girl with a “no” and the door closed. I kept expecting the goons to come racing around the corner at any minute. How could girls so adept at keeping secrets from their boyfriends act so brazenly? Well, I was in Russia, so I followed Nadya’s lead. We finally found Vera in the gym teaching a class. At least Nadya didn’t go storming in as I half expected demanding immediate answers to my questions. We waited for the bell. Nadya was blissfully naïve while I expected the heavies any second. When class ended, Vera told us to meet her in the lobby.

Vera showed within minutes and requested, “Let’s stand over there away from the students so that no one can over hear us.” We walked over to one of the many dark corners. “When you were here last time, some of the students overheard us talking and began gossiping.”

Great, I thought, just what I hoped. Without prodding, Vera launched into her story.

“About a week after we met, Inessa came to my office very agitated. We had never been on good terms. She threatened to have the police arrest me and take me to court for defaming her daughter by distributing around the Academy Alina’s diary. Inessa claimed the diary false because you forced her daughter to write it. She also accused me of taking money from you to hand the diary out.”

“I’m sorry for causing you such trouble,” I sincerely said. “I didn’t think my wife and Inessa would go to such lengths. But you should know that I’ll be taking Inessa to court soon for defaming me. Did she say anything about me?”

Vera hesitated, “She said some very negative things, but I don’t want to repeat them in front of you.”

I chose not to press Vera on this point and leave it up to my attorney, another woman, to get the specifics.

Vera continued, “Inessa then went around the Gymnastics Department telling everyone that you paid me lots of money to hand out the diary. But other teachers found out that Inessa was lying. The Vice Rector told them that you had handed the diary to various students yourself. The teachers then made Inessa apologize to me in front of the entire department. It caused a big scandal.”

Yes! That must have flipped mama Ho and baby Ho out. Now the entire academy knew about the slut. “Did you recognize any parts of the diary?”

“Yes, I recognized the part that described Inessa’s failure to obtain a Masters because she did not complete a required course. Also Alina’s descriptions of events at the academy are also accurate.”

“Did Inessa ask for the copy of the diary I gave you?”

“I gave it back to her telling her to keep such private filth out of the academy.”

“Do you know anything about Alina except from what you read in her diary?”

“I only knew her as a daughter of another teacher. I never had her in any of my classes. And I want you to know that I am willing to help you because Inessa and Alina are not decent people.”

Now this was a tough lady willing to go up against Inessa and her daughter knowing the influence that Poisoned Dragon’s money could buy and their probable connections from living in Chechnya. I admired her, thanked her for the offer of help and apologized again for the

difficulty I caused. Silently, I also thanked Inessa for reversing Vera's initial desire not to become involved.

Next, we stopped at the Vasilyeva House of Fashion looking for Anastasia. Nadya waited in the park because the purveyors of fashion didn't like witnesses to our conversations. This time, another even taller and more beautiful model than the one that greeted me in April languidly stood displaying her wares with a smile and said Anastasia and Dima were out of town until tomorrow.

After lunch, Nadya and I went to the Joy Disco looking for the manager Alexey whom Poisoned Dragon introduced me to before our marriage. She auditioned for him back then as a dancer, no stripping, for a troop of dancers my wife said he was taking to Italy. At the time, it made no sense for her to work in Italy with our marriage just around the corner and plans to live in New York. But now I realized she was laying the foundation for a cover story to hide her already planned prostitution trip to Italy with Alfredo. In my wife's diary, it appeared she played around with Alexey after our marriage, but the wording made the connection a little ambiguous. I hoped for more specifics from her tango partner because any new information wouldn't fall under the cohabitation defense for adultery. It was a long shot that Alexey would fess up, but worth a try anyway.

The disco didn't open for business until the evening, but someone was inside setting up the bar. He told us Alexey no longer managed the club; he was fired months ago and now ran another dance hall called City Club. We took a cab to a different part of town that let us off at a government building that housed the disco. Strange spot for a club but then again entrepreneurial corruption in Russia often created strange locations for moneymaking ventures. By occupying space in a building that housed a department of the local government, the disco's

owners, most likely city officials, didn't pay rent and received a cash flow ostensibly slated for the department but channeled into their very private pockets.

The disco was closed, but Nadya tracked down someone in one of the government offices who knew about the club's personnel. Once again, Alexey got bounced from his management job and left no forwarding address. Perhaps he was unemployed because his management skills needed improving, or, more accurately, his skimming skills, which virtually all Russian managers practiced.

It looked like a dead end on Alexey with the search eating up the entire afternoon—rats. Nadya and I bade each other a good evening with me heading back to the isolation of my dorm-like hotel room with a three-inch thick mattress from the 1950s and a detective story from the 1940s about a double-crossing, murderous female. Was this what my childhood dreams wanted for me when grown?

Wednesday, June 13, 2001, I walked into Vasilyeva's agency without Nadya. The same pretty young girl with the same enticing smile showed me into the small office where I met only Anastasia. I detected a distinct chill as soon as she saw me. Gone were the grins masking greedy schemes to separate an American from his money along with offers of tea or coffee and cakes.

According to Anastasia, the week after I left Krasnodar in April, Alina called her wanting to come over to the agency to talk with Anastasia about her meeting me the previous week. Now it was certain that Poisoned Dragon was in Krasnodar during the last half of April. Anastasia refused to meet her, but then Inessa telephoned ranting that I was a criminal and demanding to know what Anastasia and Dima told me. Anastasia said Dima then took the telephone but she wouldn't tell me what he told Inessa. Later, Alina sent a message on Anastasia's pager that she

knew Anastasia had sold me information and Alina would take them to court for defaming her. Anastasia claimed the incident scared her but angered Dima and said they could not help me anymore.

Dima and Anastasia couldn't actually believe that Alina would risk publicizing her prostituting ways by going to court. She was as much a criminal as they. Rather these two pimps probably feared U.S. Immigration receiving an anonymous tip about their business of sending girls overseas for prostitution—a sure fire killer to their efforts to immigrate to America. Nothing for me to do but thank Anastasia for her time and leave.

Walking over to the park to meet Nadya, I felt the absurdity of my case going down the drain because some young girl, my April translator Natalya, had allowed an old whore like Inessa to trick her into identifying my informants and potential witnesses. The chain of events began with Inessa learning about my visit to the Academy from that lying pig the Vice Rector Minchenko. He didn't want a scandal about an alumnus and daughter of an instructor working as a prostitute—what would the parents of other students think? Or, he didn't want to risk the exposure of a lucrative side business of recruiting Academy coeds for banya orgies and other aspects of the sex trade in Russia. Minchenko, as did Poisoned Dragon, her lawyers, and whore mother, stood to benefit by putting a stop to my investigation.

On hearing from Minchenko, Inessa naturally scurried back to report to her daughter, who was in town. Poisoned Dragon then calls her attorneys in New York City, and over the telephone, the trinity devises a plan of witness intimidation against the Russians and character assassination against me, but first they needed the names of whom I interviewed. For that, Inessa paid her surprise visit to Natalya.



Vice Rector Minchenko likely gave Inessa the office address for Natalya along with a few copies of the diary he expropriated from people at the Academy. At that point, Inessa still didn't know anyone I had talked with other than Minchenko; otherwise, she wouldn't have demanded from Natalya the names of everyone I had met. Inessa intentionally allowed Natalya to see the few diary copies in her bag in order to convince Natalya they were from people that had called Inessa to say they didn't believe such things about Alina. Thinking that my witnesses had turned against her and me, Natalya spilled her guts.

Armed with the list of my informants and potential witnesses, Inessa executed the planned intimidation and defamation. At the Academy, however, it spiraled out of Minchenko and Inessa's control because the grapevine, those cute teenage girls listening to my first conversation with Vera, spread the stories of Alina hoing throughout the Academy. Inessa countered, probably also seeing an opportunity to attack an old foe, by going public with the falsehood that Vera had distributed the copies in return for money from me. Inessa's lie backfired because instead quenching the scandal, as Vice Rector Minchenko wanted, it only fueled the controversy. So Minchenko forced Inessa to apologize to Vera in order to end the matter.

Poisoned Dragon and Inessa's accusations about my paying people for information struck me as ironic, since it likely came from the mercenary characters of those two and my wife's attorneys. They just couldn't conceive of anyone helping another person except for cold hard cash.

Nadya asked, "How'd it go with Anastasia?"

“Not very well,” I answered. “As I assume you’ve guessed, Alina and Inessa have been very busy discrediting me and intimidating people with threats of arrest, court suits and criminal hoodlums.”

“Everyone knows they lived in Chechnya and Russians fear Chechen bandits.”

“But they were Russians living in Chechnya. What would they have to do with Chechen bandits now?”

“You don’t know for certain they are Russian. The pictures of Alina look like some of the people from the Caucasus. Besides, some Russians will ally with anyone if it means money, and from what I’ve heard that’s the driving force of Alina and Inessa. As for people fearing the police and procurators, everyone knows that the money Alina makes can buy her what she wants from our police and courts.”

My efforts looked bleak, but there was no alternative than to keep trying to find potential witnesses. Maybe when I met Svetlana, the Krasnodar lawyer, she might have some ideas for stopping my wife and mother-in-law’s obstruction of justice.

Nadya asked, “So where do you go from here?”

I wanted to say oblivion but instead, “I’ve been trying to find this girl Natasha who lives in Alina’s building. When I stayed with my wife before our wedding, Alina visited her a number of times and said she lived upstairs, or at least that’s where she told me she went often for an hour or more. Alina said Natasha and her had similar souls. Once I asked to go along, Alina refused. My wife also wrote in her dairy about keeping ‘all her things’ with Natasha, so I figure the girl probably knows a lot about Alina.”

“Does Alina like girls?”

“I’ve thought about that. Maybe Natasha is the girl lover my voodoo priestess in America told me about.”

“You went to a voodoo doctor?”

“Fight fire with fire, I figured. Actually, the priestess turned out to be right. She told me not to bring Alina to America or she would consume my life and that’s what has happened.”

“I could have told you that. Girls like Alina use their filthy red lips to whisper lies, to kiss a man and make him suffer. They treat men like slaves; make them suffer body and soul.”

“Why didn’t you tell me this before I married her?” I jokingly asked.

“Apparently many people did, but you didn’t listen.”

“I know, and I’m not sure I regret it. My life was never this bad except for childhood. Even dodging the draft, hiding out in California while the female head of my draft board searched the country for me, trying to send me half way around the world to use my life to protect some rubber tree owned by Firestone in Vietnam wasn’t as bad as this. Somehow this latest horror seems fated. Despite all the warning signs, I went ahead. It makes no sense, unless the fates really exist.”

“I believe there are people who can see the future like this old lady who lives outside of town, but people make their own decisions.”

“You mean free will?”

“No, I don’t think anyone has free will, at least about important matters. People make decisions out of their own psychology. Look at Alina, her mother probably raised her to lie and cheat and sell herself to men. If what she told everyone is true about living in Chechnya, then the environment she grew up in also lacked civilized conduct, modern day morality. So when

Alina was faced with a decision to trick you or be honest with you, she chose deception because her psychology dictated it.”

“So in the end, it’s still fate only not the fate of the gods but of the parents and place someone ends up in by sheer coincidence.”

“Sure, you could say that.”

“I guess both Alina and I are doomed then.”

“Don’t be too discouraged. You never know what’s going to happen, especially in Russia.”

“You mean Alina might get run over by a truck?”

“Stop it!” Nadya scolded and changed the subject. “I remember reading that part of Alina’s diary about Natasha. Maybe that’s where she keeps her money.”

“Good point. I never thought about that. If we find her, we can advertise her apartment as the Krasnodar Fort Knox.”

“Be serious, what does she look like?”

“The voodoo doctor said she is young, tall, with dark hair. I thought we could stand outside Alina’s apartment building and ask people going in and out whether they know a girl named Natasha.”

“Lots of girls are named Natasha. In fact Natalya is a nick name for Natasha.”

“No she’s not the one,” I joked. “Well I can’t think of any other way to find her. It’s mid-afternoon, so I doubt we’ll run into Inessa who generally doesn’t come home until around five.”

We stood in the front of Alina’s building with Nadya asking a few residents whether they knew Natasha—no luck. Then a short middle-aged lady rounded one corner of the building

whom I told Nadya to ask. No sooner did I speak, than I realized it was Inessa—time for new glasses. Without any hesitation, she walked straight for us.

At close range, she looked like an old prostitute trying to compensate for her faded glory with heavy purple eye shadow and gaudy clothes. But what really stood out was her surprisingly deep tan for so early in the summer. Inessa didn't display any anger at first; she just tried to pump Nadya for information, such as her name and telephone number. I stepped in telling Nadya not to say anything. I knew Inessa's tactic all too well from Alina's technique of gathering ammunition by asking in a priestly, confessional tone for information that she planned to knife me in the back with later. When Nadya followed my directions not to answer Inessa's questions, Inessa got angry and threatened, "If you work for Roy, you will get into a big mess." She turned and quickly walked into her building. Nadya thought Inessa a big joke, but I decided to leave assuming my mother-in-law was probably calling her militia students with some concocted story about an American gangster casing her apartment building.

As we left, I asked Nadya, "Did you notice anything strange about Inessa?"

"Nothing except the purple eye make up."

"Her tan stood out as too dark for this time of year in Russia. Look at other people in the street; no one has a tan like that. It's as though she just returned from a resort."

"Maybe she went to the Black Sea. Many people from here do."

"Could be, but there's a more interesting point that might help you in assisting me. Since this war began, I noticed that by staying alert, which means taking notice of rather than dismissing observations, events, comments or anything that doesn't make sense or appears out of whack, I eventually learn something new. At such moments, the universe opens up to tell me

something, but I don't know what it is because my perspective needs to change or I need more information. So I file the incident away, knowing that at some point I will understand."

"I never experienced that. Where does it come from?"

"Perhaps the martial arts develops the ability. My instructor always told me to stay alert, and now I keep seeing these occurrences that jump out at me as incongruous and strange, so I purposely remember them and wait."

"So what do you think Inessa's deep tan means?"

"Don't know yet, but I will. What time do we meet Alexei, Alina's old boy friend tomorrow?"

"During his lunch hour at your hotel. So I get to sleep late, see you manyana."

My nightly dose of boredom, detective stories and a sleeping pill brought Thursday, June 14, 2001. Nadya and Alexei appeared in the lobby at the same time with Alexei wearing what I believed a sincere smile. Russians are so adept at acting that even the ones I thought I understood, I often didn't.

After a few pleasantries, I started my questions, "Has Alina or Inessa been in touch with you since we last talked in April?"

"Inessa called me just after you left last time to ask whether a man had contacted me about Alina. Inessa said an old admirer of Alina had sent a message on her daughter's pager expressing his strong feelings that he wanted her back again. Inessa said he was a criminal and crazy, and I should never talk to that man. I told her it was my own business whom I talked with."

Alexei clearly knew about Alina and Inessa's addiction to lies and intimidation for manipulating people but was no longer swayed by them. Alina surely told Inessa exactly what to tell Alexei, and probably listened in on the conversation. "Did Inessa mention my name?"

"No, and she didn't mention the man was Alina's husband, just an admirer. Whenever Inessa calls, and I also noticed this for about a year now, she always uses Alina's mobile. I checked it on my phone that keeps a list of all my calls. Before, they always used their home phone because it was cheaper."

"Obviously they expect a tap on their home phone," I innocently replied.

"That's not all," Alexei laughed. "Inessa saw enemies around her all the time. She always suspected someone, and people generally did not like her. It caused many unnecessary fights. In the village she thought that one neighbor, a grandmother, put a curse on her and Alina."

"I remember passing that lady walking with a cane near Alina's house in the village. Alina denounced this frail old woman for defaming her and Inessa by calling them prostitutes. I should have realized the truth in her statement. Sorry, please continue Alexei."

"Inessa complained that another neighbor allowed the leaves of his tree to fall on her house. She also accused that neighbor of stealing from her house and went to the police to get them to give the neighbor a lie detector test. The police laughed at her. She then got some of her bigger students who were connected with the military and militia to threaten the neighbor. Alina and Inessa also believed a neighbor had poisoned their dog, but the dog was only sick."

"Looks like paranoia runs in the family. Do you know whether Alina or Inessa talked with anyone else about my trip in April?"

“Dima told me that the two of them had threatened him and Anastasia with court action. Dima was very angry. He doesn’t want anything threatening their move to America or their business.”

“What about the girls mentioned in Alina’s diary? I’d like to find them while still in Krasnodar or have Nadya track them down after I leave. Maybe I should have arranged for a lengthier stay, but too long in the enemy’s home territory didn’t seem wise.”

Alexie laughed. “Lena was one of Alina’s clairvoyants.”

“Was she the one whom Alina made you wait in the street while she visited?”

“No, Lena was a different one whom she hung around with a lot.”

“Do you know how I can reach Lena?”

“I will try to find a number for her. Alina also subscribed to a paper that advertised witches, healers and clairvoyants called “Krasnodar Healing.” She was always using such people. She quickly became dissatisfied with one and switched to another. As I told you last time, a couple of years ago, I went with her to an herbalist or clairvoyant woman on Krasnoarmeiskaya Ulitsa. Alina told me to wait outside. I asked why and she said, ‘I can’t tell you now. I will later. You have got to trust me.’ She often used that excuse. I can find the building number for you, but Alina never told me the clairvoyant’s name. I assumed it was just one of many she used.”

“If you can come up with the building number, please do. Maybe I can figure out a way to find this witch. It would be very helpful in proving Alina secretly fed me narcotics after I told her one evening that I was thinking about canceling the wedding because she wasn’t telling me the truth about her past. Putting the narcotics or herbs from this witch into my food made me forget my doubts and feel stupidly euphoric about our upcoming wedding. A statement from the



witch as to what she sold and when to Alina will make a jury take notice, and might overcome the American bias in favor of females.”

“Do you know a Natasha who lives in Alina’s apartment building?” I added.

“We visited her once. She used to work as a model in Anastasia’s agency. I remember she lived on one of the top floors, maybe seven or eight. She is tall, young with black hair.”

Damn, my voodoo priestess was right. How did she do that? Now jungle drums, headless chickens and sweaty buxom black babes with grass anklets cavorting around bond fires invaded the depths of my mind.

“I know this is a little offensive, but do you think Alina and Natasha were lovers?”

“Towards the end of our relationship, I suspected that Alina played around with girls because once in a while she’d say how much she liked the touch of girls because it was more caressing than men. But maybe she was just trying to make me jealous. I don’t know for sure.”

“Do you know Natasha’s apartment number or telephone?”

“No, I only was there once. I’m sure Anastasia knows it.”

“Anastasia is no longer cooperating, would you see whether you might have Natasha’s number?”

“Sure.”

“Ever here of Larissa who worked in Cyprus with Alina? She brought some money from Cyprus for Alina’s mother.”

“I remember. She tried to give me some money from Alina, but I refused and told her to give it to Inessa. I believe she is a girl friend of Marios one of the managers of the club where Alina worked in Cyprus. I actually met Marios once when he came to Krasnodar. Alina asked

me to pick him up at the airport, which I did and took him to the Intourist Hotel. I will try to find her number.”

“Is there anything else about Alina that you can tell me?”

“There was one funny thing. When I started dating Alina in 1996, she said she was a virgin, but six months later when we first had sex, it was clear she was no virgin. I told her so, she got annoyed and then blamed me for causing her to lose her virginity earlier in our relationship through her clothes because up until the time we had sex, she always kept her panties on. She also insisted she previously dated only two men and nothing happened. They were just good friends.”

“That’s Alina all right. Why tell a small lie when you can tell a big one.” So Alina’s claim to me in Moscow and again in New York that her first love was Alexei amounted to just another scam to make me believe her a good girl—not exactly a surprise.

“It’s not in her diary, but I learned she first started meeting Volodya for sex in 1997, about a year after we started dating.”

“That’s how she operates—cheat on everybody. Do you know who runs the Aurora Theater?” I asked.

“I don’t know any of their names, but I believe they are Arabs.”

“I thought Chechens.”

“No, I’m sure they are Arabs.”

“Did she tell you anything about her life in Grozny?”

“Only about men grabbing her on the bus, but nothing else.”

“Yeah, I heard that story too, but don’t believe it. Too bad Grozny is nothing but rubble now and ruled by warlords, or I’d go there to see what I could find out about her. What did she say about her father?”

“That he was a military man, beat her, drank a lot and her mother divorced him.”

“She told me he was the Chief of the M.V.D.”

Alexei laughed, “I doubt anyone with such power would marry someone like Inessa, although he might use her for a mistress.”

“Do you know Alexey who used to manage the Joy Disco and his last name?”

“Don’t know his last name, but he now runs the City Club Disco.”

“We tried there, but he’s moved on.”

“I don’t know where to find him then.”

“What about Dmitri, a photographer who took nude pictures of Alina?”

“That’s Dmitri Morosov. He’s a very famous photographer in Krasnodar who takes all the models’ pictures.”

“How can I find him?”

“Just ask any model agency; they all know him.”

“If you think about anything else that might help me in my case, please call Nadya. I very much appreciate your helping me. I know it must be difficult for you as it is for me.”

“I wish you luck, and I will look for those phone numbers.”

We said our farewells. Nadya and I went looking for a model agency that knew Dmitri Morosov. A few blocks from the hotel we walked into this agency where a stunning, tall blonde greeted us. I almost made a move on her, Nadya encouraged me to, but something told me to

abstain. The model willingly gave us Morosov's number and address. Nadya called him from a public phone across the street.

After a short conversation, Nadya hung up. "Whew! Was he nasty! Morosov says he's heard all the lies that you are spreading about Alina, and he doesn't believe any of them. He refuses to talk with you. A very unpleasant man."

"Interesting, that means Alina and Inessa are not only contacting the people they learned about from Natalya but are also going around to people they think I might find. It's an interesting strategy that risks spreading some of the truth about Alina, but for them, protecting Alina's future cash flow must be worth it. And it does give them the advantage of first impression. Too bad they didn't do this in America, the court would hold them both in contempt. That is, a court from thirty years ago before the Feminazis took control in America. Back then a judge would slam Alina with hefty finds for this type of conduct. Apparently, obstruction of justice now pays in America just like Russia, even our former President, Clinton, got away with it. What a fool I am to rely on the law. I knew I never should have bothered with law school. Perhaps Alina is right, money and only money matters. What a world!"

"Maybe Svetlana can help. We meet her tomorrow at the courthouse."

"Okay, what time do I meet you at the hotel?"

"Eight thirty."

Friday, June 15, 2001, Nadya and I stood outside the courthouse in the sunny humid weather waiting for my Krasnodar attorney. The scene reminded me of a small town in the south—south Russia. A flashy red car pulled into a parking spot. With fashion model poise, out stepped the driver sporting hot blonde hair and a lustful figure. She walked toward us with the

ease of a girl assured of her good looks. Now in her thirties, Svetlana must have broken many hearts in her time; wish I had known her ten years ago. Nadya did the introductions.

We went into the courthouse and sat down at a table in a hallway near a window with the sun blinding my eyes and warming me like an oven, as though any heat other than that radiated by Svetlana was needed. Apparently lawyers all over the world use one or another tactic to gain some advantage over not only their opponents but also their clients. If it's not low sinking chairs, it's sunlight straight into the eyes. This time I preferred the low sinking chair so as to improve my view of Svetlana's short skirt.

With Nadya translating, I explained Alina, her attorneys and Inessa's efforts to keep witnesses for the annulment/divorce case from helping me. Svetlana told me the same thing Xenia did that Russian courts couldn't prevent such interference because in involved speech.

The laws in Russian rewarded the most despicable. No surprise there. In America, with the Feminazis in power, it was the same.

Svetlana said, "You only recourse against Inessa is for defamation."

"That's not much of a recourse," I responded. "A protracted civil suit that might, assuming Alina and Inessa don't fix the judge with money, sex or both, give me a judgment in rubles that is for all purposes uncollectible because who knew where they kept their assets in Russia. Of course, I could garnish Inessa's paltry salary from the Academy. Big deal, that's a couple of lap dances for Alina."

"No, no, you don't understand," Svetlana emphatically replied. "Defamation in Russia is an indictable crime—a felony!" That stopped my inward cursing of the Russian legal system—put both those whores in jail my mind yelled.

"You can do that?"

“All we need do is interest a prosecutor in bringing an indictment, and I can handle that.”

Looking at Svetlana, I was sure she could.

“Great, let’s do it.”

Svetlana also agreed to contact the lying Vice Rector Minchenko at the Academy who promised me samples from Alina’s file so that I could authenticate her diary. But before doing anything, she needed my signature notarized on a document that granted her the power to represent me. Since it was Friday, I needed to get the document notarized that day because my flight back to Moscow left Sunday evening. Sounded simple enough, pop down to the local notary for the form and sign it. Boy was I wrong.

After leaving Svetlana, Nadya and I spent the rest of the day caught in a Russian bureaucratic nightmare. Finding the form took us to the other side of town, but since it was in Russian and I was American, we needed a translation, not just any translation, but a translation by a certified translator of which Nadya was not one and only a few existed in Krasnodar. Nadya told the notary I spoke Russian, but that didn’t matter because I was still an American. So we hustle off to the office of one certified translator, but she was out of town, then another office but they didn’t work during the Soviet lunch hour normally from Noon to 3 PM but on Friday until 5 PM, which meant they were gone for the weekend. Finally, we found the number and telephoned a certified translator back on the side of town from where we started. We hopped a cab to his house, but Nadya had the wrong building number, so in true Russian fashion she starts walking around assuming the guy will appear out of nowhere, time’s ticking away and just before I explode, the translator pops up, saying he thought we might be lost.

He’s a strange but personable guy who spends most his time translating arcane scientific papers. Perhaps he also delved into supernatural papers, since he did appear out of nowhere. He

translated the document, and we all hoofed it over to a notary before their witching hour of 4 PM when all the notaries in Krasnodar close. Russian rules require the translator to sign before a notary a statement saying his translation is accurate. At last, I sign, the translator signs and the notary signs twice. Nadya and I drop the document at Svetlana's office along with a list of witnesses to Inessa's defamation and what we knew she said to them about me.

At five in the afternoon at the end of a hot, exhausting day, we meet Katya, the friend with whom Alina partied around Krasnodar. Back in April, Katya was too busy to read the diary before I left town. But in the intervening months, she had, and we all sat down on a park bench. I gave Katya a flyer for the web site and the Krasnaya Ulitsa newspaper articles.

To my surprise, she insisted she was not the Katya that Alina wrote about whoring around with. I didn't believe that for a minute. When I met Katya and her husband in April, I knew she needed some kind of story to explain away Alina's chronicle of their tawdry partying; otherwise, her husband would exact some Russian justice in punching her out. The kind of justice America once had. I expected her to use the same line on me, but didn't expect such an ingenious, yet simple fiction: she wasn't the same Katya. These Russian models knew how to deceive, but in their fabrications they always missed an important point that showed them up for liars.

In Katya's case, she said the last time she saw Alina was July 6, 2000, when my wife visited her house with Valodya and Vanya, the boys from St. Petersburg, but she added in a third girl from the village where my wife used to live. Katya said that what Alina wrote in her diary about the visit was accurate but the other girl was also named Katya—the bad Katya. What a nice coincidence of names and artful lie. The episode from Alina's diary stated:

“We met once more those boys on Monday. We persuaded them to stay and go the next day. We ate salad, drank some wine and for the first time in my life I was drunk and kind. In the

evening we went to Katya's. We bought shrimps and wine. We kissed with Valodya, and I myself began it. That moment all my hatred to men came to the surface – I was like a tiger. In the morning I went home and Volodya and Vanya went to see me off. I stopped a car and the driver tried to accost to me. I let him touch a little my knees but saved some money. It was 5:30 in the morning.”

It made no sense that Katya would allow four lovers to stay in her house until the next morning while she had no one but herself to play with, and she failed to realize that Alina's use of the pronoun “we” only meant Alina, not Alina and another girl. Katya naturally saw “we” as her way out by saying two girls visited her house with the two guys from St. Petersburg when in actuality only Alina accompanied them to her house because Katya was Vanya's girl. Despite her skill at dissembling, I didn't understand why she even bothered to confirm this part of the diary in the first place. She simply could have claimed that all the events concerning Katya were about some other whoring Katya. Maybe she feared I had independent confirmation about the visit to her house. Who knows? Ignoring her cover-up, I asked some questions.

“What did Alina and Valodya do until 5:30 in the morning?”

“They used my kitchen table for sex. I was upset about that; it's not the proper place.”

For some strange reason, I wanted to laugh.

Katya continued, “Alina and I hung around together before she went to Cyprus and during that time she was loyal to Alexei.”

Most unlikely I thought, but I didn't have Alina's diary from before Cyprus, so Katya could easily lie about events back then without any contradiction from me.

“When Alina and I worked at the Vasilyeva House of Fashion, I'm sure Alina didn't do any prostitution in Krasnodar.”

“How do you know?” I asked.



“We were very close and I would have heard something. Alina was very ambitious and offended easily.”

Katya thought the Volodya from Krasnodar with whom my wife committed adultery right after our marriage, in an apartment where a woman previously hung herself, might be a sculptor in his mid-thirties who had a wife. That made sense because on my first visit to Krasnodar, Poisoned Dragon pointed out some sculptures in a store window boasting that she modeled for various parts. Katya agreed to look for a telephone number for the sculptor.

“Do you know a Lena who gave Alina advice or acted as a clairvoyant for her?”

“The only Lena I know that Alina went around with is a nurse with a strange character who lives by men. She’s around 32 and has a baby. I will try to find her telephone number also.”

“Do you know of any other clairvoyants Alina used?”

“I know she used them but don’t know who they were.”

“Did Alina have any other friends?”

“Alina didn’t have friends, just people she partied with or used.”

“That’s consistent.”

“There is one girl who knows Alina well, Yulya. They both lived in the village where Alina and her mother owned a small house. Alina’s mother knew Yulya’s parents and Alina and Yulya spent a lot of time together. Yulya and her parents often joked about how Alina earned money. They knew she was lying about earning money as a translator in Moscow. Yulya also worked at Anastasia’s. I can give you Yulya’s number but don’t mention that I gave it to you.”

“No problem. The last time we talked, you told me about a girl who went to Cyprus with Alina but returned after two days because the work involved prostitution. Do you have a telephone number for her?”

“I’ll have to look for Nadya’s number. Have your translator call me tomorrow. The boy who dated Nadya at the time told me that Alina was working as a prostitute in Cyprus and we both laughed. Nadya also had a friend named Inessa who was also a model at Vasilyeva’s; she may have some information for you. I will look for her number also.”

“Do you know a girl named Natasha who lives in Alina’s apartment building, tall, dark hair?”

“No, I don’t.”

“Is there anything else you can tell me about Alina?”

“Not that I can think of right now, but if I remember something, I’ll call your translator.”

“Thanks for your help. I’ll probably return to Krasnodar in a couple of months to follow up with some more interviews.”

Nadya and I walked over to Krasnaya Ulitsa on what was now a summer evening in a dead end town, in a dead end country with me carrying the remnants of a dead end life. After decades, I had reached the point of feeling in my bones that every second, every minute, every day of my life was a waste that I couldn’t change. But that wasn’t going to keep me from finishing with Poisoned Dragon.

Nadya said, “I’m going to the Black Sea for the weekend, so Natalya would try to arrange a meeting with Yulya, if she can locate her.”

“Find. I’ll wait for her call. Going with your boyfriend?”

“Yes, he wants to spend as much time with me as he can before I go to South America in September to visit my father for a couple of months.”

“That’s nice.” I knew I’d never feel that way about a girl again.

“He’s worried I won’t come back, but I will. I could leave Krasnodar, but I don’t want to without him.” I also knew a girl would never feel that way about me.

“What does he do?”

“He’s a driver for Krasnodar’s member in the Duma. He’ll take you to the airport Sunday evening with me.”

“Sounds like he has some good connections.” I made a mental note, recalling that former President Yeltsin’s driver ended up as his chief aide with lots of power and money. In Russia what mattered most was who you knew and money. We said good night, and I retired to my detective novels and hopelessness.

Saturday, June 16, 2001, Natalya, with me in tow, tracked down Yulya to Krasnodar’s preeminent theater, renamed after Anastasia’s mother, still alive from when I last saw her, and the founder of the Vasilyeva House of Fashion. The ancient playhouse was packed with people wearing the brain-dead, enthralled look of zealots. Our usher pointed out Yulya standing center stage, tall, imposing with long black hair in a black leather suit revving-up the crowd of believers. Yulya acted as master of ceremonies for what looked like an old-time religious revival meeting. Natalya started laughing and it took a few minutes for her to finally tell me that it wasn’t religious fervor on the audience faces but greed. Yulya directed a motivational meeting for making money. What else would stir Russians the way religion stirs the rest of the world? Maybe my wife would show to teach a few easy bunko lessons.

After about ten minutes of manipulating the crowd, Yulya introduced the main attraction, the inspirational, female founder of the “VIP Group.” Yulya exited into the wings at which point Natalya sprang up motioning me to follow her. Natalya had no intention of sitting through anymore of this trash, waiting for the end. She led me through phantom of the opera stairwells and hallways looking for the backstage while the harangue of the group’s leader reverberated through the theater. I was sure the organizers would bounce us into the street when we trespassed into their sanctum backstage, but no one even questioned our presence.

We walked up to Yulya standing just out of sight of the audience behind the curtains while the founder proselytized the suckers out front. Yulya turned with the ever-present smile that masked the steely ambitions of all beauties as she looked down on me from a height of at least six feet four inches in her low pump shoes. She was even taller than Poisoned Dragon and carried nice size breasts, unlike the lemons of my wife. After Natalya made a few introductory remarks, Yulya, to my surprise, suggested we sit down in the back by some scenery to talk more privately. She still needed to stay in sight of the stage for her cues to make the next introduction and keep the audience excited. This was one cool, calm and collected babe willing to conduct an interview while in the middle of a performance.

As Yulya led the way, I checked out her body more closely, perfectly shaped ass, not fat and apparently nice legs, although somewhat hard to tell through the tight leather pants. Why didn’t I meet her instead of Poisoned Dragon? Probably because it didn’t matter, since I would have ended up in the same hell anyway. Beyond the outer layer of a Russian beauty, only fire and brimstone existed. We found a few chairs and sat down. Yulya sat like a man with her legs spread wider than any man capable of and her body leaning forward with her left elbow resting on one thigh and her right hand capping her right knee. Was this intentional? Whatever, all I

could think about during the entire conversation was burying my face in the angle between her thighs. I gave her a copy of the diary, a flyer for the web site and the Krasnaya Ulitsa newspaper article. Natalya recounted my tale to Yulya, who looked at me periodically with understanding in her eyes, or was it the predator's stare. I tried to act the gentlemanly by keeping my eyes off her crotch, but it was hopeless. Every time she glanced at me, I was looking between her legs. It probably made her feel powerful, which she was. When Natalya finished explaining the situation, Yulya launched into a monologue about Alina, her fellow model and acquaintance.

“Alina always thought about money and how to get it. She was a pit bull in her pursuit of dollars. She used all her connections and a lot of men to get money. She always had a lot of men. I remember when she didn't have money to start a career as a model; she used men to get it. Because her boyfriend Alexei didn't have money, she started to hate him. They had a good relationship but no money, so Alina left him. Alina tried to hide what she did in Cyprus from Alexei, but he knew—we all knew. Alina told Alexei it was his fault that they broke up and even threatened Alexei with harm if he told people about her real activities and character. She has two faces. She keeps her secret life to herself and confides in no one. Alina went to Moscow a lot after graduating from the Academy in 1996. Alina said she worked as a translator for a wealthy English man there. Her mother Inessa told Alexei that Alina was a high specialist in English, and Alina told everyone that she made the money for her new apartment translating in Moscow and from the sale of her mother's tiny house in the village. But people knew how she really made money.”

Yulya left momentarily for her audience, and my focus switched from living between her legs to follow-up questions.

When she returned, sitting in the same position again, I summoned the remainder of my will to focus on the questions, “What about prostitution?”

“I don’t think she worked as a prostitute from 1995 to 1998 when we were both close and working as models at Vasilyeva.”

Hmmm, I reflected, pretty much what Katya and Anastasia said. The people connected with the Vasilyeva House of Fashion contradicted the masseur who thought Poisoned Dragon started working as a prostitute in Krasnodar when she joined Vasilyeva’s models. Maybe in Krasnodar Alina didn’t engage in prostitution, although I doubted it, but in Moscow, working for Leo, she definitely sold her body.

Yulya continued, “But my boyfriend called her a prostitute back then. He didn’t like her. She was always criticizing him.”

“Would he talk to me?” I wanted to learn why he thought Alina a prostitute during those years. It could help for an annulment.

“I’ll ask him, but I doubt it.”

“Who else knew her?”

“Lena, a very poor nurse and Olga. All three of them went around together. I will try to find their numbers for you. And there was a girl who Alina went to Cyprus with named Nadya who recently had a child, but her first husband divorced her. She came back because the work involved prostitution.”

“The Good Nadya,” I remarked. “If you can find a telephone number for her or her husband it would help?” Yulya nodded in consent.

“Did you know the clairvoyant that Alina used?”

“I knew she used one but don’t remember her name. I will try to recall.”

“Did you know a model at Vasilyeva’s named Natasha, tall, dark hair who lives in Alina’s apartment building?”

“No”

“What about a young guy named Alexey who managed Joy and then the City Club and do you know his last name?”

“Alexey Smolin, he now runs the Troika Restaurant on Mir Street.”

Yulya’s day job called her away again to the apostles of greed finale with a live band and singing. “Money” by the Kingsmen would have been an appropriate closer.

She returned with the smile of a used car salesman, who had just sold a clunker, to resume our talk and the same open-legged position.

“When was the last time you saw Alina?”

“June 2000, Alina visited me along with a younger girl from the village. The girl was not a model and Alina wanted to sell her overseas.”

“Probably a recruit for her pimp in Moscow to send to Mexico,” I said. “Was her name Katya?”

“No. Her name was the same as mine, Yulya.”

This was probably my wife’s friend from Chechnya whom she claimed to have visited as a cover for her prostitution with Alfredo in Italy.

“Do you know a Katya?”

“Yes, she modeled for the Vasilyeva house and looked a lot like Alina. The two were always going out together.”

“Anyone else that she hung around with?”

Yulya continued, “Two years ago in Sochi, she was with some Chechen gangsters.”

My eyes left Yulya's crotch at this news. "How do you know they were Chechen gangsters?"

"It's easy to recognize a Chechen. They are darker with different shaped faces and talk with an accent. Besides the bandits in this part of Russia are famous like your American pop stars. They have money, fast cars and political connections. They live outside the law and everybody except their own kind avoids them. I had seen those guys before and everyone knows they are Chechen criminals."

"I guess it makes sense, Alina grew up in Chechnya and is a criminal."

"I think you should be careful. This is not America," Yulya warned.

I replied with the expected words that I would be careful, but I didn't really care at this point in the descent of my life.

Yulya promised to read the diary and contact my translator afterward with what she recognized and any of the telephone numbers she found. I told her I'd probably return in a couple of months to continue my investigation since any trial most likely wouldn't occur until late in the year. She said she'd be pleased to meet with me again, and my foolish heart skipped a beat.

Natalya and I left the imminent millionaires still milling around the theater to visit the Troika Restaurant. Given Alexey Smolin's recent employment history, we expected to find the premises under new management. To our surprise, he still managed the restaurant, although wasn't in when we arrived. The assistant manager obligingly called Smolin who said he'd come right over to meet us. He probably thought me a potential mark for investing in some con or another. We waited over a complementary glass of juice. Saturday dinnertime and the upscale, moderately sized place contained only two customers sipping juice—us.



Smolin eventually bustled in brimming with business airs and New Russian self-importance and carrying a black leather memo and telephone number organizer straight out of the pre Palm Pilot era. He apologized for keeping us waiting and asked what he could do for us. Natalya did her routine, and I handed him a copy of Alina's diary along with the Internet flyer and the newspaper article. He only cursorily looked at them with arrogant Russian boredom. But when Natalya mentioned that Alina was making \$15,000 a month in New York as a lap dancer and prostitute, Alexey suddenly responded in English, "I'm shock, I'm shock. How is that possible? She was fat, a fat girl! Here," as he pointed to the flyer, "look at that fat ass. How can she make so much money? What is wrong with you Americans?"

"A lot, especially with me. I brought her to New York. But believe me she makes that much and probably even more."

"But why do you Americans pay for such a fat girl?"

"Compared to American Feminists, she looks good."

"Ah," Alexey said, "now I understand." Apparently the whole world knew about the Feminazis hijacking the land of liberty to turn it into a prison of unisex.

We talked a while. Smolin in his late twenties was born in East Germany but came to Krasnodar as a teenager when the Soviet Union collapsed. He possessed a similar charm as Alina's trainer but more untrustworthy—a rouge but a likable one. The restaurant he managed clearly laundered money for the owner, a former high-ranking official of Krasnodar. An easy managerial position, one he shouldn't blow like his previous disco stints since the purpose of such a restaurant was not to make money but conceal the source of the owner's cash flows from criminal enterprises. It also, I assumed, delivered Smolin from the temptation to skim because the establishment's cash flows were purely fictional.

“What do you know about Alina?”

“She was a loose girl with lots of boys and worked around as a stripper.” So that’s how the beauty salon manager from my previous trip was able to recognize her lingerie picture.

“If I wanted her, I could have had her. Last summer she offered herself to me, but she was fat. Why bother with her when there are so many prettier girls in Krasnodar.”

No argument with that assessment.

Alexey continued, “Yulya’s boyfriend hated Alina. Something happened between those two but I don’t know what.”

Then he focused on the flyer and said somewhat upset, “Her diary is on the Internet where anyone can read it!”

“Not yet, but as soon as I get back to New York, it will be.”

“That’s going to cause a lot of trouble here. None of the people I assumed she talked about in here will like that. Alina played with a lot of people and this will cause a scandal.”

Good, I said to myself, you low-life hoods deserve it. “Why do you think it will cause trouble?” I gratuitously asked.

“Listen, my friend. Alina ran in the circle of people who run this town. I think you know whom I mean. That’s all I will say about it.”

I got the message. Alina apparently whored herself, as I expected, to the criminals and corrupt politicians who controlled Krasnodar. Maybe that was why some of my wife’s other acquaintances didn’t or pretended they didn’t know about her prostitution in Krasnodar.

I thanked Smolin for the information and said one of my translators or I would contact him again to see whether he recognized any of the events in Alina’s diary.

We left the darkness of the Troika Restaurant for the remaining daylight of a warm summer's eve in the land instigated by Marx and Engels where now only the almighty dollar ruled. My investigation was at an end for this trip, but not the troubles it had stirred. It turned up more information and leads to potential witnesses that Nadya could follow up on, but my wife's attorneys, her and her mother's interference might make it all for nothing. Without sworn documents, my information was useless in court, and no Russian wanted to risk troubles with a couple of ruthless whores who had both the money and criminal connections to push around most people in town. Perhaps the criminal defamation case would subdue Poisoned Dragon and Inessa's threats, but that still left the reality that most people who dealt with a prostitute don't want their names involved out of embarrassment or the fear it might expose some of their own extra-legal activities.

Back in my hotel room, I received a call from Alexei, Alina's old boyfriend. He said Inessa just telephoned him saying I was in Krasnodar looking for dirt on Alina. Inessa wanted the telephone number of Alexei's brother whose friend worked for the F.S.B. Alexei refused to give her the number but thought I should know. We laughed at her childishness; I thanked him and said good night. Inessa apparently called Alexei hoping he would call me, which to her delusional way of thinking would cause me to panic, drop everything and run because the F.S.B. was on my trail. That might work with Russians who over centuries of inbred fear of the secret police quake at the mere mention of them, but not an America whose key contacts worked for the G.R.U. No, I slept well that night.

In the morning, my translator in Moscow, Sasha, called. She said that my driver received a call from Inessa, who did not identify herself, but my driver recognized her voice having met her before. Inessa told him not to pick me up at the Moscow airport later that night because

“Roy doesn’t want to deal with you anymore.” My driver knew better and hung up the phone on her, but called Sasha to find out whether I had any problems in Krasnodar other than a lunatic mother-in-law. Sasha laughed at the stupidity of Inessa, but I knew the real infantile mind behind the harassment was Poisoned Dragon because only she knew my driver’s telephone number. My wife was most likely not in town but gave directions to Inessa from New York City. Inessa easily found out my departure date by contacting the hotel at which I always stayed. The hotel probably also told her the time I planned to leave since Russian hotels require guests to pay in advance up to the hour they intend to depart. No mandatory twelve-noon checkout time there. My checkout time also told Inessa on which of the two flights to Moscow I held a reservation.

Sunday evening, June 17, 2001, under cloudy skies, Nadya and her boyfriend drove me to the airport. In the car, I briefed her on the people she needed to contact for the telephone numbers of other potential witnesses and left her some flyers for anyone else from whom Inessa confiscated the diary and for any new witnesses Nadya tracked down. As for Smolin, I’d telephone him from New York for his remarks on the diary, since he spoke English. Nadya had already followed up with a few of my interviewees: Alexei, Alina’s old boyfriend, could not find a number for Larissa, the girlfriend of the Zygos Club manager Marios. Katya said the sculptor Volodya, with whom Alina likely committed adultery, didn’t have a phone and Katya didn’t know his address, but she did provide the Good Nadya’s number—the girl who left Cyprus after just two days. Yulya said her old boyfriend didn’t know any specifics about Alina’s prostitution, so he saw no reason to talk with me, but Yulya did produce the numbers for Lena, the poor nurse who lived by men, and Olga with whom Alina and Lena hung out with. Yulya,

however, couldn't recall the name of Alina's clairvoyant. Okay, we still had some new people for Nadya to contact on my behalf.

"Keep after Katya for the number of the model Inessa," I added, very impressed with Nadya's efforts so far.

At the airport, Nadya and I headed inside to check on any delays. Walking through the entrance we breezed passed a militia guard talking with some woman. Nadya motioned for me to turn around, and there with the guard I saw Inessa in her purple eye make-up wearing the smile of a retard. The militiaman looked amused with the lunacy that Inessa poured in his ear. I had completely missed her on the way in and ignored her now as I kept going to find out the departure time. The flight would leave on time, so we exited through the same door to wait outside. Inessa, still playing the loon, said a "picture has been taken." I now knew where Poisoned Dragon got her infantile behavior. Then Inessa followed us towards the car and stood nearby talking into her mobile telephone—like a kid pretending with a milk carton walkie-talkie. Nadya and her boyfriend couldn't understand why Inessa was acting so weird. She was trying to intimidate us, but they couldn't understand how—neither could I. After a short wait, I boarded my plane, flopped down in my seat to choke on the cloud of dust that arose from the impact, and felt every much like a regular.

In Moscow, my driver picked me up, and we laughed about Inessa on the way to Sasha and Anya's apartment. As I walked in at midnight, Sasha greeted me with dinner. I mused, why couldn't I have this girl to come home to every night? Because of your age stupid as I wrenched myself from such revelry: plain and simple, her life laid before her, mine behind me—in ruins.

The next morning, I called Valodya in St. Petersburg, the guy my wife played around with at Katya's house, just to see whether I might glean anything useful. He claimed not to have

talked with Alina recently. Fat chance! But his business had taken him to Krasnodar from May 10<sup>th</sup> to the 14<sup>th</sup>; around the time Alina and Inessa were threatening people to keep their mouths shut. He said Alina had already left for America when he arrived in Krasnodar, but her mother gave him one of her modeling photo cards and her telephone number in New York. Inessa asked Valodya to write his opinion that the events in the diary concerning him were false. He refused, or so he said. To me, he confirmed that the events written about in the diary with respect to him were true, but wasn't willing to provide a sworn statement. Valodya added that he believed Inessa not normal, a crazy person with whom he did not like talking. He emphasized not wanting to get between Alina and me to which I replied he already did by going out with her shortly after our marriage. After the call, I wondered how Inessa knew that Valodya was in Krasnodar. Alina must have told her, which meant Valodya lied about not having any recent communication with my wife.

So far, Poisoned Dragon and her attorneys' efforts to prevent me from authenticating the dairy and obtaining useable information for court began looking successful. No one wanted to provide sworn testimony of the truth.

My flight back to New York left Tuesday morning, so I stopped at Leo's Monday evening with a few follow-up questions. Sitting virtually on the floor again in front of his desk, he asked whether I minded him giving Alina's diary to an author to create a fictionalize book about a Russian whore from which Leo hoped to make some money. In order to keep Leo on my side in this war, I said, go ahead.

Leo then replied with something that floored me, if that was possible given my already close proximity to it. My wife had made a masturbation video for a California medical doctor, Marc L. Paulsen, who regularly visited Moscow.

What was with this girl? Whenever I thought I knew all about her filthy life, some new revelation slithered to the surface. Would I ever reach the bottom of her trashy existence, did I want to?

Leo offered me the promotional clips from the video thinking they might help in court. They could, so I accepted. Leo didn't recall exactly when Poisoned Dragon made the tape but it was before I met her. Since she kept this part of her video career hidden from her future husband, I could use this new information for an annulment. No problem with the defense that I forgave her video porn through cohabitation because I never knew about it. I did know about another video from her diary, which she made in July 1999, but as described in the diary, that one only involved "undressing," not masturbating.

In order to maximize the use of the masturbation video in court, I wanted a statement from the California doctor Paulsen that he paid her for the performance. Otherwise, her attorneys would argue that it was a personal, not a pornographic, video that she made for one of her boyfriends. Asking Leo, the producer, for a statement was a waste of time, since it would blow his cover as just a model agency. Leo gave me Paulsen's telephone numbers and email addresses and I would try him when back New York. According to Leo, the good doctor had also married one of Leo's whores, took her to America where after obtaining a permanent green card, she promptly divorced him and stole, with the help of the court, \$70,000 of his money. Where there was one porno video, there were probably others, but Leo denied knowing of any others. I thanked him for a CD of the clips and left.

On the Metro back to Sasha's apartment, the idea flashed into my mind to put the video promo on the web site because it made Alina's claims that I forced her to write the diary appear even more absurd. She'd have to claim I forced her to pose nude the way Russian prostitutes

typically do in order to advertise their wares and also forced her to make a masturbation video, both of which I allegedly did before I even met her. At some point, people would wonder how this good girl always ends up with her clothes off. The video also might help find some of her former customers, since cavorting around rubbing her crotch was what she did when “dancing” all nude.

### Searchin

At JFK airport, the ever-diligent U.S. Customs detained me for questioning. What the hell was going on with these government idiots? Customs’ computer had a red flag by my name ordering them to stop and question me when I crossed into the U.S., the country in which I was born. The reason for the red flag was the Temporary Order of Protection that my wife had lied about to the Queens Family Court, which issued it without allowing me to rebut her accusations and then at a hearing punted the Order to the Supreme Court. Customs, which did nothing to stop an illegal alien prostitute, my wife, from smuggling money out of the country and drugs into it, detained me: an American lawyer and citizen. What possible threat was I to the U.S.? Where was this moronic organization’s priorities? Criminal aliens had more rights than an American citizen. Customs’ computers couldn’t even red flag the illegal Mexican Angel Resendiz for whom arrest warrants were issued for murdering a number of Americans, but their database contained a temporary order of protection against me from a Queens Family Court. Later, after 911, it became clear to the American public the incompetence of the bureaucrats who pretended to protect our borders when they allowed hijacker Mohammed Atta into the country on an expired visa.



Back at my apartment, no home cooked meal this time for Traviesa had found an investment banker to take her to the Hamptons for the week. What a life these girls have, a few minutes on their backs and they're enjoying what it took some guy years of hard work to achieve.

I finished the Internet site, [www.alinashipilina.com](http://www.alinashipilina.com), complete with Leo's contributions of the nude photos and masturbation clips. At the end of Poisoned Dragon's dairy, I explained the purpose for the web site to my limited audience:

This site was set up to prevent Alina Shipilina and her mother's efforts to intimidate into silence potential witnesses in an annulment/divorce proceeding in New York City, to convince potential witnesses that the diary states the truth and to find people who may have additional information about Alina who recognize her name, her face and for some her naked body.

If you have any information about Alina, please email to [alinashipilina@hotmail.com](mailto:alinashipilina@hotmail.com). All sources will be kept confidential.

A hundred flyers, updated with the caption, "Watch Alina masturbate for dollars" went to my contacts in Krasnodar with instructions to distribute the flyers in Poisoned Dragon's apartment building, in the slim hope that Natasha on seeing one might contact me. Academy students and professors would also receive the flyer, which would surely infuriate Vice Rector Minchenko and instill fear in his amateur goons if they were unlucky enough to run into the guys doing the leafleting. Lastly, the discos where management knew my wife or were frequented by her crowd of outwardly beautiful but inwardly repellent people would receive a distribution.

Turning to the California doctor Paulsen, who paid Poisoned Dragon to masturbate for the camera, it took me a few telephone calls before reaching him. Dropping Leo's name by way of introduction, I briefly told him my Poisoned Dragon story and asked about her starring role. He didn't sound pleased talking with me, and I sensed he hid some facts, but at least he didn't hang up. Paulsen claimed he threw the complete video away along with all the other

pornography tapes he shot in Russia after U.S. Customs gave him a “hard time” about importing his personal collection into the country. No way he destroyed his collection, but I went along with his pretended reformation to see what information he might drop.

“My business now is making only music videos with models from the Red Star agency.” That was Russia’s most notorious model agency for hos.

“Leo introduced Alina to me and said she was as a personal friend of his who wanted to marry a foreigner. We shot the video in the apartment Leo keeps for his girls who come from out of town.”

Paulsen’s memory wasn’t too good, whether intentional or not, but apparently Paulsen shot the video and had sex with Poisoned Dragon in the fall of 1998. Paulsen recalled she was reluctant to have sex after shooting the video even though Paulsen had also paid Leo her fee for sex.

“That’s my wife, always trying to welsh on a deal,” I commented.

Paulsen refused to provide me with a sworn statement to any of this, claiming he didn’t want to get involved in a divorce case. An understandable position, but I decided if I needed his statement for trial, I’d threaten to drag him into a deposition and make sure the California Board of Medical Licensing heard about his run in with Customs.

Next, I telephoned Smolin, the Troika Restaurant manager.

“I’ve read the diary and the events concerning me are true.” He said without hesitation. “I’ve also talked to a few people that Alina mentioned in the diary, and they confirmed some of the events. But they are unwilling to talk about them and do not want any of that information to become widespread.”

Sounded like the Russian euphemism for a threat, I asked. “What do they care about a Krasnodar whore? Besides the information will only be used in America.”

“Just a whore, yes, but one with money and connections. And no one likes the embarrassment of their private lives being made public, even if in the U.S.”

“You know, I also have clips of a masturbation video she made in Moscow.”

Smolin paused and then changed tack completely, “Right now I think that all you told me is false.”

“You just said that some of the events in her dairy are true. What’s going on Smolin, is there someone there listening in, did someone just talk to you?”

“There’s no one here and no one has talked to me. I just think this is all a fantasy, but if you could send me proof about what you said, then I will help you with information. Why don’t you start by sending me a copy of the video?”

“Fine, I’ll Express Mail it to you,” and hung up.

Why did Smolin abruptly change from belief to disbelief at my mentioning the video. And why did he want proof or was it really money? From his response to the Internet flyer, I knew that Smolin didn’t like drawing attention to himself, no criminal did. So, I concluded in the first part of the conversation he was telling me to back off since any further investigation into my wife’s background might open up part of the seamy hidden world of Krasnodar’s elite, whom Smolin served. But when I mentioned the video, he started trying to pump me for information. Maybe he thought that I knew a lot more about nefarious doings in Krasnodar than mentioned in the section of Poisoned Dragon’s dairy that he read. The part of her dairy in my possession started with Cyprus, but what about her life and activities in Krasnodar before 1999? Smolin probably figured I also had her dairy for those years. By asking for proof, Smolin, and whoever

else feared exposure, wanted to find out just how much I knew. Then again, maybe Smolin just cut a deal with Poisoned Dragon for money to find out the evidence I had for my annulment/divorce case. I sent him the video, but nothing more. Let Smolin and whoever stood behind him wonder how much I knew.

The masturbation video clips also went out to Yulya, Katya, and Yevgeny, the trainer, in order to counter my wife and her attorneys' efforts to convince potential witnesses that the diary or, at least, the filthy sections were false. All three claimed they believed the diary true, but Yulya and Yevgeny claimed not to recognize any of its events, and Katya refused to provide a sworn statement about the accuracy of any incidents or of my wife engaging in adultery with Valodya on Katya's kitchen table. In addition, the clips went to Anastasia as a long shot at winning her and Dima back to my side by illustrating that my ability to obtain information on Russians reached further than they suspected and hoping they would believe it wiser to help me. They didn't. The photographer Morosov received a copy in an attempt to convince him that it was not I who told lies about Poisoned Dragon but her and Inessa. He didn't bite, either. Valodya in St. Petersburg got a copy to make sure he knew just what kind of a girl he dated. But he still refused to provide a statement as to the accuracy of the diary's events concerning him and kept going out with Poisoned Dragon anyway, probably because of her money.

When I told Alexei, Alina's old boyfriend, about the video, his cheerful demeanor changed to silence. The revelation must have cut through him like all the sordid truths about Alina did so many times before. She just didn't give a damn whom she harmed in her drive for money. Another person's feelings meant nothing to her. All she cared about was how she could use someone—a parasite on the compassion of others. When I offered to send him a copy, he stumbled, not knowing what to say. Finally he said in a sad voice, "What would I do with it?" I

regretted telling him about the video, but he did agree to a statement identifying her handwriting and the accuracy of the diary's events concerning him. That would help my case somewhat, but I knew Poisoned Dragon's attorneys would attack his credibility by portraying Alexei as a spurned lover out for revenge.

The last mailing of the video went to the editor of the Krasnaya Ulitsa newspaper. When in Krasnodar, I tried to meet with the reporter Victoria about doing a follow up story, but she was out of town. Natalya finally reached her after I left only to learn that the newspaper's editor directed Victoria to never write about "that girl" again. Inessa had invaded the editor's office, pulling a similar routine as she did with Natalya, shouting and threatening police arrests and lawsuits for every imaginable offense of which there were none, except in the eyes of a true commie—that of reporting the truth. The editor, a woman, immediately folded promising not to print anymore of the dirty facts about Inessa's angelic daughter. Natalya told me the editor also personally feared Inessa's Chechen connections—so much for freedom of the press in Russia. Sending the editor the video clips with a letter wouldn't alter her surrender to censorship, cowards rarely change, but I wanted to irritate whatever miniscule conscious the editor possessed over allowing two mendacious females to beat her into suppressing the truth.

Shortly after sending the videos out, a letter post marked Krasnodar with no return address arrived. It contained cutouts from Russian newspapers of semi-naked girls—no one I recognized. It must have been some kind of message, but I couldn't figure it out. The only loon who would waste the time and effort was Inessa, so I forwarded the letter to my wife. Maybe Inessa sent it to her daughter's old address by mistake. Who knew what lunacy haunted that two-kilo byte mind.

Even with the Internet site and masturbation clips, Poisoned Dragon's counter offensive in Russia and apparently the fates continued to obstruct my case preparations. My translator Nadya kept running into dead ends, thanks to both. The number Yulya gave for Lena, the nurse who lived by men, was wrong, and Nadya never could find her. Olga who played around with Alina and Lena refused to provide any information, saying, "What Alina did was her own business." The new husband of Nadya the Good, the girl who went to Cyprus with Alina, refused to let her talk with my translator. Katya came through with the model Inessa's number, but Inessa claimed she only knew Alina from Vasilyeva's agency and nothing about her involvement in prostitution in Krasnodar. Katya did say in a follow up call I had with her from New York that Alina used to work with a guy name Rey who procured models for "dirty work" with New Russians, but she didn't know how to contact him. My Nadya snooped around but couldn't find any leads to Rey.

She did recognize the name of a girl, Masha, from my wife's diary who also previously worked as a model for Vasilyeva's firm. Poisoned Dragon had attended Masha's bridal shower. Nadya couldn't find Masha until she accidentally saw the 23-year-old model on television. Nadya telephoned the station and got Masha on the line, but she refused to talk about Alina or her days with the Vasilyeva agency because, as she said, she was now happily married. Masha's reluctance made sense since she had also worked as a call girl, and I doubted her husband wanted to hear that. Were all the models from the famous Vasilyeva House of Fashion prostitutes?

Nadya also ran down some addresses and telephone numbers I previously copied from some of my wife's papers before we separated. These people either didn't know Poisoned Dragon or refused to talk about her. Then my other translator, Natalya, received at her home a forged summons to appear in court, which was sent by Poisoned Dragon and her mother to

intimidate Natalya into no longer working for me. By sending the forgery to her home address, they were in effect saying, “we know where you live so watch out.” The two probably tracked down her address from the internal passport information that the Academy’s Vice Rector Minchenko took down when holding us in his office in April. Nixon could have used Alina and Inessa in his 1972 campaign.

The doors in Krasnodar kept closing and to make matters worst my lawyer, Svetlana, came down with some serious ailment that she refused to admit. She disappeared for weeks at a time but kept reassuring Xenia and Nadya that the prosecutor would soon indict my wife’s mother for defamation. The other tasks assigned to Svetlana also stood in limbo during her on-again, off-again illness, such as suing Vice Rector Minchenko and the Academy for samples of Poisoned Dragon’s handwriting and obtaining sworn statements from Alexei and Vera, the Academy professor, for authenticating the diary. Nadya said Svetlana’s illness was not uncommon for people in Krasnodar who often fell ill to strange diseases, and that many girls can’t even give birth or an usually high number of those who do have sickly children—an ecological nightmare added to the economic disaster of modern day Russia.

My focus shifted to Cyprus with a call to Irina, the wife of Melios Athanasiou. Their firm recruited the prostitutes for the clubs Zygos and Tramps that they owned and Melios’ brother, Marios, managed. All three had received the diary from me. Irina claimed she didn’t read it and didn’t know anything about the goings on in the clubs—fat chance! A Russian herself, Irina did admit to specializing in recruiting girls from the former Soviet Union for the clubs. She also said that Poisoned Dragon and Inessa had visited their office in Cyprus in May. That’s how Inessa got the dark tan I noticed during the confrontation with her in Krasnodar in June. Irina, Melios and Marios had met with my wife and her mother both of whom complained

about me. Irina refused to specify, but admitted turning over to Poisoned Dragon and Inessa the letter and diary I sent her. She thought my wife was a good girl, so I left Irina with the story of the masturbation video knowing any further discussion with her was useless. In a call to Marios at one of the clubs, he admitted to reading the diary, men are always more honest than women, and said it accurately reported the events as he remembered them. He also praised Poisoned Dragon as a “very professional worker” to which I agreed—she was a pro. Marios, however, politely declined to make a sworn statement as to the accuracy of my wife’s diary.

My investigation and trial preparation efforts kept stumbling over criminals not about to jeopardize their own rackets or people too scared to help. One of the advantages for Poisoned Dragon and her attorneys that I didn’t at first understand came from her working in the sleazy underside of the world’s societies. No witnesses inhabiting or frequenting those denizens would provide evidence to a court. Running out of leads, I turned to the reports from my undercover informant at Flash Dancers in the hope of finding some useful information. Anything Poisoned Dragon told him was admissible as an admission by an opposing party.

Poisoned Dragon complained to my agent about everything while I was in Krasnodar in June. She appeared irritated, restless, distracted and often glazed over with faraway looks. Her mother had likely told her of my snooping around again in her hometown. She did, however, brag about breaking the rules of the club, which momentarily made her feel good. Getting away with cheating always lifted her spirits, which reminded me with a laugh of her repeatedly saying she had to fight for everything she had, but in reality she cheated, lied and sold her body for it.

She told my agent about her modeling portfolio, which she needed shot every year because at twenty-six each birthday chiseled away some of the beauty nature had mistakenly bestowed. The new portfolio included her dressed as Xenia the Warrior, which brought another



laugh. Poisoned Dragon always watched that female chauvinistic television show. She obviously thought of herself as a modern day Warrior Princess avenging all women in the name of female arrogance against men. Such delusions, my wife's breasts didn't compare in size to Xenia's.

In the undercover reports for the end of June into July, Poisoned Dragon boasted about going to a party at Tavern on the Green where she "played mind games" with four guys lusting to bed her—typical bimbo ploy for boosting her ego, especially in New York City. Young girls in this town—no one wants the over thirty ones—are notorious for playing such games. They come on to a guy, and when he shows some interest, they immediately dump him for the next sacrifice to their sexual allure. It probably makes the sluts feel powerful.

On some nights talking with my agent, Poisoned Dragon waxed, perhaps waned is a better word, philosophical about a Russian behavioral psychologist named Lazarev who taught that by repeating a statement many times a person would eventually believe it. Every morning, my wife said she repeated over and over, "I am beautiful, I love myself and I love everybody." Poisoned Dragon had once told me that this guy changed her life when she was a teen, but I knew nothing about him, so I put down the reports and telephoned my agent to ask if he knew anything about this Lazarev guy.

"Sergei Nikolaevich Lazarev is a modern day Russian philosopher or religious advocate. He believes in using witchcraft, magic, natural healing, Hinduism and Christianity to eventually unite with God or to receive divine love. For him any act is justified in order to receive divine love. One of his prays goes, 'God, for the sake of my love for You, I am ready to decline the ethics and morality, ideals, spirituality, conscience, desires and life.' Fidelity and morality mean nothing to Lazarev."

“He sounds like a Communist,” I remarked.

“Actually, many consider him an anti-Christ figure—one of the false prophets about whom God warns in the Bible. He claims that penitence will not only absolve the sinner of the evil she has done but will benefit her in some worldly fashion. It’s an anti-Angel perspective.”

“I get the play on words and the concept: gain from an evil deed, then repent and gain some more. Not exactly a deterrent.”

“Right, it’s a win-win situation for his believers. To them evil is the uncontrollable good that God created, so they want to unite with it as well as the controllable good. Their life goal is to let both shine through.”

“Sounds like a rationale for hypocrisy and the means justifies the ends.”

“Exactly, do good if it serves your ends, do evil if it serves your ends, but when others harm you, condemn them for not doing good. The perfect belief system for the consummate American politician and businessman, or in your wife’s case—business girl.”

“Thanks much,” I said and hung up.

No wonder Poisoned Dragon believed in Lazarev’s twisted philosophy. It allowed her to do whatever she wanted without committing a sin before her God, the anti-Christ. Good grief! I hadn’t stumbled into the Middle Ages but Revelations!

Back to my agent’s reports, which stated that Poisoned Dragon believed Lazarev’s teachings helped her deal with stressful situations, such as the turmoil she was going through because of “serious problems with her former boyfriend.” Naturally she didn’t mention the former boyfriend was her husband, but did add with boiling hostility, “He is such an asshole! He is trying to use any means possible to destroy me. He talked to my friends in my hometown. He went to the college that I attended. He is trying to spread rumors that I am a prostitute—do you

believe that! There are no grounds for those rumors. He is just trying to destroy me. I want something bad to happen to him.” I was sure she did, but this statement sounded more like a request for assistance than a wish upon a star. How many of the other thousands of men she met at Flash Dancers or criminals she hung out with in America and Russia did she make that not so subtle request to, and how many fell for it?

She continued to ply my agent with her victim routine, but unlike with me, upped the ante by claiming that her father had raped her a number of times. When I first met her, she convinced me that her father, whom she may never have known, only molested and beat her. That’s because the inquisitorial accusations of the rape happy Feminazis only work in America, not Russia. Using another typical female manipulating ploy, she demonized me with attributes of her own, “To him money means everything. Money is more important than a person’s feelings.” The guilty always accuse others of what they are guilty of. In psychology it’s called “projection,” in international relations “mirror image” and in politics “politics.” Along with her role as victim and her father and husband, a.k.a boyfriend, as violators, she threw in a couple of the usual exotic ingredients to her emotional brew for manipulating men. Poisoned Dragon claimed she possessed magical powers and enjoyed receiving lap dances from other girls at the club for which one of her male customers actually paid. Most guys fantasize about two girls. My wife was one dame who knew how to psychologically play men.

Toward the end of July, my agent reported that Poisoned Dragon planned to take a vacation to Las Vegas. This sounded suspicious—a statement intentionally directed at me in order to cause emotional pain. Before we married, I took her to Las Vegas, now another man was apparently taking her there. It appeared too much like the usual bimbo attempt of cutting into a man’s heart with jealousy. Even Traviesa told me she often got back at a boyfriend by

going out with another guy and making sure her boyfriend knew it. If Poisoned Dragon went to Las Vegas, she knew that I knew she wouldn't go alone. Damn, either my wife suspected my agent of working for me or she had turned him.

Recalling the discussions with my agent since I had returned from Russia, he had asked questions a number of times that made my ears ring in alarm. They always seemed to smack of entrapment. In reviewing his reports, they showed no progress at winning her confidence and nothing of value for the court case. My intuition told me he now worked as a double agent, receiving money from me and sex from her while passing along useless information to me, and who knew what to her. When was I going to learn never to trust a Russian? Okay, I can play this game by using him to provide Poisoned Dragon false information and trying to glean kernels of truth from the deceptive information she provided him. For instant, he still provided me accurate information on when Poisoned Dragon took vacations from Flash Dancers because both he and my wife knew I could easily check this by telephoning the club and asking whether she worked that week. For my wife not to work for an entire week meant she had taken a vacation of at least a month to smuggle her cash back to Krasnodar and then to Cyprus. So my agent still provided me a window of time on her violating U.S. and Russian money laundering and reporting statutes. But for Russian Customs to catch her bringing in unreported dollars, I needed the exact flight. She wasn't about to give a newly turned agent that information.

The indifference of the New York City Immigration office was not repeated by Immigration at the Moscow Embassy, which had taken seriously the information from my attorney Xenia about Poisoned Dragon lying on her applications for a temporary green card and visa. The immigration officer assigned the case, thank goodness a man, said he needed a divorce or annulment judgment from the court before they could begin removal proceedings against

her—at last, an agency willing to do its job, apparently. Immigration didn't want to start the deportation process without a court judgment because a reconciliation between husband and wife would cost them a key source of information—me, not to mention time and effort. Immigration at the Embassy sounded eager to start proceedings by telling me to send the court's judgment as soon as it occurred. They didn't particularly care whether the court granted an annulment or a divorce, nor on what grounds. Apparently, they just wanted to go ahead to begin an investigation.

The Violence Against Women's Act ("VAWA") created section 8 U.S.C. § 1367(a)(1)(A) of the Immigration Act that forbid the Government from making any decision to find an alien wife inadmissible or deportable solely from information provided by her citizen husband if he abused her. The Act, written by the National Organization of Witches and the Feminazi Majority and sponsored by then Senator Joe Biden turned mainly American men into semi-nonpersons by preventing INS from relying only on evidence and testimony from the one person most likely to know about an alien spouse's violations. INS could still use the American spouse's evidence, but it would have to go to the trouble of conducting its own investigation and marshal additional evidence to confirm that provided by the American spouse.

Going for an annulment or divorce on adultery grounds still looked like the best chance for getting Poisoned Dragon bounced out of the country. An annulment would turn evidence from me into a court judgment with findings of fact that my wife committed fraud in marrying me. As for a divorce based on adultery because of her prostitution, that evidence from me would also become a court judgment with findings of fact. In both cases, the evidence no longer rested on the credibility of me, the American man, but that of a court of law and jury that had made the fact-findings. That I thought would surely help INS.

Despite the Embassy's advice , I pushed forward for the day of the righteous in court.

### Liar. Liar Pants On Fire

In early July, a couple of weeks before a preliminary conference in the Supreme Court on my annulment/divorce case, I received a nasty telephone conference call from my lawyer Silpe and his brain dead associate Amy. Poisoned Dragon's attorney Mundy had telephoned Amy and claimed to have a tape recording of me trying to extort money from my wife in return for not reporting her to Immigration.

Silpe accusingly said, "Extortion is a crime. I don't want you talking with your wife on the telephone or otherwise."

"I'm not talking with her." I replied and asked his assistant, "Did Mundy play the tape for you?"

"No, he said he could if I wanted, but I declined."

Dumbfounded by her stupidity, I said, "Then how do you know such a tape exists?"

Silence.

Silpe jumped to the aid of his nitwit associate by continuing to badger me about the seriousness of Mundy's charge to which I responded, "No such tape exists because it never happened. That's it!" But they chose to believe the opposing attorney over their own client without any evidence. Worst, my supposedly astute attorneys didn't even realize that what Mundy had done constituted the crime of attempted coercion.

It's against the law to try to pressure someone into settling a civil suit by threatening to expose an alleged criminal wrongdoing. But my attorneys were blind to the law. Apparently, Silpe and his bimbat associate considered me automatically guilty because I qualified for America's latest group of generic scapegoats. I was a man, not an androgyny, hermaphrodite nor

girlie man, but a man, and should give my wife what she wanted to make up for all the times in history that some self-indulgent female thought herself wronged. Silpe's assistant naturally believed in such affirmative punishment because it provided her opportunities beyond her abilities. And Silpe followed the Feminazi line because he came from the generation after mine where many mothers brainwashed their sons into believing only women told the truth, and even if they lied, men were the reason—a modern American adaptation of original sin. My attorneys, the judges and most of the Americans I had so far come into contact with in my quest for justice followed that same trendy thought pattern, which had spread across America like locust since the 1970s. Doublethink infected legions of weak minded males and females alike to create a feminine mystique touting the superiority of female decency while excusing the murdering of husbands for allegedly using physical violence against wives that relentlessly shredded the emotional health of men with barbed tongues or excusing the murdering of unborn children—incipient humans—because women wanted to satiate their lust without accepting the responsibility for their acts or excusing the murdering of already born children with explanations by biased feminist doctors and lawyers of chemical imbalances for which the female bore no responsibility because the husband's precognition should have warned him in time to stop his wife's butchery. Truth and fairness meant as much in feminarthy America as to the Soviets—nothing!

At the end of July, Lobis, the lesbo judge, held a conference between both sides in order to narrow the areas of contention and determine a schedule for discovering additional evidence. The Supreme Courthouse in Manhattan was built in a circle to symbolize the quest for justice within it: running around in circles, getting nowhere while attorneys exacted fat fees and the judges made an easy living rendering expediency rather than justice.

My Harvard educated lawyer friend Jeff accompanied me again to make sure Poisoned Dragon didn't pull a fast one by cornering me out of the sight of witnesses and yelling rape. Silpe showed in court with his space cadet associate and told me that on the divorce cause of action I needed to choose between the allegation of adultery and cruel-inhuman treatment. I didn't see why I couldn't try to prove both at trial. Any civil litigation always allowed for proving multiple allegations so long as not inconsistent, which adultery and cruel-inhuman weren't. In fact, adultery could be used to show cruel-inhuman treatment. The only difference between the two was that going for cruel-inhuman would prevent me from using various judicial procedures to obtain evidence. I didn't want that. Silpe, however, pushed for dropping the adultery charge, probably because he wanted a settlement in my case so as to concentrate on more lucrative clients or to avoid interrupting his vacation scheduled for the following week. Naturally he didn't mention these factors at the time, but argued that the judge didn't like trying adultery cases, which made sense since all the judges in the divorce court except one were females and the persons in modern day American most likely guilty of dropping their underpants for casual acquaintances were wives.

"Too bad," I responded. "I still have rights under the law no matter what the judge wants. If I have to choose, I'll go with the adultery."

He switched his argument to the difficulty of proving adultery since the witnesses lived overseas.

"I know the difficulty, especially with my wife and her attorneys' efforts to intimidate potential witnesses into silence, but I want to give it a shot anyway. So let's go with the annulment and the adultery causes of action. I don't give a damn about the cruel and inhuman allegation. I want the truth about the slut I married made public, so the only logical dissolution



of the marriage means either annulment or a divorce on the grounds of adultery. She's the one at fault, not me. She married me for a green card and then betrayed me by whoring herself to other guys as though I never existed, as though I wasn't even human. No way I'm going to give her a way out where she could dissemble to others and herself that I, the man, was at fault for the marriage's failure. I want justice."

"Okay, you're the client," Silpe replied.

My wife and her female attorney, an associate in Mundy's firm, arrived late, probably on purpose in order to increase my costs since I needed to pay my attorneys for just sitting and waiting. While we waited, Silpe told me something that to me didn't fit. During the upcoming conferences, first with the judge's secretary and later with the judge, both might ask my wife and me to step away from the table so that the court and the attorneys could discuss the case. Silpe added that some less astute clients become upset and suspicious that something is going on behind their backs, which there isn't. That wasn't a problem, since judges do it all the time to keep the parties from interrupting with some emotional irrelevancy or another, but I couldn't figure out why he was bothering to tell me an attorney about it. I trusted he'd report back to me the content of the discussions because if he tried to pull a fast one, I'd simply file a complaint with the lawyer's disciplinary committee and he knew that.

Due to the lateness of my wife and her attorney, we were last in line. The lesbian judge's secretary called us to the conference table in the middle of the courtroom. Silpe had told me to keep my mouth shut, so like an idiot I went along with my attorney's advice.

Silpe said, "My client is suing for an annulment and in the alternative a divorce on the grounds of adultery."

"Why does he want an annulment?" The secretary asked.

“Because he doesn’t want his imprimatur on a marriage to a woman he later learned works as a prostitute and stripper.”

Poisoned Dragon’s lawyer, an ardent Feminazi, quickly interrupted. Females always try to throw guys off by interrupting. “Well the Plaintiff has gone so far as to put naked pictures of my client on the Internet.” I felt like chiming in, don’t forget the masturbation porno video, but remembered Silpe’s instructions. Besides, the secretary immediately stopped everything and told both my wife and me to leave the table.

After a short discussion among the attorneys and the secretary, Silpe came back to tell me, “Your wife’s attorney said she still loves you and doesn’t want a divorce.”

“What!” I said shocked. “I don’t believe that for a minute. She’s up to something. Probably trying to make the secretary see her as the victim.”

Silpe said, “At that point the secretary said there will be a trial in two weeks.”

“Two weeks! I won’t be able to have any statements from any Russian witnesses ready in two weeks,” I complained. “But if it’s two weeks then let’s go.”

“Don’t worry her lawyer realized she made a mistake by saying your wife didn’t want a divorce, so they’re talking it over now and in order to avoid a trial in two weeks, your wife will likely say she too wants a divorce.”

“You mean the only reason for a trial in two weeks was my wife not wanting a divorce?”

“Yes.”

None of this made any sense, but neither did much of domestic relation’s law, a course I never took in law school. I turned to Jeff who had already gone through a divorce and was witnessing my discussion with Silpe.

He said, “My wife and I never went to trial because we both wanted a divorce and weren’t trying to prove anyone at fault, so we got one on consensual cruel-inhuman treatment grounds. The real issues in our case were child support and visitation rights, which have continued ever since. The court never stops from telling us what to do until both our daughters are 21.”

I asked Silpe, “If my wife changes her mind and says she also wants a divorce will I still get a trial on annulment and adultery?”

“Yes, you will and probably by the end of the year.”

“Good, that will give me plenty of time to prepare my case.”

Silpe and my wife’s attorney met with the secretary again, after which Silpe said, “Your wife changed her mind as I said she would and now wants a divorce, so you will have your trial.”

“So that’s it?”

“No, we still need to meet with the judge. It’s just pro forma. The judge likes to meet the people appearing before her.”

This also seemed strange to me. Why did a busy judge want to waste her time just to say hello? Maybe the modern wave of smiley, feel good, euphemistic social interactions infiltrated the mean and nasty denizen of the female controlled judiciary? But I doubted it.

During the wait while Jeff and I sat in the front rows talking, I sensed something menacing, as though the line from the movie *Murder My Sweet* had come to life, “I felt as if I was a toad on a wet rock and a snake was looking at the back of my neck.” Quickly I turned around to see my wife, a few rows back, her face skewed with malice, glaring at Jeff and me, casting one of her black magic spells with her patented “evil eye.” I nudged Jeff who turned to

catch her stare which suddenly changed into what he called, “The diamond hard eyes of a prostitute.” She immediately got up and left the courtroom.

“What was she doing?” Jeff asked.

“Casting an evil spell.” To which Jeff shook his head in disdain and continued reading his New York Times.

A little later, both sides entered Judge Lobis’ chambers—a bureaucratic office in the back of a seedy court.

Silpe said, “My client is suing for annulment and in the alternative divorce on adultery because his wife works as a prostitute and stripper.”

Poisoned Dragon’s attorney said, “My client opposes an annulment.”

The judge jumped in, “Because it will affect her immigration status, right?”

“No, it will not have any impact on her status,” her attorney lied.

The judge took the advantage, “If it wouldn’t have an effect on her ability to stay in America, then why not agree to an annulment settlement?”

“My client doesn’t think an annulment is appropriate. She wants a divorce on the grounds of cruel-inhuman treatment. Her husband has put naked pictures of her on the Internet.”

To which I wanted to reply “And I obtained the rights to those photographs from her Moscow pimp and the copyrights to the porn video she consensually starred in were abandoned,” but stupidly kept my mouth shut as per Silpe’s instructions. Although it probably didn’t matter since Feminazis like the judge consider prostitutes astute businesswomen and euphemize them as “sex workers,” or is it “gender workers.”

What my wife's attorney didn't say was more interesting: no claims of extortion by me, which was a crime that could easily sway a jury against me. Guess the tape recording didn't exist.

At this point Poisoned Dragon and I were asked to leave again. If the judge just wanted to meet us, why all the same questions? A short time later, Silpe came out with a document that he explained to me while Jeff should be listening.

"The court requires you and your wife's signatures on this order for the case to proceed. I need to hurry to another appointment, so sign it here," Silpe pointed. He had been antsy to leave for the last hour. Once again, I felt as though my lawyer was giving me the bum's rush.

"Wait a minute, explain this to me."

"I don't have the time. I really need to leave."

"Was there a settlement?"

"No!"

"Will there be a trial in December for proving my annulment and adultery cases against her?"

"Yes, and you can now spend all the time you want in Russia gathering evidence. This document merely sets the discovery schedule and trial date."

I signed the document and we left. On our way out, Silpe once again confirmed that I would have a trial to prove annulment or, in the alternative, adultery.

When I arrived back home, I read the document through. To my horror, it stated there was "no issue of fault," which to me meant that I wouldn't get my day in court to prove annulment or adultery. Immediately, I called Silpe for an explanation. He assured me my interpretation was wrong.

“That doesn’t mean what you think. I didn’t make any deal to forgo a trial on fault. It only means that both of you want to end the marriage. You’ll still have your trial. Go to Russia and continue your investigation.”

Feeling reassured, I began planning one more trip to Krasnodar to obtain the sworn statements Alexei, my wife’s old boy friend, and Vera agreed to provide; prod my lawyer Svetlana into action or find a new one; and bring my presence to bear in approaching the witnesses that refused to talk with Nadya and, perhaps, find some others. My travel was set for September, since during August Russia closed up shop with most people on vacation or a month-long bender.

Silpe’s associate, the former Captain Video Ranger Amy, later told me that Poisoned Dragon’s attorneys never served an Answer to my Complaint of her threatening me with her criminal associates. Technically, that meant a default, and in any other type of case a likely victory for me, but with domestic relations, the courts require a lot more before declaring a default. Still, making a motion for default would keep the pressure on Poisoned Dragon. After discussing the matter with Silpe, he thought the motion worth pursuing, so he had his highly incompetent associate file one.

During the same conversation with Amy, I asked about the status of the Temporary Order of Protection against me. Not surprisingly, she didn’t know whether the Order had been transferred from the Queens Family Court to the Manhattan Supreme Court, and, if not, whether my failure to show for another hearing meant an arrest warrant was out for me. What an idiot this girl! Not willing to rely on her comatose skills, I contacted the Queens Court. The Order was dismissed on July 31 because neither side had shown for the hearing on that date. I hadn’t shown because I didn’t know about it, thanks to the absence of short term memory in the head of

Silpe's associate. But why didn't my wife and her attorney appear? Silpe had told me at the preliminary conference in the Manhattan court that Poisoned Dragon refused to withdraw the Temporary Order of Protection, yet a few days later she lets the Queens' court dismiss it. It didn't make any sense.

Also not making sense was Silpe's associate telling me that the only type of information the court would allow me to dig up before trial was about my wife's finances and not about annulment or adultery. Silpe, however, had previously told me to draft discovery requests for not only the fault issues of annulment and adultery but also financial issues, and his okay on filing for a default motion would make no sense if the issue of fault was in dispute. At the time, I concluded Silpe's associate, as usual, missed something in the severely small space between her ears. The judge had instructed both sides to file statements listing their income, expenses, assets and other financially related information by August 10th. Apparently, the mono-track mind of Silpe's associate could focus only on the money issues, which weren't as important to me as the annulment and adultery allegations.

As a lawyer, I had to file the truth or face possible suspension or disbarment by the State's Committee on Professional Conduct for committing perjury. Poisoned Dragon, on the other hand, could lie like a ho and get away with it—which she did. The domestic relations judges just don't care whether parties commit perjury unless a lawyer does it. Wives, of course, are expected to lie in order to get more from their husbands, usually the one required to work his entire life so that his wife can choose among a career, child rearing or bedding the golf pro at the country club. My wife, with I'm sure the connivance of her lawyers, lied under oath about virtually everything in her finance statement. As of the end of July 2001, she had lived and worked in America for one year for which she claimed an income of \$19,000 when in actuality

she made around \$130,000 in cash from Flash Dancers alone. Add in her sometime modeling and regular prostitution and the gross easily topped \$150,000. The low income she claimed also meant lying about her expenses and working at Flash Dancers. She couldn't admit to lap dancing because Flash Dancers charges each girl around \$140 a night to bare her flesh, which amounted to \$26,600 for Poisoned Dragon for the year—more than her income. Even the Feminazi judge won't buy that type of creative accounting. Instead my wife stated her profession as modeling on the document filed with the court, but that document also included as an exhibit her tax return for 2000 on which she claimed to work as a bartender.

Jury-rigging her expenses to fit within her bogus income for the court led to some lame results. She listed her beauty expenses as zero, which for a female in her twenties only a moron would believe, and laundry at zero, which I also doubted even though her business suit consisted only of tong panties. Although, during the last two months we lived together, she slept in her own bed and didn't change the sheets once. Still, the amount of zero smelled phony. Liquor expenses were also listed at zero, no way, she's Russian, and telephone expenses of \$100 a month for two phones and her call girl business, get real. She also lied about her assets, not the bodily kind, which she would if she could. She didn't report her 50 % ownership of the apartment in Krasnodar or her mutual fund at the Bank of Cyprus.

Poisoned Dragon's perjury before the court wasn't in order to prevent me from obtaining some of her money; everyone knew the lesbian judge would never award me anything from my wife. The perjury was to cover up her tax evasion in the year 2000 and her plan to evade taxes in the future. She and her lawyers didn't want a document signed under oath with figures that admitted to her defrauding the Internal Revenue Service. Mundy's senior law partner, Ronald J. Kuba, knew the consequences of cheating Uncle Sam. In 1982 he mislaid over \$100,000 in



income by reporting only \$24,000 instead of \$126,000. The Federal judge sentenced Kuba to six months probation and community service, and the State's Disciplinary Committee suspended him from practicing law for six months. If Poisoned Dragon got caught evading taxes the way Mundy's partner did, the Government would bounce her back to Russia. So my wife and her lawyers chose the route of perjury assuming it wouldn't matter even if caught by a court system skewed to favor the duplicitous sex.

My wife's 2000 tax return also lied that her filing status was "single," which allowed her to pay less tax than under her real status: "married filing a separate return." An obvious falsehood to the court since I was suing for an annulment or divorce that hadn't yet occurred. But the court didn't give a damn. And the I.R.S.'s high level of incompetence and sloth assured it wouldn't do anything about the false filing status or the evasion of more taxes than Mundy's partner because it would require a little work and involved a female. This alien prostitute had all the advantages America could offer.

My now "not so secret agent man" visited Flash Dancers a couple of more times to report back that Poisoned Dragon planned to take a vacation to Florida from the first week in August to September 7<sup>th</sup>. The Florida trip was another piece of misinformation meant as a knife into my heart by a girl who deluded herself into believing that all men burned for her love. By now, only vengeance burned in my chest for her. She, not so subtly, used Florida to playoff the trip we took to Disney World before we separated. My wife did have a client in Miami, a married middle-aged Russian, who also kept an apartment in Moscow. I doubted he'd pay for her trip to Miami, but if she was in Moscow, he'd take her out for a night—sex with her just wasn't that good. So, most likely her vacation itinerary included the usual: Moscow, Krasnodar and Cyprus where she deposited her hoing money.

Assured she'd try to transport her earnings out of the country without reporting them, I visited the U.S. Customs Service at Six World Trade Center. They politely took my information, but as with Russian Customs, they also wanted the exact flight, which I couldn't understand since they had access to all the airline reservation lists, including Aeroflot, which Poisoned Dragon always flew. U.S. Customs agents probably didn't want to do the work of going through the lists because it interrupted their daylong "Dunkin Donuts" break. The agents said they'd look into the matter and promptly did nothing, except shuffled the papers to JFK. Another useless Government agency, but this one's New York City office would soon lie in rubble as a fitting symbol to Federal sloth and incompetence thanks to Usama Bin Laden.

The next agency I tried to interest in Poisoned Dragon's illegal activities was the Federal Bureau of Incompetence, a.k.a. Investigation. I never thought about going to the F.B.I., but, while training me at Gleason's Gym, my boxing coach threw it out as a suggestion. A cascade of seemingly unconnected events flowed into a conclusion even I never imagined about Poisoned Dragon—spying. Another Mata Hari slut who met men from all walks of life, business and government, pumping them for information while they humped her or got erections during her lap dances. Once again, it all seemed to fit together.

The parent company of the firm I worked for in Moscow employed many former F.B.I. and C.I.A. agents who in turn provided useful contacts with these agencies. The company's top man in London spent nearly thirty years with the C.I.A. In some ways my international employer operated as a C.I.A. and F.B.I. proprietary in which the Federal Government and the firm assisted each other in intelligence gathering and sharing. Sometimes the Federal Government even hired the firm to secret-out specific information overseas, an "I Spy Inc." operating under the cover of a private detective agency rather than tennis pros. Who controlled

whom, I never knew or cared, perhaps it was a symbiotic relationship that evolved over time, which the end of the cold war quickened when a large portion of intelligence gathering began to emphasize business information. Looking back with hindsight my wife, however, clearly cared. She always asked about the firm's clients, contacts with the Russian F.S.B. and Ministry of Internal Affairs and F.B.I. activities in Russia. The time I walked in on her using my office computer, she was probably roaming through the files rather than, as she said, trying to learn how computers work. Obviously she not only sold her body but information as well. Her mercenary soul would willingly sell anyone down the river.

A couple of F.B.I. agents interviewed me. I had hoped them more amendable or more scared than Customs not to follow up on a tip of possible espionage after recent blunders by the agency in the 1990s. But this was still before 911, although if it were after, it probably wouldn't have made any difference. I told them what I knew of her connections with the F.S.B. but never heard back from them. My tips, if they amounted that, are probably lost in the F.B.I.'s computer from the 1950s. Where was J. Edgar when I needed him—he hated Commies and would have despised the Feminazis.

Unlike Customs, the Bureau's offices still stand in lower Manhattan in the same building as Immigration's offices but the reputations of both agencies didn't escape the disaster. All of America quickly learned what I already knew: the INS and F.B.I. were cruel jokes that repeatedly failed to carry out their duties. As a result, thousands of taxpayers lay dead in part because of those agencies' Club Fed mentality. But that was still in the future.

Trying to hold on to what sanity remained in my life, I continued with my martial arts classes that my friend Mark now held in a park in Astoria, Queens. Three times a week five to ten adults, including the ones who had served Poisoned Dragon court papers, and lots of kids

showed to build their self-confidence in living the duality of the crass physical with the sublime metaphysical realms of life while trying to weave a fabric of dreams and reality in which people cared about each other. For me, it was the only activity I still enjoyed. One night after working out, Moody drove some of us to Mark's apartment where we usually went afterward for drinks and snacks. Moody says to me, "I got this new song I want you to hear."

He hits the button and his car speakers' blast my brain with rapper Ludacris' tale of female truth called "Ho." Ludacris clearly had my wife in mind when he wrote this song. Could he have met her at Flash Dancers?

"There's Hos in the room, There's Hos in the car, There's Hos on stage, There's Hos by the bar, There's Hos by near and There's Hos by far."

This guy knew the truth about Poisoned Dragon, "You's Hos are horrible, horrendous, our tax dollars underwrite Ho independence."

Man I needed to get this album and memorize the lyrics, "You can't turn a Ho into a housewife, Hos don't act right."

Everybody in the car was laughing. They all had met Poisoned Dragon and knew she fit the lyrics perfectly, "Ho, You's a Ho, I'd said that you's a Ho," "Why do you think you take a Ho to a hotel," "Hos never close, they're always open like hallways," "Once a Ho always a Ho."

From that night on, Alina, a.k.a. Angelina, a.k.a. Angel, a.k.a. Dark Angel, a.k.a. Poisoned Dragon became known to all my friends, including the ladies, as "the Ho."

After hearing that song, I realized that in this emasculated, milk-toast culture of domineering females only the rappers dare speak the truth. Time to buy some baggy pants.

At the end of August, I tried to interest a newspaper in Cyprus in doing a story on the Ho in the hope of stirring the situation up because out of turmoil anything might happen. The Chief

Editor, a Russian woman, for the Russian language monthly *Abzats* responded to a package of information I sent with “Our magazine is paying attention to the problem of Russian prostitution on Cyprus and we are very interested in such stories you told about. We are preparing the article about Ms. Shipilina’s life story for our November issue.” Sounded good, but the article never saw the light of day. The gangsters that pretty much run the Greek part of the island likely made it clear to the editor that she shouldn’t publicize the bare essentials of the Cypriot tourism industry. Russians aren’t known for courage unless drunk, and even then the chances are small.

Around the same time, I received an email from Alexei, the Ho’s old boy friend in Krasnodar. He said that while bowling with his friends at “Strike,” he saw the Ho, her mother and a young hoodlum playing pool. The Ho said hello, and he asked where she was working to which she replied in Moscow as a translator. Alexei asked her how her translations went. She said the most difficulties arise with terms of the law. From his conversation with her, Alexei believed the law was the most important theme in her life at the time. For a criminal, it’s always the most important. The Ho returned to her young beau and mother and all three went into a room to watch a male strip show. Alexei’s the email confirmed that her vacation took her to Russia, not Florida, and that Customs ignored my information about her smuggling large amounts of money out of the country, since she made it to Russia.

Summer ended but I didn’t notice. Traviesa had moved out and just after Labor Day, I received a call from Silpe’s associate. She needed to withdraw the motion for default because it turned out the Ho’s attorneys had filed an Answer back in July before the preliminary conference. This refugee from the bottom of her class in a bottom tier law school claimed she never received the Answer.

I asked the logical question, “Didn’t you contact my wife’s attorney before starting work on the motion to ask why they hadn’t filed an Answer?”

“No”

“I don’t understand this. You’ve been in contact with her attorney on a number of times and never raised the issue about them not filing an Answer?”

“We didn’t receive the Answer, so there was no point.”

“Oh, I see, you didn’t receive the Answer, so it made no sense to ask where it was, but if you had received it, then it would make sense to ask where it was because then you’d know where it was.” Typical female logic used to cover up feminine stupidities.

That was the last straw with this bozo and her boss. I fired Silpe and demanded a refund for the cost of the motion for default, which he provided, but not completely. Early morning, September 11, 2001, I hired my third attorney. I began to think I should have represented myself all along. Justice does not exist as a law of nature but must be created by men—not Feminazis or their sycophants.

### It’s Too Late

Shortly after arranging to meet my new attorney at the end of the week, a friend called. “The World Trade Towers are no more,” he said almost matter-of-factly.

“What are you talking about?” My friend did not play practical jokes, and I knew I heard him right, but my mind found difficulty grasping the meaning of his words.

“They’re gone. I was looking out my window at work. One tower was on fire and then all of a sudden the other tower caught fire. Then one tower just collapsed and a little later the other.”

In suspended belief, I headed downstairs from my apartment. I live about a mile north of the two towers that always loomed over the rest of the skyline in my part of town. When I hit the street, sure enough they were gone, only gray smoke billowed from where they once stood. I walked across town past avenues filled with thousands of people evacuating lower Manhattan. The subways, buses and taxis no longer ran, so everyone walked north: no panic, no screaming, no rushing—just the slow quiet trudge of refugees with the constant wail of sirens in the background. The usual hectic, self-absorbed, hustle of New York City had vanished, replaced by an almost tangible numbness permeating its streets and people. A subdued, blank-stare feeling fell over the City as though we all decided to worry about what happened tomorrow.

Looking south towards the smoke from that massive crematorium, which filled the air with a distinct sickly smell and bitter taste, my problem with the Ho paled to insignificance. Thousands of people full of hopes and dreams just died at the hands of persons willing to do anything to have their way. They reminded me of the Feminazis who have destroyed more than a few thousand men.

Some shopkeepers and firehouses set up television sets on the sidewalks around which people gathered. Watching, I tried to imagine what emotions gripped the people who jumped or fell from the towers to escape the inferno. What was going through the mind of one businessman with clinched fists as he fell to certain death? Just a couple of hours earlier, he probably left his family in suburbia in a hurry to catch the train to New York while going over in his mind what he needed to do that day and looking forward to plans for the weekend. A normal life with all the tribulations and joys that suddenly ended in one uncontrollably nightmarish plunge to his death. Or what went through the minds of the people in the business meeting at the Windows On the World restaurant as they felt the floor beneath them fall away when that tower collapsed.

And what of the relatives and friends of the dead: the pain, rage and powerlessness they must feel. What could any of these people do to settle the score, to avenge the murder of someone close? Take up arms and go to Afghanistan—unlikely. They had to rely on the bureaucrats in our Government to win justice—the same incompetents who let the terrorists into the country in the first place, promptly lost track of them and then blithely ignored the warnings of plans to massacre Americans. My misery was miniscule in comparison. At least I had the power without any help from the government to avenge the injustices done me.

Responsibility for the World Trade Center disaster rests with the effete, eastern, quasi-intellectual, white-trash elite that through their poster boy for perversity, Billy-Bob Clinton, emasculated Federal law enforcement agencies in the name of respecting the sensitivities of the huddle masses of criminals entering and living in the U.S. After the disaster, the intellectual elite's blind devotion to their arrogant, unrealistic ideology showed them up as nothing more than pussyfooting, pansy cowards when they opted for talking through the disaster rather than taking action, as though handholding, teary-eye therapy techniques can win a war. Such endless discussions would no doubt allow our white-trash snobs to feel morally superior while making money and scoring ego points by writing useless papers and appearing on vainglorious talk shows. They could also receive gold stars from their analysts for instituting a national trend of wringing one's hands in self-indulgence while people died. If only those purveyors of wimpdom, most of whom are ensconce in upper-middle class neighborhoods safe from the real evils of the world, would move to places like Afghanistan or Russia where the barbaric reality of life would benefit the rest of us by liquidating them.

Over the years, the self-professed elite's political correctionalism praised too much and went too far in idolizing the feminine tenet that nothing is worth dying for, especially if the ones



doing the dying were former lefties, while at the same time grinding into near oblivion the male principle of honor. When was the last time anyone heard of a Political Correctionalist choosing honor over some sophistic excuse for behaving atrociously? The totalitarian leftists don't understand that honor distinguishes humans from mere organisms of procreation that scurry about fearfully whining and begging to live another day or that the Sunday New York Times arrives on schedule. Their cowardice forces them to dismiss honor as a viable trait in the post-modern world; otherwise, Political Correctionalists would end up face to face with their own lack of courage, not good for supreme egotists. Honor demands courage—no honor, no need for courage. So they conveniently rationalize that evil, which takes courage to oppose, doesn't exist, just shades of misunderstanding. But demons do walk among us. Not the type depicted in Hollywood horror films, but humans who care not the least about others except to the extent of using people to further their selfish ends.

I put my name on a few volunteer lists to help. Even tried to get to ground zero to help dig through the rubble by lying about having construction work experience, but they were only taking volunteers from the unions. Never ended up doing much more than waiting around to lend a hand. After a couple of weeks, I turned back to my own little war for justice starting with an outline of my case for my new attorney Robert. The outline listed a number of facts to prove at trial that separately or together supported an annulment. The new facts about the Ho's nude photos used to advertise her prostitution services and the porno masturbation video that Leo and Paulsen sold were so far the crucial pieces of evidence. Each supported a finding of annulment since a reasonable man knowing about such activities by his fiancé wouldn't marry her, and each wasn't subject to the defense of cohabitation since I learned about them after our separation. But

to help a jury understand the pattern of my wife's fraud, I needed to paint a picture that included information known to me before the separation.

To show that the Ho married me to obtain a green card so she could make hard currency in America's sex industry meant using statements from her diary, assuming it was authenticated, or remarks she made to other people willing to testify, such as:

"I want very much to find a foreigner and live abroad; I want to buy a flat and marry a foreigner, but I do not want to live in Krasnodar."

"Roy says that I am the only happiness of his. He wants me to be near him...."

"Lena said as well that the business with Roy is very advantageous to me"

"And on Saturday, March 11, 2000, we registered our marriage. It was merry! I did not accept it very seriously; for me it was only business."

"He wrote me a letter saying how it was difficult for him to be alone.... Frankly speaking, I cannot imagine what I will do with him in Moscow.... On one hand I would like that we remained friends, but he would not hinder my meetings with friends and I would give him freedom."

Three days after that diary entry, she wrote in a post card: "My love husband! I'm so miss on you but I must help my mother.... I send you this spring flowers from all my heart. I kiss and hold you."

Back to the diary:

"What will happen if I will not receive a visa to America? I will go—with Leo's help—to Greece or Venezuela. In June I am sure to go somewhere!"

"Then, when we went to the disco "Joy", Alexey told me that he wanted me and that I was driving him mad. He bought a bottle of Champaign. I was near to going with him.... I tried to seduce Alexey, to get him...."

A couple of weeks after that entry, she wrote me another postcard, "My dear husband! Only come back and start to be alone again. It difficult, but I must to do a lot of things here.... But you in my heart. A lot of kisses to you."

The diary again:

“The problem is in his real feelings to me. I am a stimulus for him. He sees me as a real wife, but it is absurd.... I will never see him as a real husband.”

“I decided to go to America for now and make some money and to get a divorce from him.”

“God be praised!!! I am in America.”

“I began working (Flash Dancers Topless Club) on Sunday and earned 400 dollars, then 540 and yesterday, on Wednesday, I earned 650 dollars. God be praised!!!

“In total I earned 17-18 thousand dollars in 1.5 months, including everything – expenses, meals and presents.”

Alexei, her old boyfriend who was willing to provide a statement, said, “Alina had one aim, to go outside of Russia.”

Along with such statements, her refusal to show a wife’s normal affection for me would help show her real intent in marrying me. Even the most avant-garde Political Correctionalist wouldn’t consider the Ho’s extensive promiscuity and partying after our marriage and her refusal to live with me in Moscow, as expressing normal spousal affection. For example, from her diary:

“Katya and me walked.... On the way from disco Katya got acquainted with Andrei in white Mercedes. I went with Andrei and Katya to the same place I tried to seduce Alexey Smolin. When Andrei made me ready for sex and I said I was ready, it turned out that what Andrei wanted was a surprise. He wanted sex with Katya and me at the same time. My friend Katya was against this and this upset Andrei and Andrei was left with nothing.

“Ma went away and this time I did not bring anybody home with me although I wish I had. So I came to Volodya. I told him that I want to go to a picnic out of the city. He began to refuse; he said that he had already gone out of the city with Vladik. I insisted and he admitted that he is married, he has a child (2 years old), and he had married in 1998. His wife is from Kazakhstan but she is Russian. He lied, he wanted me and continued to lie. I was shocked.”

Another piece of the annulment picture was that the Ho had lied to me about her love in order to induce me into marriage. This meant juxtaposing her egregious promiscuity and statements in her diary with the lies she told me.

While in Mexico, the Ho sent me a fax on the stationary of the Acapulco Westin Hotel in which she wrote, “It your love—Angelina. Here I visit many beautiful places but I was alon, I’m think about you. It will be nice to be together. I hold you a lot, kiss a lot and miss.” But that same night, according to her diary, she kissed Alfredo a lot during intercourse with him.

Another fax from Mexico stated, “I kiss you! I hold you! Your Angelina.” But during that day from her diary she held one of her customer’s penis until he came.

Specific quotes standing alone also showed she hid from me her true feelings:

“He is not the person I need.”

“He is a fool...”

“How much nerves took and how many troubles gave to me Mr. Hollander!”

“For the first time he finished in me. Oh, my God, whom I allowed to do it....”

“We went with Roy to the forest, he wanted to have sex with me, but I refused because sometimes there were people passing by. The most important was that his age might be clearly seen. If he were a young boy we would do it with pleasure for people to watch.”

A third piece of the Ho’s scheme that supported an annulment was the Ho secretly putting substances into my meals just before our marriage, and the resulting narcotic poisoning symptoms that so befuddled my mind that I could no longer summon the will to cancel the wedding as I had previously threatened.

Fourth, my wife secretly planned well before we married to meet her regular customer, Alfredo, after our wedding for a fun filled time of sex, jewelry, money and a drug that heightened her sexual pleasure. The wedding occurred on March 11, 2000, and she received her

second passport on April 5, which she needed to keep the Italian custom stamps out of the passport she would use to enter the U.S. It takes the Russian bureaucracy more than four weeks to issue a passport, which infers she applied for it before our marriage, meaning she planned the tête-à-tête before the wedding. According to her dairy: “It took a long time to make my second passport. But thanks to God, I have now 2 passports. May be I will go for a week ... and meet Alfredo to earn some money.” The week was a long weekend in Italy and she picked up the Italian tourist visa in Moscow when she visited me in the middle of April. What a darling wife!

After the Italy trip, she wrote: “And now it is very important to me to extinguish all evidence. I closed package with adhesive tape and tried to hide gold and money. I hope so Roy did not learn anything. Amen! I thank God for everything; bless me!”

Russia permits two international passports so that its citizens can hide from Arab authorities that they traveled to Israel, no entry stamp in that passport, and hide from Israeli authorities their trips to Arab countries. The Ho cunningly used her second passport to keep me from noticing any foreign places she visited to ply her trade during our marriage and hide from U.S. Customs her regular trips to the money-laundering haven of Cyprus—more deception to further her scheme.

Lastly, my annulment case would include my wife’s deceptions in failing to fess up about her criminal conduct, such as prostitution in Russia, Cyprus and Mexico; advertising herself on the Internet; recruiting whores for Leo to send to Mexico; lying under oath on her application for a temporary green card and visa; evading taxes; smuggling dollars overseas, and hiding behavior that inferred an immoral character, such as her belief in the benefits of infidelity and dishonesty and the true nature of her “dancing” in Cyprus and Mexico:

“In Zygos he kneeled before me and kissed me below navel - it happened before we left the club. Then we went to hotel.

“I will do my best to be in first place in our business.”

“I am glad, when a customer comes during a private. Some persons come this way for the first time.”

“Today one fucker promised me to give his credit card. I went with him; I left my work before my working time actually ended.

As for adultery, unless I could dig up some guys not listed in her diary, that evidence could only be used in proving cruel-inhuman treatment, since I knew about the diary affairs before we separated. A little research showed me that Silpe had lied when he told me I couldn't sue for annulment, adultery and cruel-inhuman treatment at the same time—but why?

#### Eve of Destruction

A few days after 911, I met with my third attorney, a young, eager guy working on his own out of a modest office. I liked him, straightforward, unpretentious, no philosophical axes to grind and apparently honest. Too bad I hadn't started with him. I recounted my story by comparing my wife to a female Dorian Gray, and told him I wanted a trial to prove annulment or adultery. Robert asked for the Preliminary Conference order from the July court conference.

After perusing the document, he said, “There's a problem here.”

What now I thought in exasperation.

Robert continued, “It says ‘fault will not be an issue.’ You see here,” as he showed me what I'd seen before and questioned my prior lawyer Silpe about.

“Yeah, I asked my prior lawyer about that and he told me that I would still have a trial on the issues of annulment and adultery.”

Robert responded, “Not according to this. This says that all those issues were resolved at the Preliminary Conference. The only possible trial would be over whether one of you has to support the other for some period after the divorce, financial arrangements. But no trial on fault, which is what you need to obtain an annulment or show adultery.”

I felt the knife slip into my back again, “You mean my lawyer sold me down the river?”

“I don’t know what he did. Who was he?”

“Steven Silpe.”

“I know Steve. He has a good reputation. Maybe I’m missing something, but I don’t see how you can now go to trial to show your wife was at fault for committing adultery or that she married you just to come to America.”

I couldn’t believe it. That high priced attorney had tricked me. He threw out the very reason for all my efforts and money without telling me, and then lied about it to keep me hanging on as his client. Was he sleeping with my wife?

Robert continued, “We’ll know for sure on October 4<sup>th</sup>. There’s another conference scheduled with the judge.”

“Well, that puts my next trip to Krasnodar on hold until we find out.”

I left boiling.

A few days later, Immigration at the Moscow Embassy contacted me to find out whether the court had yet issued a judgment ending the marriage. After telling the Immigration official the situation, he asked me to wrap up the court proceeding as soon as possible so that they could begin work on her removal case.

I asked, “So are you guys going to start an investigation as soon as the marriage is terminated?”

“That’s right, and I’ll also want any leads you can give us so we can dig up the necessary evidence in addition to what we receive from you.” The official answered.

Sounded good to me, so I told him about Leo’s business to which he expressed an interest that Leo might turn informant for Immigration in return for certain favors. Leo actually agreed

to discuss the matter with the official but I never learned whether anything came of it. Also told the Embassy official about the American doctor who produced my wife's masturbation video and that the Ho admitted to her model agent in Krasnodar, Anastasia, and her husband, Dima, about working as a prostitute in Cyprus. This last bit of information should have been especially useful because Anastasia and Dima had recently immigrated to America as temporary residents, which meant they fell under Immigration's jurisdiction. Immigration could easily lean on them for a statement about the Ho's admission or they might face intense scrutiny of their own activities in America, probably running Russian prostitutes, or a reexamination of their immigration and visa applications for perjury concerning their pimping Russian girls to Cypriot strip clubs. But when the Embassy official asked me whether I knew Anastasia and Dima's American address, I realized Immigration didn't have a clue as to where these two criminals lived or even how to find out because INS didn't have a tracking system for aliens in the country or when they left.

What the hell was wrong with the Federal Government? It let people into the country temporarily without knowing where they were going. Until that conversation, I had assumed Immigration's inability to keep track of the 911 terrorists resulted from the terrorists skill in hiding, but it didn't. It was Immigration's normal operating procedure to lose aliens once they entered. Unbelievable, the civil servants responsible for keeping out various criminals and thugs not only let them in, but once in, couldn't find them, even if the most powerful government in the history wanted to. Dumbfounded but undeterred by another Federal agency's inability to do its job, I turned to my own resources. Pushed the button on my computer, jumped on the Internet and after a couple of tries found Anastasia and Dima living in Greenfield, Wisconsin. Immigration thanked me for the information.



Continuing to use my own resources to build Immigration's and my court case, assuming I still had one, I tried to reach Svetlana, my Krasnodar lawyer, to contact a number of Russians who might know about the Ho's prostitution in Cyprus, such as Nadya the Good, and my wife's activities in Krasnodar before I married her, which I suspected also involved selling sex. Immigration needed leads to people who would swear that the Ho had lied about not working as a prostitute when she applied for entry into the U.S., and I for my annulment or adultery case.

Svetlana needed to get to work, but I couldn't find her. She had just disappeared again. My Moscow attorney, Xenia, said Svetlana last told her that the Krasnodar prosecutor was moving forward in the criminal defamation case, that the documents showing the Ho's ownership of her apartment were in the mail to Xenia and that Svetlana would soon have a copy of the Ho's application for a second passport and writing samples from the Academy. But since that conversation, Xenia couldn't find Svetlana either. Could my wife have bought Svetlana off? Xenia assured me that was not the case, but in Russia money didn't talk, it shouted. All I could do was wait for my Krasnodar lawyer to turn up while I continued pushing along other avenues.

My alleged undercover agent reported the Ho looked tan but a little preoccupied. She claimed her vacation took her to Miami and Washington D.C. but not Russia. Thanks to her former Russian boyfriend, Alexei, I knew that was a lie. She also said everything was okay with modeling and her future prospects looked good, which they did, assuming my previous attorney Silpe had sold me out.

One of the few breaks from my living death included a double birthday party a week before the October court conference that my martial arts class organized to celebrate Moody's and my birthdays. I couldn't remember the last time anyone, including me, celebrated my birth—it was nice. The high point was the not so subtle birthday card the class gave me that

accurately characterized my wife's nature: "Slut Jokes." My fellow martial artists had her pegged. I read out loud some of the more appropriate references:

"What's the difference between a slut and a Cadillac? Not everyone has been inside a Cadillac."

"Why don't sluts vote? Because they don't care who gets in."

"What's the difference between garbage and a slut from Russia? Garbage eventually gets picked up."

"What's the difference between a slut and a rooster? A rooster says, 'Cock-a-doodle-do,' and a slut says, 'Any cock will do.'"

"How do you make a hormone? Slap her in the face and refuse to pay her."

I laughed better at these jokes than I had in a long time. Knowing there still existed good, solid people in the world helped lighten my load. I was glad they were on my side for it didn't seem like anyone else cared, especially the Government.

At the court conference on October 4, 2001, the Ho and her female attorney showed on time. My wife looked awful, dark circles under her eyes and very pale. Not at all the tan picture of health my undercover agent described. Maybe my agent just made up his latest report without going to Flash Dancers and pocketed the money I gave him for expenses along with his fee. As in so much else with the Ho, I couldn't tell whether her appearance real or fake, perhaps just an adept use of makeup in her trademark role of playing for sympathy. But then again, maybe her addiction to black magic exacted its toll or she expanded her prostitution business. Who knew?

The conference took place again in lesbian Lobis' chambers. The judge started off with, "Why are you people back here?"

That sounded strange to me since the judge was the one who ordered the conference. Did she know something I didn't, which my former attorney Silpe had hidden from me?

"I thought this matter was resolved," the lesbian continued.

The Ho's attorney chimed in, "So did we your honor."

In a matter-of-fact tone the judge continued, "The only outstanding issues are financial support and distribution of the marital assets, but in such a short marriage and with both parties employable, and, I assume, little marital assets, I don't see any need for any financial arrangements. Does the wife need support?"

"No, your honor," the Ho's attorney answered. "The wife is not asking for any support or any of the marital assets of which there are none." Not true, since the Ho invested her well over hundred grand from America's sex trade in something. But at the time, I wasn't interested in financial issues.

Why didn't the lesbian judge ask me whether I needed support? I was the one unemployed while the Ho made lots of money hoing. Finally my attorney said something, "There still is the issue of fault on which my client wants a trail."

That surprised the judge, "What do you mean? It says in this stipulation that your client agreed to no trial on fault. It says here, 'fault will not be an issue.'"

The Ho's attorney interrupted as she always did, "That's right your honor. The last time we met, plaintiff's attorney agreed to no trial on fault."

The judge responded, "I remember."

To which my attorney lamely and somewhat cowed answered, "Well, I wasn't here because I just recently came on as Mr. Den Hollander's counsel. So I don't know what transpired."

All the work, time and money invested into proving my wife tricked me into marrying her and betrayed me with her multiple adulterous liaisons began to spread out on the wind of an unjust system that favored the female, no matter how despicable her conduct.

The judge aggressively drove home her wishes as to this case, “It says right here on this document, which your client signed, that the only issues left are support and equitable distribution, which it appears neither party wants.”

The entire conspiracy now fell together in my mind. During the last conference, while I stood outside the judge’s chambers thinking my attorney was fighting for my rights, he was actually selling me out by agreeing to a settlement pushed by the judge, who didn’t want a trial. Robert, my new lawyer, warned me before the conference that Lobis often asked clients to leave her chambers so that she could hammer and shout attorneys into submission to convince their clients to do what the judge wanted. This lesbian bureaucrat didn’t want a trial on annulment and adultery in order to make her job easier, to protect a fellow woman, who was hot to any lesbian, and to legislate her own political beliefs that New York should be a “no-fault” divorce state that freed wives to engage in their favorite pastime of duplicity and whoring. All completely consistent with Feminazi ideology that society should allow women to follow the promptings of their whims without shouldering the responsibility for the harm they caused. It didn’t matter to the ideologue judge what the elected representatives of the people, the legislature, said the state’s laws were. No, she was a woman in a position of power who knew better for New Yorkers, so she, not the law, would make the decisions that affected their lives. Expediency and personal bias replaced justice as the order of the day. My former attorney, Silpe, obviously not wanting to antagonize a judge before whom he often appeared, decided to

cut a deal without my consent, then lied about it in order to manipulate me into a box where I had no other choice but to accept his sell out and bow to the judge's wishes.

Time for me to chime in, "Your honor, my attorney had no right to make that agreement. I specifically instructed him to pursue annulment and in the alternative divorce on the grounds of adultery."

Judge Lobis, "But you signed the agreement."

"Like a fool, I trusted my attorney. He represented to me that the document merely set the discovery schedule and trial date. He did not mention anything about a settlement on the issue of fault. In fact, he assured me I would have a trial on that issue in December. So when I signed that document, I did not know, nor did I intend to forego a trial on fault. If I had known it eliminated fault as an issue, I never would have signed it. I have a witness to Mr. Silpe's false representations in the form of a respected attorney out of Harvard Law School who witnessed the entire fraud."

"All I want is my day in court. All I want is a chance to prove she married me only to come to America. This was my first marriage, I had never even been engaged before. I opened my heart to this woman and ended up drugged, tricked, denigrated and used by her as if I were no more than a toy to satisfy her greed to make lots of money in the American sex industry. An annulment will at least enable me to feel justice was done because it will tell the truth about her: that she tricked me, and it will allow me to put this revolting experience behind me. She says in her diary, 'I got married today. It was fun. I didn't take it serious, for me it was only business.' And, 'Roy thinks of me as a wife that is absurd, I will never see him as a husband.'"

I saw a change in the judge's face, she asked my wife's attorney, "Why doesn't your client settle for an annulment if as you said at the last conference that it wouldn't affect her chance to become a permanent resident?"

The Ho's attorney was clearly caught again just like last time when she had lied about an annulment not affecting the Ho's chance for a permanent green card. An annulment settlement approved by the court meant the court concluded that the Ho had defrauded me into marriage. That would leave it to INS to take evidence and possibly hold a hearing to determine whether the reason she defrauded me into marriage was to obtain a green card. INS could go either way, but given that she was a young Russian female with a dubious past, she'd have to pay lots of bribes to avoid INS concluding she engaged in marriage fraud.

The Ho's attorney answered, "My client doesn't feel that an annulment would be right."

The judge turned to me and said, "We still have this signed stipulation, so the only thing you can do now is to make a motion to set aside the agreement that fault will not be an issue. There's nothing else I can do."

As we began to leave, I commented to the judge, "I guess I'm a victim of idiot compassion."

To which she responded, "Compassion is never a mistake." Clearly she knew nothing about Russian females.

The Ho quickly bolted from the judge's chambers into the courtroom with a face twisted in hate. In her rush through the courtroom, she even kicked some guy's feet in the front row without any attempt to apologize. Why the anger? Even if I make the motion, the judge would deny it. Then again, psychopaths are impulsive and short-tempered when things don't go the way they expected.

“Robert, what are my chances of winning this motion?” I asked my attorney.

“It’ll cost you five thousand and you’ll lose. It’s clear that Lobis leaned on Silpe to settle because she doesn’t want to try this case.”

“At least you’re honest. Silpe would tell me just the opposite to make five grand. I can’t figure out why Silpe thought he’d get away with tricking me?” I said.

“Well, you saw what happened today. The judge is now in the position to decide whether there is a trial or not. Before the Preliminary Conference, you had that power, but no more.”

“Looks like a conspiracy among the judge, Silpe and my wife’s attorney—amazing! Silpe probably figured he could talk me into the settlement he agreed to, and if not, then he would have just claimed in front of Lobis what he told me over the telephone: there was no settlement. The Ho’s lawyer, naturally, would say there was an agreement. Lobis would then take the middle ground and rely on the document that I like an idiot signed without reading. That document meant I needed to make a motion to set the settlement aside, which she would decide and, of course, deny. Silpe would win either way because if I went with a motion, he’d make money, and if I didn’t, the judge would be beholding to him for avoiding a trial.”

“Welcome to the divorce court.”

“A corrupt, crowded, cruel and despoiled institution that would shame Tammy Hall.”

“So what’s your decision?” Robert asked.

“I’ll think about it.”

“Okay, let me know.”

I walked out past the columns and down the steps that led from the house of injustice, numb with disbelief that a judge and my own attorney conspired to deny my rights because an accident of nature some years ago made me a man instead of a woman. To think that the much-

vaunted judicial system of America would ignore the laws it existed to uphold in order to reward a peddler of flesh for deceiving a citizen and lying to the court simply astounded me. Law school never taught me about this, my life never did either. As in Friedrich Engel's *Origin of the Family*, females controlled the levers of power and woe to any man who opposed them, nor matter how just his cause. The unfairness tore my mind. I never did any of the things the Feminazis screamed about, and neither did the vast majority of men, although listening to America's modern day vixens, one would think otherwise. Never threatened any of my girl friends with violence, never cheated on them and always tried to act the gentleman. So why was I being treated like a rabid dog? Devastated, I turned to the only emotion left, hate. I cursed the universe that gave me my mother, the female head of my draft board that tried to send me to Vietnam, the androgynies at the FCC who prevented me from becoming a reporter because of my sex, the two faced Feminazis that turned America into a hell for men and my darling, considerate wife. I despised bimbets, bimbos and bimbats. If I had a nuke, NOW wouldn't be holding any more conventions.

Finally, I knew my real enemies, the ones who plotted my destruction from birth, the ones who smiled so sweetly through their blood red lips—dames. The ones like my mother who raised me full of fears, negativity and doubts in order to control me for her own selfish ends; my female contemporaries pretending to my face they cared for me while working overtime behind my back to deny me jobs for which I was more qualified, the officials of justice who couldn't distinguish between right and wrong or just didn't care and every ho who believed it her god given right to use any man who foolishly fell for her surface beauty and adroit lies.



## I Heard It Through the Grapevine

While trying to decide whether to proceed with a motion to set aside the stipulation, I instructed my play-both-sides agent to visit Flash Dancers. This time to make sure he actually went to the club, I stationed myself in a restaurant across the street from where I saw him enter. It still remained for me to cut through the misinformation and feints of his, my wife and the two of them together. How did the C.I.A. or K.G.B. during the cold war ever figure out what was true and what was not?

Once again, the Ho used her all-to-familiar talent for mixing fact, fiction and opinion to create the illusion of her as an innocent victim and defender of womanhood with me as the stereotypical devil incarnate. But I couldn't figure out whether she meant the illusion for my agent, herself, me or all three of us. Perhaps she merely rehearsed her testimony for trial, if the case ever made it that far.

According to my double-agent:

“Alina had large dark circles under her eyes that I never saw before even when she was tired. She looked like she had a lot on her mind. There was a lot boiling up inside her about you that she stopped holding back and some of it flooded out. She probably has no one to confide in.”

She had no one to rely on other than her mother because people were always useable and disposable to her.

“Alina said, ‘I have serious problems with my old boy friend. He is a real asshole and is suing me in court. He really hates me and wants to deport me.’”

She was right about that last part.

“A couple of days ago we were in court. It was a horrible experience. He started calling me names like slut and prostitute.”

Not exactly accurate but close enough. My wife's delusional image of her innocence makes it impossible for her to face the truth about her lechery.

“She was very upset and mad about the court experience. She did not talk about it as if it were a victory. She continued to say, ‘In a few weeks there will be a deposition. My boyfriend and I will be in the same room and he will ask me questions about my sexual activities. It will be like an electric chair.’”

There was no deposition scheduled. She must have confused deposition with the few weeks I had to make a motion to set Silpe’s fraud aside. If the judge denied the motion, which she would, there would be no depositions because the fraudulent settlement would stand—case over, her victory.

“My old boy friend has had three lawyers because he does not get along with anyone, and he works outside the law while I work within the law. My old boy friend had problems with police in Russia and America. He had three problems with the police.”

Gee, I wondered what those three problems were? Naturally, the Ho didn’t elucidate, but the subterfuge was obvious: claim her accuser the real criminal while she’s the innocent. Girls are excellent at this tactic of turning the tables.

“My lawyer is very good but he is expensive and so far cost me \$5000. It is a lot of money but what my lawyer will do is worth it. He can get me papers. My old boyfriend tells everyone I work at Flash Dancers. He was the one who helped me find this job so he could pimp me. He wanted me to sign a contract for 25 years. He would get a percentage of the money I made at Flash Dancers. I was willing to sign a three-year contract but not 25 years.”

Her cover-up continued with the typical Feminazi tale demonizing the man in order to shift attention away from the girl’s nefarious activities. A 25-year contract for stripping and prostituting—get real. What man would pay money for her when she was fifty?

“I had some feelings towards him and he towards me, but it never worked out because he is unable to love. If he does something for you, he expects something in return. Sometimes I really hate him because he is so cold blooded, calculating and methodical in the way he is trying to destroy me. As long as he crawls, he will never stop bothering me. He caused me so much humiliation. It is very difficult for me to cope. Sometimes I think about suicide. But I have a strong philosophy and outlook on life. I believe in God and he gives me strength and my old boy friend is a cleansing for my soul. I hate my old boy friend for all the humiliation he caused me. I would like something to happen to him. I would like him to get his ass busted. But I will not go with the Russian way. I will stick with the American way. If something happens to him, I would be the main suspect.”

One characteristic about the Ho and most girls, they can sure play the sympathy strings to evoke an image of a cupid driven, valiant, virtuous woman who fell for the wrong man. The Ho went into her manufactured tear routine for added effect in this part of the conversation. Tears of hypocrisy don't cleanse the soul, although her anti-Christ savior Sergei Lazarev claims such. In truth, she never had any feelings for me other than as an object of her lust for a green card, which her diary makes clear. As for the hogwash about my investigations in Russia pushing her to suicide, I wish they would, but they wouldn't. She loves money and pleasure too much to kill herself, although she would pay one of her Russian hoodlum clients to liquidate me. That phony denial about using the "Russian way" meant she was actually considering it.

"He tells everyone I have over \$100,000 but I do not. My former boy friend tells everybody I am a whore. He spends all of his money just to destroy me. He hires detectives and has connections with the F.S.B. to tap my telephone in Krasnodar. My mother found out about the tap and went to the police, but there was a cover-up because he has connections with the F.S.B. He functions outside the law while I function within the law. He goes to Russia giving out flyers and contacting my friends to find out information about my past life. He tells them I am a whore and a prostitute, but my friends know what I am and they support me.

The truth hurts, especially to a phony. As for her friends supporting her, she's probably right since she has no friends, other than the old whore her mother.

"My mother supports me. My old boyfriend is a cruel man, sadist. Even in bed he was cruel, very forceful to the point of rape. He has a lot of hatred."

Here we go again with the Feminazi grab bag of false accusations meant to intimidate men, this time rape. How many innocent guys sit rotting in prison because of sluts lying about rape? Girls always pretend to be heaven's angels while lying with a vengeance. It's all so predictable. Whenever Feminazi whores want something from men who refuse to do their bidding, the Feminazis start shouting sexual harassment or rape. In a just society, such ploys fail amid the court and media's laughter but not in Feminarchy America where girls dance a merry jig on the pedestal of preferential treatment. In America, a girl can sue a man for sexual

harassment—lie and win a big settlement. She can accuse a man of rape—lie and send him to jail for years. She can even intimidate a man’s employer into giving her his job, but she can’t make him love her!

“Because of my unpleasant experience with him, I feel hate towards sex and men in general. I am strong and will not let him do to me what he has done to others. I will not let him do to others what he has done to me.

What trash, all of it, she told me the baloney about not having any more boyfriends when she moved out. I didn’t believe her then and still didn’t. Sex fuels her in a way nothing else does. She uses it and drugs to manipulate, control and gain personal power over others. As for hating men, she felt that way long before I met her. And a strange hatred it is because it doesn’t apply to men’s money or their groins. Her hatred probably only applies to when guys catch on to her scheming. As for the “others,” she never knew anything about my passed girl friends, but her routine of fighting for sluts today and tomorrow does sound rather catchy, likely written by her lawyers, and depicts her as a modern day Joan of Arc. Hmmm, I wonder if that French girl was a whore too?

Analyzing the web of verbal garbage from my Janus agent and Janus wife became too obscure in the pyramid of lies, partial truths, dissemblances and projections that I retired my agent for the time being, took a step back and used logic to make a decision on the motion.

My reasoning started with the knowledge that besides herself and mother, the Ho loved money above everything else. Hoing in America meant more money than she could possibly earn any other place in the world. It also opened up a market of millions of suckers for the taking, men who lacked even an inkling of the vicious, money-grubbing, duplicitous nature of Russian girls. Most Russian men were on to hos like my wife and knew the only way to straighten them out required a little pugilistic punishment. In America, however, the Feminazis

had destroyed men's most effective defense against conniving, amoral females by propagating the lie that years of emotional abuse from a female didn't justify a slap in the face. The Ho saw America as the perfect place for her to plunder, but in order to stay here, she needed a permanent green card.

Right from the day I met her, she angled her actions to get to America permanently. First with false endearments, lies of hardship and promises to change that brought her sorry ass to these shores. Then she resorted to threatening me and her attorneys instructed her to file a perjured Temporary Order of Protection to coerce me into agreeing to lie before the INS to assure she obtained a permanent green card. When neither worked, her attorneys threatened to brand me a wife-beater with phony medical records and a criminal by falsely charging me with extortion—all in an attempt to avoid a trial that would expose the Ho and her attorneys' misdoings. Ironically, her attorneys couldn't have imagined at the out set that my own gutless attorney would take a page from the Ho's Satanic bible and use treachery to manipulate me into relinquishing my right to a trial by jury.

Thanks to the Ho, her attorneys, my former attorney Silpe, the Judge, and an institutionally corrupt judicial system my day in court vanished. But I kept remembering the Immigration official at the Moscow Embassy telling me to get any court decree as soon as possible. Okay, if Immigration wanted to start its removal investigation right away into the Ho, then go for a divorce settlement, and let her contend with the costs of battling a federal agency. My time and money could be better used finding additional leads for the Embassy to investigate.

Contacting Xenia in Moscow, I asked her to try again to contact Svetlana and instruct her to move forward in obtaining any leads for INS from anyone who might still be willing to talk about my wife's prostitution, copies of the Ho's writing and push the Krasnodar prosecutor to

indict Inessa. It was still necessary to keep every potential knife in the Ho's heart or whatever organ occupied that area of her chest.

Friday evening, October 19, 2001, while talking with my martial arts instructor after class my mobile started beeping that I had a message.

Mark said, "If that's my girl, let me talk to her."

His girlfriend, one of the black belts, had this strange habit of calling everybody else's mobile to reach him rather than calling his.

Instead of hearing her pleasant Latina voice, I caught the beginning of a belligerent voicemail from some guy calling himself John Madison. I knew it meant trouble but wasn't about to let it interfere with my conversation with Mark. When I finally arrived home that evening, I played the entire message:

"Roy Den Hollander, how are you? This is John Madison calling on behalf of Angelina. Your ex or soon to be ex wife."

At that point I heard the Ho say something in the background but couldn't make it out.

"Now that she is getting new counsel, and mainly we're going to challenge every answer to your filings, every aspect of this marriage, being that it originated in Russia. And basically try to understand that because of the fact that things didn't work out, your malicious actions are basically going to be very carefully reviewed, not only by the proper authorities, but also under every ledger of the lawyer."

Those sentences told me I was dealing with a cretin. The proper phrase was "every measure of the law," ledgers are business terminology.

"We will challenge every single aspect of your filings and of this case. And I assure you one thing; we're not going to basically keep our eyes closed to this issue. We are going to basically be looking at this very carefully, and we will challenge you on every aspect. I assure you of one thing on this arbitration hearing, I will be attending."

This goon, and it was a goon, couldn't get his facts right. It wasn't an arbitration hearing but a motion.

“And as far as everything else goes, I can tell you first hand with all due respect that I’m disgusted by the way you handled it. And quite frankly, I question every single bit of your motions and your filings. And, I assure you one thing, that this issue is definitely going to be an issue that you’re going to have to face up to reality on my friend. So as far as it goes, I will leave you with that. And I will try to reach you at home to see if you are there.”

“But in the meantime, bear in mind that this case is not going to go basically with her lying down and being abused over this whole issue.”

Why not? Prone was her favorite position.

“And you trying to take advantage of the situation and try to claim all these (laughter) basic unfounded claims against her. Which basically have no foundation whatsoever. On the other hand, it really reflects on you on how you’ve handled this, and that a lot of your issues are very questionable. So, never the less, I will be trying to get in touch with you and have yourself a nice day.”

This John Madison was not a lawyer, although he implied it. A lawyer would never use his client’s first name, which in this case was the pseudonym she used for hoing; never contact directly a person represented by a lawyer, which I was; never leave such an obviously threatening message on someone’s voicemail; and never fail to leave a number where he could be reached. No this guy was likely a hood.

The message had nothing to do with legalities, but was a disguised threat of physical violence warning me not to make the motion to set aside Silpe’s fraud, which I had already decided not to. The Ho and her attorneys must have decided to use some non-legal muscle as insurance to keep Silpe’s fraud in tact. Rather lame and a waste of time I thought. There was no way Lobis would grant a motion. After all, she was instrumental in forcing Silpe into lying to me.

The next day, as a long shot, I went to my local the police station, the 13<sup>th</sup> Precinct, but the officers on the desk laughed at me and said there was nothing they could do, even though I had a tape of the message, which they refused to listen to. I’m sure if I had been a ho, they’d have been more helpful.

## **Stupid Frigging Fool**

By Roy Den Hollander

### Part 5

#### Don't Stop Now

As Roy Cohn once said toward the end of his days, “The flow of life has turned against me.” I now knew how he felt. Feeling utterly alone, doomed, tricked by traitors that included my own lawyer Silpe and persecuted by the Feminazi dominated courts that had crushed any hope of justice, I gave up my earlier, tentative presumption that possibly, just maybe, an omnipotent intelligence existed to make the crooked straight and set the wrongs right. I closed the bibles that I had previously left open around my apartment to protect me from the Ho's black magic and put them on the shelf along with the cross from my voodoo priestess. They didn't work. The ancient Western gods and goddesses didn't exist, at least not in my life. Still I assumed, or wished, that metaphysical forces without the face of a deity worked behind the scenes to somehow make all of man's pain and suffering worthwhile, and turned to eastern philosophy such as Shambahla, Hinduism and Zen Buddhism.

From what I could understand, these philosophies taught that “basic goodness” existed in the universe. Peace in life came from accepting that basic goodness and living in harmony with it. The definition of basic goodness, however, was somewhat vague. Apparently, if something was natural, not an artifice, and worked, than it was good. Harmonizing one's life with basic goodness didn't mean the absence of pain, suffering and evil, but rather a realization that these are inevitable experiences in living that should be met with dignity and an open heart. The key seemed that when a man found himself lost, he needed to transcend his ego, always vulnerable to one slight or another, his fear and lust for material goods, such as hot young ladies. I doubted



such goals attainable, but I continued to read and replaced the Bibles with opened Hindu scriptures and Zen teachings.

Initially, my surroundings felt a little less like a morgue, but my skepticism in philosophies persisted. Down throughout history societies kept citizens chained to various occupations and classes, so belief systems developed to provide relief for those prevented from pursuing their first-best destinies. Today, when a person cannot pursue his first-best destiny because of a dysfunctional upbringing, or an oppressive society, then his only recourse are the philosophies, religions, mythologies, magic and mysticisms out of the past or the psychotropic drugs of modern times. Any or all of them may come into play in an attempt to relieve a person's misery by providing a way to live that creates a sense, or an illusion, of unity with the universe, a sense of presence and harmony. An individual's first-best destiny would have delivered that essential harmony, but without it, another mechanism was and is always needed.

On November 2, 2001, the lesbian judge Lobis ruled the disaster of my marriage to a Russian prostitute over as a result of a settlement agreement Silpe tricked me into signing. Both sides admitted engaging in innocuous incidents that the court used to justify a divorce by ruling such acts as cruel and inhuman. What a joke! To the court cruel and inhuman meant the Ho smashing one of my coffee cups, calling me crazy, my checking up on her telephone calls and telling her to see a psychiatrist. In the real world, incidents like these didn't amount to cruel and inhuman treatment, but the female run courts said they did because it enabled them to circumvented New York State law that required divorces based on fault, which meant conduct that made living together untenable. The judges, in effect, turned New York into a no-fault state by granting divorces based on insignificant acts because the judges' personal beliefs in political

correctionalism disagreed with the elected legislature. Chalk up another victory for the sluts and Feminazis.

When I returned home from the court, an email message from the Internet host that carried the site with the Ho's diary, photos and masturbation clips stated someone tried to hack into the site by obtaining my account number, which would allow anyone to edit or delete the contents. The attempt not only told me that she desperately wanted the web site shut down, but would eventually seek revenge by manipulating some hood client of hers to play me a visit. Fine, let him come, we'll see who wins.

After assuring the integrity of my site, I contacted Immigration at the Moscow Embassy to inform them of the divorce and provide some more leads and evidence that might assist their investigation in proving the Ho a prostitute. These included her masturbation video clips, copies of the nude photos that Leo used for advertising her—the guys at the Embassy would get a kick out of all this—and handwritten letters she sent to Leo from Cyprus requesting copies of the nude photos that she later sold to “Grandpa” after masturbating him. I also told Immigration of the original pages of her diary, which she handed over to me the previous September, that were covered with her fingerprints. Immigration could use the letters, and, if needed, the original diary pages to verify that the Ho actually wrote her memoirs, but showing the diary represented actual events rather than a novel or something I forced her to write might prove more difficult. Immigration now faced the same problem I did during the annulment/divorce proceedings of obtaining evidence that showed the diary reflected reality, which, given the nature of American bureaucracies, meant the burden fell to me, the citizen, to point them in the right direction. Something the Embassy actually asked me to do.

Three days later, the Embassy informed me that it had initiated its deportation proceeding against the Ho. Yes! A victory at last, but I knew it no guarantee for the triumph of righteousness, since investigations and legal procedures often go astray due to prostitute lawyers, bureaucratic incompetence or the recent Political Correctionalist trend that gutted Immigration's authority by giving alien criminals more rights than law-abiding citizens. Millions of illegals commit Federal misdemeanors or felons and get away with it. For example, a one time illegal entry into the U.S. is a misdemeanor, but two or more is a felon. But that doesn't bother the female driven lefties that deem it worth risking the safety and lives of American citizens in order to further their ideology of protecting everybody's sensitivities, such as illegal aliens.

The investigation and hopefully deportation of the Ho might take years during which she would continue to benefit to the tune of over \$150,000 annually for defrauding me, Immigration, the State Department and the I.R.S. How could she not believe that crime pays? Another factor that might further delay her removal came from the 911 tragedy. Immigration was inundated with higher priority investigations to track down and deport all the lunatic terrorists let into the country over the past decade as a result of Billy-Bob Clinton's open door policy. Clinton pushed for lenient immigration policies and enforcement because naturalized citizens and non-citizens tended to vote for Democratic politicians. For example, in preparation for the 1996 election, he reduced the time for processing naturalization applications from two years to six months in key states. To meet the new deadline, Immigration skipped criminal background checks. Out of the 1.3 million aliens naturalized, 80,000 were criminals. Much the same is happening under Obama as he runs for re-election.

On the other hand, the drubbing Immigration received from the media and politicians over its incompetence and sloth surrounding the 911 attacks might actually prod the agency into

doing its job concerning the Ho. Every last one of the 911 hijackers had entered the U.S. legally on visas. Under the glare of the media and public scrutiny, Immigration might be less likely to bury an investigation involving a prostitute that not only grew up in Chechnya, but also hung out with Chechen gangsters because the world now knew that Usama Bin Laden used Chechen criminals in his terrorist network. Still, the core culture of incompetence and corruption at the INS gave illegal alien criminals like the Ho the advantage. Even aliens convicted of crimes in the U.S. are often not deported. The father of one of the girls in my martial arts class was busted for pushing a large amount of coke. Immigration decided not to deport him.

If the immigration agents or someone else isn't bribed and Immigration pushes forward with its investigation rather than giving up and allowing the Ho to become a permanent resident through the rubber-stamp VAWA waiver and the department decides to try to deport her, INS will provide the Ho notice of a deportation hearing before an administrative law judge.

Assuming the administrative law judge decides to kick her out of the county, she could appeal to the Bureau of Immigration Appeals and then to the U.S. Second Circuit Court of Appeals.

During the appeal process, she's free to ply her trade in the underground economy unless she commits an aggravated assault—not likely. She could also file for a voluntary departure in which she agrees to leave the country on her own and is barred from reentering for a period of time. In effect, it allows aliens to leave and enter legally, or leave and enter illegally. If a Federal Court decides to deny her appeal and deport her, Immigration would send her a letter telling her to report for removal from the U.S. INS agents call such letters “run letters”—guess why?

Immigration no longer takes into custody aliens it has to deport unless they threatened the public safety, in which case the government probably couldn't find them anyway, as with some

of the 911 hijackers. Right after the 911 tragedy, Immigration had a backlog of over 300,000 aliens that the courts ordered out of the country but didn't go. Eighty-seven percent of illegal aliens ordered deported aren't because Immigration can't find them or, if it can, doesn't bother taking them into custody because of the lack of jail space, only 20,000 beds. In the Ho's case, Immigration could ask the administrative law judge to make the Ho post bond, but given the tendency to let girls get away with murder in America, this seemed unlikely. Even if the judge did require a bond, the Ho would just jump bail anyway. If the bail bondsman found her and took her to Immigration as a fugitive, Immigration would probably not accept her because of the lack of jail space. CBS News actually did a story on such a case.

CBS went along with a bail bondsman for the arrest of an illegal alien whom INS had ordered deported and who had jumped bail. The bondsman found the illegal at his house and took him to an INS office with CBS in tow, but INS refused to arrest the guy, so he went back home.

At any time during the process, which might last years, the Ho could disappear into the black hole of America's sex industry to join the vast underground of millions of illegals living here. Most strip clubs, like Flash Dancers, and prostitution parlors don't require any identification, just tits and asses with loose morals. And if the Ho wanted fake identification, she could easily buy it through the many illegals that stripped at Flash Dancers or from the hoods that run the place. In the end, whether Immigration blew the case or obtained a removal order upheld by the Federal Courts, the Ho wasn't going anywhere.

The Immigration official at the Embassy knew all too well the problems with deporting when VAWA diminished almost to oblivion the value of evidence from the one adversary most knowledgeable about an alien spouse's violations, the American spouse. Even if the Feminist

created and trained VAWA Unit in Vermont didn't okay her waiver application for permanent residence, a girl with the Ho's money could easily drag out the legal process for years or simply slither into the underworld. The official, however, confidently told me that if she went underground, she would surface eventually because people like her always did. He would rather not have to wait, so in preparation for any eventual disappearance, he requested from me a list of people who might help her hide. He also asked me to keep close tabs on her whereabouts, and notify him of any change of address or work. Once again, the citizen ends up doing the Government's work.

The Ho's apartment lease terminated at the end of the month, so I needed to find out whether she renewed or chose to begin her disappearance act early. With my Yankee hat on as a disguise, I went over to her building to snoop around. It turned out that on a workday, she left her apartment in Astoria around 6:05 PM, walked to the 30<sup>th</sup> Avenue subway station, arrived there between 6:15 to 6:17 PM and caught the 6:19 PM train to Manhattan. Like all good businesswomen, punctuality meant efficiency that maximized her profits. Waiting in the shadows until she boarded her train one evening, I then walked to her building. The evening rush-hour was on, so a number of people would be entering her locked building and I could just follow them inside. One young man turned into the building's courtyard, I quickly came up behind him, pulled out my keys as though I lived there. He saw me, a middle-aged, gray haired man, thought nothing of it and politely let me inside. I headed downstairs for the buildings superintendent and knocked on his door. A pretty pubescent girl opened it.

“Is the superintendent here?”

“Dad,” she yelled.

Out came a tall man in his thirties holding a pan in which I assumed he was preparing dinner. Where was his wife?

Asking about the Ho's apartment, I said, "I heard that apartment 4H is up for rent, and I'm interested in it." In New York lingo that meant I was willing to pay the super a bribe for inside information on any available apartments. That's how New Yorkers find out about vacancies before they are advertised. Once an apartment is listed in the newspapers, it either doesn't exist or was already rented by the time a person reads the ad.

He responded in a thick Russian accent with surprise, "No, as far as I know the apartment lease was renewed."

"That's the apartment with the tall Russian lady?"

"Yes, I know her, and she is not moving out," he replied.

To myself I said, I'm sure you do know her! "Thanks, my mistake. Sorry to interrupt your dinner." I left with a glance at his teenage daughter. In my younger days she would have returned the look.

I told Immigration the Ho was locked into her apartment for another year. Checking that she still worked at Flash Dancers proved easier. Periodically, I'd call and ask whether "Angelina was dancing tonight?" to which they always politely replied yes or no. If I had a girl call, she could also find out whether the Ho would work the following night or was on vacation. Another way to keep tabs on her work was sitting in a restaurant across the street from Flash Dancers where I could see the girls enter the club for the evening shift. On the nights she worked, the Ho always strutted through the doors between 6:55 and 7:05 pm—very punctual.

With no other U.S. agency interested in enforcing the laws against the Ho, I also shifted my Russian forces to providing any useful leads and information to Immigration at the Embassy.

The aim stayed the same as in the annulment/divorce case, tracking down information and developing leads on the Ho's history of selling sex and any other nefarious acts that might prove useful. Xenia passed the word to Svetlana, who actually reappeared in Moscow but in a hospital.

Xenia said "Svetlana has been seriously ill since you first met her in June. She wouldn't tell me with what, but kept saying things were getting done when they weren't."

"Obviously, she assumed I'd switch attorneys if I knew about her illness, and I would have." I replied.

Xenia and I decided to wait until Svetlana finished her treatment in Moscow. If she could no longer function, then Xenia would find a new attorney in Krasnodar. Xenia also began looking for a contact in Cyprus to show that the club Zygus, where the Ho had worked, sold girls to its customers. In the meantime, Nadya, my Krasnodar translator, returned from an extended vacation in Chile. She started tracking down and interviewing various people with knowledge of the Ho and Krasnodar's sex industry.

All the information and leads from Russia would flow through Xenia for review and then she'd personally hand it over to the Embassy official. Any information from me was mailed directly to the official. The Embassy could then use it to direct its investigation. Sounded simple enough but it wasn't. The anthrax scare shut down the Embassy's U.S. postal service so that the only way for the personnel to receive mail was the private carrier Federal Express. And as a result of 911, physical access to the Embassy was shut down for a few months, so Xenia had to meet the official out in the street to hand over any materials.

The Embassy received from me the Ho's perjured financial statement from the annulment/divorce case. Immigration could use it to show her up as a chronic liar on the witness stand, if it ever got her there. I notified them about her American credit card, which she



probably used to transfer money out of the U.S. and her Cyprus mutual fund account. The Embassy official responded that such information didn't apply to Immigration violations, but that the more information they provided the U.S. Attorney, who ultimately would prosecute the case, the better. Immigration in turn requested some information that seemed irrelevant to me, such as the birth dates of Leo, Anastasia and Dima and the last names of the Ho's playing around girls: Lena and Olga. Nadya was able to dig up some of the information.

There were some possible avenues for investigation that I suggested to the Embassy. For example, contacting Anastasia and Dima Vasilyeva at their American address, which INS now had thanks to me, to obtain a copy of the contract the Ho signed with the owners of the Zygos Club. Anastasia had told me about the contract during my April visit to Krasnodar but claimed only the Athanasious in Cyprus had a copy—baloney. The contract could infer prostitution, but at the very least, it would confirm the Ho working in the strip club Zygos. I never heard back whether Immigration tried to obtain the contract. When the Embassy chose not to tell me something, I didn't push the matter for fear of opening up the officials to charges of bias or collusion. My place was merely to provide them information or point them in the direction of useful evidence. Other documents I sent the Embassy included the Ho's time sheets indicating which days she worked at Flash Dancers.

My "agent" went over to Flash Dancers to find out when the Ho planned her next vacation to mother Russia. Immigration might find the information useful, and I could always waste the cost of a telephone call informing U.S. Customs of another violation of the laws they were suppose to but never enforced. Unfortunately, my timing went a missed with this operation. The Ho told my agent she just returned from a vacation to Disney World and Miami. She probably took the time off but lied about her destinations in just another arrogant taunt in the

Ho's infantile effort to upset me with her stupid stories of going where we went, but with other men. Like all vain females, she actually thought I fantasized about having her back. She'd never know that my dream about her was to one day fly to Krasnodar to urinate on her grave. Well, we all need our dreams to keep us going. The Ho didn't divulge to my agent any plans for her next vacation, so the expenses I paid, as always, partly flowed into the Russian septic tank of my ex-wife, but this time with zero return.

The continuing investigation, preoccupation or obsession with justice kept revealing new insights that created in me prescience for the Ho's future plans. It was as though I could almost see into that twisted sewer of her mind with a little help from logic. The Ho spent her "Wonder Years" in the barbaric, feudal culture of Chechnya where the blood lust for vengeance rivaled Russian greed for money. She adopted both traits as goddess-type virtues. For the present, she concentrated on slaking her greed. But sometime down the road after the Ho won her permanent green card or went underground or even was deported, she'd pay around \$5000, the going price to kill a non-Russian, plus travel expenses, to quench her hatred for me. It was her style to wait, "Be patient," she always said. And the wait made sense. If she did anything before, the authorities would pounce on her, maybe. But in the future, as memories fade and my complaints about her to various agencies ended up in the shredder, she will strike with a vengeance worthy of the barbaric culture that produced her.

When I originally formulated my war objectives and strategy after receiving the Temporary Order of Protection, I didn't consciously consider such a threat, but, prophetically, took it into account anyway without realizing it. Now all my efforts focused on bringing justice to her first, but as I told Mark and Moody one night while listening to Ludacris' new song "Area Codes" on the car radio, "There's still a long road to ho."

## Happy Holidays

The holiday season started, but for me there was no peace from the Ho horrors in my life. The Holidays always depressed me, but now, unlike earlier years, all hope seemed to vanish from my existence. Struggling to stay sane enough to fight the Ho, I socialized with friends, went to lectures and movies, worked out, hit the clubs where, to my surprise, some young things expressed interest. But, for me, as pleasing, attractive and soft as these young girls were, I wasn't looking for any involvement. A relationship would only distract me from the hate that drove me in this holy war—my personal jihada.

In a mythological sense, I lived in the underworld where dragons rend lives that may or may not reform into the approximation of a human being. As Nietzsche said, "He who fights too long with dragons becomes a dragon himself." My nightly dreams told of a long distance run dodging obstacles, taking certain actions, then careening into the abyss that I had glimpsed on two other occasions in my life, once in joy when young, once in sorrow when middle age. My fate showed clear, the result of the flow of a universe that went beyond the egoistical need for justice. The pending void made that fate a duty, an obligation that I needed to fulfill. The evolution of the universe had brought to me deeds to do. Miniscule acts, but still acts only I could perform. I had to push forward with this war. Life no longer held anything of joy for me, just deeds to do.

It made no sense to drag my existence out to its natural end, which promised only more and worst misery. The body kept decaying, opportunities vanishing. Girls that I wanted didn't want me, just the money they thought I had or free legal advice, and as for the flabby body, foul mouth, insulting dinosaurs that did want me, I'd rather be dead than touch them. Much of the time, my body and mind endured a dull aching pain from old sports injuries, regrets, humiliations

and insults from a life of failures while I waited for the consequences of the latest heist by the highwayman of the stock market and the bane of age discrimination to fling me into poverty. Logic and time required betting what was left of life on punishing the Ho and her allies who made such evil possible—the Feminazis.

At a Thanksgiving Day party, Cindi's husband Keith, an actor who worked part-time as a waiter at a trendy Upper Westside restaurant, said the Ho showed up with a date at one of his tables around the end of October 2001. Keith and the Ho knew each other slightly from working together at a corporate event, but she either didn't recognize him or pretended not to. When the Ho went to the girl's room, Keith asked the guy if his date's name was "Angel" to which he said yes.

Remembering the theory of "Ubiquity" in which seemingly inconsequential acts may have important repercussions, I quizzed Keith on the incident.

"Did you over hear anything they said?"

"No."

"Did she use the guy's name?"

"Not that I heard."

"What did the guy look like?"

"He was short, Asian and in his early twenties."

The Ho was equal an opportunity slut, so no surprise in her going out with a short Asian. The only color that mattered to her was green, and the only size, the thickness of a man's wallet. But the odds that an Asian in his twenties would have enough money to attract her seemed slim. It didn't logically follow or feel right to my intuition, so I let it bounce around my unconscious for a while. During dinner, the anomaly dissipated: the Asian guy was probably Tony Wong,

my so-called buddy from Moscow who managed the Russian branch for Schering-Plough. It all fit. Wong was short and looked much younger than his 32 years. He had money and always tried to bed his friends' girls, wives and daughters—most likely the result of an inferiority complex from his lack of height. As for the Ho, she would learn Wong was as cheap as her, but doing him probably satisfied some of her desire for vengeance against me. Lastly, only a small number of people, such as Keith and Wong, referred to her, as I once did, with the name “Angel.”

My logic and intuition fell into harmony, but in order to make sure of reality, I ran a little con on Wong to make sure he was the Asian with the Ho. Emailing him that I heard he was in New York City at the end of October, I feigned hurt that he didn't contact me. Naturally, I didn't mention the Ho sighting. He responded that he had visited the City with his new Russian girlfriend who took up all his time. As proof, he attached a picture of his girl, but it didn't show him, which is what I was angling for—his picture. In my reply, I feigned banter that no girl as pretty as the one in the picture would go out with him, and accused him of clipping the photo from a fashion magazine. Right on cue, just like an insecure teenager, and on the same day, he emailed me photos of him and her together to prove his desirability to the other sex. Perfect, I took the photos with Wong in them to Keith. “Yea, that's him. That's the guy who was with Angel at the restaurant.” Keith told me. Wong dating the Ho didn't surprise me too much, since I always knew him a sleaze although a personable one, but it did give me an opportunity to try to shake some information out of him. Anything the Ho told him might prove useful to Immigration at the Embassy. Playing ignorant, I arranged to meet Tony when he visited New York over Christmas.

The Internal Revenue Service, in the spirit of the season as another excuse not to do any work, sent me a form letter refusing to investigate the Ho's tax evasion. This really ticked me off. The I.R.S. nails hard-working, middle-class folk for minor mistakes but lets go a slut cheating the country out of tens of thousands of dollars against whom they have probable cause to investigate. So I contacted a few male alumni from my law school, George Washington University, who were working for the I.R.S. in Washington, D.C. to see whether anyone could help.

One alumnus said, "The main problem with tax evasion in all cash businesses is estimating the amount of money that workers make."

To which I asked, "Doesn't the I.R.S. have guidelines for estimating a stripper's income as it does for bartenders and waiters, who make most of their income from cash tips?"

"No, we never formulated any guidelines."

Unbelievable! But I should have expected it. The I.R.S. nickels and dimes decent, hard working waiters and bartenders but lets lap dancers cheat the government of literally billions of dollars a year.

The alum continued, "But I'll see what I can do to interest the fellows up in New York to your case."

I thanked him for the help and information.

Within days, I received a call from I.R.S.'s Criminal Investigation Division, CID, in Brooklyn. The agent told me the office received a directive from headquarters in Washington to contact me about the Ho's tax evasion. Thank goodness some of the good ol' boy network still functioned in the eternal battle against the feminine evil now engulfing the world in a night of despair.

Armed with a package of documents, I rushed down to meet the agent that same day. By December 2001, the Ho had easily grossed over \$150,000 in unreported income from lap dancing alone. The agent, however, quizzed me about the Ho's Chechen connections rather than her tax evasion. What was with these guys? So she grew up in Gorzny and was seen with Chechen hoods. They had an obvious case of tax evasion but showed no interest. The agent's area of responsibility since 911 was tracking terrorist assets, so why was he talking to me? My ex-wife hung out with Russian and Chechen gangsters back in Russia, but I doubted she knew any terrorists unless for a lap dance or prostitution gig. My hope for action on her tax evasion faded. According to the agent, I.R.S. policy prevented any investigation of tax evasion unless it persisted for three consecutive years or amounted to sums of money in the hundreds of thousands of dollars in unpaid taxes. The more than \$40,000 a year in taxes the Ho failed to pay didn't matter. He also said it was too difficult determining a lap dancer's income, so the I.R.S. didn't bother. Even the Ho's secret Cyprus bank account that she failed to report on her 2000 return didn't interest him. The I.R.S. was a paper tiger when it came to the criminal economy but would willing destroy a middle-class citizen who tried to comply with its arcane regulations but made a mistake—so much for the good ol' boy network.

The I.R.S.'s requirements made no sense other than to make things easier for them. Why wait for three years in a row of tax evasion? So the hos can do two years of tax evasion, skip a year and then do another two years in a row and avoid an investigation? And why not estimate a stripper's income just as they did the tips received by bartenders and waitresses, another cash business but small change compared to lap dancers? The Internet contained websites set up by lap-dancers for lap-dancers to provide girls in the industry information on "Gentlemen's Clubs," such as average take home pay per shift, management's cut, type of clientele, average amount of

time a guy stayed in a club, average total amount of dollars a guy spent and average amount of money he walked in with. That last one made me wonder how the hos determined it. Guess when it comes to the thickness of a man's wallet, they have their ways.

The I.R.S. could easily estimate the amount of cash generated in a club like Flash Dancers. Multiply the number of customers, derived from the total amount of admission paid, times the average amount a guy spends for the total amount of money flowing into a club on one night during the week. The number of customers varies with each night, so by doing the same for all seven nights will yield a good approximation of the money that enters a club and exchanges hands—the taxable event. Apportion the cash flow among the owners, strippers, waitresses and bartenders to estimate everybody's income, including the hos. If the taxmen don't want to use stripper statistics, they can conduct their own industry research. For example, the bartenders and waitresses in these clubs know how much the average stripper makes and are willing to talk about it. Even the lap dancers will tell a stranger how many dances they average, but they wouldn't say how much they make. Since they apparently can't do the math, they assume no one can. Estimating the average stripper's nightly income at any particular club is not difficult, and by cross-referencing that with a club's records of who performs each night will allow the I.R.S. to make a fair estimate of a particular stripper's income. All it takes is a little bit of work, which the institutional sloth of the Government prevents.

So how much do all the ho clubs in America generate that is never or dramatically underreported? Take Flash Dancers as a somewhat representative example. The club has a day shift from 12 Noon to 8 PM and a nightshift from 8 PM to 4 AM. The nightshift uses around 75 girls every evening, 365 days a year, which generates a lap dancer cash flow of around \$13 million yearly—most of which the tax authorities never hear about. A recent law review article



estimated 2000 strip clubs in America. Since the average nightly take varies from club to club, assume just a thousand clubs in the U.S in order to be conservative. That yields an under-taxed cash stream to hos of \$13 billion. In effect, America's law abiding taxpayers are subsidizing lap dancers—not fair and not fiscally astute.

After futilely contacting various public officials with this information, I turned to America's newest hero, Mayor Rudolph Giuliani, by sending him a letter that the average stripper of which there were plenty in the City evaded taxes on an income of around \$100,000 a year. New York City taxed the income of its residents just as the Federal and State governments did, so lap dancers in the City cheated all three governments by not accurately reporting their income. If the City became interested in an underground stream of tax revenue, it might go after the Ho as an example to all strippers. As a follow up to my letter, I called the John Gambling radio talk show on which the Mayor regularly appeared for questions from the public. The Mayor, always a gentleman, politely said he would look into it, but Gambling in his arrogance and ignorance just laughed and cut me off. Fine, he's doing a lot more ho underwriting with his taxes than I am.

The Mayor, however, always a class act, was good to his word. The New York State Taxation and Finance Department, which held jurisdiction over city tax matters, sent me a letter saying the Mayor had contacted the Department's Commissioner about my concern and that the Department would conduct an investigation and wanted to interview me—nice to know people in high places.

The New York State tax agents were not interested in the Ho's individual tax evasion but violations by the operators of Flash Dancers. Flash Dancers, like most the strip clubs, claimed the girls worked as independent contractors for the customers because the customers paid them

directly. That meant management didn't need to withhold taxes or contribute to social security and unemployment insurance or even obtain the girls' social security numbers for 1099 filings—hard to do when they're illegals. Flash Dancers contended it only rented space to the girls for dancing, so it had zero tax reporting or paying obligations to the City, State and Federal governments. The State tax authorities wanted to show that the girls were really employees because management strictly controlled their working hours, breaks and assigned them specific duties, such as dancing on the stage when the disk jockey called their names or entertaining in the champagne room when the manager directed them. If the State proved the girls employees of Flash Dancers rather than independent contractors of the customers, then Flash Dancers and most of the other ho clubs in New York had violated the tax laws. That not only meant big fines, but in the future, strip club managers would have to keep track of all the girls' income and file reports with the tax department, which meant an end to ho tax evasion.

The State tax officials pumped me for all the information I knew on how Flash Dancers worked. I cooperated, since making hos pay their fair share of society's cost in the future was a worthy cause. Then they asked whether the Ho might work undercover for them to which I replied they'd have to ask her. That was all I needed, the Ho working undercover for New York State's tax department complete with immunity for all the crimes she committed, a likely reward of citizenship and the American life style at taxpayer expense in the witness protection program. This slut had a charmed life. Then again, I could notify the gangsters running Flash Dancers before the authorities put her under protection, but didn't.

During the same period, I filed a Disciplinary Complaint with New York State Court's Appellate Division against the Ho's attorney, Mundy. The complaint accused him of attempted coercion when he lied to my lawyers about having medical records showing I beat my wife and

an audiotape of my trying to extort money from her. Mundy committed the misdemeanor of attempted coercion when he tried to use the nonexistent evidence to intimidate me into settling the case. Mundy's willingness to violate the law to win a case made it likely that he also masterminded the threatening telephone call from the phantom John Madison.

My former attorney Silpe and the lesbian judge Lobis also violated certain codes of professional conduct in pursuing their own self-interests at the cost of my rights. They likely rationalized their actions under some warped socialized imagery of rushing to defend the fair damsel in distress. A delusion concept ingrained in eight hundred years of literature that some medieval ho invented to achieve money and power, and every mother since, Feminazi or ho, inculcated into her sons. As for the judge, I didn't have any useable ammunition, since she smartly dismissed me from her chambers before putting the screws to me. But I did have enough to file a Disciplinary Complaint against Silpe for entering a settlement without my permission and then lying to me about it. For the present, however, I held off on filing a complaint against him because I needed his and his bozo associate's testimony to support my allegation of Mundy's attempt to coerce me with the extortion charge. In addition, I needed my first attorney Judith for evidence that Mundy claimed to have medical records of my battering the Ho in his first effort to coerce me. Although Judith most likely colluded with Mundy to pressure me into a settlement, I wasn't going to file a complaint against her because I'd never be able to prove it.

In an irony of how small the world is, one of the girls from my study group when I spent a semester in Columbia's School of International Affairs knew one of the Ho's clients. The Ho kept business cards of various marks, and one worked for Nomura Securities where my friend not only worked, but she worked in the same office as the Ho's client. As a goof and in the chance of gaining some information, my friend agreed to confront him with frequenting Flash

Dancers and my ex-wife. The guy naturally denied everything but turned a bright red doing so. Fine, a reluctant witness to the Ho working at Flash Dancers and maybe prostitution, if the Embassy needed him.

Shortly before Christmas day, I sent my above-cover agent to Flash Dancers one last time. He reported the Ho planned to take a vacation after working Christmas Night until the end of January, which I believed, and to go out west, which I knew meant east. Once again, I notified U.S. Customs at Kennedy airport and this time provided them with the Cyrus mutual fund account into which she deposited her smuggled money and the Ho's credit card account as one of the means she used for illegally transferring funds out of the country. With the credit card, she probably bought traveler's checks or money orders to hide her cash flow from the I.R.S., which didn't care anyway, sent them to her credit card company to create a balance on her card that she later withdrew the money at a bank in Russia or elsewhere. Smart girl, better than stuffing wads of hundreds up her vagina like in the old days. Once again, Customs politely took the information and promptly did nothing. How I longed for the old days of the fifties and sixties when Federal officials dealt with the public in a gruff manner but actually did their job. Today they all sounded like graduates from charm school who knew how to respect people's sensitivities but nothing else. What about the taxpayer's right that a government agency do what his taxes are paying them to do? Doesn't mean a thing today with all these insidious female traits of the Political Correctionalists emphasizing form over content that end up undermining the effectiveness of institutions meant to protect Americans.

The Ho also kept up her attacks against me. Her computer hacker tried again to access the web site with her diary, pictures and masturbation video but with no success. Azul, her fellow traveler in Mexico, emailed me claiming she no longer felt close to the Ho because the Ho

had changed. Azul then tried to pump me for information about whether I planned to travel to Russia over the holidays under the pretense of inviting me to stop off on the way for some sexual fun with her—no way, slut! The Ho obviously lay behind Azul's feigned interest. My ex-wife probably feared another fact-finding trip to Krasnodar. So I played along with an intuitive lie that I planned to travel to St. Petersburg. Something rang prophetic about the place because I just knew that the Ho planned on visiting Valodya there over the holidays. Trying my own hand at manipulation, I also replied that the Ho did not seem the same to Azul because she was now rich, at least \$150,000 of rich. Hopefully the figure might breed resentment or even prod Azul to charge money for her spying services, which would surely anger my ex-wife.

My less than honorable buddy Wong arrived in town a couple of days before Christmas. We planned to meet after that day of joy for most but not for me. He'd probably take the Ho out while in New York City to show her off to some of his friends. Wong arrived the 23<sup>rd</sup> and the Ho's last day of work before her vacation was allegedly the 25<sup>th</sup>. Christmas Eve was the most probable night for their rendezvous, so I arranged with a buddy to stake out the Ho's apartment. While shaving before the stakeout, I thought about whether to confront the two or better to follow them. At that moment something invisible pushed my shaving hand cutting my lip with the razor. Apparently the Ho's demons finally breached the protective spells of my voodoo priestess, but if all they could do was nudge my hand, who cared. My growing ambivalence and boredom with the supernatural allowed me to take this escalation in the Ho's curses as one of many common day annoyances. But when my buddy failed to show with his car for the stakeout because it broke down, the Ho's curses again seemed more than an annoyance.

A couple of days later, Wong and I met at the Coffee Shop in Union Square, another trendy New York hangout for the young and hopeful.

As is my habit, I showed on time knowing Wong would arrive late, as do most insecure people. I ordered a non-alcohol beer from the pretty, young barmaid whose face betrayed an empty mind. She said she would have to check as to whether they had any. She came back with a beer and a smile that said tip me real good and I will pretend you turn me on. Where did bars find these walking pairs of breasts who thought MTV intellectually illuminating? What happened to the mature, male bartenders who knew a thing or two about life?

The crowd, all young enough to have me as a father, clearly thought themselves hip or cool or whatever the current terminology was. A couple of good-looking babes walked up next to me with one wearing a Chinese blouse with a dragon embroidered on it. A line automatically popped into my head, “Nice blouse.” She would then say thank you, and I would respond with, “Is it the year of the dragon again?” which I knew it wasn’t because that was the year I married the Ho. She’d say something back, and we’d be on our way with a conversation about meaningless rubbish and insincere smiles. But I didn’t make the move. The relationship with the Ho had jaded me and my experiences with pretty young things as lovers and friends over recent years made plain what I had missed in my younger days—they’re all hos, incapable of fidelity or honor and undeserving of trust. They know their window for fun, adventure and free drinks is short—age 15 to 25 maybe as late as their early thirties. So they rush to get as much sex and good times as quickly as possible from as many men as possible who end up paying the tab while these sluts declare themselves independent women experiencing their sexuality.

All girls are hos because only ho genes made it this far up the evolutionary tree, so why waste my time pretending they’re good girls; they aren’t, and just because the Feminazis declare otherwise doesn’t make it so. Perhaps political correctionalism exists only to help girls delude themselves into believing they’re not whores.

Wong finally showed, only thirty minutes late—on time by his standards. He seemed nervous. We chatted a little and then I asked,

“So, how’s Angel?”

He paused, “How would I know?”

“You’re dating her.”

“What! Are you crazy? Are you on drugs?”—A little too emphatic and rehearsed this response.

“Wong, I have a witness that identified you with her.”

He didn’t respond to this but continued with the tactic that a good defense is a personal attack. “What’s happening to you Roy? You’re not making any sense. She must have warped your head. Do you realize how absurd what you just said is?”

“I want to know what she said Wong? I don’t care about your dating her; I just want the information on what she said.”

He responded by going into the guilt trip, “I drove 45 minutes to meet you. I left my brother and nieces to come down here just so you could get information?” Wong spoke garbage. If the Ho was still in town, he probably drove in from his brother’s to spend the night with her, or he was on his way to his mother’s in Forest Hills. Wong never went out of his way for anyone unless he got something in return or it served his purposes.

He continued, “Is that what you think about our friendship. That I would do this to you and you only wanted to meet me to get some information? I can’t believe this!”

At this point, I knew Tony was on to me. He had probably remembered the waiter asking about “Angel” in October, so he came prepared to sow doubt in the waiter, sidetrack the issue by trying to make me feel as the nefarious party and depicting himself the victim of outlandish

accusations. Perhaps the Ho even helped him with his defense. Whatever, I knew I wouldn't get any useful information from him.

"I've got a witness who identified you from those photos of you and your girl that you were so kind to send me. When you were at Carmines Restaurant with the Ho, she got up to go to the bathroom. The waiter asked you whether her name was Angel, and you said 'yes.'"

Tony ignored the specifics of the conversation, "I'd never go to a place like Carmines."

"Give me a break. You always go to trendy places and Carmines is trendy, for now."

"What was the exact date and time that I was supposed to be there?"

"The end of October."

"Don't you have the exact date and time?"

"No."

"What kind of investigator do you use if he doesn't know the exact dates?" Only the Ho would have thought that I hired investigators to trail her. Anyone else would assume someone I knew saw the two of them together.

The witness works in the restaurant," I replied.

"Works in the restaurant. What good is that? I'm a general manager of a major corporation."

"No you're the general manager of one of the smallest foreign subsidiaries of a major corporation."

"Well your witness is useless. This witness would be thrown out of a court of law if they couldn't remember the exact date and time." I always laugh when people who weren't lawyers thought they knew how the law worked. Wong was wrong, but I let him rant hoping he might let slip some useful information. "Come on, what's happen to you. I know things have not gone



well. You can't find a job and you lost a lot in the market. That your life turned out bad through no fault of your own but your parents."

"Let's not get personal Tony or we'll both regret it," I warned. He switched tactics, but those last remarks contained information that only the Ho knew. I never confided in Tony about my financial or job search difficulties and never mentioned my parents to him. He unwittingly used information the Ho provided him, which only bolstered what I already knew as the truth; my ex-buddy Wong dated the Ho.

"I wasn't here in October anyway but the beginning of November with my girl friend to go to a wedding." Strange, his email said he was in New York the end of October. "Besides, why would I go out with your wife? She's a Ho! I don't go out with trash like that. I'm a moral guy. You can ask anyone who knows me in Moscow."

"Wong, everyone you hang out with knows you always chase after your friends' girls, wives or daughters. We had this running joke that if you saw one of us with a girl, you'd say to yourself that if she went out with one of us, she should go out with you. Every girlfriend I had in Moscow you tried to hustle. And as for Hos, you dated sluts in Moscow, like the stripper at the Sirius Club. She wasn't a nun Wong. And as for Mr. Morality, what about that 14-year-old in Cuban you always bragged about. "

As so often happens with liars, Wong started repeating himself in the hope that redundancy could replace truth. I had enough and left, never to see this jerk again. The confrontation assured me that Wong dated the Ho, but I wondered why he didn't just admit it. He couldn't be so immature to think I'd pummel him. He probably thought that if his dating a prostitute came to the attention of one of his bosses at Schering-Plough, it might cause him problems. He should have realized that had he told me the truth and everything the Ho said, I

wouldn't try to cause him any problems at work. But his Kafkaian type efforts to convince me that I was deranged, my witness not credible and him a moral guy angered me.

Personally, I didn't think telling Wong's bosses, one of whom I provided a recommendation for Wong as manager of the Russia office, that he dated a prostitute would result in anything but laughter. But using the cliché Political Correctionalist ploy of accusing Wong of "sexism" just might work. In a pretext letter that appeared to come from one of the many Feminist attack groups, my invented Feminazi writer complained about Wong's bragging, as he always did, concerning his appearance in the Russian Playboy magazine with "naked Russian girls hanging about him like ornaments." With appropriate Feminazi fury, my phantom she-male railed, "I thought such sexist exploitation of women's bodies was a thing of the past in American business circles but apparently respect for women as human beings does not apply to American businessmen in Russia. Your Russian manager, who has a notorious reputation among Russian women, even boasts of bedding over eighty of my Russian contemporaries and a 14-year-old Cuban girl. I have a good mind to notify the National Organization of Women about this incident." Wong had actually boasted about the eighty girls in Russia. Whether the letter had any impact, I don't know, but if it did, Wong deserved it.

Throughout the Holiday Season, my Krasnodar translator Nadya continued to track down various people concerning the Ho's sexual sales business. Nadya, however, ran into one major obstacle. The idiots who ran Krasnodar's telephone company, which was the government, decided to change everyone's telephone numbers. Imagine a telephone company trying to do that in America. Nadya now had to find the addresses for the old numbers, then look up the new numbers for those addresses because the telephone company didn't publish a new directory listing people by their names. She eventually contacted the remaining people from the Ho's

dairy and my interviews, but as with the ones contacted earlier, they all refused to talk. Could the Ho, her mother and her attorneys possibly have threatened into silence everybody on whom I had a lead? That made no sense. More likely all these people, mostly former female models, had something to hide. But what, were they all hookers? That didn't seem likely either. Perhaps the answer lay in the genetic inability of Russians to tell the truth or aid justice.

Svetlana, my Krasnodar attorney, sufficiently recovered from her illness to have one of Krasnodar's prosecutors start the inquiry into determining whether to indict Inessa for defamation. The prosecutor questioned under oath six witnesses who confirmed Inessa's slander and threats and also interviewed Inessa who told her side, or more accurately her lie. On the day of Inessa's testimony, Svetlana ran into her in the prosecutor's office. Inessa walked over to Svetlana and asked, "Are Roy and Alina divorced yet?" Svetlana just grinned and walked away. Svetlana knew Inessa was trying to find out why Svetlana and my translator continued to investigate her daughter's soiled history in Krasnodar even though the divorce had come through a month earlier.

The Ho and her attorneys might have suspected that the purpose of my continuing investigation was to gather information and leads for Immigration to build its own case, but they didn't know for sure. Inessa tried to find out by baiting Svetlana because if the Ho and her attorneys could confirm my providing assistance to Immigration, they could once again launch a campaign of threats and lies to not only intimidate Immigration with false charges of improper conduct but to pressure the Krasnodar prosecutor into not indicting Inessa.

An easy way to intimidate any Russian official was to portray him as a tool of the American Government. Russians, as with most of the world, don't like America. Russians want our dollars, consumer goods, liberties and to live here, but they're too jealous of us to admit that

we built a country superior to theirs and that America, not Russia, is the only remaining superpower. Nationalism dies hard, especially in a defeated, bankrupt nation. So, if Inessa could rant around town claiming I was an agent for the United States' Immigration Service and that the prosecutor was doing my bidding, it might exploit enough xenophobia to cause the prosecutor to drop the case out of the sheer nuisance it brought him. The Ho and her attorneys didn't learn for certain of my cooperation with Immigration until much later, so they never launched a campaign of jingoism against the prosecutor in Krasnodar.

The prosecutor, however, did sit on the testimony because of the Russian tradition that over the holidays everything in the country stopped functioning, to the extent it ever functioned, and because the mad Russian god of winter hit Krasnodar with the worst blizzard in fifty years. Transportation shut down for a couple of weeks, stores closed and electricity ceased. Emergency workers did little to help because their pay was chronically late and chronically de minimis, so average citizens suffered and died until nature changed its mind.

Just before New Year's, I called Valodya in St. Petersburg in an attempt to confirm my hunch that the Ho planned to vacation there. An older sounding woman, I assumed Valodya's mother, said he was in Moscow. Maybe to meet the Ho flying in from New York City and arrange her passage through Customs to keep undetected the dollars she smuggled into Russia. I instructed Nadya to call Valodya's number after New Year's, pretend she was a friend of the Ho's from Krasnodar and ask to speak with Angela, the name Valodya used for the Ho. If the older woman answered, she'd likely get an honest response, if Valodya answered—maybe. Nadya also suggested calling the Ho's numbers in Krasnodar to see whether she picked up, which would mean the Ho went to Krasnodar instead of St. Petersburg. Keeping track of the

Ho's whereabouts helped in creating a profile of her travels that might prove useful to Immigration in finding her if she ever went underground.

Sitting at home on New Year's Eve, before leaving for a party, I listened over and over to Anne Lennox's "Don't Let It Bring You Down." I first heard her rendition while watching the movie *American Beauty* at a theater in Moscow just after my marriage to the Ho. The song played during the romance scene between a middle-aged man and a teenage girl as a prelude to the man's release by death from a useless life. The movie struck deep into the well of prophetic hopelessness inside me. Now, nearly two years later, the song conjured up a vision as how all the horrors that females visited on me throughout my life would end. I resolved not to go down the way every woman who ever lived wanted men to go, in self-deprecating pity, pleading for justice and bemoaning his fate to the gods that didn't exist. No, I intended to continue fighting against my sea of troubles. All my life, females tricked, cheated or misled me in order to satisfy their selfish, irrational whims while I, like the perennial sucker, realized their true nature too late. Finally, I saw clearly their hidden arrogance and vicious disdain for men. They think that because they give birth, they can enslave life for their own use. Whether Feminazi or ho, females believe they have a license to defraud, whore and even murder with impunity. Whatever ethically repugnant acts their emotions or ho-hormones drive them to do, they believe themselves free of responsibility for the harm caused, since they are "Women." America used to hold its citizens responsible for their actions, now only men are held accountable, not just for their misdeeds but those of females as well.

#### Auld Lang Syne

Two thousand and two, another year to go through that I wanted to avoid.

The weather lifted in Krasnodar and the prosecutor indicted Inessa on January 25<sup>th</sup> for criminal defamation. Boy, that must have really agitated the Ho's hatred of men. The indictment laid out the facts as told by various witnesses that after my marriage I found the Ho's diary in her handwriting that showed "Shipilina, A. went in for prostitution both before acquaintance with Hollander and after that." When Inessa and the Ho read that in a public document, their blood must have boiled. The indictment went on to tell of my trips to Krasnodar to interview people who knew the Ho and to whom "Shipilina, Inessa deliberately spread a flagrant lie about Hollander, in particular she told that Hollander is mentally ill, a criminal, that he is under investigation. Nevertheless Shipilina, Inessa, knew very well that information spread by her was false...." The indictment stated Inessa's purpose was to "... [D]efame Hollander's honor and dignity and also with the purpose to undermine his prestige in Russia. In addition Shipilina, Inessa told threats directed against Hollander's translator if she [Nadya] did not stop working for him." "...Shipilina, Inessa also told witnesses that Hollander terrorizes her daughter, that he got married to her daughter with the sole purpose of gain having the intention to direct her to the USA to work at strip-tease bars. These arguments are also lame and wittingly false, because Hollander was ready and wished to get married to Shipilina, A. exactly with the purpose to create a normal family." "... Shipilina, Inessa spread calumnious information of Hollander...among lecturers and instructors of the Krasnodar Academy of Physical Culture in public places. [Inessa also] menaced [my translator Natalya] with reprisal if she will continue to work with Hollander. So, Shipilina, Inessa Aleksandrovna, has committed a crime of slander." The prosecutor sent the indictment over to the local Directorate of the Ministry of Internal Affairs for the detective squad of the Central District of Krasnodar to gather evidence.

In Russia, a large city like Krasnodar contains a number of administrative districts each with its own prosecutor and chief of the local Directorate of the Ministry of Internal Affairs. The organizational scheme is a hold over from the Communist days when a District Communist Committee made sure the government agencies in its part of town toted the party line and kept embezzlement of government resources at a reasonable level. Once the district prosecutor conducted a preliminary investigation that led to a criminal indictment, the prosecutor referred the case to the chief of the local Directorate of Internal Affairs for gathering all the available evidence for the prosecutor to present in court. Either the prosecutor or the Internal Affairs chief could decide to close a case without trial.

If convicted, Inessa would only end up doing community service, but I could use the conviction to bring a civil defamation suit to win a small amount of rubles, which wasn't worth it. Still the indictment helped in disseminating the truth about these two hos and provided Immigration at the Embassy another nail for its deportation case. The problem, however, lay in getting Internal Affairs to do its job, which always took money and connections in Russia. Svetlana knew the chief, so the chance of the case appearing before a judge looked good, but the Ho would then try to find some way to bribe the judge to dismiss the case or rule in Inessa's favor.

A trial meant my appearing as a witness in Krasnodar, so as a precaution for avoiding any of the Ho's hoodlum customers, I planned to take a train from Moscow, rather than fly, and stay in someone's apartment, rather than a hotel. But any trip was still a ways off. For the present, I obtained documents requested by Internal Affairs from a psychiatrist to show that I was not crazy, the New York State Bar Association to prove there were no complaints against me, and a business associate that attested to my good character. Internal Affairs also requested and

received from me sworn written answers to a number of questions they asked about how I met the Ho, why I married her, the reason for the divorce and my activities in Krasnodar, including whom I met, to whom Inessa had defamed me and in what way the defamation harmed my “honor, worth, dignity and reputation.” My answer to the harm part was

“I am a lawyer with a Masters of Business in Finance. I received my MBA with honors from Columbia University in May 1997 and my Juris Doctor degree with high honors from George Washington University in 1985. I belong to two of the four national academic honor societies in America: Order of the Coif and Beta Gamma Sigma. I have worked for ABC Television News, the United States Department of the Treasury, where I received a Top Secret Security Clearance from the Federal Bureau of Investigation, and for one of the best law firms in America: Cravath, Swaine & Moore. These credentials attract people and businesses not only in the U.S. but Russia to retain my services not just for my skills but my integrity, honesty and dependability. In Russia, I have been providing legal and business advice to Russian organizations, the government and individuals since 1991, which included the Department of Overseas Business Promotion in the Ministry of Foreign Economic Affairs, Intertraining Association and Kroll Associates. My reputation for straightforwardness has enabled me to publish a number of articles on law, politics, economics and Americans in Business World Weekly and Law Gazette, and appear on BK TV KT on one occasion to provide analysis of laws governing the buying and selling of securities.

“As our world becomes smaller and smaller, a mean-spirited individual’s defamation of another person can easily have reach beyond the parochial geography in which it was made. Inessa Shipilina’s malicious, premeditated and willful efforts to besmirch my character in a wholly unjustified attempt to keep the truth about her daughter from the New York State Courts not only harmed the concept of justice by which civilized people live but left a spreading stain on my reputation not only in Russia but one that could easily expand to wherever I may conduct business or deal with decent-minded people in this small world of ours. It is not as unlikely as one might think to accidentally meet someone who knew an acquaintance of ours in a distant city or country. In fact, contemporary population mathematics postulates that any of us can have a message personally delivered to anyone else in the world by going through a chain of at most six people. Unless the Krasnodar court puts a stop to Ms. Shipilina’s spurious statements calculated to cause grievous harm to my dignity, honor, worth and reputation, and to call into question in the minds of others all the credentials I have garnered thus far in this life, then there is no telling how far and deep her injurious conduct may reach. In addition, when considering the surprises that life brings, it is not unfeasible that this time next year I might have the opportunity to work with organizations or individuals in Krasnodar, but not unless my name is cleared.”

In order to keep Immigration at the Embassy fully apprised of the statements by me, I sent them copies of the deposition answers for Internal Affairs. Inessa would have access to the answers, which would quickly make their way to the Ho’s attorney in New York. Mundy, true to



form, would try to misrepresent to Immigration my statements in order to further the only tactic his limited mind capable of—character assassination. With a copy of my answers, Immigration could decide for itself whether Mundy accurately characterized my testimony or not.

Just before the indictment came out, Nadya talked by telephoned to the older woman in Valodya's apartment in St. Petersburg. The woman said the Ho was visiting the city and that she was presently out with Valodya. Great, now I knew the Ho was in Russia. I contacted a former Lt. Colonel for the M.V.D. in Moscow to find out on which flight the Ho planned to return to New York City. His contacts could only check Aeroflot flights because western airlines weren't so stupid as to allow Russians access to their passenger lists. Since the Ho always flew Aeroflot—she once claimed it her patriotic duty, but the real reason was it cost less than other airlines—my contact found her return date set for January 28<sup>th</sup>. A few days before her return, my Moscow lawyers Xenia and Dennis actually saw the Ho in the Moscow subway, which meant she had found some sucker to put her up for free in that city or more likely for sex. My G.R.U. contacts arranged for Russian Customs to check her bags for a greenish brown powder called “Freeze of the Caucasus” that she once threatened to kill me with, and which mostly likely was the narcotic she secretly fed her customers, and had fed me, to fool them into thinking the euphoria they felt came from her sexual charms. She had claimed to take a little of the powder to “cleanse” herself, but more likely to help her ho the night away at Flash Dancers. What a bag of tricks she carried, but if caught with even a small amount of narcotics in Russia, she'd do time, usually a long time, in a prison right out of the middle ages, and Immigration would immediately revoke her residency status.

On the 28<sup>th</sup>, the Ho showed right on schedule but not alone. An officer from the Moscow Organized Crime Division and an Intelligence Officer from the Moscow's Airport Security

accompanied her onto the plane. They made sure Russian customs didn't touch her bags. Rats! She knew her stuff and how to smuggle, probably with the help of her St. Petersburg's Valodya.

I told my Canadian private eye, Elaine, the story, and she immediately contacted a United States Drug Enforcement Agency officer. The D.E.A. agent recognized her use of government officials, whom she bribed with either sex or money, as the mark of a professional smuggler rather than just a mule. When my Canadian private eye also mentioned the Ho was seen with Chechen hoods in Russia, D.E.A. started an investigation.

#### Area Codes

Buoyed by the indictment and D.E.A. investigation, I filed a complaint with the City's District Attorney over the Ho's perjury on her financial statement in the annulment/divorce case. A couple of assistant D.A.s I had talked with before hand told me not to waste my time because everyone expects people to lie in divorce suits unless they are an attorney. It took the District Attorney less than a week to notify me it would not initiate a criminal prosecution. The D.A. suggested I take up the matter in the divorce court. Now how could I do that, since the case ended? My last attorney, Robert, said the D.A. was just being nice to me because there was nothing I could do in the divorce court. A District Attorney acting nice didn't sound right to me, so I filed the information away for future reference.

In the meantime, the host carrying the web site with the Ho's dairy notified me that a hacker tried yet again, for the third time, to access my account number. The Ho showed no signs of giving up. How could she? A matriarchal America, her duplicity and my stupidity gave her probably the best opportunity of her life for achieving her dream—money and mo' money. Likewise, how could I quit after the way she, her attorneys, my attorney Silpe and the courts trampled my rights.

In late January or early February, INS officials in New York City interviewed the Ho, most likely in the presence of her attorney Mundy, about her activities prior to obtaining a temporary green card. The only reason INS in New York took a break from its institutional culture of see no evil, hear no evil, so do nothing was because Immigration at the Moscow Embassy told them to start looking into her. The Ho and Mundy now knew that my continuing investigation was to provide Immigration with information about her marrying me for a green card and defrauding Immigration and the State Department by denying she worked as a prostitute.

The Fates seemed to favor me at last. Xenia found a P.I. to investigate the Zygos Club in Cyprus and try to dig up more information on the Ho, which didn't seem likely since she worked there three years earlier. Even without any additional information about the Ho's whoring for pounds in the Mediterranean, documentation of the club's activities could help Immigration show the Ho's diary depicted the truth about her selling sex in Cyprus. Immigration could easily prove she worked at Zygos because they had copies of her Cypriot visa documents listing her employer as the club and her agents as the Athanasious.

On February 6<sup>th</sup> in the evening while at the supermarket, I received a call on my mobile.

"Hello, is this Roy Den Hollander?"

The voice sounded similar to that of the goon who left the threatening voicemail message last October.

"Who's calling?" I asked.

"This is John Pierre. Is this Mr. Hollander?"

If it was the same guy, he was using a different last name this time, or had forgotten the name he used before. Then again, maybe he had gotten married since his last message and meant to say John Madison-Pierre.

“I’m sorry I didn’t hear your name,” I said putting down my shopping basket and reaching for my pen and a small note pad.

“John Pierre, I’m calling on behalf of Angelina....”

Now I knew it was the same guy, so I switched into my wise guy mode to keep him off balance and buy time to get my pen to write. I had just come in from the cold and needed to warm my cheap pen up to writing temperature.

“Just a minute, just a minute....” Rats my pen still wouldn’t write. “Hold on I’ll be right with you....” Still carving colorless indentations into my pad. “Any minute now....” Finally the ink began to flow. “What did you say your name was again?”

“John Pierre!” The arrogant tone of his voice told me this guy was a loser who deluded himself into thinking everyone would genuflect when he spoke. He probably thought that on hearing his voice again I’d plead for mercy.

“Just a second, just a second....” I delayed a little longer just to annoy him. Then mockingly, I said, “John do you have a phone number?”

“Of course, I do! It’s 212 802 7065,” John or whatever his real name was steamed. Easy to get this clown’s goat.

“Are you a lawyer John?”

“No, I’m not!”

“Look John, I can’t talk right now. I’ll call you back,” and hung up.

John called my mobile a couple of more times while I picked out my groceries, but I didn't answer. Let him stew. Maybe he'd do something stupid like leave another message, only more threatening this time. If I talked to him then, he could simply deny what he said because I didn't have a recorder hooked up to my mobile as I did my landline. Just as I hoped, John left another voice mail. He didn't completely lose his cool, but this message showed an exasperated hood going a little too far on a recording.

"Mr. Hollander, this is John Pierre, and I left you a message earlier on. And I did speak with you but apparently for whatever reason, you obviously weren't available to talk. I'm giving you a courtesy phone call.

What's this "courtesy phone call" stuff? No one I'd ever dealt with in my life used that kind of terminology.

I'm going to tell you to cease and desist with your actions against Angelina. I will tell you right now that what you're doing, I know everything about you. I know exactly what you have been doing and your past history and your record. I know everything about you sir.

I liked to explain to you what's going to happen. If you continue harassing and making this girl's life miserable, I will promise you that everything under the law and under my ability to do so under the law, I will pursue you in every way shape and form imaginable under the law, and make sure that justice is done because right now you disgust me. As a human being, I am just so disgusted with everything about you and what you've done to this girl. More than some pathetic form of display of inhuman treatment—you've gone beyond that sir. I'm very much available! And let me tell you something that I am extremely well known in this city, and I know everything about you. You better get your act together, and I am telling you this under fairness and courtesy—cease and desist with what you are doing to this girl and her family and the way you try to effect her in her country. Because you, my friend, are right now going to be under investigation if I hear one more word that this is happening. And it's not going to be by me, but the Federal Government. And you at this point in time have crossed several boundaries that cause for a lot of red flags in the air my friend.

So, quite frankly, right now I would be basically on my good behavior. All I'm telling you, do the right thing Mr. Hollander; it obviously is the best thing to do. Be human and be courteous and understanding of other people's feelings and their lives. I think you guys are over and done with. That's it—leave her alone! Have a nice day."

There's that "have a nice day" again, which along with his use of "courteous," was a lingo alien to me. Maybe he got them from the Ho. Anyway, his tone of voice and phrasing this

time made it even plainer that physical violence lurked behind his words. That stuff about the Federal Government and investigation were just covers for physical threats. No one with the ability to move the Feds into going after someone ever makes such a threat. Even Nixon didn't telegraph his enemies. And as for my record, the only item besides a prior "Top Secret" clearance was my arrest by the Philadelphia Police during Mayor Frank Rizzo's reign.

Back then, still in my hippie stage, as opposed to my current obnoxious lawyer stage, I told a cop who was arresting a buddy and his drunken co-workers "You wouldn't be so tough without that tin star on your chest." Not exactly original, but enough for the cop to blow up and try to slug me. He missed, despite the streetlights, and his buddies pull him off after I pinned his arms.

At the precinct, when we exited the paddy wagon, some cop asked, "Who's the tough guy?" To which I naturally replied, "I am." Pow! He punches me in the stomach—typical pig cheap shot and hand cuffs me. My friend and his co-workers are taken into the stationhouse while the precinct pigs gathered into two lines, a gauntlet, through which one pig pushes me with my hands cuffed behind my back. They punched and kicked me to which I almost mouthed off "My older brother used to hit harder when we were kids!" But considering my position, I chose discretion as the better course.

The pig's case against me for allegedly assaulting a cop was dismissed. The F.B.I., however, investigated the violation of my civil rights, which was added along with many others to a suit brought by the Department of Justice against Mayor Rizzo and various police officials for committing and condoning "widespread and severe" acts of police brutality. As is usual with American injustice, the case was dismissed.

Neither John Pierre a.k.a. Madison, nor the Ho, nor her attorneys had anything on me because there was nothing to have. They were just trying to exploit the maxim that evil often succeeds by convincing good that it is evil.

The goon they used probably came from Flash Dancers, which law enforcement believed was owned and managed by the mob. Immediately, I called my lawyer friend Jeff and played the threat for him. He suggested that he telephone Pierre as my attorney to warn this clown to back off or Jeff would haul him into court. On a conference hook up, Jeff made the call but only got the voicemail of a man sounding like Pierre but not mentioning any name. Apparently, Pierre gave me his real number rather than a phony one, which made no sense. Jeff left a message saying he was my lawyer and asked Pierre to return the call. Pierre never did—not surprising.

Obviously, the indictment of the Ho's mother and my providing information to Immigration at the Moscow Embassy caused the Ho and her attorneys to resort to the same tactic they tried in the divorce court, which they probably believed successful—not knowing that I decided against making the motion before ever receiving the John Madison threat. This latest threat's reference to "her country" thinly disguised the Embassy's investigation and the part about her "family" referred to the criminal charge against Inessa. The Ho and her attorneys were telling me to stop cooperating with the Krasnodar prosecutor and keep my mouth shut with respect to Immigration. They really didn't want any public proceedings looking into her activities.

Once again, I tried to interest my local police precinct in tracking down the hood, and, surprisingly, they didn't laugh at me this time. The police cadet who took the complaint actually jumped on hearing the tape. She immediately tried to arrange for me to see a detective, but

apparently they were all out on a Dunkin Donuts' break, which should have told me something, but I missed it. The Embassy wanted copies of the October and the latest threat, which I sent them, and my Krasnodar attorney Svetlana received copies to show the prosecutor that Inessa's daughter tried to intimidate a witness, me, in the criminal defamation proceeding. Svetlana said the Ho could always accuse me of setting up the call, which I'd heard before. For every charge, the Ho could respond with a lie, and naturally she would. But the whole purpose of legal systems was to decide who told the truth. If the judicial and enforcement agencies used as an excuse for inaction that a lie would always negate the truth, then they were useless.

#### Runaround Sue

The report from the Cypriot investigator into the Zygos Club came through. Xenia provided Immigration at the Embassy with the original and sent me a copy.

Xenia said that Marios, Melios and Irina Athanasiou didn't own the club but that a couple of Russian crime lords in Krasnodar did. That surprised me; I always thought the Cypriot mafia controlled all the strip clubs on the Greek part of the island. Perhaps the fall of the iron curtain let loose on the world the dogs of Russia who muscled in on indigenous rackets in countries across the globe.

"So who are these crime lords?" I asked.

"The investigator refused to give me their names because he feared for his life," she answered.

"Great, a private detective with cold feet. Okay, I'll review the report, thanks."

Once again the Ho surprised me with the true nature of her life and hatred of noble sentiments. The report included pictures of a dive located down a seedy alleyway that reminded me of the third world. Inside, the undercover photos showed hos dancing on tables while



holding onto polls. The place looked small with a tiny bar in need of a bigger selection of bottles—more like a bar in some gangster’s den.

Zygos wasn’t so much a strip club as a brothel, an illegal brothel, since Cyprus outlawed prostitution. The gratuities provided the authorities undoubtedly assured protection from prosecution. The club, like all the others on the island, recruited whores mainly from the former Soviet Union. That probably explained why Russian hoods owned the club, since they provided the key investment of human capital. It also meant the Vasilyevas worked closely with the Russian mob or were part of it—not unsuspected. Cyprus’ corrupt and thoroughly bribed Migration Office registered the whores as “dancers” or “artists.” Flesh peddling comprised a lucrative part of Cyprus’ tourist industry, and once a ho worked on the island, Migration would allow her back at anytime in the future to resume her entertainment occupation. A prostitute’s contract lasted for three or six months, and she could cancel with no questions asked at anytime on paying a \$500 fee. Every girl knew before signing that the worked involved prostitution, which brought in most of the girl’s income. None of girls were forced into selling their bodies, and all the new girls were tested for venereal diseases and AIDS by a doctor approved by the Migration Office.

Zygos and other clubs offered a menu of services from which the girls received a commission. Sitting with a customer for a drink earned the girl one Cypriot pound per drink; performing a striptease with complete undressing at a customer’s table - 5 pounds for the girl; and a private striptease in a separate room for ten minutes in which the customer fondled the girl - 10 pounds for the girl. More intimate activities in the private room cost the customer 60 pounds for “vaginal intercourse” with the girl’s take - 20 pounds, “oral intercourse” went for 20 pounds and masturbation sold for 10 pounds with the girl receiving half of the price for those

two. From 3 AM to 7 AM, the so-called “rendezvous time,” a customer could pay for five drinks and take the girl of his choice to a hotel or some other place. The services provided and the price depended on what the girl and customer agreed. The whores also received a daily salary of 20 pounds from the club.

All the clubs used flashing white lights to signal the girls to stop any sexual activity in case the police decided to raid the club for failure to pay sufficient bribes or to put on a staged bust for the public. Zygos stayed open from 11 AM to 7 AM. The girls generally tried to establish regular sex customers to bring in a steady stream of cash. Russian girls generally made less than the hos from other countries for hygienic reasons. All the dancers worked under nicknames, which was how the Ho started using “Angelina.” Not, as she told me, that the Russian Orthodox Church didn’t recognize her real name “Alina.” The average prostitute at Zygos netted around \$7000 U.S. a month. That meant the Ho probably made around \$40,000 from her six months on Cyprus—a lot more than I believed. Where did she keep all that money? In her sex career, just from 1999 to the end of 2001, she grossed, tax free, around \$250,000. Marios considered the Ho an excellent worker and would employ her again. He told the investigator, without knowing the agent worked for me, that the Ho still kept in touch by telephone and had visited the club twice in the past year. Like all good businesswomen, the Ho kept her options open, including returning to hook in Cyprus if U.S. Immigration actually managed to deport her, or maybe she and the Athanasious had other business dealings.

I slammed down the report in disgust. What filth. How could anyone work in that industry? How could any idiot date, not to mention marry, such a slut? In my brighter days, I always wondered what kind of a guy dated a prostitute, not the customers who hired a ho for sex, but the guy that went out with her as though she were a normal girl friend. Television and the

newspapers always had stories about hookers that reported the prostitutes saying they had steady boyfriends and their boyfriends knew what they did for money. My experiences now told me that the boyfriends never knew they dated hookers because the hos covered their prostituting with lies about working as models, dancers or artists. I could have used that additional enlightenment sooner.

### The Pusher

My attention focused back to the Ho's drug trafficking. When the Ho originally threatened to poison me with the greenish-brown powder she imported from the Caucasus, I sneaked a sample and eventually contacted a couple of private laboratories for testing to determine its content. Their fees were too steep for me, so I forgot about it until Xenia mentioned that the FBI tested unknown substances for free. At the F.B.I. headquarters at Federal Plaza in New York City, visitors need to pass an agent in a bulletproof booth who asks them the nature of their business. A pretty young girl standing in front of me identified herself to the agent as a reporter for one of the respectable newspapers in the area. Looking at her, I thought once but not too long and opened my mouth.

“Are you interested in the Russian sex industry?”

She paused, apparently making a decision, then in an optimistic tone said, “You mean to work in it?”

She misunderstood, but the hopefulness in her demeanor slammed home to my thick skull that most young girls probably wanted to work in the sex business. They just needed the opportunity of some man making them an offer. Damn, I never imagined it so easy to recruit sluts. What was with these girls: greed or did they feel that men willing to pay money for sex

confirmed their feminine allure or convinced them of their sexual power. Well, I quickly popped this ho's bubble.

“No,” I laughed. “I didn't mean did you want to work in the Russian sex industry, but whether you were interested in doing a story on it.” I gave her my card, but never heard from her. Next time, I'll tell some ho that I'm recruiting for the industry but need to test the goods beforehand.

After passing the security guard, a couple of agents came out and escorted me to an interview room. I showed them the substance in a clear plastic vial and handed it to them.

One of the agents, Mario Pisano said, “Please put it on the table.” He moved the vial with his pen to get a closer look. What's he afraid of I wondered then, duh, understood they'd take my prints off the vial to run a check on me—so what.

I interjected, “Once I find out what this stuff is, assuming its narcotics, I'm thinking of notifying Customs.”

“How'd you come by this and why do you think it might be narcotics?”

I told them about my ex-wife threatening to kill me with it, my theory as to what the Ho used it for and from where she imported it.

Pisano remarked to his partner Vadim Thomas, “A marriage made in heaven.” I couldn't argue with the sarcasm.

Then out of nowhere, Thomas asked, “Have there been any threats?”

Thomas' first name and his looks pegged him as of Russian descent whose ancestors came from the Caucuses, the same general area of barbarity where the Ho grew up. Should I trust this guy? Did it matter? Whatever, he clearly understood Russian girls better than his partner did.

“Yes,” and I briefed them on the threats from John Madison or Pierre and gave them copies of the two tapes from my briefcase. Thomas went for a tape player.

It never entered my mind to raise the threats with the FBI because I assumed them outside the agency’s jurisdiction and purely a local police matter.

Thomas finally found a tape player and the two agents tried listening to both tapes, but the F.B.I.’s micro recorder couldn’t play at two speeds like the twenty-dollar Radio Shack recorder I used. So these special federal agents ended up listening to the tapes at the one speed on their player, which was faster than mine, and made it sound as though Mickey Mouse had threatened me. Could this be the world’s premier law enforcement agency? How’d these guys ever catch John Dillinger?

“You guys can keep the tapes, I have other copies.”

They assured me that somewhere in the headquarters for the New York F.B.I. there was a recorder that played at the speed currently used by the electronics’ industry. They asked for a short history of the Ho’s work life, which I verbally provided and gave them the telephone number Madison, a.k.a. Pierre, had given me.

Thomas remarked, “The guy is probably a hood working at Flash Dancers.”

“My thoughts, exactly,” I agreed.

Pisano said the Bureau would test the substance and determine whether they could do anything about the threats. He suggested I leave it to the F.B.I. to investigate both matters rather than shopping around to other government agencies, which might result in duplicate efforts and a waste of resources. Fine with me, if they wanted the case exclusively, they could have it. I thanked them and went back home to my private hell.

A couple of weeks later at the end of February, agent Pisano called me to say they had tracked down the man who had made the threats. They probably found Madison-Pierre through the telephone number, but Pisano wouldn't say one way or the other nor give me the man's real name. He and Thomas would talk to both the Ho and Madison-Pierre to tell them to knock off the threats. Great by me, I told him. Imagined the Ho and the goon's shock when these guys flashed their badges, probably at Flash Dancers, the easiest and most inviting place to find the two of them. Pisano also said the F.B.I. had tested the substance but refused to tell me the result—a lot of good that did me. All of this information, I provided the Embassy official and assumed he could obtain the test result if he thought it useful.

In Moscow, Xenia tracked down a model named Oksana who once worked for the same agency as the Ho in Krasnodar, the Tatyanna Vasilyeva House of Fashion. The model told Xenia over the telephone that the agency kept a “dirty girls” list on which the Ho, to no surprise, had her name beginning in 1995 while still a coed. The agency rented out the girls on the list for banya orgies, private sex parties and other adult entertainment. New Russians and old commissars called the agency and ordered up a ho as with any call-girl operation or what the modern day censors of insensitive language refer to as “escort services.” Anastasia and Dima undoubtedly managed this side of the business by recruiting the girls and discretely marketing their services among those with money in town. That's why Anastasia made a point of telling me the girl who showed me into her office on my April trip was a model, or in Russian, “call girl.” Anastasia was trying to make a sale. It also explained why a young pretty girl always hung out in the Fashion House: in case a guy with money dropped in to buy some fun.

Anastasia, Dima, the “dirty girls” and the customers probably traveled in the same circles of crime, which included Smolin, the manager of the Troika Restaurant, who earlier tried to

convince me to back off my investigation in Krasnodar. He probably feared my tracking the Ho's activities would expose a wide spread network of sex for money that involved all of Krasnodar's modeling agencies and most of the big shots in town—very embarrassing and with international implications since local sluts, with lots of help, landed in far away places. Perhaps oil and hos were Russia's only natural resources. The model whom Xenia talked with feared making a statement, but agreed to meet Xenia in person.

One potentially useful piece of information from the model was that the Katya I had interviewed in Krasnodar knew about the list because she also went on it in 1995. Katya now lived in the United States, according to the model. Good ol' U.S.A., number one terrorist target and Mecca for the world's hos. The fates must be trying to tell this country something.

The information on call-girl Katya's move to America went to Immigration at the Embassy since she now fell under its authority. From my interviews with Katya, and all the other associates of the Ho, I knew they'd cut each other's throat if it meant possible gain for themselves. By telling Immigration about the list, it now had a club over her for working as a prostitute before immigrating. Convincing Katya to talk didn't seem a problem for Immigration—finding her in America did. After having to track down Anastasia and Dima for Immigration, I knew the agency could never find Katya. I hit the Internet, but this time without any success. Apparently Russian hos are more proficient at hiding in America than their pimps. Too bad, Katya could not only seal the Ho's fate but also provide evidence for deporting the two procurers of female flesh, Anastasia and Dima.

Immigration was interested in these two because the Embassy asked me whether they were actually married and for Dima's last name and birth date. I didn't understand the significance of their marital status unless they lied on their immigration application. It turned out

that Dima and Anastasia were married but he assumed Anastasia's last name Vasilyev, unheard of in Russia, so Dima's real last name remains unknown. What was he hiding? My allies did find Anastasia's birth date—she looked older than her years. Anastasia and Dima Vasilyeva were probably more criminal than I previously had imagined, maybe even the owners of Zygos. That would explain Marios Athanasiou traveling to Krasnodar and meeting with Anastasia and Dima: to deliver profits and discuss pandering.

After notifying Immigration about the Vasilyeva House of Fashion's "dirty girls list," the Embassy official asked me to try to obtain a sworn statement from Dr. Paulsen, the California doctor who produced the Ho's masturbation video. Unlikely he would help voluntarily, but he might respond to my threatening to notify the California Medical Board about his amateur porno productions in Moscow that he imported into America.

When I telephoned Paulsen's number, someone else answered who said he had received the number only a few months earlier. Telephone information had no listing, the California Medical Board's data on his home and office were out of date, and the Internet turned up nothing. Why was this doctor hiding? I still had an email address for him, but knew if I sent him a message he'd ignore it. How to get him to disclose his address or telephone number? What did I know about Paulsen? His key weakness was pretty young Russian girls, and the moment I recalled that, I saw my solution. Even if he were hiding, he'd probably surface for the chance to hose a young Russian babe. I set up an email address using the name Katya Morosova. The name Katya I chose from the Ho's Krasnodar friend whom she whored around with and Morosova from Krasnodar's or was it Krashodar's photographer of naked models. My fictitious Katya sent Paulsen an email. His first name is Marc but Russians spell it with a "k":

Hi Mark,



Leo gave me your email. I will be in Los Angeles next week for two months. I would like to meet you. I don't know anyone in America except for my Russian relatives. How can I reach you? I have attached a photo hope you like it.

Katya

The photo I used was of Enya, one of the Ho's acquaintances, who won the Miss Charming title in the 2000 Miss Krasnodar contest. I pulled the picture out of the collection of shots I still kept from those early days of delusion. Paulsen replied the next day:

"You can reach me on my cell phone at 310 686 4219 or my office at 310 298 1968. At the office ask for Wayne."

Wayne? Who's Wayne? According to Paulsen's Medical Board filing, he didn't have a middle name of Wayne. I called his work number over the weekend, assuming there would be no answer, to see whether the voicemail message might identify the company. All it said was "This is Wayne, please leave a message." The area code showed Paulsen still worked in Southern California where all kinds of bizarre gurus set up shop. Maybe he hustled some self-improvement services under the name Wayne because it sounded more politically wimpy than Marc. Then again, Southern California is also the center for the nation's porn movie business.

On Monday, I called during working hours expecting a receptionist from whom I could pump some information, but Paulsen picked up, "Wayne Williams." Raising the pitch of my voice to disguise it, I said, "Sorry, I have the wrong number." So, the medical doctor ran a business probably without any employees under a phony name. But why and what kind of business? After a little musing, it became clear to even me that maybe Paulsen was no amateur pornographer but a professional who made his living at it. I emailed Paulsen again using my virtual Katya Morosova, telling him Katya wanted to work in films. True to form, he responded quickly that he was working on a few video projects about which he would talk to Katya when she arrived in town. That was good enough for me to conclude the doctor a professional

pornographer. It was also clear Paulsen would not provide a sworn statement no matter what the threat, since he was in the porn business himself.

Notifying Immigration at the Embassy, they immediately became interested in Paulsen as a target, not a witness. The Embassy official asked whether he imported girls or just videos to which I didn't know for sure, but suggested I could just call him and pretend I too was in the business. The Embassy thought that might tip him off into changing his numbers again because after my previous contact that's what he did. Maybe just a coincidence, maybe not, but the Embassy thought it best to use their connections in California to check him out, which meant going through INS in America. If they found anything, I don't know. Most likely U.S. Immigration didn't even bother to try. INS in America couldn't do anything right. It had just approved a change of immigration status from tourist to student for the 911 pilots Mohammed Atta and Marwan al-Shehhi after they were dead and after killing thousands. How could such an incompetent institution do anything right? It couldn't, so rather than make more stupid mistakes, it just did nothing.

In another attempt to help Immigration gather evidence of the Ho's prostituting, I called her pimp in Moscow, Leo. It was a long shot, but thought he might agree to sign a statement that while the Ho worked for him as a model, she confided that she also did prostitution on the side for extra money. Anything along those lines that she told Leo was admissible evidence, but he declined to make the statement. Either he didn't want to rat out a fellow criminal with mob connections, which he also had, or feared that if a Russian law enforcement agency obtained a copy, it would see through the wording as an admission of the real nature of Leo's business, which would mean paying higher bribes to the police.

After I hung up with Leo, my boxing coach Tony called. “I just tried to reach you but the line was busy.”

“I was just talking to my ex-wife’s pimp in Moscow.”

He started laughing in his good-natured way, “What about?”

“I wanted to see if he would be willing to sign a statement saying my ex-wife worked as a prostitute.”

Tony kept laughing at what I too saw as the absurdity of my situation and facetiously remarked. “I wonder what he said!”

“He said no because he didn’t want to injure his reputation with the stable of girls he pimps out.”

“What a great guy.”

“But he did ask whether I was divorced yet to which I said yes. Then he starts in on this pitch that he has lots of pretty, new, clean girls from the provinces that want to start a family in America.”

Laughing harder, my Tony said, “Yea, right!”

“I politely told him, I’d look him up when in Moscow.”

“Fat chance!”

“Fat chance is right.”

The conversation made me step back, pull me head above the maelstrom to question how I ended up in this farce that incongruently carried such dire consequences. Four witches must have cursed my life. The worst, my mother, programmed my emotions to make decisions driven by cowardice, negativity, lack of self-confidence, low self-esteem, arrogance and laziness in a narcissistic effort to keep me under her control and doing her bidding. Whenever faced with a

decision between courage and cowardice, my upbringing insidiously pushed me towards cowardice and the accompanying disaster it always bore in causing a wrong decision. Next, the Feminazis perverted an entire society to persecute the ones who created and defended it—men. Without guys, these modern-day Clytemnestras would find themselves serving as Nazi broodmares, Japanese comfort girls or Commie secretutes. More than once, Feminazi influence kept me out of job because of my sex, even though I was more qualified than the female who ended up in the position. The third hag, my overstuffed female stockbroker Maiya Furgason disappeared much of my wealth by following the crooked Wall Street analysts. Why she, whom I counted as a friend, failed to protect me from these thieves was beyond me. I trusted her to watch over my financial interests while I worked in Russia, and she failed miserably. She had worked on Wall Street for over two decades and had an MBA from Columbia University. She should have done a better job. Was she also a crook or just an incompetent pretending to have expertise? Lastly, while much of my life savings rode on the winds of injustice into the pockets of swindlers, the Ho ripped the remainder of my life into futility. Emotionally manipulating, deceiving females were the true evil of this or any age.

Retribution lighted my only course now, but it offered less than full justice because the boundaries of reality made it impossible to settle all the scores. My other was beyond reach, since she was dead, but hopefully inhabited one of the lower circles of hell. The Feminazis were too pervasive unless I had nukes, which I didn't. As for my stockbroker, I joined a class action suit against her firm Salomon Smith Barney, which went nowhere, and filed complaints against her with government agencies, which also went nowhere—no surprise there. The only curse of the feminine evil plaguing my life that I could bring to justice was the Ho. But it would take a heroic act of a free man, and I wasn't at all confident I could do it. Although my intuition hung

as a burning light in my mind showing what I must do, the dark smoke of fear, panic, illusion and weakness often veiled the truth of my obligation.

While lying in bed that same evening, my emotions seized me to confirm what logic concluded over a year earlier when the Ho and her attorneys' Temporary Order of Protection was served. I felt death take a hold pointing down the road of my fight for justice. At first my conscious rebelled, fear struggled not to accept the inevitable, but the future held no escape. I finally stopped squirming for a hiding place and faced the truth the way terminally ill cancer patients must, and in that I perceived liberation.

#### Pushin Too Hard

March 11, 2002, the second anniversary of my wedding from a Russian hell, started a week of illness for me. Most likely due to the flu or food poison rather than the Ho's black magic since the full moon had past a week earlier. The Ho always cast her spells at the new moon so that they built in intensity as the moon grew full. After the full moon, the spells died away unless she recast them in the new lunar cycle. Whatever the cause, I felt like garbage but had to keep fighting.

Immigration needed to punch holes in any claim that the Ho's dairy recorded fantasies rather than reality. By now, the Ho had probably convinced herself that she only scribbled the fantasies of a decent Russian girl, not the activities of a hardcore prostitute. Any affidavits attesting to the accuracy of a number of events in the diary would help refute such a defense. Statements from her former boyfriend Alexei and the Academy professor Vera would help, but would they be enough. The Ho and her attorneys might argue that only the sex for money scenes were fantasies, but the rest real—kind of. In such a scenario, Immigration would have to rely on the assumption, which was a big assumption given the man-hating females in the Government,

that the administrative law judge who heard the Ho's testimony and read the intricate details of her diary would find her claim of fantasizing the prostitution episodes ludicrous. Immigration needed more.

In an effort to provide such, I contacted a private investigator in Mexico City who provided an affidavit that The Men's Club, where the Ho worked, also ran prostitution, just like the brothel Zygos in Cyprus. The Men's Club in Mexico City, run by Roberto & Rosa Elina Quilan, was more successful, and surprisingly, the franchise of an American company with similar clubs in Houston, Dallas and Charlotte called "The Men's Club" with an Internet site at [www.mensclub.com](http://www.mensclub.com). The owner and operator of the Houston club had been indicted for fraud, skimming, illegally structuring transactions and tax evasion—no surprise there, and coped a plead to conspiracy to defraud the Government.

Meanwhile, Svetlana in Krasnodar tried to find anyone that my side hadn't yet contacted who might be willing to testify about the Ho's prostitution in Krasnodar.

The war felt as though it had turned into one of attrition without any victory in sight, or as was popular in my draft dodging days, no light at the end of the tunnel. Besides, was victory even possible? Without the tax authorities and customs enforcing their laws, even a decision by Immigration to deport the Ho would leave her victorious with hundreds of thousands of dollars and the freedom to ply her trade in the American underground or move on to another country full of suckers while my life lay shattered and financially unviable. How did evil usually end up victorious? All the comic books, television shows and movies never ended that way. What an insult to the gods, especially since my compassion allowed her to consummate the scheme to use me as her tool for reaching America. Enough wailing to the heavens, none of the gods cared because there was none.

Fighting evil required the acts of men and there was still a lot of information to provide the Embassy before reaching my objective. Business school taught me that when starting an endeavor, first formulate an objective, the end result desired. Strategies and tactics come and go with unforeseen circumstances, so success depends on keeping an eye on the objective. The night the Ho, her attorneys and in effect the Feminazis declared war on me with the Temporary Order of Protection, I chose my objective and that objective is vengeance. If my efforts with the Embassy proved futile, then I would move on to another strategy, but the objective would stay the same. My quest for vengeance, a.k.a. justice, did not rely completely on governmental bureaucrats doing their duty. Even I wasn't that stupid.

In order to garner more information on the Ho, her activities and associations, I needed to hide in plain sight. After searching around the entertainment industry, I met the man most capable of teaching me the skill I needed: makeup, as in disguises. Most entertainment people in New York City knew Bob. He started as a makeup artist after serving in World War II where he won a Bronze Star. In his seventies, he sold his own line of makeup products and wigs for theater, film and television productions, such as Saturday Night Live, while teaching, as he said, all kinds of people: actors, C.I.A. agents and hoods on how to change their appearance.

"I need a disguise that will prevent people who know me from recognizing me." I told Bob.

"How close will you get to them?" He asked.

"The closest, maybe a few feet. It's hard to say, anything can happen. Why?"

"The closer you are to a person, the easier it is for them to tell you're wearing makeup. Are you going to be talking with them or spending a lot of time near them?"

“No talking, and the nearest is about three feet and then only for a matter of seconds. You know, as if we were passing on the street.”

“Okay that should be no problem, close up for a few seconds and no conversation. What’s it for?”

I came prepared with my cover story. Always better to keep such tales as near the truth as possible; otherwise, I’d forget them and in the preoccupation of the moment blurt out something that sent me scrambling to cover up the mistake with another lie.

“When I worked in Moscow, I met this American executive who made the mistake of marrying a Russian prostitute. He didn’t know it at the time but became suspicious after bringing her to America when she started working at Flash Dancers. He asked me to investigate her past in Russia, which brought me into contact with a number of people in the Russian sex industry. The investigation isn’t over, and I still need to find out some information that may bring me into contact with these same people in Russia and now America because a few have moved their operations here.”

“They know what you look like?”

“Right, I initially dealt with them without any disguises or false names, but now I need to avoid their recognizing me. For example, I may have to travel to a place called Krasnodar on the Black Sea to testify in a trial growing out of my investigation. It’s real easy to stake out the airport there since only two flights arrive a day from Moscow. I don’t want them to notice me, just in case.”

“Is your client in the middle of a divorce?”

“No, the divorce is over. He wants the information to help Immigration send her back to where she belongs, hooking in the evil empire.”



Bob laughed. He was a good-natured man who knew all about the tricks females spend their lives playing on men. He spent about four hours teaching me the basics and directing me to apply the makeup myself. Midway through, I asked whether he had any ideas for a particular disguise. He didn't say anything at first. Then I saw him rolling into a long curl the fake hair used by makeup artists.

“What's that?” He held the curl to his side burns and I knew immediately—an orthodox Jew. I laughed. Bob was one of those unpretentious geniuses who knew his trade; unlike all those loudmouth alleged experts who clutter the airwaves and trendy bars these days. No one would ever suspect me for an orthodox Jew with a painted dark complexion, fake beard, dyed hair, curling side burns and a black hat and suit. One final touch, Bob applied a thin line of liquid on my cheek above the false beard that quickly dried into a scar—mother of mercy, a fearsome looking Jew, ha. Looking in the mirror, I practiced a wrath of god look then bought the materials and thanked Bob for all his help. He said come back anytime with questions, no extra charge. On my way out, I realized that not so long ago, before political correctionalism, America was full of professionals like Bob driven to do a good job in their field rather than just trying to look good, tout some totalitarian ideology and make a lot of money by cheating people.

A few days later, I received a call from F.B.I. Special Agent Pisano who was working on the Madison-Pierre telephone threats. Pisano said he and his partner tried to talk to the Ho, but she refused to say anything, telling them to talk with her lawyer instead. These Eastern European hos learn fast in America. That didn't really bother me because now she at least knew the F.B.I., the agency she asked me so many questions about in Moscow, was looking into her activities. What did upset and bewildered me came when Pisano said they decided not to talk to the hood who made the threats because “it might agitate the guy into doing something to me.”

Huh? Helloooo! Are you guys the F.B.I. or the Girl Scouts, I said to myself. If the F.B.I. feared provoking this goon, what good were they? I wanted my tax dollars back. It sounded as though the F.B.I. was telling me to give in to the threats of the Ho and her lawyers. Screw the F.B.I., I'd deal with this clown myself, and demanded his name. Pisano refused citing privacy reasons. Privacy! Some hood calls twice to threaten me using false names, the F.B.I. knows who he is, but claims he's protected by his right to privacy—give me a break! What about my right not to be threatened? In closing, Pisano added the F.B.I. “was not an investigative organization,” so it couldn't help me any further. Well then what did the “I” in its initials stand for then, “Incompetence,” “Idiots,” “Indolence? Finally, he warned me not to open my apartment door to anyone I didn't know, duh, I live in New York City thank you, and to watch out for myself in public. It now sounded as though the F.B.I. worked for the Ho, her attorneys and John Madison-Pierre, or was it protecting the hood? F.B.I. agents must spend too much time watching Rocky and Bulwinkle during training. No wonder al Qaeda took out so many people; the F.B.I. can't figure out who are the bad guys.

Assuming I survived long enough, I'd file a complaint with the inspector general of the F.B.I. Every federal agency has an inspector general for investigating corruption and incompetence. While working in the Government in 1986, I referred a case to an inspector general who actually did his job by preventing the I.R.S. from allowing a family with “hands across the White House,” that means rich, rich, rich, to violate the tax law.

The F.B.I.'s bizarre decision not to talk to the hood set me to wondering whether the Ho used sex, drugs or perhaps cast a spell on them. My belief in black magic had since peaked and then diminished during these war months, but I still considered it possible that demons walked among us manipulating forces beyond the control of normal humans. Weird things kept

happening. Early in the morning of the vernal equinox, I awoke, or thought I awoke, to find the Ho sitting on my chest strangling me, her eyes glowed red with fury in a face contorted with hate, which I was sure she honestly felt—probably the only honest feeling that touched her soul in years. Unable to breath, I struggled and struggled to get her 150 pounds off of me, but my will floundered, she squeezed and squeezed, I resisted and resisted and then poof, she vanished. Guess her astral projection or the demon she summoned retreated to the living hell of her being after believing it served the purpose of scaring me into submission. It didn't, just like the hood didn't. Perhaps I just couldn't take seriously black magic or gangster threats.

The Ho's counter offensive continued. The Directorate of the Ministry of Internal Affairs (M.V.D.) for the central district of Krasnodar closed the criminal defamation case against Inessa. The police investigation cited a lack of evidence. My G.R.U. sources told me later that after the witnesses initially testified before the Krasnodar prosecutor as to Inessa's criminal acts, the witnesses began receiving threats from Russian goons. The hoods even contacted my lawyer, Svetlana, threatening to harm her children if she used her influence to reopen the case. Needless to say, the witnesses changed their testimonies, so after the threats there really was insufficient evidence. Can't blame the witnesses. People who aren't criminals or politically connected in Russia are defenseless; similar to America, except here it's money that protects a person's rights and if a girl, her sex.

The prosecutor's office still wanted to press the matter based on the original sworn testimonies, but the Chief of the local M.V.D., P.I. Ostapenko, his deputy chief, Anna Pavlovna Kurilka, and the investigator Olga Viktotovich Borisova blocked the prosecutor's attempt to go to trial thanks to a large sum of money paid to the M.V.D. officials by the Ho and Inessa. Svetlana learned it cost \$10,000 for the Ho to shutdown the proceedings, a huge bribe by

Krasnodar standards, because there were so many witnesses to Inessa's defamation of me. Boy, that must have ticked the Ho off. Having to part with so much of her sex money was almost like losing a breast, true not a large breast, but still a breast. It was expected that the Ho would use a monetary or sexual bribe to avoid a trial from exposing her and Inessa's nefarious activities in Krasnodar, but I didn't expect it to happen so soon. The official reason for closing the case was to conserve scarce law enforcement resources. What scarce law enforcement resources? There wasn't any law enforcement, so there couldn't be any scarce resources. In truth, the bureaucrats wanted to keep the resources flowing uninterrupted into the pockets of those required to carry out the law with the added contributions of bribes. Russian officials are masters at inventing Orwellian excuses for their own criminal conduct, just like Political Correctionalists who use self-righteousness to excuse their hypocritical and reprehensible acts.

To reopen the defamation case, would have cost around seven thousand dollars. In Russia, the authorities will initially do their duty if they have sufficient evidence. They do it not out of a dedication to justice but to start the bidding. The side without supporting evidence then pays a lot for officials to disregard evidence. In order to obtain reconsideration of the evidence requires another bid, but not as high as the party without evidence, or, in the alternative, connections with a higher up official to overrule the predacious bureaucrats. Taking the second route, I contacted my G.R.U. agents to try to bring into the fray an official powerful enough to tell the central M.V.D. Directorate in Krasnodar to reinstate the case. My agents assigned their man for southern Russia operations to handle the matter.

Five days later, March 27, 2002, early in the morning, I received a telephone call from a Detective Bob Henning at the 114<sup>th</sup> Police Precinct in Queens, the precinct where the Ho lived. Cops always call early in the morning when a person is not fully awake or late at night when

tired in order to cause as much emotional distress as possible. These tricksters probably only read one book in their life: *The Trial* by Franz Kafka. The detective notified me of my pending arrest for setting up the Internet site nine months ago because it allegedly violated the Temporary Order of Protection the Ho took out against me and was dismissed eight months ago. The detective said my ex-wife recently showed him the dismissed Temporary Order of Protection, a flyer for the web site and claimed I set it up to harass her. Arrest meant a night in jail with New York City's better citizens, since it took about a day to bring a person before a judge who decided on bail, or to continue the incarceration, or, as most likely in my case, release the prisoner under his own reconnaissance.

Dumbfounded, I called a criminal attorney I knew who accusingly said, "Doesn't matter that it occurred nine months ago or that the order was dismissed. You're going to be arrested and end up in the Domestic Violence Court."

"Wait a minute. I set up that site because my then wife and her mother were interfering with my right to a pre-discovery investigation in the annulment/divorce proceeding."

"Doesn't matter. As soon as some assistant district attorney learns about you putting nude pictures of your former wife on the Internet, they'll start clamoring for your head."

"Those pictures show what my ex-wife wears to work—nothing. I put them on the site to reach people who might know something about her, but didn't know her name, only what she looked like at work. If she were a lawyer, I would have shown her in a business suit. But she's not; she's a stripper and a prostitute. That's what she wears for her customers. And the video clips simply show her working. That makes it easier for her customers, who can attest to her profession, to identify her. She's a ho, that's what she does. Besides, she posed for the naked photos with the knowledge and consent that her Moscow pimp would use them to advertise her

for prostitution, which included putting the photos on his web site. That's how she advertised herself, so she relinquished any rights she had in them to her pimp. The same goes for the video clips. She consented to allowing the producer and her Moscow pimp to use those clips to advertise the porno video for sale. And, I now own the rights to both the photos and video clips.”

“Doesn't matter.”

This attorney was the typical brainwashed Upper West Side male wimp who didn't care about justice, only placating the Feminazis. I went looking for another attorney—a man, but, in the meantime, arranged to surrender to the detective a month later in late April—obviously not a high priority case for the police, but one bearing the imprimatur of Mundy's concept of lawyering. But I couldn't understand why Mundy and the Ho waited until now to push for my arrest when the site was set up the previous year.

Angry and almost overwhelmed with feelings of persecution, I contacted my own precinct where I earlier filed a complaint for the threatening telephone calls by John Madison-Pierre. A detective said they closed the case because the police didn't want to devote the resources to track down the man who made the threats. This sounded like the police in Krasnodar. Did the Ho bribe these guys too? Was I missing a dramatic change in America or did I still delude myself into thinking that this country shown as a beacon of fair play and equal rights under the law for everyone, even men? Was American just as corrupt, crooked and abusive of individual rights as Russia if you happened not to belong to some elite class? If I had been born a bimbo in America, I'm sure the cops wouldn't have dared closed the case.

Later that day, after struggling through the funk of powerlessness against the feminine evil that plagued me and all the other men who ever lived, I received another call from John:

“Mr. Hollander, this is John Pierre calling on behalf of Angelina. I told you before to cease and desist. This is your last warning, don’t continue helping the INS or we will meet and you don’t want that. You understand what I mean. (In the background, I heard the Ho say ‘About my mother and the prosecutor.’) And do not try to get the case in Russia reopened, if you know what’s good for you. I’m watching you, I know everything about you, have a nice day.”

He hung up before I could say anything or start my recorder going. Good strategy on the Ho’s part. Hit me with a combination, the pending arrest and another threat. One low blow followed by another, but I didn’t go down. Trouble was rising all around me, but I just got meaner as the desperation increased.

### Nothin To Lose

The latest assaults to prevent any public exposure of not only the Ho’s activities but her lawyers’ complicity in them caused me to launch a counteroffensive that consisted of two new prongs. The day after the latest threat from Madison-Pierre, I went to the Family Court in Manhattan to obtain a Temporary Order of Protection against the Ho in order to put a stop to the threatening telephone calls. Two could play the helpless victim role. From now on in the courts, I would assume the tired, broken old man role. Perhaps not as far from the truth as I would like to believe. It made no sense to continue projecting a false image of youthful confidence and invulnerability when in reality my life lay on the trash heap of failure and now persecution.

The Manhattan Family Court personnel really surprised me. Unlike the Queens Court, people here, even the security guards, were courteous, competent and helpful. After picking up the forms from the window for submitting the complaint, I took my time in filling them out in order to fully explain the situation because I feared the judge, most likely a female, would deny me a TOP like the Queens’ judge because of my masculinity. Also I was dead tired from a sleepless night. Twenty minutes later, the clerk, a man, called my name. I went over to the window.

He asked, "Are you finished yet?"

"No."

"Well let's go, Hollander. We have a lot of cases to deal with. Can't keep people waiting, hurry it up."

Boy was that refreshing. A bureaucrat who considered time a commodity for getting the work at hand done rather than wasting it away on a Dunkin Donuts' brake. Hurrying up, I submitted my complaint and joined the rest of the people, mostly females, waiting their turn to appear before the judge who would decide whether they'd receive a temporary order of protection. One girl very pretty, nice big balloons, Latina, in spiked heels and with a small child spoke so loudly into her mobile that everyone else in the cavernous hall heard her side of the conversation while imaging what the poor guy on the other end was trying to say.

This girl didn't mince words, "I don't care what you say Shawn, I'm getting an order against you. You better keep your sorry ass away from me or they'll put you in jail."

Pause while she listens.

"That's right; they'll throw you in jail where you belong. All I have to do is tell them to take you away and so long sucker."

Pause

"Don't you tell me anymore of your lies. I'm on to you. All you wanted was someone to ride. Well, you can go back to your wife. You never spent time with me anyway except to get off."

She went on and on like that, definitely an uninhibited girl.

The bailiff called my name and I entered a small antechamber just outside the court. Then came the uninhibited mobile user with big balloons who sat in the chair next to me, so I



started talking with her. She wanted an order of protection against a middle-age lawyer she dated and who allegedly fathered her child. She met him at a strip club in Manhattan where she worked as a lap dancer. Enough irony universe, give me a break. She started stripping at 17 and now 22 wanted to save enough money to start a fashion business. She duly expressed sympathy when I told her about my ex-wife, but quickly added that unlike the Ho, she didn't go in for prostitution. If she did, would she admit it? I don't think soooo. She continued to complain about her boyfriend being married and ugly. So I asked why she went out with him.

“I started dating him when I was nineteen because he treated me like a woman, buying me lots of gifts and taking me to nice places.”

In ho parlance that translates into he had money.

“But all he wanted was sex and then went home to his wife.”

In ho parlance that translates that he stopped spending a lot of money on her.

“Then I had his kid and things went bad.”

In ho parlance that translates she got knocked up by somebody, but doesn't know by whom, or if she does know, the guy was poor, so she tried to convince the lawyer he was the father and should give her lots of money not just for the kid, as the law requires, but for her. The lawyer didn't buy it, so now she was going to embarrass him by lying to obtain an order of protection.

“When I was in high school, I did real well, but then my family moved to New York City and I started hanging around with a bad crowd.”

In ho parlance that means feel sorry for me because I'm really a good girl whom others led astray, and wouldn't you like to save me by giving me a lot of your money.

“I dance on 37<sup>th</sup> and eight.”

This meant come by to see me and we'll hook up for lots of your money.

The bailiff finally called me before the judge, a woman. After taking the oath, I answered a few questions, the judge granted me the temporary order of protection, set a court date and sent me to another office to obtain a subpoena for the Ho to show up in court to answer my complaint against her. All right! Maybe a little bit of justice does exist, but I wasn't about to engage in any extensive delusions concerning America.

In order to have the cops serve the Ho with the subpoena, I went to the 114<sup>th</sup> Precinct. Maybe Detective Henning will have to serve it himself, then again, when I identify myself they might just lock me up on the Ho's complaint for violating the dismissed TOP rather than waiting to the agreed date in late April.

At the precinct, I ended up dealing with an officer who taught martial arts, which meant we shared similar values and respected each other. He called the Ho up, who lived a block away, and said he had some papers for her. She said she just stepped out of the shower but would be right over. The officer suggested I wait at the Burger King next door while she stopped by the precinct. He would call my mobile after he served the papers and she left. The court required a signed statement from the officer that the papers were served. Fifteen minutes later the officer called, and I went back to the precinct house. He gave me the paper and said let's go outside. Something was up that he didn't want to talk about around other cops.

"When she walked in I recognized her. She's been her before about you."

"I know that's where a lot of this started."

"She's a dancer," he said.

“No she’s not. She’s a stripper at Flash Dancers and a prostitute. She started whoring for money in her hometown in Russia, moved on to a brothel in Cyprus then to Mexico City where they kicked her out of the country.” The officer seemed surprised and subdued by my remarks.

“But she dresses like she’s broke.”

“She’s not broke. She makes more than you do, at least \$14,000 a month in cash and that’s only from stripping. Impossible to say how much she makes as a pros.”

“You won’t know it.”

“She’s a Russian prostitute. They’re masters at false impressions.”

We shook hands and I caught the subway home. But on the way while going over in my mind the events at the precinct, some things troubled me. Why did the Ho agree to stop by the precinct immediately? When the FBI contacted her, she told them to talk to her lawyer. Why didn’t she do the same with the police? I’m sure Mundy instructed her to refer any legal matters to him. It seemed strange to me that she was so willing to come to the precinct. And the shower, she just stepped out of the shower, something strange there. Usually she took a shower just before leaving for work, still three hours off and when she returned in the early morning. Then there was the officer taking me outside to talk, recognizing her as a dancer. Why did he think she worked as a dancer? I’m sure when she filed the harassment complaint with the Detective Henning she may have mentioned the occupation she uses as a cover, dancer, but why would that get back to a patrol officer who works in a different department and probably doesn’t even socialize with detectives. Finally, the officer’s change of demeanor when I told him she was a lap dancer and prostitute. No, I sensed the 114<sup>th</sup> Precinct knew the Ho well, but in what capacity. I filed my questions away for the future.

On Good Friday, Xenia met with the model Oksana in Moscow who had exposed the “dirty girls list” at the Vasilyeva House of Fashion. Oksana repeated that the Ho was among the girls on the list and added these girls often provided sexual services to a group in Krasnodar called the “Albatross Club” that consisted of “bandits and businessmen,” which in Russia meant the city’s power elite. The Ho once told me she knew lots of important people in Krasnodar, but failed to mention how intimately. Unfortunately, Oksana refused to talk to the Embassy or provide an affidavit because she feared for her family still living in Krasnodar. Oksana warned that people were afraid to talk about the Ho’s prostitution, which Oksana knew she continued to do whenever in Krasnodar, because it involved this club whose members have “no mercy.” These criminals likely included Smolin, the manager of the Troika restaurant, and were the reason he tried to steer me off of my investigation.

No wonder almost all of the people who knew anything about the Ho in Krasnodar were unwilling to talk to the Embassy or provide affidavits. Oksana’s information also explained why nearly everyone I interviewed, especially the girls who worked as models for Vasilyeva, said the Ho didn’t engage in prostitution until she went to Cyprus. The girls, like all hos, were covering up their own sorted past while the guys didn’t want to run afoul of Krasnodar’s movers and shakers, so the story line depicted the Ho as a good girl until she went to Cyprus where everybody knew Russian girls worked as whores. Many of the people Svetlana and Nadya talked to, mostly former Vasilyeva models, didn’t say anything negative about the Ho because she had as much dirt on them as they on her, and, of course, no one wanted to embarrass the city’s aristocracy, that is the criminal elite, with the dirty truth. What a nest of vermin and hypocrites conspiring to present a phony image of their town, especially the Tatyanna Vasilyeva House of Fashion. It ranked as the city’s top model agency, which really meant the most

successful pimps, and regularly advertised on television its haute couture, which in reality meant flesh peddling.

After this revelation, I doubted Svetlana would have much luck in obtaining writing samples of the Ho from the Academy. Vice Rector Minchenko belonged to the elite and wouldn't want the Ho turning evidence on anyone in retaliation. The odds also looked slim for anyone swearing to the Ho's prostitution in her hometown, since it might implicate the seedy web of sex for dollars that tied the politicians and businessmen with phony public images to prostitution.

Mundy, another phony but here at home, answered my complaint against him with the New York Lawyer's Disciplinary Committee for attempting to coerce me into a settlement in the annulment/divorce case by lying to my lawyers. In his answer, he didn't even address his lying. Guess he had a lot on his mind in helping to shut down the criminal case against the Ho's mother and arranging for threats to keep me from assisting the INS. Or maybe he wanted to avoid a provable lie since he had no medical records or audiotape to produce. As for his attempted coercion, he filled his answer with irrelevancies, dissemblings and tried to distract the committee from the issue of his misconduct by assassinating my character. He brought up the website, which had nothing to do with my accusations against him, but allowed him to say, "These criminal matters are still active and pending." My answer tried to enlighten the Disciplinary Committee on Mundy's efforts to distract them from the issues by calling his ruse an unfortunate but often used tactic of lawyers that can't win on the merits.

It wasn't clear whether Mundy and the Ho finally got the message that they could not scare me because I had nothing to lose, so to make sure, I started preparing the second prong of my counteroffensive with the benefit of re-enlightenment.

Easter Sunday brought the resurrection of my beliefs from before the Ho horrors, and I began the long slog of returning to the old Roy who used science and logic to understand reality. Black magic became nothing more than a psychological game played by mean-spirited girls, which worked only when the intended victim bought into it. No longer a believer, so whether the moon hung full or dark in the night sky made no difference anymore. I shook off the last remnants of the Ho's psychological manipulations and exorcised the lies that had seeped into my unconscious from the constant bombardment of Political Correctionalist propaganda that blinded me to the true evil nature of women: the greatest lie the devil told the world was that she was a man.

Females now stood in the stark naked light of truth; their only value lay in their bodies, if young, and social conversation, if I was drunk, and even those limited qualities required caution. Yesterday, today and tomorrow, broads will always bundle together lies and deception in order to trick men in some fashion or another. The Tierra del Fuego Indians experienced a similar epiphany that they described in one of their myths: "In those far off days, witchcraft was known only to women. Young girls learned how to bring sickness and even death to all who displeased them. The men lived in abject fear and subjugation. This tyranny of the women grew from bad to worse until it occurred to the men that a dead witch was less dangerous than a live one."

The second prong of my counteroffensive grew out of the District Attorney's refusal to prosecute the Ho for committing perjury before the divorce court. The D.A. suggested I take her perjury up with the judge who granted the divorce. My lawyer Robert said I couldn't do anything, typical modern male defeatist attitude, but I decided to do some legal research because I didn't buy Robert's explanation that the D.A. was just being nice—an oxymoron—by suggesting I complain to judge Lobis. Even under the domestic relations law, the Ho's perjury

amounted to a fraud on the court and me. She lied with the intent of deceiving both judge Lobis and me. That allowed me to make a motion to reopen the settlement agreement and ask for money from her. Plus, the October 2001 threatening telephone call from the Ho's John amounted to attempted duress and attempted coercion to not only prevent me from making a motion for a trial on fault but also, it could be interrupted, to force a settlement on terms financially agreeable to her. True I didn't care about obtaining money from her at the time, but the law did provide for modifying a settlement agreement when financial circumstances warranted it. And my circumstances had headed south ever since.

Another argument for my motion to reopen the settlement was that the Ho and her attorneys' interference with my investigation in Krasnodar and witness tampering concerning the annulment/divorce case not only prevented me from finding out the extent of her prostitution but helped to illegally conceal the true amount of her assets, their increase in value during the marriage and her income. For instance, I didn't learn of the \$40,000 she made in Cyprus until I received the investigators report on Zygos. Although the Ho earned that money before our marriage, it was invested in something, which might have increased in value during the marriage. She had also concealed the true extent of her income from stripping and prostitution during the marriage, which her and her attorneys' illegal activities in Krasnodar kept hidden.

The Ho's perjury on her net worth statement, likely advised by Mundy; John Madison-Pierre's first threat to me; and the coercing of witnesses in Krasnodar gave me a shot at reopening the financial sections of the settlement, but I also had to show the court that circumstances had changed dramatically since the agreement to put me in need of support and her in a position to afford paying it. At the time of the agreement my net worth easily overshadowed hers, so there was no need of monetary support for me. But now, thanks to my

female stockbroker, my battle for justice and the emotional trauma caused me by the Ho and her attorneys, I found myself rushing towards poverty with little hope of recovering or finding a decent job. She helped put me in that situation, so why not make her pay for the damage she caused; she could afford it. Since bringing the Ho to America, she had grossed by June 2002 around \$275,000 tax-free.

Naturally, I doubted the man-hating female court would go along with my argument, but since I decided to represent myself, it would only cost me time, but the Ho thousands. Added benefits were I didn't need to worry about some androgynous attorney selling me down the river, and it would serve notice on the lesbian judge that her political priorities serve to reward only injustice. Although, I doubted that matter to her. In drafting the motion, I ripped a page from female victimology and played up the threats, fraud, looming poverty and the psychological impact of discrimination exploited by the Ho's attorneys. The motion accused the Ho and her attorneys of engaging in a conspiracy to crush my rights for their pecuniary benefit in which the court wittingly went along with because of its belief that in a dispute between a man and a woman, the man should lose because the woman represented all that was true and holy in the world.

Mundy responded to my motion with his usual strategy of character vilification in which he pompously rendered a medical opinion that I was delusion because I sought assistance from a psychiatrist to deal with the harm he and the Ho intentional caused me. By his twisted reasoning, the more successful a defense attorney and his client are at causing harm to a plaintiff, the greater the likelihood of the court not granting the plaintiff any relief.

On the arrest front, I found a firm of criminal attorneys to handle my upcoming surrender at the 114<sup>th</sup> Precinct. These attorneys were great, all middle age or older men. I didn't see one



token, young, arrogant female lawyer in the place. They remembered the days when men were treated like human beings in this country. The attorney I first met, thought me behind the eight ball because as soon as a female judge, mostly all the judges in the Domestic Violence Court were broads, hears about a man posting naked pictures of his wife on the Internet, the judge we'll start screaming with self-righteousness indignation, "How dare you!" Which meant how dare a lowly man disseminate the truth about his darling, lovely wife.

This attorney, however, unlike the political correctional nerd attorney I previously consulted, listened to my explanation for setting up the website and using the photos and video clips: to find information about her for the annulment/divorce proceedings by assuring people could identify her in her business uniform and at work. In addition, I told him that she knew when her Moscow pimp took the photographs that they were to advertise her as a prostitute on the Internet, and she knew that the porno video would also be advertised and sold to the public.

The attorney immediately called in one of his colleagues—another middle aged man. These two guys were pros who wanted justice and not just to pick their client's pocket or cow-tow to trendy political bigotry. The next day, two days before my scheduled arrest, my attorneys contacted Detective Henning. They asked Henning what the charges were against me, he didn't know. That sounded strange. My attorneys told him about a court case that indicated the allegations against me didn't amount to harassment. Henning put off the arrest until further notice and said he would refer the case to the District Attorney's computer crime section. My arrest might still happen, but at least I knew my attorneys sided with me rather than those political correctional robots who automatically thought all men guilty in order to justify throwing a man in the clink on the whim of a bimbo. My attorneys said the longer they can put off my

arrest, the less likely it would happen. That meant living under the dagger of a night in jail, but I had earlier lived for five years under the sword of the Vietnam draft, so this was nothing.

After the good news from my attorneys, I began wondering how the detective could not know the charges against me two days before my scheduled arrest. What was this guardian of the public safety going to do when I showed: invent the charges? When I originally talked to Detective Henning on the telephone, he sounded a little defensive, not at all like a cop talking to a suspected perpetrator. My logic and intuition painted a couple of scenarios. Henning and the Ho knew each other personally. Maybe she frequently visited him at the 114<sup>th</sup> Precinct, which would explain why a patrol officer recognized her when she promptly showed to pick up my temporary order of protection against her. If so, she probably cried, pictured me as her vicious ex-husband and flirted, perhaps more, to manipulate Henning into arresting me on some charge or another. Or maybe the Ho's attorneys used Henning to scare people with false threats of arrest. Cops in New York City often use their authority to make extra bucks intimidating citizens. But once Henning ran into lawyers who didn't subscribe to the current theory of inherent male guilt, he punted and left the District Attorney to decide or at least said he did. Once this legal issue resolved itself, I planned to file a complaint with the Police Department's Internal Affairs Division that Henning used his official power to harass me because of improper persuasion used by the Ho or her attorneys.

My criminal attorneys suggested I close down the site to make the entire matter moot, which they could use in arguing with the Queens D.A. if he decided to pursue the case. Not a problem, since by then Svetlana had found three witnesses who knew the Ho worked as a prostitute in Krasnodar and had signed affidavits as to such for Immigration. These were courageous people as was Svetlana. It surprised me that some folks in that town were honest and

gutsy enough to do the right thing. One affidavit told of the Ho recruiting girls for sexual activities. The Ho posed a double threat to a man's wallet as both prostitute and pimp. Another affidavit referred to the pimp the Ho sometimes used, Rey, whom Katya had originally told me about as providing models to New Russians. Those affidavits along with other information and leads should, according to the law at least, cause the Government to deport the Ho, but whether it actually would—I doubted. The U.S. Government in the 21<sup>st</sup> century just couldn't do what Barbara Jordan once said, "People who should get in, get in; people who should not enter are kept out; and people who are deportable should be required to leave." So simple, but the richest country in history couldn't do it.

### I Fought The Law

Taking a weekend off from my war, I attended the fifth year reunion of my Columbia Business School class. To my surprise, I enjoyed it. The alumni office did a good job keeping us busy and entertained. And, to my astonishment, my classmates recognized me and greeted me warmly. They had considered me a little obnoxious and overly competitive in class, but apparently that didn't matter anymore. We talked about our lives since graduating with me telling about my nightmare, of course. At first, most didn't believe it, but on recalling my overly sober nature in class, they realized I spoke the truth. Most laughed at my stories, which I enjoyed, and some thought I lived an interesting life, which I couldn't understand. I would trade my fall into this perdition for one of their high paying business jobs immediately.

While talking with a few of the more wealthy graduates, I half jokingly remarked that I might end up the first in our class on public assistance. One high tech exec responded by asking whether I could find him a nice, pliable Russian nanny for his kids. "Tell her she'll live in the lap of luxury out at the Hamptons." Was that why I attended an Ivy League business school to

enlist clients for a procuring business? I declined. Later, these guys went down to Flash Dancers to check my ex-wife out. Fine with me, they'd get a kick and were at heart decent men. Many of my American male classmates were the best and the brightest, unlike the lying, thieving, trash inhabiting members of much of the third world, government bureaucracies and the New York State courts.

A hearing on my temporary order of protection against the Ho for the threatening telephone calls occurred in the first week of May. She showed up in the waiting area outside the courtroom where I was sitting. Then her attorney Mundy walks out of the courtroom to talk with her. What was he doing in the courtroom? Court security was making everyone who showed to wait in a large room outside, but Mundy kept going in and out of the courtroom at will. Okay, I was an attorney representing myself, so I tried to enter assuming attorneys were allowed in, but security stopped me. No admission until my case was called, even for attorneys. Mundy could, therefore, talk to the judge about the case outside of my presence—a violation of the law. I filed the information away for future reference.

While waiting for other victims, violators and attorneys to enter the court, I looked in the Ho's direction a few times to catch her giving me the evil eye. Some of her conduct, such as that, truly proved comic, but the rest—dangerous.

Normally in court, an attorney for the defendant approaches the attorney for the plaintiff, whether he is representing himself or not, to try to work out a settlement before any hearing. Mundy, however, never approached me. Guess he didn't like me, but one of the court's pro bono attorneys did. The pro bono attorney was a decent guy and even suggested I had a good case, if I could subpoena the F.B.I. record that identified who was threatening me. That was a good suggestion and I told him to pass along my request for a trial.

The bailiff called both sides into the courtroom. The Ho walked behind me to intensify her evil eye and mumbled some Russian hocus pocus at which I now laughed. Mundy, already inside, seemed in a foul mood, a little too hostile for an experienced litigator. Why? A female judge different from the one who civilly granted my request for the temporary order of protection appeared this time. Judge Helen Sturm, sounded Nazi, boiled with female hostility. Probably in the middle of a menopausal mood swing given her age, Sturm scoldingly recited to me the dangers of representing myself. Boy, the decline in ho-hormones really turns a broad into Xanthippe. Civilly, I thanked her for the same bad advice I had heard in law school but declined to waste my money on another useless attorney, since I could screw up a case just as badly as them without the cost. Sturm, however, kept badgering me to retain a lawyer. Now I knew what Mundy was doing in the courtroom beforehand. When I showed without a lawyer, Mundy and the Ho realized that I would not only avoid costs in legal fees by representing myself but evade another lawyer selling me down the river in order to curry favor with a Feminazi judge—just as Silpe did in the Supreme Court. The judge, of course, didn't want to spend time with a trial because she didn't care about justice for a man, so when Mundy talked with her or her clerk earlier, the judge decided to lean on me to hire an attorney in order to thwart my strategy. She failed. Sturm set the trial for July 2<sup>nd</sup> and Mundy escorted the Ho out, such a gentleman walking with something much less than a lady.

The preparation for my case began, but I didn't have much hope of success since I needed evidence that showed a connection between the Ho and her attorneys, Mundy and Petrovich, and the threatening caller, who's real name the F.B.I. knew but wasn't telling. Even if I had the guy's name, I'm sure he'd lie on the stand anyway or plead the fifth, and the Ho would certainly claim no connection with him. But negativity is no reason to give up without trying, so

I made a couple of attempts to identify this hood. My G.R.U. agents approached their F.B.I. contacts but couldn't get the guy's name, only that Verizon had sold the number that Madison-Pierre gave me to a company that provided electronic voicemail to its customers. To find the name associated with that number, I requested a subpoena from Strum directing Verizon to tell the court the name of the voicemail company to which it sold the telephone number. With the voicemail company's name, all I needed to do was have the court subpoena the company's billing records for that number, which would produce the hood's real name and address. As a backup, I also requested an order directing the FBI to disclose the thug's name. In compliance with New York litigation rules, I also made requests for information on the hood from the Ho. Mundy ignored them, normally not done by lawyers—did he know something I didn't? I soon found out at the next hearing.

On July 2, I signed in with the court security officer, turned to find a sit in the waiting room outside the court when I saw the Ho sitting alone. Not one to let an obnoxious opportunity go to waste, I sat a few rows behind her. She started looking to the left, then stretching her giraffe-like neck to the right, but couldn't find me until she twisted her head completely around *à la* the *Exorcist*. On seeing me, she got up and walked to a seat behind me, so I repositioned myself to the side of the room still looking directly at her. She moved again to the back wall with a direct line of sight for evil eyeing. Again, I changed my seat to keep the enemy in my line of sight. The Ho, like all females, always a coward in direct confrontation, turned her back and waited.

As at the first hearing, Mundy once again emerged from the courtroom—more discussions with Sturm behind my back in which he championed the cause of innocent womanhood? The bailiff wouldn't even let me near the courtroom door this time. Mundy talked

with the Ho and went back inside. Then he came out with this whale of a female, the judge's law clerk. Too bad I had left my harpoon at home. She, with Mundy standing behind her, tried to pressure me into a settlement. They wanted me to accept a one-year protection order against the Ho in which the Ho made no admissions of wrongdoing. It would save the judge the bother of trying a fellow female and for the Ho prevent the disclosure of any information useful to Immigration and perhaps save her money. The settlement offer meant nothing. The main aim of the case was to prove the Ho violated U.S. law by arranging for threats and to create a public record so that when I finally ended up in the gutter at the hands of some Russian hit man my old associates in the press would have a story that would prod the F.B.I. into doing something at last. No thanks I replied.

Mundy and the blimp went back inside the courtroom to probably hatch a new scheme against justice. A little later, the bailiff called the Ho and me inside. To my surprised, Sturm asked Mundy to start. Usually every court under the sun instructs the plaintiff, me, to begin, especially since I filed motions to compel the Ho to respond to my requests for information, which her attorney ignored. In the dialogue between Sturm and Mundy, which sounded pre-scripted, the judge said my requests for information were "onerous" and "burdensome" and agreed with Mundy who claimed they were "ninety-nine point nine percent totally irrelevant." Mundy always tended to exaggerate, but the real problem was that Sturm, her menopausal emotions in overdrive, had already made a decision to deny me any useful information. By making that decision before I had a chance to argue my point violated the due process rights guarantee of the Constitution.

In America, a court can't make a decision affecting a person's rights without first holding a meaningful hearing. By not doing so ignores one of the key reasons for America's

revolutionary war. The founding fathers—not mothers—were fed up with the King making decisions that affected them without giving them a chance to be heard. Taking a page from feudal royalty and every other tyrant, Sturm, probably thinking herself a royal princess as do most girls, followed the procedure of Stalin’s show trials: she made the decision first, then held a meaningless hearing. In America, even when the judge is a female and the person she’s deciding against is a man, due process still applies, although most Feminazis disagree.

Sturm was trampling my rights, so I put up a fight by arguing that she should grant my requests to subpoena F.B.I. and Verizon records so that I could make the connection between the hoodlum threatening me and the Ho. Well, Sturm goes off, scolding me as though she were my mother for requesting the F.B.I. and Verizon records from the Ho. What a bimbat! I didn’t request the court issue a subpoena to the Ho for F.B.I. and Verizon records. What sense did that make? She doesn’t have the records. The F.B.I. has its records and Verizon has its—those are the records I wanted. As simply as possible, I tried to explain to the man-hating judge that I had requested in writing a court ordered subpoena issued to the F.B.I. and one to Verizon—not the Ho. Sturm obviously was too lazy to read my papers and only listened to Mundy’s dissembling briefing before the hearing. The Ho knew who the intimidator was, but what idiot would think she had custody of F.B.I. and Verizon records. The bimbat judge finally realized her stupidity, but that didn’t deter her hostility. Sturm jumped to another attack, once again berating me for exercising my constitutional right to represent myself rather than hiring an attorney to knife me in the back.

By this stage in the hearing, the latest behind the scenes scheme among Mundy, Sturm and the blimp law clerk became clear. Sturm was trying to hammer me into reaching the settlement that Mundy previously proposed by denying my subpoena requests for the key



evidence needed to show the Ho and likely her attorneys were behind the threats. Such scheming and one sided communications again violated my constitutional rights and the law. But who's counting. Today's institutions don't care.

Mundy and Sturm had hoped that denying me evidence, allowing Mundy to speak first and the judge giving me a tongue-lashing might cause me to cave to their wishes. It didn't. Sturm then directed Mundy and me to file motion papers and return to court July 16<sup>th</sup> for her to formally announce what she had already decided and probably take another shot at intimidating me into conceding to Feminazi injustice. Making arguments after the judge already decided against my requests for subpoenas was no hearing at all, but since she had failed to beat me emotionally into submission, she decided to cover her royal ass just in case I decided to cause her some problems for violating my rights.

Leaving that court, I was thinking what I had never thought about a girl before: Someone should rape that broad judge, then turn her over and ram it up her ass as she screams in pain. I filed a complaint with the New York State Commission on Judicial Conduct. Naturally, the Commission did nothing, probably because Sturm was female. A female from the Commission responded to my complaint saying, "There was insufficient indication of judicial misconduct"—meaning we don't care about the rights of men when they've been violated by a woman because women are always right and men always evil.

Both Mundy and I filed our motions, which meant nothing, since Sturm had already made her decision. But it may have cost the Ho money or sex to pay for Mundy's time to prepare her papers. "May have" because under VAWA, the U.S. Government foots the bill for illegal aliens, including their lawyers' fees, when they accuse citizens of domestic abuse in a legal proceeding. True, the Ho wasn't accusing me of such in this proceeding, but it was related to the

annulment/divorce and her TOP accusations, so the Department of Justice's Office of Violence Against Women may have picked up her bill.

Sturm's written order, she probably never glanced at my arguments, prevented me from obtaining any records from either the F.B.I. or Verizon, no surprise there, and set a trial for August 12, 2002. Her ruling concerning the FBI didn't matter since America's premier law enforcement agency had already refused to provide the court any information after I had notified it of my request for a subpoena from Sturm. The F.B.I. stated the Family Court had no jurisdiction over the agency, and the Privacy Act prohibited it from disclosing any information on Madison-Pierre. But Sturm's order denying me the Verizon information made it next to impossible to link the Ho with the unknown man threatening me. Sturm really didn't want the truth coming out about the Ho thanks to Feminazi hohood.

In mid-August, one of Mundy's female associates and the Ho showed for the trial. The Ho had just returned from a few weeks in Krasnodar and apparently Cyprus. On her way back to New York City, Russian customs searched her before boarding the plane in Moscow and the D.E.A. searched her when she landed at New York. Both found nothing because they failed to do an "internal" where she hides her contraband. They knew this, but I guess they didn't want to handle a prostitute's moneymaker.

Before the trial started, I requested judge Sturm direct the Ho to produce her mobile telephone for examination of any calls made to my numbers. It was a long shot that the Ho allowed the man making the threats to use her mobile, but it was all I had left to make the connection. If her mobile showed a few calls in the right time-frames to my numbers, it would permit an inference in my favor or at least unnerve the Ho enough to make it plain to even that hater of men Sturm that my ex-wife lied. Sturm had instructed in her previous order that the Ho

turn over her telephone records if she “in fact has these documents.” The Ho always kept her telephone records, but Mundy would make sure she denied having them. However, she couldn’t deny having the records on her mobile calling list, which I also knew she never erased. But Sturm decided to eviscerate her own ruling and denied my examining the Ho’s mobile call record. That’s what “kangaroo courts” do—undercut their own orders to make sure the person they want to win does.

Sturm rushed through the trial that she never wanted, since it was a man and not a female fighting for his rights. Sturm interrupted, chastised, continued to give me a hard time about not hiring a lawyer, denied the introduction of relevant evidence as to the Ho’s motive and means and used her own objection of “hearsay” for a catch all to keep out of the record any matter she didn’t want. It was unlikely that Sturm even knew the purpose behind the hearsay rules, so I tried to enlighten the bimbat, but she angrily rebuked me. Sturm even refused to let me introduce as evidence of the threats the tape recordings I had made of the calls. She didn’t want to “spend the court’s time listening.” Duh! So how was the court to know the calls were ever made? My case sabotaged by an ideological corrupt judge, Sturm asked whether I was finished presenting my case. No, I remarked I have a witness to call—the defendant. That put Sturm and the Ho’s female attorney back on their high heels. Since the case was not a criminal matter, I had the right to question the Ho under oath. Immediately, Sturm stopped the case, told both sides to leave the courtroom. This wasn’t a recess or lunch break; she just halted the trial and took up another case. What was going on? Obviously Sturm and the Ho’s attorney weren’t prepared for my surprise, but with the trial stopped, they could regroup.

An hour or so later, the trial resumed with the Ho on the stand. Between the Ho’s lies and Sturm over ruling my questions, the testimony proved useless. Sturm even prevented the Ho

from answering where she worked, Flash Dancers. I asked the question to lay the basis that the Ho had regular contact with nefarious guys, such as the goon bouncers, who tend to use threats. In the end, the judge from hell ruled against granting me a permanent order of protection. Would the result have been the same if I were a woman and the Ho a man? Not likely.

The trial, however, did prove useful because the Ho admitted in court she was an alien and not a U.S. citizen. That wasn't exactly new information, but I now had proof for other departments in the government of her alien status. The Family Court's confidentiality rules would prevent me from handing over the Ho's testimony but it would not stop a government subpoena.

The importance of the Ho's admission lay in the fact that she had registered to vote in February 2001—the previous year. Only citizen's can register to vote. In registering, she falsely swore she was a U.S. citizen, which was a deportable offense, a federal crime that carries a maximum of five years and a New York State class E felony carrying a maximum of four years. The Ho would be right at home in a New York State prison along with the other illegal aliens who make up 24% of all the State's prisoners. But the state would never lock her up. My only hope at non-vigilante justice still lay with Immigration at the Embassy, but I knew it was a fool's hope, since I was a fool for wanting the Government to do its job, and even if it, it would take years.

Assuming the VAWA Unit denied her permanent residency status, she would end up in a deportation proceeding, but with plenty of legal options. At the very least, each option would delay her deportation while she made more and more money illegally. In the deportation proceeding, she could make another application for a VAWA waiver even though its denial is what put her into a deportation proceeding in the first place. The Feminists in writing VAWA

wanted to make sure alien girls had at least two bits of the apple. If the Immigration Judge decided against granting her a VAWA waiver, she could then appeal to the Bureau of Immigration Appeals, which has cases going back seven years. If she lost there, then she could appeal to the U.S. Court of Appeals for the Second Circuit. By the time this procedure ended—a procedure stroked into a Byzantine edifice by the Feminazis, the Ho could retire to Cancun on her hooker earnings, or simply start the game over again by marrying another sucker, or go underground. Whichever route she takes, I'd rather wait for the second coming than for the U.S. to kick that slut out.

The Ho's latest crime of perjury came to light while checking voter registration records for an old acquaintance that was up for re-election as a Democratic State Committeeman. Using the Board of Elections computer, I typed in the Ho's name on a lark, not expecting it to come up, but it did. There on the screen was documented proof of her claiming U.S. citizenship—perjury in black and white with her distinctive signature. The authorities couldn't ignore this as the ranting of a defrauded ex-husband. Still, I doubted anything would happen, but did notify the Embassy and the New York City Board of Elections.

The Board of Elections, to my surprise and thanks to my old political activist friend Alan, decided to conduct an investigation that could end with the Board referring the matter to the District Attorney for prosecution. The Ho will claim she didn't understand English at the time she committed the felony and then start crying. She'll probably get away with it because she's a broad and the New York City's District Attorney's offices are filled with Feminazis. But pursuing the matter was worth the try.

Millions of aliens in America, whether legal or illegal, lie about their citizenship in order to obtain voter registration cards. In New York City, the cards are not supposed to be used for

identification, but no one outside of the Board of Elections knows that. Aliens obtain the cards as a secondary form of identification that bolsters the credibility of their primary I.D., usually counterfeit, which enables them to pass as citizens. Unscrupulous politicians, primarily totalitarian lefties—many of them leftovers from the sixties—actually encourage aliens to commit these federal and state felonies because once registered the aliens might as well vote and they'll vote Democratic. The Republicans, always a little behind the times, are also beginning to vie for the alien vote while the party's business members continue to demand lots of illegal and legal aliens as a source of cheap labor, which means bigger profits for the captains of industry.

Both political parties don't care about correcting a problem that is not hard to fix. Most states, as New York, have their voting records computerized, so a computer comparison with INS records would easily show which aliens in Immigration's files, some legal and some illegal, registered and voted. Voter records contain the alien's address, or at least one that he is using, so a comparison of federal and state records can lead to locating aliens who willingly violate the law, which makes them deportable. The government could swoop down and bounce these lawbreakers out of the country, which is what it should do. When a citizen breaks the law, the government is on him like gangbusters. Cheat a little on taxes or make an innocent mistake and the I.R.S. slaps a lien on an American's assets until he pays their usurious penalties and fees. The I.R.S. also takes years to notify the taxpayer of the problem because during the delay the fees and penalties keep spiraling upwards, adding to the government's coffers. That's how the I.R.S. makes up for some of the money it doesn't collect in taxes from aliens because many of them, including all the illegals, hide their income while collecting government benefits paid for by the average American.

It's the American way in the 21<sup>st</sup> Century—after decades of feminazism and political correctionalism all levels of government just can't seem to do what makes sense because as with the Communists, Nazis, Ku Klux Klan and the Catholic Church before them, the modern day ideologue female cultists value their beliefs over people, power over right and self righteousness over logic. The Feminazis lay waste to the lives of others, mainly men, with a reckless disregard reminiscent of Senator Joseph McCarthy. They lie, exaggerate and libel, cry tears of hypocrisy over alleged sexual impropriety that they wish would happen to them or sound like nuns running from the realities of life. At least McCarthy was right about Communists working in the Federal Government as K.G.B. records revealed after the collapse of the Soviet Union. He was just wrong about whom they were, so the search resulted in witch-hunts. Today the witches use the same tactics to destroy in the name of their beliefs and intimidate to further their power.

Following the trial in Feminazi Sturm's court of feminine inquisition, I filed another complaint against her with the Commission on Judicial Conduct, this time for failing to dispose of all judicial matters "fairly" and failing to be "faithful" to the law. The failing to be "faithful" charge I especially liked, since females often use the accusation to criticize men but never seem able to apply it to themselves. They either resort to "nothing happened," or the man seduced me, or some such lame excuse blaming everyone but themselves. This time my complaint against Sturm went directly to the administrator of the Commission, a man I knew from nearly 25 years earlier. Back in my media days, I worked undercover as an assistant campaign manger for one of Roy Cohn's mafia connected judges. Fed what I saw and heard to Joe Conason at the Village Voice and became the Commission's chief witness against the judge. For many years my whereabouts remained difficult to find, but no more, since I really don't care.

My reason for contacting the administrator of the Commission was that he knew my reputation for telling the truth, which might at least cause the Commission to start an investigation into Sturm. But no, times had changed and my second complaint was also rejected. Somehow the Feminazi mind set, even in agencies run by men, had infected the workings of the government whether local, state or federal. Something insidious had occurred over the past three decades. The culture of government institutions, even law enforcement agencies, had metamorphosed into femininity. Previously effective, hard hitting organizations now acted with those especially feminine traits of timidity, paralysis in making judgment calls, overly concerned with image, incapable of handling pressure, believing that talking about a problem solved it, failing to do what's right because it is right regardless of the consequences, scapegoating against men and inability to make decisions. Even when females in these institutions actually make a decision, if it turns out bad, they blame a man, men or a patriarchal society.

The change from manly to feminine government agencies resulted from the large number of females flooding into government jobs evolutionarily more suited for men. At the beginning of feminazism in 1970, girls comprised 28% of the civilian employees in the Federal Government, by 2004—48%. Government bureaucracies never had high reputations for effectiveness even in the 1950s, but now, with all these females in positions Mother Nature never meant for them, the high level of incompetence and screw-ups has emasculated this country.

Guys are also partly to blame for acting as gentlemen in making allowances for female ineptitude. Take April Glassby, the American ambassador to Iraq in 1990. She met Saddam Hussein just before he invaded Kuwait. At that time, there was rising tension between Iraq and Kuwait, Iraq was mobilizing and there were reports that Iraq might invade Kuwait. So what did Glassby tell Saddam at their meeting: the United States had no obligation to defend Kuwait.



What a ditz! Was she afraid Saddam would use his sword on her or didn't she want to offend his sensitivities by popping his illusion of being a modern day Saladin? As a result, Saddam invades and lots of men die, not lots of females, but lots of men. Does she get blame for her deadly screw up, no!

The infestation of Feminazis into bureaucratic positions has made all levels of government in this country even more inept and ineffective than previously with the added insult of females abusing their powers in the name of a self righteous, self centered propaganda claiming females can do no wrong. Just as the Commies, Nazis, Klan and Catholic Church of old did.

Besides the complaint against Sturm, I also filed, somewhat belatedly, a complaint with the Commission against the Queens Judge Fran L. Lubow, the she-male who laughed at me when I requested an order of protection against the Ho back in February 2001. Lubow violated the Judicial Canon that judges "shall be patient, dignified and courteous to litigants." They're not supposed to laugh at the people appearing before them and should at least give folk, including men, the time to be heard. Lubow cut me off the moment I started to explain why I wanted the order of protection. By acting on her own preconceived biases that the motivations driving men are the same that run broads, Lubow jumped to the conclusion that I only wanted an order of protection because the Ho had gotten one against me. Lubow knew her sex, but, like all Feminazis, she mistakenly thought she understood men. The vindictive, petty nature of females drives them into tit-for-tat squabbles in which girls exploit their genetic proclivity for lying to make up anything just to strike back at a man. Guys generally let things slide with broads unless feminine evil threatens a man's life or liberty, and even then some idiots do nothing. Ironically, if I had been a girl appearing before Lubow, I most likely would have been lying and Lubow

would have known it but granted me a temporary order of protection anyway just to strike another feminazi blow against men. Lubow tried to cover her invidious discrimination by claiming I could only obtain an order of protection from the court handling the annulment/divorce—not so. The Commission, true to form, dismissed this complaint as well by saying once again, “there was insufficient indication of judicial misconduct,”—the Commission’s liturgy for when the bias and incompetence of female judges are brought to its attention.

Pursuing all my avenues against the forces allied with feminine evil, I filed another professional responsibility complaint against Mundy with the lawyers Disciplinary Committee. Mundy allowed his Russian assistant Petrovich, to act as a lawyer by giving clients legal advice, as he did when the Ho and I met with him back in October 2000. Such conduct was fine for Russia where Petrovich was admitted to practice as a lawyer, but not America where he wasn’t. The Committee completely ignored that complaint, never heard a word from them about it.

My motion before judge Lobis to reopen the maintenance and equitable distribution sections of the divorce agreement also went down the drain in August 2002. My victimology strategy failed because as a man in modern day America, not only does acting as a man not work but neither does acting as a girl. The moment a guy says something sharp to a girl or gets into an argument with her, he’s threatening violence or harassing the innocent angel and it’s off to jail. But when a girl destroys a man’s career or murders him—it’s okay. It didn’t matter to Lobis that the Ho and her attorneys attempted to use duress to force me into a settlement and committed fraud with the falsehoods in her Net Worth statement filed with the court. The lesbian judge used the dodge that I didn’t provide enough evidence about the Ho’s perjury and attempted

duress, as if industry wide knowledge of the amounts lap dancers make and tape recordings of threatening telephone calls weren't sufficient for my motion.

A motion of this type didn't require proof beyond a reasonable doubt or even a preponderance, just enough to show that there existed a dispute over the facts. Even without the recordings and the Ho's statements in her diary about her income, Mundy's opposition papers made clear a fact dispute existed. The evidence the judge claimed was not presented in the motion isn't supposed to be included in a motion. That evidence is obtained through the process of discovery and then presented at a hearing. Under the law, all my motion needed to do was provide enough information to show there existed a disagreement as to what took place. But in modern day America, she-male judges can do what they want regardless of the law.

Lobis didn't want the bother of a hearing or cause the Ho any discomfort by exposing the truth and likely decided to use her lesbian judicial axe against the sex she wasn't. How could the legal system become anymore absurd than having a lesbian, who is mentally neither a man nor a woman, make decisions concerning the relationships between men and women. She's not a man, but wants to be, and not a woman, but wants them.

Appealing both Sturm and Lobis's decisions might work but the chances were small because even a higher-level New York State court was unlikely to give me a fair shake. After all, a Feminazi headed the state's highest court—no Benjamin Cardozo her. In referring to batterers and abusers who were men, she didn't even use the modifier "allegedly" when they had not been convicted of anything. She was also the one who threw out the rule that lawyers couldn't serve on juries. So what happens, a lawyer, female at that, on the jury in the Tyco case thinks she knows more than the eleven other jurors and refuses to vote for a conviction. The defendants walked, two Tyco executives get away with stealing hundreds of million from the

company's stockholders until the State holds another costly trial in which they're finally convicted. Such is justice in the she-male judicial system of New York.

My foolish law school belief that New York State's legal system could render justice rather than discrimination, incompetence and expediency was just about dead. My war turned to the other avenue of justice in New York in which I had worked—the news media. The years I had spent as an investigator, writer and political producer for a couple of local television news programs, Eyewitness News and WNEW TV News, the predecessor of Fox News, taught me that images and sound bites can actually prod somnolent, corruptocrats into doing their duty.

My reasons for leaving television news in 1981 for law school were the beliefs that lawyers had more power in righting injustice and defending the rights of individuals—what a dope! Most lawyers don't care about justice, just winning and money, no matter whose rights they violate. And the real arbiters of justice and rights in the legal system are judges: government bureaucrats, who in the state courts are too often just as lazy, corrupt, incompetent and habitually disdainful of the little man as are other government employees. A successful, competent lawyer is not about to leave private practice for the dramatic pay cut of spending the rest of his life working for the government. So, many judges not only come from the lower ranks of private practitioners but also from the bottom half of their law school classes, which is why they weren't very successful in private practice in the first place. Law schools grade on a curve, so those from the bottom 50% would have flunked without it. In the past, the state courts were always largely filled with these flunkies, but of late the harm doesn't stop with them. Now there is the added corruption of power by Feminazi judges who legislate their personal discriminatory philosophy. Today, the fix is in for injustice in most American state courts, especially for men.

Thanks to Billy-Bob Clinton, the level of incompetence and male discrimination also spread, perhaps less virulently, to the federal courts in the 1990s when his wife made him appoint lots of female fascists to the bench. Whether in federal or state courts, these girls are simply incapable of focusing for long periods of time on the issues of a case or handling in a rational, organized manner large caseloads. Instead, they try to hide their scattered thinking by acting mean and nasty in the hope of brow beating lawyers into accepting their often-wrong decisions. They also try to throw many cases out of court: the fewer the cases, the more time to talk and feel self important like a princess. In the end, feminazism made the country's judicial system worst by transforming state and to a lesser extent federal judiciaries into institutions that render expediency rather than justice and are used as a means for legislating political correctionalism as opposed to adjudicating the law.

The courts today, especially state courts, are pretty much a joke except for the rich and Fortune 500 companies, since they can afford to pay the fees for long lawyers' hours necessary to make the law understandable to the many dim lights in the judiciary or appeal to higher-level courts with fewer females. Many large companies also operate across state lines, so they can avoid the state courts where most the judge are just plain stupid or corrupt. In addition to the rich and large companies, the legal system also works for girls who violate men's rights and often criminal laws with impunity. Whether these hos lie or tell the truth, they get their way. Much of the legal system in this country just doesn't work for men versus broads, unless you are Ted Kennedy—but then he is rich.

The news media looked liked my last stand. I put together a list of guys I had worked with in the news business twenty-odd years ago or guys I knew from those days that were still in the media. The girls I didn't bother listing—they were the enemy. The guys were all in my age

bracket and probably fed up with the feminazi tyranny that swept through the government in the later 20<sup>th</sup> century. They all probably had their share of dealing with hostile, incompetent broads in positions of authority either in their work or personal lives.

My first attempted contact was with John Miller whom I had worked at WNEW TV News. Miller was now a reporter for ABC TV News. He had made the big time. I concluded Miller the most likely to do a story because there seemed to have been a little friendship between us back then. For a while, we even shared the same newsroom ho, a college intern from the Philadelphia area named Judy Comeau, now Judith Comeau Bollinger, who screwed a much of guys at the station, often in return for dinner. She preferred getting down like a dog but wouldn't take it in the ass because of an unusually small anus, or so she said. She went on to graduate from Wharton Business School, became an analyst at Goldman Sachs, married and moved to London where her husband made over \$100 million running the Egerton Capital hedge fund. Not bad for a tart turned Feminazi: slutting her way to \$100 million.

I sent John a summary of my plight and followed up my letter with a voicemail message, but never heard back from him, not even the courtesy of a get lost. Okay, maybe we weren't even slight friends back at WNEW. Or maybe the story wouldn't make it until someone, probably me, ended up dead as in a detective story from pre-feminazi America, circa 1950s and earlier.

## **Stupid Frigging Fool**

By Roy Den Hollander

Part 6

Turn, Turn, Turn

*“The only thing necessary for the triumph of evil is for good men to do nothing.”—Edmund Burke*

It began looking as though the Feminazi infestation of government institutions and the news media’s lack of interest in my story were driving me to that clause in the Declaration of Independence: “That whenever any form of government becomes destructive of these ends (unalienable rights), it is the right of the people (men) to alter or abolish it.” But I wasn’t angry; I was seething with rage at state and federal authorities for their incompetence, sloth and adherence to modern day, trendy sophistry that demands the violation of the rights of a person provided that person is a man. Well and good this wrath, for what better motivation to drive a wronged man to justice. Look at history: sympathy and flowers never won the day for truth and right, but fury against the violators of men’s rights is what compelled many to a just end. With my recourses to the legal system ended in failure and poverty staring a middle-aged, unemployed lawyer in the face—there was nothing to lose and only justice to gain.

Then my telephone rang, it was Jeff, my lawyer friend. He knew well my ongoing struggle with the she-devil from Krasnodar and her Feminazi allies, and I about the endless legal battles he had with his ex-wife. I met Jeff’s ex-wife through him in the late seventies, before they married. Back then, she kindly kept documents for me concerning the mob judge connected with Roy Cohn hidden behind her paintings. Jeff belonged to the class that rules America: Exeter, Bowdin College, Harvard Law, a couple of top notch law firms and marriage to an investment banker at Goldman Sachs. But following the route of the preppy elite, rather than his

first best destiny, extracted a toll. He now had a one-man practice doing insurance litigation work and needed some help to handle the caseload. Doing litigation work for money rather than rights didn't sound appealing, but more importantly, I worried that the forces of the universe were setting me up for more torture. Jeff, however, had a way with words, so I agreed to meet with him and talk about it.

During these days, as did Steve McQueen in the *Sand Pebbles*, I not only wondered, “What the hell happened?” but why and how? Looking for answers in religion—or what I saw as the ruminations of guys in robes with beards, who walked around 2500 years ago and conversed with burning bushes, or guys in robes with beards, living in the desert 1300 years ago, engaging in discussions with shining lights in caves—made no sense. Those guys probably thought the earth was flat and lacked any knowledge of science, although they knew plenty about feminine evil, but so did I. It seemed more logical to base a philosophy of existence on updated information: modern day science. Just because the vast majority of people on this planet know little to nothing about Newtonian science while even less understand anything about relativity, quantum mechanics or newer theories, that's no reason to use such a prevalence of ignorance to argue that the beliefs of the many are accurate. If anything, the beliefs of so many folk based on old and outmoded information indicate they are wrong.

Look at Joseph Campbell's *The Masks of God: Creative Mythology*, pp 78-79, where he buys into Schopenhauer's religion, or if you will philosophy:

“Duality,” that's the realization that I am not he, you are not me, and we are not all together, “is an illusion of the sphere of space and time; both our fear of death and our yearning for the pleasures of this world derive from, and attach us to, this manifold delusion, from which released is achieved only when the fear of death and desire for enjoyment are extinguish in the knowledge of non-duality. With that ‘we are all,’ as Schopenhauer avers, ‘one and the same single Being.’ And the sentiment proper to this selfless realization is compassion. ‘All individuation is a mere appearance, an effect of space and time, which are themselves nothing more than forms of my cerebral capacity for knowledge and the conditioning factors,



consequently, of all objects of that knowledge. Accordingly, the multitude and variety of individuals, also, is merely an appearance, i.e., a mere effect of my way of perceiving. Whereas my true, my inmost being subsists in every living thing as immediately as I can know and experience it only in my own self-conscious self.”

Okay, that explained compassion, but what about brutality? Old philosophies and old religions provided no understanding, no explanations—just more illusions. Any sane man with the power of the gods could do a better job than what history has written. So I closed the remaining religious books lying around my apartment and shelved them.

Modernizing to at least the 20<sup>th</sup> century, quantum mechanics shows that in looking at a small part of reality at a particular point in time, any number of events can happen next, and each of those events has a certain probability, expressed as a percentage, of occurring. Some events are more likely than others and each and every possible event may occur in different universes. The universe I’m stuck in has only one of the many possible events happening. Which event turns up next in this or any universe is impossible to say until it happens. All that is known before the event happens are the probabilities of each possible event occurring next. In Wolfram’s *New Science*, a few basic rules are applied to some elementary parts of reality that result in a subsequent new pattern of reality. By repeating the application of the same basic rules over and over on each succeeding pattern, new complex, intricate and surprising patterns arise with certain relationships stretching through all the patterns or, stated differently, the emergence of certain laws in pattern formation over time that influence the next pattern.

Whether from the quantum or new science point of view, I figured something existed in nature that chose the next event or next pattern. Since the next event in this universe had always occurred or the next pattern had relations to prior patterns, it seemed logical that a “mechanism” of some sort caused the next event or pattern to occur. Perhaps that mechanism was random selection. The problem with randomness is that it can’t be mathematically proven. Doesn’t

mean it doesn't exist, just that man doesn't know for sure whether it does or not. Given a choice between basing a belief on what "I know" as oppose to what "I know I'll never know," I rejected random selection as the mechanism. That left a mechanism for determining what happened next or the next pattern as one that followed certain rules or guidelines, since randomness was out.

Some might say that what causes events or patterns at the very small level of the universe, or universes, doesn't translate into running the reality in which we live. Not so, the Schrodinger wave equation of quantum mechanics also describes huge ocean waves, three or more stories high, which occur every so often. And the new science starts with the very elemental and builds with each suggestive application of the basic rules to the macro level. So both views seemed worthy for understanding what we experience in this life.

The theoretical mechanism of the universe that determines what happens next for the reality in which we lived, maybe not every little detail but at least the important occurrences, I dubbed the *Matrix*. The movie was still popular at the time and about a hidden force, a master computer, running the show, so the name seemed fitting. But rather than creating illusions of reality as in the movie, this *Matrix* determines reality by choosing which of the many quantum probabilities comes true or, in the new science, the pattern that comes next for this universe.

So how does this theory explain my life ending up in such a mess? Was I doomed from birth by the *Matrix* to live a wasted and useless existence to terminate in some such lunacy as I currently found myself?

During my college days, the world's population was 3.5 billion, by 2002 it stood at 6.5 billion, 3 billion additional people just since I went to college. That's one-quarter of the total 12 billion Homo sapiens to have lived on this planet since the evolution of our species around 150,000 years ago. In 1750 the number of humans nearly hit a billion, by 1900 about 1.7 billion,

but by 2000 the increase had shot up dramatically. The key threat to mankind's survival in the 21<sup>st</sup> century is overpopulation. All the horrors of famine, war, pestilence and mass misery until death stem from overpopulation.

Assuming the *Matrix* causes what happens next, its objective and that of evolution for this planet are probably the same. Evolution works to assure the survival of a highly conscious species: humans, who will either wisely accelerate the pace of change in the universe or foolishly end it, at least for themselves. To assure the evolution of such a highly conscious species requires programming a desire for sex when not eating, working or sleeping along with an ability to procreate at nearly any time of the month. The human species key advantage was always its brain with its ability to create technology to compete successfully with and escape from faster, stronger predators. To assure the survival of humans, evolution and the *Matrix* needed us to multiply rapidly and develop technology fairly quickly. 150,000 years ago our numbers were in the tens of thousands and 70,000 B.C. a volcano apparently reduced Homo sapiens to the size of village. Without our ability to reproduce quickly, Mother Nature's experiment in intelligence on this planet might have failed.

The rapid increase in human population also fueled an increase in technology and the development of technology stimulated the rise in population by reducing the death rate over time. During the thousands of years of that evolutionary cycle, nearly everyone living at any given moment was necessary in order to prevent extinction. But at some point, maybe 1900, maybe 1750, the population's drive for sex and advancing technology reached levels where together they caused a rapid increase in population accompanied by the same in pollution and depletion of resources. The rapidly growing population fueled greater advances in technology that caused an even more rapid growth in population with greater pollution and depletion of the

environment. Ironically, the evolutionary tools for assuring the survival of our ancestors now threatened us.

At this juncture, 1750, 1900 or 1950, there arose a surplus or excess population that was not needed for the survival of the species. This surplus or excess population actually became a detriment to the species survival by depleting resources, increasing pollution and leading to conflicts. So in the 21<sup>st</sup> century, there are a huge number of people who should not exist, maybe 5 billion or more or less. In order to compensate, the *Matrix* makes their lives unpleasant in order to cause some to refrain from continuing or procreating. The *Matrix* likely uses other tactics to control or eliminate this surplus population over time, such as homosexuality and Feminazism. Both homosexuality and feminazism deter people who would otherwise have children from having them. However, technology has been hitting nature hard on that with fertilizing embryos outside of the woman and growing life forms from just the mother's genes, but nature also has other options: wars, asteroids, dysfunctional upbringings, falling for the wrong girl, etc.

So to answer Steve McQueen's question from the *Sand Pebbles*, I clearly belonged to the excess or surplus population. Condemned to a life of stupidity by the *Matrix* when after my birth it chose among all the other probabilities that my Nazi mother and her coward of a spouse would raise me. The *Matrix* could have chosen the probability in which both parents got run over by a truck or met some such other terminating event that would have changed my caregivers—but no. The *Matrix* chose them. With the *Matrix* as an enemy, and for me it clearly is, I would never know until too late if my next act merely amounted to another blow from its hammer relentlessly pounding me into oblivion. The time-space continuum in this part of this universe is clearly organized for those who are not part of the surplus population—the lucky ones. That means

members of the surplus population will continuously run into doors that do not open and troubles will seep out of nowhere, but just the opposite will occur to the lucky ones. Whether the *Matrix* allows some free will or just makes human choice a joke for either the surplus or lucky population probably doesn't matter. The surplus population's free will amounts to picking which doors to knock on that will not open because determinism locked those doors to them. The lucky ones choose only doors that open because determinism unlocks them.

Okay, maybe the *Matrix* does not micro-manage the lives of the surplus or lucky populations, but it doesn't have to. All it really need do is determine at birth whether a person is surplus or not by choosing a child's caregivers, not necessarily the parents, but the folk who actually raise the child. After growing up, we would all still have some freedom to choose, but the lucky ones would tend to make choices more likely to benefit them because their upbringing gave them a more accurate view of society and how best to effectively deal with it. The unlucky ones don't have such a perspective or training, although the *Matrix* can probably be fought, to a degree; that it isn't completely determinative and makes mistakes in its efforts to reduce the surplus population. But how to tell whether any acts are fighting or aiding it? I hadn't a clue. As such, I greeted Jeff's proposition with trepidation, fearing just another *Matrix* trick to keep me from my justice, but I still visited him to check it out.

Jeff worked out of his duplex apartment in Manhattan. We sat down, and he proceeded to describe the type of legal work he had been doing for the past five years.

"It's subrogation litigation for a New York insurance company. The company provides casualty coverage mainly to commercial businesses. When something happens, usually a fire, that damages a business' ongoing operations or property, my client, the insurance company, conducts an investigation to determine the cause. Depending on the results of the investigation,

my client decides whether to payoff on the policy or not. If the company pays, we then sue the outfit that's responsible for the fire."

"I'm not sure I understand," I said in my ignorance. "I've never worked on any insurance cases."

"They're not much different than other commercial litigation and a lot less complicated than the lawsuits you worked on at Cravath," Jeff reassuringly replied. "I'll give you an example. One of my present cases involves a famous steak house that hired a company to clean the grease that builds up in the smoke vents over the grills where the steaks are cooked. One night a fire started in one of the vents, caused a lot of damage. My client, the insurance company, paid for the repairs under the policy, and now I'm suing the grease cleaning company to recover for my client what it paid to the steak house. We're claiming the grease cleaning company failed to properly clean the vents where the fire started."

Now I understood. Jeff went on to sell the benefits of such work. The pay was good, almost as much as the Ho made, only I had to pay taxes. The hours were not as long as the prestigious firms for which we both had worked, and I could use the extra time to pursue the avenues of justice left me against evil females. Enough with these demon-spawn taking me for a ride. Not only my dead mother, the Nazi, my ex-wife, the Commie, Feminazis judges but also my fat pig female stockbroker with whom I had met the previous week over her disastrous investments of my money.

My so-called broker and friend, Maiya Furgason, had lied to me that the analysts at Salomon Smith Barney didn't know that the officers of the companies in which she invested lots of my money falsified those companies' financial statements in order to drive the stock price up to the levels at which Furgason bought for my account. I didn't believe her excuse for a minute

since I was no longer in Russia isolated from the news. There were allegations all over the press about conspiracies between analysts and corporate executives to rip off small investors like me. She lied to me, as most females do, to cover up either her incompetence or villainy. That ended my sucker friendship with her although I didn't let her know it. First, I'd find a law firm doing a class action suit against Salomon Smith Barney, then pay Furgason one last visit carrying a wire, just like the old days in the news media, hoping she'd put her fat foot in her fat lying mouth.

“Jeff, let me think about your offer. I greatly appreciate it, but I'll need a little time to decide.” Jeff was not only trying to help himself out but to do me a favor as well by pulling me out of what he saw as the tailspin I was in with the Commie Ho. However, I looked at my situation more like a kamikaze dive at the sluts who most recently violated my rights in getting what they didn't deserve. But the *Matrix* had a couple of more surprises for me.

“So what's going on with your ex-wife?” Jeff asked.

“I received a couple of more threatening phone calls, so I tried for a permanent court order of protection, but no go. Also the divorce judge denied my motion to reopen the settlement. These Feminazi judges really don't give a damn what the law says. They just go ahead and do what they want, which is usually discriminating against men while letting girls get away with perjury, hiring threatening thugs or any other criminal activity—just amazing. But I shouldn't be surprised; this is America. Normal civilized behavior doesn't apply to girls here. After all, who else except broads can get away with killing the unborn and partially born with impunity; commit serial murder of their born children without getting fried in the electric chair because they blame a man for making them do their butchery; or beat the rap for slaughtering their boyfriend or husband by simply lying to the court, ‘Oh he beat me.’ This is one twisted

country. But I still might appeal both decisions; however, the odds of a man finding justice in the New York courts for the harm from an evil wife are nil.”

“What were the reasons for trying to reopen the settlement agreement on your divorce?”

“That the Commie Ho, my affectionate nickname for her...”

“I gathered that.”

“That she and her attorneys used duress and coercion, which included the first telephone threat, to have me agree to the settlement, and that they lied on her Net Worth statement filed with the court, which was fraud. But if I accept your job offer, the financial reasons for providing me some of her income or assets disappear and I wouldn’t bother appealing. Actually, I’m nearly at the end of my legal rope.”

“I’m sorry to hear that,” Jeff said. “Do you have any idea who was making the threatening calls?”

“I went to the FBI; I think I told you about that?”

“Right and they did nothing.”

“Not exactly, they tested the drugs she was feeding me and likely her Flash Dancer customers but wouldn’t tell me what it is. They also tracked down the guy, told me the guy was out of town, so they didn’t interview him. When the guy came back, they changed their minds and decided not to talk to him because, as this one agent said, the guy might get angry and cause me harm.”

“That’s unbelievable! Did the FBI interview your ex-wife?”

“They said they tried, but she told them to talk to her lawyer. They probably went to Flash Dancers like the New York City INS agent when he interviewed her for lying on her visa application. The INS agent visited the club almost immediately after I filed a complaint, which



seemed strange to me. Generally, New York INS doesn't get around to looking into a case for months, if ever. He likely went for a little entertainment on taxpayer dollars, and the FBI guys probably did the same."

"Rather peculiar." Jeff remarked. "I guess they just wanted to look at the strippers. Do you have any indication of whom the guy is that made the threats?"

"When I first talked with the FBI, one of agents said the guy making the threats was probably a hood working at Flash Dancers."

"So in your case for a permanent order, you tried to subpoena the F.B.I. records but no go."

"Not only that, but Sturm wouldn't allow me to obtain records from Verizon that would lead me to the identity of the hood. The F.B.I. claimed the Family Court didn't have jurisdiction to subpoena its records even if Sturm had allowed it, so I'm thinking of appealing her stonewalling the Verizon and other discovery requests."

"Who else is involved in all of this?" Jeff continued.

"Well, as you know the law firm Kuba and Mundy handles all her legal matters."

"A nice Russian name 'Kuba'."

"I didn't know that! The firm caters to Russian immigrants and illegals. Then there were my witnesses in Krasnodar for both the divorce and criminal defamation cases. They were threatened into keeping their mouths shut by Russian or Chechen gangsters. The Krasnodar model agency that sent the ex to work in a Cyprus brothel also runs a call girl operation for the city's business, government and criminal elite, if you can actually separate them in Russia. The Ho's pimp in Moscow provides prostitutes to Western businessmen and the city's elite. He even sends his girls to southern California on bribed visas from the U.S. Embassy. He belongs to an

organized crime group that provides him protection and who knows what else. Actually, I just heard from my Moscow lawyer that my ex-wife's Moscow pimp is being investigated by Russia's organized crime bureau—a redundancy in terms, Russia's a criminal society.”

“Any other criminal connections?” Jeff asked.

“What are you driving at?”

“It sounds like organized crime is involved: prostitution, threats, sending women to Cyprus, America and who knows where else, and the Moscow pimp.”

“I never really looked at it that way.”

“How could you? Think of the emotional upheaval you've been going through. Bouncing from one disillusionment to another, always thinking the next is the truth and the end of the nightmare but it's not. Only as the distance in time increases can you really see what was going on behind the events. Recovering from a psychological trauma like this means getting to the bottom of it, peeling away one layer after another.” Jeff always did use psychology as a way to understand problems and then solve them.

“So you think there's more going on here than a prostitute tricking me into bringing her to America? That I haven't been able to see clearly the source of this nightmare because of my defense mechanisms?”

“It's possible,” he spoke with a therapist's voice. “What other ne'er-do-wells are involved?”

“A number. Looking back now, they always seemed to be popping up here and there. During my investigation for the annulment/divorce case, a couple of people in Krasnodar told me they saw the Commie Ho hanging around with gangsters and bandits, Russian lingo for

mobsters. One of her model associates even saw her with Chechen mobsters in Sochi, a Black Sea resort.”

“How’d they know they were mobsters?”

“Mafiosi in Russia are like rock stars here. They’re famous, dress a certain way and everyone wants to be one because they’re the only ones with money and power.”

“What a place.”

“Also my Moscow lawyer hired a private detective to check out the brothel the Commie Ho worked at in Cyprus. Turns out a couple of wise guys in Krasnodar own the place. And law enforcement in New York knows that Flash Dancers is a mob operation. I’m sure mobsters also run the Mexico City brothel where she worked. I can check that out easily enough with a private eye I know there. Okay, so the Commie Ho’s entire working career is connected with organized crime, which would have been good for obtaining an annulment or getting her deported, but what good does any of that do me now?” I asked.

“What do you know about RICO?” Jeff replied.

“Racketeer Influenced Corrupt Organization, a Federal law passed thirty odd years ago to take down organized crime. They named it RICO after the lead character in the first gangster movie *Little Caesar*, starring Edward G. Robinson. At the end of the movie, Rico gets machined gunned, and as he lies dying, spits out, ‘Mother of Mercy, can this be the end of Rico!’ Hmmm, a fitting end for the Ho. Anyway, that’s the extent of my knowledge, but RICO is criminal law, and I don’t think any prosecutor will be interested in this case.”

“Prosecutor, no, but you don’t need a prosecutor. The law allows private citizens to file civil RICO suits. And in the civil court you don’t need to prove beyond a reasonable doubt that the law was violated, just by a preponderance of the evidence. Actually, I’ve been working on a

couple of civil RICO cases, and it looks to me that you may have one here. Hoodlums seem to be lurking in the background, appearing when their interests are threatened. I think there is more going on here than you believe. She's probably more closely connected with these gangsters, most likely a valuable member for furthering their operations and clearly an asset. Prostitution, pimping and drugs are big money makers for organized crime."

Leaning back in my chair, I looked at the ceiling as the true nature of the nightmare began to unfold. "Damn! Realization comes slowly in affairs of the heart. I thought I had a handle on things: Russian slut uses drugs and duplicity to sucker me into marriage and bring her to the U.S. so that she can make big bucks in the sex industry. Now you're saying that the Russian mob might be behind what's been happening with the Ho as the front."

"You yourself told me a number of times that the mob runs Russia. Didn't you even refer to Russia as the 'land of RICOs'?" Jeff replied.

"That I did, that I did, but was too blind to see it happening to me. I thought I was smart—what a fool. You're right; it all makes sense. Look at who introduced me to the Commie Ho, her Moscow pimp. He belongs to a crime group in Moscow. In fact, I actually meant one of its enforcers in his office last year when he sold me the naked pictures used for advertising her prostitution services."

Jeff asked, "Were there any communications across the U.S. border or state lines, either before or after the marriage?"

"Sure, after the marriage, letters and telephone calls between her and me."

"They may amount to mail and wire fraud, which is just one of the violations that RICO is meant to address. Her lying to get into the U.S. and the efforts of her lawyer to keep the INS in the dark may also fall within RICO."

“Of course, the fraudulent marriage made up only Act I, which, along with her secretly feeding me drugs and lying over the telephone, was how the Russian gang she belonged to was able to get one of its assets, her, into America where she could make a lot more money for her and her mob associates than in Russia. Sure the amount was small by Russian mafia standards, but multiplying the promised cash flow by thousands of other prostitutes the mob illegally got into America amounted to big bucks. But getting her size 11 feet on the ground here didn’t assure her and her mob associates that she would remain generating profits they maximized by evading taxes and smuggling the cash out of the country.”

“Exactly, when you refused to lie to the INS for her, filed for an annulment or divorce, pushed for a trial and began giving the Moscow INS information, they had to stop you. If your ex-wife and her criminal pals didn’t, it could have resulted in your exposing part of the Russian mafia’s entire operation for bringing prostitutes to America to sell sex and lap dances and even its smuggling of drugs.” Jeff elucidated.

“That’s why the Temporary Order of Protection, the threatening telephone calls, the intimidation of my witnesses in Krasnodar, bribery, perjury and the threat of arrest by that pig cop in Queens; all to protect not only the Ho from deportation but the business of Russian gangsters running sluts across the border. Good grief!”

“Look, I’ll print out the two civil RICO complaints I’ve filed and a couple of memorandum of law. Read them over, do a little research and see what you’ve got. I’ll be glad to help you if you decide to go ahead. Perhaps the most important aspect of RICO is that it is a Federal law, which keeps you out of the state courts.”

“That might give me a chance, although a small one in the Southern District of New York. I’m sure they follow the Feminazi line, but the judges there are a lot brighter than the bimbats in the state courts. I just hope I get a male judge if I go forward with this.”

“Also, if you go to Federal Court, you wouldn’t have the problem of the F.B.I. not being within the Court’s jurisdiction as you did in New York’s Family Court. And federal subpoenas always cause witnesses, whether hoods or corporations, to be more cooperative because the Judges have a reputation of little tolerance for hiding evidence, which is what happened in the Family Court.”

“So it might be better to go the Federal route rather than bother with appealing Sturm’s kangaroo court decision.”

“That’s something you have to decide.”

Jeff gave me the copies of the papers from his RICO cases. I left telling him I’d get back in a couple of weeks about his work offer. Apparently I wasn’t at the end of my legal rope after all, but was this just another *Matrix* trick to give the Commie Ho more time to make money: her only true love in life next to sex. If I pursued the RICO action, I’d need money, which meant accepting Jeff’s offer. And that meant foregoing the appeal of Lobis’ ruling. It also meant delaying swifter and more certain justice. What to do? These days, I trusted the *Matrix* about as much as broads. I didn’t want to get suckered again with another delusion about justice for a man in feminarthy America.

When I got home, another unexpected development. A letter from an old buddy I had known since kindergarten days: Blackie the Indian. We had been friends for decades but had fallen out of touch over the passed five years. Last time I heard from him, he had developed lung cancer, and I assumed him long since dead, but he wasn’t, so I called him up.

Turned out the lung cancer was in remission but he was still knocking on heaven or hell's door. I told him his wife was probably blowing smoke in his face while he slept. We laughed, not only about that, but each other's plight and together cursed feminararchy America. He invited me to visit and stay at a cabin he owned on a lake in the West. Sounded nice, I told him I'd get back in a week.

Jeff's discussion about RICO and the prospect of reviving my old friendship with Blackie persuaded me to at least checkout one last legal possibility by researching the RICO law. If my nightmare fit the law's requirements, I'd file suit in the U.S. District Court for the Southern District of New York and accept Jeff's job offer, and hope this latest turn of events wasn't just another *Matrix* scam.

#### I'm A Believer

RICO requires the violation of any number of specific criminal laws, mostly Federal, and allows any private citizen who has been harmed by such violations to bring a civil suit in a Federal District Court providing the wrong doers are organized crime or act like it. That is, RICO allows a person to sue groups of people that cooperate together to do bad things that ended up harming the person suing. Congress realized that Federal prosecutors and local district attorneys couldn't go after all the wise guys, so Congress decided to let private citizens in on the hunt to rid the mob and mafia like groups from our way of life. To encourage citizens to bring suits, rather than resorting to vigilante justice when prosecutors failed to act, Congress granted the citizen who won in court three times the dollar amount of damage done to his business or property. If the mobsters beat a person up or kill him, however, he can't recover for his injuries, pain, suffering or burial costs. RICO does not allow for personal injuries and emotional distress, but the law is still evolving. One judge, for whom I once worked as an intern, Chief Judge Jack

Weinstein, has extended the law to include personal injuries that impact a person's property and business, such as preventing a sole proprietor from carrying on his business while he recovers.

Weinstein, appointed by Bobby Kennedy, whose presidential campaign I worked for as a volunteer, always stood out as one of the brighter and fairer judges in the federal courts. Once he was trying to decide what sentence to give convicted Congressman Fred Richmond, so he asked his law clerks' opinions. One clerk thought the judge should be lenient because the defendant was a former public official, but Weinstein disagreed because the congressman had abused the public trust, so he deserved a stiffer sentence.

RICO law is complex and many judges, especially in the U.S. District Court for the Southern District of New York where my case would have to be brought, didn't like it. Also, if I had to appeal a District Court decision, it meant going to the U.S. Court of Appeals for the Second Circuit whose judges liked civil RICO cases even less. To the busy District and Second Circuit judges, civil RICO cases took too much of their time and confused everyone involved, so they used various tactics for throwing out cases brought by individual citizens. The judges, however, are more accepting of RICO cases brought by government prosecutors—bureaucratic courtesy, I assume. The judges' objection as to the time a trial or appeal would take I could understand since RICO involved a lot of different elements and criminal laws, but their problem with confusion was no excuse. As lawyers, they failed to look at the law from a business perspective. Judges and lawyers think two-dimensionally in terms of a shopping list of facts required for liability, but RICO requires a three-dimensional perspective to understand the sphere of the context in which certain crimes are committed. More simply put, judges and lawyers lose the forest for the trees.



Looking at RICO from a business perspective—my Columbia MBA finally comes in handy—gives an overall view of the types of activities intertwined with certain relationships the law tries to prevent. Any criminal operation, such as the Russian mafia, can be thought of as similar to a corporate conglomerate with all the business related connections the conglomerate has to other conglomerates, companies, organizations, governments and individuals. These connections are the conglomerate's allies in making a profit. The corporate conglomerate itself consists of affiliates and subsidiaries each with its own managers. It may be tightly controlled by a few executives at the head office or operate more like a confederation in which all member and allied companies are pretty much autonomous in making day-to-day decisions. Conglomerates can have their own in-house counsel, captive law firm or outside lawyers where the lawyers not only participate in management decisions but also provide directions for carrying out decisions and running segments of the operations. The same holds true for accountants, public relations firms, advertising agencies and consultants on management, personnel and the physical plant. Even suppliers, wholesalers or retailers may swing enough influence to play a role in directing operations because of the integrated effort needed to bring a product or service to the market place just in time to meet consumer demand. There is no set structure for conglomerates other than their members and associates sharing common goals and acting together to achieve those goals.

The really successful conglomerates, whether legitimate business or mafia, have a strategic vision or goal that can be expressed in a sentence. For example Disney's: "Bringing happiness to millions;" General Electric under Jack Welch: "Become number one or two in every market we serve;" the Mexican Cartels: "Addict everyone we can, kill the rest;" or the Russian mafia: "Infiltrate and expand operations into hard currency markets, especially the U.S." These

goals are what give direction to decision making by managers, employees and associates in large, modernly managed organizations and mafias. Such goals eliminate the need for a hierarchically structured command and control, as in the military. A mid-level manager does not need a higher up who in turn needs another higher up, and so on, to okay a course of action. Managers will only make those day-to-day decisions that serve the organization's stated goal, provided they understand what that goal is.

Once an organization's goal is in place, the managers need to agree on strategies for achieving that goal. With RICO conglomerates, the strategies are basically summarized by the three main RICO violations: getting it, keeping it and running it. For the Russian mafia that means:

1. Invest money from criminal activities to gain control of other businesses—whether legitimate, criminal or a mixture of both—in order to expand.
2. Use criminal activities to hold onto businesses or take over others—whether legitimate, criminal or mixed—in order to consolidate and expand operations.
3. Operate the criminal conglomerate, or as the law calls it the “enterprise,” by conducting the criminal activities that are its core business—white slavery, importing pornography, drug trafficking, financial fraud, protection, extortion—and using other criminal activities to secure the core business and maximize profits.

Conspiring to violate RICO comes into play when participants or associates of a criminal conglomerate agree on any of the above strategies.

In order to execute any conglomerate's strategies requires tactics—the nuts-and-bolts actions needed for getting, keeping and running the organization. For a RICO conglomerate the tactics consist of a web of criminal activity made up of any number of specific crimes that are

connected to each other and last over a minimum period of time. In the Second Circuit, it's two years.

A RICO conglomerate must also act across state or foreign borders; otherwise, the federal law can't touch it.

There's a lot more to this, but that is the simplest I can make it. So what does it all have to do with the Commie Ho? Looking over the events since I first met her through the perspective of RICO, an international group of hoods had set traps for unsuspecting Western businessmen into which I had walked that resulted in my bringing one of their prostitutes and procurers to the American market. In effect, I was taken for a ride by a mobster moll right out of a 1940s detective movie, except standing behind this moll were assorted organized crime figures: Russian, Chechen, Cypriot and American. That ride harmed my business by causing it to lose business opportunities and profits, damaging my business reputation and costing me lots of money. Time and money went into investigations and court proceedings to fight the perjured Temporary Order of Protection, try for an annulment, obtain a divorce, determine who were threatening my witnesses in Krasnodar and me in America and enlist the legal system in America and Russia for protection. My efforts at rectifying the harm done me and preventing additional injury took time away from my business, which cost me money. The criminal defamation by the Commie Ho's mother in Krasnodar, the Commie Ho's lawyer making and filing false charges against me in the U.S. and the threat of arrest by one of the Ho's apparent clients, Detective Henning, damaged my business' reputation and good will—more money gone.

A RICO lawsuit, if I won, would not only compensate me for all that but also punish the culprits by rewarding me three times what they cost me. That sounded fair, although I still worried about a time-costly, dead-end diversion in pursuing a civil RICO case. Every day of

justice delayed meant another \$500 to \$1,000 for the Commie Ho, more money, more power. But I had to give it the old college try, so I decided to file a suit and accept Jeff's work offer. Since I wouldn't be starting for him until after Labor Day, I had time to draft a complaint and spend a handful of days in the West visiting my old pal Blackie.

I looked forward to seeing Blackie again, and following the visit would give me a chance to check up on Anastasia and Dima Vasilyeva, the two that ran the Tatyanna Vasilyeva Fashion House in Krasnodar and its "dirty girls" list. The Vasilyevas' U.S. residence was about a two hour flight from where Blackie lived. Was this a *Matrix* setup? I wouldn't know until I acted.

My RICO Complaint referred to the overall criminal conglomerate as the Russian International Crime Organization, an intentional play on RICO, and for short: the Russian mafia. The Complaint described that enterprise as arising out of the ashes of the Soviet Union when the collapse of communism unleashed that evil empire's restraints on organized crime, corrupt government officials, travel, trade, communication and emigration. The Russian mafia consisted of domestic and foreign corporations, partnerships, individuals, government officials, law firms and organized crime gangs, including American, Russian, Chechen, Cypriot and Mexican. Its key aim was to infiltrate and expand activities into hard currency markets where profits are not threatened by inconvertibility or drastic depreciations. The Russian mafia's members and allies cooperate together for the purpose of engaging in illegal and legal activities in order to earn substantial profits.

The Complaint focused on a small portion of the Russian mafia's activities in America, Russia, Cyprus and Mexico that injured my business and financial assets. It asserted that in order to transfer a valuable asset, the Commie Ho, to America, the Russian mafia, operating through some of its allies and members, such as Leo, aided and abetted the Commie Ho in

entering a fraudulent marriage for the purpose of evading U.S. immigration laws—a Federal felony. The Commie Ho and her mob associates, such as the Athanasious who provided a bribed police report for Immigration stating the Ho had been a good girl in Cyprus, defrauded INS and the Department of State into issuing her an immigrant visa, also a Federal felony. In order to keep her in America making money for the Russian mafia and furthering its operations, mafia members and confederates, such as Mundy’s law firm, tried to coerce me into lying to the Immigration Service, intimidated me, threatened me with physical violence, suborned and committed perjury, engaged in mail and wire fraud, bribed officials, attempted to and did tamper with witnesses and informants. The Commie Ho and her Russian mob associates maximized profits and minimized expenses by evading taxes, laundering money and exporting revenues out of the U.S. without reporting so as to disguise the true ownership and source of those revenues. The Commie Ho and her mob associates also engaged in white slavery, prostitution and drug trafficking, imported pornography, used international facilities to assist in carrying out its activities and conspired to commit murder for hire.

News of the conspiracy to commit murder for hire came from a reliable source in Krasnodar. The Commie Ho had met with someone in the Khachatryan Araratovich Asypyan crime gang in Krasnodar before the Sturm trial to arrange for deep-sixing me if I were called to testify at an INS proceeding against her. When I had worked at Kroll, the going rate for offing a foreigner was \$5,000 plus travel expenses. The Commie Ho could easily afford that or just sell a subscription of equal value for access between her legs. The hit contract didn’t concern me because the INS would never call me to testify.

The way Immigration’s procedure works under VAWA, the Commie Ho and Mundy can say anything they want about me to the INS in order to trick the government into granting her

permanent residency. They can accuse me of battery, extreme cruelty, an overall pattern of violence, rape and mayhem, and I'll never have a chance to refute their lies because I'll never know about it, and even if I do, I still wouldn't be allowed to show they are lying. Why, because I am an American who married an alien. Under VAWA, aliens have more rights than citizens, especially when the citizen is a man. The protestants in Medici France and the democrats in Stalin's Soviet Union had no right to be heard either, or any other due process rights for that matter. In America, the mere allegation of a husband slapping his ex-wife around prevents him from finding out what's going on at INS concerning his alien ex-wife which results in a permanent record of false fact findings libeling the husband that is assumed accurate even though he never had a chance to prove otherwise. In addition, the husband will never be able to find out what the fact findings were although every police agency in the world can along with certain private Feminist organizations. So if an American applies for a federal job and doesn't get it because his alien ex-wife or alien ex-girlfriend lied about him to INS, he'll never know. What a piece of work is feminararchy America!

After giving Jeff a draft of the Complaint to review, I made arrangements to fly out West to see Blackie. Before leaving I tried to notify the INS at the Moscow Embassy of the Commie Ho committing a Federal and state felony by falsely claiming to be a U.S. citizen when she registered to vote. Unfortunately for me, my INS contact at the Embassy, the only competent Federal employee I had come across, left to join a diplomatic security unit at the Department of State. Smart for him, but now I faced a bottomless pit at the Embassy. Things were going wrong again.

It took me a month and repeated threats to file a complaint with the INS inspector general before the Embassy folks began to stir their chronically lethargic brains to simply find out who

was now handling the Commie Ho's removal proceeding. Neither my Moscow attorney, Xenia, nor I could reach a live person at the Embassy's INS office. So at Xenia's suggestion, I FedEx the certified voter registration documents that showed the Commie Ho perjured herself, and she had them hand delivered to the Embassy. Xenia remarked, "That's for getting something to the INS at the Embassy, but getting information on who's now in charge of the case—well, that seems to be something even Houdini couldn't do."

Xenia finally found the man in charge of the Commie Ho's case, Scott Marvin. He sent two emails to me, and Xenia met with him once to turnover the voter registration documents. Marvin told Xenia he'd notify the INS in the U.S. immediately and let her know the following week the status of the removal proceedings. We never heard from him again. He simply ignored any further attempts to contact him, even when we tried to supply more information. Xenia kept a list of the many times she tried to contact him over much of the following year and then we just gave up. Marvin's reason to stop any communication could have resulted from the VAWA Feminist requirement, 8 U.S.C. § 1367, which prevents disclosure of any information concerning alien's applying for VAWA waivers. But then again, maybe the new female head of Immigration at the Embassy decided to bury the case.

The voter registration documents were also dropped off at the New York City INS office, and both it and Moscow were given the number, issue and expiration dates of the Commie Ho's second passport that she used to hide from U.S. Customs her money laundering travels to places like Cyprus. The passport information came from an official at the Italian embassy in Moscow where the Commie Ho obtained the visa for her prostitution trip to Italy with Alfredo. When the Commie Ho entered the U.S. she used one passport that only showed travels between America

and Russia with her other passport bearing the stamps of Cyprus and other havens for tax evaders, money launderers and the Russian mafia.

### Hey, Little Girl

On my way out West, I got to talking with a couple on my connecting flight from Pittsburgh. They asked me, as Westerners always do, “What’s it like to live in New York City?” Too arrogant to lie, I said, “It’s a behavioral rat-sink.” The husband understood right away, but the wife, a real blonde, probably wishing she had gone there in her younger days to transform her sexual allures into fame, fortune or at least good times, asked seriously, “What do you mean?”

“There’re too many people in too small a space. Someone is always in the way. Noises, whackos, concrete everywhere, filthy air, and people yakking on cell phones, which makes you think at first they are either nuts or talking to you. More than once I’ve answered a question that someone asked of the other party they were talking to on a cell phone. The overload of the senses tends to keep you in constant flight, fight or lust mode. A person can’t relax when he’s out and about. There’s always a little uneasiness that something unpleasant or just awkward will happen. And then there’s the girl distraction. So many hot young babes in tight skimpy clothes looking like juicy plums. Sex sells and no one is better at advertising it than young New York City girls, especially in the nightclubs. A man just can’t concentrate on anything when out in the street.” The husband’s ears perked up at this.

The wife, most likely dreaming of what-might-have-been, said breathlessly, “Sounds exciting!”

“For you it would have been,” I said ending the conversation and sinking back into my seat to ruminate about this typical of females. She clearly wished she had gone a hoing in New York in her younger days to live the nightlife on the wallet of one man after another.



New York City was and is a ho magnet, or as a friend calls it “a ho-aisis.” Every gold-digger in every hamlet, third-world mud-street dive, small town America or urban center wants to live in New York City when she’s at the peak of her power or, more accurately, trading ability—mid-teens to late twenties. In the City of eight million stories, she can rent her tits and ass for lots of gold, find one affluent sucker after another, ho numerous back-door men while acting the role of a “good girl” for her main sucker, and, maybe, make a big score using institutions that once stood for some degree honor but now only serve Feminazi efforts to extort, fleece and subjugate men. There’s nothing new about girls trying to pick men’s pockets, use guys to solve their problems or ruin a man’s life to get what they want, but under Feminazism, girls are successfully approaching totalitarian control over men. Broads throughout the world know the most lucrative free-fire zone for taking down men is New York City.

Take the ludicrous example of a stripper—that means prostitute—at an upscale lap-dancing club in Manhattan. She went into a New York State court charging the men running the club with sexual harassment and walked or danced out with millions of dollars. Hello, selling sex is what she does, she can’t sell it if potential customers don’t respond to her advertising, so when some guy working at the club responds by waving his dick at her, assuming her accusations are true, the man-hating court, with applause from the emasculated news media, gives her millions in sex-mail, or perhaps the Feminazis call it gender-mail. Pure injustice, what does a stripper and prostitute expect? She assumed the risk by voluntarily putting herself in situations in which she intended and hoped her “charms” would excite men. So she was successful, but since the guy wasn’t rich or famous, just an employee, she felt offended and the court gave her millions for her hurt feelings.

Besides illustrating the present-day despotism of Feminazis in positions of power, that case also shows the age-old problem with pretty young hos. They exploit the power of their bodies that they intentionally augment—high heels, tight revealing clothes, bras with fake nipples pointing through their blouses, lip stick, eye shadow, eye liner, fake lashes, pheromone perfume, strategic padding, jewelry and so on—to wheedle money or something of value out of a lucrative prospect. How many guys on waking up have looked at the girl beside them and wonder, “Who’s this; she doesn’t look like the girl I picked up last night.” The reality that girls can’t get through their heads when using their sexually enhanced weapons is that those weapons don’t work like laser-guided missiles. The weapons tend, like cluster bombs, to hit every man in sight, or smell. When non-lucrative prospects react to their concocted sexual bombs, girls feel offended, annoyed and sue the guy for sexual harassment. The Feminazi courts, aided by the Feminazi controlled media, which intentionally makes the man look bad for following his genes that hos knowingly manipulate, reward these broads even though they intentionally or recklessly incited the situation.

One reason the Feminazi judges and reporters persecute men while treating trollops as angelic victims is because female judges and reporters also use or did use the same tactics to attract certain guys and became livid when the wrong guy approached them. The female judges and bimbo reporters are just as guilty as the sluts, and boil with the same delusion brand of self-righteous indignation until the opportunity occurs to vent their vengeance on some guy. For those girls who never had any sexual power or lost it to the passage of time, they try to substitute other means of attracting a man. Some delude themselves into believing that by running around reciting the liturgy, “I’m a strong and independent woman, I’m a strong and independent woman,” or by making good bucks in a job they stole from a man or by trying to brainwash

society with pious declarations that girls aren't sex objects will win them a man—it won't. So, these scorned Feminazis take the fury of their rejections out on any man they can. Either way, innocent men suffer at the hands of Feminazis in positions of authority. If Feminazis can use female hormones as an excuse for murdering children, then society can use their hormones as a reason to keep them out of positions where they can harm even more innocent people, especially men.

The Feminazis just can't accept the role that Mother Nature made for them. To keep the species going, girls had to be sex objects. Most young girl's breasts are larger than required to hold the milk for suckling the young and shake like bowls of Jell-O in order to attract the fortune in men's eyes. Their asses are prominently and roundly formed so that men will look at them with desire. No one needs all that padding for sitting, which girls do a lot. Don't get in the way of girl heading for a seat in a subway car. Even if it is too small to fit her drearier, she'll shoehorn her rear in there somehow. Had Mother Nature not made girls objects of sexual gratification, none of us would be here.

Those mounds of flesh carry a power most ugly Feminazis can't imagine or the once good looking ones are trying desperately to replace. The now dried out, bitter females who bought into the Feminazi bill of delusion that girls should concentrate on a career, like men do, now realize there aren't any guys out there interested in them because they are no longer physically attractive. They've let the best years of their lives slip away by demonizing men and believing exalted delusions about themselves. Real men, not hermaphrodites, don't want a fat and flabby over-the-hill broad in her mid-thirties or older, and here I'm being charitable. Personally, I think the logical cut off for a girl's desirability is her late twenties. She better find

her main fool—husband—by then because, unlike with a guy, a girl’s money and social influence can’t compete with firm round breasts, a tight ass and a coquettish giggle.

In vain efforts to recapture the power of their youthful Ts & As, the Feminazis have latched onto the societal authority traditionally held by men as a substitute. But institutional power in the hands of a broad generally doesn’t work because Mother Nature made guys and girls different. Mother Nature knew that in order for humans to survive, it required a division of labor because no one person could perform all the tasks necessary to assure the proper upbringing and survival of children. Yet Feminazis delude themselves into believing they can “do it all,” and some do—but always badly. Unlike other mammals, the offspring of humans need protective surroundings for years in which to learn how to cope with the environment, whether the plains of Africa or the streets of New York City. Other mammals are born with survival hard wired into their brains. But because of that, they can’t take advantage of or readily adapt to change. Humans can since their brains continue to develop after birth. In order to give human children the chance to reach maturity, function within a society and procreate, Mother Nature divided up the child rearing and protection tasks.

Females handled the kids in the early years that resulted in women developing superior aptitudes in language that grew out of understanding baby gibberish and the ability to sense emotions, which together enables them to read the signs of problems or normalcy in a child. While caring for children, women gathered berries and roots that developed their manual dexterity in which to this day the average girl excels over the average man. Watching the kids and searching for small items of food at the same time created in females a speed of eye movement generally quicker than in men. For example, it’s difficult for the average guy to catch

the average girl looking at him because her eyes move more rapidly than his. The rapid eye movement ability in females makes for excellent accountants and secretaries.

Evolution gave the roles of protection and providing the protein that's crucial for survival to men. Battles and hunts occur on a three-dimensional chessboard that requires a man to see in his mind the locations, movements and relationships of his targets and then extrapolate this information to the next moment. Testosterone provides for more gray matter in the male brain, which is responsible for such computations. Today, only one fourth of women score higher on this ability of three-dimensional visualization than the average man. In addition, tracking down mammoths or fighting adversaries bent on destroying a person's tribe required cooperation, organization, courage and honor. A man facing a prehistoric beast or human enemies needed to rely on other men, so a concept of integrity or honor developed among most men because they literally were entrusting their lives and families to other men.

Organizational and cooperative abilities led men to create societies, starting with tribes and later city and nation states, in which women created the home so that children could be raised to contribute to carrying on the species. With the transition from hunter-gatherer to agrarian societies some 10,000 years ago, men still fought, although somewhat less with weapons, to protect their societies from others and nature by using their evolved abilities to build economies, physical infrastructures, governments, press, labor, religion, education and all the other institutions to which modern day nations are heirs. Girls, consistent with their evolved traits, acted timid and afraid to take chances, but so they should for Mother Nature chose them as the caretakers of the next generation. Men, on the other hand, needed to be daring, for they are the protectors of the next generation and explorers of the unknown, which often leads to opportunities that increase their children's odds of survival. Within the state, men and women

carried out roles consistent with the abilities they acquired over millions of years of mammalian evolution from the jungles to the sidewalks. But in the seventies, the Feminazis began their campaign of evolutionary incorrectness, fatuously described as “politically correct,” as though someone’s politics could seriously be taken as correct, which is about as ridiculous as a particular religion being correct.

All the talk of “political correctness” was just propaganda for a special interest group that wanted more than they deserved or could handle. Same old story: a small group of people want all the benefits of society without the accompanying obligations, so they come up with a lunatic philosophy that they sell to others, which ends in a lot of misery for everyone. If all these girls are as good and tough as they think or the fantasy world of Hollywood makes them out to be, why do they still start crying when they’re caught screwing up? Remember the bawling Feminazi head of the Red Cross who got fired for defrauding the public into giving for the 911 tragedy but then used the contributions for other purposes. Or take this knock ‘em down; shoot ‘em up alleged action heroine Lara Croft feigning the courage and toughness of a man. Does anyone other than a Feminazi believe that I, a middle-aged man, couldn’t deck the actress in that role in seconds or the latest Hollywood she-male boxerette?

Mother Nature’s invention of the concept of division of labor made so much sense that it led to economies in which individuals, companies and even countries produce the products and services for which they are best suited. Globalization is nothing more than focusing production in those parts of the world where the geography, natural resources, culture, demographics, government and other factors make the creation of certain goods and services most efficient for a specific level of quality. It doesn’t mean, as corporate America typically argues, moving operations to the cheapest labor market. Talking with someone in India who doesn’t fully

understand American English, but pretends to, does not efficiently provide a valuable service although it does increase revenue to pay bloated executive salaries and bonuses. Smart individual businesses divide up lines of production and services in order to use workers with the necessary abilities and skills for a set of labor tasks. Only an idiot would place an employee with the abilities and skills for one position into a position requiring a different set of abilities and skills. But that is exactly the Feminazis goal for all of society's labor tasks except the most dangerous—those stay with men.

Girls have plenty unique abilities—they aren't powerless. They've always had some power over men, but now the Feminazis want a tyranny. Evolution gave girls enough powers to hold their own with men in a forever-troubled equilibrium. The powers of sex, duplicity, emotion and cold-hearted self-interest savagery all fall largely in the dominion of women. Girls' power of emotional manipulation employs an arsenal of weapons: sympathy, boosting a man's ego—"you're the only one," motherly pretenses and shaming or trying to make a guy feel guilty. Nature in turn provided men with the powers of physical strength, logic and courage that built, ran and protected various social orders. Men's ability to physically beat up females was always balanced by evolution enabling females to emotionally beat-up men. Unfortunately, given the limitations of technology, a man can't show in court the pain and suffering caused by a female's intentional infliction of emotional distress. There is no machine to look inside his head that would allow him to claim he hit her in self-defense. All the court can see is the girl's black eye.

The Feminazis aren't satisfied with their feminine advantages, they want more by wresting social authority away from men in order to tip evolution's balance of power in their favor. What they fail to realize is that social authority requires the attributes Mother Nature gave men—qualities most females will never possess anytime soon. By stealing for themselves roles

evolutionarily fitted for men, the Feminazis are doomed to bitter, unfulfilling lives while men suffer the savagery that occurs when broads gain the upper hand, as described in Frederick Engels' *Origin of the Family*, a fitting analogy for modern day America.

Most of today's younger Feminazis don't realize what some of the older ones have finally learned: socially authoritative positions and constant attempts to disgrace and dishonor men so that they will cave to female whims just make men turn away. Most men aren't attracted to girls with social authority; they had enough of that from their mother and teachers, and no man wants to spend time with someone who's always trying to denigrate him by harping on a few bad examples of men. The only guys these Feminazis can attract are members of the eastern, effete, white trash, quasi-intellectual elite, who are androgynies anyway. Feminazis are evolutionarily incorrect, and evolution will eventually win out over that special interest group's illusions of political correctionalism.

Another major flaw with the Feminazis is their objective to keep older babes in the running for men by using a mirror image to understand guys. Any 101 international relations course warns against this method for determining how to deal with an enemy, which to the Feminazis, men are. The Feminazis know what attracts females to men: money, power and fame, so they foolishly conclude that the same would make females attractive to men by assuming men are like females: a delusion to say the least but necessary for many desperate broads who are over-the-hill.

The Feminazis in their quest for the social authority held by men also believe that money and authority will allow them to behave as barbarically as they wish because there would be no father figure in the form of a wealthier or more powerful man to curb their emotional tantrums. That's why so many broads in positions of authority act so mean and nasty—there's no restraint



on their innate malevolence. One of the many reasons evolution made men better suited to handle the stress of social power was to curtail the boundless evil that females drunk with power will pursue. Witness those high school sororities that were hazing new recruits in a field out in the West. I went through hazing at a college fraternity that was nowhere near as brutal as what those girls were dishing out. And all that it would have taken to stop those barbarian princesses was for one man, just one and not an androgyny, to walk into that field and tell them to knock it off. Or take the female customer service reps that the public has to deal with when a company makes a mistake. Reasoning with them is impossible. They lie to cover up their ignorance, can't make a judgment call to solve the problem and use authority in an arbitrarily vindictive manner. Men are not immune from abusing power, but because evolution slotted men for handling the responsibility of social authority, they are more able to handle it and less likely to abuse it.

As my plane began its descent into the airport, I concluded that when a man pursues the occupation that best suits his aptitudes rather than fears or the wishes of others, girls take their evolutionarily correct place—good for mothering his children or partying. And the two roles shouldn't be confused. Once crowned with the title “mother,” girls generally turn into bores and nags since caution and restraint fit that role of nature. No kid wants to see his or her mother as a boozier, druggie or ho, which is why mothers always rewrite their earlier days to appear as good girls. For partying and fun, pre-motherhood young babes satisfy the need since that's their role. But serial sexual escapades and repeated episodes of temporarily altering the brains chemistry while partying with girls is no reason by itself for a man to live. The worst fate for any man comes when he fails to pursue his first-best destiny because the resulting existential vacuum becomes occupied by the girl of the moment to whom he ascribes idealistic attributes that females do not and never will have, such as fidelity, honesty, honor, courage and compassion.

The guy creates an illusion that the girl is what makes his life worth living, what gives him a reason to continue his pathetic little existence. Girls know this instinctually and use it to their own self-serving interests. All girls carry inside their heads the motto that “Men are like children, they believe anything.” And girls will ruthlessly exploit that gullibility to delude guys into believing that females are of angelic quality and worth living for. They aren’t.

A man requires eternal vigilance to avoid trusting females or listening to their advice because duplicity is one of their innate powers that they adeptly use to further their own perceived ends, no matter how warped they may prove. Girls can only think about themselves. They don’t care what kind of harm they do to a man. Girls will sacrifice a man’s dreams, hopes, aspirations, savings and life so long as they get what they want and will feel no remorse in doing so because they believe their actions justified, since they are females. Girls reserve for themselves the right to commit any crime, to lie and to cheat, for men are as dust to them. They have been the focal point of evil in the world for millennia and as with so many other lunatics throughout history, believe they have a divine right to abuse men, since god, or in feminararchy America the goddess, is on their side.

A man must keep his priorities straight in the face of the seductive charms of young ladies. After his first-best destiny comes keeping himself in shape. Muscles that work provide a sense of confidence and well-being—evolution’s natural state for a man. To keep from going nuts in a society that caters to females and tolerates injustice, everyman needs a few close friends: guys he can trust and on whom he can rely, not broads since they are genetically untrustworthy and as fickle as history. For fun, there’s chasing girls, and it’s not as difficult as most guys think. Girls are hungry for men, just look at the faces of the ones in a nightclub that aren’t dancing. All a guy need do is walk over and start talking to them in a matter-of-fact

manner. No Shakespearian witticism necessary; they wouldn't understand it anyway. Only the arrogant or nervous Nellys will give a guy a hard time or ignore him, so move on: a guy doesn't want the snobs or fearful ones anyhow. If a man chooses to have children, then for their sake he has to put up with his wife's efforts to emotionally manipulate and deceive him, but the husband can deal with this by remembering that he's living with a pathological liar and teller of tales. Above all else when married, he must not give up partying with other girls for his wife will surely ho other men as long as guys find her desirable.

### Summertime

Late August 2002, my first vacation since I traveled to Puerto Rico during Thanksgiving in 2000, I needed it. Blackie put me up in his cabin looking west over a lake, an ideal spot to take in the tranquility of the setting sun glistening over the water. Gazing out on the lake made me wonder, as I always did when in a quiet place surrounded by nature, why did I ever settle in New York City? I had never answered the question and wouldn't this time, why bother, it didn't matter. Even if the reason no longer made sense, I couldn't do anything about it. Thanks to the female influences in my life, I no longer had the money or prospects to move elsewhere.

The years since Blackie and I last saw each other had brought both of our lives to an unpleasant stage—no golden days these. Still, we had a lot of laughs talking about the absurdity of our existences that were winding down. Most people end on a down note; the problem with us is that we never had an up note. Our dooms differed: mine mental, his physical, but both of us cursed these times. The aftermath of Blackie's cancer condemned him to some days in which he felt so bad, he just stayed in bed. We couldn't figure out whose life turned out worst, but while Blackie might disagree, both of us clearly had nothing to lose anymore.

Blackie lived the middle-class suburban life I had always disdained: family, two story house in a real nice neighborhood with trees, grass and empty lots. Okay for a guy that recently retired from working in a grammar school. He would have done better, however, by working elsewhere, but when he finally left graduate school, colleges and even high schools were only hiring Feminazis—no men need apply! A similar situation happened to me in television news where broads, not half as good as guys in that business, received preferential treatment for jobs. The news director at one TV news show told me he'd make me a reporter—if only I were a girl. The big lie for 50 years, about which broads must still laugh at men for being so gullible, was that girls weren't equally represented in various institutions and occupations because of invidious discrimination. It wasn't invidious discrimination because most girls couldn't meet the minimum requirements for certain jobs until the Feminazis intimidated employers into lowering the requirements.

In the seventies, the government, media and education imposed quotas that gave lots of incompetent Feminazis jobs evolutionarily suited for men. My first television job resulted from a local TV news show wanting to hire me in 1975 but couldn't because of the Feminazi quota system. The Federal Communications Commission tied the license renewal for all television stations to the affirmative action hiring of broads. In order to circumvent the dictates of totalitarian females, the news director created a job in which all the network's stations hired a fraction of me. Since the quotas only counted whole persons and not fractions, an additional man to the station's operation never showed up on the records. The news director was a courageous guy for doing that, as was the executive producer for special events at the second news show I worked. The executive producer went out on a limb to hire me despite management pressure to hire a girl. He gave me the job because I was more qualified.

Feminazis like to say a girl has to be “twice as good” to get a job over a man. Not from my experience. The Feminazis must be confusing the denominator with the numerator. After all, Mother Nature didn’t evolve girls to be good at mathematics, which depends so much on geometry. Men, not girls, had to make sure a spear traveled in an arc that struck its target. Although ancient men didn’t know they were using geometry, a successful hunt and therefore survival depended on it. Geometric ability imprinted mainly onto the genes of men so that today boys on average perform better on spatial tasks and tests of mathematical reasoning. Girls, as a result of their roles in rearing children, do better at verbal memory and distinguishing whether objects are similar or different. For example, Vanderbilt University studies show that thirteen times as many boys as girls score above 700 on the math part of the SAT while girls do better on the grammar and writing sections.

The reason the main stream news media can’t get the lefty bias out of its reporting these days is that the old quotas resulted in many Feminazis, mostly lefties, slithering their way into the business in the seventies and eighties. Back then, the major TV news shows were on CBS, NBC, ABC and PBS with the key newspapers the New York Times, Washington Post and Los Angeles Times. Today these girls have positions of influence at these organizations, and, as females always do, they push their own agenda regardless of the truth. As a result, the traditional media no longer reports the news but propagandizes or feminazizes it as does the New York Times or more accurately New York Pravda, which prints whatever it wants—whether true or made up.

Educational institutions have also concentrated on hiring girls over men since the 1970s. That led to the failed feminine-wimp approach of coddling children rather than disciplining them. Old fashion discipline at least made kids pay attention long enough to learn the basics for

survival and act sufficiently civil so that teachers could teach. Nothing focused my concentration or curtailed my unruly behavior in school more than the gym teacher bouncing me off the bleachers for acting up in one of my classes—the right amount of physical force gets results. Even females should understand that. Slap one upside the head, and she'll reel-in that sharp, lying, female tongue that has caused so much trouble and pain since language began. But with the Feminazis in control, education has replaced masculine discipline with therapy and substituted the development of the different aptitudes of boys and girls with socially engineering guys into girls and girls into guys in an effort to yield a Frankensteinian common denominator of soulless automatons with sexually neutral attributes.

Feminazis, their fellow travelers and those too weak to oppose them are responsible for turning the government, media and education into wimp institutions. Imbuing these sections of the American society with estrogen driven, irrational feminine traits may rank as the determinative factor in initiating the end of this country's success. All empires rise and fall, and the Feminazi brand of totalitarianism is putting an end to an America where a man could live more or less free and pretty much pursue the opportunities he wished.

The Feminazis, as with all tyrants, hold others to a standard of conduct that they do not follow. If Billy Bob Clinton had been a Republican, the Feminazis would have swarmed like locusts on Washington during his impeachment hearing. The rest of the world, including Europeans, sees this. That's one reason America is so hated in the Middle East, Russia, Asia, Africa and South America. The men in those places don't want America's values because they don't want to end up as some shrew's lap dog.

There are lots of guys from my generation whose lives the Feminazis screwed in the name of their big lie that throughout history men unjustly and harmfully discriminated against

females and otherwise oppressed them. Oppressed, how? Discriminated, sure, but to their benefit. Here's a segment of history in which these duplicitous broads claim a male-dominated society oppressed and discriminated against them:

A propeller driven plane drones somewhere overhead far out of sight. Its low monotone humming envelops a warm, spring Sunday afternoon somewhere in the 1950s. I sit on my 24 inch, black, single-gear Schwinn bicycle, keeping my balance by holding onto the door handle of an old, blue, four-door 1947 Dodge.

My consciousness pauses at the moment, feeling vaguely sad for no discernible reason. The week's events ended with this gift of nothing to do: no homework, no television shows, no new housing developments to explore or classmates able to come out and play.

The dead-end street needs a new asphalt topping. Where I am balance on the side, the asphalt has broken up into small gravel-like stones with an isolated weed sprouting up here and there. It is still early spring, the lawns are just beginning to turn green and the tulips and dogwood buds remain closed, waiting for a few consecutive days of warm weather. The air smells fresh, warmed slightly by a gentle breeze.

The droning airplane fills the vacuum of silence on this street with modest middle-class houses in this small suburban town, whose claim to fame will not come until the end of the next decade. Of all the towns in America, this town will have the second highest number of persons per capita to die in Vietnam—all of them men, of course, and all of them guys I grew up with.

Nearly 58,000 American men in the military died in Vietnam, at least 40% of them went unwillingly—they were drafted. Around 340,000 were wounded, a couple of million served and, the statistic I like the best, over 58,000 of the men that served in Vietnam subsequently committed suicide. While so many men suffered, females opportunistically took advantage of the lives, minds and years the war destroyed by seizing jobs previously held by men.

As girls flooded into the better jobs, men continued to comprise 90% of the work force in the most dangerous occupations, died younger and committed more suicides in a society where today over 50% of the millionaires are women. How could any rational person, which leaves females out, conclude that America oppressed broads? Rather America epitomized a classic, although subtle, matriarchy disguised by the disinformation that it was a man's country. The truth shows girls on the whole doing very well for themselves at the expense of men.

As for female military casualties in Vietnam, none of whom were drafted, guess how many died. Eight—not eight thousand, not eight hundred, not eighty, but eight! The same number of guys who died in Vietnam from the New Jersey town of 7,500 folk where I grew up.

Christmas time 1969, Blackie and I ran into one of the guys we grew up with who was eating lunch at the Stewart's Root Beer stand in our hometown. Brian didn't look very happy that day.

“What's going on?” Blackie asked.

Brian blurted out in despair, “I've joined up.”

We knew what that meant. The useless war had been plaguing virtually every man in our age group for years.

“What are you crazy? What about college?” We said almost in unison.

“I didn't do so well, so I'm out of school. The draft will get me any day, so I figure it's better that I join.”

“Oh man. You're on your way.” I remarked.

“Yea, probably,” he said while looking down at his burger.

We talked some more and wished him luck. When Blackie and I left, we knew Brian was dead—so did he. The following spring he was killed.

Brian had been caught in the wheels of a machine beyond his control. A machine that glowered over the land at every young man, just waiting for him to leave high school, funk out of college or graduate. When any of those events happened, the machine grabbed him and sent him halfway around the world to risk his life and sanity to make a few bucks for the military-industrial complex. For years, nearly everyone of my male contemporaries carried on his back



the most powerful country in the history of the world just waiting for its chance to cut his throat, maim his body or blast his mind.

In the late seventies, the U.S. Supreme Court ruled that it wasn't unconstitutional to discriminate against men by drafting them but not females and requiring men but not females to register for the draft. Today's Feminazis cry about oppression and discrimination, what do they know? Most modern-day Feminazis spent the war walking around in mini skirts, see-through blouses, taking drugs and enjoying free love, which meant they were free of the worry of getting pregnant, thanks to the pill. Girls hoed anybody and everybody they wanted, but guys still had to pay the price for a date, an accident and a President, L.B.J., who overwhelmingly won the female vote in 1964. There are a lot of guys in America today who know broads have always received preferential treatment, but let it slide. The Feminazis' continuing greed, however, to take all of the marbles based on a lie of past oppression has created in these guys a deep seated hatred for the Feminazis. At some point, something will happen that brings it out into an open, bloody war.

Out West, Blackie and I hung out for five days, went boating and swimming. Then I flew out to check on the Vasilyevas. Anastasia and Dima Vasilyeva rented half of a tiny house in a working class neighborhood on the outskirts of the nearest city. It didn't fit. These two had lots of money. They ran the top model agency in Krasnodar, a city of over a million people in the middle of one of Russia's most prosperous regions. They also supplied girls from Russia to overseas brothels for which they probably collected 20% of each girl's gross and ran the dirty girls list for Krasnodar's movers and shakers. Factor in that they paid no Russian taxes other than the bribes to their tax collector, and their tiny suburban house began to look more like a cover. With their money they wouldn't live there unless trying to create a false impression, as Russians are adept at doing. Maybe they were trying to appear as poor working class folk to

disguise the importing of girls for prostitution and lap dancing. They probably smuggled the hos through Canada, a country even more liberal at allowing in low-lifes than America, or sponsored U.S. visas for the girls by using a modeling outfit similar to what they ran in Krasnodar as a front. The house was too small for running that type of operation, so I checked to see whether they were connected with model agencies in the area, but nothing. Information would likely turn up later that explained why the poverty front.

My vacation over, I took a plane back to New York.

#### Work A Day World

After Labor Day, I began working for Jeff, my first paying job since I left Kroll over two years before. The money was good, but I knew I would never make enough to offset the losses due to my incompetent or crooked stockbroker, the Commie Ho, her Russian mob associates and my useless divorce attorneys. Outside of work, I kept fighting on the multiple fronts in my war against the low-lifes that had tricked, cheated and violated my rights. Joined a class action suit against my stockbroker's firm Salomon Smith Barney, dug up more information on the Commie Ho's criminal associates in Russia, filed a civil defamation suit in Krasnodar against the Ho's mother, tried to prod the Feds into enforcing the law against the Ho for falsely claiming citizenship and instituted a disciplinary proceeding against my annulment/divorce attorney Silpe for selling me out.

My Russian G.R.U. buddies discovered that the Commie Ho first met Khachaturyan Araratovich Aspyan at the Albatross Club in Krasnodar while doing out calls as a prostitute from the Vasilyeva Fashion House's "dirty girls list." Aspyan, or one of his hoods, was the guy she hired to knock me off if the INS called me as a witness. According to my G.R.U. contacts, the Albatross Club consists of powerful government officials and wealthy criminals—if the two

can be separated in Russia, and controls Krasnodar the way Al Capone's boys did Chicago. Asypyan runs one of the most powerful crime organizations in southern Russia and has close connections with one of Russia's top godfathers Ded Khasan, the mafia boss in St. Petersburg. For a time in the 1990s, Ded Khasan helped make St. Petersburg the third ranked city in the world for unnatural deaths, behind Bogotá, Columbia and Lagos, Nigeria.

Other Krasnodar gangsters and Albatross members, such as Volchok, a.k.a. Woolfy, and Raketa, a.k.a. Rocket—probably a Captain Video Ranger dropout—continued to enjoy the charms of the Commie Ho when she visited her hometown. But the relationships went beyond sex. The Albatross club protected the Commie Ho's criminal interests and various members and associates have deals with her for providing prostitutes, pornography and to some extent drugs to America. The best I can tell is that the Commie Ho, besides smuggling drugs and laundering money for the Russian mob, brings together Russian hoods with American mobsters that run escort services, brothels and lap-dancing clubs and sell pornography. Prostitution needs hos, the Internet needs porno and everyone needs to get the illegal profits out of the country. The Commie Ho, along with other Russian mafia members and comrades, facilitate such activities. The Ho even recruits her own prostitutes for smuggling into the U.S.—such a busy big girl.

The Russian mafia uses various ways to import Russian hos into America: bribing U.S. embassy officials in the countries of the former Soviet Union, Cyprus and Mexico with \$3,000 to \$4,000 a visa, using corporations controlled by Russian and American gangsters to sponsor the girls for visas by claiming they will work as “artists,” “dancers” and “translators” or simply sending the hos to Mexico for shipment across the border into the U.S. The pornography produced in Russia comes directly to the U.S. or by way of Cyprus, Mexico and the Internet while opiate narcotics flow via couriers from the Caucasus region of southern Russia directly to

America or by way of Mexico. Cocaine in turn moves from Mexico to Russia, where only the New Russians can afford it. Transferring the proceeds from illegal activities in America to offshore banking havens involves hiding the money, travelers' checks or diamonds on or in the couriers or in their baggage plus the more sophisticated method of depositing the funds to a credit card account from which the money is later withdrawn overseas. Friendly bankers also help by failing to report large amounts wired overseas or deposited.

On the litigation front, Svetlana, my Krasnodar lawyer, filed a civil defamation suit against Inessa, since the criminal suit was closed thanks to bribes and threats. The most I could win in the Russian court was 500 Rubles, about \$20. Obviously the courts in Russia are more of a joke than here. That's why anyone over there with money uses hoods; then again, anyone with money in Russia probably is a hood. Still, I wanted a trial in order to expose the bribery and the threats made against my witnesses by Russian or Chechen gangsters, since I could use that evidence in the RICO case.

Domestically, I considered adding my former attorney Silpe as a defendant in the RICO case. Silpe's motivation for ignoring my instructions and agreeing to forego my right to a trial on the Commie Ho's adultery and for an annulment still troubled me. Was there a more sinister force at work other than kowtowing to a Feminazi judge? Did Silpe belong to or associate with the Russian mafia also? The odds of that looked miniscule. Jeff's divorce lawyer recommended Silpe, so either Jeff's lawyer worked for the Russian mob or blind, dumb, bad luck steered me to an attorney connected with Russian gangsters. Jeff's lawyer was in no way connected with Red hoodlums, but given the Matrix's tricks, I could easily believe the goddess of chance led me to an attorney connected with the Russian mob. After some research into Silpe's past, I concluded

he wasn't involved with the other RICO defendants although he might have been threatened or bought off, but I'd never prove that.

My other option for justice against Silpe was to file a malpractice suit, but that would make available for the RICO defendants all the private communications between Silpe and me. Not that there was anything the defendants could use, but given Silpe's record of lying, I was sure he'd gladly add some damaging falsehoods out of spite. My only recourse, which I took, was to file a complaint with the New York State Lawyers Disciplinary Committee, which would be kept confidential. Silpe made a number of crucial lies in representing me, but I focused on the misrepresentation he made back in July 2001 when after he met with Judge Lobis and the Commie Ho's attorney, he told me there was no agreement on fault, which meant I would get my trial on annulment and adultery.

True to his lawyerly ways, Silpe responded to my disciplinary complaint by lying. First, he falsely claimed that at the July 2001 conference, he fully explained to me the agreement that the parties would not contend who was at fault, so there would be no trial for an annulment or adultery. Lawyers always lie like this when they think it's their word against someone else's, usually their client's. Every state has a disciplinary committee and none of them are about to believe a client over the lawyer, unless it involves sexual harassment. If the committees believed the clients, it would result in all those incompetent and crooked lawyers flooding the labor markets looking for new jobs—might even cause a recession. Besides, the disciplinary committees consist of other incompetent and less than sterling attorneys, so it's similar to having ex-cons running the police force and criminal courts. Lawyers just don't punish other lawyers unless they have no choice. But Silpe made a mistake, or so I thought. When he was lying to me

that he made no agreement, my friend Jeff who had accompanied me to the court was standing right there listening. I had a witness, and one who was a lawyer from Harvard Law.

Silpe's second key lie to the Disciplinary Committee was that the lawyer I hired after firing Silpe had told Silpe I still could have gone ahead with a trial for an annulment and adultery if I had wanted. Silpe used this lie to convince the Disciplinary Committee that it wasn't anything he told me that prevent me from having a trial on the issue of fault, but my own later decision not to pursue one. Once again, lawyers lie like this all the time. They misrepresent what another lawyer, not an adversary, says knowing that most lawyers will not testify against another lawyer. But Silpe made another mistake here, or so I thought. My former lawyer told me Silpe was lying, and he would tell the Committee that if asked.

Promptly, I notified the Disciplinary Committee of Silpe's lying along with my witnesses' names and telephone numbers. The Committee took well over a year to make its decision. Silpe beat the rap. The Committee's decision stated, "There is insufficient evidence to conclude that Mr. Silpe made intentional misrepresentations," and "the Committee arrived at this determination after conducting an investigation consisting of several steps." Did any of those steps consist of contacting my witnesses? No! Not one of them! The Committee's sloth, bias and incompetence in failing to contact my witnesses to Silpe's lies didn't surprise me, since the Feminazi's bud-a-boo of sexual harassment wasn't an issue. But the lack of surprise in no way assuaged my anger. I fired off a letter to the head of the Committee demanding a review, a lot of good that would do, and accused them of failing to do their duty, bias, incompetence and possibly worst—blatant corruption.

Mr. Silpe was my attorney to whom I paid lots of money. He held himself out as competent in domestic relations law of which I never even had a course. I trusted and relied on him as clients are encouraged to do and for which the disciplinary and ethics rules were enacted

so that such trust and reliance would only rarely be misplaced. Perhaps the rules only exist to give clients a false sense of security that their attorney will act forthrightly.

You state “there is insufficient evidence to conclude that Mr. Silpe made intentional misrepresentations.... or that he intentionally withheld information.” Basically you are calling me a liar, since my statements are evidence that Mr. Silpe made misrepresentations. You’re also telling any client who complains against a lawyer that the client’s words are useless—they will not be believed. Okay, let’s assume my statements mean zero and all clients are liars when they complain against august attorneys. What about the two corroborating witnesses to misrepresentations by Mr. Silpe? The two witnesses to whom you and your Committee never talked. How do you answer my corroborating witnesses—are they liars too? No, you just ignore their evidence.

Mr. Silpe’s misrepresentations in his answer amount to hiding the truth from the Committee. But, I assume that is not considered professional misconduct.

The Disciplinary Committee’s review reached the same conclusions as the initial decision because its review still failed to talk to my witnesses—American justice.

My efforts to expose the myriad acts of malfeasance and nonfeasance that I had stumbled across since meeting the Commie Ho brought me back to the I.R.S. for another try at changing its no-tax policy on lap dancers. While reading the New York Times, a rare event for me, I saw an article quoting the new I.R.S. Commissioner that the Service would begin concentrating on high income tax evaders. About time, when I worked as an attorney in the I.R.S. Chief Counsel’s Office in 1985-86, it concentrated on pursuing small time tax cheats. One case I worked on for a couple of weeks involved a Federal employee who failed to report the \$100 he received for jury duty—the I.R.S. decided to prosecute. What a waste of the taxpayers’ dollars. The I.R.S. left the rich alone because they had lawyers and political influence, and it didn’t bother those making fists full of cash in the underground economy because it took too much work. That left the middle class an easy target to soak for the taxes the rich and criminals didn’t pay. So on reading the change in I.R.S. policy, I sent the Commissioner my estimation of the untaxed \$13 billion dollar cash flow into lap dancers’ tongs and suggested the I.R.S. adopt

guidelines for taxing these cheaters. It might make up for some of the loss Federal tax revenue from another nefarious group that had once paid 32% in 1952 but by 2003 only contributed 7.4% to the tax coffers—corporations. The Commissioner’s Office sent a polite reply that my letter was forwarded to the New York City office. The same office that refused to even look into the Commie Ho’s tax evasion that she had admitted in her diary. That meant the circular file.

### I Like the Nightlife

In the middle of September, Mark and I started chasing girls together on the weekends. There aren’t many guys in this world who are any good at picking up chicks, but Mark is and so am I. Together we had a lot of fun and laughs. We both saw through their duplicity and attempts to use men. We also had an added advantage. The white and Latin chicks, which Mark preferred, saw him buddying around with a middle-aged white boy, so they viewed him as a professional with money. The white chicks were also thinking backdoor man. Sometimes I’d start talking with a white or Latin babe, introduce her to Mark, and then go looking for someone of interest to me. The black, Latin and Asian babes, whom I lusted for, saw me hanging around with a smartly dressed black dude, so they figured I’m cool. They also saw me as a potential sugar daddy. Sometimes Mark would introduce me to one, and then goes hunting for what he liked. We each provide the other additional credibility with the dames we were interested in.

Our tag team hustling began on a regular basis after Mark had just gone through a couple of unpleasant relationships: one with a Latina, followed by a rich white broad from Jersey. Both times he ran into the same insult from the girl’s parents—they were bigots. Both sets of parents made clear their ignorance by objecting to their daughters going with a guy whose skin absorbed more of the visible electro-magnetic spectrum than their daughters.



The source of America's most deadly injustice in its history stems from the inability of those whose skin reflects more of the visible electro-magnetic spectrum to realize that those who reflect less have the same aspirations and dreams: a good job, nice house, schools that teach their kids and a decent neighborhood in which their children can grow. Varying degrees of visible electromagnetic reflection don't indicate a difference in values. All those outdated references to race simply make ne'er-do-wells, including the effete, eastern, quasi-intellectual elite that populate wine and Brie parties on the upper Westside of Manhattan, feel superior to others. There haven't been different hominid races on this planet since the Neanderthals died out some 27,000 years ago. Then again, sometimes in court, I realize they didn't all die out. Anyway, contrary to white suburbia stereotyping, most of the black guys with whom I chased girls or played sports were more conservative than me. If anyone ever gave me a nuke, I'd use it, but my black buddies only wanted the American dream—go figure.

People should check their ancestry. Seventy thousand years ago a giant volcanic eruption wiped out all of our ancestors except for 3,000 to 10,000 Homo sapiens. Over the next 70 millennia, all of us now here came from those 3 to 10 thousand survivors—sounds like a TV show. Every other hominid, what the scientists classify as different races, died out. The different physical characteristics of modern day Homo sapiens evolved as an adaptation to the particular geography where people were hanging out. Can you imagine hunting animals on the equator without sun block—not me? So Mother Nature gave those ancestors of ours in tropical climates a darker pigmentation to keep the ultra violet rays out. In the northern climates, hair became flat and wavy instead of curly in order to keep the heat in rather than allowing it to flow quickly away from the head. Boiled or frozen brains don't work well. On it goes with other physical characteristics, such as lighter skin to absorb Vitamin D in temperate zones.

Today's differences among individuals simply result from one person's ancestors spending more or less time in a particular climate since that giant volcano blew up. Before modern times, physical differences served the purpose of increasing the survival of our race, Homo sapiens, in all parts of the globe. Today, such physical distinctions are superfluous. If I want to hang out at the equator, I'll buy some sun block and an air conditioner. If I need Vitamin D, I'll take a supplement. Superficial physical attributes lie along a spectrum that various lunatics have divided into superficial groups to further their own interests. Culture, however, is a different story; some, such as America and Russia, reward evil.

With the Commie Ho divorced but not forgotten, I too was trying to recoup from a revolting experience. The Commie Ho had scrambled me to the point where if a pretty young lady started turning on her high beams and pumping out those pheromones, I wanted to run down the street screaming. It was time for me to place these broads in an accurate perspective, and Mark helped. I knew that unless a guy was intent on having children, girls were only good for partying. But it wasn't enough to know it; I had to feel it in my gut. Sure love exists, but not between a guy and a broad. For instance, girls love money, especially men's money, the kind for which they don't have to work. Most men also love their children and the lucky ones their occupation, but as for love between the sexes, it's an illusion of an indefinable Shakespearean sonnet theme ruthlessly exploit by broads. Girls are forever conniving men into believing that guys should love them by asking, "Why don't you tell me that you love me?" How many times have I heard that from a broad? Girls know that the moment a guy believes he's in love, he'll feel obligated to, tolerant of and dependent on them. Then watch out, those greedy little female hands will loot his savings accounts, bankrupt his business and ruin a man's destinies. Unlike love, the emotions of passion and compassion do exist between the sexes with the later usually

absent in the girl while posing great danger for a man. The biggest mistake next to a guy believing he's in love with a broad is to feeling compassion for her. Once a girl has a man over that barrel, she will take him for everything tangible and intangible she can get, bleating all the time that he should sacrifice for her with the words: "Help me."

It's a fool's road to accept exploitation in the name of an illusion propagated by the exploiter or allow the cold-hearted use of compassion to chain oneself to the exploiter's whims. The only emotion a man should feel for a girl is lust because that's what Mother Nature built girls for, and she built plenty of them—3.5 billion and climbing.

Relationships between girls and guys are adversarial—girls know this, but most guys don't. Broads take without remorse a man's money, house, cars, sanity, equipoise, dreams, hopes and life. They enter any relationship with that intent coursing through their veins. Out of self-defense and self-preservation, the wise man does nothing for a girl until she puts out, then concludes that I've gotten what I wanted and so has she—a good time—and moves on to the remaining ones in the pool he finds attractive, not all virgins, but a lot more than the 70 odd girls the martyrs receive. It's not considered honorable by Hollywood movies, but acting honorable toward girls invites defeat and ruin because they have no concept of honor. As soon as chivalry causes a man to show consideration, she'll take the advantage to plunge her dagger of deceit, dishonesty or any other reprehensible act that serves her selfish interests. Better to fight fire with fire. Deal with girls the way they deal with men: lie, cheat and use them. Never show a girl any regard beyond that of the minimal civility shown an animal.

Whenever a girl asks for a favor, a man should remember that for over 150,000 years, and millions more when factoring in other ancestral hominids, girls have been exploiting men by using the fallacy that by having sex with a guy, a girl was doing him a favor. On the contrary, a

man does the girl a favor by having sex with her because girls enjoy it more than men. The ancient Greeks knew this. As a young man, Tiresias found two snakes mating and hit them with a stick. He was transformed into a woman. Seven years later, Tiresias did the same thing and became a man again. When Zeus and Hera asked him which sex experienced more pleasure during intercourse, Tiresias said women. Hera, angered over the disclosure of a key feminine tool of trickery, promptly struck him blind. Sure it's only a myth, but logically the revelation makes sense. Guys enjoy sex, but not to the point of risking the sickness, pain and life-upheaval results of a pregnancy. Females, however, throughout history risked those all the time, so intercourse must be more enjoyable for them than guys. Girls, therefore, owe the man a favor, not vice versa. But girls hide the truth so as to get a free ride, or trick a man into giving them favors by pretending they are the ones who granted him a favor—what a con, but not the only one.

Girls use many tricks to snatch a man's mind from the key purpose of his life, once again, pursuing that first best destiny whatever it may be. Females manipulate men through the emotions of the unconscious by flaunting their tits, asses and legs or eliciting sympathy with phony hard luck stories, usually about their previous boyfriends abusing them, which actually means they didn't cave to her every demand. They leech onto a man's conscious by appealing to his ego with "you're different than the others," and metamorphose their personalities by pretending to be what a particular man wants, so they can get what they want.

The uncanny feminine ability to mold or metamorp-ho-se her surface personality to what a man desires ranks as a girl's most insidious and effective power. The Star Trek episode "The Perfect Mate" depicts this power by personifying it as a pretty, young female, called an emphatic Metamorph. The character's personality changes to suit whatever man she is with at the time.

The Metamorph cozens up to one man after another deceiving, winning over or inducing him to do something for her by artful coaxing, wheedling or shrewd trickery. The men don't realize her duplicity because each honestly believes she's only interested in him. No wonder she appears beautiful to the eyes, since the man's mind sees only an illusion, a mask covering her real motivation—her drive since a child to satiate her selfish desires and gain wealth by any means. The Metamorph, in the episode, gained her end with a faithless marriage to a rich and powerful man—nearly every girl's desire whether vamp or Feminazi.

Girls enter relationships with premeditation to use the man by unleashing their Metamorphs within, which ironically often results in the man becoming what she wants. Metamorphs pretend to have abilities to ease a man's pain, dissolve some of his troubles and make a nirvana here on earth, so long as the man does what she wants. If the Metamorph fails in her con, she at least has cornered the guy into a position where she can enlist the institutions of society, especially in America, to coerce and extort what she wants from him—usually money.

Girls don't solve problems; they create them. There is no salvation in a female. A man has to walk through the shadows in life on his own. The only salvation or nirvana for a man is pursuing his first-best destiny through his entire life. Most men, however, don't do that because they belong to the surplus or excess population. Many, due to their upbringing, fall prey to enticing Metamorphs and transfer the want and need for a purpose from their first-best destinies to serving females.

Metamorphs manipulate men into focusing their money, time, energy and efforts on pleasing them since Metamorphs want to make bearing and raising children as easy on themselves as possible. Nirvana for most women exists in creating families, but that's no excuse for bleeding men to death so they can also have a life of ease and social status. Girls, however,

want it all. They will lie, cheat, dissemble, manipulate, kill and do any other evil act to fool or intimidate men into sacrificing to make the female lot easier so that girls can do what they've always wanted: raise children and live the life of Riley. For a man, there is no nirvana in a girl's arms, but for a girl, a man's arms provide the financial, physical and emotional basics necessary for a girl to quench her desires.

Both my mother and ex-wife used their metamorph powers to get what they didn't deserve—a ho trait, and the term ho clearly described my Nazi mother. Through a lady who grew up with my mother, I learned darling mother got fired from her nursing job for hoing at age eighteen. She had worked at the Christian Sanatorium in northern New Jersey where in the 1920s to 40s alcoholics went to dry out. All the pretty nurses, including mother, serviced the head doctor, but what got her fired were her trysts with a famous alcoholic writer from New York City. And to think she used to tell me she had never kissed a man until twenty—what a phony. A little more truth about her came from her own mouth when I was nine and stuck with my drunken mother in a Switzerland Hotel. In her young and pretty days, she often danced on tables at the Hotel Astor Roof Garden in Times Square—the original table dancer. One night, however, she slipped smashing her platform with her derriere and management finally bounced her out for good. All this just a few blocks down Broadway from where my wife would years later give, in the jargon of strip clubs, table dances. Mother also confessed when I was nine that she married father because he had good material prospects as a chemical engineer. Now that's a “ho” although not as rabid as my ex-wife. Maybe mother invented the term. How many different men did I pass by on the way out of her into a society filled with metamorphs?

Evil is out there, but not in the Sun, Moon, stars, planets, nature or, as the *Lord of the Rings* depicts, in orcs, trolls and goblins. It seethes in the acts of humans. Only people can

decide to violate the rights of others in order to obtain something they don't deserve, usually material goods or psychological and social power, and the most effective of the species at harming others to obtain what they don't deserve are females. When caught, females always whine that punishing them means to also do evil. Not so, when a person is punished for violating the rights of another, the punishment is not evil, the punishment does not violate the culprit's rights because the culprit has forfeited her rights by harming the rights of others. Institutions and companies also do evil by not performing the duties for which they were established or performing them in violation of the rights of others. But that occurs only because the people making up such organizations use their powers to serve themselves rather than the reason for an institution or company's existence. Basically, the problems plaguing history and every day lives, such as my own, come from people greedy and arrogant enough to trample the rights of others in order to satisfy some want or desire. In my case, I didn't do anything to deserve a Nazi Ho as a primary caregiver, and the only thing I did to deserve the Commie Ho as a wife was to feel sorry for her and be susceptible to the drugs she secretly fed me.

Most of the females I've had dealings with in my life were evil, but by the time I understood that, they had destroyed everything and every prospect I ever had except my physical health. I never should have trusted or believed any broad or that they were good for anything but partying and problems. Still, I don't hate them, for how can a guy hate that which he lusts after—Feminazis excluded, since I carry no desire for them at all. But I do hate what dames intentionally and recklessly do to men, such as accusing men of what girls are guilty of in order to deceive men into thinking females don't do such things or always pulling a switch—saying one thing, then doing another. Understanding girls for what they are removes much of the danger in dealing with them—know the enemy, for they know men.

The enemy I knew best were W-T-EABS or white trash Euro-American broads, but now I generally stayed away from them. Mother Nature had programmed me to pursue only attractive girls in their late teens or twenties, which ruled out W-T-EABS because in that targeted age range white girls are too confused over whether to act like a guy or girl thanks to the Feminazi propaganda of their mothers and schools.

Take for example the night I was sitting in a bar on the upper Westside waiting for Mark and Ron, a black belt from Mark's martial arts class. This nice looking W-T-EAB, around twenty three, sits down next to me, so, like the spider to the fly, or is it the fly to the spider, I start talking to her. What a klutz this white girl, she blushed, had difficulty speaking in sentences and couldn't even key in a number on her cell phone. She felt intimidated because like all young white broads programmed with the Feminazi lunacy she thought herself powerless with respect to a middle-aged lawyer. What a fool! This girl looked great, very pretty, thin and desirable. Mother Nature gave her plenty of power to hold her own with an apparently successful man, but the Feminazis had stolen it away. She thought she needed an equivalent or greater measure of career accomplishment to feel confident enough to even carry on a conversation. Men don't want to date a competitor; they already spend all day fighting with them. At night, men want a red lip smile, "a wiggle in her walk and a giggle in her talk." Most modern American white chicks have relinquished their strengths so that over-the-hill Feminazis don't have to worry about competition from them for men. Such young white chicks actually feel ashamed of the power evolution gave them. On the other hand, young black, Latin and Asian chicks know their power and how to use it, which gives them the pose, confidence and wit that makes hanging out with them a pleasure. B.L.A.s know my interest in them—their bodies, as I know theirs in me—my



wallet. Since most my money had already been spirited away and I knew never to let any girl prepare me another meal, the nightlife during became enjoyable rather than dangerous.

### Bad Girls

In October 2002, the Russian military intelligence guys convinced the Deputy General Prosecutor for the Southern Federal District of Russia to reopen the criminal defamation case against the Commie Ho's mother, Inessa. This looked somewhat promising because now an official of the national government showed interest in the case that local corruption and organized crime threats had closed. The Krasnodar Ministry of Internal Affairs would now either do its duty, unlikely, or make the Commie Ho pay more money in bribes, likely, or she would have to enlist her hoodlum associates to make more threats, most likely. What ever happened, I would learn about it through my intelligence agents and could use it in the RICO case.

Balancing off this good news, naturally came bad from the lawyers Disciplinary Committee, which dismissed my initial complaint against Mundy. The Committee decided that when Mundy threatened to use at trial a non-existent audiotape recording of me allegedly trying to extort money from the Commie Ho, Mundy was not trying to coerce me into a settlement because the law requires that he threaten to make public something that was not already public. When Mundy lied to my attorney about the existence of the audiotape, the accusation of my attempted extortion had already been made public when the Commie Ho filed a report with the 114<sup>th</sup> Police Precinct in December 2000. The filing of the "report" was news to me for I had never heard about it. No police visits, not even a Kafka-type phone call early in the morning.

Today in America, girls can create a police file on a man without the guy knowing about it, so long as the slut doesn't press charges, which is what the Commie Ho did, obviously under

Mundy's instructions, since she wouldn't have otherwise known she could do that. Another violation of my due process rights by Feminarchy America, but who's counting? Perhaps the only reason for the report was to enable Mundy to get away with his coercion-type tactics without violating the letter of the law. Even so, Mundy still lied about the audiotape's existence but that didn't bother the Committee, "There was merely a statement from one counsel to another, concerning evidence that might be used in the case." What evidence? The audiotape didn't exist, so there was none. It's as though a prosecutor lies to a defense attorney that the state has the murder weapon with the defendant's figure prints on it in order to trick the defendant into a plea bargain. Attorneys can't lie like that to opposing counsel. The Committee should have required Mundy to produce the tape to show he wasn't lying, but it didn't.

Okay, so lawyers have a constitutional right to lie, but I still had a trick of my own. Mundy had also told one of my attorneys that he possessed medical records of me beating up the Commie Ho. Once again, no such records existed, but the Committee doesn't care about attorney falsehoods. Mundy's statement, however, was another attempt to coerce me into settling the case so that the nefarious connections and activities of my wife and the Russian mafia, with which Mundy did business and probably belonged, would remain hidden. This time, unlike with the extortion accusation, there were no police reports concerning such beatings, so the Committee could not dismiss a coercion charge against Mundy threatening to make the alleged medical records public on the grounds they were already public information. So, I filed another complaint of coercion against Mundy. This time figuring I had boxed in the Committee, but some type of fixed was in—institutional sloth, bias or corruption. The Committee responded that it reviewed my second complaint but the result was "in accord with the original decision not

to proceed further.” They didn’t even mention the second coercion charge, probably because they couldn’t find a way around it.

Some potentially useful information on Russian prostitution in the U.S. came from a newspaper article reporting the indictment of six people from the former Soviet Union for running the largest prostitution ring in Los Angeles history and laundering the illegal proceeds. The article didn’t list all the names, so I put in a call for the grand jury minutes on the outside chance of some connections with the defendants in my RICO case. The prostitution operations were similar, which meant the Russian mafia lurked in the background. The ringleaders, a Russian mother and daughter ho team from the Ukraine, arrived in Los Angeles in the late 1990s and, with the aide of four others from the still evil empire, opened up shop in 1999. The operation set up Internet websites and spent tens of thousands on advertisements in foreign language periodicals, local newspapers and the yellow pages. The ring took in \$5 million over a couple of years. The boss, Mama ho, received nine years while her 22 year-old daughter remained a fugitive from justice. Their operation smuggled in Russian prostitutes through the mired loopholes of incompetence and corruption at the INS while some of the Russian hookers came by way of Mexico. It all sounded like part of my RICO case against the Commie Ho and her associates. The Commie Ho’s Moscow pimp, Leo, bribed INS officials in the Moscow Embassy to obtain visas for his prostitutes to travel to southern California or used front corporations in California to sponsor his prostitutes for work, student, and even religious visas—Mary Magdellan entries. Once in the U.S., the sluts overstayed their visas for as long as they wanted, often times for good. The INS can’t do anything because it’s clueless as to how many aliens don’t leave when they should or where they are living in the country. With the girls working as prostitutes, lap-dancers and porno starlets, everyone involved makes lots of money.

Leo also sent girls to Mexico from which they were smuggled into the U.S. So a connection between the L.A. ring and the Commie Ho's Russian mob associates wasn't farfetched.

When I called the Los Angeles District Attorney's Office to obtain the grand jury transcripts, the operator surprisingly put me through to the Deputy D.A. handling the case. The D.A. chatted about the case and gave an interesting take on the crime of prostitution. The Deputy D.A. said that many people wrongly claim prostitution a victimless crime when it actually harms other members of our society in many ways. Prostitution rings don't pay taxes, but they do use the public infrastructure for which the rest of society's members pay. That reminded me of the line from Ludacris' record *Ho*, "You're tax dollars underwrite ho independence." The D.A. added that prostitutes and pimps usually engage in other scams, such as ripping off credit card companies and various businesses. The cost of those crimes aren't paid for by the companies but passed along in the form of higher interest rates and prices to law abiding customers. Prostitution also increases the spread of disease and health care costs. When more people become sick or people become sick more often, the insurance companies aren't going to let that eat into their profits. Insurers will raise medical premiums for everyone to cover the costs caused by their members' interaction with or working in the prostitution business. In addition, federal, state and local health expenses jump because of more incidents of disease among the uninsured from prostitution, which was turning into a largely Russian enterprise in American urban centers.

The D.A. was right, prostitution caused increased economic costs to the rest of us, but I doubted the law enforcement agencies would put an end to it anytime soon. The cops working vice made too much money protecting prostitution rings from prosecution. Probably the only reason for busting the Russian ring was it undercut the prices charged by other organized

operations. The Russians charged a flat fee of \$200 to \$300 an hour while the girls from the more established rings requested tips on top of the \$200 to \$300. Simple economics most likely resulted in the established operations complaining to their “good friends” on the vice squad to put the Russians out of business or the cops’ payola would dry up. But Russians are quick learners and the next ring will pay the cops their fair share.

Another force deterring the prosecution of organized prostitution is the American quasi-intelligentsia’s efforts to benefit females anyway it can, even hos and madams. By declaring prostitution a victimless crime that should not be prosecuted, America’s arrogant elite of Feminazis and wimpy white man has replaced the virgin on top the pedestal with shrews and sluts. The obvious solution to the social harm caused by prostitution and allowing females to violate the law is to legalize and regulate it. Periodic medical testing of the hos will reduce the risk of disease, licensing certain companies to sell the girls will help keep organized crime out and auditing the books will increase the chances of the industry paying its fair share in taxes while those who don’t comply should go to jail for a long, long time. However, whether legal or illegal, the quality of life still suffers. During Clinton’s tenure in office, the porn and escort businesses mushroomed, some legal, some illegal, but now whenever I meet a good-looking babe, I wonder whether she’s a prostitute. However, a national registry listing all licensed hos would reduce the chance of some professional slut suckering a guy into believing her a good girl. A man would then only have to contend with ferreting out amateur hos—an all but impossible task, but that’s the risk of living as a heterosexual male on planet Earth.

Jeff completed his review of my first RICO draft in October and came up with a lot of good suggestions, which I incorporated during my weekends over the next six months. My job with Jeff took up my time during the week, and I liked making money rather than just spending

it. Work on Jeff's cases consisted of drafting court papers, appearing in court and taking depositions. While in the middle of asking questions at one deposition, I received a call on my cell phone and took a recess.

"Is this Roy Hollander?" the caller asked.

"Yes."

"This is Blackburn."

Who the devil is Blackburn, I wondered. Was this another threatening call?

He repeated, "This is Blackburn. Do you remember?"

Then I remembered. The Canadian private detective, Elaine, who had tracked down one of the Commie Ho's offshore bank accounts, knew guys in the U.S. Drug Enforcement Administration. She told them about the Commie Ho smuggling in drugs to feed her prostitution customers, and they wanted to talk to me. D.E.A. had arranged with my investigator to use the code name "Blackburn" so that I would know D.E.A. was calling. Oh brother, I mockingly thought when told this months ago and tried not to laugh: everybody wants to be a secret agent man.

"Yes, yes I remember," I answered.

"We'd like to talk with you."

"Fine, but I'm in the middle of a deposition right now. Do you want to set up a meeting or a time to call? How can I get back to you?"

"We'll get back to you."

"Okay, you can always reach me on my cell phone."

"Roger," he hung up. Sounded like another Captain Video Ranger. I went back to the deposition and never heard from the D.E.A. again. They actually began snooping around Flash

Dancers for secretly putting drugs in some high net worth customers drink and food but dropped the investigation to allegedly concentrate on the 911 aftermath—the current excuse of choice by government employees to do even less than before.

The next day, October 23, 2002, a twenty-two year old Chechen rebel named Movsar Baraev led over 50 armed militants in the takeover of the Dubrovka Theater complex in Moscow and held around 750 people hostage. I still had friends in Moscow and emailed them in the hope they weren't among the hostages. None were. To my Moscow lawyers Xenia and Dennis, I sent, "I hope you all are safe. I wonder if my ex-wife is involved somehow—just a little joke." My lawyers well knew that the Commie Ho had grown up in Chechnya. They replied with similar banter, "As far as we know, Alina is not to blame for this one."

It was obvious to me how the Moscow hostage crisis would end—lots of dead people. Russian government officials, as with most of the population, just don't care about human life when it's somebody else's. Sure enough, on Saturday that same week the F.S.B. pumped some unknown gas into the theater and sent in its Alpha unit. These guys are brutal. Individual rights don't exist to them. Once I witnessed them assaulting a nightclub to arrest a couple of gangsters. The Alpha unit rolled up in a gray bus that looked as though it just drove out of a Disney cartoon. But nothing Disney-like jumped out of the back and side doors. Wheeling AK-47s, they ran into the club slamming anyone in their way against the walls or to the floor, grabbed a couple of guys, maybe the right ones maybe not, pounded them with rifle butts and dragged them back to the bus.

The Alpha unit stormed the Moscow theater, protected by gas masks, and promptly executed the fifty some Chechen terrorists who had been knocked out by the gas. The gas also sent 650 theatergoers and actors to the hospitals, but no one in the government thought about

telling the doctors the type of gas used so that the hospitals could properly treat the sickened hostages, as a result, 120 died. Incompetence, no, the government officials involved probably figured everyone would die anyway, so why bother. Besides they wanted to get back to their daches for the rest of the weekend.

### All She Wants To Do Is Dance

Just before Christmas, I started taking salsa lessons. Mark kept telling me that if I learned salsa, I would clean up with the young babes at the Latin clubs where we often hung out. “They’ll look at you as the rich daddy they never had, and if you can dance, man-o-man, they’ll be all over you.”

The first part of Mark’s analysis was right; I haven’t made it to the second part, yet. One Saturday at Gonzales y Gonzales, I asked this twenty something Latin chick, “Meet any rich guys tonight?” She replied, “Only you!” It must have been my gray hair, but looking rich and talking with these pretty young things wasn’t enough, they wanted to dance. Dancing rock ‘n’ roll was not a problem, but the really hot girls in New York, the ones who knew how to dress to flaunt their attributes, went to the Latin clubs. These clubs mixed black, Latin, Asian and white folks along with the ages: teenagers, with fake identification, to my age and older. Unlike other New York City discos, the Latin clubs had class; not only in their dress code, but guys actually asked girls to dance, just like before the Feminazis took over. In the rock ‘n’ roll clubs, everybody jumps around like pigeons trying to use their appearances to attract someone to dance with them, no one asks anymore. One Feminazi told me the reason was so that girls didn’t have to feel awkward at telling a guy no—typical broads, always shirking their responsibilities.

The rock ‘n’ roll clubs put me at a disadvantage, since the years had left my once good looks on the ash heap of the 1980s. The only tool left was my ability with words to make a girl



laugh and impress her with my education, which for girls meant money and a challenge, as in could she enslave this overly educated white guy to depart with lots of dinero and free help. The music in the rock 'n' roll discos was usually so loud, I could barely understand a girl even if she did open her mouth and yelled in my ear, so it was near impossible to carry on a conversation. A hearing aid was not likely to increase my chances, either. In the Latin clubs, the music wasn't so loud, so they looked good to me, if I could dance and the girl could speak English. Talking got me telephone numbers, but dancing and talking got Mark the girls. One night at the Copacabana, this drop-dead pretty, sober Asian girl in her early twenties came over and asked me to dance. The only girls that had ever asked me to dance before, even in my younger years, were either sloshed with liquor, doped up or mass murders. When I recovered from the shock, I had no choice but to tell her I couldn't, I wanted to, but would only embarrass her. She kept pushing, not believing me. This babe wanted to dance with me, and because I couldn't, I had to turn her down. As she walked away, I decided to start taking salsa lessons. At my age, I couldn't afford to turn my back on yummy opportunities like that.

A dance school across town from my apartment offered salsa classes, so I signed up for group lessons. Naturally, the prettiest girl in the class was a young Russian with big balloons. She just immigrated to America by marrying some Peace Corps fool. The entire picture of her duping this guy looked familiar; I wondered whether she also used drugs on him. Still, she was a joy to dance with and very inviting. As evil as Russian girls are, they know how to act sexy, but I wasn't entering that abyss again. The classes helped, but with my life running down, I wanted to make quicker progress, so I went to the front desk to sign up for private lessons. The girl told me there were a number of guys who could teach me.

“No, no, no!” I quickly said. “I realize this is New York, but I don’t want to learn how to dance with a guy. I want to learn how to salsa with a girl.”

“The men instructors are very good and can show you what you need to know.”

To myself I thought, what they can show me I don’t want to know. The idea of dancing with a guy, even at a distance like some clowns do in the rock ‘n’ roll discos, wasn’t for me, and this school wanted me to hold one in my arms in order to learn the salsa—no way! What the hell had happened to this country? I didn’t care how trendy it was for guys to hug guys or dance with guys; I knew what my genes told me, the only life form I wanted in my arms were young ladies. After six-million years of evolution, the Feminazis and girlie-men may succeed in mutating Americans into neuter, but that’s one glass of Kool-Aid I’m not drinking. Other folk can do what they want, but they’re not foisting their beliefs on me so that they can feel better about themselves.

“Give me a girl.” I demanded. “I don’t care when it is, I’ll make the time.” Money still talked, and I got a female instructor.

For my first private lesson, I arrived early and my teacher arrived late, as she usually did for most of the lessons. Isabella had her high beams on when she made her entrance, and I jumped, emotionally, with my autopilot charting a course into this hot babe. After class, she pumped me for all the necessary information to decide whether my pockets carried gold or copper and where I stood on the sucker spectrum of occupation, age, marriage status and gullibility. That didn’t bother me; all girls do it. But when she took my business card saying, “I always write something on the back of business cards that will help me remember the person,” my sensors flashed “Red Alert, Red Alert!” The Commie Ho always did the same thing in order

to keep her suckers straight. And since Isabella had bigger breasts, that made her even more dangerous than my ex-wife, so I decided not to follow the lust pumping in my veins.

My intuition or experience proved right. A month later, after one of our classes, Isabella suggested we have lunch. Okay, as my shields went up, let's see what happens. All girls have metamorphs in them, but some girls, like Isabella, are purebreds. They look and move as though struggling to burst the seams of their clothes just for you. But more dangerous are the varying tones of their voices that intentional play on one emotion after the other.

At lunch, Isabella said she came from Spain, so I asked with suspicion how she got into America. She dodged that at first to tell me about her family in Spain, which had money, and about her work there as a professional dancer and owner of a fitness center that made her enough money to buy a "mountain." Translation: "I don't want your money. I'm already rich." My translation: "Oh yes you do, but I don't care because I don't have any thanks to the Commie Ho and my fat sow stockbroker."

"So why come to New York? Why not live on your mountain top?" I asked, referring to Thomas Mann.

"I always wanted to come. It's the center of dance, and I'm trying to put together a Broadway play that I wrote about dance." Translation: "New York is where the money is. Can you get me some for my play?"

Letting that ride, I said, "I know people from Spain can visit here without a visa for short periods, but how are you able to stay here and work?"

"It's hard working here for me." Ducking the question again, and about to try to soften me up. "When I go for jobs, men paw me and want something from me before they will help me. They grab my ass." My thoughts: "And what a nice voluptuous ass you have. Your future

is clearly behind you.” Translation of her complaint: “You’re not like them, right. You’ll help me out of the goodness of your heart, right.” My thoughts: “The gold digger blues again. Trying for sympathy in order to make it easier to play me for a sucker.” The eternal metamorph ploy as described by Bogart in *Casablanca*, “I heard a story; it usually goes with the sound of a tinny piano in the parlor downstairs. ‘Mister, I met a man once when I was a kid; it always began.’” Translation: “The man did bad things to me, so feel sorry for me.” My thoughts: “Oh please tell me the details, but it’s not going to work here anymore. I don’t believe you dames anymore, no matter what you tell me.”

Trying to sound sincere, I replied, “Gee, that’s a shame. So how did you end up here?”

“I was dancing in Cuba where I met an American violinist from the philharmonic. We fell in love, and I came back to New York City with him when he left Cuba.” My thoughts: “She found her ticket to legal residency in gold diggers’ heaven.” Isabella continued, “Things were great for a while, but then he started being aggressive to me.” Translation: “He became suspicious that I was playing around.” My thoughts: “Wrong word sweetheart. That’s the same word the Commie Ho used to describe me after I discovered her adultery.”

Isabella went on, “Then I got pregnant.” The unspoken part: “So I could stay in America.” My thoughts: “The violinist became suspicious she was just using him for a green card and threatened to send her back to Cuba or Spain or wherever. She then tricks him into making her pregnant or believing he did when actually it was one of her other beaus. Once pregnant, Isabella knew that the INS wouldn’t deport her, although the law allows it, and after giving birth, she was home free in the U.S.A. because the Feminazis would never allow the separation of a mother, regardless of her duplicity quotient, and child.”

She continued, “After I gave birth, he tried to deport me, and I ended up living in a shelter with my daughter for six months.” My thoughts: “The violinist finally wised up that she had scammed him from the beginning in order to work, play and stay in New York City and that the child was probably fathered by one of her other playmates.”

Needless to say, Isabella’s attempt to make me feel sorry for her failed, so she went on without missing a beat to another metamorph tactic.

“I’ve only gone with a couple of men.” Translation: “I’m a good girl.” My thoughts: “Yeah, right, as I sense her oozing sex through every pore.”

Every girl, except the virgins, always say she’s only gone with one or two or at most three guys. It doesn’t matter whether she’s 15 or 45; they all say the same thing. How’s that possible? Most of my buddies and I had gone out with more than three girls, but yet every girl any of us ever dated had only made it with one or two or three guys. The math just didn’t add up, unless there were a small number of overly active girls some place who made up for all the extra girls we guys slept with—or, someone was lying, and I knew whom. That feminine lie, however, turned out bigger than I had imagined.

Conservatively speaking, guys from 15 to 65 pursue girls in their prime or those close to it, say 15 to 35 years old. That’s a requirement of evolution in order to assure the species’ survival: guys hunting young fertile looking girls while the girls seek men with authority and money. So at any given time, the male population from 15 to 65 is pursuing a receptive female population from 15 to 35. The result is that females from 15 to 35 service the males from 15 to 65 of which there are a lot more than the females. The girls 15 to 35, therefore, are more promiscuous than guys 15 to 65; that’s why the girls are called hos. But when girls hit the years beyond 35, few guys other than husbands, and even that’s a stretch, want to touch them, so their

promiscuity falls below that of men 15 to 65. In the end, it probably all balances out with each sex humping the same number as the opposite sex over a life span. While husbands may be more likely to cheat on their over-the-hill slovenly wives, girls 15 to 35 are more likely to cheat on their main boyfriend or husband.

Okay, I didn't buy the good girl routine, but Isabella had one more metamorph card to play, which was a new one to me that derived from Feminazism. "I want to be independent." Translation: "I wouldn't be a bother. I'm a strong independent woman who can take care of herself." My thoughts: "Yeah independent until something bad happens and then you come running to me to solve the idiotic mess that you made. No thanks."

Isabella's emotional snare missed me, but since she was my teacher, and boy could she dance, I respected her for that and we remained cordial acquaintances. She always impressed me with what she could do on the dance floor—well beyond any guys' abilities. After going to the Bolshoi Ballet in Moscow plenty of times, I concluded girls are just better dancers. Probably has something to do with displaying their wares around the primeval campfires or they just have more with which to work.

Generally when girls don't get what they want by emotionally manipulating a man, they resort to other tactics. Thank goodness Isabella didn't, but in modern day Feminarchy America, every girl carries more weapons than Artemis does arrows.

Take what happened to my pal Jeff. He had two kids with his wife and was now divorced. Because of the adversarial nature of their relationship, the wife no longer had a prayer of emotionally manipulating him. But she could use the New York State courts to obtain her unfair ends. The domestic relations courts stood as Bastilles of Feminazism: invincible for a time in their discriminating against men as a new form of institutionalized corruption in the name

of feminist fantasies. Once a husband or wife, usually the wife, invoked the New York judicial system to deal with the failure of a marriage, the courts continue to hover over any disputes the two may have long after the dissolution of a marriage. In effect, the Feminazis in New York City have successfully created a corrupt Big Sister to coerce former husbands into acceding to a former wife's unjust and often illegal demands—usually for more money. Injustice, being rotten at the heart, needs cunning treatment, which the courts provide.

Answering my telephone. “Roy it’s Jeff. You’re divorce judge was Joan Lobis, correct?”

“That’s right; the man-hating lesbian who browbeat my attorney into tricking me out of a trial. Being the wimp he was, the Christ killer went along with her demands.”

“Well, let’s not get into religion. Lobis is now handling the child support issues from my divorce.”

“Good luck!”

“I’m beginning to agree with you. I just came back from a hearing before her, and as you know, my ex-wife keeps asking for more and more.”

“But she saved up lots of money as an investment banker and is now married to that financial executive who makes \$10 million a year. What’s with her? Is she trying to increase the child support so that she can skim some more for another piece of jewelry or another fur coat?”

“I don’t know,” Jeff answered. “But something is not right. Lobis kept acting very differential to my wife’s attorney who is a woman.”

“Well Lobis hates men, and you are a man.”

“Right, but I feel there is more going on here than that. Lobis favored my wife’s attorney to such an extent, and so quickly dismissed my arguments that I suspect she may have received campaign contributions from the attorney.”

“Maybe, what’s the attorney’s name?” I asked. “I’ll check Lobis’ financial filings. And ask around about her.”

“Thanks, I appreciate it.”

The financial records showed nothing, but a buddy knew about both Lobis and this female attorney. Back in the 1970s, before Lobis went to law school, she and the girl lawyer were living in a lesbian relationship that included a third female—a ménage a trios with a dildo. Bingo! Jeff’s intuition was right. Lobis obviously favored her former lesbian lover’s clients not because of the attorney’s legal expertise but past sexual trysts with the judge. Judges aren’t supposed to do that, and at the very least, Lobis should have disclosed the affair, but she didn’t. Jeff filed a complaint with the New York State Commission on Judicial Conduct, but given my dealings with that Feminazi institution, I doubted anything would happen because Lobis was at least half a female.

Imagine the tempest, if a male judge failed to disclose that a female lawyer who appeared regularly before him was a former concubine. The Feminazi storm troopers would scream for his impeachment, and, most likely, even accuse him of sexually harassing the lawyer in some twisted way or another. But when females violate the rules: none call for justice, nor plead for the truth. The Feminazis trust in secrecy and speak lies; they conceive mischief and bring forth inequity wherever they go. A couple of months later, the Commission dismissed Jeff’s complaint. The lawyer for Jeff’s wife, however, handed the case over to her daughter to avoid the appearance of conflict, which to Jeff and I was still present. Lobis obviously was biased



whether her former lover or her lover's daughter handled the case. After all, it wasn't as if Lobis' former lover left her for a man and turned her back on lesbianism, since the lawyer's daughter was artificially inseminated.

How did America reach such a state of affairs? Some, mostly leftover lefties from the 1960s, believe with misplaced self-importance that they brought about the "equality of women." Not likely. Nothing of importance happens in America unless the rich favor it. By the end of the 1990s, the rich or top 1% of wealth holders owned nearly 40% of this country. That was more than what the bottom 95% of the population owned, which probably meant you. Bill Gates alone had more than the bottom 45% of Americans combined. From 1970 to 2000, the rich steadily increased their ownership at the expense of the rest of us with the net worth of the top one percent in 1999, 2.4 times the combined wealth of the bottom 80%. The top 5% owned over 60% of everything you saw in the U.S., and 99% of all the politicians. Such a concentration of wealth in so few hands gives one class of people not only enormous power but common interests for which they exercise their influence. What are the odds that the 99% who own the remaining 60%, or the 95% hanging onto 40%, could ever agree on anything, not to mention coordinate their efforts through associations like the Business Roundtable, American Chamber of Commerce, National Association of Manufactures and other groups where the movers and shakers meet to plot the future? The rich, unlike average Americans, not only have access to, but often are the decision makers in government. As for the public officials who aren't rich, they curry the favor of the wealthy in return for money, jobs, status and ego. So it is no accident that federal and state governments generally act only for the wealthy and in their favor. Government officials are not about to invest time, energy and effort in assisting the average citizen when they

can help the wealthy unless doing their duty to the average taxpayer serves the policies of the rich.

If the interests of the rich are served by going to war, such as in Vietnam or Iraq, then pick up your guns boys, you're on your way. If their interests require changing the social fabric of the society they control, then change will occur. The interests of the rich are two fold: protecting what they already have and becoming richer. Sometimes the interests of the rich and the rest of Americans actually coincide, such as in World War II or the cold war. If the Nazis or Commies had won, the rich, except for the sellouts, would have ended up like the rest of us have always been: relatively poor and powerless, which the rich deserved, but then all of us would have lost our constitutional rights—for whatever those are worth. Other times, the interests of the rich conflict with the majority of us as with the Feminazi movement.

Feminazism's roots reach back to the 1960s but became a force for the rich in the early 1970s. Whether the rich sponsored or exploited the bra-burners doesn't really matter. Since the early 1970s, real wages for American workers have steadily declined. Workers today in nearly every job, except CEOs or Wall Street Bankers, make more than 12% less than in 1973 when inflation is taken into account. When workers make less, corporations make more, and who owns over 50% of the financial wealth in America (stocks, bonds, mutual funds): the same 1% that now owns more than 40% of everything you see in America. A reduction in corporate expenses, such as salaries, usually increases gross profit, which ups the value of a company's stock and allows for more dividends—all of which benefits the owners. Real wages for Americans fell for the simple reason of supply and demand. Feminazism dramatically increased the labor pool for jobs evolutionarily suited for men by adding females to that pool. The increase in the supply of labor out stripped demand, so real wages dropped and the rich got richer. No

longer could a man work a middle class job and make enough to support a family and send his kids to college. Now both the husband and wife have to work because of lower real wages with the children paying the price. Anyone who thinks day care, assuming the kids aren't molested, is as good as a stay-at-home mother is nuts. From the 1940s to 1960s, the average workweek was 40 hours, but today no one, other than government employees, puts in 40 hours. The increased competition in the labor market from the influx of females has led to employees working longer hours, an additional month since 1970, and harder, a 33% increase in productivity, for less pay. So thanks to the Feminazi special interest group, the rich pay lower wages for more work and more production—not bad.

Another benefit to the rich of Feminazism comes from the large influx of girls into positions in the government formerly held by men. The rich aren't dumb; they know girls can't handle executive and managerial responsibilities or long periods of stressful, hard work because Mother Nature didn't breed them for it. That's why the rich generally keep females out of many important positions in their corporations because they don't want to end up bankrupt. So the girls, tricked into believing they have to pursue the same careers as men, gravitate to government positions that require less work and are easier to obtain because the government is more susceptible to intimidation by the Feminazi lobby. After all, girls, unfortunately, have the vote—about seven million more than guys. The government, therefore, ends up with lots of crucial positions filled by females who, because of their genetic insufficiency in certain abilities, can't handle the duties of their jobs. As a result, the government becomes more incompetent, leaving corporations to get away with more fraudulent activities in order to increase profits. The rich win again, and the rest, both men and women, lose. Since the rich effectively control America

and benefit from Feminazism, it makes sense that the rich must have either been behind the social trend or exploited it to their own advantage when it emerged in the 1960s.

A more subtle aim of Feminazism, which also benefits the rich, employs a strategy of the former Soviets. Every dictator, oligopoly or class that gains control of a nation knows that the only meaningful opposition to its rule will come from men. Only men have the courage to put their lives, liberty and fortunes on the line for a principal, and to do it in enough numbers so as to overthrow the entrenched bosses of a society. The odd girl here and there may have such guts, but generally there's too few of them to make a difference. Furthermore, evolution programmed men with the abilities to mobilize, battle and prevail in physical confrontations, not girls. History has shown that only groups of men can marshal the force necessary to depose of tyrants. Joan of Arc, the odd girl out, didn't lead debutantes or lingerie burners. The Soviets' strategy sapped their male population's courage and determination for freedom by killing, gulaging, committing to insane asylums, slandering or firing from jobs men demonstrating "anti-social behavior"; that is, standing up for their rights. It was a systematic culling of alpha males. Over time, the psychological climate of these ever-present threats made Soviet men almost as docile as the females.

The American rich adopted the same Soviet objective but used somewhat different tactics. In the 1970s, after the domestic upheavals over the Vietnam War, primarily led by men, the rich, with their knowing or unknowing Feminazi allies, set out to enervate the U.S. male population in order to lessen the chance of any more challenges to the top one or five percent's control over America. Not that the Students for a Democratic Society, Weathermen or Black Panthers ever really threatened the American rich's control, but these men protesting in the streets of the U.S. might have at some point actually picked up the gun and used it in an

insurrection instead of just talking about it. So the rich, using the media corporations they run, started demonizing men as evil, coarse, brutish and in need of sensitivity training. The campaign, which continues, was to marshal social and psychological pressure from different parts of society to push men into behaving like frightened little girls so that the rulers, with Feminazi collaboration, fleeced men of the evolutionarily correct benefits they earned by creating, protecting and building America.

Sexual harassment suits stalk the land extorting from men fortunes and ruining their careers for doing what Mother Nature expected and girls always wanted whenever they intentionally enticed a man. Courts infringe on a man's right to travel freely by violating his due process rights in granting, without him present, orders to a lying ho that prevents the man from going anywhere that the girl might conceivably be. If he steps on a subway train and the ho is there, the police have to arrest him in most states, which means at least a night in jail. Men end up incarcerated based solely on allegations from females, usually lies, which the men never have a chance to refute before going to jail—sounds like feudal Europe. The hapless man then ends up with his name on a domestic violence inquisition list and in the F.B.I. databases, a permanent criminal record, when no violence occurred other than the man being locked up because his wife perjured herself to a court that didn't want to bother hearing the man's side before granting her the power to imprison.

Legislators, lobbied by the Feminazis, passed rape shield laws in violation of the equal protection clause of the constitution and the rules of evidence. These laws for camouflaging overly used vaginas provide broads with swords to extort, intimidate and vent their vindictiveness over imagined slights. The laws prevent defendants in rape cases from presenting evidence that the alleged victim is really a prostitute or overly promiscuous, which infers, but

may not be enough to prove, that she consensually engaged in sex with the defendant. Under the shield laws, a ho need only get a man in a compromising position with no else around and threaten to scream rape then or later unless he does what she wants. An accused murderer has more rights. A murderer can present evidence that the victim threatened him to show that he acted in self-defense by killing the ho. For example, an accused murderer could provide evidence that the victim threatened other men on days prior to her death. The jury could infer from such evidence that the ho also threatened the defendant, and, in self-defense, he killed her. Evidence of the alleged victim's prior relevant conduct is permitted for any criminal proceeding except rape. If the alleged rape victim volitionally engaged in sex with different men on the days before the alleged rape that evidence is not admissible even though it infers the ho volitionally engaged in sex on the day she now claims rape. So a man actually has a better chance of keeping his freedom by killing a ho rather than letting her accuse him of rape.

After tearing down men for the attributes Mother Nature endowed them with and stereotyping guys as guilty until proven innocent, the rich and Feminazis, again through the media, created the illusion of the "New Woman" as a substitute for all the male heroes of history who fought injustice. The "New Woman" public relations con, probably inspired by the 1968 "New Nixon" campaign, depicted girls as having courage, strength and a willingness to fight for what's right that when coupled with their innate compassion, something they never possessed, would end the nation's ills. The society, or at least the influential members of it, has been brainwashed into believing the genetic qualities of men really reside in bodies engineered for non-manly tasks. Very ingenious because neither America nor any societies' new heroines will take up the gun to fight and die for freedom in sufficient numbers to defeat a ruling clique because Mother Nature never gave them the abilities to do what the illusions purport. The rich

and Feminazis created the myth that women will lead the way to a better land, but since they can't, they won't and haven't. Mind over nature is a losing proposition for those buying the lie, but a winning one for the rich in creating psychological barriers that convince men they shouldn't do what they can and that girls can do what they can't. Given the frustrations that result from such delusions, no wonder psychotropic drugs, Brave New World's soma, are so popular.

Higher education also played a key role in mentally de-sexing the sexes into male wimps and Feminazi shrews. Always dependent on the rich for endowments and controlled more and more by Feminazism, academia provides the rational through so-called scholarly research and discourse for re-engineering human behavior to benefit a few and their minions. Grade schools also do their part by indoctrinating boys to act more feminine and girls more masculine to create a conformity of powerlessness—a neutered species.

The rich and their knowing or ignorant allies the Feminazis have in large part succeeded, but only in America. Men, who once got together to play poker, drink and smoke cigars or compete in tackle football, bruising basketball or baseball, now integrate broads into their past-times. The competitive edge of competence, courage, fortitude and, yes, violence fades from non-use when girls are involved. American men's sense of self has become so warped that they will actually praise a girl for her acts during coed competition when only derision would reflect the truth. I'd like to see some Feminazis step on the playing field with my old rugby team. Today, guys even talk about how they feel rather than asking for advice on how to solve a problem. They waste time and money on a shrink's couch, self-indulging their feelings like some high school girl with too much estrogen. American males even look to girls as solvers of

problems and omnipotent goddesses in control of reality—what lunacy, but very successful for the American rich because emasculated men don't rebel.

Propaganda, intimidation, demonization and efforts at making guys feel ashamed have transmuted evolutions' roles for the sexes to where men forsake their abilities to be more like girls and girls pretend to be what they aren't in order to acquire societal power over men. As a result, America's rich have increased the chance of continuing their rule, boosted their profits and debilitated federal and state governments.

Even the government's failure to do a minor act, such as deport the Commie Ho, serves the interests of the rich. The Commie Ho entered the U.S. by defrauding the federal government, so she is here illegally. But deporting her and others like her would reduce the providers of sexual services thereby driving up the cost of blowjobs, intercourse, lap dances and pornography. Some of the money these alien hos earn goes for buying goods and other services in this economy, which benefits the wealthy more than the rest of us because the rich, on a per capita basis, own a much larger stake in the economy. The Commie Ho and others import drugs to secretly feed their customers, but that also benefits the wealthy since it assures alien hos stable clienteles and cash flows with which to purchase goods and services in this economy. Although much of the money amassed by these alien whores is smuggled out of the country into overseas financial institutions, those institutions purchase U.S. financial instruments, so the money comes back as foreign investments into companies owned by the rich or to pay government contractors, also owned by the rich. Alien hos and their support staffs, however, evade taxes, but then so do the wealthy. The rich, therefore, don't pick up the tab for the public infrastructure that the hos and pimps use, the middle and working classes pay that bill. In the end, it makes no sense for the government to enforce the laws against the Commie Ho because she provides the wealthy an



economic benefit, small though it maybe, but when multiplied over tens of thousands of similar illegals, it adds up.

### What Does It Take

The reopened criminal defamation case against The Commie Ho's mother was shut down once again. My G.R.U. agents reported that the Ho and her attorneys, Mundy and Petrovich, used Chechen mobsters this time to intimidate the witnesses into silence. That made sense. The Commie Ho and her parents lived in Grozny, Chechnya until the early 1990s when, according to the Ho, the parents divorced and she moved to Krasnodar with her mother. Krasnodar was only a few hundred miles from Chechnya, and despite the war between the Russian government and Chechen rebels, Russian organized crime and Chechen hoods worked together in many criminal operations. Money knows no political side.

An additional set back came in my efforts to keep tabs on the Commie Ho's travels between Russia and New York City so that I could alert D.E.A and Customs, for whatever good it might do, of the flights on which she smuggled money out of and drugs into America. She started taking advantage of an Aeroflot service in which the holder of a return ticket to Russia could book a flight three days before departure, and she also began varying the months when she traveled. The short lead time for her flights and not knowing the month of her travel made pinpointing her flights financially prohibitive, since each check by the former M.V.D. Lt. Colonel cost a lot. Once, I tried calling her home number in Queens to confirm whether she was still in the country, figuring that by doing this periodically, I could narrow down when she traveled, but she had changed her number to unlisted. These hos learn quickly.

In March 2003, I finished the second draft of the RICO Complaint and gave it to Jeff for his final comments. In order to serve the Complaint, I needed the addresses, many of which I

already knew, for all the defendants identified by their real names. As for the others still lurking in the shadows, such as the hood who made the threatening telephone calls, I didn't have a chance of identifying him until the case reached the stage where I could subpoena documents from the defendants and the F.B.I. As a double check that Petrovich still worked for Mundy, I called that law firm. The secretary said Petrovich was out and put me through to his voicemail. Since he still worked there, I could serve him at that address.

To obtain the addresses of a few defendants in Krasnodar, I asked the military intelligence guys for help. The only other person's address in Krasnodar that I needed was Alexey Smolin, the guy who ran prostitutes overseas under the disguise of dance troops putting on legitimate shows in discos and laundered money for the political elite and crooks of the city through restaurants that never had any customers. Smolin no longer washed money at the Troika Restaurant, so Nadya contacted the Commie Ho's old boyfriend Alexei who had helped me before with information. He knew Smolin and gave Nadya Smolin's current work address, The Lucky Grand. The Ho's old boyfriend added that he had recently run into the mother Inessa who said the Commie Ho was among the top ten in a beauty contest in New York City and dated a good boy. As always, I just filed the information, knowing it would reveal itself later as to who was the new sucker and which contest.

Besides the addresses for some of the defendants in Krasnodar, I also needed locations in Mexico City for the Julia Heart Agency and one of its employees named Maria in order to serve both with the RICO Complaint. Maria and the agency made the arrangements for the Commie Ho and another Russian mafia prostitute to sell their wares at The Men's Club. The agency, the two prostitutes and the Commie Ho's Moscow pimp Leo had established an underground air route in 1999 for funneling Russian mafia prostitutes to high-end clients at The Men's Club.

Some of the whores were also smuggled across the Mexican border into the U.S., according to a Mexican source.

The telephone number for the Julia Heart Agency came from my private eye in Mexico City, and a Latin girl helping me with Spanish translations called the agency pretending to be a friend of the Commie Ho and looking for work. The madam knew my ex-wife, how could she not, since they were partners in crime, and told my assistant that the agency now used the name Malbros Recruiting Agency and provided the address. It even had a website, [www.malbros.com](http://www.malbros.com), with pictures of the apartments where the prostitutes lived and entertained customers. Those photos looked familiar. On a closer look, I remembered. That's the same apartment as in the photographs that Leo had passed around when the Commie Ho and I visited his studio in April 2000. Leo's photos had not only shown one of her customers, Salvador, but where she "entertained" many other customers—how sweet. My Latina assistant also got the last name for Maria: "Serrato" from the agency, but she no longer worked there, so I still didn't have her address.

As for Azul, I tried to find a recent address, but no go. The Latvian prostitute who, along with the Commie Ho, ran weekend prostitution trips for wealthy businessmen in Mexico in 1999 was off the grid. At one time, I knew Azul's email and her Dutch boyfriend's telephone number but both had since changed.

The New York City Board of Elections had completed its investigation that confirmed the Commie Ho had illegally sworn to be a U.S. citizen when she registered to vote. The Board promptly threw her off the voter registration roles. The Commie Ho could care less, since she had already received the registration card she could use to help show citizenship. What about the federal and state felonies the Commie Ho committed? Was she going to walk on those like all

the other crimes she's perpetrated? When I had talked to the Boards' Chief Clerk in Queens, she didn't even know that falsely claiming citizenship when registering violated the law. The Board of Elections began to look distressingly similar to other government agencies—do nothing to bring female alien felons to justice, except, as in this case, remove their names from the voting roles, big deal.

Time to kick the matter upstairs, so I contacted my friend Alan. He knew the Election Commissioners and counsel for the Board, and they were all scared of him. Alan didn't hold any official position of power, but he could make their lives miserable and his extensive contacts enabled him to dig up any dirt from their pasts. Alan approached the Board's counsel who said I should send him a letter requesting that the Commissioners refer the Ho's illegal activity to the Queen's District Attorney. In the letter, I tried to prod them into doing their duty by playing off the post 9/11 climate, "In this time of uncertainty and danger, I believe our laws should be enforced rather than ignored." It was a bit of a stretch, since the Ho's associates were mobsters not terrorists.

After a month and a half wait without any response, I told Alan and he mounted his charger. No bureaucrat or government dared withstand Alan's onslaught when he believed his cause just. A couple of days later, I received an email from the Board of Elections' counsel inviting me to their next meeting to argue in favor of the Commissioners referring the Commie Ho's felony to the Queens' District Attorney. When the Commissioners investigation began the previous year, I had provided them with an affidavit that the Commie Ho was not a citizen, a copy of her INS card, a certified record of her falsified voter registration and copies of the New York State and federal laws she had violated by falsely swearing to being a U.S. citizen. The Commissioners, apparently, also received information from her, but I never saw that. Based on

the documents submitted and the Queens Board's investigation, the Board's counsel concluded, "It appears clear that Ms. Shipilina executed the affidavit on the voter registration form knowing that she did not meet the statement 'I am a citizen of the United States.'" This sounded good enough to me for notifying the D.A., but the Commissioners had to make that decision, which would come at their next meeting. Needless to say, I wasn't optimistic.

At the Commissioners' meeting, I gave a short prepared speech. When I started, most of the Commissioners were looking down at the meeting's agenda, which contained the documents I had submitted. "In addition to the documents before you, I would like to add that although Ms. Shipilina is a Russian alien who grew up in Chechnya..." At the word Chechnya, the Commissioners stopped perusing the agenda and looked up. That grabbed their attention, as I knew it would. "Ms. Shipilina speaks, writes and reads English sufficiently to understand the voter registration document she signed in which she claimed U.S. citizenship. I believe she went to the motor vehicle department to obtain a non-driver id and voter registration card in order to use them as additional documentation to show she is an American citizen when she tries to obtain more U.S. identification, such as a passport. I believe she is taking this route of acquiring U.S. id as a contingency against the possibility of Immigration deciding to deport her for material misrepresentations on her immigrant visa application. With U.S. identification, it will be easier for her to go underground and continue living and working in America."

The Commissioners briefly discussed the issue and surprised me with statements such as "we have a violation of law here and should refer it on to the proper authorities." One commissioner, however, said he was troubled because the case appeared to be motivated by the sour grapes of a divorce. What's wrong with sour grapes—it's an excellent motive for pursuing justice? The absence of sour grapes on the part of victims or whistle blowers is not a

requirement of the New York and federal felonies the Commie Ho committed. Assume sour grapes destroy my credibility as a witness, what about the documentary evidence? If the tide turned against me, I was ready to pounce with my counter argument. But that commissioner went on to suggest the matter not only be referred to the Queens District Attorney but also the U.S. Attorney for the Eastern District. The Commissioners adopted his suggestion and referred the Ho's criminal acts to both state and federal prosecutors. Amazing, a government body that actually did its duty without bias to either males or females. Then again, maybe it was Alan's presence at the meeting that swayed the Commissioners to follow the law in order to avoid his unrelenting criticism for not doing the right thing. Anyway, it didn't matter because neither the Queens District Attorney nor the U.S. Attorney did a thing. Both agencies adhere to Feminazi ideology in which girls can do no wrong and men are always the culprits. My never-ending battle for truth, justice and what was once the American dream continued. I even wasted the postage to send copies of the Board's referral letters to Scott Marvin at INS in the Embassy in Moscow and to the newly named Department of Homeland Security's Bureau of Immigration and Customs Enforcement.

One of my Moscow attorneys, Dennis, congratulated me on this minor victory and added, "For the life of me, I can't understand the difficulty in deporting this little tart. Ashcroft seems to have no trouble with everyone else under the sun. Maybe he should send her to Guantanamo?" America's war on terrorism had just opened a second front in Iraq, following its initial success in Afghanistan from which prisoners were sent to the U.S. military base Guantanamo on the island of Cuba. Until the U.S. Supreme Court intervened, the prisoners were held indefinitely in a legal limbo somewhere between combatants of war and criminals. Saddam was evil, and the world better off without him, but I didn't really care about foreign tyrannies, I

had my own to fight for justice here at home with the RICO suit and complaints to various inspector generals as my last weapons within the system.

### Walk On The Wild Side

At the end of March, not the Ides, but it might as well have been, my military intelligence agents' man in Krasnodar reported that the Commie Ho "has all criminal contacts through her mother Inessa who is affiliated with the famous Chechen terrorist Arbi Baraev. We will conduct a detailed investigation and collect all information including addresses about all criminals affiliated with Inessa and your ex-wife Alina." Arbi Baraev, who's he? The name was vaguely familiar but I couldn't place it. And what's this "terrorist" stuff? The Ho worked with mobsters, not terrorists. Okay, maybe the G.R.U. considered organized criminals terrorists, and in a sense they were. I went on the Internet to find some information on this guy Baraev and ended up immersed in Byzantine insanity.

General Arbi Baraev, boss of Chechnya's Special Islamic Regiment, specialized in kidnapping, extortion, narcotics, illegal oil production and slavery. In 1998, in return for \$20 million from Osama Bin Laden, Arbi Baraev beheaded four Western telecommunication workers. That's why the name sounded familiar. The investigators at Kroll had told me this story when I began work for the firm in July 1999. According to various media reports on the Internet, Arbi started out as a traffic cop for the Ministry of Internal Affairs in the late 1980s when the Soviet Union still controlled the Chechen Republic. The Soviet Union's national police, the M.V.D., operated throughout the Union with branches in all the regions. As an M.V.D. cop, Arbi worked for the same organization as did the Commie Ho's alleged father and during the same time period: late 1980s and early 1990s. Inessa and my ex-wife may have met Arbi and the members of his clan through the man whose name was on the Ho's birth certificate,

or perhaps the two serviced Arbi and the others sexually. The Commie Ho was 15 in 1990, very tall and in her prime for a Russian prostitute, while Inessa, at 40, over-the-hill but with her athletic build, still sellable.

Chechnya is a clan-based society with ancient traditions. A Chechen's primary allegiance and loyalty is to his clan and its associates. Many clans engage in organized crime activities that reach throughout Russia and even into the U.S., for example, Chechens run drugs into Miami. Although Inessa and the Commie Ho are apparently of Russian and not Chechen birth, they could still be members or associates of Arbi Baraev's clan. Chechen organized crime clans have many Russians and foreigners involved in their operations. Whether Inessa or the Commie Ho are members or just affiliated, the clan would still protect them.

In 1991, Arbi moved up from traffic cop to bodyguard for important Chechen officials. As the Soviet Union began to unravel, Jokhar Dudayev seized control of Chechnya from Russian forces, declared independence and was elected Chechnya's president. The Chechens never liked Moscow's rule over their country. Chechnya sits on the northern range of the Caucasus Mountains, the geographical divide between Europe and Asia, about mid-way between the Black Sea to the west and the Caspian Sea to the east. More importantly, it has a predominantly Sunni Muslim population sitting on oil.

Long before communism in Russia, the Tsars periodically campaigned to expand their empire south in order to acquire a warm water port for commerce and their navy. From 1732 to 1783 armed conflicts between the Russians and the Chechens occurred off and on. In 1783, Chechnya's leader declared a jihad against the Russians that lasted until the Chechens' defeat in 1791. After a period of relative peace, the 1817 Caucasian War initiated another jihad until 1858 when the Chechens were once again defeated. Over the following decade, many Chechens were



deported or fled to the Ottoman Empire while Russians began to settle in Chechnya's northern lowlands—a process that accelerated with the discovery of oil near Grozny in 1893.

Sporadic resistance to Russian rule continued, and after the Communist Revolution, Chechnya became a Soviet Republic. Stalin's purges of the late 1930s cost the lives and liberty of thousands of Chechens, but they continued to defy Russian Communist rule. In 1944, Stalin charged the Chechens with collaborating with the German invaders and rounded up almost the entire population, 400,000, and deported them to Kazakhstan. Nearly 50% of them died as a result. In 1957, Moscow lifted the ban on Chechens returning to their homeland and restored Chechnya as a Soviet Republic.

With the fall of the Soviet Union, Chechens declared independence. In 1994, Russia tried to oust the rebel Chechen President Dudayev in a coup but failed, so Boris Yeltsin sent in the military and M.V.D. troops to begin the First Chechen war of the 1990s. The Russians subsequently assassinated Dudayev but lost the war even after killing one in every seven Chechens. Arbi Baraev blossomed during the 1994-96 war by commanding a detachment of men that kidnapped tourists, journalists, foreign workers, villagers from other republics and Russian government officials. Some were ransomed, some kept as slaves and some, 170, personally executed by Arbi. The war also enabled Arbi's armed band to seize control of the oil production in one of the regions of Chechnya. In order to protect the shipment of the oil through Russian lines to hard currency markets, Arbi bribed Russian military and M.V.D. officers, the very people who were supposed to be fighting Chechen rebels such as Arbi. Oil revenues enabled Arbi to buy weapons from, once again, the Russian military and the M.V.D.

After the end of the First Chechen war, Arbi continued his oil and kidnapping business and moved into narcotics. He covered his criminal activities with the rhetoric of Islamic

Wahhabism, but despite the verbiage, was nothing more than a fundamentalist mafia don. During the Second Chechen War that started in the fall of 1999 after the bombings of apartment buildings in Moscow and other cities, Russian military officers and M.V.D. bosses began making lots of money again by way of bribe taking from Arbi's oil, drug trafficking and other businesses. Beginning in 2001, on orders from Russian President Vladimir Putin, the F.S.B., previously the K.G.B. for whom Putin worked, officially took control of the show in Chechnya, even overseeing military operations. The F.S.B. not only knew of Arbi's dealings with the Russian military and the M.V.D. but also approved, probably because the F.S.B. bosses received a cut of Arbi's bribes. Arbi moved freely through Russian lines conducting his various criminal businesses. He traveled with Russian M.V.D. and F.S.B. identification and under the protection of those agencies.

With friends like that, Arbi didn't have a care in the world until the summer of 2001. A few months earlier, I had made my first trip to Krasnodar to find witnesses for the annulment/divorce case and almost immediately those witnesses began receiving threats to shut up. According to the new information from my G.R.U. sources, those threats actually came from Arbi's clan members—not the Russian mafia. Around the same time, Russia's military intelligence, the G.R.U., always in competition with the F.S.B. for political influence and funds, decided the corruption in Chechnya and the war were destroying the armed forces both physically and morally. The G.R.U. decided that to end the war required strengthening the hand of the Chechen rebel President Maskhadov. President Maskhadov wanted peace, but the more radical rebels, like Arbi, were making so much money out of the turmoil of war, they opposed any peace efforts. Peace might bring a stable Chechen government, and with that Arbi and the other warlords would lose power and money.

On June 23, 2001, the G.R.U. financed a group of ethnic Chechens who stormed Arbi's stronghold and captured the Islamic mafia don. G.R.U. officers questioned Arbi for 11 hours on videotape then shot him. The Chechens that captured Arbi were also paid off with death under mysterious circumstances. The G.R.U.'s actions eliminated one of the F.S.B.'s cash flows and put Chechen President Maskhadov in a somewhat better position to talk peace with the Russian government. It wouldn't last for long.

In accordance with Chechen tradition, a blood relative of Arbi's took over the mafia don's position as head of the Baraev clan. Arbi's nephew continued to run the clan's criminal operations under the protection of the F.S.B. and M.V.D. and assassinated business opponents from other Chechen clans along with members of President Maskhadov's government. The Baraev clan included criminal and political members and associates all the way from Chechnya through Krasnodar to Moscow. Some of them threatened the witnesses in the criminal defamation case against the Commie Ho's mother Inessa—no wonder they recanted their original testimonies. Those threats and a bribe first closed the case in March 2002. But threatening witnesses must have seemed a trifling matter to the Baraev clan at that time, and I doubt its new leader even knew about it. He had more important matters with which to deal. Movsar Baraev was planning the take over of the Moscow Dubrovka Theater in October of that year. During the take over, Movsar announced, "We are from the military observation and destruction unit that belongs to the Martyrs of the Gardens of the Righteous. I swear by Allah that we strive for martyrdom more than you strive for life."

Where did these nuts come from and what was I doing involved with a slut and her mother who are connected with these psychopaths? My whole situation was becoming too damn bizarre.

Russia's President Putin blamed the theater tragedy on al-Qaeda, which was involved to some extent in the Chechen fight for independence. But many think Arbi's old F.S.B. protectors provided the nephew Movsar with the assistance needed to get 50 militants to Moscow and arm them. If the F.S.B. helped, then that explains executing all the terrorists while knocked out from the gas pumped into the theater. The F.S.B.'s Alpha unit didn't want anyone talking afterward. Movsar's deadly take over of the theater turned into a defeat for the G.R.U. because the F.S.B. planted reports that Chechen President Maskhadov approved the operation. That ended any chance of the Russian government negotiating peace with Maskhadov, who the F.S.B. assassinated in March 2005. So the war continued with Islamic warlords, the F.S.B., M.V.D. and military generals making lots of money off of the suffering of others—400,000 refugees alone, out of a population of one million. Men can fight for what's right or capitulate to what's wrong; girls can't even distinguish between the two.

The Baraev Islamic Terror and Crime Clan was added as a defendant in the RICO case, but it was unlikely I'd ever be able to even serve the Complaint on those luns.

### Everyday People

Jeff finished his review of the RICO Complaint and made some suggestions, but I rejected them. Armed with 91 pages of factual accusations, I went downtown to lower Manhattan to file the Complaint in the United States District Court for the Southern District of New York. The federal court, at least outwardly, fits the old Hollywood images of the judiciary: spacious, well-kept and with courteous employees; not like the slum of the New York State court next door where incivility trickles down from the Feminazi judges to the drones in the basement.

The Southern District's clerk took my Complaint, turned to a wooden lottery bin containing the names of the District's judges, and gave it a spin to pick a judge for my case—a

literal wheel of fortune. Please not a broad, please not a broad, I wished; annnnnnd the judge's name is ... a man's, yes! I had a chance. Not only was it a male judge but the Chief Judge of the Southern District himself, Michael B. Mukasey. Okay, this could be interesting. The Chief Judge was in his late 50s or early 60s, which meant he had escaped the anti-male programming that Feminazi mothers brainwashed their children with beginning in the early 1970s: "No Dick you can't have a gun toy, we don't believe in violence, especially against girls." "So Mom, who is going to protect you against the Indians, Huns, Nazis, Japs and Commies?" "Well, Jane will. She's a strong, independent and smart girl who will reason with these other people who are just like us." Anyone raised before the 1970s knows what would really happen to Jane and Mom if any of those folk, or ones like them, showed up looking for land and loot to placate their babes at home.

The clerk date-stamped my copy of the Complaint and issued the summons to legally drag the over sixty miscreant defendants into the District Court. On my way out, I realized it was Good Friday, didn't see any symbolism in that, but I knew the Commie Ho would with her mixture of black magic and anti-Christ Christianity, which she billed as "belief in the God." My friends had always marveled at her apparent hypocrisy until learning that she didn't believe in God but the Revelations' anti-God. What did I care; it was all useless mumbo jumbo anyway.

Two days later on April 20, 2003, Alan and I went to the Manhattan General Post Office, which to my surprise was open on Easter Sunday. Still didn't see any symbolism, and felt nothing but my usual waking hatred for Feminarchy America. Alan was the necessary nonparty to the lawsuit for signing an affidavit stating the papers were actually mailed to the defendants in the U.S. for whom I had a name and address. If the defendants didn't respond to the mailing, I'd have to hire a process server to personally hand them the Complaint, which is what finally

happened. As for the defendants outside the U.S., that required using procedures under an international treaty called the Hague Convention on the Service Abroad of Judicial Documents. That took time because it not only involved dealing with foreign bureaucracies but translating the Complaint into the native languages of the foreign defendants in Russia, Cyprus and Mexico. In order to serve the defendants whose names I didn't know but the other defendants did, such as the Chechen jihadists making anonymous threats to my witnesses in Krasnodar or the telephone goon who threatened me, I'd have to wait until the District Court allowed me to subpoena records and take depositions—if it ever did.

My RICO Complaint grouped the defendants into four countries where they either lived or committed crimes: America; Russia, which includes Chechnya although the Chechens don't see it that way; Cyprus, the Greek part; and Mexico. Because all the defendants belonged to or associated with, including the Chechens in their money-making ventures, a segment or segments of the Russian mafia, called the "RICO enterprise" in my legal papers, each and everyone of them is liable for any harm anyone of them caused me in furthering the enterprise's purpose of transferring assets and managers to the American market. The following are among the more interesting criminals and the accusations against them:

Flash Dancers Topless Club is located on Broadway in Manhattan and run by an American organized crime group that also operates the lap-dancing clubs: Private Eyes and New York Dolls (not to be confused with the former punk rock band). The crime group runs a criminal conglomerate in which it uses Flash Dancers to launder money; recruit prostitutes, including illegal aliens from the former Soviet Union; promote prostitution; recruit pornography starlets; surreptitiously dispense narcotics to some wealthy, regular customers; and sell pornography and escorts over its website [www.flashdancersnyc.com](http://www.flashdancersnyc.com). The managers of the club

arrange for threats and the use of physical force to intimidate and engage in immigration fraud in order to maintain the supply of girls.

Cybertech Internet Solutions operates the Flash Dancers website and the Cybertech Internet Strip Club Network website, [www.stripclubdirectory.com](http://www.stripclubdirectory.com), which connects to strip clubs and brothels around the world, offers pornography and sells call girls at [www.stripclubescorts.com](http://www.stripclubescorts.com). Some of the advertised hos even go on vacations with their “clients.” (So that’s how all those loser guys get pretty young babes to travel with them, but perhaps I shouldn’t talk.)

The law firm used by Alina Shipilina, Kuba, Mundy & Associates, runs a green card and visa mill for providing papers to foreign prostitutes and lap-dancers, mainly Russian, and fights to keep illegal aliens in America, whether criminals or not and whether by legal or illegal means. (The firm’s motto is probably “To be too ethical could mean one less fee.”)

Alina Shipilina assists Russian, Chechen, Cypriot and American organized criminals with importing Russian prostitutes, pornography and narcotics as well as laundering some of the money made in New York City.

Doctor Marc L. Paulsen, a.k.a. Wayne Williams, the producer of Alina Shipilina’s masturbation video, shoots pornography in Russia using “models” from the Red Star Agency and Phodes Studio and imports it into southern California with the help of Leo Perlin, Shipilina’s former Moscow pimp.

Anastasia and Dima, Vasilyeva, commuting between America and Krasnodar, manage the top model agency in Krasnodar the “Tatyanna Vasilyeva Fashion House” that runs a call girl operation, the “dirty girls list,” for powerful Russian politicians and gangsters and sends prostitutes to brothels and lap-dancing clubs in Cyprus, America and Europe. Anastasia spends

much of her time when in Krasnodar managing her school for teaching children how to become models and prostitutes in order to help keep the Russian mafia's supply of them uninterrupted. (The G.R.U. guys alerted the authorities as to the real nature of Anastasia's school and her mother's fashion house. Prostitution, even of children, is technically illegal in Russia but makes up one of the Russian mafia's most lucrative businesses and a top earner of hard currency for the Russian economy.) Anastasia's mother and founder of the agency, Tatyanna Vasilyeva, is a very famous, wealthy "personage" in southern Russia, which means she is part of the politico-criminal elite that runs the region.

Detective Bob Henning of the 114<sup>th</sup> Precinct in Queens, New York (the cop who called me early one morning to say I would have to surrender for an arrest that never occurred) threatened Roy Den Hollander with arrest in return for money or sex from Alina Shipilina, who had acted on advise from her lawyers Mundy and Petrovich. The call was meant to pressure Den Hollander into not cooperating with the INS, which amounted to tampering with a witness and made Henning an accomplice in the Russian mafia's infiltration of America.

In Russia, there is the crime boss Khachaturyan Araratovich Asypyan with whose gang Alina Shipilina took out the contingent murder contract on Den Hollander and whom she helps to run prostitutes, pornography and narcotics to America in cooperation with the American organized crime gang that operates Flash Dancers and the Cybertech Internet Strip Club Network.

The two Krasnodar mobsters named Volchok a.k.a. Woolfy and Raketa a.k.a. Rocket provide protection for Alina and Inessa Shipilina's illegal activities in Krasnodar.

The Albatross Club of powerful government officials and wealthy criminals to whom the Alina Shipilina provides sexual services.



P. I. Ostapenko, the Chief of the M.V.D. for the Central District of Krasnodar who took a bribe in March 2001 to close the criminal defamation case against Inessa Shipilina.

Dmitri Morosov, Krasnodar's most famous photographer of models, shoots some the pornography stills and videos that Asypyan exports to America.

Inessa Shipilina, Alina's mother, uses her position as instructor at the Krasnodar State Academy of Physical Culture to recruit coeds for prostitution and male athletes as enforcers for the Russian mafia. She also arranges for the use of physical force and coercion by the Baraev Chechen clan against persons in Krasnodar who interfere with any of the criminal activities in which she and her daughter are involved, such as seizing the college's gym facilities to run a private fitness club.

Phodes Studio and its president Leo Perlin procured men for Alina Shipilina in Moscow, provided the facilities to produce Dr. Paulsen's pornography video of her masturbating and searched for Americans to bring her to the U.S. (Perlin directed the Commie Ho over to me at the party I had stumbled into at the beginning of this story.) Perlin and Alina Shipilina, consistent with the Russian mafia's goal of continued expansion into the U.S., connived to have Den Hollander bring her to America to add one more mafia asset to the American population so as to increase their and the mafia's cash flow. Perlin sends prostitutes, lap-dancers and pornography starlets to Venezuela, Greece, Mexico and the United States; bribes employees at the U.S. Embassy in Moscow for visas for his prostitutes; produces pornography for the Russian and overseas markets; runs a call girl operation in Moscow; occasionally shoots legitimate modeling events; continues to operate an introduction agency to defraud Western men into relations and marriage with Russian prostitutes in order to export the prostitutes to hard currency

countries; and advertises some of his services and girls on the Internet at [www.phodes.net](http://www.phodes.net).

Perlin belongs to one of the Russian mafia's Moscow gangs.

Valodya Gavrilov of St. Petersburg (was one of the many guys the Commie Ho played with right after our marriage) bribes Russian government officials to smooth the transporting of hard currency into Russia and narcotics out of the country by Alina Shipilina and other members and confederates of the Russian mafia. Gavrilov also travels throughout Russia under the guise of selling custom jewelry in order to recruit females for prostitution and transportation to America.

In Cyprus, Alina Shipilina and other allies of the Russian mafia use the Bank of Cyprus for transferring and hiding their incomes from illegal activities.

Melios Athanasiou, his Russian born wife Irina and his brother Marios recruit prostitutes from the Tatyanna Vasilyeva Fashion House for the Cypriot brothels Zygos and Tramps, both of which Russian mafia bosses in Krasnodar own. The prostitutes at the two brothels also perform sexual acts for pornographic materials shipped to the U.S. where some of the prostitutes also end up. The Athanasious bribe Cypriot officials to obtain visas for the prostitutes since prostitution is illegal in Cyprus.

A. Charalambous, a chief in the Migration Office of the Ministry of the Interior for Cyprus, accepts bribes from the Athanasious in return for providing Cypriot work visas to foreign prostitutes.

In Mexico, the Julia Heart Agency, now called Malbros, finds work for foreign prostitutes in Mexican brothels and lap-dancing clubs, such as The Men's Club. Perlin in Moscow provides Malbros with Russian prostitutes for whom he obtains visas by bribing

Mexican Embassy officials. Alina Shipilina's work visa in Mexico listed her as a translator even though she could not speak any Spanish.

Many of the Russian mafia's prostitutes work in The Men's Club in Mexico City, a brothel and strip club that caters to wealthy Mexican and international clients and is franchised by the United States Men's Club that has operations in Dallas and Houston, Texas and Charlotte, North Carolina. A Mexican organized crime group allied with the Russian mafia controls the Mexico club, bribes Mexican officials in order to stay open, launders money and evades Mexican taxes. (I know—so what; illegal alien Mexicans evade American taxes too.)

Juginta Raszyukevichina, known as Azul to her customers, helped Alina Shipilina in the fall of 1999 run a weekend call girl service for wealthy businessmen and gangsters in Mexico that provided prostitutes for trips to Mexican resort areas, such as Cancun, Acapulco and Puerto Vallarta.

Alfredo Ibarra Sotelo (the guy to whom the Commie Ho prostituted herself in Italy less than three months after my drug-induced marriage) runs cocaine into the U.S., Europe and Russia, where he supplies the Russian mafia.

#### It Ain't Me Babe

Felt like I was on a roll. After sending out the RICO Complaint to the U.S. defendants, I turned to filing complaints with the inspector generals at Immigration, I.R.S., Customs and the F.B.I. for those agencies apparent failures to do anything about the Commie Ho's violations of U.S. law. The idea of involving the inspector generals as a last ditch effort to spur the Government into action came from my first job as a lawyer. The Department of Treasury's Honors Program hired me right after law school for two years to rotate through three different sections of the Treasury. It was the best Federal Government job for which I received an offer.

The hiring at eight other Governmental positions that I was interested in and for which I interviewed were controlled by Feminazis, so there was no chance of my getting hired, even though most of those jobs were considered less prestigious than the one at Treasury. The position I really wanted was at the Department of State, but the Feminazi in charge hired a bimbo instead.

At Treasury, my first rotation, which turned out to be my last, was at the I.R.S.'s Interpretative Division. One of my cases involved a wealthy and powerful family in California that wanted to dissolve a multi-billion dollar trust. The word had come down from the Division's bosses that the politically well-connected family was to have its way. The family wanted a private letter ruling that said if the trust was dissolved and all the billions in assets distributed to members of the family, there would be no tax consequences. The irrevocable trust had been set up in the early 1900s by the family's patriarch to provide income from his oil company stock to his children, grandchildren and whomever else came along that fit as a descendant under the trust provisions—typical robber baron estate planning. The living children and grandchildren, however, weren't satisfied with just collecting the income from the trust's portfolio, they wanted to divide up the portfolio, four billion dollars worth, among themselves—typical offspring greed.

In the five hundred year history of irrevocable trusts, once a person sets up such a trust and then dies, the trust continues until the time the founder stated it would end, providing it wasn't for too long a period which this one wasn't. Under the law, it didn't matter what any of the patriarch's descendants wanted because to dissolve the trust meant going against 500 years of common law precedence forbidding such. So why did the family request a private letter ruling from the I.R.S. that would take effect only if the trust was dissolved? It didn't make any sense,

so I telephoned around the California state legislature to see whether someone could enlighten me and by chance talked to a committee chairman. The family had used its influence to pass a California law that gave it an 18-month window in which the family could dissolve the trust regardless what 500 years of legal decisions had held. Unbelievable! The rich can get what they want by changing the law just for them while the rest of us have to put up with this kind of corruption—not this time baby.

The U.S. tax law looked clear to me that if the trust was broken up, the family beneficiaries would have to pay income and capital gains taxes, which were the areas I was assigned to handle. The family's lawyers didn't want to here that and neither did my bosses. After all, Reagan was President and he was from the family's home state of California. They all knew each other at that level of wealth and power, so government bureaucrats were suppose to do the White House's bidding. In fact, the Associate General Counsel for the I.R.S. said his job was to make sure that those with "hands across the White House" got what they wanted.

After a number of meetings filled with high priced California lawyers, I.R.S. bureaucratic sheep and lots of pressure, I wrote up a memorandum concluding that by dissolving the trust the family members would get hit with a nice hefty tax bill. In order to assure the memorandum's effectiveness, I gave it to the inspector general, told him the I.R.S. was trying to give this family a free ride in violation of the law and quit to go work for the private law firm Cravath, Swaine & Moore. The institutionalized corruption in government disgusted me back in 1986 as it does now, but back then the I.R.S. inspector general did his job by putting a stop to giving that one overly rich family what it wanted. Maybe the inspector generals of the 21<sup>st</sup> century, assuming they weren't ideologically corrupt Feminazis, could stop one Commie Ho.

To each inspector general, I summarized the Commie Ho's law breaking under that agency's jurisdiction, complained that the particular agency did nothing about it, threw in an insult and told them I had taken the law into my own hands by filing a RICO action of which I sent them a copy. By enclosing the RICO Complaint, the bureaucrats might say in typical Club Fed fashion, "Oh we don't have to do anything, since he's already taken it to court." But then again, the other predominant character trait of bureaucrats is the fear of being exposed as the incompetents, frauds and sell-outs they are. The RICO Complaint might goad them into some action in order to prevent the lawsuit from publicizing their failure to address crimes committed by a Russian mafia member.

To the inspector general handling the INS, I wrote:

The I.N.S. has failed to deport a Russian alien who used fraudulent means to enter the U.S. and violated 8 U.S.C. 1227(a)(3)(D), 18 U.S.C. 1015(f) and New York State Election Law 5-210(6), which is a class E felony, by claiming to be a U.S. citizen when registering to vote in state and federal elections. The New York City Board of Elections has referred the fraudulent claim of citizenship to the U.S. Attorney for the Eastern District and the Queens District Attorney.

The officer in the Moscow office who is now handling the Shipilina case, Scott X. Marvin, initially communicated and received documents from my Moscow attorney in September 2002 when Marvin took over the case from another, much more diligent officer at the Embassy. Since that initial contact, the all-to-typical Immigration bureaucracy inaction has come into play. Repeated and continuing attempts to contact Marvin have run into the standard operating procedure at Immigration of see no evil, hear no evil, do no work.

The inspector generals in the Federal Government are supposed to be independent from the agency they oversee so that they can conduct an objective investigation free from bureaucratic pressure. Not so with the INS, now part of the much-ballyhooed Department of Homeland Security. The Feminazi who responded to my INS complaint assigned it to the very people the inspector general is supposed to watch. She sent it to the same INS office in New York City that I had visited two years earlier, which did nothing then, except to send

investigators for lap dances from the Commie Ho and other sluts at Flash Dancers on the taxpayers' bill. It was the New York City office's failure to act that I ended up dealing with the INS at the Moscow Embassy.

The Embassy INS couldn't conduct an investigation or bring administrative action against the Commie Ho, but it could force the New York City office to do so, which it did under the first official handling the case. But with his replacement, Scott X. Marvin, the Embassy let the case slide. So thanks to the inspector general, I'm back depending on the useless, most likely corrupt, incompetents in New York City office that is run by a broad. Just to waste time, I'm surprise the bimbo from the inspector general didn't refer the matter to the Embassy so that it could then send it on to New York. What that Feminazi bureaucrat did contravenes the reason for inspector generals. Where does this Orwellian thought process come from where the investigators rely on those accused of wrongdoing to uncover and punish that wrongdoing? Perhaps Homeland Security is depending on al-Qaeda to investigate al-Qaeda because it makes sense from a Feminazi thought process: who knows more about al-Qaeda than al-Qaeda. Maybe that's why Homeland Security doesn't protect America's southern border with Mexico, it's counting on al-Qaeda to do it. Such a strategy allows the girls at Homeland Security to do even less work.

For the I.R.S., I went to the inspector general at the Treasury Department of which the I.R.S. is part:

The IRS has received sufficient information showing that Shipilina evades taxes on over \$100,000 in income every year. This information was sent to Holtsville I.C.E., the Criminal Investigation Division on Church Street in New York City and Elvis Paliska at Criminal Investigation on Fulton Street in Brooklyn. The information included documents showing how much Shipilina makes, the safe deposit box she keeps the cash in until she smuggles it overseas and even one of the financial accounts she deposits some of the money into in Cyprus. The IRS, however, did nothing, probably because it meant doing a little work to put a case together.

Like so many other Americans, I have learned since 911 that many of our federal agencies are largely incompetent, except for the military of course. The IRS appears capable of only investigating senior citizens on social security or middle class Americans who make a mistake but have to pay high penalties to make up for the inability of the IRS to prosecute intentional evaders.

The Treasury's inspector general's office did the same thing as the INS: referred the complaint to the very agency the inspector general is supposed to oversee. Once again a bureaucratic Feminazi made the decision to pass the buck of her responsibilities and have the I.R.S. look into a complaint against itself.

The Department of Justice's inspector general went one better than those pretending to watch out for wrong doing at the INS and I.R.S., it didn't even bother to respond to my charges concerning the F.B.I.:

In February 2002, the Federal Bureau of Investigation agreed to look into a couple of threatening telephone calls I had received from a man using two different fictitious names. The man made his threats on behalf of Alina Shipilina, a Russian alien who is known in her hometown of Krasnodar, Russia, to associate with Russian and Chechen organized crime figures.

One of the FBI agents I met with, Vadim Thomas, opined that the caller might be associated with a local lap-dancing club called Flash Dancers where Shipilina works. I provided Agents Thomas and Mario Pisano with a telephone number I had obtained from the caller.

Agent Pisano subsequently told me that the FBI had traced the telephone number to an individual who apparently made the threats. Agent Pisano would not tell me the man's name, but said he and Thomas would interview him. Sometime later, however, Agent Pisano said he and Thomas had decided not to interview the threatening caller, in part, because the Bureau was "not an investigation agency" and the agents believed the caller might get angry and do something to harm me. Pisano added that I should not open my door to any strangers and be careful when out in public.

Obviously, I experienced first hand what the revelations since 911 have shown about the FBI's inability and unwillingness to do its job. When I first met Agents Pisano and Thomas, I gave them audiotape recordings of the threatening calls that I had made on a \$20 Radio Shack recorder. The New York headquarters for the FBI didn't have a recorder that could play the tapes at the correct speed, so this thug came off sounding like Mickey Mouse. I was dumbfounded and thought perhaps the agency should be renamed the Federal Bureau of Incompetence.



Customs' inspector general was the only one out of the four to acknowledge it would review my accusations of failing to investigate criminal violations of smuggling money out of the country by the Commie Ho:

Beginning in August 2001, I began providing Customs at its New York Regional and JFK airport offices with information about the smuggling of large amounts of cash and cash equivalents out of the county by Alina Alexandrovna Shipilina, a.k.a. Chipilina, a Russian alien who is known in her hometown of Krasnodar, Russia to associate with Russian and Chechen organized crime figures.

I provided these agents with the number of the Russian passport Shipilina used to enter the U.S. (she has a second Russian passport, 51 N. 0207805, expires 4-4-05, that she uses for traveling to other international locations on racketeering business); the airline, Aeroflot, that she flew when smuggling money out of America; and the approximate dates of her departures. Customs and its agents did nothing.

As a result, I have taken it upon myself to try to do what Customs' agents are paid to do but don't. Customs' inability to do its job has been made all too clear to the world by the 911 tragedy. I have, therefore, instituted a civil Racketeer Influenced Corrupt Organization lawsuit in the Southern Federal District of New York, 03 CV 2717, which deals, in part, with Shipilina's smuggling of U.S. dollars overseas.

Despite the initial show of doing its duty, the person from the inspector general's office responding to me was, naturally, a Feminazi, who, just as naturally, ended up doing nothing.

The seeds to the end of America's economic and military dominance germinate in all those incompetent Feminazis failing to carry out the tasks of their government positions. They got there by creating the illusion of a problem that females had been discriminated against, as were blacks. What a joke, so when was the last time a Feminazi was lynched? Shot dead on the front stoop of her house or the balcony of the motel she was staying in. For the passed 400 years the institutions of this country has had its boot heel on the back of the necks of blacks. While over that same time, white females have received largely preferential treatment.

Broads demand that the good jobs, not the bad jobs, be taken away from men and given to them just because of ages of fantasized harmful discrimination. A good job naturally means

whatever the bimbo wants, including any job that allows her to loot some guy's bank account, such as lap dancer, ho or stockbroker. There was never wide spread invidious discrimination against girls, but that truth didn't deter the Feminazis. They simply created the illusion of such and set off to sell their sophistic philosophy, which, if bought by enough fools, would give them even more preferential treatment in society than they previously had. Prior to the 1970s, females who remained unmarried and worked continuously from high school into their thirties earned higher incomes than men of the same description. Even today, the average female makes more on a per hour basis than the average guy. The Feminazis used typical special interest groupthink: give us more because we say we deserve it.

In the end, the Feminazis actually made girls a double threat for evil. Take Jody Foster, when she was young, in her teens and hot, she posed for *High Society* wearing only a towel. Don't let the name fool you, *High Society* was a skin magazine. Naturally, Foster did it to make money, a girl's true love, and gain attention. It got her publicity all right, since after seeing the photo spread, John Hinckley went out and shot President Reagan in order to impress the innocent little darling who alluringly draped a towel over her naked teenage body for the world to see. Today, no longer inhabiting a firm, supple body, Foster uses Feminazism rather than sexual charms to get what she wants: still money and attention, but through she-male movie roles rather than bare skin. Other bimbats did the same, such as Diane Sawyer who exploited her physical allure as a beauty contestant but when, well beyond her prime, propagandized on a she-male TV show *Primetime* in which the facts took back seat to her Feminazi beliefs. For instance, Sawyer falsely reported that Jessica Lynch went down fighting while resisting capture in Iraq when in truth Lynch spent the entire fire-fight knocked unconscious by her vehicle's accident. Was she driving? It's all Feminazi hypocrisy, pure and simple. When young and good looking they use

their sexual charms to make money and get what they want, but when fat, flabby and no longer attractive, they upbraid men for responding to the charms of younger girls doing what they had done and extort institutions to give them what they don't deserve by playing the victim of discrimination.

Both sexes have always been discriminated against because evolution created a division of labor, but the real question is whether the discrimination against females was harmful. Compared to the discrimination against men throughout history—no way. While men suffered the mind blasting and body rending wars, sweatshops, union strikes and battles against tyrants, the girls were safe at home to ho whomever came by the house. Society generally treated girls with kid gloves, buying into their lame lies in an effort to shelter them from the dangers of reality. Ever hear, “Men and children first!” No, not even today in Feminarchy America. Whenever there's a disaster, the news media emphasizes that the victims included “women and children,” as though a broad's life was more important than a man's. At the beginning of the 20<sup>th</sup> century, the average life span for men and females was equal but not anymore. What happened? Simple, modern science chose to concentrate on feminine threats rather those affecting men. During the Great Depression, households unable to support the entire family chose males for homelessness, not the girls.

Girls, not guys, have the god-given ability to make money off of their sex, and since girls enjoy sex more than guys, they reap a triple benefit that includes gaining sympathy as a “victim.” When a guy goes for a job, the only bargaining power he ever had or will have is his ability. A girl may have ability but definitely has sex, which she will use; make no mistake about that, since she enjoys it so much. Walk into a bar and some sucker will be buying a strange girl a drink that she conned him into with a false smile and words of insincerity. So who has suffered

more from past discrimination—men! The same group that is suffering now from even more discrimination thanks to the Feminazis putting broads on an even higher pedestal than before. Men are still the doormats for females, only a man's chances at a job and wealth have declined: over 50% of the work force and over 50% of the millionaires are now broads. My friend Alan has gotten so fed up with the situation that when he has a seat on the bus or subway and some girl stands in front of him, as they always do to men, using their presence to stimulate traditional gentlemanly conduct, he says, "You may have gotten my job, but you're not getting my seat."

Feminazis counter they need to take jobs from men in case their husbands leave them. Baloney! First, females generally have only themselves to blame for a divorce—wives instigate 80% of divorce cases, and the other 20% are likely caused by their incessant nagging, bossing, belittling, cheating and eventually blowing up into a blimp. Second, divorce courts have always given wives enough of the husband's wealth and income to continue their life styles, but that's never satisfactory, the vindictive, greedy little hos want all a guy's money until he lands in debtor's prison.

The Feminazis just weren't satisfied with the traditional preferential treatment and protection society gave females. They wanted free of charge and obligation the fortune and glory for which men always fought and struggled, even though for girls there were plenty of money-making, glory careers: singer, actress, dancer, home diva, fashion designer, writer and much more. But that wasn't enough; the Feminazis wanted the money and glory jobs for which men were best suited without having to put in the same effort. The Feminazis think they deserve such careers, not because of ability, but because of their sex. It's no accident that when a society reaches a stage where life is easy and secure, girls want all the perks, but when life is hard and dangerous, they'll hide behind a man.

The Feminazis fabricated the psychological illusion of the “strong and independent female” capable of bettering men in a man’s occupation in order to supplant evolutionarily correct roles for females. A classic example of sophomoric, self-serving Feminazi propaganda that maliciously distorted the role of housewives was the movie *Mona Lisa Smiles*. The movie depicted, among other characters, a homemaker in the 1950s who was miserable keeping house for her husband. I remember the 1950s, and all those suburban homes weren’t for the husbands but the children. The single most important role for females has always been to create an environment conducive to properly raising children. A home was never a man’s castle; he just provided the money for it. The home, if managed right, created a place for children to grow and learn and provided a refuge for them after the day’s adventures into the ideas and activities of life that would eventually lead to them playing a part in the next generation. Look at who spent most of the time in the home: the wife and kids; the husband was out working, so how was it the home existed for a man. He’d rather be out with the guys having a drink, taking in a game, living in a quiet hotel or making up for all the times his wife cheated on him when she was still attractive. The Political Communists or Psychological Conformists of today rewrite history because the truth would end their free ride by showing them up as the usual self-righteous, hypocritical, bigoted grifters that history has seen so often.

#### Psychotic Reaction

Ever since the annulment/divorce Judge Lobis denied my motion in August 2002 to change the settlement agreement, the Commie Ho and her lawyers Mundy and Petrovich probably thought their evil had triumphed and regularly congratulated themselves on the success of their lies and threats. For them, the Russian way worked in America. But on Tuesday, April 22, 2003, they received a surprise when the postman delivered my RICO Complaint. What they

had started in the Queens Family Court back in January 2001 with a perjured temporary order of protection was not over by any means.

The RICO Complaint exposed the real criminal machinations behind what initially appeared a simple annulment/divorce case of female duplicity and softhearted man. The Complaint pulled the Russian mafia, including Chechen crazies, and its Western partners out of the shadows to reveal part of a new evil empire stretching beyond the fallen iron curtain that engaged in numerous crimes and schemes with many victims of which I was just one. Perhaps it would have been better for the rest of the world had the barbarians of the Soviet Union stayed locked behind their curtain of iron. It would definitely have been better for me. The RICO Complaint also brought my fight for justice and retribution into the federal courts where the corrupting influence of the modern day culture's discrimination against men carried less weight. My chances improved, but not by much.

Unlike the state court annulment/divorce proceedings, the Lawyers Disciplinary Committee and the Commission on Judicial Conduct, everything that happened in the RICO case would be public. The threat that people outside the corrupt do-nothing bureaucrats would learn the truth caused some unexpected responses from a couple of the defendants.

In the silent dark early morning hours of April 23, I awoke twice, or thought I did, from the sensation of being smothered by a pillow. Each time, I came up gasping for air and felt an evil presence in the room that made a guttural noise and wisped by my lips as a form darker than the night. Years earlier in one of the Commie Ho's many lies to make me feel sorry for her, she claimed her father used to abuse her by putting a pillow over her face. The Commie Ho had again stepped into her favored realm of black magic to scare me off the RICO case. To which I

wisecracked to myself, “Dr. Strange where are you now that I need you?” and went back to sleep convinced I could handle whatever the upcoming battles brought.

The world beyond consciousness and light, however, wasn't finished yet. My own unconscious, or, perhaps, my Marvel hero from the dark days of the sixties, sent me a visual warning while I lay half-asleep in my apartment near Greenwich Village. The scene was back in my old hometown in New Jersey in the house I grew up in located on that dead end street with an isolate weed sprouting up here and there. The Commie Ho left the house out the back door. From the inside, I watched her dyed blonde ponytail bob passed the dinning room windows as she headed along the driveway toward the street. Instantly, I told myself hurry, run through the house, out the living room front door, across the porch to the driveway and blindside her just as she passes the corner of the house in order to put an end to these troubles. That was the logical thing to do, but in the dream, the cowardice programmed into me as a child by the parents prevented me. The message from some sanctum forewarned that to change the dream I needed to alter the fundamental behavior patterns foisted on me as a child by mother, the Nazi Ho, and her coward of a spouse. Otherwise, when the time came to do what was necessary to end this injustice, my life would end without any justice.

Initially, the omen didn't worry me. All those TV westerns I had watched as a kid in which justice won convinced my self image long ago that I too could defeat evil, so I went back to sleep. But the day often changes nightly truths, and I wasn't as sure as my reality continued to transform into a Paladin episode. Apparently, I had never been sure, just deluded myself into always believing I could handle any reckoning with evil. The intimations from the genetic realm of man's unconscious finally convinced me that my real battle was not against the Commie Ho, Russians, Chechens or Feminazis, I'd do what I could there, but the grave threat came from

within. The first cut in life is that you are not going to do any more than the amount of stress you can handle; the second cut is your amount of talent and the third your skills. I had the talents and skills, but what of the other?

Mother, the Nazi Ho, supported by a cowardly father, Chicken Little, programmed an over active stress mechanism in me. Witnessing the demeanor of her ravings before I could speak and understanding her vituperative words when I could, she battered her sons with incessant negativity, paranoia, insults, taunts of worthlessness, hostility, arrogant illusions and encouragements of cowardice and ignorance. As far back as I can remember: “You can’t do that. How could you have come from me? You are a monster.” And her favorite, “I should have listened to your father and never had you!” On and on she ranted through my childhood while Chicken Little, who knew the harm she was doing, intentionally ignored her behavior in order to assure himself some domestic peace.

The Nazi Ho’s long campaign for her self-centered ends that included chaining me to her apron strings used many weapons. Starting when I was five, I can’t remember anything before then, and continuing to around ten, Momster repeatedly took me to horror movies that caused me to wake up in the middle of the night screaming my lungs out from nightmares. Her reaction was to laugh my trauma off as childish, but a child who had no one else to turn to. When she and Chicken Little went out on the weekend, I stayed at home alone waiting for the doom I believed stalked the darkness from those horror films. My older brother had escaped to prep school—I wasn’t so lucky. And a babysitter would have meant money out of her pocket. Father gave her a set allowance to run the house, so as the typical greedy ho, she cut costs ruthlessly since any savings went into her personal bank account. So I stayed alone at home scared out of my wits.



By ten, however, it didn't matter because I knew how to shoot and sat in the house with a loaded rifle and my bowie knife. Guess whom I should have used them on?

When I hit eleven, Momster pulled a new tactic to keep me emotionally tied to her and alienated from Chicken Little, which didn't take much doing. She took me to *On The Beach*. Girls in bikinis sounded good to me, so I cheerfully went along only to get hammered by the end of the world from a nuclear war. After, she stops at a drug store to buy me an ice cream sundae, not her usual style, and I can't figure out what's going on. While digging into my ice cream, Momster solemnly confides she's thinking of getting a divorce. To which I wanted to say, "Why the hell are you telling me, an eleven-year old kid, this stuff! Go talk to a shrink." But I didn't, she'd only throw a fit and drag me away from my ice cream.

Thanks to *On The Beach*, when the horror movie nightmares from the black lagoon now woke me up, although I no longer screamed bloody murder, I often heard the sounds of jet engines in the night and wondered whether they were Russian ICBMs.

Such experiences, and these are just a few of this type, during the impressionable first decade or so of my life engrained a mechanism in my brain that would pump out stress hormones in situations that for normal humans were not stressful and pump out more hormones than needed in situations that were. The over supply of stress hormones plagued me with the miserable sensation of flight (fear) or fight (anger) to a degree uncalled for by reality. My body reacted illogically to the situation at hand. In order to avoid the whipsaw effect of those emotions, I consciously and unconsciously avoided situations that others didn't. And that's what the Nazi Ho wanted in the typically evil mother effort to keep a child tied to her apron strings, just as Perceval's mother tried. Mine used psychology while in the story of Perceval his mother

dressed him as a clown to deter him from going out into the world to pursue his destiny. And mine, unlike with Perceval's, succeeded, in part.

Females, whether ho or Feminazi, are always looking for a main fool to provide material, physical and emotional support; alleviate their stupid fears; solve the problems they incessantly create; and listen to their drivel. Before puberty, it's the girl's father. After puberty, it's the sucker on whom they can pin an unexpected pregnancy, and once broads reach the stage when guys no longer offer them dick on a regular basis, they attach themselves like leeches to their husbands. But husbands don't live as long as females, thanks to the wear and tear of work and the aggravation wives cause, so a mother decides early on which of her offspring to groom as a replacement fool. It could even be a daughter. My mother didn't think her eldest son sufficiently capable as a result of landing on his head at an early age when he jumped out of the moving car to escape one of her tirades. Mother was a quick learner, and after my brother's dive out the car, whenever I went for the door handle, she quickly stopped the car before I beat it away from her. As for the middle son, he was already dead, liquated by mother and father because his Down syndrome would have reduced their savings and caused embarrassment. That left me, the youngest, as the one the Nazi Ho targeted for her replacement fool—lucky me.

The Nazi Ho intentionally engineered her parasitic stress mechanism in me in order to keep me as the reserve pawn for when her husband became feeble or left her, which he was apparently considering back when I watched the end of the world in *On the Beach*. The stress mechanism explains why I never pursued what I wanted because such efforts produced excessive stress hormones, which was the Nazi Ho's aim since she didn't want me sacrificing for a career or family—just her. As a result, it was easier—less stress hormones—to get further in efforts that I didn't care about before the same level of hormones invaded my body causing the misery.

But even in the fields outside my first best destiny: politics, labor, TV news, law and business, the stress hormones soon reached levels that made the endeavors joyless, miserable and me a very nasty person quite similar to the Nazi Ho. Overly hostile and overly fearful made facing any dragons unbearable and rendered me ineffective, so I fled to other careers only to face the same problem again.

Every important decision in anyone's life is always a choice between a courageous course of action or cowardice. For me, the stress mechanism assured the cowardly route every time, since to do otherwise would cause too many stress hormones to pump into my body creating a paralysis of fear and anger. Most Americans are more successful than me because their stress mechanisms are more functional. Then again, those who were raised properly so that they can operate effectively in this society face a different problem: when they screw up, they have no one, or no thing to blame.

Nearing the end of my life, I find myself on the bottom of the pyramid of human achievement: no assets with which to attract pretty young babes for some fun times, and, more importantly, no psychological satisfaction of having accomplished something, even minor, with my life, so far. All I have is the misery of a failed life with the only solace, which is pretty much useless, of having found enlightenment. As the male character in *Crouching Tiger* said, "I have wasted my entire life, but I did find enlightenment." Now I know what life is about and how and why it terribly went wrong for me. I understand without illusion, "There is a tide in the affairs of men, which, taken at the flood, leads on to fortune; omitted, all the voyage of their life is bound in shallows and miseries." *Julius Caesar*, IV, iii, 244-47. I missed my wave thanks to the Nazi Ho's pathological commitment to the belief that all was about her and to her spouse's cowardice

to do what he knew was right. She intentionally destroyed my life to serve her vanities and irrational fears and he helped her.

The Commie Ho, just like the Nazi Ho, used me for her own selfish purposes without regard for the harm it would cause. But compared to my mother, the Commie Ho was a lamb. But the only honorable solution left to this fate to which the stress mechanism has brought me centers on the evil of the Commie Ho. A victory for justice and retribution against her and perhaps her supporters means to defeat, although only for a temporary moment, the effects of the mechanism the Nazi Ho wrought. To set my consciousness and masculinity against the brain washing and duplicity of a pair of evil females, even though only one is now alive, is the challenge forewarned by that omen out of the night of the house where I grew up.

Until the war with the Commie Ho, the Matrix and its agent the Nazi Ho had won every battle. The Commie Ho's lies, cheating and crimes, the bureaucrats' failures and corrupt lawyers brought me face to face with the same choice as always: courage or cowardice. The cowardly path leads only to poverty, more discrimination and dealing with the Chechen or Russian hit man the Commie Ho will most assuredly dispatch for revenge well after the legal proceedings end, regardless of their result. No, my choice was clear, and unlike previously, I was making the right one.

This time I understood what I was fighting against and why I had never achieved fortune and glory by pursuing my first best destiny. A destiny that looks so obvious and fitting from this knowledge but too late to pursue. Perhaps I'm living that destiny in one of the other universes that Einstein thought existed and quantum mechanics implies. But here I'm fated to use my life to win a victory against evil. It's time to remember the Amazon and end this sojourn. But first to turn the future against the Commie Ho and step into the field of vengeance, perhaps then glory

will be mine, but infamy will do. “Though this be madness, yet there is method in it.” Hamlet, II, ii, 218-219.

### Ain't That A Shame

On the same April 23<sup>rd</sup> of metaphysical concerns, a more mundane threat occurred. Mundy responded to receiving the RICO Complaint differently than the Commie Ho, although no less angrily. He hurriedly sent off a complaint against me to the Lawyers Disciplinary Committee. Guess he thought he'd have more luck or had enough pull to fair better than I did with my complaints to the Committee against him. Mundy's grievance was a sophomoric effort to enlist an incompetent state body to prevent me from exercising my constitutional rights to sue those who caused me harm. Mundy's reasoning was if the Disciplinary Committee just started proceedings against me for allegedly using the courts to harass him, Petrovich and his angelic client, it would be enough to scare me off of the RICO suit. Even the idiot Feminazis on the Disciplinary Committee weren't about to do that because I would sue them in federal court for chilling my Constitutional rights. Still Mundy gave it his best smear tactic, lying shot in the true nature of the amoral lawyer: throw enough mud and maybe some will stick, make enough misrepresentations and maybe some will be believed. He wrote:

“An urgent request to the Committee to investigate Mr. Den Hollander's fitness to practice law. [“Urgent” huh, clearly in a rush to have the Committee lean on me before I proceeded further with my case.]

“Although I make this complaint with much trepidation [wrong word since trepidation means a state of alarm, probably meant reluctance], I verily [old English] believe that the facts [so he says] set forth in this complaint will reveal Mr. Den Hollander's reprehensible conduct [name calling often works] has left me no choice [the previous threats didn't work].

“I submit that the proven conduct [most New York state court lawyers and judges can't distinguish between allegations and proof] of Mr. Den Hollander will warrant censure or suspension from the practice of law.

“Mr. Den Hollander has engaged in a relentless course of harassment, intimidation and persecution. [Oh, yea, whose witnesses were intimidated and who received at this point in time three threatening telephone calls and a threat of arrest by a cop abusing his authority?]

“Mr. Den Hollander threatened to have Ms. Shipilina deported if she did not do everything he told her, including payment of a large sum of money. [That’s the extortion attempt that Mundy lied about having an audiotape of, just as he lied about the medical records showing I battered the Commie Ho in his lawyerly effort to intimidate me into a settlement to prevent a trail from exposing any of the Russian mafia’s activities.]

“Mr. Den Hollander had the audacity to create a public website in Ms. Shipilina’s name ([www.alinashipilina.com](http://www.alinashipilina.com)) where, pending divorce proceedings, he posted a copy of her personal diary and naked photographs of Ms. Shipilina, without her knowledge or consent.”

The rights to those naked photographs were mine, so I could do whatever I wanted with them. But I knew the Feminazi infected Disciplinary Committee would use that against me, so I left it out of my official response to this Feminazi equivalent of accusing someone of communism in the 1950s or Protestantism in 16<sup>th</sup> century Europe. My response to the Committee was:

“I began searching in Russia for information and witnesses relevant to my annulment/divorce proceeding. My investigation discovered, among other culpable conduct, that she had created a pornographic video with very graphic acts and advertised her sexual services via naked photographs. In one case, there is direct evidence that she sold these naked photographs to a man for 10 Cypriot pounds after performing sexual acts on him when she worked in Cyprus for the brothel “Zygos.” [That was Grandpa whom she also masturbated for 60 Cypriot pounds.] The pornographic video, which was imported into America, was produced by a California doctor and Ms. Shipilina’s Moscow procurer. The clips from the video that comprise the CD Rom are used to advertise the services sold by Ms. Shipilina’s Moscow procurer.”

“Ms. Shipilina’s own representative, Mr. Mundy, hypocritically criticizes the use of these photographs, CD and a portion of her diary that were employed in an attempt to discover even more evidence of her fraud on me and her criminal activities. The Russian language web site was created as a means to find new Russian witnesses, acquire additional information and communicate the truth to potential witnesses and informants after previously forthcoming witnesses and individuals with useful information were being threatened into silence. The web site contained only a small sampling of Ms. Shipilina’s widely offered pornographic services and extensive criminal exploits. After a period of time, the web site was closed when it no longer produced evidence.”

Mundy’s complaint went on to criticize me for trying to reopen the divorce settlement agreement:

“The outlandish, baseless and downright insulting allegations contained within Mr. Den Hollander’s motion papers speak volumes [my motion papers weren’t that long] about his fitness to practice law. The abuse of the Court system and use of litigation as a means to harass and intimidate [the Ho uses goons] are evident in his motion papers, which I urge the Committee to read. Without regard for ethics or even common decency [look who’s talking], among the 22 exhibits [Mundy always complains my papers are too long, maybe he’s a slow reader, too heavy or too large,] attached to Mr. Den Hollander’s frivolous [the most favored word of lawyers when they or their clients are guilty] motion was a CD Rom he labeled ‘Masturbation Video Promo Featuring Alina Shipilina.’” [Mundy forgot to say that the porn video clips were used to advertise her services. Many lawyers, like reporters, never tell the whole truth.]

In my response to this part of Mundy’s complaint, I wrote:

“In an action for reformation of a divorce settlement that essentially requests damages for emotional distress, could anything demonstrate emotional distress more effectively than a man discovering that the woman he loved and cherished was, and apparently continued to be, a porn star who had deceived him into marriage so that she could ply her wares in a hard currency market? I don’t think so.”

“Mr. Mundy makes unspecified references to the motion for reformation as ‘outlandish, baseless and downright insulting.’ If he would indicate the allegations to which he objects and why, rather than engaging in vituperative generalizations and asking this Committee to do his work by determining the sections that Mr. Mundy is referring to, then as required by your cover letter, I will provide specific responses.” Mundy didn’t like to do much work concerning the Commie Ho, maybe because sexual escapades with her weren’t as rewarding as one initially imagined.

Mundy even tried to twist into something evil my attempt to obtain a protection order from the New York Family Court following the last two of the three threats by the hoodlum accomplice of the Commie Ho:

“Mr. Den Hollander’s very own legal papers provide all the evidence needed to support the conclusion that Mr. Den Hollander is unfit to practice law, improperly using the legal system as a vehicle to harass and incense. [If the Ho in following Mundy’s advice got a protection order based on lies, why can’t I have one based on the truth? Because I’m a man, that’s why.] They are offensive and repugnant [such sensitivity was meant to ingratiate Mundy with the broads on the Committee who believe that any man speaking ill of a female should have his tongue cut out].

To which, I responded:

“Mr. Mundy omits that the action to obtain an order of protection in March 2002 occurred after two more threatening telephone calls were made by a man who sounded like the John Madison from the first menacing call in October 2001. In these two other calls, the man referred to himself as John Pierre, and once again said he was calling on behalf of Angelina. The purpose of these terrorizing calls [so I exaggerated] was primarily to prevent me from providing information to the INS concerning Ms. Shipilina’s fraud on the INS and U.S. State Department in obtaining an immigrant visa.” Actually, the threats were to keep hidden the Russian mafia’s



activities concerning the Commie Ho, but I wanted to keep it simple for the bimbats at the Disciplinary Committee.

Mundy also whined about the Disciplinary Committee complaints I made against him, which at that time were still under review.

“Additional harassment and intimidation is evidenced by Mr. Den Hollander’s entirely fabricated [Mundy knows about fabrication as in a nonexistent audio tape of extortion and nonexistent medical records of battery] and baseless [this is the second most favored word of most lawyers] disciplinary complaint against the undersigned [that means Mundy]. The incredible and far-fetched allegations contained in Mr. Den Hollander’s complaint still dumbfound and amaze me. [The only dumbfounding and amazing part is that a lawyer can get away with lying about evidence in order to try to intimidate an opposing party into settling a case.]

On the last page of his complaint, Mundy tells the real reason for filing it:

“I was named as a defendant...along with dozens of other innocent defendants [strange to claim that well know Russian criminals and the Chechen Baraev crime clan are innocents]. Amazingly, Mr. Den Hollander’s allegations have actually become more frivolous [there’s that number one favorite word of lawyers again] and outlandish than ever before, alleging among other things, that I am part of a RICO conspiracy that spans the globe. [This is, after all, a global economy.] Mr. Den Hollander’s District Court complaint, prepared pro se [untrue, I had help from Jeff], is 91 pages in length and contains 915 numbers (sic) paragraphs. It is a meandering, disorganized, prolix narrative [means too long, Mundy has got to be a slow reader], and an embarrassment to the justice system [now wait a minute that’s getting personal, if there are any embarrassments to the justice system its lying lawyers and male-hating Feminazi judges].

“Decent people [prostitutes, pimps, pushers, pornographers and their profit driven lawyers] are being forced to defend themselves, time and time again, against Mr. Den Hollander’s incredible charges and irrepressible harassment. [He’s complaining that his underhanded activities will now cost rather than make him money.] The time and energy of the Court is being wasted. [Mundy doesn’t care about that.] I urge the Committee to assist in any way possible [start a proceeding] in putting an end to Mr. Den Hollander’s actionable conduct [being a lawyer, I’m not suppose to complain about other lawyers, keep the illegal conduct within the club], unbecoming of an attorney licensed to practice law.”

My turn:

“If Mr. Mundy is concerned with the substance, length and perhaps even the weight of the R.I.C.O. complaint, it would appear to be more appropriate to take such matters up with the federal court rather than attempting to use this Committee as a surrogate for federal procedure.”

“The federal court will provide defendant Mundy the opportunity to refute the detailed allegations of the R.I.C.O. Complaint where the court, and not he, will decide whether his characterizations of the Complaint hold any merit.”

“Mr. Mundy goes so far as to request this Committee ‘to assist in any way possible in putting an end to Mr. Den Hollander’s actionable conduct,’ which, in substance, is an attempt to misuse this Committee to deny me of my civil right to bring a R.I.C.O. suit. Before all the defendants have even been served, Mr. Mundy’s strategy is clear: use this Committee to pressure me into withdrawing the federal claim.”

“He is not only trying to deter my use of the legal system by claiming that the filing of a R.I.C.O. Complaint is evidence of unfitness to practice law, but he is also attempting to thwart the purpose of Congress in enacting the civil R.I.C.O. statute: ‘Those who have been wronged by organized crime should at least be given access to a legal remedy.’”

Finally, Mundy pulled a cheap shot even for him, but then lawyers like him will do anything to win the day:

“By his very own words, Mr. Den Hollander claims to suffer from ‘deep emotional despair, depression and anxiety,’ [who wouldn’t after marrying a member of the Russian mob] and is under the influence of psychotropic medication. [So is half of America, but as for me, I found it useless and went back to a few vodka gimlets, shaken please, on the weekend while chasing girls.] I cannot ignore the obvious conclusion one must draw [not according to the shrink I used for all of three months] from reading Mr. Den Hollander’s very own words, to wit [old English again], that he may indeed be mentally incompetent to practice law [now Mundy’s a licensed psychiatrist]. Mr. Den Hollander’s allegations are not simply far-fetched and irresponsible, but paranoid delusion [I doubt Mundy even knows what that means].”

Jeff helped me respond to this low blow at the end of my answer to Mundy’s complaint:

“In conclusion, Mr. Mundy seeks to have this Committee punish me for exercising my civil rights as a threatened and aggrieved individual. Mr. Mundy does not cite any ethical canons or disciplinary rules that I allegedly violated. Instead, he resorts to castigating me as mentally

unfit to exercise my rights because while experiencing a terrible situation, in part, intentionally created by Mr. Mundy, I sought temporary, appropriate medical help.”

Mundy shouldn't have gotten so upset over the RICO suit; after all, he and the Commie Ho started this war by using the Feminazi tactic of obtaining a temporary order of protection against me for things I never did. Lawyers always think they can bully people, but the moment someone fights back they scream harassment, just like broads. The Disciplinary Committee decided not to get involved but left its club hanging over my head by stating it would await the conclusion of the RICO suit. Typical, I complain to the Committee about Mundy lying twice to my lawyers about fake evidence in order to intimidate me and the Committee kisses it off as vigorous advocacy on behalf of his bimbo client. But when I file a RICO suit against assorted mobsters, I better win or the Committee will rip up my license to practice law. Reminds me of Russia: the victim's the violator and the violator the victim, or truths are lies and lies true. Perhaps the Soviet Union didn't collapse, but really won the cold war and took over America. After all, what other country was dumb enough to invade a Muslim nation?

When I filed my answer to Mundy's accusations, I tried to find out whether other folks had made disciplinary complaints against him. The Committee wouldn't tell me because all such complaints are kept hidden from the public, the very people who need to know whether certain lawyers are crooked. However, whether any official disciplinary action had ever been taken against Mundy was available to the public. This didn't seem fair. If a complaint is filed with the police against someone or a person is arrested and the charges dropped that's all made public. Why should lawyers get a break? Still, I sent out a request for such information to the appropriate office called the Lawyers' Office of Character and Fitness, clearly an oxymoron, and, as I suspected, his record was clean for the time being.

My interpreter in Krasnodar sent me belated “Happy Easter” wishes, which caused me to break out laughing at the absurdity. Although it was a nice sentiment, I didn’t believe the word happy ever touched my life. It touched the lives of some people, but I’m not sure I ever met anyone. Even the annual rugby reunion for Old Blue, the team I played with in the 1970s as a third stringer, didn’t seem to parade any happy guys. In those days, the guys on the A team were among the best in the country while pursuing high net worth professions of investment bankers, brokers, doctors, dentists, lawyers and the like. The future seemed to belong to them, tough, athletic, smart and somewhat conservative. Now, for most of them, the future proved more of a chore to get through rather than the joy it once promised. Most were successful, some even multi-millionaires, but none of the guys I talked with were looking forward to the future, just back to their glory days. Well at least they had them. That’s more than I can say, and what I did say was about my present, which made all the guys I talked with, except the two I would call friends, vanish, so I left.

#### I Got a Line on You

For what it was worth, I informed my lawyers in Moscow, the G.R.U. guys, my Krasnodar lawyer and Nadya about the RICO suit and eventually sent them a Russian translation of the Complaint. The G.R.U. investigators replied that they were still conducting their investigation into the Commie Ho and her mother’s criminal connections and activities in Krasnodar.

Other than my Moscow lawyers, one of whom was American, a couple of translators and the Commie Ho’s old boy friend, the G.R.U. folk were the only trustworthy people I had ever met in Russia. Everybody else, especially the girls, run one scam or another in which they actually believe they have the right to harm others in order to make their lives more convenient.

Most Russians, male and female, act like broads in America who are masters of making crime a virtue and virtue a sin.

American dames and Feminazis chronically suffer from that unique feminine delusion that the mere fact they are female exempts them from civilized behavior. In the name of “choice” and “control of our bodies,” women kill the unborn and partially born with impunity, even though a license to murder isn’t necessary for them to have “choice” or “control” of their bodies. Broads can choose not to have sex or use birth control and save abortion for the rare instance of forced sex, often instigated by them intentionally enticing men, or for a medical emergency, including birth defects of the fetus. But that’s not the choice females want. Self-control or accountability is too difficult for them. They want the choice to act irresponsible and to extort men. Irresponsible by having unprotected sex whenever the whim strikes them because they believe they have a god-given right to do so without paying the consequences—let the unborn child bear the burnt of their lascivious desires. Over 50 million butchered lives since 1973, assuming one per girl and that makes 49% of American women of childbearing age murderers of the defenseless. Abortion on demand also gives America’s new “moral” princesses the choice to extort men without paying any penalty for that crime. A women intentionally becomes pregnant by some guy, it doesn’t matter who, and uses the child in her belly to extort her intended target into giving her something of value: usually money, perhaps a job or even the sacrifice of a man’s life and dreams by marrying her. If the target resists the extortion, she moves on to another of her beaus to shake him down, always secure in the knowledge that she can escape the consequences of her attempted extortion by killing the child inside.

The evil of the modern day Feminazi mantra of “choice” and “control of our bodies” doesn’t end with just killing incipient human beings, which is what the unborn are. As with the

Greek Bacchii, once American females drank the blood of their irresponsibility, they became mad with the freedom to slaughter. Today, highly educated, modern-day, self-proclaiming humanitarian Feminazis support broads that kill their husbands, boyfriends and even murder their own children one after another, after another. It's preferable that the butchered little ones be boys, since boys are about as valuable as bras to the Feminazis, but a slain girl here or there is okay.

The Feminazis successfully use lots of excuses and pseudo science to justify murder, as did the Klan, Nazis and Commies, but for America's new Medusas, it all reduces to their blood lust for power over men. Executioner females need only cry and moan that their boyfriend or husband beat them repeatedly, and the courts will let them off for acting in self-defense when they actually committed premeditated murder. How can the guy defend against the judicial acceptance of Lizzie Borden tantrums—he's already dead. In present day America, the vast majority, if not all females rejoice in the power to get away with killing a husband or boyfriend as a means of intimidation, source of inheritance, opportunity to switch beaus or go lesbian. As for mothers that off their children because they grew tired of the responsibility they intentionally accepted, the Feminazis provide "get out of the electric chair free" excuses, such as postpartum depression, a visitation from the almighty, "the devil made me do it," the husband should have known what would happen even though he wasn't a psychiatrist or some twisted female perception that men don't find mothers attractive. It's all malarkey, but these mass murders of kids actually avoid the death penalty or life imprisonment with such nonsense because Feminazis across this land advocate that such lunatic rationalizations justify killing children.

Eighty-nine percent of the murderers of children during a baby's first week of life are females, usually the mothers. Overall, mothers kill their children nearly twice as often as fathers,

and the mothers usually get away with it—welcome to mommy’s world. Some of the murderesses even set up their own websites from prison in order to flirt with guys over the Internet. These butcher bimbos are seen by Hollywood, the media and courts as heroines because the Feminazis always somehow shift the blame to a man for the acts of a vicious, sadistic female. America’s modern day homicidal maniacs and their Feminazi supporters don’t give a damn what innocents, born or unborn, get harmed, as long as females get their way. Iraq had 30 years of tyranny under Saddam Hussein, but America has had well over 30 years of Feminazi tyranny. America’s unborn populate its landfills; Saddam’s victims lie in Iraqi mass graves—so what’s the difference?

More information came through from my G.R.U. allies on the Commie Ho and her mother, two fetuses that unfortunately had avoided abortion. In addition to my ex-wife and her mother’s association with the Chechen Baraev clan, the two maintained close connections with two notorious gangsters in Krasnodar: Viktor Vladimirovich Kononenko and Magomet Ali Kurban, another Chechen. These hoods through the threat of force enabled Inessa and the Commie Ho to take control of the gym at the Krasnodar Academy of Physical Culture and run it as a private fitness center with the profits going not to the college but themselves and Vice Rector Minchenko. Gee, I wonder whether I could do that with the gym at my alma mater Columbia University?

The G.R.U. also discovered that the Commie Ho had once been the mistress of a Chechen racketeer and warlord named Ruslan Labazanov. A warlord! What century was I living in?

Labazanov started out as a martial arts expert in the Soviet Army but landed in jail for a murder he committed in Rostov in 1990 at the age of twenty-three. Rostov is less than 200 miles north of Krasnodar. In 1991, during a prison revolt organized by Labazanov, he escaped to

Chechnya to become the head of personal security for the rebel Chechen President Dudayev in Grozny. Labazanov had a reputation for viciousness and a willingness to do anything for the right price. Just like the Commie Ho, they must've gotten along well together.

Labazanov, as did other Chechen hoods, made lots of money trading arms, oil and counterfeit bank notes in Russia. Chechnya's President Dudayev and Labazanov eventually had a falling out over the proceeds from a Moscow bank fraud. Labazanov went off to organize his own paramilitary unit, which means armed thugs, in opposition to Dudayev and set himself up as a warlord over a small section of Chechnya. Labazanov used his paramilitary for kidnappings, killings and from 1994-96, running drugs into Miami. Labazanov's criminal empire was on the move until he and his goons killed the family members of Dudayev's bodyguards, which led to an armed conflict that ended with the capture and public beheading of three of his men.

Labazanov, badly wounded, fled from Grozny.

Labazanov then allied himself with the influential Chechen politician Ruslan Khasbulatov, former head of the Soviet Union's parliament. Back in October 1993, Khasbulatov and Russia's Vice President Rutskoi attempted a coup in Russia that ended with Yeltsin sending in the tanks to shoot up the parliament building. There were no real ideological differences between Yeltsin and Khasbulatov, just one mob trying to take over the turf of another, in this case the country of Russia. Ironically again, I had actually met Khasbulatov a couple of times before the coup attempt and knew his chief of staff fairly well, even wrote a couple of papers for Khasbulatov.

Labazanov was built like a fire plug, sported two Stechkin pistols on his gold studded belt, wore a gold watch, a ring with plenty of rubies, heavy gold bracelets and necklaces and a black head band—what a clown. A hired assassin, probably G.R.U., finally took out Labazanov



in 1996. The Labazanov information didn't particularly help my RICO case other than add to the extent of the Commie Ho's nefarious connections. I'll say this, however, she really got around.

My G.R.U. guys said they would soon obtain the addresses of Kononenko and Kurban from the Krasnodar Ministry of Internal Affairs Department for Fighting Gangsterism and Corruption. Now there's a mouthful. Russians always err on the side of more words rather than less. The addresses would enable me to serve the RICO Complaint on Kononenko and Kurban, which I'm sure will give them a laugh. More importantly, the Department for Fighting Gangsterism agreed to start an investigation into the Commie Ho and Inessa on receiving the RICO Complaint from me. My G.R.U. buddies warned me not to snoop around Krasnodar anymore without their protection.

#### Tell It Like It Is

One day while working on a case with Jeff, he asked, "Have you seen any of those new advertisements on buses and taxis for Flash Dancers?"

"No, I generally take the subway." I answered, wondering at what he was getting.

"There's this blonde woman on these large ads that looks like your ex-wife."

"I wouldn't be surprised," I laughed. "She always wanted the glamorous life, although a ho on a strip club's ads doesn't look very glamorous to me. When I see one, I'll check it out."

Over the next few weeks, other friends called me with the same reports: the Commie Ho's face was all over town on Flash Dancers ads. Finally seeing one stretched across the length of a bus stopped at a red light, I looked, got closer, looked again, yes, no, I wasn't sure. Then I remembered the therapist I previously used who described the Commie Ho as a chameleon, able to change her appearance to fit the scam of the moment. Since my friends swore it was she, I

accepted it and decided to eventually subpoena the ad for use in the District Court to impeach her credibility, since she would deny working at Flash Dancers and the ad might help show that she did. Impeaching a witness or party's credibility in court requires an attorney showing that the person lies so much that nothing they say can be believed. It doesn't matter whether the lies are important in that they affect the issues of the case or insignificant, just so long as they occur over and over.

My attempt to interest the media in my RICO case consisted of emailing to the President of CBS News, whom I knew from my days at WNEW TV News and to whom two years earlier I had suggested a story on the truth of the Russian ho market in the West rather than the Feminazi fantasy reported by Christiane Amanpour. If the U.S. media picked up the story, the Russian mob would at least think twice about causing me any trouble no matter where my RICO investigation took me, except for Chechnya. In Russia, organized crime kills anyone that tries to interfere with its cash flow, including investigative reporters, but generally, although not always, avoids knocking off Americans because the politicians, who are the real crime bosses, don't want to jeopardize American aid or business investments of which they steal as much as they can. Chechnya is another story; there's no direct American investment there.

The President for CBS News received a summary of my RICO case and a copy of the Complaint. A follow up telephone call got only his secretary and no reply, so I assumed that as he did the last time I suggested a story, he referred this one to the same Feminazi vice president for prime time programming, Betsy West. She undoubtedly deep-sixed this story also because it would expose much of the truth about Russian broads, which could easily spill over to American females, whose image the Feminazis were trying hard to rehabilitate after thousands of years of female duplicity. She, as do all the other Feminazis in the media, belongs to a special interest

group best characterized as “Sisters United in Deception.” The feminized media was not about to expose feminine evil when it harmed a man, no matter what nefarious characters aided the female culprit.

Switching to another brewing battle with a duplicitous female, I met in June 2003 with my incompetent, crooked, fat sow of a stockbroker Furgason to secretly record any possible admissions she might make as to why she lost 40% of my net worth. If she made some incriminating remarks, I’d use the recording as the basis for complaints against her individually with various regulatory agencies. The agencies wouldn’t do anything because too many of the rich got richer off the rash of Wall Street frauds concerning .com companies, but I still needed to take that step to get where I needed to go for justice.

At the meeting, Furgason blamed this and that force majeure but never herself. Although toward the end of the conversation, she admitted to knowing that the analysts at Salomon Smith Barney had lied about the stocks they touted before the melt down because their bonuses depended on keeping those companies as investment banking clients. So why did she go along with the fraud? Her male bosses pressured her, which translated that without the investment of her clients’ money in the garbage stocks, she wouldn’t receive a bonus. What a rational. After closing my account, I filed complaints with the Securities and Exchange Commission, the National Association of Securities Dealers and the New York State Attorney General Eliot Spitzer. They all did nothing, and the class action against her firm that I previously joined ended up paying next to nothing because the lawyers took it all.

#### Hot Fun In The Summertime

The Chief Judge for the U.S. Southern District Court of New York scheduled a July 23 preliminary conference in my RICO case in order to find out if any motions would be filed or

whether both sides were ready to go to discovery. Discovery means each side demands documents and information from the other and various people are asked questions under oath in order to gather evidence for more motions and maybe an eventual trial. Defendants of the type I was suing will lie about nearly everything and provide no information or documents, so my task is to show they are lying, which should make the Chief Judge really mad and may cost them fines or result in motion rulings in my favor that might give me a victory.

Jeff came with me to the conference. As we sat waiting my turn, watching one young drug dealer after another cop a plea, a realization jolted my mind—four years ago on that very day, I met the Commie Ho at the party in the basement of my apartment building in Moscow. What were the odds of that? I wished irony would just leave me alone.

My expectations from the Chief Judge were none but hostility to my case. Every private attorney who ever brought a civil RICO case knows the federal judges in the Second Circuit, which includes the Southern District of New York, are renown for throwing out civil RICO cases because they are too complicated, involve difficult issues and consume too much time—the bureaucrat’s lament. Somewhere along the line the statute in many courthouse entranceways of that hot-looking blind girl holding a pair of scales changed her name from justice to expediency. These days the driving force in many courts is to reduce the workload while truth falls beneath the feet of the five o’clock employee rush out of the courthouse door.

The clerk called my case; I went to the front table while five or six lawyers for some of the U.S. defendants sat at the table behind me. The Chief Judge sounded annoyed. So what, I thought. The Judge expressed no concern that I had been repeatedly threatened, and when I requested a protection order, he said, “I don’t do orders of protection.” Gee, I wondered if he did lunch? “If you think you need an order of protection, you go to state court.” My past experience

told me that was useless advice, but passing the buck did save him from doing any work. It made me feel like saying but I didn't, "If I were a Jew in Nazi Germany, a democrat in the former Soviet Union or a black during reconstruction, there would be no justice for me either. But I'm not. I'm a middle-aged man in Feminarchy America, which means there still is no justice for me."

The Chief Judge also denied my request for an order directing the defendants not to destroy evidence or transfer funds out of the country in order to avoid execution on a possible judgment. The Chief Judge remarked that everyone knows they shouldn't do that. Okay, everybody knows it, but that doesn't mean they wouldn't do it, especially hoodlums and a prostitute. The Judge obviously didn't understand the complete disregard of the law held by Russian organized crime or that it posed a danger to the much-vaunted United States of America, the winner of the cold war, but apparent loser of the peace. The Chief Judge's ignorance of the Byzantine criminal machinations Russians engage in to make money likely made him disbelieve my allegations. A Russian judge, however, would have not only understood but known that even worse was going on behind the picture painted by my Complaint. What is considered paranoia in America is an understatement in Russia. Then again, maybe the Chief Judge just didn't give a damn because I was a man.

Anastasia and Dima, Vasilyeva didn't show or bother with a lawyer, but sent a letter in Russian to the District Court. At the time of the conference my translator was still deciphering it, and the Chief Judge never made any reference to it. The attorneys for the defendants Flash Dancers, Nicholas Mundy, Peter Petrovich, the Commie Ho and Detective Henning decided to make motions to dismiss, so the Chief Judge set a schedule going through the fall for the defense motions, my opposition memorandum and the defense replies. During this time, I requested that

both sides be allowed to proceed with discovery, but the Chief Judge denied that request too. Everything I asked for, the Chief Judge denied, but this last item to start discovery immediately I didn't want, so by asking for the opposite, I got what I wanted.

The lawyers for the other side were cordial, but there was one bozo, Vikrant Pawar from the New York City Counsel's office representing Detective Henning. He approached me outside the courtroom and asked, "You've just been admitted to practice haven't you?" and "Are you from around here?" What was he driving at? Was he trying to ingratiate himself to get some information he could use or just mentally deficient? He didn't get any answers to his questions. Lawyers never answer an opponent's informal questions concerning facts of the case or their clients or themselves because it's either a trick or an attempt to save the questioner work from finding the answer himself by going through the formal procedures.

A couple of weeks after the conference, F.B.I. Special Agent Mike Byrnes of the Russian Organized Crime Unit, to whom I sent my RICO Complaint, called to say the case was "not within the circumstances that the FBI is concerned with. It's more a state and local matter, and while it's criminal activity, it is more intrastate rather than across state lines or international. It's also more a situation where one person is pissed off at another." How this federal cop concluded the Russian and Chechen mafias were local crime outfits baffled me, and as for the "pissed off" part that's why hoods make threats and Al Qaeda took out the World Trade Center. Knowing that argument was futile, I thanked him for his time, and said I'd be heading to Krasnodar at some point to continue my investigation with the help of the Krasnodar M.V.D. Department for Fighting Gangsterism and Corruption. By then, the Department had started interrogating some of the Krasnodar defendants in my RICO case as part of its investigation into the Commie Ho

and her mother's involvement with gangsters running prostitutes and drugs as well as the two arranging for Chechen criminals to threaten my witnesses in the annulment/divorce proceeding.

An hour after hanging up, Byrnes calls me back apologizing for being short with me earlier. "I had someone in my office during the last call and didn't want to go into certain matters with them present." The F.B.I. always had another agent present when they talked to someone so that they would have two witnesses to the citizen's one. Not unlike hoods always showing up in pairs—more intimidating but also allowing the hoods or F.B.I. agents to say whatever they wanted and get away with denying it later. Byrnes' wanting to talk to me privately with the other agent out of the room made no sense, assuming that was the truth, but I didn't really care.

Byrnes continued, "The Complaint is long and I haven't read through it all, but there are some items I'm interested in obtaining more information about, such as the INS employees accepting bribes."

"Okay," I said, "let me know all the items you want more information on, and I'll decide whether to provide it depending on the potential impact on my RICO case." He agreed, and said he'd get back to me. In additions, I sent off a letter to Byrnes stating the circumstances and substance of our agreement under the assumption he would also respond with a letter. I wanted to create a paper trail that I could use in court, if necessary. But as I eventually learned, the F.B.I. doesn't respond in writing unless it comes from its counsel—all the better to hide its incompetence and less than ethical behavior.

#### The Letter

My translator sent me the English version of Anastasia and Dima Vasilyeva's letter to the District Court over which she had difficulty turning the Russian into understandable English

because its author, Anastasia, could barely write in her native tongue. The translators of the Commie Ho's diary made the same critique about her grammatical inability. Maybe the girls in Krasnodar dumb themselves down in order to attract boys, which is what Feminazis claim girls do in American schools for which the fault, of course, is the boys. But the more likely cause is that sluts, Russian or American, adeptly focus their time and energy on the easiest way to profit: suckering men, rather than the three "Rs".

Anastasia Vasilyeva's letter adhered to the first rule of Russian and feminine duplicity by playing the sympathy card. She portrayed her and her husband as poverty stricken, struggling to live the American dream since their arrival in the new world on June 28, 2001. She worked as a seamstress and Dima, real name Nicolay, was currently unemployed. The managers of Krasnodar's top model agency with lucrative local call girl and international prostitute operations were now living in the heartland of America surviving hand to mouth—baloney!

The letter stated they could provide articles from newspapers and magazines vouching for their straight and narrow lives in Krasnodar. Since when are everyday poor folk written up in the press of a city of over a million people? No way, but thanks for the idea, and I got my translator in Krasnodar to dig up some articles. She didn't find anything about call girl operations; the Russian media was even more sycophantic toward the rich than the American press. But Anastasia's mother, Tatyanna, had founded the first Krasnodar "couturier, fashion house, model agency," which was now the biggest, most popular and most lucrative. Chaired by Tatyanna and managed by daughter Anastasia the fashion house catered to TV-stars and other celebrities. The Krasnodar press reported that Anastasia and her famous mother, "fashion's grand lady of Southern Russia," continued to put on their annual January fashion show broadcast by Russian national television and radio and attended by movie stars and the pick of society in "luxurious



cars with haughty well-groomed ladies and their solid companions.” Not bad for struggling immigrants living in America. The annual fashion event started in 1998 to celebrate “Tatyanna Day” named after the Russian Orthodox angel “Tatyanna.” That alleged angel probably ran prostitutes as well. One Russian society reporter described the January 2003 grand fashion event: “The theatre was crowded, the boxes were occupied by high-ranking persons as it should be. The beau monde (whatever that means) and others came here this day partly by tradition, partly wishing to join the beautiful, and partly because of the declared prestige of the event. We should pay tribute to the architect of the celebration—the notions ‘fashion’ and Tatyanna Vasilyeva have blended into one in society’s conscious a long time ago.” The event displayed ‘children of all ages’ from the Models School of Anastasia Vasilyeva and ‘were declared to be the pride of our genetic reserve.’” Anastasia’s budding young money makers “put on a display dedicated to the region’s four nationalities: Adygs, Armenians, Chechens and Russians.”

Anastasia’s letter claimed she and her husband hadn’t left the U.S. since they arrived in June 2001; therefore, she must have missed this grand showcasing of her future prostitutes, but she didn’t. Not only did the media spot her at the event, but my Krasnodar translator found out that Anastasia periodically returned to Russia while Nicolay, a.k.a. Dima, spent most of his time there—tough to find a job in America while working in Russia, which technically meant he was unemployed here but not Krasnodar. Anastasia traveled to Krasnodar at least twice a year, once in the summer and once in the winter to sign papers, do an in-person check on the operations—probably to make sure hubby Nicolay wasn’t stealing too much—and push her pet project the Models School of Anastasia Vasilyeva for training children in the glamorous life of fashion and hoing. The Vasilyevas probably crossed over to Canada and traveled back and forth from there

using their second Russian international passports, just as the Commie Ho does, in order to hide from U.S. Customs and INS their travels on mob business.

The busy operation of the Vasilyeva's House of Fashion also included periodic smaller fashion events, such as at the Kuban State University Women's Club. Probably a recruiting gimmick to meet the insatiable demand for female assets. The Fashion House put on a show in August 2003 written up as "a real miracle happening: beautiful creatures in fantastic dresses seemed to have been flying in the air. Music, lighting, spirit of creativity—everything made for the sensation of a miracle." Right, the miracle of feminine self-delusion given that most of those "beautiful creatures" were sluts.

Besides falsely claiming poverty to the District Court, Anastasia emphasized that she and her husband were undergoing great emotional distress over their youngest child's birth defects, which required them to "spend all our time at the hospital ... we are always next to our child." Anastasia used her child's illness as the basis for the lie that the two remained in America, and, therefore, couldn't conduct an international prostitution ring as my Complaint stated. Their child probably had birth defects. Girls in Krasnodar often give birth to deformed children—something in the air, water or wherever. But their detailed description of the health of their child, tragic as it was for the child, was another obvious play for sympathy. The child's illness, however, did explain another reason for pleading poverty—Medicaid. A pretext telephone call by a buddy confirmed my suspicions that these wealthy criminals of Krasnodar were using U.S. taxpayer dollars meant for the American poor to pay their medical bills.

My associate telephoned the Vasilyeva's home using the pretense of collecting an overdue hospital bill for her child. "Hello, this is the Acme Collection Agency. The Children's Hospital referred an unpaid bill for your child's treatment to us for collection."

“We don’t pay for it,” Anastasia quickly and obligingly replied. “It is Government Title 19, so we do not pay it.”

“All right, maybe there has been a mistake. I will check with the hospital and the Government. Sorry to bother you.”

Title 19 is Medicaid. The Vasilyevas know, as do most Russian immigrants and illegal aliens, how to work the system in America. By pretending poverty, they avoid taxes on the large sums they make from white slavery while the U.S. taxpayer picks up the hospital costs for them and their child.

A second rule of Russians for tricking Americans is to pretend they don’t understand English. This way they can retract anything previously said or claim an honest misunderstanding. But there’s nothing honest when it comes to most Russians. The “no speaky English” pretense also allows them to eaves drop on English conversations because foolish Americans keep talking under the assumption the Russians don’t understand English. Anastasia claimed her and her husband’s poor English as the reason for writing the District Court in Russian, but their letter showed a pretty good understanding of the accusations against them that were made in English. Too good a job actually, for it had the ring of an attorney helping them, but whom?

Third rule for Russians, females and lawyers running a con is to lie, prevaricate and dissemble. Anastasia referred to the model agency for which she was the Director, which means CEO, as merely her and her husband’s “workplace.” They recounted my interviewing them back in April 2001, but spun the conversation to depict themselves as ignorant innocents. “We were shocked by the questions. We said that we had no proof and that we knew nothing bad about his wife.” Knew nothing bad! They said the Commie Ho admitted to working as a prostitute in the Cypriot brothel. That one of the girls they sent along came right back home because she decided

against working as a whore. Models from their “workplace” said the Vasilyevas ran a “dirty girls list” and that my ex-wife was on it.

Fourth rule for Russians, broads and lawyers, depict the accuser as guilty of something just as bad or worse. Anastasia claimed, “When Roy Den Hollander understood that we couldn’t help him with anything he got nervous.” When Russians use the word nervous, it means panicky. Under the Commies, exhibiting nervousness was synonymous with guilty conduct for violating one of Lenin or Stalin’s edicts. The Russians are masters at displaying no genuine emotion because often it led directly to the Gulag. Anastasia was trying to tell the Court that her claim of my nervousness meant I was engaged in some criminal activity.

Some parts of the letter were just bizarre. When Anastasia’s husband introduced himself to me in Krasnodar in April 2001, he used the name Dima, which is the name I used in the RICO compliant. The letter states Dima is his christening name, but Nicolay his given name. According to Anastasia, my referring to her husband as Dima “proves that Roy Den Hollander is using false facts and also doesn’t have a serious attitude to the Court.” The first part of that quote was infantile, but the second part may hold some truth.

More importantly, Anastasia’s lame effort to make me out a liar gave me some useful information I didn’t have before: her husband’s official first name Nicolay and his middle initial “N”. I already knew Anastasia’s middle initial “A”, but needed their full middle names or patronymics for the G.R.U. boys to dig up any records in Russia indicating criminal activities. Unfortunately, on coming to America, Russians never give out their full patronymics only the middle initial because they know that’s not good enough to track down their records in Russia for so many people there have similar first and last names. Anastasia’s letter, however, also gave the address at which she and Nicolay were registered in Krasnodar. All Russians are required to

register themselves with the local government as living at a particular address. Some Russians do move around but still keep the same registered address in order to avoid the bureaucratic nightmare of changing it or to hide from the police or mafia, in Russia the two are considered almost synonymous. The Soviets had broken down every city into districts to keep the records from arrest to marriage to abortion to death for all the people registered in a particular district. Even when a person no longer lives in a district, he still has to use the government services offered in the district where he is registered or the government bureaucrats will not help him. Anastasia gave the address at which she and Nicolay were registered in Krasnodar, which meant I now knew the district that kept records concerning them that included their patronymics. Svetlana, my lawyer in Krasnodar, was asked to get their full names.

Anastasia also claimed in the letter to have documents proving the two of them had no criminal records and were not members of the Russian mafia. Who the devil issues non-mafia membership documents? It can't be the American INS. The INS doesn't even bother conducting background checks on aliens applying for permanent green cards, and its computer system breaks down once or twice a week, but that doesn't really matter, since many employees don't know how to use the computers anyway. Besides, INS agents have the highest incidence of criminal activities of any federal agency. They smuggle aliens, counterfeit and sell INS documents and pass aliens who funk the naturalization exam. Any document from the INS automatically makes it suspect. But whichever agency provided Anastasia's "certified innocent" documents, if they actually existed, I couldn't find out until the case went into discovery.

Other information Anastasia told the District Court, I could check right away. Any evidence showing that statements in the letter were false, could be used to attack both Anastasia and Nicolay's credibility by arguing they were consummate liars and nothing they told the court

should be believed. One statement to test was Anastasia claiming to work as a seamstress in an American shop. Anastasia even gave the District Court her boss's name, whom Anastasia suggested the court contact to vouch she made little as an employee and did not run her own lucrative business. Russian mobsters always have a front job and this was Anastasia's since no person, not to mention a Russian female, would give up the CEO position in her mother's premier fashion, model and call girl agency to sew clothes in America.

Another avenue to check was Nicolay, who, according to the letter, worked immediately after the couples' arrival in America at a McDonalds, probably the first Russian organized crime figure to do so. He left that job after six months to spend his time at home with the kids, both under four, and to learn English. The guy who gave his first wife in Krasnodar \$140,000 for a divorce, so he could marry a rich broad like Anastasia and help run the "dirty girls list" for Krasnodar's movers and shakers worked at McDonalds and now took care of his kids. I don't think so.

These ploys concerning Nicolay obviously exploited the Feminazi icon of the sensitive husband doing what the wife should and the patriotic alien trying to become a citizen—both also a first for a Russian hoodlum. Any person who grew up or lived in Russia would laugh at such claptrap. Russian husbands, even those with legitimate jobs, don't stay at home raising young children, and the only patriotism Russian hoods have is for the U.S. greenback. But in modern day America, the Feminazis' gambit of reversing Mother Nature's roles for the sexes, so girls can play at being a man until it becomes dangerous, appeals to bleeding heart liberalism and might sucker the Court into believing Anastasia and Nicolay's lies.

The part of the letter, however, that stood out for me as particularly in need of investigating was "On December 25, 2002 our father came from Russia. Special agent services

and FBI/Federal Bureau of Investigation inspected all of us. The name of the agent is Barry P. Babler. The services and FBI had no issues.” Why was the FBI checking up on a guy from Russia visiting his daughter and then go on to check the daughter and son-in-law? There was something about these people that interested the FBI, but what, and how do I find it out?

Another defendant also tried to sympathy his way out of the suit. Dr. Marc Paulsen, the guy who admitted to producing the Commie Ho’s masturbation video and paying to have sex with her, had his lawyer, who missed the preliminary conference, send me a letter requesting I drop Paulsen from the suit. Paulsen’s lawyer claimed, “Mr. Paulsen is medically sick and will undergo surgery soon. Also, he is not a pornographer.” Right! So what does he hire Red Star models for, and why did U.S. Customs give him a hard time about importing porn videos from Russia? The sickness part either was likely just another lie. Beside, why should I feel sorry for him or any of the other purveyor’s of evil in this case? None of them ever felt sorry for me and probably no one else other than themselves. For them compassion is only a one-way street pointing in their direction; well here I come in my truck. My response to Paulsen’s lawyer included wishes that Paulsen’s operation went well, a lie, and that Paulsen could join my side by testifying against the Commie Ho and her Moscow pimp, Leo.

My worry that the District Court might dismiss the case, that the Second Circuit may uphold such a dismissal and the U.S. Supreme Court deny me an appeal led to an idea triggered by my buddy Mark. He had begun a business setting up websites in the summer of the third year of the third millennium for entertainers looking for patrons. Not being an entertainer, except in my efforts with pretty young ladies, Mark’s website gave me the idea on how to find clients, a special kind of client. All I needed was 40 men who had also been scammed by Russian mafia prostitutes, introduction bureaus, marriage agencies and advertisers of honest Russian girls who

were really sluts, and I could bring a class action RICO case against the Russian and Chechen mafias and their allies. If the Federal courts threw out my first RICO case, they couldn't stop me from coming back with a class action RICO. That would really tick off the Feminazi-sycophantic bureaucrats and make it a lot harder for them to deny justice, since there would be a group of men instead of just one—united we stand, divided the Feminazis walk all over us. Feminazis had been picking off men one by one for decades. Another reason for a class action was that I just might get lucky enough to find some guy who was ripped off by a few of the same scoundrels as me. The way to find my 40 men was through a website. The result was: [www.been-scammed.com](http://www.been-scammed.com).

When the site initially got up and running it said:

Screen 1:

Scammed by a Russian woman?

Lost money?

Want Justice?

Join the beginning of a class action lawsuit against those involved in tricking American men into costly and harmful relationships with Russian women who are no more than liars, cheats and prostitutes.

Screen 2:

Have you been a victim of a fraudulent Russian dating, introduction or marriage service whether through a web site, magazine, newspaper or Russian model agency?

Have you suffered financial loss, emotional distress or other harm as a result of using one of these services?

Have you been taken advantage of by a Russian female?



If you have, then find out whether you qualify to join a class action lawsuit to recover your losses and any damages caused you. Any recovery might be tripled depending on the legal nature of the claim.

The law firm of Roy Den Hollander is looking for victims of these Russian organizations, and their American accomplices, that promise honest relationships with beautiful, wholesome Russian women but end up with the American man defrauded of his money and time.

Perhaps one of the following has happened to you:

- Met a Russian girl on the Internet. After weeks of great emails, she said she was poor and asked to borrow money for food using your master card number. At first it was \$50 and \$100 dollars, but as you cared more and more for her, she started taking up to \$1000. You told her you couldn't afford that, but she said "too bad," then "goodbye."

- Shelled out over \$20,000 for what you thought would be a loving Russian wife. Traveled to meet her in Russia, had a great time, everyone was so nice to you, and you fell in love. Brought her back to the U.S. for a visit, and all she wanted to do was lay around watching soap operas, spend your money on jewelry and run up your phone bill talking in Russian to a guy named Vladimir whom she said was just a "good friend." You were crushed. Your buddies convinced you to put her on a plane back to Russia, but before you could, she disappeared. Now the U.S. Immigration service is giving you a hard time.

- Traveled to a social gathering in Russia that was advertised in a magazine with pictures of beautiful Russian ladies at a classy hotel nightclub. When you got there, the hotel was a rat hole and the girls hags. You demanded your money back, \$5,000, and these big Russian goons pushed you into a corner for a talk. You were happy to get back to the U.S.A. in one piece.

- Found it difficult to meet new people after losing your wife, so you answered a magazine ad to correspond with Russian girls. For \$1000, you got ten letters with pictures of very pretty women, but when you tried to call them, they didn't exist.
- Spent thousands of dollars traveling to Russia to meet a decent girl through an introduction service, but they all turned out to be high-priced hookers.
- Married a Russian girl who turned out to be a prostitute, member of the Russian mafia, a drug addict, adulteress and thief.
- Married a Russian lady whom as soon as she received her green card, divorced you by lying that you beat her up. The American female judge believed the phony tears and gave your Russian wife \$70,000 of the money that you worked hard for.

If you have had a similar experience, then you probably qualify as a member of the proposed class action lawsuit. Your next step is to fill out our short [survey](#). All communications are protected and cannot be disclosed unless you okay it.

You will then be informed as to whether you qualify for the proposed class action lawsuit. If you qualify, your next step will be to decide to join us or not.

Joining will cost you nothing, no matter what the legal outcome. If successful, all attorney fees and costs will come out of any recovery.

Don't be a victim. Join us in our legal action. Fill out the attached survey form.

Sponsored by: Truth, Justice and the American Ideal

Designated lead counsel: Roy Den Hollander, Esq.

Apart from this public effort to set up a class action RICO case, I again tried to win some notoriety for my individual RICO suit. Lynn Vission had written the book *Wedded Strangers* about a number of marriages between Russians and Americans since the 1930s. She gave

lectures on the inter-country coupling that I attended at Columbia University before working for Kroll in Moscow and at the Foreign Language Library in Moscow just after my marriage to the Commie Ho. Perhaps she could use my story for a subsequent edition of her book that she once mentioned she was working on. Unfortunately for me, she was not planning another edition but instead working on a book about the children of Russian-American marriages. Thank goodness I couldn't help her out on that topic, since luckily I didn't have any children with the Commie Ho. What a disaster that would have been; how do you tell a kid that his mother is whore. Vission said in her email, "I have received hundreds of emails from partners of Russian-American marriages, I have not, so far, been contacted by American spouses in a situation similar to yours." An understatement for sure. In response, I told her about the proposed class action RICO website for which she very graciously sent me the web addresses for sites frequented by American men who had married Russian girls or pursued them and suggested I post a letter with those sites advertising the class action RICO. Thanking her for the suggestion, I put it on my "To Do" list.

### Something in the Air

All this prose make's it sound that most of my waking hours were spent fighting for a reckoning with evil, they weren't, but soon would be. My private Salsa lessons with Isabella had ended and my confidence in dancing it had come a long way with the thirty odd choreography routines I kept in a notebook. Isabella suggested I take her group class to continue my progress. She even told me to come a month for free. When was the last time a luscious babe offered a guy something for free, probably Delilah pushing haircuts. Still, I jumped at the opportunity.

After the first group class, I asked Isabella a little confused, “During our private lessons, you taught me to start by stepping back with the left foot, but in class you have the guys step forward with the left foot. Which is it?”

“Oh, it doesn’t matter. I’m just doing that so we can get into the turns and other movements quicker.” She smilingly reassured me with a sensuous hand on my arm.

Made sense to me, so I continued with her classes and paying the fee starting the following month, which I could easily afford. My work for Jeff was making me over a hundred grand a year. But with the money came the soma like illusions of normalcy rearing up from the parts of my unconsciousness contorted by American society. These serpents tempted me with the security of insidious cowardice and surrender while my Salsa teacher oozed sex-stirring fantasies of romance and companionship all of which combined into a formidable tag-team laying siege to the gates of my crusade. I knew exactly what was happening, all the parental and social programming were setting me up for another fall. The seducing succor of the complacent pawn seeped around and through by resolve for justice.

Then I received a call from one of Jeff’s bosses at the insurance company. This was strange because I worked for Jeff, and he usually dealt with the guys at the insurance company to which we provided litigation services. The insurance company officer, probably from the former Soviet Union, nastily accused me of padding my bill and incurring needless expenses by asking the insurance company’s private eye to track down an appraiser the company had used in a case. The claim files showed the appraiser once possessed and might still have some key documents that would benefit one of the cases, which I told him. But he was unable to admit his mistake and continued his caustic rant by insinuating I was lying because he couldn’t remember the appraiser’s name—a typical female tactic when shown up to be wrong. The case was old and the

appraiser landed in jail for a while on unrelated grounds, but the appraiser's name was right there on the documents, as I pointed out to the insurance officer. But he would hear none of it and hung up in a huff—another typical female tactic for covering up incompetence. I called Jeff.

“Why did this guy end up calling me over a billing, I work for you,” I complained to Jeff.

“Well, I was busy, so I told him to call you.”

“You should have warned me. This is your responsibility not mine.”

“I know, I'm sorry.”

I was pissed. As my brother once remarked, “You don't like being pushed around,” to which I would add, especially when acting diligently. The incident made it clear the time had come to put away illusions of normalcy and fight the Commie Ho and her mafia associates full time, to ignite what I hoped was the final phase. A cold feeling of joylessness grew with a desire to set my determination. No more dilatory daydreams about Salsa romance. Go to the clubs to flirt and try to pick up chicks for fun but nothing more, only mutually beneficial sexual associating—nothing more.

Spending too much time with the same girl makes a man weak. Girls are cowards and lack honor. Who was the last girl that acted in any way honorable? Joan of Arc was six hundred years ago. BROADS got nothing to tell me other than “yes” or “no”. They're only pushers selling endorphins pumped into a man's brain by their presence and pheromones. No cold turkey idiot would ever ask a pusher for advice about life or believe what one said. Pushers are only interested in money, have lots of customers, lie constantly, never make refunds, wait for the addicts to come to them and are never on time. God damned the pusher girl. No, I didn't need some girlfriend pushing me into acting the coward in order to exploit me for her own ends or making me vulnerable through that unique stupidity of men to confide in a broad only to have

her use the information as a knife in his back later. What I had to do required strength, more than I ever used before.

My working for Jeff ended with my resignation and I set my course. At first, I wound up tight like a girl set on marriage, which caused me sleepless nights until I remembered one of Mark's key teachings in the martial arts. The only way to put up a good fight is to relax until the instant the ferocity is needed. So I relaxed and set to work creating the instant of justice.

Initially, I began reviewing RICO cases in the law library because in September the American defendants would ask the Court to dismiss the case, which I would oppose. Late one afternoon at the library, the lights went out, the computers crashed—the electricity had stopped. Oh boy, *The Day the Earth Stood Still*, I hoped! Now the rich and their Feminazi lackeys will get their comeuppance! But it was just another New York City blackout, although this one extended across the entire northeast. By evening the bars were overflowing onto the side walks with people downing as much as they could while the drinks were still cool and the ice held out. Walking the nearly pitch-black streets bubbled up ancient fears as people materialized right in front of me without warning then vanished just as quickly back into night. Darkness fearful, dreaded and black became the thought the mind lacked. There was the sense that the security of civilization had momentarily evaporated, although the experience of cruising around invisible was peaceful with the buildings, such as the Flatiron and Empire State, looking beautiful without lights against a night sky filled with stars that otherwise don't exist in the glare of city lights.

Following the mid-August blackout, I flew out to the Vasilyeva's to snoop around looking for evidence of falsehoods in Anastasia and Nicolay Vasilyeva's letter to the District Court. As part of my preparation, I telephoned F.B.I. Special Agent Babler, left a message I would be in his city from August 21<sup>st</sup> to the 25<sup>th</sup> and requested an interview with him concerning

Anastasia and Nicolay's letter; a copy of which I mailed him along with my mobile number where he could reach me in New York.

On Thursday, I left for LaGuardia airport so that I would arrive the two hours before my flight that Homeland Security advised in order to pass through the beefed up security for domestic air travel. Once again, I should have known better than to listen to government retards. It took me less time to get to the gate than before 911 even with the security personnel incapable of speaking understandable English. The airports must have out sourced those jobs. The trick was to just nod my head to these maulers of the English language to keep moving toward the metal detector. One grandmother in front of me made the mistake of trying to communicate with these illiterates, so they pulled her out of the line. Guess the two hour advanced arrival warning was meant for gray haired, stooped ladies like her. The Government doesn't want to violate that totalitarian left taboo of profiling: don't discriminate against our young male brothers who want to kill us, search for the threat among the elderly and folks from Scandinavia. What cretins populate the Government.

In Cincinnati, I waited for my connecting flight. These small airports sitting out in Middle America where nature trumps concrete are nice. They carry a peacefulness and easier way of life free of an atmosphere charged with the hurry of adrenalin and the worry of anxiety that grip large concrete urban centers. After an easy stroll around, I reluctantly turned to my travel reading: the second translation of the Commie Ho's diary. A young American man living in Moscow did this version, which I wanted as a check on the first written translation done by a Russian service used by my Moscow lawyers. Reading again the Commie Ho's inner workings with the distance of hate and time was no less revolting, although the heartache had vanished completely. My translator prefaced his work with "This woman is real perplexing, if you don't

mind my saying so. She involves herself in all kinds of dark and questionable behavior, at the same time throws on these religious sayings and ‘prays’ for help. Can’t quite make heads or tails out of her, but it does make for interesting reading.” My interest, however, had waned, and after twenty minutes of wadding through the sewer of her mind, I put it aside, figuring there would be plenty of time to finish it later. Once again, one of my predictions went awry.

On Friday morning the day after my arrival, I drove out to an upscale suburban shopping mall where Anastasia Vasilyeva claimed she worked as the family’s breadwinner sewing clothes for Cynthia Zahnow in a tailoring shop. It looked like just another mall to me, but was the Fifth Avenue of this suburban area. As we walked into the mall, I saw on my right a woman’s clothing store with manikins draped with the current fashionable look. Something about it struck me as not right, even a little *déjà vu*. When I saw a tall good-looking young babe standing inside, obviously a sales girl, a line popped into my mind, and I walked inside with every intention of flirting with this babe in her late teens or early twenties.

Inside, there were more tall fashionably dressed manikins, both alive and not. The couple of living ones smiled requests at us two middle-aged guys silently asking us to drain our bank accounts on their commissions in return for flirtations that promised delights never to be delivered. I walked up to the girl I saw from outside as she beamed, “Can I help you?”

“Yes, I’m looking for a tailoring shop” and gave her the name. “Do you know where it is?” Okay, so it’s not much of a line, but such prosaic utterances usually provide the opening needed. This girl was taller than me by two inches in her heels, poised and simulating an open invitation.

As I glanced around, she answered, “Of course, they do all our alterations for us and are in the back.”



“What kind of clothes do you sell here?” I asked, no longer interested in flirting but trying to pump some information because my déjà vu had turned into a memory. This store’s set up, fashion and its smiling salesgirls was a carbon copy of the Vasilyeva House of Fashion 6,000 miles away in Krasnodar.

“We only sell designer clothes and specialize in wedding dresses. Would you like to look at some?”

“No thanks, I have no need for a wedding dress. You look like a model. Are you?”

“Well, thank you. Yes I am. Most the girls who work here are models.”

“Does the store help you with modeling, show you what to do and arrange for fashion shows and the like?”

“We regularly put on fashion shows in which the girls model the latest styles and the store helps in all of that as well as our training.” I bet they do, I wanted to add.

“Do you work here all week long?”

“No, different girls come on at different hours. It’s only part time since many of us are in college.”

“What if a customer wanted to take one of the models to dinner?”

Without blinking an eye, she said, “Well that does happen, but we have to run it by our manager first.”

No doubt she misspoke, meaning to stay pimp instead. Having gotten pretty much what I wanted, couldn’t very well ask if they imported sluts from Russia.

“Would you direct us to your tailoring shop?”

“Of course,” she responded and walked out of the shop with our eyes following the movements of her cheeks and calves. “It’s just down there on the right,” she said pointing.

“Thanks.” Even the arrangement with the tailoring shop in back of the fashion store was nearly identical to the modeling and call girl agency run by the Vasilyevas in Krasnodar. This was no coincidence or that Anastasia, the boss in Krasnodar, was a mere seamstress here.

As we walked into the tailoring shop, I went up to a female in her forties and asked for Cynthia Zahnow.

“I’m her,” she said.

I introduced myself as the attorney on the RICO case in New York and started asking questions, which Zahnow was dumb enough to answer, for a while. The Q and A took place in the small public area of the tailoring shop with two of her employees watching and my associate as my witness. Zahnow claimed Anastasia had worked as a seamstress for her but left a few weeks ago, how convenient. Then Zahnow started evoking sympathy to try to fog the situation. Must be Russian I surmised.

“Anastasia’s son was born with birth defects, so she needed a job with benefits to pay for the child’s medical care. I can’t afford to pay my workers benefits, so I found her a job at the Boston Store downtown. She’s probably at the children’s hospital this moment.”

Mentally, I asked myself what’s Anastasia doing at the hospital if she is suppose to be working, and what employee benefit plan would pick up the cost of the pre-existing defects of Anastasia’s child? This syrup was just an effort to cover Anastasia and Nicolay’s Medicaid fraud about which Zahnow probably knew and maybe abetted. I brushed the sympathy ruse aside. Besides, Anastasia got what she deserved for most likely having this child in the U.S. for the sole purpose of making it more difficult to deport her for illegal activities. Anastasia, and now her alleged former employer Zahnow, really milked this kid’s misery for their own suspect ends.

“What does her husband Nicolay do?”

“He worked for a while, but now stays at home with the other child.” How convenient, no traceable job. All during my stay out West and after, I periodically called the Vasilyeva’s house but Nicolay never answered. How could he? Nicolay spent most his time in Krasnodar running prostitution.

“Do you know why the F.B.I. was investigating Anastasia’s father?”

“The F.B.I. visited the store saying it was investigating the father but didn’t say why.”

Zahnow replied.

“What’d the F.B.I. ask you?”

“Oh, I don’t remember exactly. Stuff like how long Anastasia work here, how well I knew the family. But their investigation delayed her father coming here for six weeks.”

“How well do you know the family?”

“We’re friends. Anastasia’s father was coming to visit to help with the children.” The sympathy diversion again and another lie derived from trendy Political Correctionalist propaganda about America’s neutered man: “Mr. Sensitive Androgyny.” No way I was buying. Anastasia’s father traveling to the U.S. to take care of her kids was just as unlikely as Nicolay staying home to take care of one of them or both. More likely the father was either bringing money or information to help the call girl operations in America or taking money back with him to some offshore haven, just as the Commie Ho did.

“Do you know what Anastasia’s patronymic is?” Thought I’d give this a shot since it would save me some money if my Krasnodar lawyer hadn’t already checked the records for the district where Anastasia was registered.

Zahnow began to realize her ploy for pity wasn't working and that she had probably already said too much. "I'll check my records; give me a call on Monday." Fat chance she'd give it to me. By then, she would have reported back to Anastasia who'd tell her to keep her trap shut.

"Do you know Nicolay's patronymic?"

"No," she now turned cold.

The fact that Zahnow knew what patronymic meant made me think again she was Russian. "Are you Russian?"

"No," and she laughed just like a Commie does when trying to make someone feel ridiculous for suspecting something. Zahnow's ancestors actually came from Poland, close enough. She then volunteered, "I know what is going on in this case. Anastasia showed the kook's Complaint to everybody. Are you the kook?" Zahnow now moved to the classical Russian and female tactic of name calling to enlist social opprobrium against a seeker of the truth. What most people don't realize is that lawyers consider slurs from an opponent the highest form of compliment.

"Who used the word 'kook' besides you just now?" Zahnow was now on the hook for defamation, but I wanted to see whether I could catch Anastasia in it. Zahnow refused to say and the interview ended. I gave Zahnow my car, my associate and I left. As we walked toward the exit, I began to say something to my associate when she motioned me to look to my left. Turning, I saw Zahnow using another classic Russian and female trick of sneaking up behind people and eavesdropping.

"Talking bad about me?" She agitatedly said at having been caught.

“No, you haven’t been defamed, but I have,” I replied. Zahnow quickly walked on ahead into the women’s fashion store we first visited. She probably wanted to throw-a-fit, yelling and screaming at us but after landing before a judge for disorderly conduct a few years back, she kept herself under control.

Anastasia’s job, whether still at the tailoring shop or another store, was just a cover that allowed her and Nicolay to claim poverty in order to scam Medicaid while her child’s illness combined with Feminazi fantasies of the “soft man” as personified by the false image created for Nicolay, creates the illusion of the two spending all their time in the U.S.

Next stop—the F.B.I. About an hour later, at a little after 1 PM, I walked into the reception area of the local F.B.I. office. No guards, no reinforced doors and no metal detectors as in New York City. My associate had stayed in the car. My only chance of getting any information was alone since the F.B.I. didn’t like witnesses unless the witness was another agent so as to back up the Bureau’s position or lie on what transpired. Besides, I doubted Special Agent Babler would be around during lunch or even see me if he were.

I gave my name to the receptionist, she told me to have a seat. Not two minutes after I sit down, Babler comes out by himself fashionable tan and well dressed. This guy’s living the good life out here. After introducing myself, I told him the status of the RICO proceeding and that I had a few questions about the Vasilyeva’s letter to the District Court. Handing him a translated copy he could use as a reference in case he no longer had the one I mailed him, I expected him to invite me inside to talk with another agent present as they usually do, but Babler didn’t. Strange I thought.

“I’m sorry for not responding to your telephone call from earlier in the week.” Babler sounded nervous, acted nervous, looked nervous and even perspired a little. “What are your

questions?” So as we stood there in the reception area with no one in listening distance, I started my questions to which I expected the usual F.B.I. reply “no comment.”

“Why did the F.B.I. conduct a six-week investigation of Anastasia’s father and her family before allowing him in the country?”

“We didn’t investigate the whole family.” So either Anastasia lied to the District Court about her and Nicolay passing F.B.I. scrutiny or Babler was lying to me.

He continued, “It wasn’t an investigation, just a routine inquiry into Anastasia’s father after he arrived, which didn’t take anywhere near six weeks. These types of inquiries never take six weeks, not even a month, and are done only after the visitor shows up.” That’s not what Zahnnow said. Somebody doesn’t have their story straight.

“Why Anastasia’s father?”

“It was just a random check of papers that came across my desk to see if the paper work was accurate.” As I recalled from the Commie Ho’s paper work for a visa, the documents were in Russian.

“If it was just routine, why did Anastasia mention you in her letter to the Court?”

“After she received the RICO Complaint, Anastasia came to me saying she thought it dealt with the Russian mafia. She asked me for legal advice, but I told her I couldn’t give her any and didn’t. We aren’t allowed to give the public legal advice of any type. I’ve read the entire Complaint and have a copy on my desk.” All 91 pages he read! Sounded as though Babler had more than a routine interest in my case, but why? Babler still appeared nervous, and his answer didn’t really explain Anastasia’s reference to him in the letter, unless her Soviet mentality made her believe she could bluff her way out of the case by claiming a nonexistent

investigation found no criminal doings. In Russia, gangsters often hire F.S.B. or M.V.D. officials to provide them with a clean bill of lawfulness.

“Do you read Russian?”

“No.”

“It must be difficult working on Russian matters not knowing the language?” I tried to get him to elaborate on how he dealt with documents in Russian.

“Not really.” He tried to change the flow of the conversation toward me. “I’m surprised you aren’t on our list of people who travel periodically to Russia.” Obviously he checked that list, which I didn’t know existed until then, but why did he even spend the time to bother? Or was this some lame attempt at intimidation? Watch out, we’ll put you on our list. Who cares!

I turned the interview back to my questions. “Do you know Anastasia’s middle name?”

“No, but it would be the first name of her father, which I recall is Anatole.” Was this accurate or intentional misinformation?

“Could you check that for me?” I requested, fully expecting a “get lost!” But Babler was still nervous and answered, “The name is in my records back in my office, call me in an hour and half and I’ll have it for you.”

“Okay,” I said surprised, thanked him for his time and left.

Two hours later, I called Babler back. He was no longer nervous but in the typical F.B.I. authoritarian arrogant mood. “I’m not going to give you the name of Anastasia’s father because it would impact one of our investigations and our rules prohibit releasing any information concerning an investigation.” So, the former routine inquiry was now an investigation. Babler then switched to the understanding cop role in an effort to convince me there was nothing the authorities in the U.S. were doing or could do, meaning I should either leave the bureaucrats to

their Club Fed ways or get out of the way of their investigation. I couldn't figure out which, but it didn't matter because I wasn't giving up.

Babler added, "I was involved in another investigation of a gentleman in a situation similar to yours. But nothing could be done because the fraud occurred in Russia." I knew that was a lie. Even if all the criminal acts I alleged occurred in Russia, which they did not, whenever it was reasonably foreseeable that criminal conduct would impact the U.S., like tricking men into bringing mafia prostitutes to America for the mob's white slave trade, those acts violated RICO. Federal law enforcement agencies had plenty of power to not only bounce the Commie Ho, Anastasia and Nicolay out of the country but also break up the Russian mob's operations in America. However, I doubted they had the will. Babler's statement was so absurd that it would absolve the cocaine cartels in Columbia from prosecution because all they did was put the dope on the ships headed for America.

Babler moved into the therapist role with "It is not at all infrequent for an older American man to marry a younger Russian woman who only wants to get to America." This ploy of commiseration put me on alert for the proverbial incriminating question meant to nail me to the wall. But instead Babler asked, "Do you live here or New York?" I didn't get it. He knew from my letter and Complaint where I lived, so dismissing his question as irrelevant, I answered, "New York."

After hanging up with Babler, I called Anastasia's home number several times, but it was busy for over five minutes. Was Babler reporting back to her, maybe, maybe not?

So far, my trip provided some information useful in discovery for impeaching Anastasia and Nicolay and added some specifics to my understanding of their local operations about which I could quiz them in detail, assuming the case made it to discovery. The tailoring shop in the



back of the fashionable designer clothing store with tall pretty young models looked and felt the clone of the Tatyanna Vasilyeva House of Fashion in Krasnodar. Anastasia's letter to the court indicated the tailoring shop was a separate company but the lack of corporation records or a telephone listing showed it was most likely part of the clothing store, just like the operation in Krasnodar. With Canada not far away and notoriously open for allowing in illegal aliens, Russian hos likely entered Canada and hopped a ride across the border into the U.S.

The Vasilyeva's U.S. operations began looking like a carbon copy of their vertically integrated prostitution business in Krasnodar. Perhaps Nicolay recruits the hookers in Krasnodar, arranges passage to Canada using a Canadian "entertainment" company to act as the visa sponsor, just as the Athanasious do in Cyprus. Someone in Canada or Anastasia helps the hos travel across the border into the U.S.. When the girls arrive, Anastasia farms them out to the many Russian mafia prostitution rings in the U.S. or Russian and American mob run strip clubs, which are always looking for new talent. The fashion and tailoring shop does a legitimate business but might also provide a cover for a "dirty girls list" using the shop's models just like the Krasnodar House of Fashion. Unfortunately, the only way to find out was locating a girl who had worked on the inside, but I had neither the time nor resources.

As for figuring out the truth about Babler's strange behavior and his involvement, if any, with the Vasilyevas would require subpoenaing F.B.I. records and deposing him once the RICO case moved into the discovery stage, if the court didn't throw it out first. But even in discovery, getting my hands on F.B.I. records and questioning Babler would be difficult. All I had as a reason was Babler's weird behavior during a ten-minute conversation that only I witnessed and his discrepancies with what Zahnow told me and what Anastasia said in her letter. My intuition knew Babler was hiding more, but that's not a reason the District Court will listen to. Even my

associate thought I didn't have much to go on concerning Babler or the fashion shop's involvement with the Vasilyevas' operations in America, but I knew the fog would eventually clear on some of the scenes that I could not now see.

Over the weekend, my associate and I took in a Latin festival. It surprised me that Latinos lived in the North Country, but what did I know. The demographics of America had changed dramatically during my adult life with the politicians pandering to the Latin vote by opening the southern border to anyone from Mexico, South America and elsewhere. Personally, the Federal Government should only let in the young Latina babes so as to once and for all destroy that prevalent Feminazi myth that a girl can act like a man and be beautiful at the same time. Imagine the contrast: straight hair, no make up, Feminazis with nothing to reveal clunking down the avenues looking like Soviet era matrons while decked out, coifed, painted Latinas with multiple moving parts seduce their way into the imaginations of those men that the Feminazis haven't turned into girlie-men. Which brand of female has more power? It's not the she-male Feminazis. Like most men, I don't pay attention to she-males. There's nothing they can tell me that's worth hearing, and there's definitely nothing they can show me that I want to see.

The Latin festival featured a lot of different acts and music, the language of which I couldn't understand, just like when I stayed in Ecuador some years earlier thanks to a jungle girl I met in Coca in the middle of the Orient. For the remainder of the weekend, my associate and I hung out in the country, watching the sunsets and me cursing to myself, as I do every day the parents the universe stuck me with. Life could have been enjoyable, interesting and worthwhile but for those two sociopaths.

Monday morning 8:15 AM, my ringing mobile wakes me out of a sound sleep. Normally, I'd ignore it at that hour, but it might be important.

“Hello,” I answered.

“Mr. Hollander?” The nasty sounding voice inquired.

“Yes.”

“This is Officer Sean Schmidt from the Town Police Department. You are going to be arrested for aggravated harassment if you try to contact Cynthia Zahnow again or visit her shop. You have no legitimate reason for being in touch with her.” This caused butterflies in my stomach because I just woke up, which was this cop’s intention a la Franz Kafka whom I’m sure he never read.

Schmidt continued, apparently for purposes of added intimidation, “Ms. Zahnow told me that an F.B.I. agent had also talked to you about your inappropriate contact with Ms. Zahnow.”

The butterflies didn’t last long; anger began to seethe through me as it flowed into my voice. “Listen here officer Schmidt, there is right now in the Federal District Court in New York a pending RICO case (I emphasized Federal and New York so he’d know he wasn’t dealing with some bumpkin case in some dink state court) in which Ms. Zahnow will most likely be called as a witness. One of the defendants in that case sent a letter to the Federal Judge in which she claimed to work for Ms. Zahnow. I, as the attorney and plaintiff, have a right, do I make myself clear, a right to investigate claims made to a Federal Judge by interviewing Ms. Zahnow, and I do not appreciate the local police department interfering with a Federal case!”

Schmidt’s voice changed to sounding civil but to save face he repeated, “If you contact her again you’ll be arrested. She says you’ve been coming to her business and also calling her.”

“That’s false! I visited her business once for a fifteen-minute interview for which I have a witness and never once telephoned her. She, in fact, is the one who agreed to call me today with information I had requested from her during the interview. Obviously, she is not going to

make that call, so my next contact with her will be to subpoena her as a witness, and I doubt whether you guys will dare arrest me for that.”

“We have no problem with that.” What else could the flat foot say.

“What did she say about the FBI?” I dropped the angry tone in an effort to obtain some information. I didn’t really think he’d answer, but he did.

“She said an F.B.I. agent contacted her and told her to call the local police to complain about being harassed by you.”

“Did she say who the F.B.I. agent was?”

“No.”

“Well, I’m going to stop by your headquarters later to talk to your Chief about this.”

“You’re free to do that.”

When I hung up, a quote by A. A. Milne came to mind:

“Sometimes when the fights begin, I think I’ll let the dragons win, But then again, perhaps I won’t, Because they’re dragons, so I don’t.”

Obviously Babler was the F.B.I. agent since he was the only agent I talked. Either before or after my interview with him, Zahnow or Anastasia talked with him about my snooping around. If either contacted him before I did, that might explain why he was so nervous. Babler in turn must have reported to one or both of them my interview with him—so much for the vaunted confidentiality of the F.B.I. At some point, most likely on Babler’s suggestion—so much for not giving legal advice—the three agreed to have Zahnow file a complaint with the local cops using that chestnut of Feminazi intimidation against men: a broad faking fear to the police while she lies about male harassment.

Babler's left field question about where I lived now made sense. Babler knew that the cops couldn't charge me with harassment for talking to Zahnow about the RICO case, and as a lawyer himself, he knew I knew that. Babler was simply telling me to get out of town, go back to New York or he would make even more trouble for me. To make sure I got the message that he was behind the threat, he told Zahnow to tell the cops that the F.B.I. was involved. If I had lived in town, the intimidation, to Babler's bullying point of view, would not work because I would have no choice but to fight back since fleeing would not be an option. These federal pigs tick me off as much as organized crime goons. Both are always trying to push people around, "Get out of town by sundown," what a bunch of creeps. Well, I got out of town, since my flight left that afternoon, but the trouble I made for Babler was just starting. Nobody, not even a Federal agency is going to pull my tail and not get chewed a little bit.

My associated and I had a couple of stops to make before the airport.

She said, "Maybe you've stumbled into a hornets' nest. What other explanation is there? The F.B.I. might be running an investigation and doesn't want you interfering. Then again this guy Babler could be on the take. Maybe they pay him in girls for his protection. It has to be one or the other but the real question is which?"

At the Town police headquarters, I vehemently complained to the Acting Chief, also sporting a deep tan, that I didn't appreciate the intimidation implied in the threat to arrest me. I filled him in on the RICO case, why I was in town and made clear that F.B.I. Special Agent Babler had used his police department as a tool. He politely listened as a matter of customer relations, since there was nothing he could do about Babler. But when I returned to continue my investigation, assuming the case made it to discovery, the local cops would think twice about believing some Feminazi. He did, however, arrange for me to talk with Officer Schmidt in

person, which always helps. Schmidt had no further information but agreed to provide a statement if needed about the content of his conversation with Zahnow. The Acting Chief also provided me with a copy of Zahnow's complaint against me.

A little before 1 PM, I stormed, almost, into the F.B.I. office. "I want to know why the F.B.I. is interfering in a RICO case in the United States District Court of New York." I angrily told the receptionist and demanded to see the supervisor. When I saw the look of shock on her face, I said to myself go easy this is not New York City. She said the boss was out of town for the week, which I didn't believe.

"Okay, let me see his assistant than."

She rang a number, talked with someone and said, "He's busy, but call back in an hour, don't come back to the office, just call."

Persona non grata, huh! I knew then I'd never reach any of the bosses. Babler must have told his bosses I was from New York City and would probably return there and step back from investigating my case's connections in their jurisdiction. So by ducking me, the local F.B.I. figured the incident would fade into oblivion. Evildoers always count on the victim letting their evil go. From the airport, I called back and as expected the acting supervisor was still busy, but his secretary assured me he would telephone me in New York City the next day. So how did she know I would be in New York the following day?

On the plane to Cincinnati for my connection to New York, I picked up the second translation of the Commie Ho's diary that I had begun on my way out.

The Cincinnati airport was busier going back. Walking toward the gate, I spotted, how could I not, one of those young voluptuous ladies that makes a man forget all caution. This blonde bombshell came out of the ladies room in her color for the day pink: pink jeans, pink top

and pink Yankee cap. First time I ever saw a pink Yankee cap before. She had trouble, or pretended trouble, with pulling her carry on bag. It tended to roll over on one side as she moved along swinging her hips walking to the gate. The obvious line immediately came to mind, “Need some help?” and then segue into a comment about her pink Yankee cap to which she’ll laugh. But I stopped myself, she’s a blonde and I have the diary of another blonde to finish. So, I found a relatively empty group of seats and sat to my reading.

The rows of seats at the gate faced each other, probably some Feminazi psychologists’ idea to promote the feeling of comradeship. Some motion caught my eye and I looked up from my reading to see the blonde bombshell with her pink Yankees cap parking her nicely shaped rear in one of the seats in front of me. She starts trying to make calls on her cell phone. What girl doesn’t when she has five seconds to spare? But this girl couldn’t get through to any one. Before I can stop myself, I say, “Having troubles with your cell phone?”

“Yes, it must be the airport. It keeps fading in and out,” she replies a little hesitantly.

“Maybe it’s Cincinnati. You can try using mine if you like. It might work.” I said looking her over: nice large breasts tightly packaged but a bit of a tummy roll, probably went on an eating binge recently because compared to the rest of the body it didn’t belong there.

“No thanks, it’s not important.”

“You going to New York?” she asked.

“Sure thing,” I answered. She received a call, so I went back to my reading, but her call last all of 30 seconds.

“I’m also going to New York,” she resumed.

“What for?”

“I go to school there, N.Y.U.”

“Good school, are you heading back from your summer vacation?”

“I’m coming from my home near New Orleans. You know Britney Spears is from there.”

Who? I pondered silently searching for some recognition of the name in my brain as my face must have stared at this girl in bewilderment. Then I remembered Spears was a singer, but I thought she was from England. The bombshell continued with something else, but I couldn’t hear amid the airport noise and my middle-aged eardrums, so I smiled and thought of something to say. I almost remarked ‘looks like you gained some weight at home’ but decided against it and instead asked, “What’s your name?”

She thought some, guess it wasn’t on the tip of her tongue, and said, “Kelsey”

“Pretty name,” I said as she smiled. “Mine’s Roy. How do you find New York?”

“Lonely!” She now looked sad with this obvious opening but I let it go.

“How old are you?”

“I’m twenty-two.” And very delicious I wanted to add, but her demeanor now turned wispily serious as though her youth was draining away.

“You must have lots of beaus chasing you in New York. There’s no reason to be lonely, go have yourself some fun.”

“I know, but I also have my career to think of,” she said with in a tone of burden.

“I thought you were in school?” I responded always the lawyer looking for inconsistencies.

“I was, but now I’m a dancer.” So maybe I heard wrong the first time.

“That’s a tough profession, especially in New York but I guess that’s the place to pursue it.”

“It would still be nice to find somebody.”



Always the optimist without sensitivity, I said, “You’ve got ‘til your late twenties to get married. Enjoy yourself for now, but later on don’t let your career interfere with raising a family. I’ve seen too many girls sacrifice their family for a career and they are now miserable.”

“What do you do?” She asked.

“I’m a lawyer.”

“There’s a lawyer who lives down the block from my family in New Orleans. He’s got a big house, but he’s never around, always working.”

“Yeah, it tends to consume your life.” I gave her my card and said, “If you need a lawyer, give me a call?” Her reaction told me I should have said, “If you feel lonely give me a call and we’ll go have a drink.” All right, so I blew it.

Our plane started boarding.

She said, “I always wait to get on after everyone else boards.” So I waited with her wondering how she ever found room for her carry-on if she waits until everyone is on board. Then I realized, a girl who looks like her will have guys lining up to find room for her baggage or volunteer to put it under the seat in front of them no matter how badly it cramps their legs.

As we walked down the gateway, I thought of trying to get the person next to one of us to switch seats to continue our talk but nixed that. I wanted to finish the Commie Ho’s diary, which would make an interesting topic of conversation with Kelsey, but would drive her away. Mark always told me to shut up about my Russian adventures when hustling a dame, and he was right. Once I breach that subject, the girls vanish into the night air.

“Where do you live in New York?”

“Manhattan.” Nice vague answer that.

“What clubs do you hang out at?”

“I like Cancun,” and she mentioned some other place of which I never heard.

“Yeah, I know Cancun, on Eight Avenue in the high forties nice little bar. I like going to the Latin clubs like the Copa, Noche and Gonzales y Gonzales. Only I still can’t dance the salsa. Keep taking lessons, but I’m not there yet. But the music is great, and I figure the more I go, the sooner osmosis will take over. You should give them a try. You’re a dancer and it should be easy for you.”

“I don’t know about that.” She had lost interest, so when I got to my seat I wished her well and never saw her again. Once I went by Cancun just on an odd shot, but when I told Mark the story he said we’d have to hit the place around 2 AM when girls like Kelsey hit bars like Cancun.

#### It’s Just a Matter of Time

By the time I arrived back in New York, I was even more fed up with this Federal Bureau of Intimidation than when I had left. Who did they think they worked for anyway: mobsters and terrorists? They were no better than the goons I was after in the RICO suit. These federal pigs spend much of their time trying to scare taxpaying citizens into doing what they want. They exploit the unwritten threat that if the average guy does not cooperate with and supplicate himself to their authority, then the entire weight of the Federal Government will land on his head. They don’t dare act that way with the rich and politically connected or even the criminals they’re supposed to put in jail. My seventh grade civics teacher really got it wrong when teaching us about the F.B.I., just as wrong as those TV fantasies about Eliot Ness. In reality, today’s federal cops didn’t take their jobs with some noble thought of bringing evildoers to justice, but for the authority to push ordinary people around and the time to work on their tans at the beach. Did federal employees in the fifties have character and honor, or as a kid, was I sold a

bill of goods that I'm still trying to shake out of my head. One thing is certain, however, they don't scare me anymore.

Blackie came up with an idea for dealing with these federal fops. As a onetime bureaucrat himself, he knew what they didn't like—work, which they only did to cover their butts. By starting a letter writing campaign of complaints, the F.B.I. would feel compelled to respond in some fashion to protect what fearsome symmetry it still commanded after its 911 screw ups. In responding, these modern-day Max Sennett coppers might goof in their haste to get it done as quickly as possible so they could get to the beach. Any mistake might provide some useful information. As Blackie said, “The more you are a pest, the better it is for you, especially since you sure have been getting screwed over by the good old U.S.A.” I couldn't argue with that, and being a pest should come natural to me.

The first letter went to the New York F.B.I.'s Mike Byrnes in the Russian Organized Crime Unit. The letter recounted our telephone conversations from two weeks previously when as soon as Byrnes got someone out of his office so he could speak freely, he asked for more information on some of the allegations in my RICO Complaint. My cover reason for sending the letter was to remind Byrnes that he had not yet notified me of the topics in the Complaint in which he was interested.

The next letter went to the F.B.I. Director in Washington, D.C. with the opening, “I want to know why the local office of the F.B.I. is interfering with my investigation of the facts in a civil RICO case presently in the U.S. District Court for the Southern District of New York?” I had no respect for or fear of these knaves and tried to show it. The Director, probably an honest and competent man, would never see the letter, but some cowardly bureaucrat in his office would. By emphasizing that the defendants included Chechen Islamic mafiosi and Russian

gangsters, even a Feminazi bureaucrat would have to take some action just to protect her rear and the F.B.I.'s. To put a little heat on Babler, I pointed out that he had talked with me alone; took company time to read my 91 page Complaint; admitted the routine inquiry of Anastasia's father turned into an investigation—F.B.I. policy is to avoid confirming or denying any investigations; and provided legal advice to Zahnow and Anastasia that Zahnow file a harassment complaint against me with the local police. Into the mix, I threw that the F.B.I. office's acting supervisor never called me back as promised—for what that was worth.

The letter to the Director listed the incident as one in a series of “bizarre” responses by the F.B.I. concerning the events in my RICO case and set forth the others as John Madison-Pierre's threatening telephone calls. In closing, my letter stated, “I want to know why the FBI is protecting two Russian alien defendants who ran and apparently still run an international prostitution ring centered in Krasnodar, Russia. I am taking this route of contacting you before I decide whether it is necessary to take up the District Court's time with a motion for a preliminary injunction against the F.B.I.” Somewhat gleefully I thought, let's see how those guys like having the threat of Government power turned on them. Bureaucrats, as with lawyers and prostitutes, always become irate when someone does to them what they do to others.

Next came a letter to Vadim Thomas. He was the New York F.B.I. Special Agent whose family came from the Caucasus in Southern Russia, the same general area as the Commie Ho. He and Mario Pisano had met with me in February 2002 at F.B.I. headquarters in New York City and later determined the type of narcotics the Commie Ho brought into the country and identified the guy using the pseudonyms John Madison and John Pierre in the threatening calls. My letter recounted, “unfortunately the F.B.I. did not have a two speed tape player, so the unknown man making the threats sounded more like Mickey Mouse than an associate of Flash Dancers, which

you [Thomas] suggested he probably was.” The purpose was to not only mock the New York F.B.I. to its bureaucratic face, but to get on the record that Thomas suggested the goon worked at Flash Dancers. The letter requested from Thomas the test results on the substance and the name and business address of the man they tracked down. He was not going to give me either, but his denial could be added to the record.

In early September 2003, F.B.I. Special Agent Byrnes left me a voicemail message in response to my letter. He asked that I call him, so he could tell me the areas of the RICO Complaint about which he wanted more information. These coppers, just like hoods, never put anything in writing. Is it sloth or are they trying to hide something? Well, I didn’t trust any government employee to tell the truth, so I either taped them or created a written record. My letter in response offered to provide information he wanted in return for information that I needed: the laboratory report on the substance I gave the F.B.I. and the identity of the threatening caller John Madison-Pierre. Since the F.B.I. decided not to investigate any of the threats my letter argued, “I do not understand why [the F.B.I.] will not release the information concerning the identity of the man who made the three threatening calls. Given special agent Mario Pisano’s statement that the F.B.I. would not even interview the man because of what he might do to me, and Pisano’s added precautions not to open my door to anyone I don’t know and to be careful when out in the public, I understand that the FBI does not want to bother with the safety of a tax-paying US citizen—fine. But that is no reason to thwart my efforts to protect myself. I am still fearful for my life, which causes me to periodically change my living pattern and, in accordance with Pisano’s advice, take extra precautions when outside of my apartment.” That last sentence was baloney, but I was trying to put Byrnes on the bureaucratic spot that if something did happen to me, the press might come looking for him and others in the F.B.I. to

answer why they did nothing to protect a U.S. citizen. With this letter, I started putting down Jeff as receiving a copy. I figured that having two lawyers involved would reduce the chances of the F.B.I. doing something stupid again and make them realize I was not just a lone flake they could ignore.

By mid-September, Byrnes responded to the letter with another voicemail asking me to call him, but I was busy at the time on other matters, so I let it ride. A week later he leaves another message telling me it was okay that I did not promptly return his earlier telephone call because I might have been on vacation. That ticked me off. Who did these Club Fed indolent boors think they were? Citizens don't need an excuse or permission not to return calls from the F.B.I.—we pay their salaries. This arrogant commissar would have to wait.

Near the end of September, Byrnes finally reached me, by telephone, to say the F.B.I. could not release any information about the laboratory results or the man making the threats. He used the Privacy Act as the reason for not giving me the information. What kind of privacy rights the substance that I gave to the F.B.I. to test had—left me at a loss. Nor could I understand how the claim of privacy could protect the identity of a hoodlum that intentionally called my telephone number to threaten me on behalf of an illegal alien prostitute. By the F.B.I.'s reasoning, if an al Qaeda operative in America telephones the President and threatens him, the President can't find out who made the call because privacy rights protect the caller. The F.B.I.'s rationale was not only stupid, but also a lie, and, unfortunately, a typical example of how law enforcement agencies now work in America. When the average citizen requests help, he can expect law enforcement agencies to misapply Congressional Acts and U.S. Supreme Court decisions meant to protect that citizen by twisting those laws and decisions to protect criminals or the rich or the powerful or illegal aliens or broads or the agencies themselves.

After refusing to help me, Byrnes, in true bureaucratic fashion, requested that I help the F.B.I. by providing it with information to continue its investigation. That last word “investigation” was important because now I could tell the District Court the F.B.I. was investigating some of my RICO Complaint’s allegations, which immediately made them more believable to a judge unschooled in the workings of the Russian mafia. It also told me there was more going on in the F.B.I. than I knew. Byrnes wanted to know about the bribing of INS employees to obtain prostitutes visas. Byrnes got some of the information as a return favor for confirming an ongoing investigation by the F.B.I. Never heard from Byrnes again and didn’t expect to.

Three weeks after sending the letter to Special Agent Vadim Thomas, I mailed him a reminder setting a deadline of October 10, 2003 for a reply or I would contact a supervisor or the inspector general. Private citizens can play the bureaucracy threat game too. A couple of reminders also went to the F.B.I. Director that I had not received any response to my complaint about Special Agent Babler. Inundate the bureaucrats with paper and they’ll screw up somewhere. And they did, in one of only two written replies I received from the F.B.I. The Bureau obviously has a good reason after all for not putting anything down on paper.

The useful F.B.I. letter came in response to my complaint to the Director about Special Agent Babler. The Acting Chief of the F.B.I. Investigative Law Unit wrote that the unit conducted an inquiry into the events by interviewing “cognizant personnel in the F.B.I. office.” Good, that meant Babler, and it should teach him a lesson to stay off my back when I return for more investigating if my case reaches discovery. The Investigative Unit concluded it was satisfied that Babler “acted appropriately in his contacts with the parties in [my] complaint and did not, in any manner, interfere with [my] investigation.” The part of claiming no interference

with my case was expected but not the confirmation of Babler having contact with “the parties in [my] complaint” while I was out there, which meant Anastasia. I had assumed Babler would just deny it, but he didn’t.

The letter’s next paragraph was even better: “Specifically, the agent made it clear to all parties who contacted him that the F.B.I. had no interest in the matters alleged in [my] civil Complaint and that he could not advise them as to how to respond or proceed.” The “all parties” phrase indicated to me that Babler talked with both Anastasia and Zahnow while the “no interest” part created the false image that the F.B.I. was not involved. If “no interest” then why did Babler read the RICO Complaint and keep it on his desk in connection with the “investigation” he referred to when refusing to give me the name of Anastasia’s father.

The really good part, however, was: “The only exception was the agent’s advice to one party to contact the police because that person had alleged that you were harassing her.” Great, the F.B.I. confirmed that Babler told Zahnow or Anastasia, probably both in a conference call, that Zahnow should file a harassment complaint against me. The letter shows Babler knew an attorney was doing what attorneys do when investigating a civil case but went ahead anyway and advised a defendant or a potential witness, or both, in that case to frighten off the investigating attorney by falsely claiming aggravated harassment. Babler, Anastasia and Zahnow’s conduct looks an awful lot like a conspiracy to cover-up something. That appearance of a conspiracy to interfere in a Federal proceeding opens up a legitimate avenue for discovery as to why Babler gave such advice; what are his connections with Anastasia, Zahnow and the fashion store; what’s his interest in the RICO case; and why the investigation into Anastasia’s father? The F.B.I., however, may refuse to release any information about the investigation into the father for the



reason that it's ongoing. In which event, I'll try to go through the G.R.U. guys in Russia to find out what the F.B.I. is doing with respect to the Vasilyevas.

The F.B.I. letter in closing added that Babler's refusal to give me the first name of Anastasia's father was required by the Privacy Act. So why didn't he say so, rather than using the ongoing investigation reason? No, I wasn't buying; the FBI was just trying to cover-up Babler's slip of referring to its investigation that involved the Vasilyevas. So in the end, thanks to the F.B.I., and assuming my RICO case makes it to discovery, I'll have a decent chance to subpoena some F.B.I. records and question Babler under oath. This letter from the F.B.I. is an excellent example of why its employees usually don't respond in writing—they're not sharp enough.

Having obtained some useful information from the F.B.I. Investigative Unit, I tried again. This time requesting that Babler be reprimanded, which would never happen, but that was just my cover for what I really wanted to know: whether Anastasia or Zahnnow or both were told by Babler to contact the police and was it normal F.B.I. procedure to investigate visitors from Russia? This time the Investigative Unit wised up by telling me to make a request under the Freedom of Information Act for the answers to any questions. Knowing that with law enforcement agencies, such was a waste of time, I didn't bother. The relationship between totalitarian governments and the people they rule is always an adversarial one, apparently the same is true today in America.

In order to lay the basis for using the District Court's power to probe the F.B.I.'s activities, I made a motion to supplement my Complaint by adding Zahnnow as a defendant and accusing her and Anastasia of conspiring and tampering with a witness, victim and informant in violation of 18 U.S.C. 1512. The law forbids harassing a witness, victim or informant, in this

case me the plaintiff, in order to hinder him from providing information to a judge concerning the commission of a Federal offense. The whole reason behind getting the cops to threaten me with arrest was to keep me from digging up more information on the Vasilyevas' committing federal crimes. In my description for the Court about what happened, F.B.I. Special Agent Babler played a prominent role, but I didn't include him as a defendant because my intuition told me otherwise. Federal judges tend to view citizens who sue Federal Government bureaucrats as enemies and throw such cases out of court. The judges, bureaucrats themselves, also fear setting a precedence that might include them in such lawsuits. Besides, keeping Babler out might avoid my running into the "attorney work product rule." If Babler were a defendant, the F.B.I. could argue that the interview notes from its inquiry fell within the "attorney work product rule"; therefore, I couldn't get near them.

The only outstanding items from the "Make Myself a Pest" campaign against the F.B.I. were replies from my letters to Special Agent Vadim Thomas. In an effort to turn up the pressure on Thomas, I telephoned the New York City F.B.I. Operations Division and complained about Thomas and Mario Pisano's conduct in handling the threats by John Madison-Pierre and not telling me the test results for the substance I gave them. The F.B.I.'s Office of Professional Responsibility, an oxymoron, eventually called me back. When I answered the telephone a broad said, "This is agent Lu Leiber from the F.B.I.'s Office of Professional Responsibility."

"Oh, what's going on?" I asked in a surprised and wimpy fashion as a result of the lack of sleep. The moment the words left my mouth, I knew they were a mistake because the Feminazi on the other end would interpret them as meaning I was frightened by her position of authority. Whenever a broad thinks she has a man cowed, she'll go for the throat immediately. Leiber did

just that. Immediately, I could hear in the affected nastiness of her voice the instantaneous incarnation of the authoritative, scolding female. I hit my record button to get this call on tape.

“We received your complaint against Special Agents Pisano and Thomas and found no grounds for their doing anything improper. The FBI is under no obligation to give you the results of the substance tested or the identity of the man making the threats. As far as we are concerned the matter is closed. Besides, you are calling in the year 2004 and these events took place in 2002.” Her voice dripped with princessly pomposity in her disdain for having to converse with an insignificant male peon.

“No,” I angrily retorted, “You’re calling in the year 2004. I sent my letters requesting this information in 2003.”

“They are not obligated, Mr. Hollander to respond.”

“So maybe you will give me the site to the F.B.I. rules and regulations where it says they are not obligated?”

Sounding as the scornful school matron in order to hide ignorance, she replied, “Mr. Hollander, any other issue?”

“Actually, it’s Den Hollander that’s the whole last name.” A minor put down, but why not, she was a Feminazi who stole that job from a man, so any attack was justified.

“Again, three answers, to provide you with the analysis results, we are not obligated to do, so that’s our first answer.” But it was confirmation on tape that the F.B.I. has laboratory results; therefore, the Court couldn’t deny a subpoena request based on finding the request was nothing more than a fishing expedition.

She continued, “Number two the threat, and there was an investigation that was conducted by the agents.”

“Right and they found out who made the threat?” Just pumping her for information.

“Yes they did.” Good, another confirmation on tape that will help me obtain a subpoena of F.B.I. records to finally track down this goon, assuming my case makes it to discovery.

“We are not obligated to provide you with that information because the threat was not deemed to be life threatening or serious bodily harm.” How would she know? Imagine this bimbo’s reaction if the threats were made to her—call out the Marines, the Green Berets and Navy Seals! If there was no danger why did Pisano tell me to watch out in public?

“Okay, and that’s it?” I asked. “I thought there was a third in here somewhere.”

“No.” She said there were three just seconds ago. Maybe she dumbed herself down in kindergarten math to be more attractive to boys.

“So how do I appeal this?”

“It’s really not an issue of appeal. If you feel that you don’t want to accept this, well, the third issue...” Ah, there it is, she could count, but her memory was that of the typical vacuum-head bimbo. “I will tell you this. We are under no obligation to provide you with the results of an ongoing criminal investigation.” Thank you again, this time for confirming the F.B.I. was conducting an investigation, this one in New York City. Was its investigation connected to something larger?

“What ongoing and criminal investigation is there?” I reached for her snatch but she blocked me.

“Well if that’s what you were looking for, well that’s number three. We do appreciate people calling us and giving us information.” Now she sounded like an airplane stewardess from the 1970s.

I replied, “Well, there’s one American citizen who will never call you guys with information again; that’s for sure. But I still don’t understand why you even brought up the fact of an ongoing criminal investigation. The guys tested the substance, they found out who the guy was that made the threats and they did nothing. Pisano told me they weren’t going to do anything.”

“I’m not in a position to comment on that, I cannot comment on that. If you feel that you’re not satisfied with this, you can certainly write to our legal department here in New York.”

“Okay, I really didn’t expect you guys to do anything about my complaint being the Federal Government.”

“Well, you know, Mr. Hollander...” I guess she forgot my whole last name, probably the vacuum tube in her head blinking out. “I’m actually calling as a courtesy, as a courtesy, I am calling you to explain...”

Now I got angry and cut her off, “Courtesy! Courtesy! Wait a minute, wait a minute! You people work for me and all the other citizens of this country.”

She mounted her authoritarian horse again. These broads always want to be on top. “I don’t work for you Mr. Hollander, I work for President Bush!”

So I knocked her off, “You work for the citizens of this country! And you know for whom President Bush works? He works for the citizens, or should.”

“This conversation will go no further.” She said in resignation.

I was on a roll. “The courtesy here is that I’m listening to you.”

“Mr. Hollander, I appreciate the information.” Ah, sarcasm.

“The courtesy is that I am listening to a nasty government agent telling me that they’re not going to help a citizen of the United States.”

“I’m not being nasty with you. I’m trying to explain to you.” We were now sounding like a bickering couple. I wonder what she looks like—no I’m not going there, she’s a Feminazi.

“Yes you are... I understand it when you start saying in that tone of voice this is a courtesy call...”

“No I am not, but Mr. Hollander, please, I don’t work for you, and I’m sorry if you feel otherwise.”

“No, but you work for the citizens of the United States of which I am one.” Now I was enjoying antagonizing her.

“No, I don’t work for you okay, is there anything further you would like to say, okay?”

“You don’t work for the citizens of the United States?” I asked, badgering her some more.

“Is there anything further that you would like to say?” She ignored it.

“Of which I am one?” I continued.

“Is there anything further that I can help you with?”

“No, obviously not.”

“Thank you for your help,” she ended as we said out goodbyes.

The call provided me with confirmations on tape that the F.B.I. knew who threatened me, knew the substance the Commie Ho smuggled into the country and had an on going investigation in New York—not bad. It also, hopefully, ruined Miss Leiber’s day. Shortly after hanging up, it struck me that John Madison-Pierre, who threatened me three times, also referred to his calls as “courtesy calls.” At the time of the threats, that term sounded strange to me because I had never heard it before concerning telephone calls, so I filed it away with all the other puzzle pieces waiting to fit. But now, this F.B.I. agent used it, a number of times. Maybe it’s lingo unique to

the F.B.I. or federal coppers in general. Perhaps the goon who made the three threats was an F.B.I. agent, and dismissed that idea as too much television. But, now I wasn't so sure. It would explain the F.B.I.'s refusal to tell me his name and Pisano trying to scare me off, but where's the motive? All of those threats came over a year before I filed the RICO case, and two of them before I ever talked to the F.B.I. But they did occur after a New York City INS agent told an Assistant U.S. Attorney in 2001 that the INS was still checking the organized crime connections of the Commie Ho.

When I heard that back then, I couldn't figure out why the INS agent had mentioned mafia connections. My original complaint in March 2001 to the New York City INS didn't mention any gangsters because I didn't think any were involved at the time, but now I knew different. Did the Commie Ho and her Russian and Chechen mob associates have sufficient influence in any federal law enforcement to have an agent threaten me? The Russian and Chechen mobs had a lot of money and plenty of influential contacts. Or was INS, F.B.I., Customs or D.E.A. behind the threats so that I wouldn't interfere with one of their investigations already under way in 2001? Then again, maybe none of the above was true? Right now all I saw was another shape in the fog that would clear some day, assuming I was around to notice.

#### Once Upon a Time

As another summer of discontent ended in late September 2003, I made another try to interest the media in my RICO case. This time contacting another guy whom I had first met in the 1970s while working at WNEW TV News, Bob Iger. Back then, Bob was starting his way up the corporate ladder at ABC Wide World of Sports and eloped with a very straight-laced, preppy lady with whom I worked, Susan. Her spur of the moment marriage surprised everyone in the newsroom, so I nicknamed her Suzy Cream Cheese after a song by Frank Zappa. Bob and

Susan were smart, decent people and we became, if not friends, very good acquaintances. Cream Cheese once lent me one of Bob's books that they thought might enlighten my dead-end nature.

*A Fan's Notes* by Frederick Exley juxtaposes the author's real and partly imagined life with that of a fellow student of Exley's from the University of Southern California: Frank Gifford, the New York Giants' great football running back and receiver. Gifford was one of my heroes. As a kid, I watched him play on TV every other weekend. There were Giants in those days and none with more guts than he. When Gifford joined the team in the early 1950s, he ran faster than anyone else in the league and played both offense and defense when other players, as now, stayed with one or the other. With time his speed began to fade, so he relied on his smarts. In 1960, he got blindsided during a passing play and suffered a severe head injury that forced him into retirement. But in 1962, he came back as a flanker to make one unbelievable catch after another as the Giants made it to the NFL championship game two years running. He retired for the last time in 1964 and went into broadcasting TV Sports.

In 1980, I actually met him on a story I was producing for my employer at the time WABC TV Eyewitness News where Gifford had previously worked. After a short interview for the camera, I asked him for his autograph, babbling about those great catches he made of the bombs Y.A. Tittle threw. Apparently, it had been sometime since a fan complimented him on his football achievements since his wife remarked, "I don't believe this!" But Gifford seemed pleased that someone remembered. I still have his autograph, the only autograph of any successful person I ever wanted.

*A Fan's Notes* seemed written for me, since Exley couldn't do anything right either, bouncing from one useless experience to another like a pinball. In one episode Exley meets a tall beautiful blonde, the girl he always dreamed of but never got because he didn't have the glory or



fortune of a Frank Gifford. But on this occasion, for some unknown reason, the tall blonde beauty goes for Exley. Unfortunately or maybe fortunately, his anxiety prevents him from consummating the relationship, so she vanishes to find someone else. If only that had happened to me with the Commie Ho, but no, I was even unluckier than Exley.

After reading the book, I returned it to Bob and Cream Cheese and thanked them for their attempt to help, but my life didn't change. It's unlikely that people with a bad upbringing can really change their lives. Lots of folk disagree, and many are decent people like Bob and Cream Cheese who try to help with a little advice. The three of us kept in touch into the 1990s and then, as with many American couples, Bob and Cream Cheese divorced. Cream Cheese started buying into the Feminazi propaganda that husbands should sacrifice their careers to make the wife's role easier by shouldering much of the family burden evolutionarily slated for women. Cream Cheese went to work for a video production company and Bob became Chief Executive Officer for Walt Disney, which owned the American Broadcasting Company for which I had once worked. So, I sent Bob a synopsis of the RICO case billing it as "Frederick Exley in Russia" and suggested that Disney's subsidiary ABC News might be interested. Never heard back.

In another effort to interest the media, I contacted a guy who had written articles on the Russian mafia while working for the American Bar Association's Organized Crime and Corruption Project on Russia. He now worked in the Chief of Staff Office for the Department of Homeland Security, but no longer wrote articles about the Russian mob or had any up to date information that might help my case. Too bad, his insight into the Russian mafia was the most accurate I ever came across:

"The Russian mafia differs from the Italian mafia as the latter has been portrayed in *The Godfather* and other movies. In some respects the Russian mafia is even more frightening because it represents a virtual, if not actual, partnership between Government officials and criminals. Many believe that this corrupt influence reaches to the highest levels of the Russian

Government, a belief for which there is ample precedent. Throughout the Soviet era, the Communist Party was largely seen as the most powerful of all criminal organizations in the world. The Party controlled not just one aspect of an illicit economy but the entirety of a nation and its resources.

“During the Soviet era, the mafia and government officials formed partnerships that controlled the lucrative ‘black’ and ‘grey’ markets of the Soviet Union. Nonetheless, communist authorities themselves took second place to no one in criminal behavior. Russians first began to use the word ‘mafia’ in the 1970s to describe the large networks of corruption lurking inside regional and central government ministries. Regional party chiefs became their own regional chieftains, feudal overlords of vast criminal networks. The Government and the mafia became one.

“The Russian mafia is distinctively menacing in light of its close connections with key sections of the government bureaucracy. While it is true that as the Communist Party faded from power, more conventional organized criminal structures emerged, these connections persist.

“The Russian mafia also represents an attitude, not merely an organization. This attitude, developed during the years of Communist Party rule, is rooted in the belief, held by many government officials to this day, that if something is not nailed down or something is placed within their power, they can treat it as their own property. These former Communist apparatchiks are not averse to taking, selling, or auctioning off to the highest bidder any thing, or authority, entrusted to them. Corrupt former Communist, and now Russian, officials have sold secret military hardware to the U.S., indicating that if the price is right, even treason is not an impediment to a lucrative deal.” Scott P. Boylan, Organized Crime and Corruption in Russia, Vol. 19, Fordham Int’l L.J., 1999, 2013 (1996).

Scott did, however, refer me to an attorney and visiting scholar at Harvard University who also wrote articles on the Russian mafia and had actually prosecuted some Russian gangsters. The Harvard scholar didn’t have any up coming articles planned in which he might use my RICO case, but he did know how the Russian mob operated and tentatively agreed to testify as an expert in order to educate a jury on the workings of Russian organized crime, if my case made it to trial. He also suggested I check out the F.B.I. Law Enforcement Bulletin for information on the Russian mafia that might help my case.

The Bulletin contained lots of information that provided background support for my allegations, which surprised me given the F.B.I.’s general uselessness. The Bulletin described the Russian mafia’s international enterprises as made up of numerous ethnic groups, including

Chechens, and comprised of amorphous gangs that act autonomously or have loose ties to regional, national or international criminal networks. The Russian mob is not a monolithic institution like La Cosa Nostra with traditional membership rules and codes of honor and respect. The skills and absence of moral principles of Russian criminals pose an exceptional threat to society, both in the U.S. and abroad. The F.B.I. estimated that about 80 major Russian organized criminal groups engage in prostitution, extortion, drug trafficking and fraud schemes and these groups use many financial institutions and businesses throughout the world for money laundering.

The first wave of Russian Mafiosi came to America in the 1970s as a result of détente, but it was the second wave following the fall of the Soviet Union in the 1990s that brought most of the professional Russian criminals to the U.S. According to former FBI director Louis Freeh, “When freedom was established in Russia, it helped spread the existing criminal network to expand abroad.” The Russians formed gangs, some of which affiliated with other domestic and foreign-based organized groups. These gangs are large, well-connected and well-financed and may represent the greatest threat for law enforcement in the U.S. The Russian mob in America is allied with La Cosa Nostra in crimes of prostitution, extortion and fraud, including in the stock market (as though Wall Street Bankers need any help in that area). Its Miami operations work with Columbian drug lords to ship cocaine to Russia in return for Russian military aircraft and weapons while a partnership with Turkish criminals smuggles drugs from the Near East to America. Russia’s M.V.D. estimates that over 100 Russian mafia gangs are active in at least 50 countries fed by the lifeblood for the Russian mob: money laundering.

A report by William H. Webster, former F.B.I. chief warned, “The Russian Federation itself is likely to become a full-blown criminal-syndicalist state. In many respects, such a state

already exists in Russia with corrupt officials at all levels throughout the government, successful full-time criminals, and businessmen for whom Russian and Western laws are simply obstacles to overcome. Even at the lowest level of the Russian mob, the strong shared interest in self-enrichment, survival and power prevent normal interaction with those outside it. How then can the U.S. hope to build enduring relationships in matters of international cooperation, economics and security with representatives of such a criminal state?”

According to the Webster report, Russian gangs or krishas usually include a financial institution for laundering and investing the profits, government officials for protection from other officials belonging to different gangs and for escaping enforcement of government laws against a gang’s operations, and an armed force—a private militia. “Membership in a krisha carries a price: a share of profits or payoff in services by a company or individual to the krisha. In return, individuals and businesses receive services that ensure personal security, defense from attack and shakedown by another krisha, handling of payoffs and deals, intimidation of real or potential enemies and competitors and other help. A krisha is not only a criminal entity that intimidates, beats or murders, but can also be governmental, able to deploy force for criminal ends. A krisha can manipulate the law and bureaucracy in an individual or business’ favor—or against it.”

Perhaps what I was up against was a U.S.-Russian krisha. Anyway, if the FBI knows all this, why is it not only refusing to help but actually hindering my efforts?

My review of the F.B.I. Bulletin led me to the book *Red Mafiya: How the Russian Mob Has Invaded America* by investigative reporter Robert I. Friedman. According to his book, the Russian mob runs gaudy strip clubs in America where girls dance without clothes and are generally available for prostitution—sounded familiar. The mob traffics in heroin and has even corrupted some NHL hockey clubs. The Russian mafia virtually controls Russia and has spread

to every corner of the U.S., infiltrating banks and brokerage firms. American law enforcement agencies were just waking up to the threat posed by Russian organized crime but may not be able to control it. Many, Russians don't come here to enjoy the American dream but to steal it. Friedman concluded, the Russian criminal empire stretches around the world and poses an enormous threat to global stability and safety.

Friedman appeared to be my best chance of interesting a reporter in my story, but, unfortunately, he was dead. Not at the hands of the Russian mafia, but his belief in Feminazi propaganda. While working on a story of alleged female oppression in India he contracted a disease that killed him.

### Bend Me, Shape Me

The American defendants that responded to my Complaint didn't want the case to go any further than it already had, so they joined together in filing a joint motion to dismiss that included a 66 page memorandum of falsehoods, half-truths and omissions along with 16 exhibits, mostly irrelevant. In Federal court, a motion to dismiss asks a judge to throw out the plaintiff's complaint. The motion comes at the very beginning of the proceeding before the discovery of evidence, witness testimony or hearings on what actually happened that gave rise to a complaint. The purpose of motions to dismiss are to eliminate those cases in which assuming everything the plaintiff says in the complaint is true, there aren't any laws that can do anything to help him recover damages for the harm he may have suffered.

In an effort to allow society to function, conduct that some may find offensive is just not covered under the law. For instance, a guy uses the word "girl" instead of "woman," there's nothing a broad can legally do because the law does not cater to overly sensitive people. When courts assume what the plaintiff says is true, that doesn't mean they accept statements that hold

no credibility in reality, such as “politicians tell the truth.” In order to determine whether statements in a complaint are so absurd that they shouldn’t be considered true, the courts can look to knowledge commonly held by people in the community, including newspaper articles, even the New York Times unfortunately, or to certain documents used by the plaintiff in drafting his complaint. (Since my 2003 RICO case, the Supreme Court has heightened the requirements for a complaint by requiring that what it alleges falls somewhere between possible and probable.)

From the defendants’ opening salvo and through all their papers filed over a period of nearly a year, the attorneys for the American defendants and eventually a defendant in Cyprus, the Bank of Cyprus, used the prevalent lawyer tactics that have made the court system in America a joke for determining the truth.

The opposing lawyers, led by Bradley Dubin, rolled out their litigation of personal destruction under the assumption that character assassination really works: demean, demonize, denigrate, and “dis” the plaintiff in order to distract from the legal issues by making the plaintiff the issue. They accused me of setting out on a “relentless course of harassment” against my ex-wife and anyone who helped her “without regard for ethics or even common decency.” This familiar Feminazi lament was aimed at emotionally turning against me any shrew or hermaphrodite clerks working for the Chief Judge and to use the current political climate in America to pressure the Chief Judge into ruling against a man in a dispute that involved a female as a key defendant.

Today’s male judges often err on the side of less or no rights for men so as to avoid the Feminazis labeling them “male-chauvinists,” the equivalent of being marked a commie in the 1950s. The defendants also depicted me as emotionally disturbed by calling the Complaint the product of “a delusional, imaginary tale of fantasy”—a little redundant that and somewhat of an

overreaction. But the defendants meant to not only bias and apply “politically correct” pressure to the District Court, but to intimidate me with the specter of Feminazi wrath and insinuations of mental problems. Such tactics often succeed in modern-day America, but unlike these half-men, defense lawyers, broads don’t scare me and calling me nuts only brings a smile to my face. In an insane society, a person needs to be crazy to be sane.

The defense lawyers used other tactics typically resorted to by honor-less members of the Bar:

Tell enough falsehoods and half-truths, omit what the defense lawyer doesn’t like and misrepresent the rest.

Overload the Court with exhibits and so-called facts so that in its rush to wade through all the material it will miss an attorney’s intentional deceptions.

Misquote and selectively edit statements by other courts and the plaintiff in order to twist the accusations and the law to fit an attorney’s falsehoods.

The attorneys arrayed against me did all that and more. They loaded up their memorandum with snide remarks in an effort to spew forth so much social opprobrium that I would decide it not worth fighting for my rights. Such a technique often works with plaintiffs who don’t expect their character to come under constant assault in a case in which their character is not an issue. Little did these goofs know that by this stage of my life I was now immune to such sophomoric name-calling.

The defense even tried to avoid the key question on a motion to dismiss by claiming the Complaint didn’t “prove” my case, but complaints aren’t suppose to prove a case, just tell the defendants of what they are accused. A complaint’s purpose is not to prove, at least according to the U.S. Supreme Court. *Hickman v. Taylor*, 329 U.S. 495, 500-01, 91 L.Ed. 451, 67 S.Ct. 385 (1947). The proof comes further down the road, after the plaintiff and defendants have the opportunity to use various court procedures to gather evidence, that’s called discovery. When a

person files a complaint, he doesn't walk into court with stacks of evidence ready to go to trial because in order to obtain most evidence requires a court telling the defendants, or plaintiff, to hand over documents or testify at depositions. For example, if an SUV swerves across the median of a road and hits a car sending the car's driver to the hospital, the driver or his insurance company is going to sue. In order to determine whether the SUV hit the car because the female driver was fixing her makeup, talking on her cell phone, had drank too much, or the SUV's steering wheel locked, or a pot hole punctured one of the wheels or other something else happened that caused the accident requires a court to make the female driver, seller of the car or city provide information to the plaintiff because neither will hand it over voluntarily. That's the proof that discovery produces.

It took me three months in the law library, the entire fall of 2003, to compose a 147-page memorandum in order to counter the defense attorneys' lies and omissions and debunk their deceit filled arguments and implications. My opposition memorandum included a handful of exhibits on procedural matters except for one that contained copies of a website on which Mundy's law firm advertised immigration and domestic relations legal services. On the same web page as Mundy's firm, an agency marketed Russian girls for marriage—nice fit of services. Here was one website where an American man could pick his ho of choice and use Mundy's firm to get her into the country—such Russian efficiency. Also included were lots of photos from that site of pretty young Russian girls, some scantily clad, because I knew Mundy and Petrovich would like that. As soon as their lawyer and lead counsel for the defendants, Dubin, received my response, Mundy took his firm's ad off the website.

The time I had to spend on opposing the defendants' motion illustrates another of their tactics: make numerous lies that either require me to use up lots of time refuting or risk the



District Court believing them. It's always more time consuming to counter a lie than to make one. Again, this tactic of lawyers often works because plaintiffs don't want to spend lots of money on their attorney. But I'm a lawyer, so I didn't have that expense, although the defense figured the time I would have to put in would drastically cut my income, and, like Russians, lawyers can only understand money. So to them, creating a situation that required me to spend lots of time responding to their lies would, under their value system, deter my effectiveness because I wouldn't take the pay cut. They didn't realize, however, that I was in this to my last dollar or last breath, whichever came first. Some people will do anything for money; others will do anything for justice.

In the defendants' motion to dismiss, the lawyers tried time and again to trick the District Court by claiming a case said something it didn't. They even used selectively edited quotes or failed to mention a qualifying sentence in manufacturing the law to support their positions. It's an effective tactic when using a large number of cases, such as over 100 as they did. To accurately understand what a case says requires reading it in its entirety. Judges and their clerks don't have that kind of time to check the veracity of what lawyers claim for a case, and the defense attorneys used that failing of the judicial system to mislead the District Court. So I read the cases and pointed out the defense attorneys' duplicitous version of the law over and over for the Court.

Another nifty trick used by the defense attorneys as I told the District Court was that "They do not refer to any paragraphs or page numbers in the exhibits they talk about. That leads to wasting a busy court's time by requiring it to search through the defense's exhibits in order to check the accuracy of their characterizations of parts of those documents. Perhaps, these lawyers wish the Court to accept their edited version of documents on faith."

The attorneys for the defendants in America also took allegations in the Complaint out of context, misquoted some and simply ignored others to support their objection that the accusations against their clients didn't provide enough information. The defense lawyers, however, filed so many exhibits, allegations and pages of detailed and intentionally misleading arguments in response to the Complaint that their argument of not having enough information looked ludicrous. They clearly understood what I was accusing their clients of doing, and that is all a complaint needed to do back then. But once again, the heart of this tactic was to play on the District Court not having enough time to check whether the Complaint provided the information the lawyers claimed was lacking. So I provided the District Court a listing of the pertinent paragraphs in the Complaint ignored by the defense lawyers, an accurate quoting for those misquoted and established the appropriate context for others in order to fill in the phony information gap the defense tried to create.

When the defense attorneys weren't omitting or misstating my allegations, they were calling them "outlandish, extremely broad and fantastic" or "outlandish, incredible and far-fetched." They used the word "outlandish" a lot to try to convince the District Court that my Complaint described a reality that couldn't possibly exist; therefore, the Chief Judge shouldn't assume my allegations true as generally required in deciding a motion to dismiss. For example, the defense lawyers called my allegation of the global reach of the Russian mafia a delusional fiction that read like a Tom Clancy novel. In response, I requested the District Court to take judicial notice, which it could in a motion to dismiss, of a public statement made by a former Director of the C.I.A. John Deutsch said before Congress, "Russia's criminal groups reach across international borders, including our own ... [and] have the potential to support terrorism, and contribute to the proliferation of materials, technology and weapons of mass destruction."

As I told the Court, “While the last part of this quote concerns the Tom Clancy novel *The Sum of All Fears*, [my] Complaint does not deal with nuclear weapons of mass destruction, just the more mundane, run of the mill Russian criminal operations in America, such as money laundering, illegal money transactions, prostitution, narcotics trafficking, extortion and fraud that are often carried out in cooperation with La Cosa Nostra.”

To further counter the defense lawyers’ dismissal of that mob’s globalization, I used a law review article by Scott Boylan from the Department of Homeland Security. “Not only does the Russian Mafia kill and steal in Russia, it does so in the United States as well. Mafia members are involved in theft, extortion, money-laundering, gun-trafficking, drug running, prostitution, smuggling, loan sharking, contract killing and more. The U.S. Department of Justice has established task forces to deal with the Russian Mafia in New York, Los Angeles, and Miami.” In addition, an article by investigative reporter Friedman in the November 7, 1994 N. Y. Magazine stated that by 1994, the Russian mob had more than 300 members in the New York area alone, making it larger than the Bonanno, Colombo, or Lucchese crime families. Further, Friedman’s *Red Mafiya* book warned, “Blending financial sophistication with bone-crunching violence, the Russian mob has become the FBI’s most formidable criminal adversary, creating an international criminal colossus that had surpassed the Columbian cartels, the Japanese Yakuza, the Chinese triads and the Italian mafia in wealth and weaponry. Presently, the U.S. and Russian Governments are cooperating in efforts to combat criminals operating in the United States and Russia. The FBI has assigned agents to the U.S. Embassy in Moscow, while U.S. Department of Justice prosecutors currently reside in Moscow.”

If my allegations about the Russian mafia were imaginary, I argued to the Court, then why didn’t the F.B.I. save taxpayer dollars by closing down its Moscow office and its Russian

organized crime unit here in New York, which was looking into some of the allegations in my RICO Complaint. So much for the Russian mafia existing only in my imagination, which I wish it did. The defense lawyers were simply copying what mobsters always do: claim their organizations are as imaginary as the tooth fairy, but no one believes that line anymore—I hoped.

Another response to the defense attorneys' objection that my allegations were "outlandishness" was to tell the Court, "Well, of course they are because they describe the conduct of collaborators and members of the Russian mafia, which, to quote an American executive in Moscow, are 'frigging unbelievable.' The Complaint merely depicts the defendants' deeds, and, if those had not been outlandish, then there would be no Complaint."

The defense lawyers in trying to convince the Court that the Russian mafia existed only in my delusional imagination also misrepresented the Complaint as stating the only connection among the defendants was that they came into contact with the Commie Ho. To which I replied, "If coming into 'contact' with her was the criteria for listing a person as a defendant, then it would be impossible to list them all for Shipilina has literally had thousands of customers who have 'come into contact' with her. She is, however, the thread that weaves through a section of the Russian mafia. The defendants are fellow travelers who committed crimes in order to get her into the U.S., keep her here and expand the activities of the Russian mafia to its and their benefit. In the Watergate scandal, reporters Woodward and Bernstein followed the money; here the plaintiff followed the trail of Shipilina. She is a mid-level manager and asset of the Russian mafia, who works with, works for, cooperates with or directs other members and abettors of the criminal enterprise. When I walked into the cross hairs of the Russian mob, Shipilina was the one dispatched by defendant Leo Perlin to sucker me into unknowingly helping the mob infiltrate

another of its members into the U.S. The only way I have been able to expose some of the workings of the defendants was by following the thread of Shipilina.”

“A little common sense is needed to show the absurdity of the defendants’ objection that they are not connected. When I worked as an associate at Cravath, Swaine and Moore or as a political producer at WABC TV Eyewitness News, I never came into contact with every member or associate of those large organizations, but it was clear that we all shared the organization’s goals and worked for that end. On anyone case or story, I was at times the only connection among different members or associates of the organization, all of whom were working to make the organization succeed and providing varying degrees of assistance on that particular case or story. That’s how large organizations work. They muster together resources, which include people, to support the pursuit of numerous activities to achieve the organization’s goals. At any one time, Cravath, Swaine and Moore is working on dozens of cases, Eyewitness News on dozens of stories and the Russian mafia on dozens of targets. Looking at only one case, one story or one target will reveal only some of the organization’s members or associates and some of them will not even know each other, but they all share the common goal and accept the means for achieving it. Otherwise, they will be fired, or, as with the Russian mafia, worst. And no, I am not claiming Cravath or Eyewitness News as being RICO enterprises.” The disclaimer in the last sentence was necessary because when dealing with low-life lawyers who torture the plain meaning of sentences to serve their ends, I needed to stop them from verbally jumping up and down like monkeys vying for a banana claiming I was so delusional that I called those organizations RICO enterprises.

The argument that the defendants were not connected also served as a ploy to maneuver the District Court into considering the allegations against each in isolation—switch the focus

from the forest to the individual tree, which would change the legal outcome. “The purpose of RICO is to reach organized crime groups. If defendants are permitted to narrow the focus to individual defendants in a vacuum, then there is no RICO statute. The cause of action is against the Russian mafia of which the defendants are part. Large organizations work through individual humans who make decisions within their sphere of responsibility and carry out tasks to get them accomplished. It is a one for all, all for one situation. And that is how the law treats RICO participants: joint and individually liable for harm caused by others in an organization or association. The U.S. Senate report on RICO stated: ‘What is needed here are new approaches that will deal not only with individuals, but also with the economic base through which those individuals constitute such a serious threat to the economic well-being of the Nation.’” The only way to take down a criminal organization is by holding everyone who exercises some power in running the operation liable. Without RICO, the law could only reach individual members or confederates, not the whole collective, which was what the defense lawyers wanted.

“The Russian mafia consists of and acts through people, and no one victim, or customer, comes into contact with all the decision makers and support personnel that go into making a mafia successful. But they are there in the shadows supporting those on the front lines, giving aid and direction in order to reach the mob’s goals. For me, the Russian mafia’s retailer or, more appropriately, front, initially was Alina Shipilina, but soon other comrades in crime came out from standing in the shadows to help directly and indirectly with the mob’s scheme as it applied to me. What others are lurking behind the known defendants continue to be revealed as the Krasnodar Department for Fighting Gangsterism and Corruption conduct their investigation, and I mine.”

One diversionary tactic of the defense attorneys kept them harping that the case involved domestic relations, not RICO matters. Their underlying argument was that since a state court had already handled the domestic relations issues and the ex-husband, me, held a grudge over the results, the District Court should find some way to throw the case out. My response emphasized the larger picture, which explained how I got tripped, pushed and drugged into this mess.

“There are really only two ways a middle-aged, American, male lawyer could get involved with such a bunch—money or a woman.” The Feminazi sycophants must have loved that—screw them. “I took the road less traveled or, perhaps, more traveled. An allegory should help. While sailing the waters of the former Soviet Union in my Sun Fish, doing my work for Kroll Associates, along comes this juggernaut of pimps, prostitutes, pornographers, pushers and assorted criminals of Russian, Chechen, American and other nationalities, including a few lunatics from the Chechen Special Islamic Regiment. The juggernaut, ever scanning for the easy prey of softhearted American businessmen, spots me, and sends out one of its prostitutes as bait: a tall, blue-eyed, bleached blonde. Using duplicity and drugs, my Sun Fish is torpedoed, heads to the bottom. I’m sunk—married to a Russian prostitute who is a member of Russian organized crime although I don’t know it at the time. I bring my wife of a few months to America, and the juggernaut of the Russian mafia gets another one of its assets and mid-level managers into the premier hard currency market in the world. While this was happening to me, it was and continues to happen to others. When I finally came up for air and saw what was happening: I struggled, tried to get free, fought back to protect my rights as a human being by using the law and not stepping outside the law—but to no avail. So far, the Russian juggernaut of organized crime has been more powerful, more effective than the law because it uses lies, dissemblances, prevarication, smear tactics, threats, intimidation and bribery.”

“My dark passage began with the discovery of telephone calls that Alina Shipilina made from my apartment in order to market her sexual services to Flash Dancers’ customers. The truth led through a labyrinth of sleaze, crime and corruption that my attorney friend helped me realize was part of the Russian mafia. I am just one of the pieces of wood that the Russian mafia used to fuel its Mordor engine of greed.” The *Lord of The Rings* movie trilogy was big at the time.

“The only reason for the earlier domestic relations’ case was the very nature of the Russian mafia’s scheme, which includes using prostitutes in Moscow to deceive American businessmen into marriage so that the prostitutes can gain legal entry into the U.S.A. I was one of the suckers. But because the trail of the harm done to me lies behind a fraudulent marriage rather than a fraudulent business transaction does not make it any less serious. When criminal instrumentalities exploit human emotions of the heart rather than the pocket book, the victim does not lose his rights under U.S. law.”

“Today, the Russian mafia consists of assorted criminals from the former Soviet Union who have joined with underworld characters in Western markets over the past decade to create a global web of smuggling, protection, extortion, counterfeiting, tampering with witnesses, revenge, evasion of taxes and other illegal activities.” Both the Court and the defense lawyers missed the initials spelling “S.P.E.C.T.R.E.” My memorandum continued, “Russian organized crime groups, working in cooperation with each other and foreign gangsters, infiltrate lucrative, hard currency markets, such as the U.S., by taking advantage of ineffective and un-enforced immigration laws, as well as bribable officials, to illegally gain entry for the organization’s managers and human assets. I am one of the victims of this new Red menace.” Probably should have wrote, “red-lip menace.”



“Operating through some of its members and allies, the Russian mafia tricked me into bringing one of its assets to the U.S.; tried to get me to lie to the INS; secretly fed me drugs; tried to intimidate me; threatened me with physical violence; suborned and committed perjury; engaged in mail and wire fraud; bribed officials; attempted to and did tamper with witnesses and informants; laundered money; and conspired to commit murder for hire. My continuing investigation in Russia has revealed the involvement of a Chechen terror and crime clan in threatening witnesses in Krasnodar and the clan’s known connection with both Shipilinas. As a result, to this day, I continue to follow the advice given me in March 2002 by a special agent for the F.B.I.—don’t open your door to anyone you don’t know and watch out when you are in public.” Okay, so I pretended to be scared.

In order to make sure the Court realized that the Russian mob not only harmed me but other Americans as well, my memorandum continued. “Besides the harm . . . caused me by the defendants, their continuing criminal activities also injure other U.S. citizens, both individuals and companies. Through business alliances among American, Russian, Chechen and other criminals, the defendants further the Russian mafia’s operations. Prostitutes flow out of southern Russia into New York City for sale and use in lap-dancing clubs, such as Flash Dancers, or over the Internet, immigration laws are violated to get the prostitutes into America and keep them here, drugs are brought in from southern Russia to keep high end customers happy and assure their return business, prostitutes also flow from southern Russia to Cyprus and on to the U.S., prostitutes and pornography move from Moscow to southern California or first to Mexico and then into the U.S., the prostitute underground railway extends into America from southern Russia, all these operations are protected with bribery and physical intimidation, profits are laundered and the U.S. system corrupted. It is all interrelated—supply, service and production,

protection, profit maximization, reinvestment and growth—with each defendant playing his or her part in the success of a large organization. An organization that targets tens of thousands of consumers for sexual services with the result of dramatically increasing the health risks to those consumers and their partners. The Russian mafia also places law-abiding entertainment companies at a competitive disadvantage by unfairly competing for entertainment dollars that would otherwise flow to the investors and employees of legitimate businesses in the leisure industry and by increasing the tax burden on legitimate companies that have to pay for the government services the Russian mafia consumes but doesn't pay for thanks to its tax evasion.”

The defense lawyers, sounding like little girls, also accused me of bringing the case to humiliate and insult the Commie Ho and other defendants. If it did—good, but that wasn't a reason for doing so much work. In answering, I played it straight—almost, and wrote, “as Charlie Chan once said, ‘truth cannot be an insult,’ if it injures a person's self-respect than that is the fault of the person, not the reporter. The defendants are simply engaging in character assassination—plaintiff seeks to humiliate, harass and is delusional—in order to shut down the argument and marginalize the plaintiff so that they do not have to argue the merits.”

The defense naturally resorted to the trendy, totalitarian lefty view that the victim is the violator and violator the victim. “Kuba, Mundy and Petrovich paint themselves as innocents that merely represent another virtuous soul, Alina Shipilina. A more accurate picture of Kuba, Mundy & Petrovich is that of a green card and visa mill getting fat on the feeding frenzy of obstructionist immigration lawyers that fail to sort out the truly oppressed from the rank opportunists and fugitive criminals. This is a case about the institutional behavior of the Russian mafia, which includes many criminal members and allies posing as legitimate businesses and law-abiding individuals. This RICO action has been brought against the archetypal, intimidating

mobster, an enterprise of organized criminals, not respected and legitimate businesses and individuals.”

The defense also resorted to the technique made popular by the Feminazis of shaming men into submission to their whims by accusing men of violating the very code of chivalry that the Feminazis profess subjugates females by treating them differentially. Sounds contradictory, but it is not if you are a broad. Feminazis will use any means to their desired end that for all things good in society, females should be treated equally with men, but for all things bad, girls should remain protected on their pedestal of angelic purity—hypocrisy pure and simple.

Just like the Feminazis, the defendants’ mouthpieces tried to embarrass and demonize me for violating the code of chivalry by setting up the Russian language website to gather evidence for the annulment/divorce case. They blustered it was “inappropriate and offensive” for making public the Commie Ho’s “personal diary and nude photographs without her knowledge or consent” and including clips of her masturbation video. The defense lawyers self-righteously condemned my actions, as “criminal matters being handled by Detective Henning.” What a bunch of lying hypocrites. As I pointed out to the Court. They knew no crimes were committed by the website, didn’t even cite to any criminal statutes, because the Commie Ho already had made the naked pictures public by selling them to her prostitution customers, such as “Grandpa” in Cyprus. Besides, I owned the rights to those photos taken by her Moscow pimp Leo. As for the masturbation video, Paulsen abandoned his rights but allowed Perlin to use certain scenes, the ones I had, for advertising to the public his stable of whores. Advertising was one of the usages that the Commie Ho signed away when she got paid for the video. As for the diary, publicizing the truth about the Commie Ho in her own words didn’t amount to any crime. At best, the lawyers might have copyright infringement against me but no crimes—not even a

violation or misdemeanor. Naturally, the Feminazis persuasion sees it differently because as with all broads the truth ruins their schemes, and anyone opening that box, especially a man, should go to jail. But that's not what the law says—yet.

What really made these lawyers' alluding to "criminal matters" despicable, however, was that the documents they submitted to the District Court included an affidavit by Detective Henning that stated he referred the website complaint to the Queens District Attorney who had found no criminal violation. Gee, that was news to me! Anyway, even though the D.A. said no crimes were committed, that didn't stop these lawyers from trying to bias the Court by accusing me of such. The lawyers assumed the amount of documents they gave the District Court would cause it to miss the discrepancy between their words and the facts. But even if the Court caught it, that didn't matter much because the lawyers really wanted to manipulate the Political Correctionalist sensitivities of the Court by painting me as one of the new lepers, the new American bogeyman and escape goat for Feminarchy America—a heterosexual male who refused to metamorphose into the Feminazis' modern day, sensitive, androgynous wimp. The defense lawyers were exploiting the modern-day mind set of Mencken's boobs that whenever a guy didn't cow tow to female whims, or become what they wanted, he should go to jail. The lawyers could have saved their energy and just asked me what I considered myself, and I would have freely admitted to being the Feminazis' worst nightmare—a man.

Henning's affidavit proved useful for other reasons. Henning swore that after he heard back from the District Attorney, he closed the case on June 19, 2002; a year after the Commie Ho filed her complaint that I had violated the order of protection and three months after notifying me early in the morning of my imminent arrest. Henning claimed it took so long, nine months, for him to get around to trying to arrest me because he couldn't find a Russian to translate the

website and because of the 911 tragedy. The lazy, incompetent and deceitful will use any excuse. Henning, however, told me over the telephone in March 2002 that my pending arrest was based on the Commie Ho recently filing a complaint for my violating the Temporary Order of Protection, not on a complaint she had filed nine months earlier and which he just got around to calling me about. No, the whole episode was Henning illegally using his police position on behalf of the Ho and her attorneys to intimidate me into keeping my mouth shut to the INS.

When Henning allegedly heard back from the D.A. in June 2002, he didn't tell my attorneys about my exoneration, although my lawyers had called him a few times over the summer and fall of 2002 to find out the status of the case. Neither did he call me in the early morning hours to tell me. The closing of the case was unknown to me until I read Henning's affidavit in October 2003, more than one year after Henning claimed the D.A. made a decision and more than two years after he claimed the Commie Ho filed her complaint. Something wasn't right. My lawyers or I should have been notified about the case's closing when it occurred, not as a result of an affidavit in a RICO case that no one knew was going to happen at the time.

The RICO suit had forced Henning to submit an affidavit that covered up his work for the Commie Ho and her attorney. So perhaps Henning claiming the D.A. decided not to prosecute was also part of the cover-up necessitated by Henning never having referred the case to the D.A. in the first place. Henning probably thought I would stay shaking in my boots waiting for an answer from the D.A. that would never come or not until Henning, with the Commie Ho and Mundy's okay, decided I had been a good boy, and then he would call my attorneys to say the D.A. decided not to prosecute. It was an ingenuous way to drag out the threat of arrest because

without it, they no longer had a club for trying to keep me quiet or at least curtailing some of my activities.

To confirm my theory, I filed a freedom of information request with the Queens D.A. They had no records concerning me—none. I was right, Henning made up the story about his referral of the Commie Ho's complaint to the District Attorney in order to keep the threat of arrest looming over my head. It was just another effort on the part of Mundy and the Commie Ho to protect themselves from the law by stepping on my rights. They probably thought it had worked too, until they got hit with the RICO case. Boy that must have surprised them.

Henning likely committed perjury before the Federal court, but the Chief Judge wouldn't care unless the case made it to discovery where I could show Henning's affidavit false. In reality, federal and state courts generally don't care how much defendants lie so long as a case is dismissed; therefore, it makes sense for defendants to maximize their mendacity in order to obtain a dismissal. If the gamble doesn't work, the worse a judge will do is scold them—big deal.

Another phony “criminal matter being handled by Detective Henning” was the Commie Ho's report to the police in December 2000 claiming I had tried to extort money from her. She didn't press charges, so the cops didn't investigate, and I knew nothing about it until May 2003 when Mundy filed his disciplinary complaint against me. Mundy clearly told her to file the report but not press charges. Doing so allowed Mundy to duck my disciplinary complaint against him for attempted coercion but was that the reason, since he didn't know at the time I would file a complaint?

What other reasons were there for the Commie Ho to file a report without pressing charges, do it in mid December 2000 and then call me two weeks later from Krasnodar on New

Year's Eve feigning a tear-choked voice to wish me Happy New Year and new millennium. Some people thought the new millennium started in 2001, but the Commie Ho was not one of them. She used it as the typical psychological female trick to create in my emotions the false hope of a new beginning and communicate the phony implication that she wanted me back—she didn't. She just wanted to trick me into helping her with the INS, and this pretense, from the female point of view, was one way to do it. Girls always delude themselves into thinking a guy wants to give the relationship another try, and then try to exploit what sometimes is true for wishy-washy men. But that's not a problem I ever had. When the dating ends, no matter who slammed on the brakes—it's over for eternity.

While drafting my response to the defense lawyers' motion, I finally figured out why Mundy told the Commie Ho not to press charges in December 2000 and explained to the District Court the real story behind the false accusation of extortion that never became a criminal matter. "In late October 2000, Shipilina and I met with Petrovich at Kuba, Mundy & Associates to arrange for a separation, to be followed by a divorce. At this meeting I was advised by Petrovich, after he consulted with Mundy, to lie in an affidavit to the INS in order to assure that Shipilina would obtain a permanent green card. Afterward, I consulted with an attorney friend and in no uncertain terms, he confirmed that my decision not to lie was the only acceptable course of action. I notified Shipilina that I would not lie for her to the INS, after that, on December 13, 2000, she filed the perjured police report alleging an extortion attempt by me. The filing of the perjured report claiming extortion came after a divorce was imminent, and after I refused to cooperate with Kuba, Mundy, Petrovich and Shipilina's shenanigans to defraud the INS. Rather than demonstrating moral turpitude in me, the filing of the false report more reasonably infers an effort to create a false record by which Kuba, Mundy, Petrovich and

Shipilina could pressure me into lying before the INS or use to their advantage in a divorce proceeding that appeared imminent at that time. Otherwise, why file a report on which charges are not pressed unless to hold that ammunition in reserve and press charges later.” Another reason was to use the false report to bolster her application for a VAWA waiver.

The defense attorneys’ demonizing efforts even attacked me for approaching law enforcement agencies and the courts as “objectively offensive and repugnant” and an attempt to “harass and incense.” If the District Court buys that, I argued, it would “send a chilling message to any U.S. citizen who foolishly chooses to fight for his rights. If he loses, the courts will still use that to throw out any cause of action that reveals itself later on. The right to pursue justice through the legal system will be a right in name only. Besides I was the one who received threatening telephone calls, so who’s being harassed; who’s being intimidated by a large underworld entity—not the defendants. I’m the one who has been threaten by a bureaucrat with arrest on a bogus charge and told by the F.B.I., the premier law enforcement agency in the world, to watch out for myself in public.”

The attorneys also claimed that because government bureaucrats did nothing to help me, it proved I improperly used the legal system. To which I responded, “Perhaps these bureaucrats are of the same quality that granted two of the 911 hijackers their visas, just months after killing thousands. During all my requests to the legal system, I thought the judiciary would help me, and made three requests for protection orders—but to no avail. I reported threats recorded on audiotape to the police and F.B.I.—but to no avail. So if anything, I’m a dope, but that is not grounds for dismissing a RICO complaint—I don’t think!”

The defense lawyers, like all sleaze attorneys, indulged in creating false impressions by omitting facts and manipulating the meaning of words. For instance, the defense attorneys



manufactured the illusion that Mundy, an upstanding attorney, “reluctantly” filed—long before learning about the RICO suit—a disciplinary grievance against me because of my “assault of frivolous litigation.” There’s that word “frivolous” again. The crux of the false impression is the claim that Mundy didn’t know about the RICO suit when he filed the disciplinary complaint, which allowed his attorney to claim Mundy acted in good faith by using the only means left to him to put an end to my assault of litigation against “innocent” people. The attorneys couldn’t admit the truth that Mundy knew about the RICO suit before filing the disciplinary complaint because it would look like what it was—trying to use the Disciplinary Committee to scare me off of the RICO case, which is a no, no, and Mundy would no longer appear the innocent, upstanding attorney but rather one willing to trample Constitutional rights to reach his end.

Here’s how the defense attorneys created the deception. They recounted the time line of events that showed Mundy filed the disciplinary complaint before he was “served” with the RICO Complaint, which was true, but that implied he didn’t know about the RICO case before filing his disciplinary complaint, which was false. Under the law, “serve” means an official procedure by which the summons and complaint are provided to the defendant. However, a defendant may know about a lawsuit against him even though he has not yet been served. When Mundy filed his disciplinary complaint, he had not been served, but already had a copy of the RICO Complaint as a result of my mailing it to him with a request to allow me to avoid the cost of official service. The defense attorneys conveniently left this mailing out of their time line, which created the intended false impression for the District Court that Mundy did not know of the RICO suit when he filed the disciplinary complaint. Rather stupid on the part of the lawyers since Mundy even talks about the RICO case in his disciplinary complaint, but, once again, the

attorneys were counting on the Court missing that point due to the large number of documents they filed.

Many attorneys will use any ploy imaginable. The defense even made a play for sympathy on the other side of the coin that depicted me as the villain by saying I was on a “quest to harass, intimidate and persecute.” To which I wrote for the District Court, “It seems a little ludicrous that I, a sole practitioner lawyer, eking out a living, could ‘harass, intimidate and persecute’ an entire law firm that advertises on the Internet in Russian and has offices in New Jersey, New York City and Rockland County, New York. Or that I could persecute a lucrative strip club advertised as “Live from the heart of N.Y.C.” in Times Square, a New York City Police Detective, a medical doctor and a wealthy Russian prostitute along with numerous others, including gangsters and Islamic lunatics. If I have caused such trials and tribulations, then why haven’t the defendants filed harassment actions and complained to the police about intimidation? Because there’s no basis. Where are their allegations of my arranging threatening telephone calls and threats of arrest or surreptitiously feeding them drugs? There are none. Only the objection that I sought to redress the harm done to me and protect my physical safety from what I now know is the Russian mafia. The defendants ask this Court to not only grant dismissal because they don’t like me exercising my rights as an American, but also request this Court to act as a medieval inquisitor that would permanently crush my constitutional rights with ‘an injunction barring me from filing any future related claims.’” The American defendants had asked the Court to prevent me from ever bringing another suit based on their actions that had harmed me in any court that existed. Even the U.S. Feminazi court system wouldn’t go that far. I continued, “No the defendants are not the victims. I was the one tricked, drugged and pushed

into this sinkhole of a situation when I ran a foul of a large criminal organization operating out of Russia.”

All the defense lawyers’ lies, half-truths, character assassinations and smear tactics were to bias the District Court against me, to castigate me—an American man—as unworthy of the right to seek legal redress, so that the Court would fine or create a legal loophole to throw the case out. While assassinating my character, the lawyers and their clients hypocritically proclaimed their virtue as do whores their virginity.

### She Works Hard for the Money

At the end of one day while still working in the law library on my opposition memorandum to the American defendants’ motion to dismiss, the idea lit my consciousness to search the Commie Ho’s name “Angelina Shipilina” on the Internet. With a few minutes to waste before my Salsa class, I ran the search. Up pops five pictures of the Ho on [www.Russianny.com](http://www.Russianny.com).

It’s a web site in Russian for Russian professionals living in the Northeast, Chicago, Detroit, Los Angeles, San Francisco and Toronto Canada. The site’s sponsors were running a Miss Russian New York beauty contest in which people registered as members voted for their favorite Russian slut. Only girls 25 years old or under and amateurs could enter. The Commie Ho was 28 and a professional model, but that didn’t stop her from lying her way into the contest. She came in seventh using the theme “bringing light to others”—more like darkness and dread. This was the beauty contest the Ho’s mother Inessa told the Ho’s old boyfriend in Krasnodar about back in March. More information would eventually reveal itself, such as the name of the “good boyfriend” that Inessa also bragged about.

The web site allowed members, mostly Russians, to send private messages to any of the girls in the contest, contact other members through a chat room and message board and participate in the largest Russian Internet dating service in America. All very useful for a Russian call girl operation to reach and screen its customers. This was most likely how the Commie Ho and others like her sold themselves, concentrating on the Russian criminal market, the guys with money. She probably only hoed part-time, since I doubted she'd give up the over one hundred grand a year tax free she made stripping 40 hours a week. Another part of the site listed erotica, so I took a quick look and there was a girl looking a lot like her giving a blowjob. She probably did porn on the side as well. Mark and others who knew her checked the photo out, and they thought it was she. As with the Flash Dancers' advertisement, her appearance altered to match the gig, maybe there was no real her at all, only a changeling, a meta-ho-morph in appearance as well as personality.

The defendants in Russia for whom I could dig up addresses were finally served with the Summons and Complaint in November 2003, except for the Commie Ho's mother Inessa and the purveyor of girls Alexey Smolin. The delay, caused by the time to translate the documents, was permitted under the Federal Rules of Civil Procedure but didn't impact the schedule for the American defendants' motion to dismiss. Why was that, I wondered? Anyway, I still needed to serve Inessa and Smolin. The first try at serving them was to have the District Court mail the documents, but that relied on the local Krasnodar postman to make the delivery. Assuming the postman didn't just throw the packages in the garbage to save work, not uncommon for Russian postal employees, Inessa and Smolin probably bribed him to do it anyway since the Court never received the return receipt card. Next, the Court used Federal Express, and neither bribe nor lie nor threat of force kept Fed Ex from the swift completion of its appointed rounds. Smolin was

served at his temporary place of work the “Lucky Grand” and Inessa at the Academy where I hoped the Fed Ex man might attract the attention of the gossipy Russian girls milling in the hallways.

As for the defendants in America that I could identify, they were all served months earlier but two of them claimed the service improper: the Commie Ho’s Russian lawyer Petrovich, and the Cybertech Internet Strip Club Network. In trying to duck service, the lawyer for Petrovich and Mundy argued that when my process server left the documents for Petrovich at the law firm of Kuba, Mundy & Associates, the service was ineffective because he didn’t work there, which was false. The Commie Ho and I had met the guy at the firm to discuss a divorce in 2000, and I telephoned the firm just before service in the summer of 2003 to confirm he still worked there. Who did these guys think they were kidding—not me, but the District Court. Okay, so I’ll serve him at his home address, which I previously learned from the Commie Ho’s mobile telephone records when she still lived with me.

The address I had for Petrovich’s apartment was a brownstone on the Upper Eastside, not bad for a struggling Russian immigrant. The building contained about six apartments, but Petrovich’s name wasn’t listed on any of the buzzers. So I buzzed all the apartments, a trick I learned from Sam Spade in *The Maltese Falcon*, until an older and younger lady opened the front door to the building. They said Petrovich had moved to Brooklyn a couple of years ago, so I checked the post office forwarding records, nothing. Then I looked on the Internet, nothing, and finally got a private eye but none of the leads panned out. Petrovich had disappeared from the residency roles for New York City, but kept the same telephone number he had for his Upper Eastside address where he no longer lived. In the old days before the breakup of Ma Bell, my friend Alan could find the billing address for any New York number, but not anymore because

the number could belong to any phone company and each had its own procedure for accessing records. These Russian criminals are smarter than al Qaeda. Some of the 911 hijackers were actually listed in the telephone book—no wonder the F.B.I. couldn't find them.

Giving up my search for Petrovich's home address, I decided to prove he worked at Mundy's law firm. Alan agreed to call the firm pretending to be one of Petrovich's clients to see if he still worked there. I couldn't do it because the District Court wouldn't believe an affidavit from me. When I told Alan the name Peter Petrovich, he translated it as Peter Peter, which was correct, but something I had missed. It seemed strange to me for a Russian to have the same first name and surname, but I let it go. The firm's receptionist told Alan that Petrovich no longer worked in the office but from home. Sounded like the law firm had its cover-up in place. Alan also talked with a paralegal at Mundy's firm whom he asked where to send documents for Petrovich. The paralegal said to the firm, which was all I needed. Under the law, by receiving business correspondence at the firm, Petrovich could be served there with legal documents because the law assumes people pick up their business mail. So legally, Petrovich received the Summons and Complaint when they were left for him with the firm's receptionist even though he might now work at home.

In response to Alan's affidavit, Dubin the lead defense lawyer, as well as Mundy and Petrovich's attorney, filed an affidavit in Petrovich's name—lawyers rather than their clients always write these affidavits, although the client swears to them. Petrovich didn't deny receiving business correspondence at the firm; he just swore he did not "maintain" his place of business there. Might be true, I doubted it, but under the law it didn't matter, Petrovich had been served. Dubin also put an unnecessary lie into Petrovich's affidavit that Petrovich "served merely as a translator for the law firm on certain occasions." Dubin also told the Court that he would give

me Petrovich's address if I asked, so I asked but Dubin just ignored it. Why was the lead counsel trying so hard to keep Petrovich out of the case?

Petrovich's affidavit raised another anomaly, why did he use an Armenian notary public from San Francisco County in California to verify he was whom he claimed when signing his affidavit? Had Petrovich skipped town or were the defense lawyers trying to make me think he did? What finally dawned in my often overly thick skull was that the name Peter Petrovich was a fake name he could get away with in America but not Russia. Petrovich is a Russian man's patronymic that means his father's first name was Peter, so Peter Petrovich is a man without a surname, not possible in Russia. Also, he used an Armenian notary public because Armenia once belonged to the Soviet Union, so its people would be at the same level of ethical conduct as Russians—zero. Petrovich is hiding his real name. If the District Court includes him as a defendant, and my case makes it to discovery, he won't be able to keep it a secret anymore. But why should that matter to the defendants and their lawyers unless Petrovich is more important and dirtier than I thought. With his full name, I could easily find any Russian criminal records concerning him and maybe U.S. as well. But I needed his surname to determine Petrovich's real identity, which the defense wants to keep secret.

The other American defendant who tried to duck service was Cybertech Internet Strip Club Network, the Internet purveyor of porn and call girls. Cybertech's attorney called me in December 2003, so he had to have received the Summons and Complaint; otherwise, he wouldn't know who to call.

He started off in the usual obnoxious way of attorneys who think they can intimidate people, "My client was never served, so we are under absolutely no obligation whatsoever to respond to your frivolous Complaint!" I'm really getting tired of that word.

“So how did your client get the Summons and Complaint?” I asked.

“That doesn’t matter. You used the wrong name and left the Complaint at the wrong address. Cybertech Internet Strip Club Network is not the corporate name.”

“Okay, I give up, what is the corporate name?”

“I’m not at liberty to disclose it.”

“So why are you calling me then?”

“I’d like an agreement that you wouldn’t do anything until the current motion to dismiss is decided.” I wasn’t buying that. By agreeing to do nothing, the District Court would conclude I wasn’t serious about suing Cybertech; otherwise, I wouldn’t have relinquished my rights to do something immediately to bring Cybertech under the Court’s jurisdiction. A long time ago at a deposition in a multi-billion dollar hostile takeover, I learned to never agree to anything the opposing counsel requests—it’s always a trick and I didn’t fall into it then. Cybertech’s lawyer was also trying to save himself some work, typical.

“If you have a problem with service, then make a motion to the District Court.” I said.

“I’m not yet admitted to the District Court.” That was the lamest excuse I ever heard.

“Then get admitted pro hac vice.” That means for one time only. He ignored my suggestion.

“The Complaint is in the wrong name and was not left at my client’s office, so my client is not obliged to do anything.” He then tried to pump me for some information as to who was helping me.

“Those are depositions questions, and I am not at present in a deposition.” He shut up, and the conversation ended.



By checking with the New York Secretary of State, I found out he was right about my not using the registered corporate name, which was Cybertech Internet Solutions. But I did use the name under which Cybertech created and managed its pornography and escort services website, [www.stripclubescorts.com](http://www.stripclubescorts.com), as well as Flash Dancers', which was good enough for service since Cybertech Internet Strip Club Network and Internet Solutions were in reality one and the same. As for his objection that service was improper because made at the wrong address, I knew it wouldn't hold up because it wasn't the wrong address. Before having the documents served, I called up Cybertech's CEO pretending I wanted to set up a porn site. He said I could stop by his office at 50 West 33<sup>rd</sup> Street to discuss it. I didn't, but did check out that his office was inside the Paradise lap-dancing club, where guys pay to make out, feel up and do more with the hos in a side room, which doesn't nullify service.

My three months of purgatory in the law library, five and six days a week, finally came to an end when I finished my opposition memorandum on December 18, 2003. Eleven years to the day after my mother's death. No I didn't see any connection, only wondered why I ever decided to become a lawyer? Should have done what I liked, Physics, but we've been through that. Regardless of what the matrix had made me, I was still going to try for some justice and retribution before oblivion because as Bob Dylan said, "In ceremonies of the horsemen, even the pawn must hold a grudge." And I knew against whom I held mine—the Feminazis. Without them, the Commie Ho would have been in jail.

A few days after filing my opposition, I received a tax bill from the State of Massachusetts. It seems as though the only activity the bureaucrats in governments and businesses undertake is to shakedown citizens for more money to waste on benefits for illegal aliens and the corporate rich. Massachusetts was never my residence, except for a couple of

years at Boston University decades ago, so why was it sending me a bill? Because I owned a piece of the Casablanca Restaurant on Brattle Street in Cambridge and was unfortunate enough to receive dividends. The amount was small, and if I was a Massachusetts resident, fully deductible, but because I lived out of state, I got nailed with a tax. That Feminazi sycophant state, which had just ripped off federal taxpayers across the country for billions of dollars to dig a ditch for a leaky tunnel in downtown Boston with huge cost overruns, now wanted more from me because I didn't live there. So what happened to the rallying cry made famous in that state, "No taxation without representation?" Modern-day, Orwellian Massachusetts had changed the old cry for justice to one of "No taxation with representation." My vote didn't count in Massachusetts because I couldn't vote there, so why do I get taxed while those who can vote get a deduction? The state got its money.

Months later, however, Massachusetts sends me the all-too-typical threatening bureaucratic letter trying to trick me into paying again by working the scam that the stress hormones their scare tactic was meant to activate would fog my memory. Well, I had my original records, and wrote back, "You lying, cheating, scam artists, I already paid this bill!" I wanted to add but didn't, "You are of the same mentality as the idiots who let those clowns board the planes to take out the World Trade Center, and now you want money from me I already paid that you didn't deserve in the first place. I hope Uncle Usama targets you next." Russia may be a criminal society, but America is a corrupt one filled with cozeners—a distinction in degrees only. Both countries are jungles with predators and prey—guess who wins?

Around Christmas my attention focused on Cybertech. Its lawyer was going to sit on his ass until the District Court ruled on the dismissal motions. Then, no matter how the Court ruled,

he'd argue that I failed to take timely action to respond to his notice that my Complaint was not properly served, and ask the Court to dismiss the case against his client. So I filed for an "Application for Default" against Cybertech, which assumed the Complaint had been properly served. That should force the issue and prevent Cybertech's lawyer from claiming I sat on my rights.

An Application for Default is just the first step in a long process. If approved, the District Court eventually holds a hearing on whether to enter a default judgment against the defendant. The Court would deny the application, which it did, because default is a drastic measure that says the plaintiff wins as a result of the defendant failing to show up and oppose the accusations against him. Courts don't like to do that, and that wasn't my purpose. The purpose was to get Cybertech to appear in the District Court, a legal technicality by which the Court would then have power over Cybertech. The porn lawyer would then have to either accept the service as proper or move that it wasn't. It also showed the Court that I wasn't sleeping on my rights. In order to goad Cybertech's lawyer into appearing, I sent him a copy of the Application for Default even though it wasn't required. The Application showed the District Court the kind of sleaze operation Cybertech ran and exploited the cliché of illiterate goons pimping girls.

Cybertech ran an on-line prostitution business through its Strip Club Escorts at [www.stripclubescorts.com](http://www.stripclubescorts.com). The copies of the web pages that I included as exhibits in the Application showed some tame pictures of hos for sale as "Dinner Companions," "Nightlife Companion," "Weekend Getaways," and "Business Trips." Pretty good advertising for hoods, they spelled six words correct out of eight. Cybertech also offered hos for bachelor parties and translation services, which isn't normally part of a call girl operation unless the sluts are foreign, as in illegal aliens. Cybertech touted "We offer numerous packages to suit your needs whether it

is professional or personal. Call now to find out about custom packages to cater to whatever your individual needs might be. No matter what the occasion, our talents will inevitably be the primary attraction at your event.” By “talents” they meant whores.

Predictably, Cybertech’s lawyer sent the District Court a letter opposing my application with the proverbial insulting language directed towards me. But with that letter, Cybertech appeared in Court, and its lawyer would have to either accept service or make a motion claiming it improper. As for the Application for Default issue, the porn lawyer’s letter meant nothing, as did my letter in response. But my response letter did give me another opportunity to show the District Court some more examples of what Cybertech sold and show up the lawyer as unschooled in the law.

Cybertech’s lawyer claimed my Application “during the holiday season is indicative of the underhanded, though clumsy, manner in which Plaintiff has attempted to gain a judgment over Cybertech without providing that company with a fair opportunity to respond to allegations against it.” To which I pointed out that the lawyer didn’t understand that an Application for Default was just the first step towards a judgment for default, and that no matter how quickly the Court acted, a judgment would not occur during the Christmas season. “In addition, there is no requirement that an Application for Default be served on the defendant. Apparently, Cybertech’s attorney does not know this either. But in the spirit of fairness and openness, the application was served on Cybertech’s attorney. In any event, since service of the application has had the effect of prodding Cybertech’s attorney to finally appear on behalf of his client, I request the Court either set a schedule for Cybertech to answer or file a motion to dismiss. The attorney’s reason for delaying his response to the Complaint served six months ago because he was not admitted to

the Southern District appears disingenuous, since he could have applied to the Court to appear pro hac vice—it's only \$25.”

Cybertech's attorney also called the RICO action against his client “ill-conceived,” that I “had to know that Cybertech Internet Solutions was not incorporated under the name Cybertech Internet Strip Club Network” and my “failure to exercise due diligence with respect to the matter of properly designating Cybertech in the Complaint is unprofessional and inexcusable.” These defense lawyers just couldn't get away from name-calling or making claims as to what I knew. The attorney's reference to Cybertech Internet Strip Club Network , however, gave me an opening to include some pages of smut showing that Cybertech operated a porno and call girl site under the name of Cybertech Internet Strip Club Network. Included in my response were pages from Cybertech's “Global Porn Host” site showing one girl mouthing a silver dildo and another drenched in a white substance dripping from her naked body. That ought to get the Court's attention and tick off the porn lawyer as well as the Feminazi sycophants in the halls of injustice.

Cybertech's attorney further claimed I didn't use its registered name in order to “create the unfair impression that there is a linkage between Cybertech and some of the other defendants.” Naturally this less than truthful attorney ignored that Cybertech hosted and managed Flash Dancers website, sounded like a “linkage” to me and probably did to the Court as well. As a final dig at the attorney, I notified the Court that the New York Secretary of State listed Cybertech as an “inactive” corporation, which meant it failed to pay the yearly franchise fee charged every corporation, implying it's a dead beat. The Court decided to include Cybertech in the motion schedule.

On the Road Again

In early January 2004, Blackie called to see whether I'd like to go on one last road trip. His days were numbered, the cancer was back, but he kept hanging in there. For me, life held nothing other than my battle for justice against the Commie Ho, her ne'er-do-well criminal allies and the Feminazis—a true axis of evil. But I had time for a short vacation.

“Where to?” I asked.

“Texas and Mexico where it's warm, and I can walk on the beach one last time.”

“Could be the last time for both of us.”

Blackie laughed, “Yeah, Roy boy, nothing but blue skies ahead.”

To which I laughed appreciating the utter absurdity of our lives and remembering a quote from *A Candle In Hell*, “To realize the uselessness, purposelessness, worthlessness and hopelessness of our lives is to be truly strong.” Both Blackie and I had finally achieved the realization part, knew in our guts the truth of it, but the strength seemed to elude us both. The trip held all the promise of a Pirandello play but still sounded good to me. I always liked the beach. It brought a peace but never any answers, which didn't matter anymore, since I now knew the answers, although too late to do me any good. One final trip to sun, balmy breezes and young girls in bikinis appealed to my foreboding mental state in dreary, gray and cold New York City. Besides, the time spent would bring me a little closer to oblivion.

“When do you want to go?” I asked.

“Well, I'm thinking of mid January for a week. You can fly into Memphis or New Orleans; I'll meet you there. Memphis would be better for me.”

“Let's do Memphis. There's a lull in my RICO work right now. I'm just waiting for the American defendants' lawyers to reply to my opposition memorandum that I filed in December.”

“I thought they already put in their motions.”

“They did, but still get a chance to reply to my opposition. The way the whole procedure works is that the plaintiff first files a complaint. Then the defendants’ attorneys, assuming their clients guilty, use a motion to dismiss memorandum to shout and scream about how evil and misguided is the plaintiff and how innocent are the defendants. After ranting on with as much hostility and ridicule that their command of the English language permits, they throw in a few fake legal arguments and then ask the court to bounce the plaintiff’s case out into the street. The plaintiff, assuming he’s not a goon like the defendants, responds with an opposition memorandum in which he tries to expose the defense attorneys’ lies and asks the court to let the case proceed. Finally, the defense lawyers get the last written word called a reply in which they usually tell even more lies than the first time and more outrageously assail the plaintiff’s character because he has no more opportunities to write another memorandum countering the defense attorneys’ latest falsehoods.”

“So, you don’t get the final word to show up these other lawyers as liars?”

“That’s right, but I can request an oral argument, which I did, and hope this District Judge grants it.”

“Don’t you have a right to an oral argument?”

“No, so you see the more defense lawyers lie in their final memorandum, called the reply, the better for them, since no court has the time to check all the lies, assuming they tell a lot of them like the guys I’m up against. And even if the Court grants me oral argument, there’s no way it’ll give me enough time to expose all their deceptions.”

“What a system! Just like everything else in America, geared for the crooks. So when do they send you their reply?”

“Dubin, the defense’s lead lawyer, called a few days ago to ask me to agree to an extension of time. He said he had been on vacation and didn’t read my 147-page memorandum yet. I’m sure he was on vacation, just as I’m sure he was lying about not reading my memorandum.”

“A hundred and forty seven pages you wrote!”

“That’s how long it took to counter the defense’s lies, prevarications and tricks in their 66-page memorandum.”

“So how’d you know the lead lawyer was lying?”

“Because lawyers always try to create false assumptions in their opponents—the better to upset them with surprises, just a form of psychological warfare. This clown even told me that his second memorandum, the reply, would be shorter than the first. No it wouldn’t; it’ll be longer. That’s why he wants the additional time.”

“Did you give him more time?”

“I told him he could have all the time he wanted. Besides, whether I agreed to an extension or not, the District Court would probably grant it, since courts figure the more time that goes by, the more likely the parties will get fed up with the case and agree to a settlement.”

“Are you willing to settle?”

“It depends; I’ll see. But I’ll have to get passed their motion to dismiss. If the District Court throws my case out, there will be no settlement offer from them unless I win an appeal—if then?”

“Well at least you’re costing them money and a lot of aggravation.”

“Yeah, isn’t that a shame. As a lawyer, you don’t always have to win a case, to win a case.” We laughed and picked some dates for our road trip.



In mid-January I flew into Memphis.

The weather was a little cool but sunny, and Blackie and I figured it'd warm up on our way south. Blackie had changed our destination from Texas and Mexico to Mississippi and the Florida panhandle, "I didn't think Mexico was so far away until I looked at the map," he said.

"You mean you were planning this trip based on what you learned in our third grade class on geography?"

"Yeah," he laughed.

"Oh brother, I can imagine where this trip is going." Laughing myself. "I remember that class, and we like the rest of the guys spent most of our time trying to look up the hot young blonde teacher's dress."

"Yet, I had forgotten about her. No wonder you were always getting into trouble, so you could stay after class!"

Our first stop: Elvis' house. Rather small, and boy did he have bad taste in decorating, but who I am I to criticize the king of rock 'n' roll. We then drove into northern Mississippi just across the Tennessee border where Blackie had booked a room in a casino-hotel. There were a bunch of casino-hotels in this area. Mississippi, always one of the poorest states in the country, finally found a booming industry that attracted the geriatric set. Except for one girl selling spiked juice drinks, who was married and couldn't speak understandable English, at least the English I spoke, I didn't spot one good looking young babe in the casinos we went to. Blackie didn't care, since he liked the thrill of gambling or more accurately the chance of easy money with no work. Gambling only bored me, I wanted to hit on the showgirls, but there were none—not even a show.

Next day we headed due south, still cool weather but now no sun. Miles and miles of nothing, except for one huge confederate flag flying over what looked like a rebel camp. Blackie wasn't up for dropping in to see what was going on there.

“Why not?” I said. “After all, who won the war, them or us? We'll just tell them we're following up on Reconstruction.”

“Yeah, I'll let you off, but don't choke on my dust as I leave you there.”

At dusk, we found a motel in the Capitol Jackson. At 8 p.m., I left Blackie in the motel suffering from some ancillary lung problems to find me some dinner and check out this rebel town. Stopped in a trendy spot for the worst hot turkey sandwich of my life, then drove around. Nothing moved on the streets other than a car or two. What did these people do for a social life, cotillions once a year? I'll stay in New York City, thank you. I went back to the motel. Blackie and I continued to have lots of laughs about our lives that found two middle-aged Yankee men taking a road trip through the confederacy.

The next day, we reached Biloxi on the Gulf Coast. There were no teenage girls in bikinis, no sunny skies, no hot sun, no balmy breezes, just the cold down pour of rain soaking a deserted beach.

“So where's the tropical beach you promised?” I sarcastically asked. “Want to go take a walk in the cold rain swept sands? We can pick up some monsoon gear.”

“Hey, it's not my fault. Last time I was here, it was sunny, warm and girls all over the place?”

“And when was that—July or August?”

“No, it was back in the nineties, same time of year, January.”

“Yeah, probably during El Nino! Didn't you check the weather forecasts?”

“Nah, I didn’t have the energy.”

“Oh, you’re wheezing lungs again.” I needled him. “I can see you at home with your wife, ‘Oh, dear get me this, do that, I’m feeling some palpitations.’ Hey come to New York. I’ll get you some Latina ladies to give you real palpitations.” We laughed at the absurdity of our last road trip on which the gods, as with our lives, decided to rain.

Driving along Beach Boulevard, we looked for a place to stay. This part of Biloxi looked real nice with large old houses lined up facing the Gulf Coast. What a great place to live before the casinos invaded with the traffic jams and the usual riff-raff of which we were two. One casino sign advertised Sarah Brightman, so I told Blackie to pull over. I wanted to catch her act. Probably the hottest babe in entertainment, Brightman knew how to make men want her and ladies want to be like her. She was the complete antithesis of the no make-up, sexless Feminazi that deluded itself into thinking it was beautiful. Brightman epitomized what Mother Nature intended in creating woman, pure femininity and very dangerous for men. She would have been a joy to watch and to daydream about, but we were a week too early. What did I expect for a trip organized by my buddy Blackie? We found a nice quiet motel—well, actually the entire state of Mississippi rates as quiet. There wasn’t much to do in Biloxi other than hang out at the casinos and catch a very tame showgirls act that was probably on the high school circuit.

Our second day, still rainy, and while driving along Beach Boulevard we started talking about our childhoods back in Midland Park, New Jersey. Blackie enjoyed his, except for a pontificating hypocrite of an uncle who naturally was friends with my father—Nazis always stick together.

“My days growing up were hell.” I replied. “As bad as things are now, my childhood was worse.”

“What was so bad? Your father was a jerk, but your mother always seemed nice.”

Blackie said.

“Nice like the Queen of the Damned. She only pretended to be nice for those outside the family, but inside, she was the real horror, ranting and raving. She did more harm to my brother and me than our father.”

“I never saw that. Your mother always smiled and acted friendly while your father never said a word, just gave me a cold-dead stare like what are you doing here.” Blackie recalled mockingly.

“Acted is right. Sincerity never existed behind that phony smile of a mask or the melodious voice she used to trick people. The only honest feelings she ever expressed were cold-blooded self-interest, greed and anger. Not unlike the Commie Ho. Actually, I’d like to resurrect mother, so I could lock her in a room with the ex-wife. Father was never as dangerous; everyone knew he was a miserable jerk. I learned by five to never tell him the truth and avoid him as much as possible, which wasn’t hard since he was trying to stay away from mother and the house as much as he could. Given the she-devil he married, I can’t blame him.”

“At least you had your older brother.”

“Not really. When I was eight, they sent him away to prep school, which left me to face the full brunt of the witch’s brew of mother’s failing looks and menopause. It was around then that I somehow became convinced mother was trying to poison me. Maybe it was her ranting that she wished she never had me, blaming me for the ills of her life and the hormonal lunacy of her menopause. Gee, maybe I could have killed her and argued her hormones made me do it? A unique defense and ahead of its time.”

“Yeah, they would have stuck you in an orphanage.”

“It would have been better than where I was. If only I had known? Anyway, whenever I sat down at the dinner table while my brother was away at school and father at one of his political meetings or working overseas, I’d wonder whether it was my last meal, whether she’d get me this time. For weeks, I searched my food in dread, ate as little as possible, refused to eat anything she didn’t and took the portions myself rather than let her dish them out. I believed she was either using chemicals from my father’s laboratory in the basement, where he sometimes did experiments on projects from work, or killer worms from one of the sci fi movies she took me to. Was it all paranoia I was born with? I don’t think so, but it came from somewhere.”

“No, your parents are responsible for that.” Blackie said with certainty. “A little kid doesn’t go around thinking his mother is trying to poison him for no reason at all. A whole pattern of behavior by both of them over years brought you to that point.” Then Blackie raised his voice, “Damn Den Hollander! Your wife ended up doing to you what you feared as a kid your mother was doing. What the hell are the odds of that?”

I sunk back in my seat with the surprise. “Jesus, you’re right! I never put the two together. The Commie Ho actually feeding me drugs with the fear of my mother poisoning me. Is this the fulfillment of a prophecy or my entire life a revolting imagining?”

“Hey, I read your ex-wife’s diary and her slipping you drugs was no imagining. You’re one unlucky guy Den Hollander,” to which we both laughed at the sheer absurdity.

“That’s not all,” I continued. “After I thought I beat the poisoning attempts, I figured she decided to hire a hit man. She’d come into my bedroom at night and open the window right next to my bed for ‘fresh air’. Why didn’t she open the window on the other side of the room like before, I’d ask myself? So there I lay awake most the night, week after week, waiting for her hit man to put his arm through the opened window and blow my head off.”

“That’s why you’ve always been so hostile.” Blackie concluded. “No one could grow up in those conditions and not be angry all the time. My aunt always said your parents were sick.”

“Well, your aunt should have warned me about them and my future wife.”

Blackie laughed, “Looks like the close of your life is making good on warnings from its beginning. Didn’t you say your ex-wife would eventually hire some Russian hit man to take you out?”

“That she will, that she will. I’m sure of it. She’s got the money and the temperament. She already took out a contract with one of her mafia associates in Krasnodar to keep me from testifying against her before the INS.”

“Yeah, but the INS isn’t going to go to the bother of calling you to testify. They let six al Qaeda terrorists become citizens and didn’t care about the 911 hijackers, so why should they care about one Russian mob prostitute.”

“You’re right. That’s why the Krasnodar contract never bothered me, but when the court proceedings end and she eventually becomes a citizen, then she’ll seek revenge for my audacity to expose the truth about her. But I have a contingency plan for dealing with that.”

“What’s the plan?”

“Nah, that would be telling.”

After a couple of days in Biloxi, we tried to drive east to Florida, but it rained so heavy we went back to Biloxi. Blackie did his gambling while I looked for chicks to flirt with, but the best prospect was a high schooler I came across working behind the counter in a stationary store. Needing a pen, I took the opportunity to chat her up. When I let drop that I came from New York City, girls in the provinces always find that alluring, she smiled, told me about her cousin

who was going to attend college there. She got to giggling at an ad-lib joke or two of mine and then her mother walks out from behind the curtains. I bought my pen and left.

On our third day, still raining, we took in a gun show, nothing else was going on in town. The gun show included dealers and individuals selling pistols, rifles, shotguns and even AK-47s. Many experts consider these Russian assault rifles more reliable and durable than the U.S. M-16. The AK-47s sold for \$450 each, not bad if I wanted to take out a Mc Donald's, but I didn't.

Most people mistakenly think the Second Amendment to the U.S. Constitution, which guarantees the right to keep and bear arms, was passed so that Americans could hunt for food and shoot for sport. Not at all, the amendment exists to give ordinary citizens the power to take down an unjust administration whenever, as the Declaration of Independence states, "any form of government becomes destructive of these ends" by which it means life, liberty and the pursuit of happiness. A lot of tin pot dictators throughout history never would have had a chance if their citizens owned as many guns as the average non New Yorker. The effete, feminine, white trash, antigun elite can't seem to understand that. Their new god—the therapist—has pumped them up with so many drugs, excuses and self-righteous delusions that they will live on their knees before any tyranny, all the while believing themselves superior to those willing to pick up the gun to fight for their rights.

Another reason the Founding Fathers wanted Americans to own guns was so they'd have a fighting chance when attacked by some lunatic or outlaw. Nothing better deters cowards and criminals with a gun than another gun in the hands of their intended victim. The Political Correctionalists actually believe the government should eliminate guns from the entire country—the entire law abiding country, but what about the hoodlums and illegal aliens? The bleeding heart lefties have so twisted government priorities that limited resources are used to crack down

on law-abiding, gun-owning Americans who want to protect themselves rather than being used to protect those citizens from criminal illegals.

The following day, still no sunshine, still cold, but less rain, we drove back to the casino-hotel in northern Mississippi near Memphis where we first stayed. No rooms because of what looked like a nursing home patients' convention had filled the hotel. Mother of mercy, could this be my end, wheeling my drooling self into a casino years from now? There has to be a better way. We finally found a motel, and the next day took our separate flights home. What do you say when two old friends know they'll probably never see each other again? Nothing, except the usual goodbyes. Blackie turned and walked to his flight and I to mine. On the plane, I understood that when you are finished, but before it's over, you no longer have those hopes, illusions and preoccupations that get you to the next moment. Life just hangs there barren and empty waiting for the next event to come along, until, finally, there are none left.

#### I'm Looking Through You

When I arrived back in New York, an email message was waiting for me from Traviesa—now that surprised me. She had moved out in such a huff just before the 911 attack that I figured there goes another person I'll never hear from again and probably just as well. She and her Austro-Hungarian cousin had depleted my net worth by at least \$2500 through one favor or another.

Girls are always running an angle to get something from a man by false sweetness and light, pretending to be an object of sympathy and using enticements of sexual delights never delivered. Girls figure all us guy for suckers, and don't give a hang who gets hurt, so long as it's a guy. As with con artists, girls are adept at creating the illusion that a guy can trust them, but once he does—he's sorry. When Traviesa needed a place to stay in April 2001, I thought about



making her pay with sex. But there was something about that girl, maybe her Cheshire smile, that told me when we first met to stay out of her pants. So, what did she want now?

Dear Roy,

You are probably surprised that I am writing you (maybe positive or maybe negative way). It has been a long time so it is hard for me to find proper words, but it is not so hard to write. I want to forget my pride for once because it is childish, even though, it took me such a long time. Lately, I have been thinking a lot and I would like to reach out to you and hear from you again. It bothers me that we said good bye to each other in such an upset way and that time it hurt me because it was not truth, I would never forget what you have done for me and I would be there for you as well.

I am employed in a normal job and I am not little Traviesa anymore... When I think of you I feel very closed to you—when I was lost and alone, confused in a big NY, you were there.... I want to write so many things, but I do not know how you feel about this. I want to know how is everything with you. I want you to know that you were one of my best friends and I think of you quite often. I think we got along great. I remember how you used to say: Where is Traviesa, there is a trouble...

If your feelings are similar and you can break the ice, please, write me. If you are not interested so at least I have tried to tell you that you are still deep in my heart, there is not many people out there like you.....

--Traviesa from Central Europe—Eastern Europ

After reading her email, I wanted to drop everything—to run and hide. Traviesa was accomplished at manipulating guys; I'd seen her in action and listened to her stories. Maybe she was telling the truth, but I couldn't afford to believe it.

Over the years, I have noticed a funny thing about girls: if a guy shows no sexual interest in them, they start confiding all these lured details of their exploits. The kind of stuff most men believe occurs only in the movies—ha! These girls brag like the guys I went to high school with, only they are telling the truth. Having glimpsed the inner workings of Traviesa from her own mouth and tasted the trouble that bubbled in the wake of her nubile hips, I went on Red Alert!

Most of what she wrote didn't jive, especially that part of being lost, alone and confused in a "big N.Y." While here, she and her cousin lived the nightlife, staying out to sunrise, pursuing this guy or that, usually ones with money. After 911, they both went back to Europe.

Two years later, she's contacting me—why? Revenge, maybe, girls are innately vindictive, and they never forget a slight. But what was her game plan? She couldn't possibly think me dumb enough to let her stay in my apartment again, assuming she made it back into the U.S. Suddenly, I pulled away from those alluring words in the email with the suspicion that perhaps this was not Traviesa at all. Maybe the Commie Ho, who knew Traviesa and my connection with her, concocted this email of pretending to be Traviesa in order to obtain incriminating statements from me for use in the reply memorandum that the defense lawyers were preparing. Perhaps that's why the defense lawyers wanted a time extension: to give this latest con room to work.

Since I'm a party in the RICO case, anything I say, no matter to whom or through whatever medium, is admissible in the District Court, so long as it helps the defendants. If it helps me, I can't use it. The reason for this rule of evidence is that while people always lie about the great things they do, they rarely lie about the bad things. So the courts assume that when a person admits something that can be used against him in court, it's probably true. My experience with the defense lawyers told me they would pounce on any statement they could rend into showing me as a bad character.

Writing back in a friendly manner, I asked a couple of questions only Travesia could answer and for her telephone numbers in Europe in order to let whomever sent the email know I would call to check whether it was Traviesa. She answered the questions and the telephone numbers checked out as hers, so this was indeed the Traviesa. But that didn't obviate the

possibility of her scamming me in order to help the Commie Ho and the defendants in return for assistance from Mundy's firm in getting her tight Austro-Hungarian ass back into America. If Traviesa wanted anything, it was a rich guy in New York City. So I played along with whatever her scheme was, but always kept in mind that everything I emailed might go right back to the Commie Ho, Mundy and the other defendants.

When Traviesa asked me about Angelina, the Commie Ho, I answered "Angelina who?" When she asked what I did for a living, I told her I spent most my time on RICO cases, which was true. When she asked about my social life, I told her Mark, who had scored with her cousin, and I chased girls at the Latin clubs. Nothing in any of those answers that the defense attorneys could twist against me.

Traviesa then started writing about romance as girls always do in their eternal effort to make guys think all girls are "good girls." She complained that men only want a good time, but she wasn't "like that." She needed "feelings first, not just this."

How many times have I heard that malarkey? The truth is that girls do want "just this," just sex. There in lies their power and greatest thrill, more of a thrill and more power for them than guys. But they pretend otherwise in order to shake down a guy for as much as possible. To "sex him" as they say, meaning metaphorically and literally: shake those boobies, but when he comes for the goodies—"Stop! I'm not that kind of girl unless you do this or that for me." Baloney, they're all that kind of girl. For years, I stupidly believed girls were actually capable of trust and loyalty and treated them as such. They aren't. The only way to deal with them is to see them for what they are—play toys, and that's it. Any other view opens a man to their sexually exploitative ways, assuming they're young, while behind his back they laugh at his foolish belief in their fidelity. A girl wants men—that's plural—to comprise all the pieces on a chessboard

that she controls with the centerpiece her prince charming who can afford all the things she wants and is dumb enough to believe what she tells him. As Lord Byron wrote, “Man's love is of man's life a thing apart, 'Tis woman's whole existence.” Girls put the same effort and deviousness into sexual affairs as men do their careers and war.

Traviesa’s overly used complaint about men found no commiseration in me. Girls always try to make men feel guilty so that dames will benefit from every man’s efforts to make amends. Feminazis use the same tactic, but expand it to sucker guys into giving them jobs, status and respect they don’t deserve. It’s important to remember that Eve suckered Adam into biting the apple—not the other way around. Although unsympathetic with Traviesa, I was courteous and advised her to stop blaming men, “You obviously have not read the book you borrowed and still have, I assume, *The Anatomy of Love*. You have to make an effort if you want someone to help you raise your children. There are no more old maids, but plenty of middle-aged Feminazis incapable of compromise that will cry themselves to sleep every night until they die because they don’t have a man.”

Traviesa’s emails, however, kept playing the sympathy card, “I know I should give in, but maybe there is someone still waiting for me. Here is not easy to find someone. It is not like N.Y. where you can pick up chicks. People here are more responsible then over there. By the time they reach my age, 26, they are either married with at least an apartment or they have a serious relationship. At the clubs and bars you can find only teens or some empty losers. I do not go out often, almost no clubs....”—more feminine clichés. It must be a law of physics that hot-looking babes in clubs rarely go to clubs since that’s what they always tell me. Guess I’m supposed to believe my running into them in a club is an extraordinary bit of luck that beat the universe’s odd? I don’t think so. Good-looking girls live in clubs.

On another sympathy note, Traviesa claimed that before the Communists took over her country, her family of royal blood owned woods, lands and, I assume, serfs. Ignoring this fairy tale trap, I reverted to the lawyer in me and suggested she look into suing the current government to get back her family's land or for reparations. "You may become a landed princess after all," I wrote with my tongue in my cheek.

Whatever Traviesa or perhaps the Commie Ho wanted from me with these emails, they weren't getting. Traviesa stopped writing for a couple of months, and I assumed the scheme ended, but then one last email arrived just a few weeks before the defendants' reply memorandum was finally due. The email and its timing made some of the hidden intentions clearer. She apologized for not replying to my last email sooner and closed with the clincher: "In May there is a lottery going on the green card, so maybe I will be lucky. You know I am a big spender, so N.Y. is the place for me, where I can improve myself, this job is taking away my motivation and ideas." If only Traviesa was behind the emails, she obviously wanted my help to get her into the U.S. in return for dollars or maybe sex. If the Commie Ho stood, as she usually does in the shadows, then the two of them were setting me up for violating the immigration law.

Normally anyone, particularly criminals and terrorists, can violate U.S. law with impunity, especially the immigration statute. But for a lawyer who has complained to the INS Inspector General about that agency's failure to enforce the laws, the bureaucrats would make an exception to nail me for even the appearance of impropriety. No I'm dumb, but not that dumb. So I suggested Traviesa get her hotel employer, which runs a hotel in New York City right across the street from Flash Dancers, to send her to America, and ended with, "Face it Traviesa, you're not going to be happy until you find a rich guy in New York City." That ended that scheme. Traviesa or the Commie Ho standing behind her wasn't fooling me anymore. No dame was.

After decades, I finally understood the Janus, spoiled nature of girls. They all suffer from that unique feminine illusion that the mere fact of their being female exempts them from civilized behavior.

When a girl speaks words of endearment, paints herself up and dresses in tight revealing clothes, she's advertising sex, not using sex to sell something, but selling sex in return for a heavy tax on a man's life. Like all good advertisers, she intentionally aims to stimulate and manipulate the emotions in men with deception. But when the guy fails to do what she wants or the guy she wants doesn't respond, she curses out criticisms as did one girl in my Salsa class who used the Feminazi tactic of trying to publicly shame men into obsequiousness. Out of nowhere, this girl starts haranguing guys in general for not dancing enough to suit her taste, and exasperatedly claimed, "You can't ask a guy to dance because it will insult their machismo." So I chimed in "Maybe guys want to select, rather than settle. If you walk into a used car dealership, and a driverless car pulls up along side of you, pops its door open, I don't think you're going to get in for ride." Boy did that tick the broads off. So what, it was the truth. Girls will tell any lie, cheat any guy and commit any crime to get what they want, and they want everything—name it, they want it. They are the primordial apostles of greed, whether for money or power.

Feminazi or not, if female, she'll ruthlessly exploit the attraction, protectiveness and tolerance Mother Nature bred in men for girls. For example, a friend and I were walking down the street when this middle-aged broad, obviously a Feminazi, walking towards us sees my friend and breaks into a big friendly come hither smile. Seeing those high beams on him, I'm thinking she's either a long time friend or some older female who's got the hots for him. Listening to their conversation, it turned out she was a civil court judge trying to move up the ladder to the

New York State Supreme Court, and wanted my friend's help. On saying goodbye and again asking for his help, she shines the smile again and kisses him on the cheek with half a hug. As she walks away, my buddy turns to me to say, "She's a lesbo." I laughed, what a phony! Her sexual airs were only feigned female flirtations to get what she wanted. Give her a little authority, and she'll cut my friend's throat merely to confirm her power. My pal thought little of her judicial ability, and said he'd oppose her for the Supreme Court. In a meritocracy, she won't have a prayer at any judgeship, but this is Feminarchy America where females are obsessed with power and will use sex or any other means to get it.

The problem with females as judges or politicians is they are constitutionally unable to handle the pressures of administering the law and politics. They lack the political tolerance and self-restraint that democracy requires. Their passive-aggressive personalities make it impossible to rely on their words while their mixture of timidity and hysteria make it both a waste and danger to give them power. They are unable to compromise because compromise assumes a rough equality, which their innate arrogance will not allow for fear it may unmask their feelings of inferiority. For example, Catherine the Great ended up bankrupting Russia and creating the problems in Chechnya that still plague her country with slaughter in the subway, on airplanes and in schoolhouse bombings. When females move into men's roles in society, it leads not only to less effective social institutions as a result of their incompetence and lack of requisite abilities but to a society permeated with corruption and cover-ups as broads abuse their authority the way princesses did and hide their ineptitude—after all, nobody lies as good as a dame.

Despite females' inability to handle jobs evolutionarily suited for men, Feminazis ceaselessly whine about "equal pay for equal work." The she-males of America, which is what

the Feminazis and their advocates are trying to turn us all into, claim females receive around 77% the pay of men for doing the same job. Sounds like discrimination, but is it?

According to the *U.S. Bureau of Labor Statistics' 2007 Time Use Survey*, men spend 144% as many hours working as females do. So for every hour the average guy works, the average girl works 42 minutes. If both are paid \$1 for a full hour of work, then the guy should receive \$1 for each hour he is on the job, but the girl, since she only works 42 minutes out of the hour as compared to the guy, should receive \$.69. An appropriate number for a girl, but less than the \$.77 she now receives. So girls are actually paid more than guys when measured on a per unit of time basis. It's understandable the Feminazis didn't figure this out, since math is not a girl's strong point, so they would logically ignore the mathematical way of making comparisons.

The Feminazis also ignore that the real measure should not be “equal pay for equal work” but “equal pay for equal quality of work.” Take professional basketball, why should WNBA players receive as much money as the guys in the NBA who play better ball. Now if the WNBA went topless—maybe. Holding down a similar job doesn't mean the performance is equal. If it did, then an employer could hire four girls for the price of three men, maintain quality and increase his output by one-third, which would enable him to cut prices and drive his competitors out of business.

Putting the truth about salaries aside, how come the Government and media never talk about the inequality of inheritance between husbands and wives? Spouses inherit money because they put energy, effort and time into a relationship, not unlike building a business partnership. Actually, the laws of many states consider marriage an economic partnership. When the partnership ends with the death of one spouse, the other is guaranteed a certain percentage, but more often than not ends up with the full value of the partnership. Surviving



spouses are usually females, but that wasn't always the case. At the beginning of the 20<sup>th</sup> Century the average life span for men and females was the same at around 47 years. Over one hundred years later, however, as the result of a disproportionate amount of medical research spent on female-specific ailments and society channeling a disproportionately high percentage of men into the most dangerous jobs in the "tombstone basement," females live an average of six years longer. Since they live longer, females receive more inheritance dollars from men than men receive from females. Sounds like discrimination to me.

In the name of equality, the Feminazi rallying cry, all females receiving an inheritance from deceased husbands should be taxed to the extent that allows for balancing out the inequality of inheritance. The proceeds from the tax should go to all living married men and widowers in order to make inheritance "gender" neutral. Equal inheritance for equal work adheres to Feminazi, or more accurately, female logic, but it will never happen because it benefits men. Feminazism exists solely to benefit females that can't attract a man because of their looks, failed upkeep or attitude. By neutering both sexes, these failed females hope to feel less inferior.

### Every Breath You Take

While waiting for the next flare up of legal hostilities, I began searching for where the Commie Ho currently stripped. The last sighting of her at work dated back to October 2002, when my bartender friend Tom caught her stripping at Flash Dancers. But the following summer my process server couldn't find her there, so he ended up handing her the RICO papers at her apartment in Astoria, Queens. The bouncers at Flash Dancers told my process server that she no longer stripped there, but what about all those bus and taxi posters running around New York City with her mug on them advertising Flash Dancers? False advertising, or one blonde ho was as good as another? Who knew, but I sure wasn't going to believe muscle-heads in a strip club.

To find out whether the Commie Ho still worked at Flash Dancers or some other ho den I hired an investigator. He checked Flash Dancers off and on but no Commie Ho, and concluded she no longer shook her tits and ass at Flash Dancers. The Commie Ho would never switch to a legitimate day job—not enough money, so she was stripping at some other house of ill repute. But which one?

No matter where the Commie Ho lap danced, she'd lie about stripping to the Court, and I would have to prove that as part of my strategy to impeach her credibility. Like all girls, the Ho hides behind a mask of virtue that compels her to lie about the tawdry world from which she makes so much money, at least 500 to 600 grand tax-free from a little over three and a half years in the American dream: July 2000 to February 2004. On her earlier return visits to Krasnodar, she used to tell her acquaintances that she worked as a translator in Moscow, but after my visits in 2001, no one believed that line anymore, if they ever did. In America, she used modeling as her cover. But what Russians or the average American thought about her, I didn't care. It was the Court I wanted to convince of her habit for lying. All I needed to do was catch her in a series of lies, and the District Court would stop believing anything she said, no matter how crucial to her defense—I hoped.

The Commie Ho had not only lied to the INS and the Department of State about her occupation, but also lied to the New York State Supreme Court and the I.R.S. in claiming to work only as a model and bartender. The bartending was false and modeling only partly true, but they created the false impression of how she earned her money because they left out lap dancing. The Commie Ho still didn't realize that by omitting an important part of the truth, a federal judge or jury would see it as an intentional lie. She always thought that lying by omission was not lying. The moment she lied under oath about not stripping, I would need

evidence to prove she lied. That evidence would go a long way to impeaching her credibility by showing she worked mainly as a stripper who made a lot more money than she never declared. Despite the Feminazis' attempts to make such a profession respectable, most judges and jurors consider the girls working in strip clubs as walking frauds and prostitutes.

My search for the Commie Ho's place of employment began by obtaining her Equifax credit report through one of my investigators. Sometimes these reports contain a person's current employer. Different P.I.s are good at different tasks. This one had access to lots of different records while another private eye did excellent surveillance. The Commie Ho's Equifax report, however, didn't show any employer, but it did list four credit cards for her, three from banks—Chase, Citibank and Provident—and one from Macy's. If, as she had done in the past, the Commie Ho used the bankcards for transferring money overseas, it would leave a record trail I could subpoena. The credit cards also provided me with another knife into her credibility because she'll lie about having them in order to cover up her money laundering. Both uses, however, would have to wait until the case moved to a later stage.

My private eye tried another method for finding where the Commie Ho worked. Every state keeps records on a quarterly basis for the employees in that state who receive W-2 tax forms. Hooking doesn't generate W-2s, but some lap-dancing clubs do hire the girls as employees for a small amount, as with waitresses, which requires issuing a W-2. Such clubs take a cut of the money the hos make giving lap dances with the hos receiving most of it. Flash Dancers didn't do this, but if the Commie Ho switched to a club that hired her as an employee, there would be a record. A check of New Jersey and New York, however, turned up nothing, so I assumed she worked in a club like Flash Dancers where the strippers pay the club a set fee each night and work only for "tips" from the customers. Clubs such as Flash Dancers avoid filing a

W-2 or even the 1099 required for independent contractors because each time a girl strips, the club claims the guy who paid her the \$20 hired her. That's the superficial interpretation. The I.R.S. is suppose to look at the reality of a transaction, which means the girls really work for the club because it provides the facilities, tells them what to do and makes money off of the young hos offering their charms to the club's customers. So why doesn't the I.R.S. bust these clubs for literally billions in unreported income? Because the Feminazis in the government believe any means of transferring wealth from men to females is justified and should carry no tax.

The only alternative left for uncovering the Commie Ho's place of work meant tailing her. But to do that, first required locating her at a point in time and space. As of the service of the RICO papers in July 2003, she was living in the apartment in Astoria, Queens to which she had moved in December 2000. Checking the outside apartment buzzers for her building at 28-15 34<sup>th</sup> Street, she was still listed in apartment 4H under Chipilina, one of her aliases. To make sure, I called her apartment telephone number, but she had changed it and switched to an unlisted number. One of my private eyes track down the new number, which also confirmed her address as the Astoria building. This told me she still leased the apartment, but whether she lived there or with some guy elsewhere, I didn't know. After making a number of calls to her unlisted phone number with no living person answering, I still didn't know.

She was living there when my process server had caught up with her, but that was eight months ago. Since then, she could have sublet her apartment, and it wouldn't have shown on the telephone records or the apartment building's outside buzzers. Her apartment's mailbox inside the building's lobby listed no one, which it had since she first moved in, so I couldn't tell anything from that. The building didn't have a doorman, which made getting inside easy but information via a bribe impossible. Hiring someone to knock on her door wouldn't work

because after she opened it to my process server, she'd never open it again to someone she didn't know. The Commie Ho generally didn't make the same mistake twice. Despite my uncertainty, I needed to start somewhere. Logic pointed to her still living in the same apartment, since cohabiting with her main sucker would make it too difficult to hide her true profession. The surveillance would first try to pick her up at her subway station, 30<sup>th</sup> Avenue, in Astoria and follow her to work.

In order to save money and because I had the time, I decided to do the tailing myself. The disguises that Bob, my makeup artist client, gave me back in 2002 should prevent the Commie Ho from recognizing me. Hey, if his work was good enough for *Saturday Night Live*, it should serve my purpose. Besides, the Commie Ho couldn't see that well in the evening light because of her laser eye surgery, and that's when I would try to pick her up.

Her schedule was probably similar to the one she had at Flash Dancers. My earlier surveillances for the INS revealed that she left her apartment at around 6 PM and walked to the 30<sup>th</sup> Avenue Station on the N line, one of the last remaining elevated subways in New York City. Usually, she approached the station going west on 30<sup>th</sup> Avenue to the Northeast corner subway stairs at 31<sup>st</sup> Street and took the steps two at a time on her overly long legs up to the turnstiles. After paying her fare, she would go up the northwest stairs to the Manhattan bound platform for the N or W train. On the platform between 6:15 and 6:20 PM, she generally walked directly to the northern most bench to sit down. Stripping all night long with her size 11 feet squeezed into 5-inch heels took its toll, so she sat whenever possible—something all girls do. Sometimes before sitting, she would stretch in preparation for work. Her hair was always braided into a single strain, colored a bright whore blonde that stood out against the requisition all-black Russian outfit. She rarely wore dresses, except for stripping, and never mini-shirts. Too many

guys hit on her she said, but her legs weren't the best. In the winter, she added a black down jacket. Flash Dancers usually closed around 4 AM, and she'd hop a cab back to Astoria.

Around 4:15 AM, her cab would let her off on the southwest corner of 28<sup>th</sup> Road and 34<sup>th</sup> Street, and she'd walked about a hundred feet to her building.

In mid-February 2004, I began staking out the 30<sup>th</sup> Avenue subway platform in the late afternoon and early evening, invisible behind my disguise. The days alternated among Thursday, Friday and Saturday, the high-income producing nights for lap dancers and assorted hos. Confident she'd show, I first positioned myself on the opposite subway platform, but it proved too cold up there, so I moved inside the station to directly behind the token booth. A New York Times, folded in the customary subway fashion provided additional cover. New York subways get so crowded during rush hours that the only way to read the Times, if one likes fiction, required folding the paper length wise and turning the pages in a mind bending way that only New Yorkers seem to master. The subway fold provided an excellent mobile cover that could expand from nearly seven inches wide to fourteen and twenty eight inches in seconds. The Commie Ho, however, never appeared, and she wasn't the type of girl a guy could miss unless he was blind, which I wasn't—physically that is.

No longer so sure she still lived in Astoria, or if she did, whether she still worked at a strip club, I resorted to calling her unpublished home number again. If she answered, then she still lived there, and I'd have to change my surveillance times. She didn't answer, not once, but sometimes the answer machine came on, sometimes a fax tone and sometimes it rang and rang, so someone lived in her apartment to change the settings, but whom? On occasion, however, she would answer her mobile phone, which meant she was still on the planet, but that I already knew. Where was this slut? I couldn't tail her to work until I picked her up at some place and time.

To determine once and for all whether she still lived in the same apartment, I started calling her neighbors on the same floor as hers. The public library carries a directory that lists the names, telephones and apartments for most of the people living in any building in New York City. Here as in Krasnodar everybody knows the local whore, so someone must have seen her around assuming she still lived there. No luck until I reached a young girl, maybe ten years old. Great, she's not about to lie and wants to prove her worth by helping. My pretext was that I worked for a music video production company.

"We just interviewed a girl name Angelina Shipilina for a role, but she failed to leave us her telephone number. All we have is her street address but no apartment number. We're calling people in her building to try to reach her."

"Oh, I know her," the girl said happy to help. "She lives right next to me. She's very tall and blonde and pretty, but I don't know her telephone number."

"That's okay. Do you know her apartment number?"

"Just a minute I'll ask my mom." No, no, no, I'm thinking, not your mother. Mom will grab the telephone, ask questions, become suspicious and might even report back to the Commie Ho.

But the girl didn't leave the telephone to get her mother, instead she yelled right in my ear, "Mom, what's the apartment number next to us?" Her mother answered back and the girl proudly repeated for me, "It's 4H."

"Is she still living there?" I asked after switching the receiver to my other ear.

"Yes, I see her all the time."

"When did you last see her?"

"Just a couple of days ago."

Bingo, the Commie Ho still lived there, but when did she leave the building to go to work? Could she have actually taken a 9 to 5 job? No way, whores never reform, they just say they do. And she wasn't at Flash Dancers anymore. Strip clubs tend to want fresh meat for their customers, and the Commie Ho stripped and prostituted at Flash Dances for over two years. But at which club was she going now? There were dozens and dozens in the New York metropolitan area, which includes not only the five boroughs but also parts of Long Island, Connecticut and New Jersey. The evening shifts, when girls make the most money, start anywhere from 3 PM to 8 PM and end between 12 AM and 4 AM. That's a wide span of time for the Ho to leave for work during which I'd rather not stand on a subway platform in cold.

An idea from my Columbia University Business School training pops into my head to use a statistically valid sample of clubs from which to figure out the most probable times for her heading to work given a travel time of 30 minutes to an hour. Once again I staked out the subway on Thursdays, Fridays and Saturdays— still nothing, so much for the value of Columbia's statistics' courses.

What did the Commie Ho do that left a record of her comings and goings—nothing! But I could get to the same point by knowing when she was usually in and not in her apartment. Most people, even hookers, have a basic schedule to which they adhere even though on the odd day it may vary. Humans are, if anything, creatures of habit. Although I doubted the Commie Ho's humanity, she definitely was a creature. A list of the outgoing telephone calls on her unlisted telephone line would indicate a pattern of when she was at home and when she was not. But how do I get it? A private eye, of course. Unfortunately, the Ho's telephone carrier's priority to maximize profits through cutting expenses derailed this strategy. The company had previously listed in each monthly bill the time of day for all the local calls a customer made, but



a couple of years ago, the carrier replaced reporting the individual calls with the total calls over a period of time. This did me little good. The bills, however, still listed the specific times of the long distance calls, which indicated she was often at home from 10 a.m. to 4 p.m. Monday through Friday, but the information was too little to indicate when she left for work.

The only way to catch her meant staking out the front of her apartment building. Long stakeouts require two guys so that one can keep watch while the other hits the local restaurant for a restroom or deli for food and drink. One leftwing blogger I knew always needed money. We staked out her building from a rented car parked on her street. If she left, I'd drive pass her, turn the corner and leave my partner off to pick her up and tail her to work.

When we started my partner said, "I checked those photos of her on that Russian web site, so I'd be able to recognize her. She's a hot looking babe."

"And that's all. She has no sense of right and wrong; lacks a conscience, integrity and a sense of fair play; is amoral, self-centered, selfish, self-righteous, hypocritical, duplicitous, a phony, pathological liar, dissembler and prevaricator with no socially redeeming qualities whatsoever—a barbarian life force driven by its self-indulgent wants and needs. The nobler qualities of human civilization are absent—compassion, empathy, dignity, self-respect and a respect for others!"

"Ookay," my partner said, "Why don't we talk politics while we wait?"

So we did, as we sat and sat, day after day, early morning, afternoon and early evening but no Commie Ho. I put the stakeout on hold, thinking she might be slipping out the back door or was on vacation in Cyprus or Las Vegas. To determine which, I started snooping around the building on my own.

Dressed in my disguise, I'd wait for a tenant exiting the building, asked for directions to the super's apartment, which they always happily gave while letting me inside, or watched for people turning into the entrance way and quickly moved in behind them, fumbling for my non-existent keys, so they'd hold the door open. Given my appearance, white and anywhere from 40 to 60, no one questioned me. Inside, I checked the side and back of the building. She could go out the back, but to make it to another street required going over a seven-foot wall, not too difficult for a guy, but a girl dressed for work, even in slacks, unlikely. Upstairs, I listened at her apartment door, no noise, looked under it, but no light. Rang the bell and ducked into the stairwell from which I could see the top of her door and whether it opened—it didn't. After doing this a few times on different days with no luck, I switched tactics.

On the roof of the building next door at night, I could see her apartment windows, which weren't visible from the street because her apartment overlooked an alleyway. The windows were always dark. I kept going back looking for the light in the window so that I'd know she was not out of town and could restart the stakeout. On one sojourn while walking up the stairs to the roof door, I saw a red light that I'd never seen before. My next step brought an ear-piercing alarm. The human flight emotion tried to take over, but I said if you run you stand out, so I walked slowly back down the stairs, four flights with the alarm wailing its high pitch noise throughout the building, and not one person came out of their apartments to check it out.

Why was I not surprised? This was the same borough where in 1964 Kitty Genovese pleaded for help after a man stabbed her. The residents heard the cries but did nothing, so the guy came back twice as she lay bleeding on the sidewalk yelling for help, stabbing her each time, sexually assaulting her and finally killing her, and none of her neighbors did a thing. Might history repeat itself with a tall Russian blonde whore? I couldn't be so lucky. The newly

installed roof alarm cost me an excellent spying spot, but I found an alternative by using an alleyway from the next street over to get into the backcourt yard of her building. From there I could see the apartment windows, but still no lights at night.

Where the devil did this ho disappear to? Nearly a month and a half of trying to track her down and still no success. Was the Matrix interfering in my life again? No matter, I knew if I stuck with it, I'd find her.

The lefty blogger, who helped me on the failed stakeouts, came up with an idea that proved the turning point because of workers unable to follow instructions. He suggested sending her by Federal Express a box of chocolates from a fake modeling agency. By paying in cash and using a telephone number that's always busy, there was no way to trace the sender. Eternally busy telephone numbers are maintained by Verizon for technical reasons in every exchange. When making pretext calls, it often avoids suspicion by leaving one of these numbers as a call back because whenever the target tries the number, it's always busy. That allows one to call the target again for information and pretend he couldn't reach me because of trouble on my line or just a lot of calling going on. Either way it doesn't blow a cover, at least initially.

Sending chocolates from a model agency was a great idea because the Ho couldn't resist sweets or the delusion that the world saw her as a glamorous model rather than a whore for money. When Fed Ex knocked on her door, she would open it, if at home. If not, then by requiring delivery only to her, Fed Ex would go back and back until they found her home or learned from the superintendent that she no longer lived there. Tom Hanks never gave up when he played a Fed Ex delivery manager in *Cast Away*, so the guys in Queens should do the same. Once Fed Ex made the delivery, it would post the date, time and her signature on its web site. I'd recognize that signature anywhere. The Commie Ho always feared someone forging her

signature, so she perfected an intricate scribbling of her name that no one would ever bother trying to forge—not unlike Swiss bankers.

After a week of trying, Fed Ex finally delivered the package, but not to the Commie Ho, instead to someone who signed as “A. Anthony”—so much for the truth of Hollywood movies. I called Fed Ex from a local pay phone, using a calling card, pretending to be the CEO of the phony modeling agency that sent the package and asked to talk to the deliveryman. Who was “A. Anthony” and didn’t Fed Ex deliver the package to the Commie Ho. The Fed Ex customer rep said she would have the deliveryman call me back, which did me no good because I wasn’t about to give out my real number. So I made up another story by telling her I was attending meetings out of town and could give her my hotel number knowing Fed Ex wouldn’t make any costly long distance calls. The customer rep in turn arranged a time for me to reach the deliveryman at Fed Ex’s office—just what I wanted.

The deliveryman told me the Commie Ho had not answered her buzzer from the outside entranceway on three attempts, so he left the package with the building superintendent’s 10-year-old son. Great, the kid probably ate the chocolates himself—I would have, at that age. Fed Ex really ticked me off. The deliveryman was supposed to go inside, up the elevator and knock on her door. Instead the idiot took the usual American easy way out by not bothering to go to the apartment at all. But the deliveryman did give me a telephone number for the superintendent.

A couple of years earlier, I had talked to the super on the pretext of looking for an apartment but really to confirm the Commie Ho’s address for INS. His accent and appearance led me to believe he came from southern Russia, which meant I couldn’t believe anything he said about a fellow Russian. But as a result of my recent telephoning of some of the Commie Ho’s neighbors, I learned the super came from Croatia, which meant he hated Russians. People who

lived in any of the countries occupied by the former Soviet Union, despised Russians. The super, therefore, could be relied on to provide that most damaging of commodities to a Russian—accurate information, so I gave him a call.

“Hello, may I speak to the super,” I asked.

A young girl snootily replied, “He’s not here right now! Who’s calling?” Must be the pubescent girl I ran into on my visit to the super’s apartment two years earlier.

“This is Federal Express,” I lied. “We’re trying to track down a package that was given to A. Anthony a few days ago on Monday at around 3:40 in the afternoon.”

“That’s my younger brother.”

“How old are you?”

“I’m 14.” No wonder she sounded snooty, the boys probably just started chasing her, so now she believes herself a femme fatale. Didn’t take long for her to metamorphose into a teen queen. But she was still young enough for me to cautiously rely on what she said. Give her a few years and the lies will flow like breath from her painted lips.

“Do you know what happen to the package that was meant for Miss Shipilina?”

“Anthony brought it to our apartment in the basement, and she came down to pick it up.”

“Do you know what time that was?”

“Around 4:30 PM.” Apparently, Anthony notified the Commie Ho somehow, meaning she was at home when Fed Ex rang her buzzer from the outside entranceway, but didn’t answer, or she arrived shortly after.

“Is she usually home late in the afternoon in case we have to deliver other packages?”

“She’s rarely in her apartment. She’s a model, and I see her go out at 5 o’clock, 8 o’clock at night. She’s always out.”

“When will your father be home?”

“Try back tonight after seven.”

That evening I reached the super. He repeated his daughter’s story of the package.

Then I asked, “When is a good time to make deliveries to her?”

“It’s best to find her before 11 in the morning. She goes to work in the afternoon, maybe 3 or 4.” Just what I needed, I thanked him and set up another round of surveillance with the same guy as before, starting at 11 AM Monday, April 12, 2004.

We parked across the street at the corner facing south with me in partial disguise. Within minutes of settling in for a long wait, the Commie Ho bounds out of the entranceway of her building. Wearing black leather pants and a black backpack in her concession to American style, her vat-dyed blonde pony tail bobbed from an erect head looking straight ahead as she swung her arms loping down the street on those long legs and moving at a speed that for others would be a run. Battle stations, battle stations, the cry went off in my head. We buckled ourselves in; I started the engine and zoomed passed her taking a quick look to make sure it was she. At the light, I turned right and let my “I Spy” partner out, then took off down the block to get out of sight. We assumed she’d also go right at the corner to head for the 30<sup>th</sup> Avenue subway, but she didn’t. Five minutes later my partner calls my cell. The Commie Ho had gone to the New York Sports Club on 30<sup>th</sup> Avenue at 38<sup>th</sup> Street. Driving the car to a parking lot across from the gym, I met my partner and we continued the stakeout.

“That girl is all legs!” My partner exclaimed. “I had to run just to keep up with her. But she sure sticks out in crowd. She must be six-three! And that blonde hair is like waving a flag.”

“Yeah, she’s easy to spot. Makes our job a lot easier.” I replied.

“Why does she walk so fast?”

“Maybe she’s afraid something will catch up with her.”

We sat in the car waiting for the end of her workout.

About an hour later, hair now up in a bun, she bolts out of the gym as from a starting gate and moving at the same fast pace. My partner jumps out to give chase. As we had agreed, I drove the car back to the corner across from her apartment figuring she’d head back home for a shower. The Commie Ho has a phobia about using public facilities, even Laundromats. Germs, I think, rather bizarre for a prostitute, the type of person that most folk consider synonymous with filth.

Sure enough, she arrived back at her apartment with my partner well behind her breathing hard trying to keep up.

“Damn, she moves fast. I’ve got to get myself in better shape.”

“Expensive Russian prostitutes definitely keep themselves physically fit. There were a lot of them at the gym I used in Moscow. They were among the few Russians that could afford one.”

“Physically fit is right.” My partner agreed, “It’s just the rest that seems lacking.”

“Exactly.”

At 1:20 PM she again zooms out, moving south and still fast, but no backpack, hair in a ponytail. My partner sets off in pursuit while I waited in the car for his cell phone call. Once again, she doesn’t go to the 30<sup>th</sup> Avenue subway, but walks further south, making a cell phone call and stopping in a store. Then she walks west to the elevated subway at Broadway, the next stop down the line from the 30<sup>th</sup> Avenue station. My partner is right behind her, panting away, but manages to get on the same train to Manhattan. I drive into the City to wait for his next call.

While parked in Manhattan by the 59<sup>th</sup> Street Bridge, I tried to figure where she was heading, but soon gave up.

My cell rang.

“So where are you?” I asked knowing it was my surveillance partner.

“Union Square, but I lost her. She got into a SUV outside the Virgin Record store driven by a guy in his 20s, white, light brown hair, silver Forerunner Toyota, license AGE 9596.”

“Okay, I’ll run the license to find out whom it’s registered to.” We agreed to try again a week from Tuesday. The SUV belonged to a Joseph Martin, 6 Bradford Avenue, Rye, New York. The driver of the SUV was probably one of her prostitution clients or some poor sucker with romantic delusions about her. Either way, I knew she benefited materially from the rendezvous. But I still didn’t know the place where she stripped. When she worked at Flash Dancers, she often took Sunday or Monday off because the money wasn’t good. Maybe she was off this Monday, and turned a trick to pick up extra cash.

Tuesday, April 20, 2004, the Commie Ho whips out of her building at 11:33 in the morning, arms churning back and forth, pony tail swinging its way to the same New York Sports Club where my partner spots her running on a treadmill. After the gym, trucking at the same fast pace, she goes back to her apartment for about an hour then heads off to the 30<sup>th</sup> Avenue subway wearing a white jacket with black pok-a-dots. She catches the train to Manhattan, gets off at 34<sup>th</sup> Street, Herald Square, and walks a block to the IRT number One train, which takes her further south to Chambers Street. It would have been more convenient for her and have saved a fare, if she switched at Times Square. At Chambers Street she walks toward the river to a luxury high rise at 22 River Terrace. My spy can’t follow her in to see which apartment she went to because



of the doorman. After three hours of waiting, we figure she's in there for the duration and go home.

The next day, Wednesday, at around 1:20 PM the Commie Ho comes walking up her street, carrying shopping bags, wearing the same clothes from the day before and enters her building. That's the last we see of her and end the surveillance at 6 PM. Apparently, she made a night of it at River Terrace—fun or business.

On Friday, we started late at 1 PM certain the Commie Ho would either enter her building coming back from the gym or exit heading for the subway and Manhattan. This time we parked on the same side of the street as her building, just between it and the corner. Sporting a fake mustache with a cap, I sat in the driver's seat. At 3:30 PM, my peripheral vision catches movement on the sidewalk a few feet from my window, as I turn to look, the Commie Ho wheezes pass. Rats, did she see me in the car? She was wearing her backpack, dressed in blue jeans with studs running down the legs, what kind of fashion is that? She probably came from the gym but by a different route that took her right passed us. Well, I knew if she saw me, she'd call her clients at the police station just a block away to come hassle us. We waited, but no cops, so she didn't see me.

At 4:30 PM, she leaves at her usual gallop in her favorite outfit, black slacks and a white jacket with black pok-a-dots. At the 30<sup>th</sup> Avenue subway, she sits on her favorite bench and, as usual, boards the last car of the train. She's consistent—until 42<sup>nd</sup> Street, Times Square. Then something new happens, she steps off the train, waits, and suddenly steps on again just as the doors are closing. My partner made it back into the car, but only barley and obviously. At 34<sup>th</sup> Street, she hops off, looking nervously behind her with fear pulling the corners of her eyes tight. My partner backs off trying to follow her at a distance, but it's clear she spotted the tail. After

ten minutes of twists, turns, double backs and feints around crowded Herald Square, she managed to lose him.

The surveillance was placed on hold in order to let some time pass for her to fall into a false sense of security. But early one afternoon four months later, while rushing for the BMT subway at 42<sup>nd</sup> Street, I froze in my tracks. The Commie Ho was not ten feet from me, wearing a jackal look of discontent and cowardice, staring nervously behind her as though checking for someone following. She hadn't seen me yet, but the moment she turned her head forward again, those laser enhanced, blue gray eyes would pass right over me. The only thing to do was use one of Mark's martial arts' tactics and I thought myself invisible. She turned her head from looking over her left shoulder, swept her glaze right over me without seeing and continued down to the train. The Commie Ho still suspected a tail, so I put the surveillance on hold indefinitely.

The information from this chance encounter and the earlier surveillances indicated to me that she probably no longer stripped, but just did call girl work, a profession much easier to hide from the District Court and the INS. Also at 28, the lap dancing clubs might consider her too old, but she could still hook for \$200 to \$300 an hour and those were Los Angeles rates. The best she did stripping was a little over \$100 an hour and that required standing on her feet all night long. So hooking meant more money, less work and no sore feet—right up the Commie Ho's alley. Another reason for believing the Commie Ho had switched to fulltime hooking was that during the on again, off again surveillance from February to April, I obtained the Commie Ho's mobile records for two months running. One month she made 290 out going calls and the other 370 in addition to the approximately 150 calls made each month from her apartment telephone. The Commie Ho's activities looked a lot like those described in the grand jury transcripts of Los Angeles' largest prostitution ring run by a Russian mother and her daughter.

While I hadn't found any connection between the L.A. ring and the defendants in my RICO case, that didn't mean the model used in L.A. wasn't also used in New York City by the Commie Ho and her associates.

The L.A. call girl ring had offered two types of services: "in-call" and "out-call." With in-call, the guy visited an apartment maintained by the ring where he was charged \$200 an hour. Out-call was where the girl went to the guy's apartment but charged more, \$300 an hour. To make an appointment, the guy would call the dispatcher's number, or go on line and make his request for a blonde, redhead or brunette and leave a contact number. The dispatcher rounded up a girl and called the guy back to finalize the arrangements. Business for the L.A. ring had usually started in the early afternoon and gone to the early morning hours. The Commie Ho's call volume, connection with [www.Russianny.com](http://www.Russianny.com) and her history pointed to her concentrating her time on Russian mob prostitution in New York where she acted as a dispatcher, semen depository or both.

### You'll Lose a Good Thing

In order to dig up more information in Russia for my RICO case, I took a lesson from my annulment/divorce case and used a website. Boy that should annoy the defense lawyers! They'll shout and scream to the Chief Judge and call me this and that—tough. Nadya, my Krasnodar translator, went looking for a Russian website designer who also knew how to advertise. The site would be in Russian and aimed at people, mainly in Krasnodar, so I wanted a Russian from that area familiar with attracting attention to websites. Similar sites for Mexico and Cyprus were planned.

I sent Nadya a CD with the contents of the site. The introduction page stated:

**United States dollars for information concerning any of the people mentioned in the following diary of Alina Alexandrovna Shipilina (Chipilina) also known as "Angelina," a**

**runner up in the Miss Krasnodar Beauty Pageant of 1997. Miss Shipilina lives in Krasnodar, Russia and New York City.**

Click on [Nude Photographs](#) or [Masturbation Video](#) to identify Alina Alexandrovna “Angelina” Shipilina, a.k.a. Chipilina. Click on [Other Photographs](#) for more pictures of Angelina.

Click on [Diary](#) and [Newspaper Article](#) to read about the life style of this Russian prostitute.

Please contact rdhhh@yahoo.com with any information or questions. Valuable information will be rewarded with dollars.

Following are the full names or additional information on some of the individuals and organizations talked about in Miss Shipilina’s 1999-2000 diary that may help the reader identify them. Information on anyone mentioned in the diary, not just those listed below, is being sought for a case in the U.S. Federal Court of the Southern District of New York and will be rewarded.

*U.S.A.*

Flash Dancers Topless Club  
Barry-Night Manager Flash Dancers  
Tatianna, former stripper at Flash Dancers in 2000  
Nikita, former stripper at Flash Dancers in 2000  
Marc L. Paulsen, California doctor

*Russia,  
Krasnodar*

Anastasia A. Vasilyeva  
Tatyanna Vasilyeva Fashion House  
Alexey Smolin  
Dmitri Morosov  
Inessa Alexandrovna Shipilina  
Olga Ponomarenka  
Katya Gerokaris  
Mariya (Masha) Alexandrovna Chebotkevich  
Enya, winner of Miss Charming and Russian Radio in March 2000 Miss Krasnodar Beauty pageant.  
Natasha, tall young with black hair who lives at 138 Rashpilevskaya Street.  
Lena, the poor nurse who prostituted herself with Angelina and Olga Ponomarenka.  
Nadya, who went to work in Cyprus with Angelina in December 1999.  
Inessa, a model at Vasilyeva Fashion House.  
Larissa, girl friend of Marios Athanasiou, manager of the Zygos and Tramps brothels in Cyprus.  
Volodya, sculptor in his late thirties, married.

Andrei, drove a white Mercedes in 2000.  
Mkrtchan, previously taught at the Krasnodar State Academy Physical Training, wife  
Tanya.  
Rey, pimped for Krasnodar models, including Angelina.  
Roma, client of Angelina for whom she wore a black wig in 2000.

*Moscow*

Natasha Gubina from Vidi Vinci Casting.  
Phodes Studio Co.  
Leonid Perlin, President Phodes Studio Co.  
Tanya, Phodes Studio Prostitute

*Other Russian Locations*

Vladimir Gavrilov of St. Petersburg  
Yulya Alyabyev in Kanevskaya  
Alexander Andreevich Rybakov, former police official in Grozny in the 1980s and early  
1990s, born July 25, 1952 in Mednogorsk, Russia.  
Aunt Sveta, owns house at 11/1 Skvoznaya, Yablonovskiye.

The only way Russians would respond to such a site was by offering U.S. currency. The defense attorneys would claim the information tainted because money exchanged hands, but I could overcome that with sworn affidavits or a precautionary instruction from the Chief Judge to the jury. After all, lawyers always pay private investigators for information and they pay sources, as does the Federal Government. Anyway, the information would most likely lead to more for which I could use the District Court's powers to obtain testimony and documents.

Nadya expressed some concern that the site might break the law. Law, there is no law in Russia, at least none that are enforced, not all that different from America. But some Russians still fear as they did when living under the Soviets. Under the Commies, such a site would violate the law because it told the truth, which was strictly forbidden. But apparently Nadya's concerns went deeper than she originally expressed. She emailed me to say, "Don't you think it's criminal to write such things about other people?" This was a strange remark coming from her since she knew the Commie Ho wrote the diary, sold the photographs and made the video for

money. All the site would do is tell the truth. Then I remembered my female Russian instructor in Moscow who refused to translate the Commie Ho's diary when I first copied it. She didn't want to invade the prostitute's privacy, and Cheryl, the Feminist, refused to read it for the same reason. Two girls, like all girls, who would go out of their way to find incriminating evidence to batter a man, didn't want to see the truth about one of their own. Girls united against men. They will hide any secret, no matter how foul, justify any deed, no matter how harmful, so long as it puts a man in jeopardy or protects the truth about how girls really operate. The girls I had come across always tended to lie to men for each other, but was there really a genetic worldwide conspiracy reaching back into time to promote the illusion of females as "sugar and spice and everything nice"?

Nadya's remark was put out of my mind for she had dug up a lot of useful information in Krasnodar over the past three years while collecting a monthly stipend. Assuring her there was nothing criminal about the site, she eventually found a "pcman," who would set the site up and advertise it in Russia for \$700. A little steep I thought, especially for Russia where it amounted to half a year's income for the average household. But Nadya knew how to operate in Russia, and I trusted her.

A problem arose when the Internet host required blacking out certain parts of the Commie Ho's body, such as the close up of her massaging her snatch in the video clip. That struck me as strange because Russians not only allow people to murder and steal at will, well almost at will, they never let morality interfere with making a ruble or buck. But I didn't care, just as long as viewers who knew or previously came across the Commie Ho could identify her. Clearing that up took a couple of months.

Nadya finally emailed me the site's address, but clicking on it only brought up the window "Network Problems." Nadya assured me she'd get the pcman to fix it. Another month goes by. Nadya then tells me that the pcman subcontracted the work out, and she needed to complete some paper work, another month, another stipend. She eventually emails me a different site address, but again up pops "Network Problems." Okay, I finally catch on; my trusted agent in Krasnodar is either scamming me or has defected to the Commie Ho's side. After all, the Commie Ho can now pay more than me having made by then around 600 grand tax-free in four years. Nadya's monthly stipend ended, so much for pretty young Russian girls in their mid-twenties.

Nadya had first started working for me at twenty-one, and, like other early twenty something Russian babes, she always stuck to her work agreements, but by the mid-twenties these Russian girls transmute into thieves in the night and turncoats. Guess they figure they are running out of time. Nadya ripped me off for \$700, but she would have made more in her monthly wage by keeping her end of the bargain. Oh well, and I never even hit on her, although spent a lot of time gazing at her attributes. Just can't help looking more at a young girl's breasts than her face when talking to one. However, with older broads my eyes ignore them completely while conversing, which is as seldom as possible.

### Trouble In Paradise

Uncovering more information on the Commie Ho and her mob associates' web of revulsion for my RICO case continued to consume a lot of time, tolerance and appetite for boredom. The pursuit of justice carries a heavy dose of the meanness of reality that deters many from paying its price. But there's no way other than to pay that price to keep the fundamental problem with people from swamping the planet. No matter when, or where, it's always the

same. People with power, whether individually or as part of an institution, group or government, decide they will take what they don't deserve because they can. Naturally, they always justify in their own minds violating the rights of others with such lame excuses as some god or goddess told me to, it's the correct thing to do, we're superior, we know what's best and any other lunatic rationale humans can invent.

Look at the Bush Administration, it goes knocking on Iraq's door saying, "Listen up boys, this here's your lucky day. We're going to remove Saddam, then make you just like us. That's right, soon your children, 12 and younger, will have the opportunity to buy any addictive drug nature or modern chemistry can make; your daughters, sisters and wives can make big bucks in the soft-core and hard-core pornography industry—hey, a hundred grand a year is more than you'll see in a lifetime, and thanks to Billy Bob Clinton, the girls can give blowjobs while claiming, if their mouths aren't too full, that it's not sex; every house will have a TV with shows oozing sexual thrills, naked breasts at half-time and dirty innuendos for the kiddies to salivate over; however, ninety per cent of you guys will stay condemned to the worst and most dangerous jobs, but the females, just look at the Abu Ghraib prison photo album, will now run the show in order to make up for centuries of you boys sacrificing to protect and provide for them and their children; of course, you'll still have to die to protect the girls from foreign enemies, but now the girls will control your lives according to their whims—isn't that great; you guys will automatically become second and even third class citizens, but it's the correct thing to do—believe us; you'll even have a stock market and homes to invest in so as to build a nest egg for retirement that corporate executives, stockbrokers and financial analysts can steal without the government doing much of anything about it, other than give those wealthy crooks larger tax breaks and low interest loans that you'll have to make up by paying more tribute to our, we



mean, your government—isn't the American brand of freedom and democracy wonderful; true you wouldn't be able to believe what the media says because it uses fake documents and makes up stories, but that's no different than under Saddam, so the media's a wash." Somehow I don't think the Iraqis or anyone in the Middle East wants our democracy, freedoms and injustices.

If America came to my door with an offer like that, I'd pick up a gun too. Now that I think about it, America actually kicked down my door in the 1960s with a similar ultimatum. When I stepped out of high school, the draft said, "Come her boy!" so I went to college instead. But when I twice left college, the Selective Service was on me like a fury trying to add black ink with my blood to the financial statements of members of the military-industrial complex. Profits for the complex that Eisenhower warned against grew geometrically during the war as more and more blood of young American men—not girls, but men, washed the jungle floors of Vietnam. Corporate America and that butcher Lyndon B. Johnson, for whom more females voted than men, weren't going to vampire my blood for a buck. Anyone who did a little research knew the government lied; the real reasons for the war were profits and L.B.J.'s political career. L.B.J. didn't want to appear soft on communism because by his cold war mentality pulling out of Vietnam would hurt his chances of re-election in 1968. Boy was he wrong.

Twice I had to fight and beat the draft: the first time by going underground in California, then back to college; the second time a couple of sympathetic doctors, one whose son also carried the draft on his back, gave me the notes needed to escape the hamburger grinder for good. All an experience today's Feminazis can't even begin to imagine unless America's current wars bring back the draft. If that happens, all those broads who think they are as tough as men will start bawling and pleading that the draft shouldn't take them because they're girls. They'll begin the old whine, "But men start the wars," to which I always retorted, "Tell that to the guys

pushing up daisies in the Falkland Islands, the Seks butchered by Indira Gandhi, the Arabs killed in Golda Meir's 1967 War and those slaughtered during Queen Victoria's Boer War or because of Catherine the Great's lust for beachfront real estate on the Black Sea. No, when the draft comes knocking the next time, none of the traditional feminine wiles will work, not after all the changes in the law and culture they've wrought over the past forty years. The U.S. Supreme Court will reverse its decision allowing the Government to discriminate by drafting only men, and the Feminazis will finally know not just the benefits but also some of the real hell of manhood. I can't wait.

Despite the stupidity and waste of the Vietnam War, sometimes I regret not having gone. In the sixties, I didn't want to die a sucker, which my instinct told me would happen. But looking back, what was I saving myself for? Since then, I ended up falling sucker to one female scheme after another: taking care of the Nazi Ho in her old age, investing with an incompetent and corrupt stockbroker in league with other Wall Street crooks and corporate thieves, marrying a narcotics slipping Russian mob prostitute and falling prey to the Feminazis terror responsible for denying me good jobs that I wanted and invidiously discriminating against me in America's courts and government agencies. Had I'd gone to Vietnam, I would've avoided all the subsequent harms caused by those broads. But I didn't go, so now, as it turns out, I'm a bigger sucker than had I gotten my head blown off in the jungles of Southeast Asia. Better a life of promise cut short, than a life of promises never fulfilled.

Lots of Iraqi and Muslim men apparently feel a life cut short rather than years of U.S. feminarchy scams and discrimination is a price worth paying. After the end of 30 years of tyranny under Saddam Hussein, why should they risk a Feminazi tyranny like the U.S. has had for the past 30 years with its institutionalized discrimination, defamation and intimidation of men

in order to serve feminine malice? Muslim men aren't stupid. They understand American priorities as illustrated by the Attorney General of the United States boasting at a press conference about the successful prosecution of a twenty-year-old guy who posted nude photographs of his seventeen-year-old girl friend on the Internet. The girl was clearly a ho; otherwise, she wouldn't have allowed her boyfriend to snap the pictures. She also probably encouraged him to post the photographs, since hos always fantasize about strangers seeing them engaged in sex, naked or partly unclothed. If they didn't, they would not wear dresses so easy to look up or blouses so easy to look down.

The Attorney General seized the opportunity to pander to broads. Since the girl wasn't yet 18—why should one year make a difference—the Department of Justice called out its Feminazi storm troopers, expended valuable time and resources to destroy this guy's life by throwing him in jail for child pornography. As if the Justice Department didn't have better things to do, but that's the American way these days, and Muslim men know it. So they're not about to sit idly by while America creates a similar Middle Eastern Department where the wheels of justice run over mostly men for grievances hypocritically touted by broads. Muslim men don't want a democracy where females receive preferential treatment for the most desirable positions while they receive preferential treatment for the worst; where the system of justice and prosecutorial discretion rides the public relations bandwagon of demonizing men; and where fighting for your rights as a man means mockery, ostracism and poverty. No, the men in the Middle East and other Muslims are wise to fight and die against the modern American way. Better a dead hero than a live coward.

Muslim men have their own paradigm for organizing society, so who are the American and British one percenters and the Feminazis to make them think differently? If guys in the

Middle East want civil wars, let them. America had a civil war, so did England, why should Middle Eastern countries be any different? But the American and British rich don't want civil wars or ongoing guerrilla rebellions because it threatens their oil revenues and reconstruction profits. The Feminazis also want the Western domination of the Middle East so as to spread their self-exalting belief system that translates into money, power and status for females with a subservient population of men who cater to their whims and think the world of them. American men might enjoy living as hermaphrodites ruled by she-males, but the U.S. Feminazis aren't going to turn Muslim guys into girlie-men.

The guerillas in the Middle East know the consequences of allowing the U.S. collective to turn their country into an economic colony, so to prevent it, they're killing Westerners and those who work for the West. The corporate rich, through the Federal Government, media and academia, self-righteously denounce the guerillas as brutal, evil, barbarian terrorists. But are they? Who invaded whom?

If during the Cold War, Commies from the Soviet Union came marching down my street in suburbia, I'd start shooting too. After all, what right did the Commies have to enter my neighborhood? Sure the town's female Mayor was a Nazi, but after they removed her, they should have left. As far as disputes among neighbors on the block, we'd deal with that in our own fashion. We wouldn't need some Commies telling us what to do. Same applies to the Israeli-Palestinian conflict. If while living in New Jersey, I awoke one morning to find a bunch of guys with long beards camped in my back yard, dancing around singing like Zero Mostel, I'd call the police to kick them off my property. If the cops refused because the police chief had cut a deal with the squatters, I'd throw them off myself. I wouldn't give a damn what some book

their ancestors allegedly wrote 2000 years ago said, off they go, with force if necessary. But jingoism, even the American kind, always fails to give the view from the other side.

When people lose their land, have authoritarian governments imposed and their belief systems violated by nations with powerful militaries what are they expected to do? Roll over like a dog, or fight back with any means they have against any targets available to them. Sure the rebels, guerillas and terrorists in the Middle East use personal means to injure and kill others, many of whom are noncombatants, but that's because they don't have the helicopters, tanks and fighter jets that the U.S. and Israel use for killing and injuring their opponents, many of whom are also civilians; oh, excuse me, "collateral damage." If the U.S. gave the Palestinians apache helicopters, tanks and fighter jets, the Palestinians won't use their children as waking bombs or blow up Israeli citizens, they'd go after Israeli government officials, the military and the nation's infrastructure—just like the U.S. does in war. What do the Americans and Israelis think? That a Palestinian girl with no hope for her future children is going to walk up to an Israeli tank made in America and blow herself up. So she dents the tank, and it needs a new paint job, big deal. No, she's going to try to spill as much blood from those on the other side as the latest Apache helicopter rocket attack did in her refugee camp. Same thing throughout the Middle East, only now America is now wearing Israeli boots.

Perhaps I am not completely alien from those victimized in the Middle East by the American rich and the U.S. Government. Both threatened my liberty, interfered with my pursuit of happiness, stood idly by while gangsters threatened me and denied me justice all because an accident of nature made me a man born into a society that turned into a feminararchy. Every day slaps me in the face with the realization that I live in a society controlled by a few, the rich, that benefit from having many, the Feminazis, discriminate against men like me. In this American

society, my rights are repeatedly violated because of who I am. It's not so much different for Muslims fighting against America for their land and way of life, only they generally end up dead. But, depending on the point view, there are some things so dear, some things so precious and some things so eternally true that they are worth dying for.

No, I'm not about to convert to some religion that prevents pretty young girls from flaunting their delicious curves, but I would provide America's Islamic opponents, not the Chechens however, legal services and be a better mouthpiece than those guys hiding in caves. Now that would be an interesting battle in this jingoistic environment. But I am stuck in this story of my anti-Feminist crusade, whose end is my reckoning.

## **Stupid Frigging Fool**

By Roy Den Hollander

### Part 7

#### Back On The Chain Gang

“Hello,” I said answering the telephone.

“Mr. Den Hollander, this is Bruce Claugus. I’m representing the Bank of Cyprus.”

“What can I do for you?” I courteously and insincerely replied.

Pompously Claugus said, “We just received your RICO Complaint last Friday and would like you to stop by our offices either today or tomorrow to discuss it.”

Gee, how nice of this puffed-up attorney to give me a choice of today or Wednesday. The really bizarre part, however, was asking me to stop by his office. The case was still in the motion to dismiss stage, and none of the defendants were about to consider settlement until at least discovery. So there was nothing to discuss. A face-to-face meeting made no sense unless he wanted to psychologically maximize the impact of some less than subtle threat. Then again, maybe this wasn’t a lawyer at all, but someone wanting to catch me at a particular time and place. Whatever the purpose, it surely wouldn’t benefit me.

So I asked him, “Why?”

“We conducted an investigation into your allegations and found them groundless.” Next to “frivolous” and “baseless,” “groundless” is another most favored word of defense attorneys whose clients are guilty. Once again, I hit my record button.

“Okay, you’ve told me, so why do you want to meet?” Another question went through my mind that I didn’t bother asking. If these lawyers received the Complaint on Friday but today was Tuesday, March 30, 2004, how could they conduct an investigation in such a short time and

over the weekend no less? No, he lied; he was trying to get me into a situation where he and another attorney or two would lean on me, and, if I didn't break, they'd simply lie to the court about what I said. Since I was both the plaintiff and my own attorney, anything I said the defense lawyers could try to use against me in court as a party opponent admission. And in a meeting with two or three other lawyers, the court would believe them as opposed to just me.

Claugus answered, "Since we were unable to find any evidence of your allegations that means you're barking up the wrong tree." Oh brother, does this guy really expect me to believe that if they found evidence of their client laundering money for the Russian mafia, they would tell me? No, they'd tell me just what he's saying in this lame authoritarian attempt to psychologically undercut my resolve.

Claugus then segued into a phony sympathetic and confidential tone, "It seems to me the nub of your complaint. Let me close my door here, hold on." I liked that touch: just us two guys talking. "You know it seems to me the nub of your complaint is that you married badly and then had trouble getting rid of this woman. Same thing happened to me. But I didn't blame my banker or her banker." Was this supposed to make me believe we were brothers in harm? I didn't respond, just let him talk as I learned in the media decades earlier when doing undercover stories: let them ramble on, they may put their feet in their mouths and it makes for a clearer sound track.

"We had absolutely nothing to do with this!" Back to sounding authoritative while repeating the same tired cliché that defense lawyers always say about their clients, as though anyone believes them. "So we're given the choice of either persuading you to drop us from the Complaint or defend the thing. We're prepared to do either." Naturally they are, since either



serves their interests: impressing the client if I let them go or making money, but why bother telling me what I already knew?

So I responded, “Well then defend it because I’m not going to drop the Bank of Cyprus as a defendant in the Complaint. I can tell you that right now.”

“Alright, we’re going to proceed to defend, to defend vigorously, and we expect to be fully exonerated.” Another hackneyed lawyer expression. Claugus then switched to the typical lawyer threat for scaring people off of their rights, “and when we do that, we are also going to move for sanctions. This is utterly and completely ridiculous. I’ve practice for 28 years, never seen a complaint as preposterous as the one that you brought, at least as to my client. I don’t know about any of these other things and allegations that you make. But the Bank of Cyprus is completely in the clear. And the information we already have indicates that. And if you are not prepared to listen to us and respond responsibly, then we’re going to take whatever steps we have to in order to get ourselves exonerated and make ourselves whole for whatever it is we have to spend to deal with this complaint. Are we clear!!”

Now that last sentence was a combative remark deserving a two-knuckle punch to the bridge of his nose, but I was on the telephone and this pretentious lawyer only bored me. So, I matter-of-factly responded, “Are you threatening me?”

“No I’m not threatening you!”

“Ohhhh yes you are.”

“I’m explaining to you.” Lawyers always say that after they’ve threatened someone who wouldn’t do what they want.

Still matter-of-factly I replied, “No, you’re trying to intimidate me, and you’re trying to coerce me. Now I told you in the beginning, I am not going to drop the Bank of Cyprus from

this Complaint. If you would like some productive information and are interested in what is going on currently in this case, I can give you the name for the lead attorney for the defendants, which I will do as a courtesy to you. If you are interested?” If John Madison-Pierre and the F.B.I. can sarcastically use the word “courtesy,” so can I.

“What I want to know most, is how it is you specifically think the Bank of Cyprus is implicated in anyway?” Claugus knew better than to ask a question like that of an opposing attorney. It’s such an obvious sophomoric trick to get the other side to admit something that will certainly be twisted out of context. But this guy actually believed I would try to convince him of the merits of my allegations against his client. There’s no way that a lawyer collecting high fees would ever be convinced that the sun rises in the east, if his client’s case depended on it rising in the west.

“Well, that’s a deposition question, now isn’t it?” I answered. Silence, which I chose to break. “I’ve given my answer to your efforts of what I consider are meant to intimidate or threaten me.”

“I’m not trying to intimidate or threaten you. My client based on the investigation that we have done had nothing to do with any of this. We’re going to defend.”

“I expected that.”

The sparring over, Claugus asked for the name to the lead defense attorney, which he should have requested in the beginning and saved us both the unnecessary sand throwing.

So now there were seven lawyers for the defense with whom to fight: three from small law firms, one from the City and three sole practitioners. Seven guys who in the proud tradition of the law as it really works, not as portrayed on television, believe winning is everything.

Of all the defendants served up to this point; that is, the ones whom I could identify and find addresses for in America, Russia and Cyprus; only Flash Dancers, Cybertech Internet Strip Club, Mundy, Petrovich, the Commie Ho, Paulsen, Henning and the Bank of Cyprus hired attorneys.

The Mexican defendants had not yet been brought into the case. My Spanish translator needed more time than she originally believed to work on the Complaint, so it delayed serving the bloated drug-trafficker Alfredo who spent a weekend in Italy with my then wife of two and a half months, the assorted white slavers: the Julia Heart Agency, now called Malbros, and its former manager Maria Serrato, both of which recruited hos; the strip joint The Men's Club, which hires the hos; Salvador, Leo's partner for funneling Russian sluts into Mexico; Max Garcia Appedole, who bribes Mexican officials to provide the whores work visas. But it didn't matter because in federal courts there's no deadline for serving foreign defendants.

By the end of March, the Spanish version of the Complaint was ready to go. The Mexican government, which considers America the dumping ground for those citizens it can't take care of due to chronic corruption, actually requires stricter procedures for service than other countries, such as those in civilized Europe. Guess Mexican officials need to assuage their suspicion that we Americans might lie about legal proceedings in our courts. The south of the border pillars of truth and justice required the clerk of the U.S. District Court to sign in pen, not with a stamp signature, all the summonses. The signed summonses then went to the United States Department of Justice so that the Attorney General could sign a document, in pen, saying the signature of the U.S. District Court's clerk was really the clerk's. The Department of Justice sent the documents back to me, and I forward them onto the United States Department of State so that it could confirm the signature of the U.S. Attorney General with a document signed in

pen. Finally, the documents were mailed to the Mexican government agency that serves foreign court papers on its citizens.

Mexico really wasn't concerned with American veracity. It imposed all those medieval requirements in order to make it very difficult or impossible to sue members of a corrupt banana republic's criminal elite whose government encourages its poorer citizens, already fleeced, to move across the border to violate American law and burden the American infrastructure for which the U.S. middle class—as long as it lasts—pays.

The American Government, allied with the criminal officials in the Mexican government, do nothing about the influx of illegal aliens because the Republicans want cheap labor and the Democrats cheap votes. Eventually, there will only be the rich and the poor in the United States of Mexico. Injustice is the nature of human society. Those that run a society, in America the one percenters and in Mexico the crooked government elite, do whatever increases and protects their wealth and power. If history has taught anything, those that run a society care nothing for its other members—not unlike the feminine perspective.

April Fools' Day brought the much-delayed response to the RICO suit from Cybertech Internet Strip Club's attorney. Ten months after Cybertech first received the Complaint by mail, eight months after official service and three months after my default motion prodded Cybertech's attorney to make an official appearance on behalf of his client by sending the Court a letter, the lawyer finally tells the Court that Cybertech joins with the other American defendants in their joint motion to dismiss. Why so much time, especially after dropping his false claim that the Complaint was never properly served on Cybertech? The attorney obviously didn't want to do much work, and didn't, as his second letter to the Court showed by its absence of any legal citations, meaning he didn't even look up the law. Perhaps such sloth resulted from

what he told the Court caused his delay: “dealing with other pressing matters.” What could those have been? Maybe screening the new talent recruited by Cybertech’s V.I.P. Escorts, [www.vipescortsinc.com](http://www.vipescortsinc.com). Still, why did the Court put up with such delays? That’s not what law school or Cravath had taught me, but, maybe, times have changed since the 1980s to the feminine way of doing business.

True to form for attorneys representing purveyors of porn and escorts, Cybertech’s lawyer made a couple of derisive remarks in his letter by declaring that I sued Cybertech “with no small degree of absurdity” and engaged in “fanciful conspiracy theories.” He also rolled out the deceit maneuver in which he fired-off a couple of lies that I countered.

The first falsehood used one of the favorite tactics of the lead defense lawyer, Dubin: simply claim I didn’t say something when I did. Cybertech’s attorney declared the only allegations of wrongdoing against his client were RICO violations. The RICO statute specifies certain crimes as violations of the act, but mafia organizations usually engage in other crimes as well, and scholars of the law advise including those crimes when filing a RICO complaint, which I did. For Cybertech the non-RICO crimes included promoting prostitution. The evidence for which included detailed color copies from Cybertech’s website, [www.stripclubescorts.com](http://www.stripclubescorts.com), showing plenty of spread legs and naked breasts of the hos available for rent “worldwide.” Also included was a copy of the form for booking a whore. The form asserted V.I.P. sluts come “discreetly dressed or as requested in accordance with your chosen venue or function” and “many of our ladies like to work duos, so please [Click Here](#)”—I guess that meant top and links. Cybertech’s call girl website also provided hookers willing to travel to exotic places anywhere on the globe for a sufficient number of Benjamin Franklins. Other non-RICO crimes were

Cybertech employing girls not lawfully admitted to work in the U.S., violating federal and state tax laws and conspiring to violate federal and state laws.

The attorney's second and more blatant lie came in declaring "I would like to stress to this Court that Cybertech has no employment relationship with any of the other defendants...." To which I responded, "If that were true, then why was Cybertech listed as the host of Flash Dancers web site, [www.flashdancersnyc.com](http://www.flashdancersnyc.com). Sounds like an 'employment relationship' to me." For good measure to show the interconnection of Flash Dancers and Cybertech, I threw in a page reached through the Flash Dancers website of Cybertech's Showgirls fully naked, with spread legs and manipulating themselves and each other. That ought to attract the Court's attention. For a while, I even tried searching the Cybertech sites for the Commie Ho, but all those naked girls dancing in my head was too much stimulation for me.

In order to support his lies, Cybertech's lawyer pompously asked the Court to trust what he said. To which I replied, "That is a unique basis for deciding a motion to dismiss: if the defendant's attorney says in a letter that his client did not do the acts alleged, then the complaint should be dismissed. Such a rule would have the benefit of quickly clearing a court's docket, but the impact on justice would be pretty dismal."

Cybertech's lawyer never responded to the evidence that showed him a chronic liar. Attorneys always try to get away with ignoring that which shows them up as liars and their clients as scoundrels.

All the factual claims by the defense lawyers, including Cybertech's, that kept popping up at this stage of the case never should have because in the beginning of a lawsuit in 2004, federal courts were only concerned with whether a complaint painted a picture of harm that the law could rectify. In order to determine that, the Court was suppose to assume that what a

complaint said was true and decide whether the law reached that situation. Determining the factual truth based on admissible; that is believable evidence, comes later. For instance, I didn't include the Commie Ho's diary, investigator reports, affidavits or other documents showing some of the defendants' RICO crimes because under the Federal Rules of Civil Procedure complaints only make allegations; they do not present evidence that supports the allegations. Much of the evidence for proving the allegations is gathered later during discovery, which gives both sides special powers to find evidence that a person couldn't find without those powers. But when dealing with bureaucrats interested in expediency, that's not always the case, so the defense lawyers, as did the 911 terrorists, played upon this bureaucratic plague of sloth by attempting to have the Court try the case before discovery even began.

People often forget that there's nothing special about judges. They're bureaucrats like all the rest of government employees. Many are lazy, incompetent and uncaring, as were those in the INS, F.B.I. and C.I.A. who failed to do their duty before 911. They just didn't give a damn how many people ended up dead or harmed, so long as they didn't have to interrupt their eight hour lunch breaks. For many bureaucrats, their convenience comes first, which means even in federal courts some judges are driven by expediency rather than justice, reciting not the mantra "equal justice under the law" but "how can I make it easier on myself." Other judges, however, still follow the call of trying to deliver justice to all, even those classified as members of one of society's disfavored groups at a particular point in history, such as heterosexual, middle-aged men with little money in current-day America.

The defense attorneys' strategy relied on the judge falling into the category of just another bureaucrat, so they tried to exploit present day societal biases against men in an effort to get the Court to dismiss the case. My strategy was to point out what the defense attorneys were

doing so that the Chief Judge would be prodded into remembering what he learned in law school and make a decision based on the law and not politics.

### You Cheated, You Lied

By mid-May, the attorneys for defendants Flash Dancers, Cybertech, Mundy, Petrovich, the Commie Ho, Paulsen and Henning finally filed their joint reply. The lead attorney for the defendants, Dubin, originally had requested in January a “short extension of time” that ended up lasting three and a half months. He needed the time to draft the defendants’ 88-page reply memorandum of law, or more accurately lies, half-truths and prevarications, which ran 22 pages longer than his prior year’s collection of misleading statements in the defense’s initial joint memorandum for dismissal. Once again, Dubin included lots of exhibits that didn’t belong in a motion to dismiss reply. Back in January, he had claimed the reply memorandum would be shorter than the first, but I never believed him, so that lie didn’t count.

The procedure and different papers in this case can get confusing, so here’s a summary. The defendants living in America whom I could identify hired lawyers, except the Vasilyevas. The defense lawyers appeared in Court to tell the Chief Judge they were moving to dismiss; that is, throw my RICO case out of court. Dubin, the lawyer for Mundy and Petrovich, acted as the lead counsel for the defendants in America who had lawyers. Dubin drew up the initial memorandum of law to dismiss, 66-pages and plenty of exhibits, in which the other American defendants with lawyers joined. That memorandum was filed in September 2003. Detective Henning’s attorney, Vikrant Pawar, from the City’s Corporation Counsel Office also filed a short memorandum and affidavit in addition to signing onto the joint memorandum for dismissal. The Vasilyevas didn’t bother to hire an attorney, nor make a motion to dismiss nor sign onto the joint memorandum. In December 2003, I filed my memorandum to oppose a dismissal, 147-pages



with a handful of exhibits, which refuted the joint memorandum and Pawar's papers. In mid-May 2004, Dubin filed the 88-page reply memorandum to which the other American defendants with lawyers had joined. The Vasilyevas' continued to do nothing.

The Federal Rules of Civil Procedure didn't permit me to file a response to the 88-page tome, so naturally Dubin lied like there was no tomorrow because there wasn't. The only way I could counter his falsehoods and omissions was in oral argument before the Court, which I had requested, but to avoid work, especially in civil RICO cases, the U.S. District Court for the Southern District of N.Y. usually doesn't allow oral arguments. So it was a worthwhile gamble for Dubin to fib, and fib he did, more so than in the initial joint memorandum supporting a motion to dismiss.

Beginning to suspect Dubin was Russian, I did a little checking. He comes from a family of Jews with ancestors in Eastern Europe and Russia—I knew it! But for a Jew, he didn't seem too bright, since he often repeated the same lies and vilifications over and over by rote. Then again, repetition often sways those who lack the capacity for critical thinking or are pressed for time; that is, government bureaucrats.

Dubin's reply rant was a calculated scheme to deceive the District Court and play on its institutionalized biases. His reply resorted to just about every lawyerly trick used in today's litigation of personal destruction: misrepresentations, mischaracterizations, prevarications, half-truths, misleading statements, smears, edited quotes, taking a quote that applies to one topic and using it for another, using quotes out of context and the trademark of most lawyers—dissembling. Legions of attorneys resort to such methods because it's easier to just make up the facts and the law while demonizing their opponent. Such lawyers figure: let the other side spend the time correcting their falsehoods and character assassinations because a court wouldn't. Such

attorneys also understand all too clearly the special difficulty in countering those lies aimed at manipulating a judge's emotions by painting their opponents as psychologically unfit or socially unacceptable. The strategy of lies and personal attacks often works against individuals because many judges' carry a disdain for the common man and believe the rights of corporations and law firms are more important than the individuals on whom such organizations step.

The defense's reply strategy relied on a trinity of falsehoods: what the lead lawyer said I said but didn't, what he said the law says but doesn't, and what he said are facts but aren't. All the other lawyers for the defendants in America agreed to these tactics as part of their two-prong strategy to have my case dismissed.

The first prong aimed at assassinating my character that even took a concept from the Spanish Inquisition by trumping up charges to which they proclaimed me guilty because I did not first prove my innocence in my Complaint or memorandum of law. That's not the function of a complaint or the papers in a motion to dismiss, not to mention a judicial proceeding in a non-feudal country. Judges aren't supposed to put up with either side trying to win by calling its opponent names or impugning a party's character, but that didn't stop the defense lawyers from trying. There was no way for me to stop them with a lawsuit because no matter how false their harangues, slander and libel are allowed in judicial proceedings.

Dubin's personal attacks declared my motivations improper, as if he knew what they were, and as if they matter under the law, which they didn't—something he even admitted. Dubin claimed I brought the RICO suit "to re-live the consequences of my marriage and divorce to Shipilina." What? Was he nuts? No man would ever want to relive that experience. He maligned that I was "unable to let go." Oh yeah, who kicked whom out of whose apartment? Dubin even ridiculed me for a "fascination" with my "wife's infidelities"—the correct word was

revulsion. He also claimed I wanted to “harass” and “punish” the Commie Ho and her fellow defendants: harass maybe, justice definitely, and retribution for the harm caused me by her, her mafia associates and collaborators.

So why did this attorney bother emphasizing my so-called motivations in the beginning of the joint reply memorandum if he knew they didn’t matter under the law? To tell the District Court that political-correct society, read Feminazis, considers me a modern-day pariah, read angry white male, for whom the politically correct will not accept the Court enforcing my rights because the active ingredient in the harm caused me was a slut, read woman fully experiencing her emotions, so the Court had better find a legal way to deep-six my case. The character assassination was simply intended to shut down the legal argument and marginalize me, so the lead defense attorney didn’t have to argue, nor the Court consider, the merits.

The second prong of the attack, which also provided a basis for vilifying me, consisted of information that the lawyer claimed as true but was really false or misleading in order to convince the Court that my Complaint was a “delusional” tale told by a liar. For instance, the attorney wrote concerning his phony facts that “Each and every fact has either been acknowledged by the plaintiff or confirmed by documentary evidence.” Under the law, “acknowledge” means a person admits, affirms, declares, testifies or avows that something said by another is true. I never did that concerning the so-called facts this lawyer used in his memorandum. And even if I did, under the Federal Rules of Civil Procedure a judge shouldn’t engage in resolving disputes over facts or considering evidence until later on in the case after the necessary steps are taken to make sure both sides’ statements and documents aren’t fabricated. Dubin gamed the procedure; otherwise, he never could have gotten most of his disinformation before the Chief Judge, which was crucial in carrying out the defendants’ strategy to paint me as

a liar and a pariah in order to give the Chief Judge a socially acceptable excuse to throw the case out.

The alleged “documentary evidence” the defense lawyer submitted consisted of 47 separate documents, which he disguised as 30 exhibits to make the number appear less. The lawyer lied that because “the plaintiff had possession and full knowledge of each and every document” the Court could consider them in deciding the motion to dismiss. That’s not the law, even assuming I did have full knowledge and possession of each document. The only matters a Federal court can consider in deciding a motion to dismiss are the allegations in a complaint, documents incorporated by reference into a complaint, matters of which judicial notice may be taken, and documents relied on by the plaintiff in drafting a complaint. Only eight of the 47 defense documents were used in drafting my Complaint, none of the others were referred to in the Complaint, and none of the 47 could the Court take judicial notice of. In my response, I told the Court I had relied on other sources other than the eight included in the 47, such as “Shipilina’s diary of over one hundred pages. Gee whiz, the defense lawyers didn’t include the diary in their voluminous exhibits. I guess it doesn’t support their so-called facts and false inferences.”

Among the defense’s “documentary evidence,” for which I moved to exclude, were letters I sent to the Commie Ho before our marriage. Dubin obviously submitted them, in part, to embarrass me, an often tried and often successful tactic to cause a plaintiff so much emotional stress that he will abandon his rights. It didn’t work. These days I’m beyond embarrassment but not hate. Even though some of my sappy romantic remarks in those letters made me want to throw up. The defense lawyer also used the letters to try to impeach my credibility, which was again improper for a motion to dismiss, but okay for a deposition or trial, which come later in the

process. Dubin claimed the letters showed that the Commie Ho, her Moscow pimp Leo and her criminal mother didn't trick me into bringing the Ho to America because I pursued her and knew the Commie Ho's "profession" before marrying her. He used the word "profession" to create the false impression for the Court that I knew she was a prostitute and member of the Russian mob and added that knowing such; I tried to find her work. Right, I'm going to drum up Johns for my future wife; I don't think so. But the lawyer's mind set, meaning he would probably do that for his girlfriend, his lie was a natural result of his values.

The only part of the Commie Ho's profession I knew about before the marriage was the lap dancing, which I learned of in November 1999 after a call about her arrest in Mexico on immigration violations, and I did help her find a job at Flash Dancers believing, like an idiot, it would be temporary until she saved the nest egg she wanted of 50 grand. So, I'm a dope. The defense lawyer knew all that from the Complaint, but that didn't stop him from twisting the letters I had written when I believed she worked only as a model and go-go girl with clothes, although not many clothes, in order to mislead the Court into believing I aided her work as a prostitute and Russian mafia member. Many lawyers never care about the truth or what anyone actually says, so they just make it up assuming the Court will be too busy to straighten out their misrepresentations.

Most of the defense's documents weren't even authenticated, which means a statement by someone in a position to know whether a document is real or a fabrication as with the documents CBS *60 Minutes* boss Betsy West used against President Bush concerning his National Guard Service. West was the same bimbo who ignored my story about the truth of Russian sluts coming to America voluntarily to ho for dollars.

One of the defense's phony documents was an alleged contract between the Commie Ho and me that was clearly pulled from a book of legal forms. Dubin argued the document proved me a fellow traveler in crime by acting as the Ho's agent, implying pimp, even though it had no signatures, no references to prostitution or the Russian mob. Anyone can type up a copy of a form without signatures and claim it's an agreement. Any judge not driven by or scared of the political correctionalist agenda would throw such exhibits in the garbage because they lacked any indication of genuineness.

Taking this opportunity to return a few insults in my motion to exclude the documents, I told the Court, "the defense attorneys were beginning to behave like pro se defendants, and perhaps the special rules accorded non-attorney pro se parties should apply to them. They improperly submit extraneous exhibits on a motion to dismiss and don't even bother to take the time and effort to authenticate them. Then after I make an objection, they still don't do all that is required to authenticate these extraneous exhibits. Rather, they invent an excuse for their failure by claiming some of the exhibits don't need authentication because they are provided as a 'courtesy to this Court.' That's a slick rationale for the whispering of untrustworthy evidence into the Court's ears. By that inquisition-like reasoning, the defendants could fake any document, give it to the Court and the court should believe it because lawyers say it's legit—I don't think so."

An even slicker argument for getting the Court to consider these unauthenticated exhibits depicted me as the heavy for "seek[ing] to have this Court ignore admissible information." By "admissible information" the defense lawyer meant "evidence," but it's not the Court's function on a motion to dismiss to weigh the evidence that might be presented in a summary judgment motion or at trial. Telling this to the Court, "I just don't understand why the defense attorneys

blatantly ignore the Federal Rules of Civil Procedure, unless they are trying to slip something by. And they are. They want the Court to ignore the due process concerns built into the rules and try the case here and now.”

The exhibits even included what the defense maintained were English translations of Russian documents supporting their position, but they didn't bother to include copies of the Russian documents from which the translations were purportedly made. Despite this, they argued that because I didn't say in my motion the documents were inaccurate or not translated properly, they were, therefore, correct translations and authentic. To which I responded, “Where in the law did the defendants find this Joseph Heller Catch-22? If a party doesn't claim the English translations of foreign records are inaccurate, then they are accurate, even though there are no copies of the foreign language records for a party to compare to the alleged English translations. Give me a break, except for a handwritten document in Russian, which is unlikely a public record unless the Russians have run out of typewriters, there are no copies of the original Russian official records from which the English translations purportedly came.” That didn't stop the lead lawyer. Dubin argued that the Russian version, even though absent, serves as the evidence, and, therefore, the English translation does not require authentication. Interesting argument, lawyers could create any document in English that said whatever they wanted and have a court consider it as truthful by simply claiming it accurately represented the translation of a foreign document for which the lawyers couldn't provide a copy of to a court. Clearly an Orwellian argument.

The lead attorney, however, did include the Russian language papers from the Krasnodar criminal defamation case against the Commie Ho's mother but no translation into English. Probably slipped his mind, or more likely to cover his lie to the Court that the papers represented

a civil suit brought by me in an attempt to harass the Commie Ho's mother. My motion to exclude the exhibits pointed out "The defamation case referred to was not a civil defamation case, but a criminal indictment of Inessa Shipilina brought by the city prosecutor of Krasnodar—big difference!" But what did the defense lawyers care, since their aim was to discredit me before a judge who might not want to deal with a civil RICO case anyway. Some judges just go along with one sides lies in order to get rid of a case they don't like—bureaucrats serving that most important of interests: their own.

Another trick Dubin often used switched around the sequence of events in order to depict me as assuming the risk of what happen. For example, he claimed I learned about the Commie Ho secretly feeding me drugs and that she was a prostitute before the wedding but went ahead and married her anyway. I maybe dumb, but not that dumb. As my Complaint clearly stated, that knowledge of the Ho's actions didn't come until months after the wedding and after reading her diary, which I found in her bags. The lawyer also mixed up the allegations in my Complaint so as to rewrite it to the defense's advantage, which once again is not allowed on a motion to dismiss. In one instance, the defense attorney twisted my Complaint as asserting the Commie Ho fed me drugs while she was in Mexico and I in Moscow. How did she do that? By emailing me meals. She only fed me lies during that time. Dubin also lied that after I learned of the Commie Ho's adultery and went back to New York in June 2000, I then contacted her "in the hope that she would return." In order to reach that deception, he turned a "goodbye letter," the one I sent from England, into a "come back letter." This lawyer also had the nerve to criticize me for trying to save my marriage by demanding the Commie Ho obey her marriage vows when she was in America. Duh, isn't that the reason for marriage vows?



On it went with the defense's joint memorandum changing dates, mischaracterizing the Complaint and simply lying:

My investigation in Krasnodar to find evidence for the annulment/divorce case became a "fascination" with the Commie Ho's affairs and an "effort to punish her." Guess as a man, I not only had no right to make accusations against my wife in an annulment/divorce case, but no right to dig up evidence to prove those accusations.

The Commie Ho declining to press charges when she went to the police in December 2000 to report attempted extortion by me turned into "merely," another favorite word of attorneys, creating a record because I had abused the legal system by filing a lot of suits. At that time, I had filed no lawsuits.

By not denying the accusations in Dubin's initial motion to dismiss memorandum meant I had admitted them, which included harassing the defendants. Baloney, the law doesn't require a plaintiff to deny a defendant's accusations until the defendant serves an answer with counterclaims, which the defense lawyers had not done, and the use of the legal system to sue others for violating a person's rights is not harassment—it's the very reason the judicial system exists.

Dubin even claimed I never received any threatening telephone calls when his client Mundy had tapes of two of them, thanks to the state court motion to reform the divorce settlement, and declared that I never accused Mundy and Petrovich of instigating them when I had. Dubin argued that because the F.B.I. didn't arrest the guy making the threatening calls, they never happened. Well, the F.B.I. didn't arrest in time the 20<sup>th</sup> 911 hijacker taking flight lessons in the Midwest either. Maybe the F.B.I. will make an arrest of John Pierre-Madison when I end up dead, although I doubt it.

Dubin naturally ridiculed me as mentally unstable for seeking help from a psychiatrist to deal with the hell the Commie Ho, Mundy and the New York State courts had put me through. The New York State Bar Association encourages lawyers to seek medical assistance during troubled times, but if they do, it's a certainty that other lawyers and judges will use it against them. No more shrinks for me.

The defense lawyer intentionally mixed up Silpe's July 2001 sell out of me in the annulment/divorce case with the November 2001 settlement by saying the sell-out was no such thing because it came in November after a long period of time and an extensive written agreement that I approved.

Dubin also resorted to the sarcasm used by a few of the other attorneys in the case who depicted me as claiming the RICO action spanned the globe. Not true, I said the Russian mafia spanned the globe, and this suit involved only a part of that organization's activities in five countries on two continents.

Dubin also lied that the Complaint's only references to Mundy and Petrovich were for representing the Commie Ho in the annulment/divorce action and immigration matters when paragraph after paragraph cites them for coercion, bribery, intimidation, obtaining visas for Russian prostitutes, suborning perjury, mail and wire fraud and money laundering.

Dubin didn't confuse the Complaint's allegations; he intentionally misrepresented them and repeated his lies more than once betting that the Chief Judge would not spend the time necessary to see through his falsehoods, omissions, switching the chronology of events and the false impressions the joint memorandum created. That's why he filed so many documents, to scare the Chief Judge off from making the effort to understand the allegations against the defendants and the chain of events.

One lie by the lead counsel, however, made me smile. He declared it was I who was the mafioso. If the people with whom I used to work in the news media could hear that, they'd have a good laugh. Whatever reputation my time in the newsroom created, it wasn't that of a mafia sycophant.

In the seventies and early eighties when I worked in the media, New York City's mobsters consisted mainly of Italians, Irish and Jews operating as "families" with "made members" and those not officially on the inside, but close, called "good friends." Not too many folks were "made members," and I only met one in my news career, a cousin of Joey Gallo. But lots of politicians, public officials, union officers, slumlords, nursing home operators, law firms, newsmen, contractors, methadone and medical clinic managers and businessmen did and received favors from the made mobsters and were accorded the title "good friends." The mobsters and their good friends made up a shadow government of influence peddling that favored certain business operators and politicians. Corruption weaved throughout the City and at the heart were the mob bosses' power over unions, certain industries and violence that they brokered through guys like Roy Cohn and Bill Shea, as in the former Queens stadium. Power brokers such as Cohn and Shea cut the deals that enriched those on the inside with the money from those on the out, the average taxpayer. I hated these guys, didn't know why, just did and still do.

On one undercover story, I ended up sitting in Roy Cohn's town house on the Eastside with him and two other guys working out the details of a Studio 54 fundraising event for the newly elected Surrogate judge, a "good friend" of Cohn's, the Gambino and Mangano families.

In New York City, the Surrogate judge determines which lawyers received the millions of dollars each year the judge parcels out in lawyer fees. When a person in the City dies, the

individual's estate goes before the Surrogate judge, who, depending on the situation, can appoint the judge's lawyer friends to protect the interests of one or more heirs to the estate. The appointed lawyers, however, generally protect no one's interest but their own by padding their fees and sometimes just looting the estate, which the Surrogate usually approved.

The fundraiser we were planning, which was Cohn and the judge's idea, gave lawyers the opportunity to buy a piece of the action from the Surrogate Court by effectively bribing the judge with ticket purchases. The money raised by the fundraiser, after paying off campaign debts, would go right into the judge's pockets. Even some of the campaign debt payments would go into the judge's pockets because they were falsely listed as coming from fronts set up by other "good friends." These fronts never lent the campaign any money or provided services, so by paying them off with the fundraising proceeds simply channeled money to the judge.

Cohn originally wanted Bill Shea to help him push the tickets, but Shea thought it a little too obvious a bribe scheme. Shea preferred secret bank accounts and exchanges of envelopes with cash. After talking on the telephone with Shea, Cohn remarked, "I just can't deal with all this negativity. Bill will buy a couple of tables but won't help sell the tickets. We'll have to do that ourselves."

Since joining the judge's campaign as assistant manager, I had kept Joe Conason, a reporter at the Village Voice, informed on the various shenanigans of the campaign. After telling him about the bribery-fundraiser scheme on which he did an article, the New York State Commission on Judicial Conduct started an investigation. The fundraising efforts immediately stalled, the judge, who directed me to keep an index file of the lawyers who contributed and how much, deep-sixed the file, but not until I made a copy. The fundraiser went off, but the judge

didn't show along with many others and very little was actually reported, since the preferred ticket sale was in cash.

After the stink over the fundraiser, the judge took bribes the old fashion way, through a combination lawyer and bagman, whose brother had lost lots of money with his partner Meyer Lansky in a Havana casino after Castro took over. The bagman eventually ended up in jail for five years.

The reform wing of the New York City Democratic Party that controlled the Commission on Judicial Conduct cut a deal with the regular wing of the party to whom the judge was aligned and who was represented by a lawyer for John Gotti. The agreement kept the judge on the bench provided she gave patronage, millions of dollars in lawyers' fees, to both factions of the Democratic Party, which included lawyers friendly with the Commission, Cohn, the Gambino and Mangano families and the judge.

There were other mafia news stories I worked on, but rarely did the real culprits: judges, lawyers or businessmen ever pay the price. Then in the 1990s, a new corruptor came to town, the Russian mafia, and I, like an idiot, helped bring in one of its assets. So, I couldn't help but laugh at the irony of unwittingly having aided the new mob and being accused as one of its associates.

Dubin also included in the joint reply memorandum a type of bootstrap logic. He claimed my allegations false because the Federal Government, according to him, had never investigated two of the key defendants, Mundy and Petrovich, for their Russian mafia connected activities. He didn't know that, or maybe he just lied, but even if true, the 911 Commission's Report showed the Federal Government renown for not investigating comrades in crime. Besides, as the U.S. Supreme Court held, the purpose of the civil RICO statute was to allow

private citizens to take down criminals and their abettors that government prosecutors couldn't because of limited resources. The really outlandish part of the defense attorney's claim, however, was that he completely ignored that my papers stated the F.B.I. had confirmed its Russian Organized Crime Unit had started an investigation based on my Complaint. True, the F.B.I. didn't mention Mundy and Petrovich specifically, but neither did it rule them out. Dubin conveniently ignored that because he figured the Court would miss it among all the pages of documents in the case.

Hypocritically, Dubin even rebuked me for trying to find out the truth as though I, the target, had no right to investigate the defendants concerning the harm they caused me. What a system of justice America has evolved into where lawyers can actually use against an injured party that party's efforts to uncover facts for a court. Guess the new rule of procedure is that evildoers can't be investigated because they are evildoers. Depicting me as a social outcast, and his clients as pillars of the community, he declared I had telephoned strangers to ask "appalling questions." Not true, but if I had, so what, that's a plaintiff's or defendant's right, at least it used to be under American jurisprudence. The defense lawyer had conveniently juxtaposed questions I had asked the Commie Ho to my asking them of strangers, and the questions directed to the Commie Ho were based on her "appalling" diary. But that's the way such lawyers work, tell a lie and then use that lie to sully an opponent.

Often when I pointed out an obvious fabrication by Dubin, he'd simply ignored it. Many lawyers and judges do the same—no sense drawing attention to the pathology of lawyerly lying. But there were some lies so blatant that this lawyer needed a smoke screen to shift attention away from his blatant falsehood. My opposition memorandum slammed the defense attorney for his intentional deception that Mundy's filing of a disciplinary complaint against me was not

aimed at scaring me off the RICO case. The attorney claimed Mundy didn't know about the RICO case when Mundy filed the disciplinary complaint; therefore, Mundy couldn't have been using the complaint to intimidate me. But Mundy did know, and after I showed that to the Court in my memorandum, the defense lawyer tried to distract the Court from his original lie by calling me hysterical for exposing it. What a jerk, my mother was hysterical, not me. Anyway, according to his reasoning, telling falsehoods didn't matter if they caused an emotional reaction in an opponent because such reaction was a sign of guilt. Sounded similar to the rationale of a prosecutor at a witch trial where putting on a strong defense to false claims meant toasting at the stake.

Dubin claimed the Internet website on which Mundy's law firm advertised with agencies selling Russian bribes and hos was created by me. What a beckon of darkness was this guy. On receiving my memorandum, he actually called me to say he couldn't find the site, so I told him how to search it. He replied, "Hold on, I'm going to try on my computer right now. Okay, I found it, thanks." He himself confirmed its existence, but in his reply memorandum and after Mundy's advertisement was removed, he calls it "suspect" and goes on to accuse me of setting it up in order to explain the copies of the site included in my exhibits. First, I'm accused of fabricating the Ho's diary and then Mundy's website aimed at providing hos bound for American immigration services. Where do these people come from—Russia!

The defense's reply memorandum also made some trivial objections that my complaint and opposition memorandum were too long. The Complaint was only so long as to give the defendants fair notice of the claims against them. As I told the Court, if they had violated fewer laws, it would have been shorter. The opposition memorandum was only so long as to expose the falsehoods of the lead defense lawyer in his dismissal memorandum. If he had lied less, it

would have been shorter. And, if I had the opportunity to respond to the reply memorandum, my response would have been even longer than my first memorandum since the defense attorney told more lies in his reply memorandum. Putting aside all that, under the Court's rules and the individual rules of the Chief Judge, the lengths of both my Complaint and opposition memorandum were within the rules. Besides, the American defendants up to mid-May 2004 had submitted 353 pages of documents to my 273. So why was the lead attorney complaining? Once again, he knew the Court would not bother counting the pages each side filed, so he tried to create the false impression that I was to blame for loading up the Court with paper.

The length of my opposition memorandum also ticked off Dubin because it countered most of the lies he told in his first memorandum. He called my relentless exposure of his falsehoods "nit-picking," and the omissions he had made as "trivial." Then he accused me of diverting the Court's attention by spending "countless pages" disproving his misrepresentations, half-truths and false impressions, and even accused me for doing what he did by "referencing inadmissible evidence and harping on mundane details." The guilty, especially lawyers and girls, don't like others showing them up as liars, and will always criticize their opponents for doing what they do, whether or not true, so as to distract from their own mendacity.

Like whores, many attorneys will never admit the truth while criticizing everyone else. Dubin denounced me for using "buzz words" to appeal to the Court's emotion, such as white slavery, narcotics trafficking, bribery, money laundering, extortion, threats, murder for hire and fraud—all of which are legal terms specifying crimes committed by the defendants. What terms would he have me use? If I euphemized them to "inappropriate social conduct," he'd then complain about vagueness. Dubin also criticized me for using public statements by the F.B.I. and C.I.A. about the Russian mob's activities in the U.S., which he called "delusion,"



“outlandish,” “incredible” and “far-fetched.” He went so far as to rebuke me for paranoia by trying “to lull the Court into believing that the Russian mafia presently exists.” Well if it doesn’t, then who washed billions of dollars through the Bank of New York, runs lucrative gasoline tax fraud and insurance scams in the New York City area and operated Los Angeles’ largest prostitution ring. He reminded me of some people in the 1940s and 1950s, like J. Edgar Hoover, who always claimed La Cosa Nostra a myth—until Appalachia.

Dubin even found fault with me referencing my education and employment history after he went to such lengths to tear down my reputation and paint me as a pariah. How else can someone counter such smear tactics? This guy would use Moses’ Ten Commandments against him. And no, I’m not implying any comparison.

Many lawyers and all Feminists follow the Old Russian adage, “the law is like a wagon axle, it goes in any direction you want to pull it,” and apply the motto, “don’t let the facts get in the way of a good story.” For example, the lead defense attorney claimed I “blatantly admitted that this action was a fishing expedition.” “Blatant” is another favorite word of exaggeration for lawyers. But in this case, not only did I not “blatantly” admit, I never admitted to a “fishing expedition” at all. Fishing is not one of my past times, other than for girls, which is more like a hunt. In another instance, Dubin misrepresented my Complaint and memorandum as saying that my ex-wife “holds together” the defendants. The Commie Ho was a mafia prostitute, recruiter of other prostitutes and money laundered, not a capo. Although one day, who knows? She had dealings with the defendants, just as anyone belonging to a large organization and its affiliates would end up working with any number of different persons in different sections and locations.

Paulsen’s attorney filed a short reply in addition to signing onto the joint reply in which he flat out lied that my Complaint only accused his client of crimes occurring in October 1998.

That would mean the four-year period in which to bring a RICO suit against Paulsen had run before I filed the Complaint. I'm not that stupid. The Complaint alleges, present tense, Paulsen imports and sells pornography from Russia into southern California. Paulsen's mentally challenged attorney also puffed himself up to self-righteously declare my Complaint a "vindictive assault" and "act of vengeance" that the Court should not countenance in order to "maintain the integrity of the judicial process," which is lawyer lingo appealing to the desires of many judges for expediency over justice. Paulsen's attorney even threw in the comical overstatement that his client "vehemently denies all the allegations of the Complaint." Just "deny" would have sufficed.

Flash Dancers' attorneys also included a short reply in which they couldn't even distinguish between my papers and those of the defense's joint reply when they complained to the Court about me submitting a "book of exhibits." The number of my exhibits were five, which added up to 35 pages; the defense submitted 47 separate documents of over 200 pages.

Flash Dancers' reply tried to correct its lawyers' earlier mistake of ignoring many of the Complaint's allegations against it by calling them immaterial and redundant. They weren't, but these lawyers needed to gloss over their sloppiness somehow. They also called my pointing out their failure as "nit-picking." "Nit-picking" when they get caught, but an "egregious fraud on the Court" or "admission of wrong doing" if I had done it. Flash Dancers' attorneys, as with Mundy and Petrovich's, also mischaracterized some of the allegations against their clients in order to leave out important sections to which they had no defense. When I caught them, they told the Court, it was an error of no consequence. Nice tactic, if a lawyer gets away with it, a court may rule in his favor, if he gets caught for lying, it was inadvertent and unimportant—a no lose situation. In another trick, the lawyers misled the Court about one important case by claiming

the case addressed a different issue than it actually did. Obviously they were betting the Court would never check. Regardless of their subterfuges, at least Flash Dancers' lawyers didn't engage in personally insults.

Detective Henning's attorney, Vikrant Pawar, didn't put in a reply; he just went along with the lead defense attorney in the joint reply as did the Commie Ho's lawyer, Jack Sachs. Sachs was an old guy, and I couldn't help thinking with a smile about the line from the movie *Raging Bull*, "Did you fuck my wife?" Sure she was no longer related to me, thank goodness, but he, like hundreds of other guys probably did. Only in this instance, she was paying him rather than he her.

To sum up, during this early stage of the case, the Federal Rules of Civil Procedure required that the District Court ignore all the claimed facts presented in the defense lawyers' memoranda of law and exhibits because the Court is supposed to focus only on the allegations in my Complaint in order to determine whether the law can provide a solution. Dubin and the other defense lawyers, however, ignored the rules to argue the merits of the case during a motion to dismiss in order to finesse the Court into using their false and one-sided depictions of the facts to determine the defendants were innocent angels persecuted by me the devil; therefore, the case should be dismissed. Had the defense lawyers played by the rules, fat chance, and waited for the proper time to submit their so-called facts against me, I would have had the opportunity to shoot down their claims for lack of evidentiary foundations or use cross-examinations to show they lied. But by throwing in their accusations during a motion to dismiss, no such opportunities existed. Very tricky, this Star Chamber tactic that eviscerated my due process rights on which the Federal Rules of Civil Procedure are based. So I did the only thing I could, cited the law that

showed such a tactic improper and moved the Court to exclude from its decision the smears, extraneous exhibits and alleged facts the defendants submitted.

### Party Lights

After reviewing the defense lawyers' joint reply and the short individual replies from a couple of the defendants, I decided not to work six days a week preparing for an oral argument, even though it represented my last chance to convince the Chief Judge that the defense attorneys were lying and violating the rules. The chances of the District Court granting me oral argument were slim to none because of its animosity for civil RICO cases and the popular perception that men no longer deserved the protection of the institutions they had created. Instead, I used my time to continue investigating the defendants, writing this magnum opus<sup>1</sup> and waiting for the Bank of Cyprus to file its separate motion to dismiss.

Out of all the foreign defendants in Russia and Cyprus that I had tracked down and served, and there were nearly twenty, only the Bank of Cyprus bothered responding. The papers for the Mexican defendants were still bouncing around Mexico's Direccion General de Asuntos Juridicos, which under Hague Convention was delegated to serve the papers. The Russian and Cypriot defendants ignored the action brought against them in a U.S. Federal Court, as would the few Mexican defendants that were finally served eight months later by a Writ of Notification. Everything takes longer south of the border.

Except for the Bank of Cyprus, which had an office New York City, the U.S. Government couldn't touch these other mob associates. The District Court couldn't enforce any decision against any of them unless their respective governments abided by the promises officials made in international treaties. An unlikely occurrence since governments riddled with

---

<sup>1</sup> A magnum opus is an overly long text written to justify the author's existence. The problem is that such works are so long that no one reads them, so the author's effort to justify his existence fails.

corruption, such as Russia, Cyprus and Mexico, don't live up to their agreements unless it benefits their citizens at the expense of Americans. Besides, the foreign officials responsible for executing an American court judgment will simply take bribes from the foreign defendants to do nothing. In those countries, the line between government and organized crime blur to indistinction. Enforcing a U.S. court decision even in a civilized country like England often ends with the same result but for the different reason that the cost in time and money is too high unless multi-millions of dollars are involved.

So much for the long arm of the law unless you're rich or a corporation, which was why my case against the American defendants was crucial. If the District Court dismissed my case against them and not the others and neither the Second Circuit Court of Appeals nor the U.S. Supreme Court overturned the District Court, then, technically, I could still go ahead with the case against the Vasilyevas, who wouldn't bother defending, and the foreign defendants who were served but never appeared. The problem, however, was enforcing it. The Vasilyevas, like all Russian criminals, keep their assets well hidden and outside America, and enforcing a judgment in Russia, Cyprus or Mexico didn't promise much, if any, success. But there was another problem as well. If the case against the American defendants, except the Vasilyevas, was thrown out of Court, the Chief Judge might not even allow me to obtain a default judgment against the foreign defendants. There might still exist a shot at one against the Vasilyevas, but as for the overseas mobsters, the District Court would probably rule that requiring them to show up in New York City would be so "oppressive and inconvenient" for the foreigners that the case should be brought in a foreign court.

The Court could also dismiss the case against the Vasilyevas even though they didn't put in a formal motion for such, which would assure the Court getting rid of my case against the

foreign gangsters. It's called dismissing a case for forum non conveniens, and the reason courts do so is supposedly to increase the chance of a fair trial. But when civil RICO cases are involved, the courts use it to get rid of the lawsuit, even when it leaves the plaintiff with no alternative but to go into an overseas court. Talk about inconvenience and oppression: the expenses and problems in dealing with the even more corrupt court systems of many foreign countries simply make the plaintiff drop the case. But many American judges don't care, so long as the case is out of their courts—once again expediency rules.

My investigations during June 2004 came up with one interesting piece of information. One of the two brothels in Limassol, Cyprus, which mobsters in Krasnodar owned and the Athanasiou family operated, advertised on the Internet. The Tramps website, [www.cytramps.com](http://www.cytramps.com), touted international entertainment, showed partially naked hos and advertised exclusive lap dances, which meant intercourse, blow jobs and the like in a private "Lap Dance Lounge."

While I was looking over the site, Mark called to see whether I could meet him at a local club later that night. After telling him about the website I found, he suggested looking up who ran the site for which he gave me the name of an Internet service that kept such information. Christakis Charalambous created and operated the Tramps' site. This guy had the same last name as the defendant who was a chief in the Cypriot Migration Office. My Complaint accused Andreas Charalambous of receiving bribes for providing Russian prostitutes with Cypriot visas in order to keep the Athanasiou brothels stocked with hos, and using his contacts with American immigration officials to expedite travel visas to America for some of the Russian sluts. Two guys with the same last name didn't mean anything. For all I knew, Charalambous might be as common in Cyprus as "Jones" in America. To make a connection between the two would

require the private detective my Moscow lawyer Xenia used to investigate the other Athanasiou brothel Zygos, where the Commie Ho once sold sexual favors. In order to save money, that task went on my hold list until the Court ruled on the dismissal motion.

It was the weekend, so I headed down to Houston Street and the club Carnaval that Mark currently promoted. In New York City, nightclubs, big and small, hire guys, called promoters, to drum up business. The promoters often get a percentage of the money spent at the bar based on how many customers from the promoters list show up. Promoters also try to get people to hold private parties at a club for which they also receive a cut. Mark introduced me to one of the owners, the female bartender and the bouncer at the front door: all friendly, cool people. These weren't the dishonest slime populating the courts and halls of power in America.

The Carnaval folk were a mixed group: the owner I met was Dominican, the bouncer black and some of the bartenders and waitresses white chicks. It was also an easy place for meeting pretty young babes—too easy and too many of them white, but who am I to complain. Usually when I go up to a pretty young white broad in a club she freezes, sometimes even backs away—too many demon tales from her Feminazi mother about older men. But when Carnaval's owner or Mark introduced me as their lawyer to the white chicks hanging out at the club, the girls started pumping pheromones in my direction. If I got too close, I could actually feel them seeping into my body along with the heat that young girls naturally radiate. By the time they turn into Feminists, however, they're absorbing rather than emanating it. Enjoying the company, I lived in the fantasy that these tomatoes were interested in me when in reality my connection with Mark, the owner and the bouncer gave me what they really wanted: the currency to get them in the club without standing in line or that most important of known commodities to young

babes—the free drink. Okay, I played along, kind of, got free drinks for myself but never a girl. So I exploited their perception. Why not, dames tricked me plenty of times.

One night, Mark and I were standing in front of Carnival making like big shots talking to a couple of babes Mark knew, one from Italy and the other Croatia. New York City is full of girls in their late teens and early twenties from overseas, especially in the spring and summertime. They come here to ho their firm bodies, find suckers to spend money on them and to tell their friends back in the old world about their sexcapades in Manhattan. Anyway, we were all laughing, smiling, flirting, they're smoking and I'm telling a few absurdities about my Russian experiences when up pulls a taxi with the Flash Dancers' advertisement on its roof with the Commie Ho's picture gazing at us. "Oh no," I said and every one looked.

"Mark said, "That's his ex-wife from Russia."

The girls remarked, "She's beautiful."

"Yeah, but you should see what's inside," and before Mark could stop me, I was on a rant. "Now let me tell you a thing or two about gorgeous girls. Nuts, dangerous, psychotic, truly demented cuckoos and as cute and cuddly as a flight of tracer bullets. They can have lovers the way other people eat cherries, but if you take another girl, even to the luncheon or drive-in, then wham-o! They lie to me and to you and to their husbands, to their lover, to their analysts and the cashier in the supermarket. Oh, I know, I've been accused of treating girls badly, and I have, but only in self defense."

Looking a little taken aback, the two girls asked in unison "What happened to you?"

"Noooo, don't tell the story!" Mark cautioned trying to save my prospects with one of these two, assuming both hadn't already started searching for an escape from me. He always warned against my telling the ho story, shaking his finger "no" and then laughing because he



knew I would anyway with the inevitable result of once again sinking my chances with a babe. Control was beyond my grasp, so as usual I blabbed on evoking the usual shock, laughter and pretenses of commiseration. Maybe I told the story to be the center of attention, but more likely I enjoyed rubbing the faces of pretty young babes into the reality of the evil they cause men. The two girls excused themselves and scurried to the safety of their other girl friends in the club.

Mark asked, “That stuff about gorgeous girls was new. Did you just make it up?”

“No, I memorized it from a movie.”

“Well that alone sure alienated those two.”

“Yeah, but there’s plenty more where they came from. Let’s go back inside.” Mark went over to another female friend of his, and I hit on some babe at the bar.

All girls want men who are dumb to their metahomorph ways, so they can wheedle something they want from a guy. Whenever a broad hears my story of the Commie Ho, she knows this guy understands her tricks, so better for her to attend to someone less enlightened. But as deep as my understanding may go, some metahomorphs still succeed in scamming me. For instance, my Salsa teacher Isabella set off all the warning bells not to become romantically involved with her—so I didn’t. But I did trust her to teach me Salsa. During our private lessons in 2003, I was making progress, even Mark said so on the few occasions some girl asked me to dance Salsa or Mark nudge her to ask me. When the private lessons ended, Isabella told me to take her group class on Friday nights to keep from losing what I had learned—made sense to me. Eight months later, my dancing had worsened, and I felt more confused than ever out on the floor. At first, I assumed middle age made it next to impossible to learn any new physical activity, but I pressed forward suckling on the feel of the nubile young bodies in my arms during class.

One day a couple of other students asked me if I knew the difference between Salsa on 1 and on 2. Never heard there were different ways to dance Salsa, so we asked our teacher Isabella. She said it didn't matter, that at some point we'd be able to do both. Well, I just wanted to do one of them but couldn't. So, I did some research. Turns out the music for Salsa on 1 and on 2 differ by which beats the music emphasizes and that signals the dancer what to do when. Most of the Latin music played in New York is written for Salsa on 2 dancing while in Cuba it's for Salsa on 1. Since I had no intention of immigrating to Cuba despite the plethora of cars from the 1950s, Salsa on 2 was for me, and that's what Isabella had taught me in the private lessons, but her group lesson danced Salsa on 1. She tricked me! Conned me into taking her group class by covering up the distinction between Salsa on 1 and on 2 with that fib about starting differently in order to get into the turns more quickly. The dance routine in her group class started differently because it was a fundamentally different version of Salsa dancing than what she taught me in the private lessons. Thanks to her, I now had two conflicting ways of moving to Salsa music battling me into a wallflower. What is with these girls? My own teacher, instead of helping me, exploited my reliance on her knowledge to make a lousy few hundred bucks extra. That's called fraud, and I could sue her in small claims court, but I had other things to do. From here on I vowed to mistrust broads completely about everything, and have nothing to do with them on any level except partying.

Look at what happened to Bill O'Reilly. He thought chicks deserved a fair chance, so he hired some to do research and production on his show. Jobs traditionally held by men because men are best suited for such positions. One of the females, probably at the instigation of some Feminazi attack group or the girl's weekly consciousness lowering coffee klatch, sued O'Reilly for millions, injuring his reputation and credibility, but making lots of money for herself out of a

settlement or, more accurately, “sex-mail.” Interesting that blackmail is a crime but sex-mail is not. So in the end, O’Reilly knew how Justice Clarence Thomas felt.

Guys have got to learn that the days of chivalry are dead. Broads are the enemy—wise up, that’s the way they see men. Dames will do any harm to any guy to make money or to vent vengeance over some illusionary slight to their princess egos. They are on a crusade to let loose every evil desire against men that enters their chemically unbalance brains using the rationale that men deserve such for shielding girls from much of the horrors of life all these millennia or that men are the ones responsible for causing females to harm men. Don’t look at me, it’s feminine logic, and you or some guy you know is probably next.

Girls always twist a way to blame men for something bad that happens while stealing credit for the good. Take the view of a white college coed I flirted with one Saturday night at Carnival. While I watched her tits as we chit chatted, she said, “I’m lucky I have such great parents. Most of my college girl friends were abandoned by their fathers.”

Red alert! Red alert! Feminazi propaganda on the attack, I put the alcoholic buzz from my vodka gimlet—Absolut and Roses Lime—on hold and stepped on the gas speeding my brain to find a dagger of reality to stab into her bigoted brain.

“What do you mean their fathers abandoned them?” I asked in a civil manner trying to set her up.

“Lots of my friends’ parents got divorced.”

“So the divorce caused the abandonment?” I feigned naivety, waiting for her belief in feminine superiority to box her in.

“Of course it did! Otherwise the fathers would have stayed at home.” Now I had this ditz.

“But why do your girl friends blame their fathers for abandoning them when 80% of divorces are initiated by the wife?” I mildly stated this statistic, one of many the Feminazis conveniently ignore in their bible of hate against men.

“Eighty percent! I don’t believe that!”

I didn’t expect her to, so I pushed my knife of truth a little deeper. “It’s an old figure from when I was in law school, probably higher now with the increase in female liberation.” I added a slightly mocking tone to the last two words.

“Well, I’m sure the husbands probably caused the wives to file for a divorce.”

“Unfortunately, there’s no statistics on that, since most states are no-fault divorce. But despite who was at fault, what usually happens when a couple with children gets divorced?” I wasn’t finished with this acolyte of American feminine ignorance.

“What do you mean?”

“Who ends up with the kids?”

“The mother.” At least this bane-in-waiting got that right.

“And even when the husband wants the kids, the courts usually give them to the mother. Sounds like discrimination to me. So who’s causing the father to abandon the kids then?”

“I don’t think the father wants the kids very often.”

“Alright, so in the typical divorce the husband pays the mother money to take care of the children.”

“Not all the time, some fathers don’t pay.”

“But most fathers do. Don’t forget that there is only one type of person in America that can be put in jail for not paying a debt, and that’s a father who doesn’t pay child support. Funny,

I thought one of the reasons the founding fathers broke with England was over debtors' prisons. I guess they were only thinking of girls at the time."

"The fathers should be made to pay for the children, since they're making most the money."

"Are they? If you work out the the amount of money earned on a per hour basis, girls actually make more than guys, and an analysis of a university study shows that girls control over a majority of the wealth in America." My reliance on what for her was higher math went right by her, so I said, "Despite the money lots of girls have, I don't see any girls paying for any dates or to get into clubs?" Perhaps I should have said drink; maybe she would have bought me one. "But assuming you're right about who's wealthier, a father that doesn't pay goes to jail. So what happens to a mother who moves out of state with the children away from the father's work place?"

"Why should anything happen to the mother? She can go wherever she wants."

"In our typical divorce settlement, the court orders the father to pay some or all of the support for the kids and tells the mother to make the kids available for the father to visit, usually on the weekend."

"Right, so?"

"But if the mother moves the kids out of town, maybe to keep them away from the father, what can the father do?"

"Go back to court."

"But the court can't make the mother move back to where the family lived before the divorce. That's against the U.S. Constitution. It's also against the Constitution to put people in jail for failing to pay a debt, but the courts over look that legal nicety. So in the end, the father

has to pay money or go to jail, but the mother can keep the kids away from the father by moving out of town. Who then is responsible for the abandonment?"

"That doesn't happen that often." Just the type of dismissive remark I'd expect from a budding Feminazi.

"Maybe yes, maybe no; maybe rain, maybe snow." A saying I adopted from a Young Communist Pioneer of the former Soviet Union. The flirtation dead and my instruction in reality over, I excused myself for another drink.

The other evil perpetrated by a mother to alienate the father from his kids, I left out of my argument. It's an all too common scenario where the mother drums into the children's dear little ears that their father didn't care enough to send money for them when the wife actually used that money for jewelry or some other vanity. Whether wife, mother, ho or stockbroker, broads have an uncanny aversion to honesty that somehow enables them to escape paying for the harm they cause. No reason to waste anymore of my time disabusing this girl of her biased illusions. Females always ignore the truth when it knocks them off their self-created pedestals.

Hustling girls at Carnival made me miss the challenge of approaching babes no one knew, preferably of a darker complexion, and pitching an ad-lib line from which to spin off other verbiage in my quest for telephone numbers. So, I started hanging out at the China Club in Times Square. My new Salsa instructor, whose group class I began taking after the annoying experience with Isabella, promoted the China Club's Friday night Salsa with free admission for both girls and guys before 11 PM. Most clubs in town let the hos in for free before a certain hour, usually midnight, but not the guys. In the old days when guys had money and girls didn't, it made sense, but today, with broads relentlessly stealing guys' jobs, it discriminated against men. The clubs should respond to the times by cutting in half the price for men while making

the girls pay the same as guys. It's only fair, and the clubs will make just as much because girls want to dance more than guys. But no, fairness doesn't apply to men in America.

The China Club attracted Latina ghetto girls, tourists and white thirty-somethings. Since Mark spent his evenings promoting Carnaval, I began chasing girls with a guy from the former Soviet Union. When hunting at a club, I always preferred having a partner. Maybe it's a precaution reaching out of the genetic mists of prehistory when guys hunted dangerous animals. After all, what more dangerous animal is there today than a broad letting loose the viciousness within her? Then again, maybe the company alleviates my insecurity. The Soviet Union guy, also middle age, went for the older white broads. He was relatively new to this country but would soon catch onto which girls were most desirable. For me, the young ghetto babes looked just delicious, but I found it difficult to pull them into a conversation. Maybe their English wasn't too good; still they did dance with me. My Salsa dancing never approached those girls' abilities, but they possessed the civility to smile, laugh at my jokes and touch my arm with a thank you. The arrogant, eastern, quasi-intellectual, white-trash Feminazi elite could learn a lot about manners from these women.

As summer approached, Mark found a better deal promoting a club across the street called the Flat. The Flat didn't start moving until after mid-night, so I'd go to the China Club until around 1 PM, when the Soviet Union guy went home, and then head over to the Flat for free drinks. At first, I didn't think much of the place until one night I wandered into the back rooms. Whoa! A little bit of heaven right here on earth. Lots of beautiful black babes, all made up, dancing with each other or waiting impatiently for some guy to ask them. The young girls, late teens to mid-twenties, outnumbered the young guys, always good news for me considering my middle-agedness. Most of the young black guys in their knee length shirts and bell-bottom pants

with the bell part beginning at the waist just stood around moving their bodies in place to the music. I didn't get it. Okay, it wasn't the culture I grew up in, but when young babes are clearly anxious to dance, the guys should pounce. Don't let that prey get away. Well, they did, except for one or two guys. Find with me, since it gave me more candies to pick from, but being the only cue ball in the room, I knew I needed some credibility. I went downstairs and asked Mark to help me out. Something I did for him at times when he was eyeing some white babe. He came upstairs with the white chick he was hustling. Mark and I talked a little so that the black girls saw I was cool and with my credibility established, I started flirting and dancing, yummy. The Flat quickly became my favorite club in New York City.

#### Walk Like A Man

On the Summer Solstice of 2004, the District Court notified me of a change in judges. The Chief Judge unloaded my RICO case on a recent appointee to the bench, Peter Kevin Castel. At least the new judge was also a man, although after decades of intense Feminazi anti-men indoctrination, it might not save me from the feminine Federal Government's pervasive bias against my sex.

Judge Castel graduated St. John's Law School in New York City, considered an adequate school but nothing special—third tier. He did, however, reach the partnership ranks for Cahill Gordon & Reindel, a prestigious New York City law firm that made lots of money during the corporate takeover days of the eighties. Near the top of his profession and making lots of money, he accepted, at age 54, President Bush's nomination, and a significant salary cut, to become a judge in the U.S. District Court for the Southern District of New York. A Republican appointed judge might show some objectivity, but these days, even the heirs of Eisenhower and Reagan fawned over the Feminists, only not in as servile a manner as Democratic



hermaphrodites. President Bush's National Security Adviser, after all, was a female and instrumental in bringing us the stupidity of the 2003 Iraqi war, America's second defeat. The only hope with Judge Castel was that as a former partner in a hotshot law firm he might have a brain.

Judge Castel required both sides to produce a joint status report that outlined the nature of the case, scheduling deadlines, motions made, motions undecided and other procedural matters. The lead defense counsel Dubin telephoned me to say he had run into a lot of difficulty getting the other defense attorneys to agree on even a tentative status report and thought it would take too much time for him to also broker in changes that I would surely want. He asked me to agree that each side does its own report, which I did.

The defense lawyers did their usual sniping in their version of the status report: the plaintiff is "pro se," which implied I didn't know what I was doing; "suing sixty three defendants," actually it was nearer to seventy; "spanning the globe," which implied conspiratorial delusions; filed "a 91 page, 915 separately numbered paragraphed, complaint," which told the new Judge this case would take a lot of time and energy; and "this action, as well as the plaintiff's abusive litigation preceding this action, are nothing more than an attempt by the plaintiff to use this forum to re-live the consequences of his marriage to and divorce from the defendant Alina Shipilina while at the same time attempting to punish Ms. Shipilina and anyone who has ever come into contact with her or assisted her in preventing him from harassing her," which painted me as the cliché Dirty John tying innocent Nell to the train tracks, or buzz saw, while Dudley Do-Right, in the form of Mundy and other defendants, rush to Nell's aid.

In modern times, however, toadying lawyers and the Feminazis use different terminology for demonizing a man as Dirty John. Today the catchwords include "abuse," "harassment" and

“white male rage,” which the defense lawyers implied, in order to peg me as the modern-day leper against whom any action, no matter how violating of my rights, is justified. Any man in 21<sup>st</sup> century America who dares to use the law in fighting for his rights against a scheming, lying female who breaks U.S. laws will end up smeared and even put on domestic court pink lists. Just another tactic for coercing men into subjugation before the Feminazis’ bloody throne.

In responding to the lawyers’ status report, I reverted to my old TV news writing style:

“Pimps, prostitutes, pushers, pornographers and assorted criminals from the former Soviet Union have joined with underworld characters in Western markets over the past decade to create a global web of smuggling, protection, extortion, counterfeiting, tampering with witnesses, revenge, evasion of taxes and other illegal activities. The R.I.C.O. complaint alleges a Russian-New York enterprise [enterprise is the legal word for a R.I.C.O. group] that violates R.I.C.O. and numerous other laws. The enterprise brings prostitutes to New York and other states in the U.S.A., passes drugs and huge sums of money back and forth between the countries, creates and traffics in pornography, and threatens physical violence to anyone who might get in its way. A central associate and site of the enterprise’s illegal actions is the establishment called “Flash Dancers Topless Club,” located on Broadway and 52d Street in New York City. In addition, the enterprise often acts in other countries where there is a link of some kind, such as a connection to brothels in Cyprus and Mexico City that some defendants run, or to specific participants in the enterprise traveling in other places.

“The plaintiff, a business consultant and attorney representing himself pro se and former writer and political producer for WNEW and WABC TV News in New York, instituted the R.I.C.O. suit to recover damages for loss of profits to his business, loss of business opportunities, harm to his business reputation and other injuries, which resulted from the plaintiff unwittingly falling victim to one of the enterprise’s schemes: duping and secretly feeding narcotics to American men so that they will marry Russian mafia members, usually prostitutes, in order for these mafia molls to obtain legal entry into the U.S.A. to carry out and expand the enterprise’s activities.”

“This case grew out of discoveries by the plaintiff that began while managing Kroll Associates in Moscow. A number of the plaintiff’s witnesses in Krasnodar, Russia have been threatened, and the plaintiff has received threats. The F.B.I. has identified the threatening caller, but is afraid that by interviewing him it would provoke him to harm the plaintiff. As such, the F.B.I. has told the plaintiff not to open his door to anyone he does not know and to be careful when out in public.”

“This is a civil R.I.C.O. action under 18 U.S.C. 1961-68 against the Russian Mafia, the Chechen Baraev Islamic Terror and Crime clan and a relatively small number of alleged members and associates of those organized crime groups.”

Judge Castel set a conference for July 13, 2004 in order to map out a schedule for any remaining motions. The Commie Ho's attorney, Jack Sachs, asked the Judge to excuse him from the conference since he had already booked a cruise. Fine with me, but Sachs used his request to repeat some of the lead lawyers' swipes by harping on the number of defendants and the "unusually voluminous papers considering the action was brought by a single individual." If I had been a single corporation, I guess volume wouldn't matter to him. Sachs was out of line with his querulous complaining in a letter requesting excusal, so I sent a response to the Judge:

"I don't see what bearing it has on Mr. Sachs' request to be excused by saying he represents 'one of the sixty-five defendants, in various parts of the world....'

Sachs and the lead attorney, Dubin, apparently used different systems of counting for determining the number of defendants.

"Mr. Sachs is clearly trying to bolster the defendants' position as presented in their memoranda of law, which criticizes the number of defendants and their locations.

"I also believe it improper for Mr. Sachs to unilaterally respond to your Honor's request for a joint status report, and under the guise of doing so, imply there is something amiss with an individual filing papers of many pages, which again is another argument presented in the defendants' memoranda of law.

"There is a proper place and time for presenting arguments, and I do not believe it is fair to use ministerial letters for reiterating one sides' position."

After Judge Castel's status conference notice and the tiff with Sachs, the Bank of Cyprus submitted its separate motion to dismiss with a memorandum in support, and I began working on my opposition memorandum to it.

On July 4<sup>th</sup>, five years to the date of my arrival in Hell to work for Kroll Associates, I tuned in a movie on TV after doing some work on my opposition memo to the Bank of Cyprus' motion. The first time I saw the movie *Tombstone*, starring Kurt Russell, was eleven years

earlier in Moscow. Back then, I was in town writing a couple of articles for a Moscow business weekly and visiting my Russian girlfriend of the moment.

One day, she calls me up sobbing, “Roy, my father came home drunk and attacked me.”

Even then, I wasn’t so dumb as to believe this completely. “What happened?”

“He came into the kitchen and demanded I cook him some soup.” Isn’t that what daughters are supposed to do I thought but didn’t say.

“And..., anything else?”

“I told him, ‘Do it yourself’ and he attacked me!” More sobs.

“Relax, did he hurt you?”

“No, I’m all right, but I want you to come over and beat him up!”

“Now? Can’t this wait?”

“No! You must come right away while he’s still here. You’ll come if you love me.” I didn’t love her but did enjoy her 20-year-old body.

“Okay, I’ll hop the Metro.”

Walking from the Metro stop to her apartment, I kept wondering what am I doing in the middle of this in Russia of all places?

At her apartment, my girlfriend takes me into a room where her father, Vladimir, is lying on the couch with a rag over his face and her mother is standing a yard or so away from him looking like the Queen of Hearts who misplaced her axe.

Okay, so I start acting tough, “Come on Vladimir, get up, let’s duke it out.” All the time hoping he doesn’t accept since he’s bigger and younger than me. His wife and daughter are constantly railing at him in Russian.

Vladimir sits up dejectedly and says, “I don’t want to fight,” as the rag falls from his face exposing a huge black eye. Immediately, his wife rushes in and whacks him hard with her hand across the injured eye. Oh brother, get me out of here, I’m thinking.

“What happen to your father’s eye?” I asked my girl friend.

“When he asked me to make him some soup, I threw the tin of Campbell’s at his head, telling him to do it himself.”

“You bounced a can of Campbell’s soup off your father’s head?”

“He deserved it. He should treat me with more respect.”

Wanting to escape as quickly as possible, I let it ride and decided to dump this broad at the first opportunity.

Later, I talked to my girlfriend’s best friend who told me the truth that Vladimir never attacked her over the soup incident and never abused her at any time. My girlfriend blew up at her father for who knows what reason and got away with nearly blindly him in one eye. If anyone was in need of a battering, it was she, but this was Russia emulating America. The father did nothing, not a thing, just took these broads’ punishment because the combination of Czars and Commies had emasculated most men of Russia, including him. Exactly what the Feminazis were doing to modern-day American men.

Anyway, back to the movie. In the lead up advertising campaign to the opening of *Tombstone* in Moscow, the producers used the slogan: “Just Is Coming.” In 1993, if ever a place needed justice, it was Russia. Russell did a great job playing Wyatt Earp, as did Val Kilmer portraying Doc Holiday. The movie embellished the true story, but the character portrayals most likely depicted what these men were really like. No bowing and scraping to evil for them. Justice and honor meant more than living as someone’s dog, even a broad’s dog.

In real life, Wyatt Earp showed up in Tombstone, Arizona with his brothers to make money, which led to them running a gambling saloon. Tombstone's power elite, the Clanton Gang, interfered with Earp's business, so a feud ensued that led to the gunfight at the O.K. Corral where three of the Clanton Gang ended up dead. The Clanton Gang used its political clout to put Wyatt Earp, his brothers and Holiday on trial for murder even though they acted in self-defense. The jury acquitted them, so the Clanton Gang murdered one of Earp's brothers, shooting him in the back, and crippled another brother in an ambush. Since the Clanton Gang controlled the town, any appeal to the law was useless. Wyatt Earp, his injured brother, the Earp wives and Holiday left Tombstone, probably to the jeers of the power elite, the Clanton Gang. Wyatt Earp and Holiday regrouped with a few friends and went back looking for the four members of the Clanton Gang that killed Earp's younger brother and crippled the other. One by one they tracked them down and shot them dead.

Was it vengeance or justice? Webster's Dictionary defines "vengeance" as "the inflicting of punishment in return for an injury or offense," and defines "justice" as "the assignment of merited punishment"—not much of a difference, if any. Perhaps people with guts call Earp's actions justice while cowards denounce it as vengeance. In the movie, Doc Holiday said that Wyatt Earp was not on a quest for vengeance but for a reckoning. Okay, but either way those four dead perverters of power got what they deserved.

The corrupt government in Tombstone, Arizona, which stood by while the Clanton organized crime group murdered Wyatt Earp's brother, issued warrants to arrest Earp, Holiday and their friends for murder in killing the four Clanton members. Why is that not surprising? But back then, as long as Earp and friends stayed out of Arizona, no other state would bother

them. So by taking the law into their own hands, Wyatt Earp and Doc Holiday won one for justice.

What ever happened to those olden days when American society praised heroes rather than cowards pumped up with psychotropics who stand idly by as their rights are violated in order to preserve their pathetic little lives and creature comforts in a genderless hell? The 21<sup>st</sup> century American version of justice has replaced the finality of bullets with a Feminist corrupted federal government that reaches into every state where arrogantly mouth words of coercion, falsehoods and chicanery carry no consequences. For example, lawyers can now say pretty much anything they want, no matter how out-of-line, and get away with it.

In my RICO case, just before the status conference began in Judge Castel's courtroom, attorney Vikrant Pawar approached me in the hallway. As an attorney for the City's Corporation Counsel Office, he represented Detective Henning, the cop who threatened me with arrest in order to intimidate me into not cooperating with the INS.

With no one else in the hall, just the two of us, Pawar said, "Off the record, can I say something?"

This surprised me, what could he possibly have to say. Reverting to my old news days, I said, "How do you define off-the-record? Information that I can use but can't attribute it's coming from you, or information I can't use?"

He ignored my question and said with a smirk, "I hope you survive this motion to dismiss!"

What the devil did that mean, my mind raced for an answer? He couldn't be so stupid as to threaten me in the courthouse, maybe he wanted to psyche me out before the conference or just try to bully me. Pawar looks and sounds like he's from India or Pakistan, so I toyed with

saying, “Haven’t they out sourced you yet?” But played it conservatively and in lawyer jargon responded, “That’s an inappropriate remark that I’ll raise with the Court.”

Grinning, Pawar said, “I’ll just deny it,” and walked into the courtroom. If this country still allowed dueling, Pawar never would have dared made such a remark because of the possible consequences.

The courtroom was empty except for the seven defense attorneys on my case. Claugus avoided the routine hand shaking, maybe he carried a grudge, so I purposely went over and said hello to him. A group of law school summer interns entered to sit in the jury box as observers, and then all rose for Judge Castel’s entrance. Judge Castel referred almost exclusively to the defense attorneys’ status report; I wondered why? As he asked us questions, he seemed a little slow on the uptake and unfamiliar with the case. When going over the motions made so far, he missed completely my pending request to throw out most of the defense’s exhibits and references to them in the defendants’ memoranda that tried to improperly interject at that stage of the proceeding their factual allegations against me. After reminding the Judge and describing the gist of the motion, he set a schedule for the defense’s opposition memorandum and my reply.

On the Bank of Cyprus’ motion to dismiss, Castel shortened the schedule set by the original judge for the Bank to file its reply. Claugus pleaded for more time until September 3<sup>rd</sup> by invoking the same old whine used by Dubin that my papers, but not the defendants’, had been “voluminous to say the least.” Castel denied his request, “You put an awful lot of pressure on the court because I want to get this motion done quickly, and that I will view as coming out of my time.” His time, what’s he taking about? His time is the public’s time. He no longer serves the pecuniary interests of himself and his former law firm, but the public’s. Guess he was



planning a couple of weeks in the Hamptons at summer's end, and didn't want this case interfering. Did that bode good or ill for me?

After Castel set the schedule for all the remaining papers, I requested the Court's help in serving the Complaint on some of the foreign defendants for whom I couldn't find addresses.

"There are a number of defendants whom I have not been able to serve process on, and I am requesting the court's assistance under Federal Rule 4(f)(3), which allows service by other means as directed by the court. If you will just bear with me, I have three separate groups here.

"First, there are three defendants, Khachaturyan Aspyan, the Albatross Club, and Rey, a well known procurer. What I am requesting of the court is a letter to the Chief of the Department for Fighting Gangsterism and Corruption in Krasnodar, Russia. His name is Vladimir Naidenko. I believe a letter to him from the Court requesting his department to provide the Court with the addresses for these three persons will enable me, under the Hague Convention, to serve those defendants. I can provide the specifics as far as Mr. Naidenko's address, and if you want, to draft a letter, whatever is required, I can provide all that information to the court.

"Second, the Baraev Terror and Crime Clan in Chechnya. I have no way of finding out the address of its current boss. However, the G.R.U., which are the initials for military intelligence in Russia, has a southern operation, and a letter from the court to that office may result in an address for the current boss. The G.R.U. knows who is the current Islamic Terror and Mafia don for that clan and may have an address to which I can send the Complaint and Summons in accordance with the Hague Convention.

"Third, I have been unable to find the addresses for four other defendants, although one of the defendants, Ms. Shipilina, has knowledge of the addresses for those people, but I don't think she would be willing to provide them unless the court was to order so. They are Tanya-Phodes Studio prostitute, Stephanos, Juginta Raszyukevichina and Salvador-Phodes Studio partner."

Castel ignored ruling on the letters to the Krasnodar Department for Fighting Gangsterism and Corruption and to the G.R.U. Either he forgot or didn't want to bother doing the work at that time, so I would have to remind him down the road. He did, to my surprise, order the Commie Ho to provide me with the addresses of the last four defendants, if she had them. She did, but I also knew she'd lie by saying she didn't.

Sure enough when Jack Sachs, her attorney, returned from his summer cruise to Alaska, the Commie Ho perjured herself by claiming she didn't know any of the addresses. What did she

care; American laws couldn't touch her. However, not only did she lie under oath about not having the addresses, Sachs allowed her to lie about the nature and extent of her relationships with these four. Castel didn't order her to recount those relationships, just whether she knew their current addresses. There was no way I could prove she had their current addresses, but I could prove by using her diary that she lied about the kind of relationships she had with them. So what did that matter? Except for impeaching a party's credibility, courts don't care about false statements unless they impact an important issue in a case, and that's what the Commie Ho did by lying about her relationships with those four defendants because the relationships among the defendants are a material issue in any R.I.C.O. case. Lying about those relationships was perjury, another Federal felony—but, again, who's counting?

#### Two Faces Have I

The Bank of Cyprus' motion to dismiss papers adopted the personal attack strategy of the other defense attorneys, but the Bank's lawyer, Claugus, added a new wrinkle—self-righteous disdain. Claugus arrogantly assumed a lawyerly perch of all-knowing superiority to pompously hurl personal invectives with no bearing on the issues and to foist advice and criticism he had no right to make. He haughtily advised me, the plaintiff, “to look else where for the cause of his misfortune, including to himself.” He sarcastically remarked, “The marriage seems not to have been made in heaven” and presumptuously declared, “the plaintiff's beliefs are unbelievable,” pure “imaginings,” an artful way for calling me paranoid. My opposition memorandum emphasized the cheapness of his tactics: “Such subjective and snide remarks are meant to taint the plaintiff. It's a subtle form of litigation by personal destruction, but just as malicious in its attempt to mock a party and distract the Court.” I requested the Court to reprimand Claugus and the other defense attorneys for the same shared strategy of personal attacks.

Claugus' effort to tear me down personally required twisting, spindling and mutilating the Complaint to such an extent that it led him to some lame falsehoods, but what else could he do? Claugus claimed I had accused the more than sixty defendants of "conbing to cause the Plaintiff's marriage to Alina Shipilina and their subsequent divorce." The Complaint didn't allege that, and Claugus knew it. But he also knew the Court might buy his lie, which would help sidetrack the Court from the merits by painting me as delusional. The defendants who combined to sucker me into marrying and bringing the Ho to America were her, her mother Inessa, her Moscow pimp Leo and drugs. These three humans made up one tiny part of the Russian mob's empire building activities, the drugs one of its businesses.

After the Ho landed in America, I became suspicious that something was wrong and started looking for the truth, which led to a cascade of events, twists, turns and harm that four years later resulted in the RICO suit against the collaborators of the Commie Ho of whom I was aware. These confederates, now defendants, violated various laws under RICO in order to make sure the Ho, a Russian mafia prostitute and mid-level manager, remained in the U.S. making profits and laundering money for the mob.

Claugus' falsehood had copped the lawyers for the American defendants who previously misrepresented the Complaint as saying that the defendants had banded together, looked up my name while I worked in Moscow and said, "Let's get this sucker." The Complaint never stated or implied anything like that, but it didn't stop Claugus and the other defense lawyers from saying it did to make me appear delusional.

Claugus' effort to paint me as delusional exposed his ignorance of the RICO statute. Under RICO, not every defendant needed to have met with all the others in some dark alleyway to plan the Commie Ho's ascension to the U.S. market or keep her there at my expense.

The defendants only had to participate in some activities connected with the Russian mafia to the extent of having some discretionary authority for carrying out parts of these activities.

Confederates and members who didn't even know the Commie Ho existed could still be held liable for the harm done to me because, as the U.S. Supreme Court ruled, people who actively and knowingly work for a criminal organization that engages in criminal activity are liable for the criminal acts of other members and abettors. *Scales v. U.S.*, 367 U.S. 203, 226-27, 6 L.Ed.2d 782, 81 S.Ct. 1469, 1485 (1960). Under RICO, even though people involved with a criminal organization did not directly cause someone harm, if they played a consequential role in the organization, they were still liable for the harm others inflicted.

In my case, all the defendants actually knew and interacted with the Ho, that's how I found out about them. They all were involved in some form or another by supplying assets and marketing products and services to hard currency markets, keeping Russia mafia personnel in those markets, providing legal and financial services and making lots of money for themselves by doing so. Some of them used prostitutes mixed with narcotics to create fraudulent marriages; some engaged in immigration fraud, white slavery, importing pornography, bribery; some trafficked in drugs; some used coercion, intimidation, murder-for-hire, perjury and official misconduct to protect mafia allies; and others maximized profits with tax evasion and money laundering. Claugus patronizingly dismissed all those criminal activities as merely "colorful" or "unfortunate affairs," implying them a product of my delusions. Skipping over his implications, I assumed a Claugusian air of pomposity for my attack: "Perhaps the Bank of Cyprus does not consider the Russian mafia or organized criminals in general as a threat to civilized societies, but Congress does. The impact of organized crime is to 'weaken the stability of the Nation's economic system, threaten the domestic security, and undermine the general welfare of the

Nation and its citizens.’” *Beck v. Prupis*, 529 U.S. 494,496, 146 L.Ed.2d 561, 120 S.Ct. 1608 (2000)(quoting Pub.L. 91-254, 84 Stat. 922).

The paranoid portrait Claugus tried to draw of me included “Plaintiff has come to believe global organized crime” caused his “loss” and made him a “pawn in their activities.” At least he didn’t deny the existence of worldwide crime syndicates, which the lawyers for the American defendants had done. To fend off this sortie, I told the Court that the RICO suit, rather than being a paranoid nightmare, simply depicts the business acumen of modern day Russian organized crime and how far and deep it reaches into many aspects of American life. In this age of a global economy, Russian gangsters have also gone global in order to prey on victims any way they can.

Claugus even tried to recast the Complaint’s allegations of money laundering by the Bank of Cyprus for the Russian mafia as domestic relations. That’s a bit of a stretch, but one Claugus intentionally used to remind his Honor about the perils in modern-day America of using the Court’s powers to enforce the rights of a middle-age man tricked by a pretty young lady, even if she is a front for the Russian mafia. In my response to this common lawyerly ploy of exploiting trendy societal biases, I wrote:

“The Complaint does not allege the Bank culpable for errant matchmaking as the Bank’s memorandum infers with: ‘Defendants did not marry Ms. Shipilina. Plaintiff did. Defendants did not divorce her. Plaintiff did. The Bank played no role in this sorry affair.’ True, it would have been better them than me, but that’s not what the Bank is accused of doing. The Complaint alleges the Bank furthers the Russian mafia’s Scheme of infiltrating and expanding the mob’s activities in America by laundering the illegal funds made by mafia prostitutes, pimps, pornographers and pushers. The Bank’s marriage to the underworld of the former Soviet Union clearly produces heavenly benefits in the form of lucrative profits. A divorce between these powerful entities seems unlikely unless the purpose of RICO as stated by the U.S. Supreme Court is fulfilled in eradicating organized crime, which is a ‘highly sophisticated, diversified, and widespread activity that annually drains billions of dollars from America’s economy by unlawful conduct.’ Such a parting of the ways would be fortunate, not just for the plaintiff, but others victimized by the Russian mafia.”

Consistent with his self-enthroned grandiosity, Claugus condescended with “His is a personal misfortune common to half the population and, like others, he must seek a personal recovery. The Court should facilitate this recovery by dismissing the Complaint.” Obviously, he referred to America’s 50% divorce rate, but I responded by bending his meaning as he and the other defense lawyers so often did mine:

“I would not put the number anywhere that high, but the statement does indicate the Bank possesses information concerning other victims of the Russian mafia. Regardless of the Bank’s effort at denigration, the Complaint alleges harm to the plaintiff’s business and financial interests, which does pertain to a particular individual, the definition for ‘personal’ in the *American Heritage Dictionary*. The Bank, however, might be using ‘personal’ in the sense of ‘personal injury.’ The Complaint does not request recovery for personal injuries. Still, the Bank seems compelled to provide legal advice to the plaintiff on just that issue when it states, ‘he must seek a personal recovery.’ The Bank then goes on to provide legal advice to the Court by stating it ‘should facilitate this recovery by dismissing the within Complaint.’ I am unaware of such a legal standard that calls for the dismissal of a RICO suit because it will in some mysterious fashion aid in the recovery for personal injury, especially when the Complaint clearly states the harm to the plaintiff from the Russian mafia’s Scheme was to his business and financial interests. Perhaps the Bank’s real intent was to personally belittle the plaintiff for seeking from the Court redress of the harm caused by the Russian mafia whose money it allegedly launders.”

Following in line with the other defense attorneys, Claugus attempted to push the Court into trying the case on a motion to dismiss in violation of the Federal Rules of Civil Procedure. This was not the time in the process for the Judge to act like a kindergarten schoolteacher listening to disputed versions of what happened; that would come later. But Claugus ignored the rules in order to corrupt the process by submitting affidavits from a few Bank of Cyprus employees and asking the Court to accept as true their untested say-so. Had Claugus waited until the proper time, either on a Summary Judgment motion or at trial, many of the so-called facts in his affidavits would have been shown as false and misleading.

One affidavit portrayed the Bank of Cyprus as a small, parochial savings and loan operation that knew all its customers personally. The Bank provides Internet and telephone banking services around the globe—can’t get more impersonal than that. With a little sarcasm, I

told the Court, “Such an electronic global reach must make it difficult for the Bank to personally know its clients.” It does, however, make it easy to launder money since a click of the mouse or a telephone call could discretely send money whizzing into virtually any financial institution on the planet by way of the Bank’s 2300 correspondent relationships. This lawyer-proclaimed small bank was actually the leading financial institution on the banking and tax haven of Cyprus where, according to the *U.S. International Crime Threat Assessment*, banking and corporate secrecy, little or no taxes, and simplified incorporation procedures make it easy for terrorist groups and organized crime groups to launder funds. Gee whiz, did the most successful bank on the island do such things? Claugus’ affidavits also failed to mention that the Bank used special procedures to keep secret the real owners of the businesses that used its services, maintained a branch in the offshore center of the Channel Islands, ran a “busy” office in Moscow and, through a wholly owned subsidiary called CISCO, ran an international brokerage firm and managed investment funds.

Another Claugusian method of misleading the District Court with the affidavits involved switching an allegation against the Commie Ho to one against the Bank so that by using a little slide-of-hand, he could claim to prove the newly transferred accusation wrong. Yes, a motion to dismiss isn’t suppose to resolve fact disputes, and Claugus’ tactic is all part of the defendants claiming they’re the good guys so the Court will throw the case out. My Complaint accused the Ho of keeping a small portion of her RICO profits in the Bank’s Global Equity Fund. My private detective in Canada, Elaine, dug up the information from her sources in Cyprus, along with the account number. Claugus’ affidavits claimed a search of “all relevant Bank records” had found no account in the Commie Ho’s real name. The slide-of-hand Claugus used was that the word “Bank” in his affidavits referred only to the Bank of Cyprus, Ltd., which is just part of

the overall conglomerate called the Bank of Cyprus Group. The conglomerate also contains Bank of Cyprus Mutual Funds, Ltd., CISCO and other legal entities. But the search of records didn't include those other subsidiaries, which was strange, since the Complaint specifically stated the Commie Ho kept an equity fund account, not a checking or savings account, which are the only accounts the Bank of Cyprus, Ltd. maintains. If they wanted to confirm the equity account, they should have searched the other subsidiaries. Perhaps they didn't want to find it. Turning my verbal blade a little in Claugus' ego, I remarked in my opposition memorandum to the Court:

“The Bank's chivalrous act of spending time, money and effort to aid Shipilina with two affidavits must be greatly appreciated by her, but raises the question as to why the Bank would try to help a person it considers is just one of many 'disparate' defendants. Actually, it looks more like a family associate helping out one to whom it is joined at the pocketbook. The Bank's affidavits that refute the allegations against Shipilina in the Complaint raise more questions than they answer, which can only be resolved in discovery. But after magnanimously assisting a fellow 'disparate' defendant, the Bank states, 'Nor has the Bank ever done business in New York with the plaintiff or any defendant.' The plaintiff never alleged he did any business with the Bank. But the real purpose behind the Bank's statement is to improperly interject this so-called fact into a motion to dismiss. A motion to dismiss raises only an issue of law, not of facts. Other lawyers do the same thing as though they were in state court trying to argue the factual righteousness of their cause whenever they open their mouths rather than following the proper procedure. There's a time and place for everything. Trying to three-card Monte so-called facts before the Court on a motion to dismiss is procedurally incorrect. The facts will be determined through discovery.

Throughout his memorandum, Claugus just couldn't let go of his simulated all-knowing air, “The dispute, if there is one, is between Plaintiff and his ex-wife. Organized Crime did not cause Plaintiff's misfortune.” In my response, I wrote, “How is it that the Bank of Cyprus' attorney knows the Russian mafia did not cause the plaintiff's claimed harm? Is the Bank omnipresent or perhaps, more tellingly, on intimate terms with the Russian mafia.” Without coming up for any humility, Claugus' memorandum condescendingly continued on “The Court, the Bank, and Plaintiff all have more productive uses for their resources.” Where did this guy



get off speaking for me or even the Court? I'm surprised his ego could fit through the Courthouse entrance. My response, "Perhaps the Bank's attorney is referring to the lucrative business the Bank conducts with confederates of the Russian mafia. The plaintiff, however, can think of no more productive use of government resources than, as the U.S. Supreme Court stated, 'bringing to bear the pressure of private citizen attorneys on a serious national problem for which public prosecutorial resources are deemed inadequate.'" *Agency Holding Corp. v. Malley-Duff & Associates*, 483 U.S. 143, 151; 97 L.Ed.2d 121; 107 S.Ct. 2759, 2764 (1987). As with all defense lawyers, Claugus presented his client as the victim and demanded a "measure of justice" by throwing my case out, to which I responded, "By allowing the case to proceed, the Court can prevent more than a measure of injustice to the plaintiff." But did anyone care?

Laugh, Laugh

My opposition memorandum to the Bank of Cyprus' motion to dismiss and its vituperative memorandum had included a footnote recounting the comment by Detective Henning's attorney outside Judge Castel's courtroom before the July status conference. Pawar's behavior was used as an example of the proclivity for the defense lawyers to avoid the truth:

"The willingness of defense counsels to hide the truth was demonstrated just before the July 13, 2004 conference before your Honor. Vikrant Pawar, attorney for defendant Henning, approached the pro se plaintiff in the hallway outside the courtroom and said with a grin, "I hope you survive this motion to dismiss." The plaintiff responded, "That's an inappropriate remark, which I will raise with the Court." Pawar smilingly retorted, "I'll just deny it."

Pawar didn't like that footnote, bullies always turn to cowards when their prey fights back. When he received his copy of my opposition memorandum, Pawar telephoned me.

"I received your papers and I'm upset. I'm a bit surprised although honored"—if honored, why was he upset? No, the honored part was him trying to appear untouchable, a common attorney ruse. "Honored that you would include me in your papers and mention our

conversation that you placed entirely out of context. So I'm not going to respond to it in writing,"—gee, thanks, as if I cared—"but I am surprised that you would resort to the same tactics you accuse others of doing..."

I cut him off. He wasn't going to get away with accusing me of anything nor play his game of covering up his own stupidity. "Look Mr. Pawar, if you have an objection, I suggest you bring it before the Judge as I have done. As I told you at the time you made the comment, it was out of place, and just looking at it on the face, it almost sounds like a threat." Then with sarcasm dripping from my voice, "But I don't think you're that stupid. So if you have a problem with what I wrote, send a letter off to the Judge. You said it and that's it."

"I'm not going to trouble the Court with this trivial matter..."

I interrupted him again, this time bristling with anger, "Trivial, huh, okay fine, if you think it's trivial than good."

Pawar then tried to pass the buck of his boorish conduct to me. Lawyers, as with broads, always try to scapegoat others for the wrongs they have done. "You should know that if you're going to mention a conversation taking place between two parties, the least you could do for the Court is to mention the entire context of the conversation not just pick what you think would be appropriate to color the Court's judgment." The only part of the conversation I left out of my footnote was Pawar asking me whether he could say something off the record and my asking what he meant, but he never answered, so there was no off the record agreement.

"Look," I said, "there's no way that conversation could ever be construed as settlement talks, and if it was a settlement talk, then the conversation could not be mentioned to the Court. The conversation was pretty obvious. It was basically a threat, but I'm not even going to bring that up." Why bother, it wouldn't do any good anyway in America. "If you've got a problem, I

suggest you bring it to the Court. You've registered your objection with me. In fact you did it right at the end of the conversation when you said you would deny what you had just said."

"If you perceived it as a threat, I'm sorry you felt that way." He was sorry for nothing, except that I complained about his statements to the Judge. "It was a comment between two attorneys who were conversing about stuff..."

"The only conversing was you making that comment. That was the sum total of the conversation. You didn't come up to me to say you wanted to talk settlement or negotiate, which would have been off the record and can't go before the Judge."

In response, this refugee from the Indian subcontinent tried to move up a caste while belittling me. "In my court experience and my dealings with many Federal judges, I've come across many pro se attorneys"—that's considered an insult among lawyers—"but for you to take my comments out of context, well I'm just going to let my objection stand. I have been discreet, and I'm sad to see that you included the conversation in your papers." About as discreet as an 8<sup>th</sup> Avenue hooker, I said to myself.

"You have the ability, and you have the recourse, and there's a procedure for you to put your comment in context, as you call it. So it's all up to you."

"I know what I have, and it's not a big deal to respond to something like that." No, it was a big deal because he got caught acting like some schoolyard tough and couldn't come up with a reasonable explanation. All he could do was hope the Court missed the footnote. He wasn't about to bring any more attention to his foot-in-mouth disease by sending the Judge a letter complaining.

"Okay then you shouldn't have even bothered calling me," I disdainfully replied.

"I called to let you know how I felt about it."

To which my breath exhaled in exasperation. Who cared what this guy felt, he didn't give a dam about anybody else. "Well I'm sure you know how I felt about it, so now we're even. I know how you feel about it, and you know how I feel about it." Pawar finally hung up—good riddance!

Switching back to my battle with the Bank of Cyprus, I contacted my Moscow lawyer Xenia to see whether her investigator in Cyprus had any useful information on the Bank. After Claugus replied to my memorandum, my only opportunity to expose the lies he would most assuredly include in his reply would come in an oral argument, assuming the Court—slim chance—granted one. But if it did, I wanted more information for beating Claugus over the head with even though at this stage of the case the Court should focus on what's in the Complaint and the law. Xenia agreed to ask him, then said in a nice way, "Roy you spend many years for struggle, but Alina lives in N.Y., and everything seems to be OK with her. You work on this case 4 years, and you still think that she will be deported? Maybe you just forget about her experience, and start to live for yourself. Sorry—it is not my business at all, but I think that she will stay in the U.S. anyway."

"I understand your point of view and appreciate the input. My friends here say the same. But for me, nothing is more important than justice. You have no liberty, no freedom, no pursuit of happiness without justice, so I push on. I'm sure some more interesting things will happen."

At the end of August, I received Claugus' reply to my opposition memorandum. It wasn't nearly as nasty as the first one and less pompous, probably because another attorney was involved in the writing. The reply, however, continued harping on the "voluminous output" of my papers. What was with these lawyers? Didn't they ever take an Evelyn Woods speed-reading course—J.F.K. did. The papers I filed under the first judge followed his rules, and my

opposition memorandum to the Bank submitted under the second judge, Castel, kept within his page length requirements. The defense lawyers sounded like broads reaching for any ammunition to get back at someone who exposed their duplicity. The Bank's lawyer even criticized me for daring to oppose the motions to dismiss. What was I suppose to do, say they're right, never mind and go home—truly a delusional expectation.

Putting such lame rebukes aside, the Bank's reply continued one of the defendants' key connivances of trying the case on a motion to dismiss. The Bank stated I failed to "establish" links among the defendants, failed to "establish" the Bank played a role in Russian mafia operations and failed to "establish" the Commie Ho's bank account—they skipped over the fact that it was an equity account in a separate subsidiary of the Bank of Cyprus Group. Under the law, "establish" means "to prove," but, once again, the function of a federal complaint in 2004 was to give notice to defendants of the accusations against them. The proof comes later after discovery. The Bank of Cyprus' attorneys and the District Court know all this, but still the defense attorneys argued as though all the evidence had already been produced and introduced in a summary judgment motion or at a trial. So why did the Bank's attorneys circumvent the proper procedure? To get the Judge and his clerks, to do the same thing. Lots of judges and their clerks don't want to do a lot of work, are sloppy thinkers and make decisions based on their personal emotions rather than the law. The Bank's attorneys, along with the other defense lawyers, tried to color the Judge's perception of the case so as to influence him into making the type of knee jerk decision that the rules prohibit: determining what occurred based on the Judge's personal proclivities rather than evidence, then covering it up with a fabricate legal argument. It happens all the time.

The Bank's attorneys presumptuously claimed that a dismissal "will spare all parties—including Plaintiff—any further disruption, turmoil, or expenses." These two-faced lawyers were trying to appear magnanimous before the Court in their concern for my well being. They could have saved the keystrokes that composed their hypocritical compassion and inflated self-importance as to dare to speak for me. I was in this war until the end of days.

When arrogance didn't serve the ends of the Bank's attorneys, they, true to form, continued to lie about my Complaint and even distorted the meaning of an affidavit from their fellow defendant the Commie Ho. The Bank's attorneys claimed, "The only specific associations alleged by Plaintiff between the Bank and any of the defendants is [sic] that between Ms. Shipilina and a 'Stephanos' and an account she purportedly maintained with the Bank." Not so, the Complaint accuses the Bank of laundering money, the Ho's account is an equity fund in a subsidiary of the Bank of Cyprus Group and not necessarily connected with Stephanos, one of the Ho's frequent customers at the brothel Zygos in Cyprus, who may be an employee of the Bank or some other financial institution in Cyprus.

The Commie Ho had sworn in a prior affidavit: "I knew a man named Stephanos, who worked in a bank there. I never knew his last name, nor do I remember in which bank he worked. I never had any reason to know his address, not can I tell if this is the same person to whom plaintiff refers." The Bank's attorneys distorted the Commie Ho's affidavit to conclude that the Bank "has never done business with Ms. Shipilina." Even the former Soviet Union's version of the New York Times, Pravada, would find such an inference hard to buy. The Commie Ho's affidavit never mentioned the Bank of Cyprus and never denied her keeping an equity account with it. It talked about a guy named Stephanos working in some bank in Cyprus. But that didn't mean the Commie Ho never did business with the Bank of Cyprus. The Bank's

lawyers used the simple trick of setting up a false premise from which to spin off equally false inferences.

The attorneys never checked the records of the Bank of Cyprus' subsidiaries that held mutual fund accounts, or if they had, they didn't tell the Court whether they found the Commie Ho's equity fund or not. Instead, they argued no such account existed because I didn't provide the Court with a copy of her equity fund statement. It's a nice Catch-22 tactic. Putting aside the Federal Rules of Civil Procedure that do not require a complaint to present evidence, the only way to legally obtain a statement copy was for the Court to issue a subpoena, but the Court would not do that until the case moved into discovery. Sure, I could have acquired a copy from my private eye, but the moment I submitted it to the Court, the defense attorneys would let loose a cacophony demanding the prosecution of me for privacy invasion. So in the Orwellian logic of many lawyers and some courts, because I didn't have a copy of the Ho's bank statement, the attorneys declared no connection between the Russian mafia and the Bank, which meant the Court should throw the case out; that is, throw it out before I got a chance to obtain a statement copy through discovery.

The Banks' attorneys, dancing through their lies and intentional muddying of the Complaint, again twisted, ignored and rewrote the law to fit their misrepresentations of my Complaint. Repeating the same trick they used in their first memorandum, only this time referring to a different case, the Bank's lawyers omitted the same crucial part of the law for determining whether to dismiss a case: "On a motion to dismiss under Rule 12(b)(6), the court must accept as true the factual allegations in the complaint." *Harris v. City of New York*, 186 F.3d. 243, 247 (2<sup>nd</sup> Cir. 1999). They also, not surprisingly, left out that case's warning that "any party moving for dismissal faces a difficult (though not insurmountable) hurdle."

As for the law of RICO, the Bank's attorneys declared that a person is liable for violating RICO only if he "conducts or directs" the entire organization. That's wrong under U.S. Supreme Court decisions, wrong in the Second Circuit and wrong in the First Circuit Court of Appeals. A defendant need not be an executive so long as he participates in the operation or management of the organization. Another trick out of their bag of deception used rulings from cases that didn't apply, such as a fraud case even though no accusations of fraud were made against the Bank. But for the Court to discover that those cases used by the Bank's attorneys weren't relevant required the Judge or his clerks to read them. Would they take the time? Not likely.

The Bank's attorneys also came up with some new names to call my allegations after I debunked their former labels of "insufficient," "conclusory" and "bare." All of the defense attorneys prior to the Bank filing its reply had used that trinity of adjectives but never defined the words' meanings, so I used Federal cases that did. The cases made clear that such descriptors didn't apply to my Complaint. The Bank's attorneys must have agreed since in their reply memorandum they started using "wild speculations" and "lacking even the most tenuous support" to replace the former adjectives. The cases still showed my allegations weren't either of the new descriptions, but I'd have to wait to tell the District Court that at oral argument, assuming the Court allowed one.

Other subterfuges used by the Bank's lawyers included switching allegations from one section of the Complaint that satisfied a particular requirement of RICO over to another section dealing with a different part of the law. How did attorneys so full of themselves miss the boldfaced underlined headings of my Complaint on their way to rearranging its allegations? They didn't, but hoped the Court would. In addition, they regularly ignored paragraphs in the Complaint when convenient for their arguments, used the type of lingo that comes from



watching too many *Perry Mason* shows and gave the wrong citations to cases to hide their misstatements of the law.

The Bank's lawyers concluded their reply with possibly prophetic words: "The unfortunate problem that exists in this case cannot be solved in a court of law. Plaintiff must look elsewhere and the Court should facilitate this effort, to the extent it can, by dismissing Plaintiff's complaint." The problem with looking elsewhere is that no elsewhere existed. It made no sense to look to the U.S. Government for protection because it's not about to open a wide assault on the Russian mafia, its collaborators and those who profit from its operations. High-ranking Washington officials want the government of Russia to support the War on Terror and contain Russian nuclear stockpiles. Since many mobsters in Russia are either members of the Russian Government or exert influence on it, this means letting the Russian mob and its confederates profit in America. And why not, the Red Menace wouldn't hurt the rich, only the average powerless American who will have to take to the courts for justice. But if the bureaucrats stop him there, where else can he go—public with civil disobedience?

#### You Talk Too Much

At the end of August 2004, I waited in hope for the Southern District Court to allow oral argument on both the American defendants and the Bank of Cyprus' motions to dismiss and to help me serve some Russian gangsters in Krasnodar and the Baraev Islamic Mafia Clan in Chechnya. The first request for the Court's assistance to serve those defendants was in July, but civil servants tend to forget because remembering doesn't increase their job security. So I reminded Judge Castel with a letter asking the Court to contact the Krasnodar Department on Fighting Gangsterism and Corruption for assistance in serving the Russian mobsters and to contact Russian Military Intelligence for Southern Russia for assistance in serving the Baraev

Terror and Crime Clan. As the letter stated about the Chechen clan, “Since the death of Movsar Baraev, I do not know who is heading this Clan now, and although the Clan controls an area just south of Grozny, Chechnya, I’m not about to visit the area to inquire as to the new head and his address.”

While waiting on the Court, I also drafted a Supplemental Complaint and requested a pre-motion conference for approval to make a motion to file it. Each Federal judge creates his own rules for certain procedures in his court, such as the length of papers, which motions require a pre-motion conference and how to contact the Judge’s chambers. Judge Castel, unlike the Chief Judge who previously handled my case, required that before making most motions, a party must first request a pre-motion conference. It’s probably part of the U.S. Government paper work reduction act or bureaucratic desire to read as little as possible. At a pre-motion conference, a judge tries to get both sides to resolve the procedural issue without having to file motion papers.

The Supplemental Complaint would update my original Complaint with events that occurred after April 2003, when the Complaint was filed. A basic policy of the Federal Rules of Civil Procedure requires that a party be given every opportunity to join all of his grievances against other parties regardless of when they arose, and supplemental complaints were the means for adding additional claims and defendants after a suit had already begun.

My Supplemental Complaint included the F.B.I.’s interference in my efforts to checkout the information in the Vasilyevas’ letter to the District Court. Special Agent Babler was not added as a defendant because that never looks good to a court, but I did recount his key role in trying to run me out of town. The new defendant from that episode was my favorite tailor shop manager Cynthia Zahnow. The Supplemental Complaint asserted that Babler, Zahnow and

Anastasia agreed on a course of action at Babler's suggestion to intentionally thwart my investigation by having Zahnow make false harassment accusations against me to the local police. Their aim was to scare me off my investigation and back to New York. The Supplemental Complaint included as an exhibit the letter from David Larson, Acting Chief for the F.B.I. Investigative Law Unit that confirmed Babler gave advice to Zahnow or Anastasia or both to contact the local police concerning me. The conduct of these three amounted to tampering with a witness, victim or informant, but I only accused Zahnow and Anastasia of that crime.

The next set of allegations in the Supplemental Complaint accused Mundy of committing mail fraud by using the U.S. Postal Service to file his Disciplinary Committee complaint against me and tampering with a witness, victim or informant by trying to use the Committee's power over attorneys to scare me into withdrawing my RICO suit. Since the purpose of his Disciplinary Complaint was to prevent the RICO case from exposing the illegal efforts to keep the Commie Ho in America, it amounted to an attempt to further those efforts by keeping them secret from the District Court. It didn't matter whether anything Mundy said in his complaint was true or not, only that he sent it through the U.S. mail, which meant mail fraud.

Finally, as to my favorite defendant, the Commie Ho perjured herself and committed a couple of additional RICO crimes when answering the Court's order to provide last names and current addresses for a number of the foreign defendants. Her lawyer allowed the Ho to swear to a paragraph in which she lied about her dealings and relationships with each of the four defendants by claiming only minimal contacts. As with all pathological liars in fear of getting caught, she spent her effort trying to create a plausible cover to trick the Court into believing she only fleetingly knew these people: "In 1999, in Moscow, I was introduced to a woman named

Tanya, who I believe at the time was seeing one Leo Perlin, another co-defendant, who I believe was a principal in Phodes Studio Co., yet another defendant in this matter. From the start we did not get along, and the few times we were together were very unpleasant. I did not socialize with her, nor did I have any reason to know her last name, or address.” About defendant Salvador, the Ho lied on with “I met a man named Salvador during my brief stay in Mexico, in 1999. I was never informed as to the nature of his business connection, if any, with Phodes Studio. I never knew his last name, and although I was at his house once or twice, I went with other people, and was unaware of his specific address. I have had no contact with him whatsoever since I left Mexico in 1999.”

The Ho’s diary paints a different picture. In August 1999, she, Tanya and Leo flew to Mexico City together. Salvador, Leo’s partner, met all three at the airport and took them to their hotel. Salvador showed the Commie Ho around Mexico City, took her to restaurants, a beauty salon and even carried a nude picture of her he got off the Internet from Leo’s website. The Commie Ho, Leo and Tanya traveled to Acapulco together where Salvador joined them. Salvador paid the Ho’s expenses and for her. Leo had brought the Ho to Mexico, in part, for Salvador, and most of the time when at Salvador’s house, she was alone and usually naked. Tanya and the Commie Ho both ended up working as strippers and whores at The Men’s Club and even roomed together for much of their three month stay until Mexican immigration arrested the two and bounced them out of the country on the same flight back to Moscow. After her deportation from Mexico, Salvador blamed the Commie Ho for the problems his prostitution and pornography business subsequently ran into with Mexican authorities. She probably spilled her guts to the immigration authorities.

Although, Leo wasn't one of the four defendants in the Court Order, lying about her relationship with him still amount to perjury because she made her statement under oath. The Commie Ho's diary clearly shows she knew Leo very well as the sole owner of Phodes Studio and her Moscow procurer for years. The diary even admits she entered into a business deal to recruit prostitutes for Leo to send overseas. In addition, Leo took the all-nude photographs of her that she sold to "grandpa" in Cyprus as evinced by her diary and handwritten letters to Leo. According to Leo, he also used the nude photos to advertise her sexual services and arranged for her to star in the masturbation video that defendant Paulsen shot in one of Perlin's apartments in the same complex where I had once lived.

The Commie Ho's sworn affidavit about her relationship with Azul admitted a few facts, but committed perjury by what she left out. The Ho always believed that telling the truth did not mean the whole truth, or lying did not include leaving out facts that would change the entire meaning of what she said—a Feminist by any other name. "I first met Azul during my brief stay in Mexico in 1999. After I left Mexico, I had only one contact with her, a telephone call to me in New York in the year 2000. I believe she said she was calling from the Netherlands at the time. During the time I knew her I became aware that she traveled a great deal, and in the short time I knew her she never gave me any address, let alone one at which she could be reached years later." Azul did travel a lot, especially in Mexico when she and the Commie Ho went together on prostituting junkets with their clients from The Men's Club to Cancun, Puerto Vallarta and Acapulco. The two were best friends, and after the Commie Ho left Mexico by way of the immigration boot, they stayed in touch. The old address I had for Azul came from the Commie Ho's papers, but after Azul's husband learned of her whoring, he kicked her out, and she went to live with one of her customers in the Netherlands. The Commie Ho, when she still lived with

me—what a revolting development that was, called Azul every so often in the Netherlands.

That's how I got the number for Azul and even talked with his latest sucker a couple of times to pump some information until the Ho told him to shut up.

The fourth defendant, Stephanos, was the Commie Ho's favorite customer when she hoed at Zygos. Although not very well endowed, she liked his "smell," and in September 2000 she visited him in Cyprus at the bank where he worked—all according to her diary.

By making such false, misleading and incomplete statements in order to protect the Russian mafia and its confederate's efforts to keep her in America, cover up the mob's illegal activities and with the foresight that the document would be mailed to the Court and other parties in the case, the Commie Ho committed mail fraud, a RICO crime. In misleading the Court with her misrepresentations, prevarications and half-truths, she corruptly influenced and impeded the administration of justice—a Martha Stewart crime, also covered under RICO. She also committed perjury, but American courts don't care if girls lie—it's expected.

Two of the defense lawyers opposed my request for a pre-motion conference concerning the Supplemental Complaint by responding as though the motion had already been made rather than just arguing for or against the conference. They knew better, but some lawyers always use any communication with a court to mislead it and carp against their opponent—it's a requirement of litigation by personal destruction. Once again, I counterattacked, first against Dubin's deceptions:

"The defendants' lead lawyer falsely claims that the proposed Supplemental Complaint, as it concerns Mundy, is 'merely repetitive of the allegations and predicate acts already set forth in the plaintiff's initial complaint.' Unless he ascribes to a Doctor Who view of time, his statement as to the factual allegations makes no sense. The Supplemental Complaint alleges events that occurred only after the filing of the original complaint; therefore, the events in the original complaint and Supplemental Complaint cannot be 'repetitive', since the events in the Supplemental Complaint had not yet occurred on filing of the original complaint.

“In addition, the defendants’ lawyer claims, ‘all other allegations set forth by the plaintiff in his proposed Supplemental Complaint have been addressed,’ by the motions to dismiss. There are no references in any of the memoranda of law to the events that transpired in August 2003 or to Shipilina’s delusive declaration to this Court.”

My response to Jack Sachs, the Commie Ho’s attorney, made for a more interesting knife throwing contest. The Ho must have flipped when Sachs told her the Supplemental Complaint had used her sworn affidavit to charge her with more felonies. Not that she worried about committing crimes, she didn’t, but the Supplemental Complaint meant more money to pay for Sachs’ time in responding.<sup>2</sup> In order to calm her down over the additional outlay of assets, Sachs wrote a particularly emotional and virulent letter, probably with the Ho’s input, objecting to the pre-motion conference. The knife I used for this duel aimed at personally aggravating Sachs as much as possible, since that’s what he tried to do to me.

“Jack Sachs’ August 30, 2004 letter to the Court opposes the plaintiff’s request for a pre-motion conference but then rambles on to argue as though he were responding to a motion already made using the type of vitriolic invective that overly protective boyfriends do: ‘Plaintiff’s wrath, as befits a scorned lover, manifests itself in the supplemental complaint.’ Who is Mr. Sachs trying to impress with this sophomoric name-calling? His client is not accused with breaking hearts but breaking the law.

“Mr. Sachs complains that some of the allegations in the proposed Supplemental Complaint ‘libel’ his client. All the attorneys know, including him, that no matter what names he and the others call the plaintiff in this proceeding there is no recourse to a libel claim, so why even raise that non-issue.”

No, that last sentence is not a writing error. I intentionally switched the phrase that logically followed—“that no matter what names I called the defendant”—to the one written in order to throw the Judge off, make him stop, question what he just read, so he’d go back and re-read with more care than just breezing through my letter for its gist.

---

<sup>2</sup> Under VAWA, the Department of Justice Office on Violence Against Women pays an alien’s legal fees and expenses once she has accused her U.S. citizen husband of abuse. The Office pays for immigration proceedings and any domestic relations cases, such as for a divorce. The office, however, will not pay an alien’s legal fees and expenses when an alien is accused of criminal conduct. Since the basis of even a civil RICO action is criminal conduct, an alien defendant has to foot the bill for her defense whether she wins or loses.

“Me doth think Mr. Sachs protests too much, especially when the proposed Supplemental Complaint paragraphs he claims as libeling his client, don’t deal with his client unless he now represents Inessa Shipilina and two notorious organized crime figures in Krasnodar: Magomet Ali Kurban and Viktor Vladimirovich Kononenko.”

Overly wrought by the Commie Ho’s anger, Sachs had confused some paragraphs in the Supplemental Complaint as dealing with the Ho when they didn’t. His fervently induced sloppiness caused me to laugh.

Continuing on:

“Mr. Sachs emotionally objects to alleged ‘pejorative adjectives,’ but doesn’t specify them. Further, he doesn’t claim they are false because much of the Supplemental Complaint’s section on Shipilina is based on his client’s own diary. Mr. Sachs also calls the allegations in that section ‘unsubstantiated conclusory statements’—a little redundant on those modifiers. But, a complaint that complies with the federal rules of civil procedure cannot be dismissed on the ground that it is conclusory or fails to allege facts. The federal rules require (with irrelevant exceptions) only that the Complaint state a claim, not that it plead all the facts if true would establish that the claim was valid.

“In a somewhat whiney manner, Mr. Sachs complains that the original complaint is too long and the proposed Supplemental Complaint ‘is duplicative’ of much already pled. As concerns his known client, Alina A. Shipilina, the original complaint does not deal with Shipilina’s false declaration to the Court. That event occurred after the original complaint was filed, so the Supplemental Complaint cannot be duplicative.

“The pre-motion conference request is for permission to move for a Supplemental Complaint, not to supplement evidence. We are not at that stage although that hasn’t stopped Mr. Sachs from demanding proof. Mr. Sachs absurdly believes the Supplemental Complaint must prove to Mr. Sachs’ satisfaction its allegations. A supplemental complaint stands with the original and is a mere addition to, or continuation of, the original. *U.S. v Russell*, 241 F.2d 879, 882 (1<sup>st</sup> Cir. 1957). And the function of a complaint is to give notice, not prove. *NOW, Inc v. Scheidler*, 510 U.S. 249, 256, 127 L.Ed.2d 99, 114 S.Ct. 798 (1994).

“To compound his sophistic arguments, Mr. Sachs claims that certain accusations are ‘fabrications’ or ‘rampant speculation’ largely because the plaintiff used the term ‘on information and belief.’ Mr. Sachs may not like it, but the courts permit plaintiffs ‘to assert facts that they believe to be true, but that lack evidentiary support at the time of pleading,’ especially when the evidence is within the defendants’ knowledge or control. *Moore’s Fed. Prac.*, 3<sup>rd</sup> Ed., § 8.04[4]. Besides, complaints do not provide evidence. *Hickman v. Taylor*, 329 U.S. 495, 500-01, 91 L.Ed. 451, 67 S.Ct. 385 (1947); *Geisler v. Petrocelli*, 616 F.2d 636, 639-40 (2d Cir. 1980). Of course, these types of arguments should wait for the formal motion, if the Court allows such.”



Sachs harping on my lack of proof included his assertion “it appears that few, if any, of the events cited in the Supplement Complaint ever *really happened*, as the rule requires.” He knew that wasn’t what the rule required; he just wanted to add to the chorus calling my Complaint and Supplemental Complaint a fiction. Sachs, like the other lawyers during this initial stage of the case, intentionally misread the law as requiring that my Complaint include admissible proof of the accusations against their clients when they knew very well that couldn’t happen until after the discovery phase—again a Catch-22. The defense lawyers used this tactic because it allowed them to call me a liar, delusional, paranoid and other opprobrium in order to bias the Court against me. That’s just the way mentally challenged attorneys fight legal disputes.

One final dig at Sachs:

“In closing, it appears that Mr. Sachs’ unnecessarily nasty letter, which makes arguments more appropriate of an opposition to a motion rather than a request for a pre-motion conference, is largely the result of the inartful drafting of his client’s affidavit that gave rise to supplemental allegations against her, and, therefore, Mr. Sachs’ strident effort to prevent a pre-motion conference.”

Sachs obviously felt like a buffoon in front of the Commie Ho for doing such a bad job in preparing her sworn affidavit, so, under the stress of redeeming himself, his letter went a little too ballistic.

#### Tired Of Waiting For You

My efforts to interest the news media in my RICO case, so far a failure, continued with sending Lou Dobbs a letter. His show seemed a logical choice because it did plenty of stories exposing the U.S. Government’s failure to stem the wave of illegal aliens into this country. Although the Commie Ho didn’t slink her way across the Rio Grande, she and other Russian mob prostitutes illegally sleazed their way into America and remained here thanks to mobsters, crooked lawyers and do-nothing bureaucrats. Dobbs’ show never sent me a reply, so next I tired

the columnist Michelle Malkin. Sure, she's a career female, but I didn't think her a Feminazi because of her redeeming features of Asian heritage and having written an excellent book, *Invasion*, on the horrors caused by the incompetent and corrupt INS, such as illegals senselessly slaughtering some Americans and increasing taxes for the rest of us. Again no reply, maybe all girls, regardless of ethnicity and politics, are the same. Next on my media list was an attempt at cashing in on my one semester at Columbia University's School of International and Public Affairs, which I attended before switching over to the Business School. A Graduate Fellow at the School of International Affairs, Stephen Handelman, wrote the book *Comrade Criminal*, which I had read to help prepare for the job with Kroll Associates in Moscow. The book detailed the dual personality of the Russian government as both state institutions and organized crime groups. Handelman also worked as a columnist and commentator on Russian crime, so he might have some interest in my case, but once again, I never heard back from another member of the anti-masses media.

My last shot with the media was Joe Conason, or Conoclone as I used to good-naturedly call him. He was working as the national correspondent for the New York Observer and previously wrote the column "Running Scared" for the *Village Voice*. Joe was the reporter at the *Voice* to whom I started slipping information on the mafia judge backed by Roy Cohn and the Gambino and Mangano crime families. Eventually, I went on the record with what I knew about that small segment of corrupt politics in New York City, but that was over twenty years ago, would he remember me, would he care? Over the years, he appeared on television a number of times arguing with other political pundits. He seemed to have turned into a rather self-righteous ideologue of political correctionalism, always interrupting his opponents as though freedom of speech meant only the freedom to agree with PC. He, like so many other Jewish intellectuals,

had fallen for Feminazi propaganda, probably something to do with domineering mothers, but I assumed his hatred of injustice stronger, so I sent him a letter with the summary of the RICO case. Guess I was wrong; he too never bothered to respond.

The news media had always been corrupt to one extent or another. Not so much by money but by chasing social status, currying access to the powerful and foisting its members personal values on society at large. Reporters are observers, not players, and they resent that. After all, the point in life is to make the news not report it, so media members try to excerpt influence by coloring or creating a story that will exalt their beliefs, portray as evil their philosophical opponents, gain them admittance to an exclusive night club or invited to a fat cat's private party.

For example, back in the 1970s, when I wrote part of the weekend news show at WNEW TV, Senator Church's Committee was investigating the C.I.A. One of the Committee's revelations was that the C.I.A. used reporters to spy for it when they traveled overseas. The Saturday anchor for WNEW's news show had done just that. When the news of reporters spying for the C.I.A. became public on a Saturday, my producer assigned me to write the C.I.A. story. The anchor, however, came over to me to say he'd write the story, which he did and in such a way as to make an alliance of spooks and the free press look natural for a democracy.

Today, the key corruption in the news media—whether left, right or middle—is the insinuation of Feminazi tenets into stories as a result of so many broads now working in the media. Any girl in a position of power will exploit it not for justice but herself and her special interest group. As a result, they always belittle and blame men while aggrandizing and excusing females. As for the alleged men in the news media, their childhood fear of mother and teacher cause them to grovel for female approval, not unlike a lap dog.

Even more gutless than news reporters are politicians. They generally bow lower and scrape harder before Feminazi deceit. An article from the Daily News that my pal Alan sent me reported on the New Jersey Attorney General going after some Russian guy for allegedly tricking Russian broads into coming to America to work as musicians only to take away their passports on arrival and “force” them to work in strip clubs. The Attorney General pontificated, “The fearful plight of these women, who were forced to dance nude and perform other abhorrent acts, cannot be measured in a 12-count indictment. Their plight can only be measured in human tragedy.” This Feminazi-sycophant politician made me boil to the point of sending him a letter to verbally slap some reality into his delusional view of broads, but I doubted it would have such an effect.

“With all due respect, you don’t know a damn about the Russian mafia’s underground pipeline for bringing Russian prostitutes and strippers to America. These ladies come of their own free will to make big money. The average monthly salary in Russia is \$150. They can make many times that in one night at a lap-dancing club and even more as prostitutes. Prostitution was always the former Soviet Union’s key capitalistic enterprise with the pimps being both men and women. Now it’s Russia’s key earner of hard currency because the fall of the Iron Curtain unleashed tens of thousands of prostitutes and assorted criminals into the world.

“The Russian sex industry works quite simply: model agencies throughout Russia, some run by men, some by females, are swamped with pretty young girls wanting to sell their assets in hard currency markets. The agencies, often via bribes, obtain the girls travel visas so they can work overseas in lap-dancing clubs and brothels. Some agencies send the ladies to work at clubs in Mexico City, such as The Men’s Club, and then smuggle them into the U.S. The girls know before they leave what they are going to work at, how else could they hope to make so much money. They sell their bodies willingly because that’s how they become millionaires by Russian standards.

“The standard agency fee is around 20% for making the travel and visa arrangements and paying the airfare. The strip club or brothel takes around another 15%. That leaves the prostitutes and strippers 60 to 65% beside the private prostitution deals they cut with their customers and whatever they can cheat from the money they owe their agencies. It’s rather difficult for a model agency in Russia to keep track of how many times a girl gives a lap dance or performs sexual acts in America. These Russian model agencies also function as matchmakers, suckering American men into bringing these prostitutes to America, and pornography producers for the American market.

“I suggest you talk to the Deputy District Attorney for Los Angeles County, Marcia Daniel, who recently prosecuted the largest prostitution ring in Los Angeles’ history, run by a 42 year old Ukrainian woman and her 22 year old daughter. Ms. Daniel will tell you how the underground railway funneling Russian prostitutes into America works. But you are probably not interested since you are obviously pandering to the female vote. Oh, and by the way, when a Russian has her passport stolen or “confiscated,” all she needs to do is contact the nearest Russian Consulate to obtain a replacement.

“You may feel like a white knight, but the folks in Russia and those here that understand the twisted nature of that country are laughing at your gullibility. You should take a lesson from former President Harry Truman, ‘Those Russians, they lie.’ And Russian women are the best at it in large part because they can cry at will.”

New Jersey’s protector of Russian prostitute chastity never responded to my letter.

The Daily News article, surprisingly, did get a couple of facts straight: the Russian mob operated the pipeline funneling hos from the former Soviet Union to America and ran some of the strip joints, or brothels, in which they worked. If the District Court for the Southern District of N.Y. only knew as much as the Daily News did about the Russian mafia, my RICO case chances would improve.

Fed up with reporters, politicians and bureaucrats who childishly believe snow white didn’t pay for her room and board with sex, I vowed never again to waste my time on trying to enlighten brainwashed girliemen.

As for the class action lawsuit against Salomon Smith Barney that I had joined two years earlier, progress consisted of one lateral pass after another going nowhere. The moldering case kept switching me from one law firm to another with each firm uncannily lacking the ability to obtain my records from the prior firm. The fourth firm had recently requested from me the same documents all the others had and warned that if I didn’t provide them, the firm could not proceed on my behalf. Proceed to do what, pass the case off to another firm? I sent the records for what good it would do.

## Diamonds Are A Girl's Best Friend

Over the Labor Day weekend, Mark and I caught a new club on 10<sup>th</sup> Avenue and 17<sup>th</sup> Street called *The Park*. Mark had been telling me about the place for a few weeks as great for chicks. One of Mark's previous martial arts students, Vincent, a black belt, ran security at the club. Vincent helped us look like big shots at the club, always useful with chicks since to them appearance counts more than substance. When Mark and I arrived, we walked to the head of the line passed the little princesses watching and wondering who were those two guys? In their eyes, we looked professional, but did we have pull? The bouncer at the door knew Mark and called on his walkie-talkie for Vincent to come to the door.

Vincent and the two of us stood outside in the summer weather talking while the girls waiting to enter the club scrutinized three guys, two black and in their thirties, one with dread locks, one with a shaved head and a middle-aged white guy with gray hair cut in a butch from the mid-twentieth century.

This was the first time I met Vincent, an intelligent guy and clearly one for watching your back in any type of altercation. Besides his job, he was doing what I regretted not doing my entire life—studying physics. Once he got his doctorate, Vincent planned to work in Puerto Rico, another dream of mine never fulfilled: warm tropical weather and hot brown-skin girls. What a great life style he was working towards, but more than a comfortable life drove Vincent. When he mentioned the philosophy and Tarot courses he also took, I knew this guy, like I once did, wanted to understand how the universe worked and why things happened. I envied him his future, but for me, I had already lived mine. All that remained was my reckoning with evil.

After looking like V.I.P.s talking with Vincent outside, he escorted us into the club with the door bouncer parting our way passed those in line. The girls eyeing Mark and me now knew

we had the pull to treat them in accordance with their self-professed birthright as princesses by getting them into the club without waiting in line. Vincent showed us around the club for my benefit, since it was my first time there. The club's building previously functioned as a parking garage, hence the name. The place was large with a couple of bars and a restaurant on the first floor and a combination lounge dance area upstairs that flowed out onto a large balcony with a hot tub. Checking out the tub, no girls yet. Downstairs, Vincent offered us free drinks from the bar, always a bounty that we readily accepted, and a good marketing tool, since we'd recommend the club to others who would pay for their drinks.

Vincent went over to the bar while we waited standing in a walkway from the restaurant area into the bar. Not looking at anything in particular with Mark talking on my right. In another plane of existence, Andy Devine says, "Plunk your magic twanger Froggy!" poof, not Froggy, but a gorgeous, drop-dead blonde in her early twenties stands in front of me. She's tall and I'm looking up caught in the trance of her eyes streaming promises of bliss, hope and happiness. Struggling out of those pools of blue, my eyes move down to a luscious smile, big balloons and the long legs of this six-foot-three tomato, but like a magnet, my eyes jump back to dreaming inside her gaze. Already on the ropes, she takes my hand with a warm squeeze and purrs close to my face, "Will you show me where the ladies room is?"

I almost gushed I'll show you anywhere, but I didn't know where anywhere was so instead said, "I don't know where it is, but let's find out," as I involuntarily volunteer.

"I drank too much," this smiling bacchanal bubbled.

Holding her hand, I wasn't about to let go, we went off to find the big girls room for this seemingly child-mannered object of desire. We could have gone searching for the Minotaur's lair or the Susquehanna Hat Company for all I cared. Leading the way, as men always do when

helping a fair damsel who exuded unspoken delights, I asked a bouncer. He directed us down stairs. Down we went, my hand in hers, talking about nothing I can now remember, although I did detect an accent. At the bottom, we stopped before the ladies room; she turned to face me.

I asked, "So where are you from?"

"I come from Brazil." I'm thinking a Brazilian blonde, loves sex, she's any man's prime desire.

"That's a great country. I always wanted to go there. Are you visiting New York?"  
Maybe she'll invite me to her hacienda.

"No I live in Newark." Wonder what she's doing in Newark?

Before I could ask, she said, "My name's Andrea."

"Nice name," I usually say that when a girl tells me her name; they like it.

"Mine's Roy. Here, let me give you my business card."

"What do you do?" she asked, swaying a little under her cups of wine.

"I'm a lawyer." She got closer, put her right arm on my shoulders around my neck, smiled down at me, laser beaming her pheromones and planted wet kisses on my cheeks, caressing the corners of my mouth.

"Thank you," she smiled and went into the ladies room.

Next move was to wait for her, but something uneasy in my unconscious tilted me to go back upstairs.

Still in a revelry, I went over to Mark and Vincent and said with a grin, "That was easy."

Mark asked, "Did you get her telephone number?"

My revelry crashed, but I couldn't decide whether it mattered, "No."



“Oh no, not again,” he laughed. “You always do that. Girls are too scared to call a guy like you. You’ve got to get their numbers.”

Mark was right. Unless someone reminded me to get a girl’s phone number, I usually forgot, not always but more often than I should—probably an unconscious shield against the horror of another unrepentant psychopath. Maybe that kept me from waiting for this Brazilian who reached as high into the sky as the Ho, smiled just as sweetly and initially approached me out of nowhere.

“Let’s go find her, and this time get her number.” Mark said as we set off on a quest necessitated by my hidden fears or fate. Mark had an uncanny knack for finding people in a crowded New York City nightclub, so I followed him through the caverns of The Park with a growing sense that our expedition would end badly. Rounding one corner into the restaurant, Mark asked, “Is that her?”

“Sure is,” I answered, looking at her standing by a table getting ready to leave with a short Latin guy in his fifties with dyed black hair standing on his tip toes trying to smother her lips in kisses. Andrea was giving him the same treatment she gave me, only now I recognized it as a forced professional smile that looks warm as fire when on the receiving end, but from the side lines, really isn’t anything at all.

Mark and I looked at each other using the same Ludacris lyric, “She’s a ho.”

“Figures,” I said. “The only girls attracted to me are hos, and seems like the only ones I’m attracted to are hos. It must come from my mother.” Mark laughed, and we went upstairs to checkout the talent.

Stumbling home that night from the Hudson to the East River, no buses, so I walked, I asked myself how could some girls wheel so much power over guys. With all my past

experiences and the understanding gained from looking inside the Commie Ho's head by way of her diary, this ho from Brazil wrapped me around her wishes in seconds. How did girls like her do it? What they promised but never fulfilled just wasn't that important to make up for the harm they caused by suckering a guy into believing he was something special or the only true one for them. Whether professional or amateur hos, which together covered most girls, the only socially redeeming value of hos were repeated episodes of sensual gratification, but, as with temporary bouts of consciousness altering through alcohol or drugs, that doesn't provide a guy sufficient reason for living. Life for a man required more, a purpose. No matter how these hos plied their tricks, they were dangerous, at least the blonde ones. Many fears plague me, but the only one that scares me is not being able to do what is necessary to meet my reckoning, which is now my purpose. My resolve told me to stay away from tall blondes, real and bottled—maybe.

#### Time Has Come Today

What's interesting about the ending days of a person's life is that nothing good happens, so it becomes important to revel in the bad—to see it as good.

On returning home from the law library, my mail for September 29 included the District Court's decision on the motions to dismiss. I flipped to the last page where judges always sum up their conclusion: "Plaintiff's Complaint and Supplemental Complaint are dismissed with prejudice." He threw my case out and from the tenor of his concluding section slammed the District Court doors shut behind it as though warning me, "And don't come back here again!" Oh yeah! No bureaucrat tries to intimidate me; back I would come.

Judge Castel dismissed over the issue of "proximate cause." Proximate cause is a nebulous area of the law, especially concerning RICO actions, which allows judges to use a number of different tests or even make one up in order to decide whether the acts of defendants

are closely enough related to the harm suffered by a plaintiff. The law is so imprecise on this issue that it allows judges to dump a case they don't want, and that's how Judge Castel used it. What I didn't expect was for him to deny me at least one chance to amend my Complaint to meet his objections—to allow me one more bite at the apple. But Castel doomed that possibility by using the words “with prejudice.” Very unusual, since Federal courts almost always allow a plaintiff one more shot at drafting his complaint. Maybe the politically correct news media didn't touch my story because it knew more about how the court system really worked than I did. Fine, next stop the United States Court of Appeals for the Second Circuit, which takes appeals from the U.S. district courts in New York, Vermont and Connecticut.

It took me until the end of the week to finally sit down and thoroughly read Judge Castel's decision. When I did, I seethed with indignation at this alleged “Honor of the Bench” who most likely only skimmed my memorandum of law, if that. He claimed, however, to have “carefully and thoroughly considered” my memorandum but said, “Plaintiff made no request to file an amended Complaint in the event the motions to dismiss were granted.” My memorandum stated at page 41, “If this Court dismisses the Complaint or part of it under Rule 12(b)(6), then the plaintiff requests leave to amend.” The memorandum made four more similar requests concerning specific issues throughout the memorandum—five times in all, but somehow Castel, and his clerk, either a broad or girlie man—read Feminazi or Feminazi sycophant, missed them. So much for “carefully and thoroughly considered.”

More evidence that these bureaucrats, probably trained in Russia, gave short shrift to my papers was their false accusation that I had violated Castel's individual practice rules. Any schoolchild looking at the record would have seen that. Castel and his clerk simply rewrote the procedural history in favor of their convenience. Sounded to me like the same tactic *60 Minutes*

used against President Bush over his National Guard Service: they decided the result they wanted, then made up the facts to fit it. It was now clear that Castel wanted to quickly dismiss my case and pressure me into not appealing, so he and his clerk lambasted me with the falsehood of violating his rules in order to give them an excuse not to fully consider my papers and discredit me before the Court of Appeals. The District Court's rush to trample my rights in the name of political correctionalism and expediency didn't end there. The Judge and his clerk also tried to scare me off an appeal with insults, sarcasm and misleading statements. They probably liked the way the lawyers for the defense handled themselves, since instead of reprimanding the defense for its personal attacks, the Court joined in the character assassination.

Castel and his clerk were subtler in their litigation of personal destruction while relying on many of the phony conclusions the defense improperly interjected into their motions to dismiss. Copycatting the defense attorneys' ridicule of me and their misrepresentations of my Complaint showed that Castel and his clerk carefully read the defense motion papers but not mine. Castel and his clerk simply concocted a legal argument based on their claiming my Complaint didn't say what it said but said what they said it said in order to dismiss it for lack of proximate cause.

The two even ridiculed my efforts to seek protection from the courts and report the defendants' crimes to law enforcement agencies by sarcastically describing me as "one who is having a difficult time being heard." They'd never, never dare say that if I was a broad and the Commie Ho a male Russian mob pimp!

These bureaucrats, who pushed the law in any direction they personally wanted, probably feared the Feminazi criticism that would result from allowing a middle-aged man to fight for his rights against a prostitute, a respectable profession under Feminazi thinking, and those that aided

and abetted the Ho to enter and stay in America. Also playing into the dismissal with prejudice was the hostility toward civil RICO cases demonstrated by nearly all the lower federal courts in the U.S. All civil RICO actions are brought by individual citizens. In the early nineties, 77% of such RICO cases were thrown out of court in the beginning stage, as was mine, while other types of cases were rarely dismissed.

Congress had intended civil RICO to encourage an army of private citizens to take on complex racketeering actions, but federal judges, except for the Supreme Court, have imposed their own restraints on the statute by writing in requirements that aren't there. Congress feared such might happen, so it wrote into the statute that "The provisions of this Title shall be liberally construed to effectuate its remedial purposes." But that didn't stop the lower federal courts from impeding the statute's operation, so the Supreme Court has repeatedly told federal judges to knock it off. Once the Supreme Court rebuked a lower court with "The short answer is that Congress did not write the statute that way." *Russello v. U.S.*, 464 U.S. 16, 23, 104 S.Ct. 296, 300, 78 L.Ed.2d 17 (1983). The lower federal courts, however, continue to systematically dismantle civil RICO by creating numerous obstacles to keep plaintiffs from reaching the trial stage.

When the Russian mafia showed up on the District Court's steps in the form of my RICO action, Castel and his clerk naturally believed they had the PC right to impose whatever restrictive judicial limitations necessary to dismiss. Lawmakers call this "negative judicial activism" in which appointed judges change the very meaning of and reason for a statute passed by elected representatives. In my case, Congress had passed civil RICO because previous laws had offered too little protection for the victims of organized crime.

Castel and his clerk didn't care about any male rights. They were too steeped in toting the Feminazi line of modern day America as evidenced by the creepy euphemistic language they used. For example, the decision calls brothels and strip joints "exotic dancing clubs." Nobody, other than hos, pimps and Feminazis, call dens of flesh peddling "exotic." Exotic means mysterious, romantic, picturesque, glamorous and out of the ordinary. Brothels and lap-dancing clubs don't fall within any of those definitions. There are over 2000 lap-dancing joints alone in America, and who knows how many double as whorehouses. Both thrive on crass commercial exchanges, just like stock markets and cattle yards but only the activities in strip clubs and brothels are driven by greed and lust rather than greed alone—nothing exotic about either desire. The decision also sanitized "call girl operations" to "escort services." The Court used Orwellian Newspeak in order to disguise the sorted-criminal reality depicted in the Complaint.

Feminazis and totalitarian lefties use Newspeak all the time in describing theirs and their supporters' nefarious acts. They picked it up from Orwell's *1984* or the Japanese three monkeys: hear no evil, see no evil and speak no evil unless it serves Feminazi interests. By controlling the words used in discourse, vested interests can manipulate reality to appear as it does not exist. Control a person's view of reality, and you control that person.

Castel and his clerk's politically correct, elitist efforts to twist my Complaint and the law brought home to my gut what I intellectually suspected all along: there was no redress for my grievances within the American judicial system. In 21<sup>st</sup> century America, the nobler sentiments of men are left for the movies made in the first half of the last century. If I won on appeal, unlikely given the like-mindedness in the Second Circuit Court of Appeals, the case would end up back with Castel who would then finesse another reason to dismiss it. Even if everything went my way, it would be back and forth like a ping-pong ball between the District and Appeals

Courts, and that's what Castel wanted me to take away from his opinion. The message was clear: the Judge was not going to allow my case to ever reach discovery. If I persisted, and luck kept bringing me victories in the Court of Appeals, I would have to pay a prohibitive toll in costs, time and stress. But if lady luck failed me even once in the Court of Appeals with a ruling in Castel's favor, then the only legal option left would be the U. S. Supreme Court, which only hears about one-percent of the eight to nine thousand cases that apply for review every year. So the chance of the U.S. Supreme Court ever hearing my case was nil. Castel's decision made it eminently clear that the only justice in America for a man without fortune or fame was injustice. All those law school cases, TV shows, Hollywood movies and comic books where truth and justice lived synonymous with the American way meant nothing for American men in the 21<sup>st</sup> Century.

Despite Castel's warning between the lines to stay out of the judicial system, I wasn't going down without a fight. At the law library, I researched whether I could do anything legally right away, rather than waiting months for the appeal. Sure enough, I could make a motion for Castel to disqualify himself from the case, and, if successful, ask the new judge to reconsider the motions to dismiss. Maybe a new judge would at least read my papers through, follow the law and not rewrite my Complaint. The chances, however, were small of Castel bouncing himself off the case, but his response might provide some ammunition for attacking his decision in the Court of Appeals. The motion would also get on the public record in the District Court the tawdry tactics Castel used to discredit me. And, since the record of the motions would also end up in the Appeals Court in the form of the "joint appendix" when my case reached there, I wouldn't have to use some of the limited space in my appeal brief explaining Castel's falsehoods and ridicule.

To make my motion, Judge Castel's individual practice rules required sending him and the defense lawyers a letter that requested a pre-motion conference to discuss the issues. The letter gave me the chance to criticize him the way he did me:

“My years of living in this society have made me relatively tolerant of backhanded sniping, even when it impugns my honor by subtly calling me a liar who spins tales or makes fanciful allegations.

Castel's decision started smearing me as a delusional liar on the very first page by claiming the Complaint “spins a tale,” and, in the very first sentence of that page, he repeated a sarcasm used by the defense lawyers throughout their papers to ridicule my case and me. My Complaint states the Russian mafia is an organization that “spans the globe.” The defense lawyers had picked up on that phrase, twisted it to apply to only the defendants, rather than the Russian mafia, and only to a domestic relations' case, rather than a RICO suit. According to the defense's distortion, my case concerned a worldwide, domestic relations conspiracy—I don't think so. Still, they used the phrase throughout their papers as a moniker for calling the Complaint farfetched and characterizing me as delusional. Lawyers can ridicule all they want, but when a judge repeats their derision in a written decision, it becomes a different matter entirely.

Castel included another attack on my veracity in his opinion by selectively editing an accusation by Jack Sachs, the Commie Ho's attorney, so that it sounded even worse than the one Sachs made. When Sachs opposed my request for a pre-motion conference to file my Supplemental Complaint, he wrote, “*it appears* that few, if any, of the events cited in the Supplemental Complaint ever really happened.” Castel decided to go one better when quoting Sachs' accusation by writing, “few, if any, of the events set forth in the Supplemental Complaint ever really happened.” Castel didn't bother to include Sachs' qualifier of “it appears.” Then to



make this slap across the face appear acceptable while returning a back swing to my other cheek, Castel wrote, “It is not the Court’s role at this stage of the litigation to assess the truth or validity of plaintiff’s allegations, no matter how fanciful they appear or how difficult they may be to prove.” Every law student knows on a motion to dismiss that a judge doesn’t decide fact questions, so why bother including Sachs’ edited quote at all? The only possible reason was to brand me a liar and add a backhanded slap to make sure the Second Circuit Court of Appeals, the defense and I knew that the Judge didn’t believe the Complaint’s allegations and that he thought they couldn’t be proved. Where did he get off violating the Federal Rules of Civil Procedure by making such conclusions before any discovery? He’s a judge appointed for life, so he can do pretty much what he wants.

My letter requesting a pre-motion conference continued:

“But I do find particularly trying when manifest partiality or personal prejudice singles out me, the pro se plaintiff, for criticism, especially when such censure is based on a false premise used to justify a chain of events that led to dismissal with prejudice of the Complaint.”

Castel had falsely accused me of violating his individual rules. He said in his decision, “plaintiff, without prior consent of the Court and in contravention of my Individual Practices, filed a 147-page memorandum of law, along with an affidavit and exhibits.” To which I wrote:

“Yes, I filed a 147-page law memorandum with five exhibits in opposition to the defendants’ joint motion to dismiss while their two key memoranda totaled 148 pages with 47 separate documents attached, but you saw fit to rebuke only me, and that rebuke was unfounded.

“You claim my 147-page memorandum of law contravenes your Individual Practice Rules, but it did not contravene Chief Judge Mukasey’s rules who was the sitting Judge when it was filed. You were not on the case at that time—Chief Judge Mukasey was and my memorandum complied with his rules. Had I known then that you would end up with the case, I would have requested “prior consent,” but I’m not that prescient. Your rules for which you wrongly accused me of violating in a written order did not apply because the case had not yet been transferred to you and there was no notice to me at the time that it would be.

“More important, however, is that the above incidents of partiality or personal prejudice and error in applying your Individual Rules contributed to overlooking controlling decisions cited in my memorandum, not fully considering the legal arguments I advanced and fundamentally misconstruing and overlooking allegations in the Complaint, which was reinforced by your failure to fully consider my memorandum of law. Other indications in your opinion also infer an ignoring of my memorandum but not the defendants’. And no, the motion I made to strike some of the defendants’ extraneous exhibits did not request striking my memorandum of law.

“After having been burnt once and not wanting to be falsely accused of violating any more rules, I am requesting a pre-motion conference in order to move for your disqualification from this case because of partiality or personal prejudice so that an impartial judge may hear any request for reconsideration of your decision to dismiss the case.”

As hindsight now made clear, Castel likely had decided soon after his assignment to my case to dismiss it, which explains his comment at the July conference when he didn’t want to give the Bank of Cyprus any extra time to reply because it would come out of his time. It also explains him admonishing me in his opinion for filing the Supplemental Complaint while the motions to dismiss were pending. The Supplemental Complaint required Castel and his clerk to put in extra time and effort to fashion an additional legal argument for dismissing it along with the original Complaint. That must have annoyed them, and in their rush to throw my case out, they created their own rules of procedure. It didn’t matter to them that the Federal Rules of Civil Procedure not only allow but also encourage a plaintiff to file a supplemental complaint whenever new events occur in a case. Castel and his clerk wanted rid of my case, so they ignored the rules by treating my Supplement Complaint as an Amended Complaint—two distinctly different court papers, but it gave them an argument for dismissing my case “with prejudice.”

Dubin, the lead defense lawyer, responded to my request for a pre-motion conference with a letter that took every opportunity to ingratiate himself with Castel, “I regret having to burden this Court with any further correspondence on this matter.” Right, this pathologically

fibbing lawyer knew as I did that Castel screwed up by accusing me of violating his rules because if I had violated them, then so had Dubin, but neither of us did because the Chief Judge had the case at the time. Dubin naturally failed to mention that. Instead, he gave Castel a couple of arguments, actually lies, for getting around what the Judge had written. Dubin twisted Castel's admonishment of my rule violation into merely a statement made "in the context of providing nothing more than procedural history." Baloney, the statement was false and rebuked only me but not Dubin when by Castel's faulty reasoning Dubin had also violated the Judge's rules. Dubin also suggested what Castel would probably do: deny the common sense meaning of the Court's opinion by simply declaring that nothing Castel or his clerk wrote indicated a failure to fully consider my memorandum—false, but impossible for me to prove.

Other chicanery used by Dubin in opposing my request to make a motion to disqualify omitted the full truth. And why not—a half-truth is often more effective than a full one. Dubin claimed anymore time spent on the case, so far 18 months, would "greatly prejudice the defendants." But he conveniently left out that five of those months of delay resulted from his requests for extensions of time to file papers. Dubin also declared with lawyerly pomposity that Castel should not disqualify himself, which would open the way for another judge to review the case, because two federal judges had already "considered" the RICO action. Technically true, but the amount of time put in by the first judge, the Chief Judge, was miniscule, consisting of one short conference in which he set the schedule for submitting the motions to dismiss. That's hardly enough to satisfy the definition of "considered." Dubin even argued that another judge "should not be burdened with having to address all these papers." But most of the papers he had submitted for that very reason: to so burden Castel that the Judge would dismiss the case on any grounds just to avoid dealing with so many documents.

Dubin finally argued that I had the opportunity to submit lengthy papers that showed I had a fair and reasonable chance to argue against the motions to dismiss. Is he kidding, what's fair and reasonable about submitting papers the Judge barely looked at? That's no opportunity, unless you live in George Orwell's *1984*.

Castel allowed me to make my Motion to Disqualify but refused to grant a pre-motion conference. Rats! I wanted the confrontation; watch him try to explain why he singled me out for criticism.

My motion accused Castel of acting in a manner that raised questions about his impartiality. That's all I needed: show there existed some doubt about his fairness. Too bad I couldn't also make a motion to bounce him off the case for re-writing the civil RICO statute, but the rules don't allow for that. The Motion to Disqualify criticized Castel's falsehoods and snide remarks:

“Such comments by Judge Castel are unnecessary, inappropriate and do not bolster the legal basis for the Decision, but they do discredit the plaintiff for when he appears before the Second Circuit to argue his appeal. As such, the only conclusion is that these remarks manifest Judge Castel's partiality above and beyond that already held by Second Circuit courts against civil RICO actions.”

Dubin's papers, as usual, attacked me personally and declared I fabricated a claim of partiality against Castel and misread as sarcasm the Judge's objective words. The lead defense lawyer also claimed, “Plaintiff is desperate and figures he now has nothing to lose.” For once Dubin got something right, but he didn't realize it. He just threw it out as a personal attack.

Castel denied my Motion to Disqualify but at least corrected his opinion that my 147-page memorandum didn't violate his rules because when it was filed the Chief Judge had the case. Still, he failed to mention why he had initially singled me out for criticism but not Dubin for filing two memoranda totaling 148 pages. Oh well, sloppiness generally results when a judge

follows his visceral reaction to dismiss a case and then has to play catch up to maintain the visage of exhaustive judicial deliberation.

Castel did use Dubin's suggestion about not ignoring my memorandum by saying he had given all papers "careful and thorough" consideration. As for the personal ridicule Castel had thrown my way, the Judge claimed he didn't say what he had said, or what he said didn't mean what it meant. Actually, he should have declared he didn't write what had been written, since the dramatic difference in writing styles between Castel's ruling on my motion and the opinion to dismiss indicates he likely didn't write the dismissal decision. My criticism of the Judge in the Motion to Disqualify must have caused him to deal with it personally. But as for the defendants' motions to dismiss, he most likely had told one of his clerks to dismiss the case with prejudice and let her, or an androgyny, come up with the reasoning and write the opinion. Castel must have relied on her to get it right, but she didn't. As a judge, he should have paid closer attention, but even so it would have ended with the same result. Castel wanted rid of my case, so any illogical reasoning would do.

Even in Castel's denial of my motion for his disqualification, shades of *1984* appeared. Castel claimed the statement in his dismissal opinion about me filing a Supplemental Complaint "with the defendants' motions to dismiss in hand" was not a personal criticism. Rather it meant that when I filed the Supplemental Complaint, I should have used that opportunity to also change my original complaint to meet the objections in the defense lawyers' memoranda that I then had in my hands. Wait a minute! The defense attorneys aren't the Judge in this case or any case, and a plaintiff doesn't have to accept their arguments and change his complaint accordingly. If a plaintiff has to rely on the defense lawyers interpretation of the law, which is that the plaintiff has no legal recourse, there would never be any lawsuits, and judges like Castel would be out of

a job. The reason we have judges is to interpret and apply the law impartially. We don't use defense lawyers for that, especially four-flushing ones.

Even more absurd was Castel's reasoning that would require plaintiffs, maybe only male civil RICO plaintiffs, to read the future. Normally, after a judge makes his decision to dismiss a case, a plaintiff is granted the right to amend the complaint to correct the problems raised in the judge's decision. Obviously, a plaintiff can't amend his complaint to cure mistakes pointed out by a judge, if the plaintiff has to do so before the judge issues a decision. The law doesn't require plaintiffs to foretell the future because most courts realize humans can't do that, so they usually allow a plaintiff to amend his complaint at least once after a judge issues a decision to dismiss. But according to Castel, I should have filed an Amended Complaint correcting the errors his decision would list before that decision was issued. It's a neat way to Catch-22 my Complaint out of court without the opportunity to amend. Next time, I use a fortuneteller.

The process of appealing to the Second Circuit Court of Appeals began, but my take on future judicial results had changed. Even though Castel had written such an abortion of a decision, I no longer expected further defeat at the hands of the bureaucratic judiciary—I was assured of it. As the lead defense lawyer said when he made that comment about desperation, Castel's decision to dismiss my case did just enough to nudge me over the line into the realm of nothing to lose. When a man loses everything, and there is no justice to be found, he becomes a ghost on the road to Elysian. The courts are useless, unless you are a broad, celebrity, rich or a large corporation, then they'll give you what you want—whether justice for you or injustice for your opponent. Time would come for other action. No point in possessing power if it is not used. I still pursued my legal recourse in the Court of Appeals but more for the chance of making a stab for the Supreme Court rather than any hope of success.

## Smooth Talking Criminal

The time I spent preparing the papers for getting into the Court of Appeals and dodging the hidden traps that slam shut the Court's doors took a few weeks in October during which I missed some Salsa lessons and working out at the gym. Throughout that period, the simmering reaction of fury and hate in my gut kept boiling up. One Saturday night, I almost got into a fight with a twenty-something Asian guy and his friends. Mark had to step in as peacemaker. On another weekend, I made a few unnecessarily nasty remarks to some broads and refused to move out of the middle of the tiny dance floor at Gonzales y Gonzales when some guy asked me so that he could dance with his girl. Good grief, I was acting like I did back in my college days when destination Vietnam hung seemingly forever before me. I didn't need this. It became clear very quickly that Salsa, working out and chasing girls of a darker complexion served a more important purpose than staying in shape or entertainment: they kept me from exploding or doing something really dumb like falling for another blonde.

The weekend before Halloween, Mark suggested we try a place on Fifth Avenue and 13<sup>th</sup> Street called Luan. Free admission and Salsa, how could we lose? We arrived early around 11 PM, the place was nearly empty and no talent except for a few girls barricaded behind tables. Some broads always enthrone themselves in back of a table. What are they protecting—their imaginary virginity? Are they waiting for some prince to scale those ramparts? Too much work and too visibly embarrassing if the guy doesn't come back with the damsel.

On our way to the bar was this tall, tall blonde, blonde cocktail waitress standing directly ahead. My persona immediately changed from Dumb to Dumber. My eyes saw clearly, the club wasn't too dark and she was in range of my less than 20-20 contacts vision; still I walked up to her, to the edge of the psychologically fog-enshrouded cliff. Looked up into the face of a six-

foot, three-inch girl in her early twenties who looked the twin of the Commie Ho and began the pickup. What was I doing? Had Mother Nature programmed me for destruction at the hands of blondes whether real or dyed?

Cocktail waitresses are always easy to talk with—too easy—because they want those tips, as did this one, but getting their telephone numbers while they work is usually difficult. We flirted, or I flirted, while she acted throughout the evening. Mark and I bought our drinks through her, as she requested, instead of at the bar. She and I even danced a little, touching bodies, feeling, holding each other with kisses dangerously near the mouth: clearly a death wish on my part.

“Lucky,” as she called herself, also worked as a model—why was I not surprised. Beautiful, whose barefoot height reached six-foot-one and under contract to Welhelmina, a hotshot model agency in the City that paid for her 85<sup>th</sup> Street and West End Avenue apartment, an affluent residential neighborhood. Lucky came from a small town in Mississippi, which gave us something more to talk about given my recent trip there. But that minor coincidence didn’t matter since Lucky knew how to carry on a conversation with any man, especially one that looked like money. She even asked flat out, “Do you have money? To which I honestly answered, “No.”

Before Lucky moved to New York City, a few months earlier, she traveled around the country appearing in beauty pageants for Hawaiian Tropic tanning lotion. That sounded familiar, although Lucky apparently had more success than the Commie Ho with Hawaiian Tropic. I kept dancing on the cliff’s edge, laughing at the abyss below when I should have been fleeing as hard and fast as possible from my own stupidity. Lucky wheedled me into going outside to the corner store to buy her a handful of her favorite chocolates, each the size of a golf



ball wrapped in red or blue foil. She particularly preferred the red ones that night. Rather than turning the handful over to her at once, I doled them out one at a time over hours, which reminded me of teasing my cat when a kid. But who was teasing whom? When Mark and I left, Lucky gave me her telephone number.

My dance on the edge now turned into a fall powerless for me to stop. The moment we left Luan, Lucky started living in my mind, playing my emotions. Trying to reduce her sway, I presumptuously encapsulated her value to me.

“So what do you want from her?” Mark asked.

“Sex,” I answered. But was that really all? Too bad girls can’t be separated from their bodies.

“You may also want to keep your options open by being her friend,” Mark continued. “Not the big brother type who solves her problems and listens to her complain about her boy friends. Guys always fall into that trap because nature made us problem solvers and caretakers. Girls know that, and they know how to use us for it because they can’t solve problems or take care of themselves. It’s happened to me lots of times, and I’m not doing it anymore.”

“That’s what happened to me with Traviesa.” I replied. She was always bending my ear about this guy or that guy and using me to fix the idiocy she caused. Who needs listening to their moaning and groaning about the problems they get themselves into? What a bore.”

“Right. So, after you call her up once or twice, she’ll make clear whether she’s interested in sex or a big brother or doesn’t ever want to see you again. If it’s big brother, just don’t fall into that role. Go out some place fun with her and flirt. If she starts talking sob stories, be firm and tell her, ‘Listen I came out to have a good time,’ and she’ll knock it off. Keep flirting with her, and she’ll realize you’re not going to play big brother, so she’ll flirt back. Girls always want

guys to flirt with them even if she's not thinking sex—it justifies their existence. And by being a friend, you'll get to meet the other models she hangs around with, and so will I. You can even throw a party at The Park for her and her friends. Vincent will help in making it seem special, and it doesn't cost anything, you're just bringing some people to a club.”

“Yeah,” I said, sounding like Eddie Haskell, “Vincent will make us look like big shots, always impressive to models.”

“Exactly.”

Mark's advice, as always on these matters, was excellent. But should I even pursue this physical clone of my ex-wife? The primal archetype emotions stirring in me threatened so much danger, but I couldn't help myself, guess the season of the witch never ends for men. On my first call to Lucky, I got her voicemail, so I left a message. A few days later, I called again, same voice mail, different message: “I thought I'd call for a little Southern sunshine, but you're not around. Maybe I need to take another trip to Mississippi although it rained most of the time I was in Biloxi last. By the way, I have some Red and Blue chocolates you might be interested in. Give me a call, maybe we can work out a deal or just chat or have a drink.” She never called back; I was saved, so long as I kept away from the club where she worked.

Lucky's failure to return my calls initially caused me to blame it on my age, but then I remembered my younger days at Cravath and in television news. Girls immediately became more interested when I told them where I worked. Twenty years ago, they saw me as a potential money marker whom they could sucker into providing them the Life of Riley while they spent their time cheating with whoever was in reach. So age didn't really matter. If young, the guy's potential finances mattered; if older, his bank account, but it still all came down to money, and as for the girls, fidelity on their part belonged in another dimension. Lucky, as with all pretty girls,

looked for big spenders with high net-worth or the promise of such, to justify using their most valuable commodity on a guy—time. Like tomatoes, these hos don't stay plump and ripe for long. So a ho is not about to waste time on a guy without promise or cash. Lucky for me, I told her I didn't have money.

The rationale girls use to justify gold digging is obvious: they believe themselves princesses, so men should give them the keys to the vault, no questions asked. Not dissimilar from the Feminazis demanding preferential treatment for whatever they happen to want from society. But what delusion do girls use to justify their pathological faithlessness until finally the laments of the young girls who were once friends coalesced in my head. They always criticized their boyfriends for not lasting long enough inside of them so that they could enjoy the multiple orgasms that Mother Nature had designed them for. A bizarre complaint, probably just more carping against men since Mother Nature isn't stupid. Evolution made a lot of changes over millions of years in order for guys and girls to copulate frequently to assure the species' survival. After all that effort, Mother Nature wasn't about to miss her goal because of sexual dissatisfaction that left girls hungry for more orgasms and guys condemned to just one. It would make no sense. Mother Nature, therefore, gave both men and girls the ability to have multiple orgasms. The problem for puritanical America is that most of its girls, and lots of the guys, haven't gotten the message. They believe ejaculation as the only form of orgasm a guy can experience—it's not. When nearing ejaculation while inside a girl, the guy only needs to relax, stop pumping away and tensing all his muscles in a futile effort to save himself. By relaxing, letting his body go limp, which wouldn't affect the part inside the girl, he can, with some practice, ride the sensations into an orgasm without ejaculating, which produces an experience not unlike the type girls feel running through their bodies. The guy can do this over and over,

never exiting the girl, until she becomes too sore to continue, usually after an hour. For well-worn sluts, it's longer. The orgasms will start off as small and minor, but with practice and over time, they'll increase in strength, and when the man finally ejaculates, it'll be more satisfying.

The guy, however, needs a girl to follow his lead in this, just like with Salsa. The girl must respond to the guy for both to enjoy the potential that Mother Nature gave them. If the girl is a Feminazi, it wouldn't work because she believes it is her birthright to take charge and end up on top. Following her Feminazi beliefs will simply drive the guy to a quick ejaculation because Feminazi propaganda, like all special interest groups, rarely reflects reality. Her ignorance and arrogant disinterest in how guys function will leave her unsatisfied for which she will naturally blame the guy. So Feminazis and girls like Lucky use their ignorance about the ability of one man to run them through their multiple orgasms to justify their whoring around and any other underhanded conduct that harms a man.

Girls of the Lucky ilk threaten more prosaic harms as well. The week of her haunting my being nearly distracted me into missing a District Court deadline that would have ended my RICO case for eternity. The deadline to file the required Notice of Appeal fell on Halloween, which was during the weekend when the District Court was closed so that gave me until Monday. Had it not been for that coincidence, which gave me extra time, I would have missed the deadline—whew, that was close.

To celebrate this gift of the fates over feminine evil, I went to Gonzales' All Hallow's Eve costume party. Long ago I gave up the delusion of the Great Pumpkin and instead went looking for tomatoes on Halloween or any other weekend night. One twenty-something girl at Gonzales' was dressed as a little schoolgirl in knee-high white socks, short-short blue plaid skirt with suspenders and a virginal white-buttoned blouse. Couldn't tell whether she was Jewish or

Latina, a failing of mine that sometimes causes me to hit on Jewish babes, which I classify as white for lunatic asylum. No matter, I wasn't going to allow my line to go unused. Walking up to her, I leaned over so she could hear me and asked, "Would you like some candy little girl?" Good line, huh? I even had the candy in my pocket that I bought with a tip to the attendant in the men's room. Well, she freaked, her eyes widened, she drew back and her voice quaked as she stumbled over words trying to find a response. Her reaction surprised me. Maybe she had gone too deep into the character of her costume; however, a real little girl likely would have handled it much better. Then I realized the broad was white, probably with a Feminazi mother and girieman father. The mother, seeing a potential rival in her daughter not just for the husband but other older men, probably did what all Feminazi momsters do, brainwashed the daughter into believing older guys evil so the daughter would avoid the pool of men the over-the-hill mother wanted. Even girls have to be taught to hate and fear since a little girl that escaped such programming would figure out a way to get the candy for nothing.

#### The Cheater

My Second Circuit Court of Appeals strategy focused on Castel's failure to pay, as he claimed, "careful and thorough" attention to my Complaint and law memorandum. The aim was to expose his ignoring what my Complaint said and then rewriting it to fit his legal argument for dismissing my case—the same tactic the defense lawyers used. Some judges, especially in civil RICO cases, do this all the time. They often make a knee jerk decision to throw out a case, usually one they personally don't like with a powerless plaintiff, choose a legal reason from the list of those most commonly used to dismiss a lawsuit and then distort what the plaintiff's complaint states to fit that reason.

Castel based the crucial part of his legal opinion on the claim that in August 2000 I discovered the Russian mafia had tricked me into bringing the Commie Ho to America. That was clearly false, but it didn't stop Castel. It wasn't until I talked with Jeff in the summer of 2002—two years later—that I realized the Russian mob's involvement. Perhaps Castel has trouble with mathematics, some people do, but I doubt it, since his reasoning for dismissal depended on that falsehood. August 2000 was when I started investigating whether the Commie Ho was providing prostitution services to her Flash Dancers' customers, not investigating the possibility of a RICO lawsuit and the Russian mafia's interference in my life. Even had my Complaint stated that I knew in August 2000 about the Russian mafia standing in the shadows behind the Ho, scheming to get her assets into America, Castel's legal reasoning for dismissal still wouldn't wash with U.S. Supreme Court decisions, but it might with the Second Circuit. Anyway, my Complaint didn't state such because I didn't know it at the time.

Despite Castel's declaration of "careful and thorough" consideration of my papers, he missed when I first suspected Russian mafia involvement. But that miss was necessary for the Judge and his clerk to conclude that all the harm caused me after August 2000 was my fault because that's when, according to their fabrication, I learned about the Russian mafia's scheme and started investigations and court proceedings to fight against it. They claimed it was my fighting that caused me harm, rather than the criminal acts of the defendants I fought against. The temporary order of protection taken out against me, the costs to defend against it, the threats by mafia goons, the time lost from my business in seeking protection from a government that didn't care, the damage to my business reputation, the foregone business opportunities and lost profits, the cost of investigating to find out what the hell was going on so that I could put a stop to it and the expenses for fighting these clowns in court to protect my rights were all my fault

rather than those of the defendants trying to protect and further the Russian mob's profits concerning the Ho and others. That's the reasoning that Castel's simple editing of the date allowed him to use to dismiss my Complaint, and it meant that gangsters who caused harm by protecting or concealing their earlier crimes cannot be held liable under civil RICO. Purely Orwellian, but in the Southern District Court of New York, if the plaintiff learns of RICO acts committed against him, the criminals are then allowed to use more RICO violations to prevent or interfere with the plaintiff's access to law enforcement authorities or the courts.

Castel's rewriting of my complaint actually contradicted the Supreme Court in *NOW v. Scheidler*, 510 U.S. 249, 256, 114 S.Ct. 798, 127 L.Ed.2d 99 (1994), which I used in my appeal. In *NOW*, that organization alleged that the RICO conspiracy "had injured the [plaintiffs'] business and/or property interests ..." and that a defendant had threatened reprisals. The Supreme Court concluded that "nothing more is needed to confer standing on [the plaintiff] at the pleading stage," which was the stage of my case. I liked the irony of relying on a case brought by the enemies of all men: the National Organization of Witches.

As for those members and comrades of the Russian mob, Leo, the Commie Ho and Inessa, who also violated RICO before August 2000 in their efforts to transplant the Ho's profitable ass to America, Castel argued they could not have reasonably foreseen the harm their acts would cause me after August 2000, so he dismissed those claims. Get real, these three plotters couldn't foresee the harm to my business, which they knew full well about, the time away from it and the expenses they would cost me by feeding me drugs and tricking me into bring the Ho to America; they couldn't foresee the use of goons if problems arose and the litigation and time costs to me for dealing with such hoodlums; they couldn't foresee bribing public officials, a common practice among Russians, to keep me from reversing the harm of their

scheme and recovering the costs it would cause me; and they couldn't foresee using perjury, an even more common Russian practice, as part of judicial proceedings to sledge hammer me into silence while depleting my financial resources. When people, especially Russians, intentionally engage in fraudulent conduct, all of that and more are reasonably foreseeable harms caused the target. But the Court ignored that intending an end is meaningless unless the means are also intended.

In effect, Castel drew a Maginot line at August 2000. Any harm caused me after August 2000 as the result of RICO violations by the defendants didn't matter because either the harm was not foreseeable by the culprits, such as the Ho, Inessa and Leo, or my fault rather than that of the defendants. Castel's Maginot line, however, prevented him from using it for dismissing the harm caused me before August 2000. He couldn't argue that my fight against the mob, which he claimed began in August 2000, caused me harm before that date. Even the Court of Appeals would laugh that lunacy out of the courtroom—I think? So what did Castel do? He just ignored parts of my Complaint by declaring the whole Complaint did not allege any harm before August 2000. Simply amazing, given the Complaint specifically stated I put my business on hold in the spring of 2000, which cost me money and consulting opportunities, while waiting for the U.S. Embassy in Moscow to process the Commie Ho's immigration papers. There were also travel costs, filing fees and time lost in bringing this Russian mob slut to America. But that didn't matter to the Judge or his clerk.

By fabricating the August 2000 date in order to rule all injury after that time as my fault or not foreseeable and ignoring my allegations of harm before that date, Castel violated the U.S. Supreme Court's requirement at the time that on a motion to dismiss, a judge must accept all the complaint's allegations as true and draw all inferences in favor of the plaintiff. *California Motor*



*Transport Co. v. Trucking Unlimited*, 404 U.S. 508, 515, 30 L. Ed. 2d 642, 92 S.Ct. 609 (1972).

Instead, Castel drew his inferences in favor of the defendants.

Castel also goofed by not using the U.S. Supreme Court and other Circuit Courts' test for determining whether an injury from a RICO act is reasonably foreseeable to the defendants when they embark on their criminal venture. Rather, he reached into the grab bag of *ad hoc* rules that courts in the Second Circuit often use for throwing out civil RICO cases, and pulled out the "specifically intended injury" one. It states that mobsters must intend the exact injury a plaintiff subsequently suffers. For example, when the Commie Ho and Leo decided to trick me into bringing the Ho to America, which involved immigration fraud, they would have had to plan precisely how I would bring her. Had they planned on me buying a ticket for the Ho from Krasnodar to New York, they wouldn't be liable because I ended up buying a Moscow to New York ticket. For me to recover the cost of the Moscow to New York ticket, Leo and the Ho would have had to plan that I would take her to America by that route. Nuts, and it's not the law nor even remotely realistic. The plans of criminals usually lurk in their minds, so it's next to impossible to allege or prove all the specifics, assuming that criminals even go into such exacting details. And that's just the way many of the judges in the courts want it, so they can throw out civil RICO cases.

For a case to escape dismissal under the "specifically intended injury" test, the defendants would need to use a crystal ball to foresee the exact harm or expense that actually befell the sucker and then intend to cause it to him. The plaintiff would then need a mind reader to tell the court that this is what the defendants specifically intended. An absurd reading of the law, since the RICO statute requires that the mobsters only create a risk of harm to a plaintiff. They don't have to intend the exact manner in which the plaintiff is injured, just create the risk

of it occurring. So when Leo and the Ho schemed to trick me into bringing her to America, they created the risk that transporting her for-hire ass would cost me money, which it did.

Castle, and his clerk, also took the facts in my case and spindled, bent, folded and shoehorned them into a group of civil RICO cases called “employee termination,” “whistleblower” and “shareholder and creditor derivative” actions.

The “employee termination” and “whistleblower” cases involve situations where an employee refuses to go along with his employer’s RICO activities or blows the whistle on them, so the employer fires the worker or retaliates against him in some manner. The reasoning in the employee cases hold that the injury to the worker came from a management decision to fire or punish the employee not from the employer’s RICO crimes. True, if it had not been for the company’s illegal criminal activities and the employee’s whistle blowing or refusal to help, management wouldn’t have decided to fire or punish him. So logically, there is a string of causes and effects, but firing or punishing an employee is not a RICO crime, and the company’s RICO activities were not aimed at the employee but someone else. The obvious distinction between the employee cases and my case is that I was never an employee of the Russian mob, nor terminated by it, at least not yet.

In the “shareholder and creditor derivative” cases, management commits some RICO crimes to destroy the competition, win a contract, escape a debt or some other way to increase profits. Management gets caught, the public learns about the criminal activities and the company’s value sinks. The shareholders or creditors then sue the company and management for the money they lost. The shareholders and creditors can’t win such a case because the RICO activities were meant to benefit the company and, therefore, them. In my case, the Russian mafia could be considered the “company” that used RICO crimes to benefit itself, but I was

never a “shareholder” or “creditor” or, more accurately, a member or associate who benefited from those crimes. Rather, I was a customer, although an unwitting one, but that doesn’t count as a shareholder, creditor, member or associate of the Russian mob.

The Supreme Court simplifies matters by classifying “employee termination,” “whistleblower” and “shareholder and creditor derivative” actions as “pass along” cases. That means the RICO crimes injure someone and because of that person’s injury the plaintiff ends up harmed. In such cases the plaintiff cannot recover. For example, a publishing house uses RICO crimes to cheat its customers, the customers find out, stop doing business and the publisher’s salesmen lose sales. One salesman sues the publisher under RICO but can’t recover because the harm passed through the customers to him. The customers could sue under RICO because the publisher’s RICO crimes cost them money, but not the salesman because his losses were the immediate result of the customers deciding not to buy. Sure, the customers decided not to buy because of the RICO crimes but that doesn’t matter under the law because the harm passed through the customers to the salesman.

Another example of a “pass along” harm case in which RICO did not apply occurred in the 1980s when American Express conducted a clandestine campaign to defame a rival financier, Edmond J. Safra. Safra mounted a global investigation to find out who was attacking his reputation, which was injuring his banking business, and brought lawsuits to fight the defamations popping up in the foreign media. When he discovered American Express executives behind the campaign, he forced the CEO to admit the company’s misdoings and pay \$8 million to charities, the cost of Safra’s investigations and legal fees. American Express stock tanked, and shareholders sued the company and top management under RICO. The shareholders lost because the RICO crimes harmed Safra and only as a result of the harm to him, which was made

public, did the stock decline in value. Safra was a person in the middle between the executives committing the crimes and the shareholders; therefore, the shareholders couldn't recover.

Legal commentators and even the Second Circuit admit that had Safra brought a RICO suit himself against American Express, such a case would not have been thrown out of court. The reason is not because defamation is a RICO crime, it's not, but the means by which American Express carried out its plan to ruin Safra's reputation were RICO violations. Congress passed RICO in order to reach a variety of complex criminal problems, so it doesn't matter what the conspirators' aims are, whether to defame Safra, gain the Commie Ho permanent residency or cheat on a contract. If the conspirators engage in certain acts in pursuing their ends, they violate RICO.

All of this means that people harmed by the spillover effect of injury to the intended victim can't recover. The RICO crimes have to be directed at the person suing, which in my case was me. There was no middleman between me and the defendants' RICO violations. Of course, Castel and his clerk found differently by saying that my "alleged injuries arise not as a result of any conspiracy directed at [me], but rather as a result of [my] discovery and investigation of that conspiracy." *District Court Order*, p. 11. If Safra would not have been bounced into the street for suing under RICO to recover his investigation and legal expenses, then why was I? Because I'm not rich.

Castel and his clerk made lots of other goofs in dismissing my case—over 50 in all, but my appeal focused only on the following:

- Den Hollander discovered the RICO Scheme involving defendant Shipilina in August 2000—false;

- the Complaint alleges harm from RICO violations after August 2000 as mostly resulting from Den Hollander’s discovery of the Scheme—false;
- allegations of other injuries after August 2000 were general and conclusory—contradicts Supreme Court rulings;
- the Complaint didn’t allege RICO injuries prior to August 2000—false;
- employee termination and shareholder RICO actions apply to this case for determining proximate cause—wrong, I was not an employee of the Russian mob and didn’t own its stock;
- the injuries to Den Hollander were not to his business or property—wrong;
- the Scheme involving defendant Shipilina only aimed at entry into the U.S.—false;
- the Complaint did not allege Den Hollander was an intended victim or target—false; and
- Den Hollander did not request leave to amend the Complaint—intentional falsehood; that is, a blatant lie.

### Keep On Dancing

The Friday before Thanksgiving 2004, Mark and I planned on checking out the Cherry Lounge uptown at 138<sup>th</sup> Street, which advertised a Salsa party—free admission. But Mark’s younger brother said some female trainers from Bally’s health club on East 106<sup>th</sup> Street planned to show up at Luan. Firm young female bodies are always an attraction, but Luan was where Lucky worked, and although her schedule didn’t include Friday, I wasn’t confident about not running into her. So I punted, left the decision to Mark whose only ambivalence was the price of

admission, usually \$20. He decided on Luan, so I printed out a couple of free passes for Saturday night, crossed out Saturday, penned in Friday and put them in my pocket with a grin. At the club's door, the promoters asked whether we were on a guest list, which would get us in for \$10 each instead of \$20. We weren't, so I pulled out the altered free passes, the promoters laughed and let us in for \$10.

Not too many folks were inside, and no Lucky, whew! More people soon started arriving, and one tall, black chick caught my eye or I caught hers. She walked over to the bar near us looking in my direction. It was obvious what she wanted, but against my religion to buy females a drink. Then she came over to stand next to us by the D.J.'s stage waiting for me to say something, so I did—that's not against my religion.

"Why isn't anyone dancing?" I asked. The place reminded me of the Flat, hot looking black babes standing around waiting for the young guys to dance with them. Only these guys sported really big gold or gold plated medallions hanging on gold or gold plated chains around their necks to go with their extra large jerseys and pants.

"I don't know," she said. "It's always like this. All a guy has to do is hold out his hand and say 'May I have this dance' or 'Would you like to dance?'" Boy, I made sure to remember that line. Obviously, she wanted to dance, but for some reason I didn't go along, and she left to flirt with one of the bouncers. Mark leaned over to say, "She's not interested in dancing but sleeping with you." No matter, the role of quarry didn't suit me.

A co-worker of Mark's younger brother showed up, cute girl but where were the rest of the female trainers from Bally's? There were too many guys in the part of the club we were standing, so I went hunting in a different valley. If I had known the girl from Bally's was only nineteen, I would have stayed put. On my reconnaissance, I talked to a few girls, but none were

very friendly, not interested or too nervous to flirt. I threw a few lines at another tall, black chick who answered only in monosyllables. She was real pretty, so her verbal capacity irrelevant. But while waiting for more inspiration from the muses, her girlfriend returned from the ladies room and they left. So I returned to home base next to the small stage on which the D.J. booth sat. A group of five black chicks, short and one very wide stood by or sat on the stage. Making my move, I started talking and they laughed at some of my jokes.

“Does the D.J. ever play any Rolling Stones?” I asked.

“No! This is Hip-Hop!” Said the cute one with a sexy smile while sitting on the stage with her legs apart between which I happily moved nudged along by the crowd.

“May I have this dance?” I asked holding out my hand.

“No.”

Okay I remembered, still holding out my hand, “Would you like to dance?”

“No.”

Something was wrong, or that girl earlier in the evening lied to me. I kept flirting with these girls, but as the place filled up I noticed other guys asking girls to dance and getting the same glass of cold water in the face. So I asked Mark what was going on?

“Black girls always do this. They have a combination princess and inferiority complex. The princess in them demands supplication, assurances you want her for a steady girlfriend or wife. The inferiority makes them afraid of being used or made a fool of. Lots of young black girls walk around at home with a white towel over their heads wishing they were a blonde, so some of the inferiority comes from color. The whole thing is an attitude I don’t want to deal with.”

So, as is usually the case in America, guys weren't the fault but girls. The reason for the small amount of dancing going on was the chicks, who as masters of the art of deception covered it up by dancing with each other. These black female temptresses couldn't live up to the advertising of their tight fitting jeans. Well, those babes may not like their skin color but I do and started talking again with the five by the D.J. booth.

Once again, I asked the cute one to dance to which she repeated her third no, but this time she also questioned my ability to dance hip-hop. Maybe she had a point. Somewhere along the line, I started dancing with one of the other five whose back was to the D.J. booth. Apparently, my Rock 'n' Roll moves from decades earlier weren't going down well, so the D.J. stepped outside his booth, and from the stage started showing me what to do. The girl I was dancing with couldn't see him standing behind and above her or that I was just copying his moves. All of a sudden, I had a lot more room to dance when some of the home boys and home girls moved back to enjoy the mini-show the D.J., the girl and I were putting on. I still threw in a few moves from the 1960s, such as squatting down with my face in front of the girl's snatch and moving in closer while holding her hips until like an embarrassed virgin she turned away burying her face in her hands. The D.J. and my friends laughed hard, the crowd got a kick and I enjoyed myself. What a great place and great people.

Walking home that night, I mused, as I often did after a particularly fun night at a club and with the remnants of a few vodka gimlets with Absolut and Rose's lime in me, that my life could have really been enjoyable, interesting and worthwhile had the Matrix allowed me to pursue my first best destiny—Physics.

The following weekend, Mark, three of his female friends and I hit a bizarre club, bizarre as to one-third of it anyway. On the lower Westside near 10<sup>th</sup> Avenue, *Spirit*, a large club



fashioned out of an old warehouse, played different music in different sections of the building. Upstairs, a room for Salsa and one for Hip-Hop while downstairs Trance, whatever that meant? When the club finally got moving, I decided to do a little exploring downstairs in the Trance room. Before reaching bottom, I not only heard but also felt the dull mind-numbing thumping of the music. On the dance floor, with little if any discernible variation, the music unpleasantly vibrated to the inner core of my body. There was no hiding from this sound. Lots of fog swirled about creating a clammy Sherlock Holmes London night with illumination too tired to light, except for the periodic bright shafts of a strobe beam that for an instant made a piece of existence perceivable. Through the fog and dark, I made out shadows of young people moving like automatons to the monotonous music. This must be the utopian vision of today's psychiatrists, Feminazis and lefties—Zombieland, a psychotropic hell with no human emotions anywhere. Armageddon aside, I couldn't figure out why they kept it so dark. The near absence of the visible electromagnetic spectrum made it impossible to check out a babe, the very reason for clubs. Girls display themselves, guys make an offer and the girls accept, decline or play games.

Roaming around, I squinted through the haze until I saw a couple of girls standing at the top of some stairs in a doorway of light apparently coming from another room. I headed up the stairs toward them. They were wearing shades, guess the other room's light was too bright for them, but at least I'd be able to see. They were also smoking, weird because New York City law forbids lighting up in a club. At the top, I could see the two were nice looking, so I threw my line gesturing to the doorway of light, "So, what room is this?" "The street," the blonde said in a voice as lacking in variation as the music. Looking out, I replied, "Ahhhh, reality!" Turned and went back to the floor for another try at flirtation with some girl. In my search through the darkness for a pretty face, I finally caught on to following the fleeting illumination of the hectic

fire of the strobe light beams. It briefly lit the lovely face of a black chick dancing with another girl right in front of me, but the next flash of luminosity answered my bewilderment as to why the paucity of light in this lower depth of the club. They kept the room so dark in order to hide the cold dead eyes involuntarily staring straight ahead into nothingness through the slits of swollen eyelids of these apparent humanoid chicks. Dead or not, this girl with large balloons was good looking. I waited. Her dancing partner moved away toward someone else, but the black chick just kept dancing as though she still had a partner. Seeing my opportunity, I approached her from the side, “How long can you dance to this?” Not bothering to even look at me but still fixed on some abyss in front of her, she insipidly said, “Forever.” Oooookay, that was enough for me and headed back upstairs to the Hip-Hop room, thinking the disco scene in *Blade* looked like a nuns’ convention compared to this Trance room. Next time in *Zombieland*, I bring a cross—that should cause a commotion.

On December 4, 2004, I finally finished the first draft of this still unfinished story, four years to the day I bounced the Commie Ho out of my apartment. And no, I didn’t plan that irony.

### Tired of Waiting For You

The appeals process aims at resolving a case within six months but often takes longer. After I filed my Notice of Appeal, I waited for the Second Circuit’s Civil Appeals Management Office to schedule a Pre-Argument Conference. At such conferences, lawyers for the Second Circuit explore the possibility of a settlement between the parties or try to simplify the issues before the case goes to a three-judge panel for a hearing and decision. The defendants weren’t about to settle, why should they, the odds favored them because I belonged to the class of America’s modern day scapegoats and outcasts.

The Second Circuit channels appeals from the district courts along one of two tracks: “Counseled” in which the party appealing has a lawyer and “*Pro Se*” in which the party is representing himself. Although I represented myself, I’m a lawyer, so the Second Circuit’s rules required handling my case as a “Counseled” appeal. Fine with me, since “*Pro Se*” cases usually receive the bums’ rush out the courthouse doors. The “august” Second Circuit Court of Appeals didn’t want average citizens traipsing through its halls, wasting the Court’s time searching for justice.

When the Clerk’s Office for the Second Circuit received my case, they naturally put it on the wrong track: *Pro Se*. It took me three times to enlighten the Clerk’s Office before that bungling bureaucracy got it right. The Clerk’s Office also lost my Pre-Argument Statement papers along the way. Good thing I had a date-stamped copy from when I originally filed them; otherwise, the Court could claim I didn’t submit the papers on time and kick my case out, which would have ended my RICO lawsuit for good. Was it incompetence on the part of the Clerk’s Office for the second most prestigious court in the land or had someone been paid off to liquidate my papers. I’d never find out for sure, although a buddy who works in the Court told me it was probably just laziness in filing the papers. The Clerk’s Office even lost one of the procedural rulings the Court made in my case. Maybe the clerks only use circular files, but that Office is renowned for sloth among the employees of the Second Circuit who don’t work for the Clerk. Something told me that had the Clerk been a man rather than a female, then whatever happened to my original papers or the ruling would not have.

The delays from the Clerk’s screw-ups, however, fitted into my plans, and definitely didn’t interfere with my weekend clubbing. From January into May 2005, I worked on the second draft of this story, which I finished on May 19, 2005. Five years earlier to the day, the

Commie Ho headed to Italy for her prostitution fling with the fat Mexican Alfredo. Time for these ironic coincidences to end.

### Goin Uptown

With Memorial Day approaching, I remembered something I had forgotten to do. A few years earlier, Svetlana, my Krasnodar dyed-blonde lawyer, had obtained sworn affidavits from three people in Krasnodar who described the Commie Ho's local prostitution business. My intention was to send them to the INS at the Moscow Embassy, but my short-term memory wasn't too good this millennium—neither was my luck, either in this or the prior millennium. I contacted the Embassy directly and even used a backdoor channel to see whether the INS was interested—they weren't.

The ex-wife was still hoing around New York pretending to be a model, which was easy to tell by simply searching “Angelina Shipilina” on the Internet. In one search, up popped the slut's latest scam. At [www.brideus.com](http://www.brideus.com), she claimed she was 23 and a bride to be, which allowed her to compete for a \$10,000 prize. A real life Gretchen right out of Goethe's *Faust*, “It's gold that counts, money that matters.”

Her age was a lie, since she was 28, but what about marrying again? Her marriage to me was simply to get a permanent green card so she could ho in the most lucrative market on the planet for hoing—America. Under the VAWA waiver, she was pretty much assured a green card by claiming I abused the “innocent” slut, since the INS VAWA Unit in Vermont, which makes those decisions, was run and trained by Feminazis and the law written by the Feminazis prevented the Unit from relying solely on information provided by me.

So why the marriage? It couldn't be for love, she loved only herself, so it had to be for money, but was it because the groom was rich or she wanted to make sure she would stay in

America hoing? There was no way for me to find out who the groom was, since marriage records are kept confidential in New York. And, there was no way to find out what the VAWA Unit was doing or not doing because I was the former husband and the one accused of “battery,” “extreme cruelty” or an “overall pattern of violence.”

During the Memorial Day weekend, Mark called and said he and Ron, one of the black belts who trained with Mark and who cracked my ribs now and then in class, were going to a cookout uptown.

“Free food! I’m in. What should I bring?”

“Just something to drink,” Mark said.

“So how do I get there?”

Ron gave me subway instructions and the street address that was between Eight and Seventh Avenue. Hopping an IND train going north, I exited by Morningside Park and walked east. Found a bodega, bought some Smirnoff Ice and continued walking east looking for Eighth Avenue. My memory told me Eighth Ave was closer to the park, but it had been decades since I last spent any time uptown.

Back in those days, I was working undercover on a couple of stories for WNEW TV News. One was about how Percy Sutton, then the Manhattan Borough President, and his buddies were using their political clout to land State contracts for the development of the State Office Building on 125<sup>th</sup> Street along with renovating some properties they discreetly owned. Naturally, none of these guys had any construction or urban development experience, and their front company that applied for the State contracts was nothing but a shell. The story delayed for a few years their scheme, but they eventually got what they wanted.

The other story had me driving around uptown and the south Bronx carrying a wire and posing as a salesman for a medical laboratory. Medicaid and methadone clinic managers were extorting cash kickbacks from medical laboratories, which did the testing required under State law on the clinics' customers. The laboratories then passed the increased cost of doing business, the bribes, along to the State—read taxpayers. We caught a couple of clinic managers on audiotape demanding kickbacks and some ineffective reforms were made. All in all, this do-gooder stuff is just a waste of time—it never lasts, knocks off a couple of crooks but has little systemic effect.

My search for the cookout continued east looking for Eight Avenue, where was Davy Crockett when I needed him. It must be around her somewhere, I kept thinking. One street sign read, "Frederick Douglas Blvd." Okay, I knew who he was but didn't remember any avenue named after him. Next block was "Adam Clayton Powell Blvd." Which one, I asked myself: Junior or the III. The III had helped with the story on Sutton thanks to an introduction by State Senator Sidney von Luther for whom I had once worked and who had come up with the tips on both the State Office Building and Medicaid stories. Junior of course was the former Congressman who spent much of his time on the island of Bimini. It was a nice day, so I kept walking east looking at the large brownstones and enjoying the quiet, very peaceful up here. A man sitting on a stoop could see I was lost and asked me where I was going.

"Between Eighth and Seventh avenues," I answered.

"They're not called that anymore. They changed the names years back."

"Good grief! So what are they now?"

"Seventh is that one you just crossed, and Eighth the next one toward the park."

“Thanks,” and I headed in that direction. Just then Ron called me on my mobile to tell me he was standing outside the address. I spotted him right away.

The cookout was in the backyard of a spacious, nicely decorated brownstone. I hadn't seen such a classy interior since I crashed a party at Senator Kennedy's suburban Washington, D.C. home marking the end of his 1980 run for the Presidency. Okay, it wasn't exactly a crash. One of Kennedy's campaign press aids invited me, but they still got upset about having a guy working for the media in their mist—too bad, I wasn't leaving. Instead, I headed over to the only hot looking chick in the place with the obvious line given the cast on her leg. “So what happened?” Her reply didn't register as I gazed at the bare part of her thigh just above the cast—yummy. Can't recall whether I signed the leg or not but tend to think I did just to get a closer view of that young thigh. In later years, she became the divorced wife of a governor of California. Something about him playing around with a maid.

The cookout had two tables, and Ron introduced me to everybody. At one table were his long-time buddies going back fifteen or more years to high school and Mark, and at the other were the parents of one of Ron's friends, they owned the brownstone, and two others from my generation but all beyond my age of emotional maturity. Most of the time, I sat with Ron and his buddies and proceeded to laugh for the next two to three hours straight. These guys worked like multiple tag teams of comedy while lounging around one of those patio tables with the big umbrella, with coolers of beer, mainly Corona, and now some Smirnoff Ice, strategically planted, so no one had to move unless they wanted food off the grill. They told stories about their passed adventures, ad-libbed and played jokes on each other. I laughed and laughed and once in a while contributed some humor. The best summer holiday of any I ever had. These guys would be great to get into trouble with and the adults from my era to get us out.

## Hot Fun in the Summertime

The Second Circuit's Civil Appeals Management Office scheduled a Pre-Argument Conference for the summer solstice, June 21, 2005. When I arrived, I was surprised to see most of the opposing attorneys, who always showed at the last minute, already present and engaged in conversation that suddenly ceased as soon as I entered the room. Probably planning some deviousness.

We met with a staff counsel for the Court, an arrogant androgyny. What do you expect for a federal bureaucracy? They aren't allowed to higher men.

"Is everyone here?" the staff counsel asked.

"Counsel for the Bank of Cyprus is missing," answered one of the defense attorneys.

That surprised me because next to Mundy's lawyers, Claugus was the most vitriolic and dissembling of all the defense attorneys, as though he took the litigation personal.

The staff counsel remarked, "We're not going to wait, so one of you apprise him of what went on." The staff counsel then started with a question that had been bothering me for a while. When Castel made his decision, there were over 50 defendants in the case but only 13, including the two Vasilyevas, had made any type of request to throw my case out. All the others just ignored it.

"There's a possible ambiguity in the District Court's decision," he said. "The decision doesn't say whether the case is dismissed in its entirety with respect to all the defendants or just those who moved for dismissal. That's probably because Judge Castel just came on the bench. What can we expect from new judges?"

That and worst I wanted to say, but instead chimed in that the decision apparently left open whether Castel did dismiss the case against all the defendants.



“ I’d like the plaintiff to send a letter to Judge Castel seeking clarification as to whether he meant to dismiss the case for all the defendants or not. And copy the letter and Judge Castel’s response to me and all the attorneys in this case.”

“Okay,” I replied, and made a request about the Joint Appendix.

The Second Circuit requires that only one appendix, called the Joint Appendix, accompany the briefs for both sides, and it should contain only relevant documents needed for the panel of three judges to reach a decision. On the appeal of a district court dismissal, as in my case, the Joint Appendix would include the Complaint, Supplemental Complaint, any opinions or orders issued by the District Court, a few procedural papers and other documents agreed to by both sides. The Court’s rules prohibited including memoranda of law filed in the District Court unless staff counsel and the parties agree.

The Second Circuit receives all the documents filed in the district court but doesn’t want its judges wasting their time thumbing through the entire record to understand the case. If a judge wants a document not in the Joint Appendix, he can pull it from the entire file. The plaintiff has to pay for the Joint Appendix, but when the defendants try to balloon its cost by stuffing the appendix with irrelevant documents, such as the hundreds of pages of exhibits the defendants filed in my case, the plaintiff, unless ordered by the Court, can refuse to pay. The defendants then have to pick up the added cost of including unnecessary documents in the Joint Appendix. This keeps the opponents of the person appealing from making the appeal so expensive that the appellant gives up.

My request was to reproduce a handful of paragraphs from my law memorandum to show the Second Circuit that I had actually made certain statements and requests to the District Court. The staff counsel and the opposing attorneys agreed given the small amount of material

involved. Then it was the defense attorneys turn to bring up their requests for inclusions in the Joint Appendix that they had sent me just a week before the conference. Nothing, only silence, and my sensors went to red alert. Their silence made no sense. They had requested to include over 190 pages of extraneous documents, including 54 pages that had been thrown out by the District Court as irrelevant. Something was up.

“Have there been any settlement discussions?” the staff counsel asked.

“No,” I replied and motioned to my opponents. One of them said no, and the staff counsel quickly realized there would be none. He then said, “Over turning a district court dismissal is a difficult task.”

What’s that suppose to mean, I thought. Should I give up right now—never!

We touched on the issues I intended to raise and worked out the briefing schedule with my brief due August 11<sup>th</sup> and the defendants’ papers in September unless they wanted an extra month, which they ultimately did.

Later that day, I sent the requested letter to Judge Castel:

“Dear Judge Castel:

An issue has arisen in the Second Circuit concerning your dismissal with prejudice of this case. Your Memorandum and Order of September 28, 2004 does not make clear whether the action was dismissed for only the defendants who moved under Rule 12(b)(6) or was also dismissed for the defendants who did not make a 12(b)(6) motion or did not appear.

Would you please clarify the extent of your dismissal now that the issue of finality has been raised in the Second Circuit and the case is currently scheduled for briefing?”

The letter also reminded the Judge of my request from the previous year for reimbursement from the defendants for the costs of paying a process server to formally serve the Complaint by hand because they had refused to accept it by mail. Castel responded somewhat indignantly and unhelpfully, “Page 2 of the Memorandum and Order of September 28, 2004

makes plain that ‘... plaintiff’s Complaint is dismissed with prejudice.’” Dismissed with prejudice means I don’t get a chance to amend my Complaint and try again. It has nothing to do with whether the case is dismissed with respect to all the defendants, including those who did not move for dismissal. The staff counsel was right about the problems with new judges. While the words told me nothing, the level of his indignation said get lost and don’t bother me about this anymore. As for my request for costs in using a process server, it was put off until after the Second Circuit made its decision because of a legal technicality.

Most of the summer, I spent in the law library working on my brief that repeated most of my criticisms of Castel’s decision. One new argument about proximate cause was added, which came from an opinion by Justice Clarence Thomas. The Second Circuit would never understand it, but the Supreme Court would, if I got there. Also included was an estimate of the Commie Ho’s tax-free earnings since coming to America, over \$750 grand in six years, to bring home the motivation behind the Russian mob’s RICO violations for scheming to transplant Russian sluts to the U.S., and I called Judge Castel a liar one and a half times:

“The District Court lied when it stated, “Plaintiff made no request to file an amended Complaint in the event the motions to dismiss were granted,” Order 16-2. Plaintiff’s Memorandum in Opposition p. 41-2, states, “If this Court dismisses the Complaint or part of it under Rule 12(b)(6), then the plaintiff requests leave to amend.” Plaintiff also made similar requests with respect to specific issues throughout his Memorandum in Opposition pp. 49-1, 70-2, 76-2, 119-3.”

That’s one time.

“The District Court claims RICO violations occurring before August 2000 “are not alleged to have caused plaintiff injury,” Order at 11-2, 12-1, but the Court lies (perhaps unknowingly).”

That’s one-half time.

Malicious no, accurate yes, but why do it, since the defense attorneys will jump all over me for it. They’ll self-righteously rant how dare I call a member of the justice system a liar, and

then go about doing their mercenary best to pervert that system and prevent justice with their own falsehoods. The reason was to see whether the Second Circuit bothered reading my brief with the diligence that most Americans believe judges use. If the judges read those statements with any amount of awareness, it will cause them to lambaste me during oral argument. If they don't, they wouldn't.

My entire brief boiled down to this: "Where defendants fraudulently induce a plaintiff to take actions and make expenditures, the financial injury is compensable under civil RICO. *Standardbred Owners Ass'n v. Roosevelt Raceway*, 985 F.2d 102, 104-05 (2<sup>nd</sup> Cir. 1993)."

Before filing my brief in August, a problem came up with the Clerk's Office—naturally. Back in February, when the case was still in the "*Pro Se*" section, the Clerk had made some mistakes in listing all the plaintiffs and defendants, so I submitted the corrections as required by the Court's rules. The list of all the plaintiffs and defendants, known as the "full caption," is required on the cover of certain documents, such as the briefs, or the Court wouldn't accept them. A week before filing my brief, the Clerk's Office had still not made the corrections, so I needed to get the Clerk's Office to do its job.

My case was now in the "Counseled" cases section after its transfer from "*Pro Se*." The employee assigned as gatekeeper and who entered papers on the Court's docket in my case was Shatisa Gibbs, young, cute, and I might have pursued her had I met her at a club.

In a telephone call, I told Gibbs that the full caption had not been corrected.

"It's not our section's responsibility to correct the caption. *Pro Se* should have done that before they transferred the case."

The old bureaucratic buck-passing routine, but I was cool.

"So does it go back to *Pro Se* for them to do now what they should have but never did?"

“No, I’ll correct it.”

“Thanks,” I said and dropped off the revised caption. She was good to her word for which I sent her a “Thank You” card after filing my brief.

A couple of weeks later, Mark had a birthday party at the Amsterdam Café across from Columbia University. At the party, I met this bond trader, an arrogant thirty-something Asian guy straight out of *The Bonfire of the Vanities*. Such yuppies don’t bother me, since I was one once, working at the law firm mentioned in Thomas Wolfe’s critique on the presumptuousness of greed in the 1980s. Such hubris still strutted the avenues and bars of Manhattan twenty-years later. After drinking a few rounds of shots, the bond trader suggested hitting a bar in the meat packing district—the then and still current trendy scene for feeling superior to others where inflated egos prowl for recognition in a part of town known for death, stench and now, the flies of Argos. We jumped into a cab and exited on 14<sup>th</sup> Street by the docks in front of the Gaslight Bar. The place was packed with yuppies, conceit and hos, but would we find Ingrid Bergman inside? No, although I spotted a couple of black chicks at the bar, good looking and tall, at least compared to the bond trader.

Going up to the black chick standing, the other was sitting on a barstool, I said something inconsequential—can never remember my opening lines, and added, “My buddy’s a rich bond trader.” So I’m obnoxious, so what, and I was grinning because I knew what her reaction would be.

“Is he buying drinks?” she asked shifting her body closer to me with intense attention.

“Always!” I replied.

She pushed in right next to him at the crowded bar and turned on her brights. He was a goner. My attention shifted to the other chick sitting on the stool, but she was too drunk to

articulate a complete sentence. Instead, she started the physical pawing interspersed with feeble female slaps to my chest, bemoaning in broken phrases the misery of her existence for which, as do all broads, she blamed the nearest man, which was me at that point in time. I'd seen this feminine self-pity all too often before and wasn't buying. It was her life, not mine. To get rid of her, I suggested she take a cab home to which she surprisingly agreed. Usually, they refuse and want to argue. Maybe she thought I was paying her fare home—fat chance! I helped her outside. The Boy Scout is tough to die, but soon there will be no more of them thanks to the Feminazis. At the curb, she decided to take a seat. No, I wasn't joining her. The last time I sat on a curb listening to some stupid broad so that I could get into her pants was back in my hippie days. Since then, I had grown up, and there were plenty of girls back in the bar that I wanted to hustle. Finally, she got up, with a little help from the Boy Scout left in me. I hailed a cab, opened the door, she poured herself in, told me where she lived, I told the cabbie and closed the door—goodbye problem.

Back inside, I hit on some white chick or maybe Latina, but she wasn't so drunk she couldn't talk, got her email, and then the bond trader came up to me all excited about the chick he'd been buying drinks for.

“Roy, she keeps grabbing me, she keeps grabbing me! Where do you know her from?” He mistakenly thought the black chick was a longtime acquaintance of mine whom I sent over to show him a good time. Sure I did send her over, but had never seen her before I walked into that bar.

Laughing to myself, I said, “Good, she must like you (meaning his money) get her number.”

He went back, played around with her for a while and then we left. All this yuppie bond trader could talk about as we crossed the street for a bite to eat was how this chick kept fondling him. For him and most other egotistical yuppies, such occurrences are big-time, which only illustrates the phoniness of their conceit.

He then says to me, “I run with a fast crowd, if you want to hang out call me,” and gives me his business card. Stifling a laugh, I thought if his crowd is as fast as him, I don’t think I could walk that slowly. Never saw him again after that night.

After Labor Day, Mark and I met one Friday night at the bar Cancun. A name that once elicited visions of the Commie Ho sexually entertaining her customers in the resort town of Mexico, but now only reminded me of the dizzy blonde, Kelsey, whom I had met in the Cincinnati airport in 2003 when returning home from my encounter with the Midwestern G-Men. Today, the “G” means “Girlie,” since these government agents not only take sensitivity training sessions so as to act more like girls than men but also carry out the bidding of Feminazis to violate the rights of men. No wonder the F.B.I. can’t stop terrorists when they know they’re coming, however, these G-Men always get their paid vacations, early retirements with inflated pensions and parking spaces.

My pal Alan ran into a G-Man, or more accurately G-Shemale, who kept parking her car in a “No Standing At Anytime” zone on his street in the Upper Westside of Manhattan. The reason for the “No Standing” zone was so that fire engines could turn the corner on the narrow street to get to a possible fire in time. Did this Federal Bimbo of Indolence care—no. Alan told her one day that she shouldn’t park there. She just flashed her badge, which in her twisted thinking gave her the right to endanger citizens because the “No Standing” zone provided her a convenient parking place. Broads have always thought they were princesses, better than

everyone else and not subject to the rules of law or civilized behavior, but now that the Feminazis have stolen positions of authority, females are creating dangers for those they are suppose to serve, which is an oxymoron, since broads only serve themselves.

Walking into Cancun, I looked around on the odd chance that I might spot Kelsey. She had said she often hung out there, but all the times I was there, she wasn't. By now she was probably married and intensely unhappy.

“So who are these babes we're meeting hear?” I asked Mark.

“One is a girl I've know since school days and the other is her friend—both Latina and both married.”

We laughed.

I said, “Likely told their husbands they were just going out with one of their girl friends.”

“Don't girls always?”

“Absolutely, and then rationalize their cheating. Demons of self-justification made of snakes, tales and everything fake.”

“Easy, we're here to have fun.”

“I know, just trying out a new attack line that's a take off on sugar and spice.”

Both of the girls were in their early thirties, a little old for me, but every time I turned around another drink appeared. Couldn't figure out where the drinks were coming from because I had not brought that much money and neither had Mark. We left Cancun, bounced in and quickly out of a typical boring yuppie New York City bar, and landed at Iguana, a restaurant with a dance floor in the basement. Downstairs, I couldn't see a thing. Didn't this club pay its electric bills? They could have at least provided infrared goggles for spotting the warm bodies. No matter, we had two hot Latinas with us and an evening of fun. Dancing, drinking and



fondling a girl's body in the dark are second nature for a man. His first is individual liberty; for without it, he serves others rather than his destiny.

### Just One Look

On October 13<sup>th</sup>, I received the defendants' opposition briefs. It wasn't a Friday, but did the number bode ill for me? By this stage of the Furies curse on my life, I didn't care.

Schopenhauer philosophized that every man could see a theme running through his life when looking back from near its end, I finally saw mine: I try to fight everyone who violates my rights; I don't often win, in fact I usually lose, but I still fight, and wasn't about to change now, no matter what the Matrix was telling me. November 9<sup>th</sup> was the deadline to file my reply.

One quick read of the defendants' briefs showed that the defense lawyers—Dubin for Mundy, Rudofsky for Flash Dancers and Sachs for the Ho—were up to their same old trick of character assassination, or what the legal profession, the second oldest, refers to as *ad hominem*s.

*Blacks' Law Dictionary* defines *ad hominem* as “appealing to personal prejudices rather than to reason; attacking an opponent's character rather than his assertions.” Sounded familiar; it's the crux of virtually all attacks by the Feminazis, their sycophants and mercenary lawyers. Dubin and Rudofsky also added a few new cheats that along with the *ad hominem*s violated the Federal Rules of Appellate Procedure, the Second Circuit's Local Rules or both. Detective Henning's lawyers from the City avoided the name-calling but joined in the other procedural breaches. So I made a motion to require these four lawyers to redo their briefs without the parts that violated the rules.

Dubin, true to form, resorted to personal attacks the most. If this were the age of Aaron Burr, he wouldn't have lived this long. The Second Circuit's Local Rule § 28 requires that briefs must be free from scandalous matter, which includes personal attacks on opponents. Dubin's

brief of *ad hominem*s called me delusional, an extortionist, a harasser of the Ho and Mundy, a liar, an intimidator, unethical, lacking in common decency, abusive and vexatious.

Dubin packed most of his name-calling into the “Statement of the Case” section of his brief. Under the Federal Rules of Appellate Procedure, which governs all the U.S. Courts of Appeals, a brief is required to contain certain sections that do specific things. The “Statement of the Case” part is supposed to tell the Appeals Court the type of case, the result in the District Court and any procedural history, such as motions that were made. Dubin, however, used that section to replay his strategy of character assassination by personally maligning me with lies and false innuendos in an attempt to shut down the argument and marginalize me so as to avoid a decision on the merits. In doing that he violated Fed. R. App. P. § 28(a)(6). Dubin defended his conduct with the rationale that if the “Statement of the Case” contained the elements required by the rules, it could also be packed with vitriolic vituperative assaults on the opposing party. Under Dubin’s Russian type logic, because the rule commands, “thou shall” rather than “thou shall not,” he could include anything he wanted. Even former President Clinton would likely construe the rule that way.

Flash Dancers’ Rudofsky basically characterized me as delusion while the Commie Ho’s lawyer Sachs submitted a two page brief with only one derogatory clause: “the flights of fancy in Hollander’s pleadings, the florid and offensive language in his brief, and the continuous vilification of Shipilina.” Clearly the Ho didn’t want to pay him any more money or sexual favors to spend the time drawing up a longer brief with a lengthier litany of opprobrious remarks.

Dubin also brewed into another section of his brief under the misnomer “Facts” the same false or half-truth counterclaims and allegations he made in the District Court that were

irrelevant there as they are on appeal. The Second Circuit and the District Court during the first stage of any case are required to consider only the plaintiff's pleadings, my Complaint and Supplemental Complaint, as true, not the defendants' opinions nor their self-serving protestations or duplicitous counterclaims and allegations. Dubin included lots of irrelevant material for two reasons: one, the chance that it would sway the Second Circuit to uphold Castel's decision—after all, it worked in obtaining a dismissal in the District Court, and two, to trick me into using up the limited space in my reply brief to counter his disinformation, which would distract the judges from the legal issues as did Dubin's opposition brief.

Flash Dancers' brief also threw in lots of irrelevant and disingenuous material to spin reality. For example, their attorney Rudofsky actually referred to stripping as "performing" or "dancing" and claimed Flash Dancers, that highly profitable bazaar of naked bodies, a law-abiding and squeaky-clean operation. Filth was more like it. Not that I have anything against dirty girls, such sluts can be fun, but don't try to convince me that they and they're pimps are doing heaven's work.

Rudofsky used audacity to defend his violation of the rules: He criticized me for making the motion to delete parts of his brief, even though that's one of the purposes motions serve in the Second Circuit. Rudofsky argued the issues raised by my motion should have been addressed in my reply brief, which only confirmed the defense's strategy to trick me into loading up my reply brief with the distractions of their procedural violations.

Dubin and Rudofsky even resorted to a real sophomoric tactic in their briefs by citing to a total of 17 cases without including the specific page in the case to pinpoint the support for the position they claimed. This didn't violate any court rules, but it did breach the system of referring to cases that lawyers everywhere in every court in the U.S. use. Why'd they do it? To

get away with lying about what the law says. They knew the Second Circuit was not going to track down the exact page, so the clerk reading their briefs filled with *ad hominem*s might think, gee whiz these defense attorneys must be right about the law because this plaintiff isn't politically correct.

But of all the tactics that Dubin, Rudofsky and the City's attorneys for Detective Henning used to exploit bureaucratic sloth, the most glaring violation of the rules, and the one that my intuition sent me to red alert during the Pre-Argument Conference, was their citing to documents not in the Joint Appendix. Fed. R. App. P. § 30(a) & (b), Local Rule § 11(e) and the Second Circuit's on-line instructions for appeals require all parties to reproduce in a joint appendix documents to which they wish to direct the Court's attention. That means if a party cites to a document as supporting a statement made in his brief, the party must include the document in the joint appendix. Dubin, Rudofsky and the City didn't do that because they wanted the Second Circuit to believe their lies, which was more likely if they made it time consuming and inconvenient for the judges and clerks to dig up the documents from the record because then the judges and clerks probably wouldn't bother. The three attorneys even failed to include the specific page in a document that they claimed supported their statements in order to make it even more unlikely that the Court would check their veracity. My motion called them on their violations of the rules to which they responded in truly Orwellian fashion.

Every joint appendix must contain a copy of the district court's docket sheet, which is just a list of all the legal filings. Dubin actually argued that because the docket sheet in the Joint Appendix listed the legal filings that contained the documents he cited in his brief, those documents were really in the Joint Appendix. That's the same as saying all the people listed in the Manhattan telephone book are really in that book. Would the Second Circuit Court of

Appeals actually buy that? Dubin ended up referring 25 times, usually without giving a specific page, to 35 documents, totaling over 380 pages not in the Joint Appendix. Some of the documents had even been originally thrown out of the case by the District Court. Dubin also tried to justify his end-run around the Joint Appendix by accusing me of a “frivolous attempt to shield this Court from reviewing the full record.” Lawyers, like scoundrels and broads, always attack those who expose their underhanded conduct.

Rudofsky took the Russian approach to justify his using documents outside the Joint Appendix—he lied. Rudofsky claimed that I “wrongly declined” to include in the Joint Appendix “26 documents” that he and Mundy’s lawyers’ had requested. To support this lie, he used as an exhibit only the first of four letters detailing the negotiations over the Joint Appendix, which was sent before the Pre-Argument Conference in June. That letter from Mundy’s attorneys and Rudofsky actually requested 54 separate documents—not 26 as Rudofsky claimed.

At the Pre-Argument Conference, when the defense lawyers kept unusually silent about the documents they wanted in the appendix, I realized I would have to create a record to keep them from pulling a fast one. After the Conference, I sent a letter asking whether they had finalized the documents they wanted, but they never answered that question, hoping I’d let it ride so that later they could claim I never denied their request for so many documents. To head them off at the pass, I sent another letter telling them I wasn’t going to include the unnecessary documents they wanted. Under Fed. R. App. P. § 30(b)(2), they could still have those documents included in the Joint Appendix, but they would have to pay for them. They didn’t and once again failed to respond, but it didn’t matter, since I now had a record of my refusing their request.

Rudofsky also excused the defense's use of documents not in the Joint Appendix by saying Fed. R. App. P. §30(a)(2) states: "Parts of the record may be relied on by the court or the parties even though not included in the appendix." True, but the purpose of that rule is to allow the Court leeway to check the full record if it thinks it's necessary. The rule does not give Dubin and Rudofsky an excuse to ignore their obligations under the Court's procedures or to load up the Court with hundreds of pages of irrelevant documents in order to prevent it from taking the time to expose their lies and prevarications.

The defense attorneys disinformation that they falsely claimed was supported by hundreds of pages of extraneous documents to which they made no specific page cites, their failure to cite to the exact page of some legal cases and the character assassination all played together to exploit bureaucratic sloth. Think about how these guys would have operated in The Third Reich or the Soviet Union. First they'd label me as an enemy of "right-thinking" people in those particular societies—Nazis or Commies. Then they'd throw in a mass of documents and cases to which they fail to give specific page cites knowing that the bureaucrats are too lazy to go through all the material to confirm or contradict their statements. The bureaucrats in those societies, ever obedient to their prime directive to avoid work, would consciously or subconsciously rationalize that since I didn't conform to Nazi or Commie conventions and ideology, the defense attorneys were right about what all the documents and cases said. The bureaucrats rule in the defendants' favor and off I go to a concentration camp. In feminarchy America, it's off I go to the poorhouse and social ostracism—no gulag, yet.

Dubin, Rudofsky, the City and Sachs tried to game the system by picking which rules they would follow and which ones they would ignore, it not only wasted everybody's time, but if successful, would make suspect the system of justice in the Second Circuit.

The return date of my motion was set at November 8<sup>th</sup>, which meant that by the following Monday, the 14<sup>th</sup>, the Court should make its decision on whether to require those attorneys to delete the material that violated the rules.

During the back and forth of papers on my motion, the defendants even tried to finesse the Second Circuit into denying me oral argument. Dubin's boss sent a letter to the Court that "In light of the extensive record before this Court, the number of parties that would have to appear and the amount of time having been devoted to defend the plaintiff's claims, it is respectfully submitted that a further appearance before this Court is unnecessary." That I didn't expect and couldn't figure out why they were bothering. If the defendants didn't want their attorneys to put in the time necessary to prepare for an oral argument, they could simply waive it and save the lawyers' fees. But to try to have the Court deny oral argument for me wouldn't happen. The rules allow any three-judge panel to dispense with all oral arguments in certain specific situations, none of which applied here. Also, the Second Circuit generally follows the principle of allowing oral argument for any party that wants it. So why bother with the request to keep me from making an oral argument? Perhaps they just wanted to increase the pressure by eating up my time in opposing their request, since during this period, in addition to making the motion to delete parts of their briefs, I was also working on my reply brief.

As busy as I was in October and early November 2005, I still went clubbing at least one night on the weekend to keep my sanity in this insane society of political correctionalism. One of the guys in my salsa class, a member of the Freemasons, started managing Club Havana in the Bronx. He and his wife, also a salsa student, invited the class to the Club for a fundraiser to help the victims of Hurricane Katrina and its accomplices the Three Stooges: Larry - Governor

Blanco; Moe - President Bush; and Curly - Mayor Nagin. Sounded fine to me, not because of the do-gooder purpose, but because there would be lots of south of the border chicks.

My new salsa instructor called me Saturday night to say he and some of his students were driving to Club Havana from the upper Westside of Manhattan. Since I lived on the eastside further down, it made sense for me to meet them at the Club, and for some reason, I was looking forward to a lonely, solitary ride on the Number 6 train to the northern reaches of the Bronx. The subway took about an hour, nice and peaceful with few passengers. At my stop, while walking down the stairs from the elevated station to the street, the place became vaguely familiar. Stopping to look around for a clue as to why, the memory from my unconsciousness nagged my waking mind until the answer surfaced.

Over three decades earlier when I worked in the libraries at Columbia University, I dated a co-worker who prior to our playing around used to spit in anger every time she passed a white guy, which made me think she must have run out of saliva frequently. She was also about to join Farrakhan's Nation of Islam, which sounded cool to me. I always liked watching Farrakhan's speeches on cable television. This guy had guts and honor, unlike so many others of various hues in America who were nothing more than pimps and sellouts. Maybe she would become one of those hot chicks dressed in white that guarded Farrakhan during his speeches, but for the time being, this good-looking babe in her Afro was with me. My hair was relatively long then, so I often freaked her out by running her hand through it, which had an alien texture to her. When we started going out together, even riding the bus in Manhattan—not Mississippi in the 1870s, but New York City in the 1970s—it put us through an evil eye gauntlet from all the bigots. It didn't matter the neighborhood, both ends of the color spectrum and everyone in the middle dissed us. So we spent time by ourselves at her place in the Bronx.



During our short romance, I helped instigate and lead a workers' strike against Columbia University. During contract negotiations, our union, Local 1199, had cut a secret deal with Columbia in which the union bosses agreed to keep wages low and prevent a strike in return for Columbia investing in the union's pension fund. When we learned about the conspiracy, we struck, took over a building in the tradition of 1968, and won, a little bit. Columbia's President "Dollar" Bill McGill seethed with anger over our temerity and the hit to his budget while the union maneuvered with my boss in the library to terminate my employment. So what, I thought the strike a small victory for justice and felt good about my part in it, but my co-worker girlfriend said I acted like a fool by making speeches and leading demonstrations against Columbia. So much for the male illusion of impressing girls with victories over injustice and arrogance.

My co-worker was first and foremost a female, and all females want a man to serve them, to sacrifice doing what is important for him in order to provide an environment in which he abides by their lunatic rules that change with the erratic bubbling of those runaway chemical reactions in their bodies. Money is the key, which is why girls are so cheap unless a guy is paying. For guys, money is great too, but sometimes a guy gets pretty sore and money doesn't matter anymore. Back then, I was sore at Columbia and the union for violating people's rights, as I was at the RICO defendants in this new millennium when I walked out of that subway station. Now, however, I was wiser, knew girls had nothing of value to say to me other than "yes" or "no," and that since 1750, when the world's population reached one billion, the only value girls had was partying.

Today, the Feminazi media and female pandering politicians always shout about pollution, global warming, depletion of resources, illegal immigration, war and the violation of

civil rights—but these are just symptoms. The root-cause is overpopulation—too many broads having too many babies. Females should choose to exercise some control over their bodies for the good of future populations, but that will never happen because most broads only care about themselves, which means having children, not creating a valuable life, but to acquire another asset. To most girls, kids are just capital that can be cashed in when the mothers are running low on the funds they bamboozled, or more accurately bam-boob-zled, from men, or when these sanctimonious moms need another sucker because the members of the “fairer sex” finally put their husbands in the grave. Men don’t live as long as females because over the passed hundred years medical resources have concentrated on extending the lives of broads, so when a girl’s main sucker is dead, there’s no better economic substitute than children, who are often easier to manipulate.

Some guys do want children, but usually it’s the girl talking the guy into it. He goes along for her sake not realizing the burden of providing and protecting will fall the hardest on him. Sure, the Feminazis will argue that’s why they want men’s jobs: to help support the family. If that were true, then why do these ardent Feminazis, once they’re married to a successful guy, want to leave work in order to raise the children? The key reason Feminazis want a man’s job is to increase their chances of meeting a guy with money. Why do you think all these hos go to business, law and medical schools—to find an up and coming prospect, or when in the work force, one that’s already made it. They use Feminazi propaganda and intimidation to gain admission to professional schools or land a job with a high paying company, where they can find a sucker, get knocked-up and leave the work force. Their scheme not only wastes the resources used to train them but also steals those resources from some man who would have used the acquired skills in a long and productive career. It’s the same old story of

broads bam-boob-zling men out of money, which in feminarthy America also means jobs, and irresponsibly pushing to have children.

Even the evils caused by overpopulation are more exacerbated by girls than guys. For example, most of the stores on Fifth Avenue and lower Broadway cater to females because the average girl consumes more fashion goods than the average guy. For broads, fashion changes yearly with each season, so to dress themselves as fashionable sex objects requires girls to buy the latest in cloths, shoes, handbags and whatever. But next year, the latest is dated, so out it goes. The same repeats every year to which is added the tons of makeup washed down the drain at the end of every day. Girls end up causing not only more pollution but also a greater depletion of resources in order to keep themselves looking fashionable. Since a chief cause of war is when one country tries to steal another country's resources, females are major contributors in that deadliest of events for men. Looks like broads play a bigger role in the evils plaguing the earth then they let on.

Finished with my reminiscing, I turned north towards Club Havana. Eleven at night and the streets up here were full of small groups of people hanging out. Didn't they have some place to go? Club Havana was in the basement of a building and fairly large. Inside, I headed to the bar but was intercepted.

"Would you like a drink?" asked this delicious, young Latina babe holding a tray of shots.

"How much?"

"It's free! They're made of Absolut Vodka," she said with a Spanish accent.

Hmmm, my favorite kind of vodka and kind of girl. "Are you sure it's free?" I asked, never believing a girl gave away anything for nothing.

“Yes, it’s my job to give away these drinks.”

“Really?”

“Yes, believe me.”

I’ve heard that before, but said, “Okay.” I took a shot, rather good. She started to leave, not so fast I thought. “Here’s a tip.”

“You don’t have to do that.”

“Quid pro quo.” I always try to let these pretty young things know I’m a lawyer. To them it means Benjamin Franklin, as in currency. I added, “You have to make a living don’t you?”

“Yes, thank you.”

She left to ply her wares elsewhere. Looking around for members from my salsa class, I couldn’t find them, so I entertained myself by hitting on a couple of babes and then the Absolut girl was back with another drink. I imbibed and tipped some more.

“So where are you from?”

“I come from Columbia and here for six months with a relative.”

And off we embarked on a conversation. She was 22, lived in Queens and worked promoting Absolut Vodka in clubs, usually Wednesday through Saturday. What else she did for money, she didn’t say. I asked her to dance, but she said she couldn’t while working, and off she went on her rounds.

Trying to estimate how many offers she received each night of work and to annualize it, I gave up having left my calculator home. My mobile didn’t have one, at least I thought it didn’t, maybe it did, but I’d never know. The plethora of services from modern-day electronics short-circuits my memory. As long as my mobile rings, which it did just then, that’s all I need. Aki, a

Japanese girl from my salsa class, called to say she and the others wouldn't make it to Club Havana because they decided to go to a Dominican club on 167<sup>th</sup> Street and Amsterdam Avenue that had strippers.

“I didn't know you liked female strippers Aki?”

“I don't,” she emphatically said, “but they play great salsa there. The guys want to go, so I don't mind. I'll just dance.”

As I hung up, the Absolut girl came back to offer me an Absolut t-shirt and a dance. I accepted both. Guess the tipping and lawyering worked.

Dancing salsa is not my strong point, and sometimes I end up with a girl who can dance but emphasizes different beats than what I'm familiar with. The Absolut girl could dance, but she moved on different beats, so the dance started badly. Then I remembered a trick my salsa instructor told me: whenever he had difficulty with a girl's style and liked her body, he just held her close—years ago it was called the grind. So I held her close barely feeling the thin dress between us and ground against her stomach and firm young thighs that wielded a truly dangerous power. Once again, I was on the ropes. Her face looked young and innocent, but her body told a different story. She knew how to use sex to get what she wanted. So do the Feminazis, but they use it as an accusation rather than a lure. But whether with the normal girl or Feminazis, for females, it's always about sex.

Two allegories will demonstrate the point:

A girl rips open her blouse, juts out her bare balloons and says to a guy, “You don't get to touch these unless you give me a car!”

Another girl rips open her blouse to show her naked breasts and says, “Talk dirty to me, touch me!” So the typical guy does, and then the girl says, “Give me a car or I’ll sue you for sexual harassment and offensive remarks.”

In the first case its solicitation, in the second extortion, but either way the broad gets the car because of T & A power.

After my dance with the Absolut girl, she handed me some words that were nice to listen to and gave me her telephone number. Watching her walk back to work, I thought that all the academic hubbub over the purpose of females wasn’t nuclear physics. Just look at what a girl’s body is built for. No sense using a car to sail the seas, a plane to drive the highways, a boat to fly the skies or a girl for anything but partying.

Later on, we flirted some more, and I caught the Number 6 local back to Manhattan at three in the morning. Early in the week, I called her, left a message, she called back and we set a date for the Copa. She ended up canceling, saying a job came up in a club in Westchester County. Maybe yes, maybe no, maybe rain, maybe snow. Perhaps, I should have tried one more time, but her work schedule just didn’t jive with mine. She wouldn’t be lonely, and a month later, I saw her at LQ with some Latin guy. Good for her, if he was rich.

#### I like You (A Lot)

In my Reply Brief to the defense attorneys’ opposition briefs, I mainly countered their legal arguments and interpretations rather than bogging down my Reply refuting their false allegations of fact for which they referred to the extraneous documents never included in the Joint Appendix. Their factual lies and deceptions didn’t go unchallenged; rather I relegated my exposure of their mendacity to a footnote at the end. Sure the facts weren’t relevant on a Rule 12(b)(6) motion to dismiss, but in case the Court wanted the truth, it was there in the footnote.

The defense attorneys again tried to rewrite my Complaint to support their legal arguments. They claimed my Complaint did not state that I had suffered injury to my business or financial interests but only personal harm, such as emotional distress. Under civil RICO, a plaintiff cannot recover for personal injuries including stress, broken legs or even death. The defense attorneys knew, but tried to hide, that the personal injuries stated in my Complaint resulted from the non-RICO causes of action that were also brought against the defendants. The defense was trying to deceive the Court by calling all the injuries personal, which they weren't and the Complaint didn't say they were. The defense lawyers also tried to use cases that didn't apply to my situation to argue the harm caused me was speculative. But their cases all concerned damages that might occur in the future. The harm to my business and financial interests had already happened.

On the proximate cause issue, the defense said I was not the specific target of any of the RICO acts nor did the defendants specifically intend any of the harm that befell me. Civil RICO does not require specifically intended targets or harm. If it did, there could be the absurd result that one could be liable under RICO for destroying a shop only if one aimed a bomb at it, but not if one aimed at the shop's key executives, missed and hit the shop by accident destroying it, or if one aimed at the key executives who happened to be in the shop at the time.

Besides, if I wasn't a target of the defendants' intended harm then who'd they trick into sponsoring and paying for the Commie Ho's fraudulently obtained immigration visa, who did they con into paying for her flight to America, who were they attempting to coerce into lying to the INS that included bringing a fraudulent restraining order against, whose witnesses did they intimidate into not providing information to the New York State court, who'd they cost thousands of dollars to defend against a false arrest and for whom did they increase the expenses

of the RICO action by attempting to obstruct it? All that was aimed at me and intended to make justice too costly to pursue and thereby protect the defendants.

The defense attorneys even tried to cover up some of the dumber errors of the District Court. For example, Dubin claimed the District Court's Maginot Line irrelevant and even argued that my actions on and after August 2000 caused the injuries I suffered before that date. Guess he had been reading too much Lewis Carroll where cause and effect are reversed.

The defense attorneys also raised a few issues not addressed by the District Court and misstated the law, as usual, even when the Second Circuit and Supreme Court had explicitly rejected what they were contending. Dubin claimed RICO only applied to criminal associations that would continue to exist if all their criminal activities stopped. That's not the law in the Second Circuit, but even if it was, the Russian mafia controls legitimate businesses, so if it ceased all criminal activities, it would still exist. Rudofsky argued that all RICO allegations must include greater detail than normally required in a complaint even though the Supreme Court ruled that's true for only certain RICO crimes, such as mail and wire fraud.

What a way for attorneys to practice, ignore the cases and just make up whatever serves their interests of the moment. My Reply ended with "The modus operandi of the defense attorneys is clear: misrepresent the law and the allegations, add a good measure of demeaning, denigrating, defaming, demonizing and dissing the plaintiff, and presto, their opponent has no rights left that the government will recognize. It's worked so far."

The week after filing my Reply, I hit a club called Temple on 52<sup>nd</sup> Street between Broadway and Eighth Avenue. My salsa instructor was promoting the club, so I showed early enough to get in for free—a rare occurrence for a guy in New York City. Most clubs let girls in for free up to midnight—the witching hour—or 1 AM, but guys almost always have to pay.



Clearly a violation of the civil rights of men, and if I had the time and money, I'd bring a class action suit against the clubs that do it.

Girls naturally love the preferential treatment. They steal a guy's job, get into a club for free and then expect him to buy them drinks. Chicks make up over 50% of the labor force, and control well over 50% of the nation's wealth that they earned the hard way—they married it. In virtually every urban center in America, girls in their twenties, the only ones worth partying with, make more than guys in the same age group. So who's oppressed? Females claim they are, so affirmative action should apply to them. Not unless they were raised in a trailer park, and most of them weren't, although most of them act like they were.

Temple was near empty, 10:30 PM and only a few people, not uncommon for City clubs. A buddy from my salsa class and I hung around the bar hitting on the barmaid. Then my sensors turned me around to spy two young, hot looking, tall brunettes standing patiently together waiting for the party to begin. Coming up with a line, I moved in their direction. When I got within the range of my contact lens, I saw they were twins—all right! They responded, a little shy at first, but as we talked, I began to feel as the quarry rather than the hunter. Each of them took up a position at a 45 degree angle to my right and left, a "V" pattern, with me almost cornered. Okay, they can devour me; they were pretty and tall in their high heels. Both went to Columbia College, majored in chemistry, which reminded me of cooking, had turned twenty-one in September, the same month as my birthday, although I hadn't seen 21 for decades, and came from a town in the Catskills in upstate New York. A town I used to pass every summer as a kid and later as a teenager when heading to the family cabin in the mountains.

These two were a trip. They turned their high beams on in a coordinated assault on my senses. One picked up the conversation as the other left off, sometimes in mid-sentence, and

they giggled like little girls simultaneously as though on cue. Was it possible that somehow their two minds were metaphysically one? A couple of my childhood buddies were twins, but they didn't have the synchronicity of these two. Did they read each other's mind or somehow live each other's life. I liked them immediately—a lot. Tried for their telephone numbers, but they weren't giving, so reluctantly they provided me their emails. Part of my hustle included talking up my salsa class about which they expressed interest when I mentioned there were usually more guys than girls. It was then I realized I knew these girls or, more accurately, girls like them. They were the girls I had chased all those summers in the Catskills. Girls who grew up in that part of New York had an openness about boys. I still remember this one ten year old girl from upstate answering when asked what she liked to do: “Chase boys!” Unlike Feminazis, the girls up there liked boys and refrained from blaming guys for all the vagaries of life.

We talked on and off during the evening, even danced once until they turned and walked away at exactly the same moment. Oh, well, I had gotten their email addresses, and had agreed to send them the information on my instructor's salsa class. Don't remember too much more of that evening, but a buddy from salsa mentioned I was making out with some tall black chick. To which I asked, “Was she good looking?” He said yes, and I believed him but couldn't find any number or email other than the Twins. My short term memory only recalled a black chick calling me her nemesis, but was she the one? At least it wasn't the blonde I danced with whose pheromones invited men to run their hands all over her. She was with two guys who looked like paying customers.

The Twins responded to my email about the salsa class and gave me one of their mobile numbers. They were in the middle of finals, so couldn't start the class until after the Christmas break, but finals didn't keep them from going clubbing on the weekends. One Saturday Mark,

his younger brother, Chanan, and I met them at Deep after running into a familiar problem at the door of City nightclubs that girls don't. On the Internet, clubs sometimes advertise free or reduced admission for guys before some early hour such as 11 PM. The ads tell a guy to sign up for a "Guest List" or printout a pass from the club's website to take advantage of the bargain. The three of us showed at Deep at 10:45 PM, nearly the first in line, presented our passes for free admission before 11 PM and "Sorry, these are no longer good," the bouncer says.

Chanan wasn't buying this, "What do you mean? We just printed them off your website not an hour ago. Your policies changed since then?"

"Management has instructed me that these pass are no longer good. You'll have to pay \$15."

"That's not fair," Chanan continued. How can you advertise one thing, and then switch it when people show up because of your advertisement."

The lawyer in me chimed in, "It's called bait and switch."

"Yeah," Chanan replied. "They trick you into coming all the way down here to their club and then change the deal. That's not right."

The bouncers were apologetic, since they were just following the manager's orders, but to go inside would cost us \$15 each. We paid, because, I had arranged to meet the Twins inside, who, being girls, were able to enter through the back door for free. This bait and switch directed only at guys was a common tactic among the clubs. The China Club had pulled the same stunt on us earlier in the year. This wasn't going to happen again. When I go to a club now, I bring along a copy of the City's Consumer Affairs Department rules prohibiting false advertising. The Department licenses all these joints, and violation of the rules can result in suspension of their licenses.

Deep had two floors, lots of space and, as the night wore on, plenty of friendly chicks. We ran into the Twins and Mark and I started dancing with them. Chanan, a professional Hip-Hop dancer, started doing his thing by himself. He didn't need to ask girls to dance because when they saw him hip-hopping, a few always gathered around to watch, and one or two would start dancing, or rubbing their bodies against him, usually their derrieres against his crotch. Some of these club chicks sure liked dancing doggy-style. Time for me to learn that dance as delusions of being a babe magnet danced in my head. The Twins nicknamed Chanan "Dancer Man."

A couple of weeks later, Mark called. "I've been looking at your resume and thinking for the passed few days about a way for you to make some money out of the hell you've been going through for the last, what is it, six years?"

"Yeah, it's pretty close to six years. What's the idea?"

"Go public with a website. What you're always saying about the feminists and how they've twisted the system against men is what most men are thinking, but wouldn't say publicly for fear of losing their jobs or being sued. You can take what's happened to you and become a lightning rod for men against the feminists. With your resume, you have the credibility to do that."

The moment I heard Mark's idea, I knew I was going to do it. As Supreme Court Justice Brandeis observed, "sunlight is the most powerful of all disinfectants." The gears of the universe clicked together. By pulling open the curtains, I could expose the sophistry of Feminazism, which had enabled sluts like my ex-wife to commit crimes with impunity, and the Feminazis real desire to create a tyranny over men.

“So how would this work?” I asked, feeling the excitement of another battle on the horizon.

“You set up a website. Write articles for it and publish on the site the story about the Ho that you’ve been writing. You can even serialize the story to keep people coming back to see what happens next. Visitors to the site can make comments or start their own discussions about the articles or the story. It’s called an interactive website. You might even expand into providing legal advice to men on how to defend themselves against the feminists. And the way you make money, is to ask for donations. On the site would be a “Donate” button a viewer could click that would take him to PayPal for making a contribution.”

“This sounds good. I’m running out of money, and my attempts to find a book publisher went nowhere.”

“So publish it yourself. Go directly to the men on your side. There are guys all over the country who feel the way you do. You can be their voice and they’ll support you. Guys will be able to register for the website anonymously, if they want, say what they want and contribute.”

“Right, the men in America, especially the white guys, are too intimidated by the Feminazis to take back their rights. I can be their point man.”

“Exactly, but you’ll take a lot of heat for it.”

“Wouldn’t be any worse than what I’ve been going through, screw those Feminazis. If broads can’t love you, they might as well hate you.”

Over the next month, Mark and another of his brothers helped me refine the concept of the site and how viewers could participate. It took me another few months to set the site up, in part, because creating web pages weren’t up my alley. My old class action RICO site was

replaced with the new anti-Feminazi assault but kept the same Internet address: [www.been-scammed.com](http://www.been-scammed.com).

Girls! Girls! Girls!

In early December 2005, a guy in my salsa class told me about a Hip-Hop class he was taking at Broadway Dance Center. Never heard of the place, but here was my chance to try to learn Hip-Hop. The moment I walked into the Beginner's Hip-Hop class, I felt like a kid in a candy store. The room was packed with around 45 pretty young babes displaying various bare sections of their breasts, legs, stomachs and lower abdomens. Most of their pants or shorts were skin-tight around the ass through which showed the straps of their thongs for the ones who wore any undies. Of the five or six guys in the class, all were gay, except for my buddy and me, no competition here, and I was the only gray-haired Benjamin Franklin in the place. This was too good to be true as a grin swept over my face, but it got better.

The class lasted ninety minutes and was as tough a workout as martial arts only no cracked ribs. During the first half, our instructor Bev B, a hot looking black chick with a great smile, ran us through warm-up drills. One had us doing a body roll leaning back with arms stretched in front and then bending forward at the waist, arms behind with our faces looking straight ahead. I found myself gazing into the rear end of a young babe in tight pants that outlined the source of every young girl's power inches from my face. If I ever have a heart attack, I hope it happens in class during that exercise, so I can fall face first into some young babe's booty. Once in the middle of that drill, the voluptuous Latina in front of me stood up in surprise with her hand on one cheek as though someone had grabbed her rear—must have been my astral body.

After the warm-up, Bev taught us a routine by repeating the steps a few times and then moving on to new ones. As she built the routine, the class became hotter and hotter, the girls sweated more and more, parts of breasts and abdomens glistened, adrenalin and endorphins pumped through brains while the pheromones of these overheated pretty young things filled the air. These cold and distant candy bonbons began melting on their shelves. Hitting on one during a break, she smiled and replied with sweet sounding words. How could she not with all those drugs pumping in her brain and me one of only two heterosexual guys in the class. This was too easy for meeting chicks, although physically, I barely made it through the class. I thanked Bev, clearly one of those few teachers who cared about her students, and left the room to hit on some other hot-sweaty girl watching another class.

The classrooms at Broadway Dance Centre all had big windows on the inside that allowed other students outside the classrooms to watch a class. Students stood two and three deep around these windows or sat in chairs arranged for viewing. The reason for this escaped me, since most the guys there weren't hunting chicks. Maybe it was just the thing to do. Fine with me, since it made my hunt easier by congregating game in a small place—not unlike a watering hole on the African savannah. It also gave me lots of opening lines: “Oh, what class is this?” “Would you tell me what room number this is, I’m wearing my contacts and can’t read the number although I can see the girls?” That usually got a laugh. A variation on that theme, “Would you help me? I’m trying to find a number on my pre-millennium mobile but can’t read the names because I have my contacts in.” “So how do you tell what dance style this is? I haven’t been able to distinguish dances since law school.” That made them think I had money and often got a laugh. “Are you a professional dancer? No. You could have fooled me.” That one worked really well on the teenagers, since a lot of professional dancers went to Broadway

Dance and every teenybopper girl dreams of being discovered. Sometimes, however, I couldn't distinguish the teenyboppers from the twenty-somethings—a confusion that didn't bother me a bit. Anyway, the lines, like girls, were overflowing. As Elvis Presley once sang: “Girls, big and brassy, girls, small and sassy, just give me one of each kind, I'm just a red blooded boy.”

Nearly every Friday, I went to Hip-Hop, fairly often got a number, and after a while, girls whom I hadn't hit on would walk into class and give me a knowing smile that said they knew why I was there. Some months later, I learned that my instructor Bev B was famous in the dance world. She had danced with and choreographed Kool & The Gang, Janet Jackson and Salt & Pepa—very impressive. She also carried the title Reverend, which explained that tough Gospel Church like compassion she had for others. Maybe I should have met her twenty years ago. The human heart often yearns for salvation, but I've learned since never to trust the heart again. My approach to heaven and hell is purely that of a lawyer or businessman—I hedge my bets.

Since my philosophies don't cover everything in the universe and what they do may not be right, I've accounted for the possibility of a heaven and a hell. The management structure of hell will logically have the worst at the top, the angel who rebelled, with a chain of command descending through those of lesser evil down to folk who arguably shouldn't be there at all. Just as in America or a banana republic, those who commit greater crimes lord over those who perpetrated minor ones. Unlike Dante's vision that inverted the structure of hell to serve the plot of his story in castigating his worldly enemies, a top down management structure makes the only sense for hell or any organization devoted to destruction, like the military. Those better at carrying out an organization's purpose will logically occupy positions of more authority. The commander-in-chief in hell is not about to be told what to do by a second lieutenant sitting on a higher ledge. So the more evil the person, the higher up the management ladder he's placed. My



task then is to insert myself in the management structure at just the right level where I'll have direct authority over those whom I want to torment for eternity: Feminazis, the rich, my parents and the Ho. Not an easy chore considering the depravity of my enemies, but possible. However, if there is no hell, then it doesn't matter.

The Saturday after my first Hip-Hop class, surprisingly, I could still move, so Mark and I went to a party in Williamsburg given by a girl to whom I had introduced him. Not much of an introduction, I saw this tall blonde with a hot body in a crowded bar and started talking to her about something I can't remember. She was friendly, but not my type, so I moved on. Later, when she walked by me on her way out for a smoke, I introduced her to Mark. Turned out she was stripper.

She and her three female roommates were throwing a party. Oh boy, I fantasized; they'll probably invite lots of hokettes. But I should have listened to the Twins who said that when girls host parties, they make sure there are always a lot more guys than girls. The Twins were right. What a waste that party. Half the night was spent hustling two plain looking girls who at the end of my efforts turned out to be lesbians, the other half arguing with a Feminazi and the third-half fondling a French tart trying to convince me that "love" was not a scam invented by females to manipulate guys.

"Someone must have hurt you," she said. How many times have I heard that, which meant you just met the wrong girl, the rest of us are really decent human beings, like me.

Baloney, most girls are created in the image of Mary Magdalene—a prostitute.

"You're right," I answered. "Let's start with the Nazi Ho, my mother, and work our way through all the girls I went out with down to the Commie Ho, my ex-wife." I thought but didn't say, "It's hos all the way down on my journey to hell." Instead I told this French hokette, "To

girls, 'love' means a scheme to get what they want from men. For them, it's very real and of the utmost importance, as are frauds to criminals. When a girl says, 'I love you,' she's really saying 'I'm tricking you.'"

She did a quick 180 and returned to a back room to resume making out with the same guy she had left earlier to flirt with me. Guess the flirtation helped her ego or was it genetic. All humans are promiscuous; otherwise, we wouldn't have survived, and the more promiscuous the person, the more likely their gene for playing around was passed on to future generations. But only girls are hos. Hos use sex and its accoutrements to get something, usually consumer goods but also status or an underserved advantage. For them, sex is a weapon to shakedown guys; it's a means to an end. For guys sex is fun, a recreational end, but not a means. The French tart realized she wouldn't be sexploiting me any time soon, so she returned to her first sucker.

There once was a time in America when hos were kept in their place: brothels, strip clubs and backdoor rendezvous. But, now, with the Feminazis either running the media or intimidating it into toting their propaganda, all these low-lying, four-flushing sluts are considered victimized saints. Take that whore who married Prince Charles. She hos this guy, she hos that guy, and her life style finally lands her dead in a car crash. She's a slut, but the media blames Prince Charles and turns her into a saint while some sappy song about her out sells the classic Christmas tune "White Christmas."

It's always men who are at fault in the Western media and girls the Pollyanna victim. No one ever dares mention that the real fault rests with the lies the Feminazis feed girls growing up today. They teach girls to put themselves on a pedestal, not of femininity, but one of superiority to men in strength, courage, independence and toughness, which, when coupled with the Feminazi belief that girls have a universal right, almost an obligation, to give free reign to

their whims and desires, puts these girls in dangerous situations that an evolutionarily correct girl would avoid. The Feminazis have socialized young girls into believing they are Super Girls, gave them capes, but when the girls try to fly in the real world, they can't. It's the she-male princess syndrome: all the sex appeal of Aphrodite but stronger than Hercules, an illusion that works only in Hollywood.

Please Mr. Postman

The Second Circuit scheduled oral argument on my appeal for the following month of January 2006. The defense attorney's had failed to weasel the Court into denying me 10 minutes to argue my case and answer the judges questions. Not much time, but that's generally all the time allotted each side. The Court's decision on my motion to throw out parts of the defendants' briefs for violating the procedural rules still hadn't come down, which presented a problem. Preparation for oral argument always depends on the content of the papers before the Court. If sections of some of the defense briefs were going to be deleted, it would help to know that before oral argument; otherwise, both sides would have to spend extra time preparing to deal with those sections before the three judges who would hear the argument. Logic dictated that the panel of judges should make a decision on my motion beforehand. But, then again, I was dealing with the Second Circuit.

Contacting the administrative lawyer in the Civil Appeals Management Office of the Court, I asked what was going on with my motion. He told me the panel could make a decision on my motion anytime they wanted, whether before or after oral argument. This sounded too arbitrary, so I checked the rules but couldn't find any requiring the Court to decide motions promptly, although according to the *Appeals to the Second Circuit*, p. 50 (8<sup>th</sup> ed, 1997) published by the Committee on Federal Courts of the Association of the Bar of the City of New York, most

motions are decided within a week of the return date, which for my motion had long since come and gone. Something didn't fit. The motion papers weren't that long and the defense attorneys' violations clear—no complex issues involving grey areas of the law, so why not make a decision now? As with so much else in this story, I knew the workings of the universe would eventually reveal the answer.

New Year's Eve and Mark and I decided to go hunting at the Copa, even though I had a nagging premonition that something unpleasant would happen. Before we entered the club, I told Mark about my foreboding to which he said, "Stay alert." The Copa was packed, lots of single chicks hoping guys would hit on them so that they wouldn't feel like losers being alone on New Year's Eve. Fine, we were happy to help them out. We walked around, hit on some chicks, danced with them, went looking for some more, split up and I went to the bar for another drink. While standing behind a short stocky guy and his very hot Latina date, the guy seemed somewhat edgy. Maybe she was ragging on him. Waiting for the barmaid, I checked this guy's date out—she was nice, but I wasn't about to hit on her. Unlike some guys, I didn't believe in interfering with another guy's hustle. Just then, the short guy pushes back into me. Okay it was crowded, and I let it go, one of the usual minor run-ins in New York clubs. Then he does it a second time, which seemed intentional. What's with this guy, I didn't say a word to his girl. Was he reading my mind?

On the metaphysical side of my life, I can often sense something bad coming my way, possess the ability to divine water with a forked-stick and, at times, can apparently project my thoughts. Was the overflow of my paranormaling lust for this guy's girl splashing into his mind? Who knew, who cared, but I told the guy not to push me again. Naturally, with his girl there he had to and did. I moved to my left, he turned to face me, and I gave him an open hand martial

arts strike to the throat. He retreated about five feet holding his neck, trying to breathe normally. Suddenly the area around me wasn't crowded anymore. His hot chica then tries a right forward kick with her high heel to my groin. Broads always go for the most vulnerable spots, but they should stick with assaults of emotional distress and duplicity in which they use their tongues as guns. They're too lame when trying to physically hurt a man. Barely paying attention to her, I easily dodged her kick. My focused on the guy, waiting for him to recoup and charge into the front thrust kick I had planned. Just then Mark appears out of nowhere and pulls me away from the scene in the blink of an eye. Good he had my back for the bouncers were probably on their way. We continued our carousing and I finally left the Copa around three in the morning and Mark at five. All around, an enjoyable New Year's Eve.

During January, while preparing for oral argument, all the defense attorneys waived their right to oral argument—they weren't going to show, including the Bank of Cyprus that never even submitted a brief. Attorneys never do this. Although oral argument is short, it often clarifies the case for judges and sometimes even changes their minds. Former Supreme Court Justice William Brennan once said:

“Oral argument is the absolutely indispensable ingredient of appellate advocacy. Often my whole notion of what a case is about crystallizes at oral argument. This happens even though I read all the briefs before oral argument. Often my idea of how a case shapes up is changed by oral argument. Oral argument with us is a Socratic dialogue between Justice and Counsel.”

Socratic dialogue means the judges ask the lawyers questions about the case and the law to which the answers help the judges reach a decision.

So why were the defense attorneys foregoing oral argument? What did they know that I didn't? Was the fix in? Had someone slipped crucial information to the defense lawyers? Had the appeal already been decided in favor of the defendants, which was why the Court ignored my motion to delete parts of their briefs? Whatever it was—something had happened. This was not

how appeals in the federal courts were suppose to proceed, maybe in state courts in the rural south, but definitely not the Court of Learned Hand and Henry Friendly, two great judges who had sat on the Second Circuit Court of Appeals. Decisions aren't made until after the oral argument, which is why lawyers don't skip oral argument. Was the Court just going through the motions of allowing me an oral argument that was meaningless because the decision had already been made? If so, that wasn't only unfair, but a violation of my due process rights under the Constitution of America. Then again, this was no longer America, for men that is.

In the Second Circuit, every panel of judges has a presiding judge who usually writes the opinions for the cases a panel hears. Normally, the Second Circuit keeps secret until a few weeks before oral argument all the judges hearing a case so as to prevent any undue influence or attorneys slanting their arguments towards a particular judge or judges. In my case, however, because of my motion to delete parts of the defendants' brief, I learned, and so did the Russian mafia defendants, on November 3, 2005 that the presiding judge on the panel deciding my case was Sonia Sotomayor. At the time, I didn't care who she was, and wasn't going to tailor my argument for any Second Circuit judge. Why bother? The Second Circuit, contrary to the intent of Congress and Supreme Court decisions, exhibits a distinct animosity toward civil RICO cases. It made no sense to cater to that Court, since my only legal hope, as it had been from the beginning, was the Supreme Court. But because of the recent bizarre events of the Court ignoring my motion and the defendants' waiver of oral argument, I decided to do a little research on Sotomayor.

Back then, before our first female president, Barack Obama, made Sotomayor a Supreme Court Justice in accordance with the Peter Principle, Sotomayor was 52 years old, prime age for a Feminazi, born in a housing project in the South Bronx with Puerto Rican ancestry. She

graduated Yale Law School, but so did Billy-Bob Clinton, and neither made it through with honors. She worked as an Assistant District Attorney in Manhattan, not very prestigious for a graduate of Yale or any law school. In 1984, she joined the nondescript law firm of Pavia & Harcourt, which recruited lawyers fluent in Spanish, Italian, French and Portuguese, and eventually became a partner. In 1992, President Bush Sr. made her a district court judge, and in 1998 she landed on the Second Circuit Court of Appeals, thanks to Hillary Clinton who pretty much determined President Clinton's judicial appointments.

Sotomayor, as with all federal judges, was appointed—not elected—for life. The Wall Street Journal and a number of Senators opposed her elevation to the Second Circuit because she's a judicial activist. Sotomayor believes judges have the right to change the law in accordance with their own personal views regardless of what Congress or the electorate says. It's a "Judges Know Best" philosophy and contrary to the U.S. Constitution's separation of powers where Congress makes the laws, not the courts. The founding fathers knew from looking at European monarchies that when the different functions of state power are concentrated, the wielders usually abuse it. In order to avoid America becoming another country ruled by princes and princesses, the U.S. Constitution adopted the principle of the Massachusetts Constitution written by John Adams:

"In the government ... the legislative department shall never exercise the executive and judicial powers, or either of them; the executive shall never exercise the legislative and judicial powers, or either of them; the judicial shall never exercise the legislative and executive powers, or either of them: to the end it may be a government of laws not of men.

Sotomayor apparently believes that last word "men" doesn't apply to females or princesses.

Activist judges, such as Sotomayor, probably consider themselves in the vanguard of a class struggle where the separation of powers interferes with their vision of society, so usurping the power of the legislature is justified. Whenever government officials succeed in grabbing

more than their allotted share of state power, they become less accountable for their actions because citizens begin to fear stopping them. As bureaucrats continue to exercise power they shouldn't, they may reach the point where there's no one left in society with the courage to call them to account, and then, they can do pretty much what they please. For these activist bureaucrats like Sotomayor, every grab for power is facially justified with some lame rationale, such as the Feminazis claiming passed oppression at the hands of men. Why do you think Sotomayor ruled against those Connecticut firemen—a ruling that the Supreme Court eventually over turned? They were all men. Then again, maybe she was just angry that nobody had invited her to her high school senior prom.

Once any group corners the market on state power, than the government and its bureaucrats become something to fear as in Nazi Germany, the Soviet Union and, today, in feminarchy America. The key to liberty, as Montesquieu said decades before the American and French revolutions, is that “government should be set up so that no man need be afraid of another” or of a female during the wrong time of the month or on menopause, but such is no longer the case for men in the U.S.

Sotomayor's seizing of legislative power earned her the “Court Jester Award” from the Family Research Counsel when she ruled in 1998 that a female, who had failed the New York bar exam several times, could take it again and have additional time to complete the exam because she was a slow reader. Sotomayor rewrote the Americans with Disabilities Act to reach the absurd result of applying the statute to a girl who had previously earned a Ph.D., J.D. and passed other exams, such as the LSAT and GRE, without being given any special treatment. Thanks to judicial legislating, preferential treatment for females and in the spirit of unfairness to others, the girl took the bar exam again, was given extra time and promptly flunked it again.



Despite Sotomayor's less than stellar record as a jurist, her sex and Latin heritage has caused political correctionalist politicians, pandering for female and immigrant votes, to win her a spot on the U.S. Supreme Court. Another example of the propaganda of soma induced delusions replacing reality in America. Had Gore or Kerry been elected, she might have made it there by the time of my appeal—good for me, bad for the country. As a Supreme Court Justice she sees herself as speaking “in a female ... voice” and admits “our experiences as women ... affect our decisions.” So much for justice being blind.

When I arrived at the Court for oral argument in the morning on Thursday, January 26, 2006, I was surprised to see the lead defense lawyer Dubin there but the presiding judge Sotomayor not, although she would likely write the opinion. Perhaps the onset of menopause was making it tough for her to concentrate, so she took the day off, or perhaps the case, as I now felt, had already been decided, and she didn't want to waste her time.

To Dubin, I asked, “What are you doing here? I thought you had waived argument.”

“We did,” he answered. “I just wanted to watch.”

Mumbling to myself, “Watch, watch what? There's nothing to watch.” Another move by the defense that made no sense, since Dubin's clients, Mundy, Petrovich and their law firm, were not going to pay him to watch me talk, unless he was here to make sure the Court stayed fixed.

The clerk called my case before the two judges who at least were men.

Normally in oral argument, a lawyer starts with a prepared statement of the arguments as to why the Court should rule in his favor, and after a couple of sentences, the judges interrupt to ask the questions that occurred to them while reading the appeal briefs. Since my intuition told me this was probably just a show hearing, I chose a different tack, and started by arguing my

motion to delete parts of the defendants' briefs. That would allow me to accuse the Second Circuit of discriminating against me by not deciding the motion before oral argument.

“Good morning your honors. I’m Roy Den Hollander the *pro se* plaintiff versus certain Russian mafiosos, members, cohorts and confederates of the Russian mafia. In November, I put in a motion to strike certain sections of the briefs of the Russian mafia defendants for violating the Federal Rules of Procedure and the Local Rules of this Court for including irrelevancies, ad hominem and failing to cite to specific pages. Another reason for the motion was to avoid using the limited space in my reply brief to deal with the defendants continuing litigation of personal destruction and disinformation and to counter their citing to 380 pages in their briefs that are not in the Joint Appendix. They had an opportunity to include those documents in the Appendix but they declined to. The defendants used those documents to castigate me and to avoid arguing on the merits and to overburden this Court. I put in this motion to strike their references to those documents, some of which were excluded by the District Court, but nothing has happened. My view is that I have been treated unfairly because this motion has not been decided even now.”

To which one judge said in his deep voice, “It’s a very common thing for motions of that nature not to be decided prior argument because the panel very frequently feels it will be in a better position to understand what’s pertinent to the case at the time of argument. It’s often quite difficult to deal with a motion like that well in advance, and it’s not uncommon at all that such a motion is simply put aside to be dealt with as part of the case in its entirety and that happened here.”

No way, I thought to myself. The motion was for the defendants violating the rules of procedure in the Second Circuit; it didn’t deal with the pertinent legal issues of the appeal of the District Court’s decision. The defendants cited to documents not in the Joint Appendix, engaged

in character assassination and failed to give specific page cites. It was all there in black and white in their briefs. What's there to understand about pertinence to the case? There is none, that's why parts of the defendants' briefs violate the rules.

I responded, "Ooookay, my view then is that the defendants violated my rights and they got away with it."

The same judge rationalized, "There's a lot of gamesmanship that goes on in litigation. To some extent litigation is about gamesmanship, there are strategies that lawyers use and sometimes they succeed in taking advantage of an adverse party by doing it. But in any case we are here to hear your appeal and would be interested in hearing you on that."

Unbelievable, this Second Circuit judge was condoning the violation of the rules of this Court and every other Court of Appeals in the country, but I euphemized my response.

"I agree with that your honor, attorneys try for advantages over their opponents, but when the rules of procedure say what you are doing violate those rules and my due process rights, I believe the Court should be more timely on ruling on a motion such as that."

Then I switched gears, "Now as far as the substance of my appeal are there any questions?" That caught them flat-footed. Judges always have questions for oral argument but not these and not for me.

So I started through the list of the District Court's legal errors and accused it of re-writing my Complaint. Even raised the issue from my brief where I called Castel a liar when he claimed I never requested to amend my Complaint if it was dismissed.

"I asked FIVE TIMES that if the District Court ruled against me and threw me out that I would have an opportunity to amend." To emphasize my point, I stepped aside from the podium and raised my open hand with five fingers out stretched. "Five times I asked that. The judge

said I never asked for it.” Then I paused for the judges to slam me for calling Castel a liar in my brief, but nothing happened, so I moved on to other points until my 10 minutes ran out.

Leaving the Second Circuit, it was clear the two judges hadn’t read my motion papers or my brief or my reply. No Court of Appeals’ judge would knowingly claim that the violation of the procedural rules for assuring fair and just consideration of a case was “gamesmanship” or allow a lawyer to get away with calling a District Court judge a liar in a brief. It just didn’t happen, so the oral argument must have meant nothing to the two judges either because the panel had already decided against me or Sotomayor told them she’d handle the opinion, which she had already decided or maybe even written.

One week later, the Second Circuit issued its decision—that was too quick. They really wanted rid of me. The case was back in the street again with the U.S. Supreme Court my last chance. The Summary Order gave the defendants everything they wanted by upholding the District Court decision in total—not even allowing me one chance to amend my Complaint. The Order also denied my motion. Guess violating the appellate rules of procedure pays.

The Second Circuit, or more likely Sotomayor, ruled that the RICO statute, my Complaint and Supplemental Complaint didn’t say what they said, but said what she said they said. Sounded like deja voodoo to me of all those arguments with girls who simply put words in my mouth in order to win. Perhaps Sotomayor’s experience as a female not only affected her decisions but also her methods in reaching those decisions. Sotomayor made the decision a “Summary Order,” which meant it wouldn’t be published in the volumes that carry Second Circuit cases and couldn’t be used as authority for anything in another case. It’s a neat trick for disposing of cases without bringing publicity to them and assuring that a court’s errors about the law can’t come back to haunt it. In effect, it allows the Court to make a decision based on who

you are rather than what happened to you—think feudal Europe. If the judges consider you an inappropriate person, they can make up any rule they want to make sure you lose, and that rule can't be used in the future against persons the judges like because that rule only applies to you. Think of it as your own personal gulag or jurisprudence. The laws that apply to the rest of society, or at least those considered acceptable by the current ideology, don't apply to you because you're a modern-day nonconformist—separate and unequal.

Next legal stop, the U.S. Supreme Court, but that Court hears only about one percent of the cases that apply for review. The Supreme Court's purpose is not to correct the mistakes a Court of Appeals makes, intentionally or not, in reading a complaint or even in misunderstanding the law. The Supreme Court focuses on correcting injustices of a national importance in which other Courts of Appeals or the Supreme Court say something different about the law or haven't said anything at all. One consequence of the Supreme Court's selectivity is that Judges on the Courts of Appeals have near absolute power in disposing of cases brought by those without money and influence, the politically incorrect and society's other outcasts, which was why the defendants used so much character assassination to paint me as a modern-day pariah—it works. So much for the democratic sentiment that to promote social stability, our society encourages resort to the courts rather than resort to force and violence. *Deck v. Engineered Laminates*, 349 F.3d 1253, 1258 (10<sup>th</sup> Cir. 2003).

#### Let Me In (Wee-Oop)

My banging on the U.S. Supreme Court's door for admittance began with drafting a "Petition for Writ of Certiorari." A petition basically says, "Hey guys, one of the Courts of Appeals goofed at interpreting the law to conclude something different than what other Courts of Appeals say, so here's your chance to make the law uniform throughout the land," or, "the Court

of Appeals thumbed its nose at one of your decisions, and here's your chance to straighten that Court out."

The defendants could, if they wanted, file briefs in response to my petition to argue why the Supreme Court should not review the Second Circuit's decision, and I could then file a short reply to address any new issues raised in the defendants' briefs. The Supreme Court Justices either read the filed papers or assigned a clerk to summarize them and recommend granting or denying review. If any Justice believes a case should be reviewed, he adds it to the list of cases that will be discussed at a weekly conference of all nine Justices. A vote in favor of review by four Justices is required for the Court to hear a case. If the Justices decide to hear a case, they don't rerun all the issues, just those they believe are important to keeping America a nation ruled by law. The Court, therefore, could hear just one issue in my case and even if it ruled my way on that issue, the Second Circuit or District Court might still be able to uphold the dismissal. It happens all the time, but I'd have to chance that. If the rule of law existed anywhere in America for me, it was the Supreme Court. The likely outcome, however, would be the Court denying to even hear my case—then my legal road against injustice would end.

The Second Circuit's revisionism of the factual allegations in my Complaint made it difficult to write a petition that the Supreme Court would grant. At the heart of the Second Circuit's decision was the conclusion, also made by the District Court, that my lawsuit looked just like the civil RICO case *American Express Co. Shareholder Litigation*, 39 F.3d 395 (2d Cir. 1994), which the Second Circuit had also dismissed. In the law, when the fact situation of one case is identical to that of another, then the results should be the same. But in my case, the Second Circuit falsely claimed I was in a similar position as the American Express shareholders when my position actually resembled that of Safra. The Russian mafia defendants' crimes were

directed at me and intended to cause me harm, not some third party who stood between that crime syndicate and me. Although my case didn't look anything like *American Express*, the Second Circuit ruled it did, not only to dismiss it, but for another very important reason: to minimize the chance that the Supreme Court would review it.

The Supreme Court was not about to hear a case in which a Court of Appeals had twisted factual allegations to make them fit another case in order to engineer a dismissal. Even when such conduct involved the Second Circuit, which the Supreme Court had reversed a number of times before in RICO cases and actually criticized for trying to eliminate civil RICO actions, the Supreme Court usually stayed away from disputes over factual allegations and facts. My task, therefore, was to convince the Supreme Court that the Second Circuit's decision was not merely a deceptive editing of my factual allegations, but a symptom of it exceeding its constitutional authority by disregarding Supreme Court rulings and the plain meaning of the civil RICO statute with the end result of the Russian mafia and other organized crime syndicates escaping liability in the Second Circuit, unless the Supreme Court put a stop to it.

To bring home to the Supreme Court the Pandora's Box that the Second Circuit was opening by continuing to emasculate civil RICO, my petition's "Facts" section ran a little long so as to give the Justices a taste of how some in the Russian mafia operated and the dangers they posed.

### **Facts**

The defendants in this case comprise a relatively few members or associates operating in different sections of the Russian mafia, which, according to former Central Intelligence Agency Director John Deutch, reaches across international borders. Emergency Net News Service, May 3, 1996, Vol. 2-124. Echoing the C.I.A.'s assessment, former F.B.I. Director Louis Freeh said, "Evidence that organized crime activity from [Russia] is expanding and will continue to expand to the United States is well-documented." *Id.* Russian criminal operations in America, such as money laundering, illegal money transactions, prostitution, narcotics trafficking, extortion and fraud are often carried out in cooperation with La Cosa Nostra. Report on Russian Organized

Crime, 1997, Task Force headed by William H. Webster, Center for Strategic and International Studies.

The Russian mafia, once a hierarchical structure under the Soviet Union, diffused with the end of Communist Party power into a confederation of crime groups using modern-day management principles and which includes Chechen, American, Cypriot, Mexican and other nationalities. It now resembles a diversified worldwide conglomerate, or enterprise, with all the attendant business relationships. (Complaint ¶¶ 10, 11, 14, 874). The smarter members of the Russian mafia, no longer confined to scheming for rubles, are chasing hard currency by expanding their criminal operations to the wealthy West. (Complaint ¶¶ 2, 13).

Bringing Russian crime to Western shores requires an ongoing transfer of money-making assets to foreign markets where the successful utilization of assets employs a strategy of (a) using money from criminal activities to set up and expand Russian mafia businesses, such as prostitution, pornography, strip clubs, drug smuggling and money laundering; (b) protecting those businesses through criminal activities, such as tampering with informants and witnesses, obstructing justice, bribery and intimidation; and (c) running the businesses by using crimes such as white slavery, immigration fraud, importing pornography and drug trafficking. The Russian mafia uses a complex, intertwined web of racketeering acts to maintain and continue expanding its activities in a drive for new targets and more money that causes widespread and varied harm. (Complaint ¶¶ 879-85).

The Russian mafia's expansion into the West has created a vertically integrated business of supply, service, protection, profit maximization and reinvestment with a huge appetite for human capital. Each Russian mafia prostitution asset in the U.S. makes a relatively small amount of \$100,000 to \$150,000 tax-free a year, but considering the large number of them in the U.S., the syndicate is making substantial sums.

At the tactical level, the success of the Russian mafia's objective for one of its human-capital assets involves the following:

Step One: Transplanting a willing member or associate from Russia to the U.S. where she starts working in one or more syndicate businesses—prostitution, stripping, pornography or procuring. This involves the predicate acts of white slavery, 18 U.S.C. §§ 2421 & 2422, importing an alien for immoral purposes, 8 U.S.C. § 1328, fraud and the misuse of visas, 18 U.S.C. § 1546, and eventually procurement of nationality unlawfully, 18 U.S.C. § 1425. To keep the customers coming back for more from the new asset often also means drugs, 21 U.S.C. §§ 841 & 952.

Step Two: Protecting the mafia's human capital from deportation, arrest or imprisonment, which would ruin their money-making potential, often requires tampering with a witness, victim or informant, 18 U.S.C. 1512; threats made by mail or wire, 18 U.S.C. 1341 & 1343; use of interstate and foreign facilities in aid of the racketeering operation, 18 U.S.C. 1952; bribery, 18 U.S.C. 201; and even conspiracy to commit murder-for-hire 18 U.S.C. 1958, as in this case.

Step Three: Assuring that the mob's profits from its asset escape the taxman involves money laundering, 18 U.S.C. 1956, and failing to file reports on exporting amounts over \$10,000, as required by 31 U.S.C. 5316.

This RICO case concerns just one asset, one string of events and injuries arising out of the Russian mafia's operations of transplanting prostitutes to New York and other states, passing drugs and large sums of money back and forth between countries, and threatening as well as executing reprisals against any person or business that might get in the syndicate's way.



Petitioner-plaintiff and attorney Roy Den Hollander owns and operates a one-man, unincorporated business that provides legal services and business consulting. The defendant Russian mafia members and associates include Flash Dancers Topless Club and Cybertech Internet Solutions that together sell call-girls and pornography over the internet at [www.flashdancersnyc.com](http://www.flashdancersnyc.com), [www.stripclubnetwork.com](http://www.stripclubnetwork.com), and [www.exoticavip.com](http://www.exoticavip.com); the Baraev Chechen Special Islamic Regiment (responsible for the 2002 Moscow Theater hostage taking) used by certain defendants to threaten reprisals against Hollander and various of his informants and witnesses living in Krasnodar, Russia; assorted Russian Mafiosi, including the crime boss for southern European Russia; corrupt Russian government officials; gangsters in America; a corrupt New York City policeman; Alina Shipilina, a Russian mafia prostitute, money launderer and drug smuggler; the prostitute's Russian mother who is affiliated, as is her daughter, with the Baraev crime group and Russian criminals; Leonid Perlin the president of Phodes Studio in Moscow, [www.phodes.net](http://www.phodes.net), a syndicate call-girl operation fronting as a model agency for which Alina Shipilina worked; lawyers Nicholas Mundy and Peter Petrovich<sup>3</sup> who manage and facilitate immigration matters in New York for the Russian syndicate; Marc Paulsen who produces and imports Russian pornography into southern California; and the Vasilyeva crime family that runs the premier model agency in Krasnodar which doubles as a call-girl operation sending prostitutes overseas to places such as Cyprus and America, where two of the family members now reside.

These and other defendants work hard and ingeniously to enrich themselves in furthering a key objective of the Russian mafia: to infiltrate and expand its illegal and ancillary legal activities into hard currency markets, especially the U.S. Each defendant plays a role in importing assets or keeping the assets here and makes lots of money doing so. Some use narcotics and prostitutes to create fraudulent marriages; some engage in immigration fraud, white slavery, bribery and importing pornography; some traffic in drugs; some use coercion, intimidation, murder-for-hire, perjury and official misconduct to protect the mafia's assets; and others maximize profits with tax evasion and money laundering while others engage in various combinations of such criminal acts. But they are all fellow travelers seeking fortune and for some glory by furthering the Russian syndicate's expansion to the West.

One method of supplying the syndicate's sex business in America is tricking American men into sponsoring and financing Russian mafia prostitutes and procurers for U.S. residency and citizenship through, unbeknownst to the American, a fraudulent marriage. Because the trail of harm originates with a sham marriage rather than a fraudulent business transaction, the injury to property interests is no less serious.<sup>4</sup> A scheme to defraud is measured against a standard of "moral uprightness, of fundamental honesty, fair play and right dealing in the general and business life of members of society." Gregory v. U.S., 253 F.2d 104, 109 (5<sup>th</sup> Cir.1958). When criminal instrumentalities exploit human emotions of the heart rather than the pocketbook, a man does not lose his rights under U.S. law.

The fraudulent marriage for citizenship contrivance coupled with surreptitiously feeding petitioner Hollander narcotics is what ensnared him. Defendants Shipilina and Leonid Perlin decided in July 1999 to target Hollander as part of the Russian mafia's ongoing operations to infiltrate and expand its operations in the U.S. (Complaint ¶¶135-40, 153-54, 164). At the time, Hollander was working in Russia as a consultant-manager for Kroll Associates. After Hollander

---

<sup>3</sup> Nicholas Mundy is admitted to practice in New York State and Peter Petrovich is admitted to practice in Russia.

<sup>4</sup> "Congress sought a broadly based statute capable of addressing a variety of complex criminal problems." Michael Goldsmith, Judicial Immunity-The Ironic Demise of Civil RICO, 30 Harv. J. on Legis. 1, 27 (1993).

completed his contract with Kroll, the conspiracy to transplant defendant Shipilina to America succeeded in marrying her to Hollander in March 2000 in Krasnodar by, in part, secretly feeding him narcotics just before the wedding to assure he would go through with it. (Complaint ¶¶ 173-183).

The first predicate act that injured Hollander was defendant Shipilina's subsequent perjury on her visa petition form filed in March 2000 with the Immigration and Naturalization Service ("INS") at the Moscow Embassy. (Complaint ¶¶ 190-91). Had Shipilina told the truth about her past prostitution, money laundering and narcotics trafficking activities, Hollander would not have paid the filing fees, nor put his business on hold, nor supported his wife nor incurred expenses living in Moscow while the forms were processed. (Complaint ¶¶ 187, 188). He would have returned immediately to New York City to resume his business there.

The second predicate act in Russia that caused Hollander to pay more filing fees, continue to keep his business on hold and continue living in Moscow and supporting his wife was Shipilina's perjury on her visa application to the State Department at the Moscow Embassy in May 2000, which repeated her earlier perjury of not working as a prostitute, money launderer or narcotics trafficker. (Complaint ¶¶ 192, 193). Had defendant Shipilina told the truth, Hollander would have left Moscow then and not have incurred those expenses.

Damages from the business interruption due to Shipilina's predicate acts in fraudulently obtaining a visa are included in the loss of profits, interruption expenses and loss of business opportunities alleged in the Complaint at ¶ 907(a)-(c).

From the beginning, the Russian mafia's agent or front was defendant Shipilina. Initially, defendant Perlin and other organized crime members in Russia stood immediately behind her. But once she entered America on her fraudulently obtained visa, other comrades in crime came out from standing in the shadows to help directly and indirectly with the syndicate's plan of keeping her in America making money. On entering the U.S. in July 2000, defendant Shipilina became a conditional permanent resident, but she was not as secure from deportation as a permanent resident or naturalized citizen. (Complaint ¶¶ 205-212).

After a few months in New York City, Hollander realized that Shipilina was working as a prostitute and had married him just for a green card, but he was still unaware of the Russian mafia's involvement. (Complaint ¶ 220). Hollander demanded a divorce which would threaten Shipilina's chances of obtaining permanent residency, so Russian mafia members Mundy and Petrovich intervened. Defendants Mundy and Petrovich are attorneys who operate an immigration mill for fraudulently obtaining Russian mafia assets visas, green cards and naturalizations, in addition to managing numerous immigration matters for the Russian syndicate in New York. (Complaint ¶¶ 27-34, 221, 222).

In October 2000, defendants Mundy, Petrovich and Shipilina tried to connive Hollander into participating in a fraud on the INS so as to assure that defendant Shipilina became a permanent resident and eventually a naturalized citizen—Hollander refused. (Complaint ¶¶ 223-226). Defendants Mundy, Petrovich, Shipilina and others then resorted to further racketeering activities to prevent the discovery and exposure of the Russian syndicate's plan as it pertained to Shipilina in order to assure its success and keep hidden the Russian mafia's operations for transplanting more human capital to America.

The defendants: (1) attempted to intimidate Hollander into committing perjury before the INS. That amounted to tampering with an informant, witness or victim and mail fraud, which harmed Hollander's business reputation and incurred costs and time to defend against a fraudulently obtained order of protection and a false charge of extortion (Complaint ¶¶ 228-30,

234-41, 901, 906, 907 (e)); (2) used coercion communicated by interstate wire to avoid an annulment/divorce trial with the result of increasing Hollander's legal costs and injuring his business reputation (Complaint ¶¶ 243-45, 273, 901, 906, 907(e)); (3) interfered with pre-discovery investigations and silenced witnesses in Krasnodar to prevent Hollander from obtaining information for the annulment/divorce proceeding and the INS. Defendants engaged in tampering with witnesses, wire fraud, aiding a racketeering enterprise and money laundering that increased the cost and time of Hollander's investigation and necessitated a second investigatory trip to Krasnodar. (Complaint ¶¶ 256-60, 265-72, 903, 906, 907(d)); (4) threatened Hollander over interstate wire into not making a motion for a trial, which harmed Hollander's cause of action and amounted to tampering because the state court trial evidence would have been provided to the INS, which had initiated deportation proceedings against defendant Shipilina. (Complaint ¶¶ 280-84, 901, 906); (5) attempted to intimidate Hollander into silence before the INS, which was conducting an investigation of defendant Shipilina, and the Krasnodar prosecutor, who had indicted another defendant, all of which amounted to tampering and wire fraud that cost Hollander time away from his business and money to investigate and protect against the threats. (Complaint ¶¶ 285-90, 316-18, 906, 907(c) & (d)); (6) intimidated witnesses into recanting their testimony before the Krasnodar prosecutor by engaging in wire fraud, aiding a racketeering enterprise and money laundering that resulted in harming Hollander's business reputation. (Complaint ¶¶ 293-97, 903, 906, 907(e)); (7) bribed Krasnodar officials to close the case against one defendant, which required money laundering and aiding a racketeering enterprise that resulted in harming Hollander's business reputation and costing him money to reopen the case so as to clear his name. (Complaint ¶¶ 298-304, 902, 906, 907(e)); (8) attempted to have Hollander arrested twice on bogus charges that amounted to tampering and involved wire fraud with a cost to Hollander of over \$3,500 in attorney fees, time away from his business to defend himself and injury to his business reputation. (Complaint ¶¶ 306-15, 901, 906, 907(c) & (e); Supp. Complaint ¶¶ 22-24, 34-38, 43); (9) attempted to intimidate Hollander into staying out of Krasnodar and not prosecuting this RICO action, which consisted of tampering, aiding a racketeering enterprise and wire fraud that cost Hollander time and money in responding to the threat and injured his RICO cause of action (Supp. Complaint ¶¶ 2, 9-10, 12, 13; Complaint ¶¶ 906, 907(c)); (10) started disciplinary proceedings against Hollander to prevent him from proceeding with this RICO case, which involved tampering and mail fraud that harmed Hollander's business reputation and cost him time and money to defend against. (Supp. Complaint ¶¶ 49, 50, 52, 53, 55; Complaint ¶¶ 901, 907(e)); (11) obstructed justice by filing false and misleading documents in this case with the District Court that injured Hollander's RICO cause of action. (Supp. Complaint ¶¶ 59, 61-63, 70; Complaint ¶¶ 901). All of these racketeering activities by the defendants were intended to make justice too costly to pursue and thereby protect the syndicate's operations.

Whether discovery and exposure of the Russian mafia's operations was to come by way of testimony in the INS's removal proceedings against defendant Shipilina, a state court trial or Russian criminal case, it was on its way to federal law enforcement officials until the defendants' racketeering activities effectively shut down the legal process. By covering up the Russian syndicate's operations as pertaining to defendant Shipilina, the defendants also protected the activities of other Russian mafia members and associates (Complaint ¶ 882), which was why it was so important to "*prevent* Hollander from investigating [the conspirators]," Cir. Order p. 3 ¶ 4 (court's emphasis). In the end, the policy of promoting social stability and justice by

encouraging resort to the courts rather than to force or threats of force proved to be no more than nice sounding words.

My “Legal Argument” section focused on the Second Circuit exceeding its authority in rewriting the civil RICO statute as interpreted by other Courts of Appeals and the Supreme Court.

The first three arguments criticized the Second Circuit’s holdings on proximate causation. The Second Circuit has ruled nearly every which way on proximate causation rather than create a coherent standard that would assure justice is actually achievable in civil RICO cases. There’s no consistent standard because the Court wants to preserve its ability to exercise power in an arbitrary way, which allows it to dismiss a case it doesn’t like or keep one it does. By acting Orwellian in its logic and inverted in its reasoning, the Court can, and has, pulled out of the hat proximate cause arguments never intended by Congress. The Supreme Court even criticized the Second Circuit, “We do not believe ... it is a form of statutory amendment appropriately undertaken by the courts.” *Sedima, S.P.R.L. v. Imrex Co., Inc.*, 473 U.S. 479, 500, 105 S.Ct. 3275, 3287, 87 L.Ed.2d 346 (1985). Re-writing legislation is not what courts are suppose to do under the “rule of law” principle, which Aristotle first postulated and the Anglo-American legal tradition considers a guard against the despotic use of arbitrary rulings in individual cases to crush the human rights of government critics or nonconformists.

1. The Second Circuit’s decision in my case created a loophole in the statute that allows members and associates of a criminal syndicate to use RICO crimes to prevent the exposure or discovery of earlier RICO violations. After gangsters conspire and commit RICO crimes, they are now free to commit additional RICO violations to conceal their previous felonies and conspiracies. In effect, it’s amnesty for RICO crimes used to cover up prior offenses and contrary to decisions in other Courts of Appeals. The Court’s argument is so bizarre that were it applied to the Nixon Administration’s crimes of covering up illegal campaign activities that

occurred before the Watergate break-in, the cover-up offenses wouldn't matter because they were used to conceal the White House's earlier felonies and prevent investigations by the Washington Post, F.B.I. and Congress.

The Second Circuit cut the heart out of the very purpose of the civil RICO statute as stated by the Supreme Court, "The object of civil RICO is ... not merely to compensate victims but to turn them into prosecutors, private attorneys general, dedicated to eliminating racketeering activity," *Rotella v. Wood*, 528 U.S. 549, 557, 120 S.Ct. 1075, 1082, 145 L.Ed.2d 1047 (2000), to encourage victims to go after gangsters that government prosecutors don't, *Sedima, S.P.R.L. v. Imrex Co., Inc.*, 473 U.S. 479, 493, 105 S.Ct. 3275, 3283, 87 L.Ed.2d 346 (1985). Now, in the Second Circuit, victims are discouraged from fighting against gangsters harming their business or property because any additional injury caused by the mobsters trying to shutdown or hinder a private citizen's investigation or legal action will not be the fault of the criminals but of the citizen.

It's an interesting Catch-22: if a plaintiff allows his attorney to do what every lawyer initially does concerning a new case, start an investigation and legal proceeding, that investigation and proceeding can be hampered or shutdown by RICO crimes without such crimes violating civil RICO. But if a plaintiff prevents his attorney from starting an investigation and lawsuit, how is the plaintiff to discover what is going on and to prevent further harm or rectify pass injury through the judicial process? He can't, at least in the Second Circuit, because with its decision that court shifted fault to the victim who takes legal steps to put an end to the harm affecting his business or property. It's fight, you lose; don't fight, you still lose.

2. The Second Circuit rewrote the Supreme Court's rule requiring a "direct" injury to the plaintiff. Under the Supreme Court's "direct" injury test, the harm from RICO crimes cannot

pass through someone standing between the plaintiff and the illegal acts of the defendants. “A plaintiff who complained of harm flowing merely from the misfortunes visited upon a third person by the defendant’s acts was generally ... at too remote a distance to recover.” *Holmes v. Sec. Investor Prot. Copr.*, 503 U.S. 258, 268, 112 S.Ct. 1311, 1318, 117 L.Ed.2d 532 (1992). The Supreme Court requires this unimpeded flow of harm for practical reasons. To understand why, consider a chain reaction of car collisions:

The driver in the first car, a man from the 1950s, sees an amply endowed young broad standing alongside the road by her broken down car waving a handkerchief. She’s carrying a trendy-store bag, filled with cocaine for distribution in the next state, but the man doesn’t know that. As his car nears her, he starts slowing down, but she jumps in front of it to make sure he stops to give her a ride. Not being one to flatten a couple of large knockers, he steps on the breaks. The car behind him, driven by the typical pushy Feminazi is tailgating. She screams, lets go of the wheel, some how stomps on the break, but it’s too late and she slams into the guy’s car. The third car has a bimbo driver talking on her cell phone, switching the radio channels and stuffing her oral cavity with chocolates while she’s suppose to be hitting the brakes. She careens into the Feminazi. The drug smuggling broad then hops a ride with some other guy who comes along after the pile-up.

Imagine the problems in trying to determine the amount of damages the drug smuggling broad’s action caused the Feminazi’s car as opposed to the Feminazi tailgating or the amount of harm the broad caused the bimbo’s car as opposed to the bimbo’s extra-curricular activities while driving, or the amount of damages the Feminazi’s tailgating caused the bimbo’ car. It just becomes too complicated, but all the harm to the guy’s car flowed from the broad jumping in front of it in her effort to get the drugs to the next state, so he was directly injured.

In my case, the Second Circuit changed the law by using the legal reasons for preventing recovery by third parties, the drivers in the second and third cars, to avoid recovery by a plaintiff—the driver in the first car, me—who was on the frontline of harm emanating from the defendants' illegal acts.

3. The Second Circuit wrongly ruled that when the exact harm a victim suffered was not planned beforehand; the defendants weren't liable. This requirement of a "specifically-intended consequence" or precisely contemplated injury by the criminals when planning their conspiracy makes it near impossible to win a civil RICO case because of the unlikelihood of showing what the mobsters really thought. It also violates the Supreme Court's admonition that strict proximate cause requirements not be erected as obstacles to private RICO litigants, *see Sedima, S.P.R.L. v. Imrex Co., Inc.*, 473 U.S. 479, 497-98, 105 S.Ct. 3275, 3285-86, 87 L.Ed.2d 346 (1985).

The Supreme Court and other Courts of Appeals only require that a reasonable man in the position of the defendants would foresee the consequences of their RICO crimes. They don't have to plan the details of the harm they actually cause because their conduct creates a substantial risk of such an injury occurring. When a mother locks her young children in an unventilated car parked in the summer sun, she doesn't contemplate their death—then again maybe she planned it so as to have more freedom to ho the paper boy, however lets assume she didn't—but she sure created the risk of it occurring, and any guy would have foreseen the likelihood of death as a result.

Members of the Russian mafia aren't blind. They understand that when they initiate a scheme for making money illegally that contingencies will likely arise making it necessary to use additional crimes to lull a target, to prevent the mark from discovering and exposing their scheme, to conceal their operations and more. The harm caused by such criminals dealing with

contingencies may not be specifically intended in the beginning of their conspiracy, but in order to reach their goal, they willingly created a substantial risk of such harm occurring to the victim. That harm is foreseeable because it is inextricably intertwined with the success of the conspirator's plan, and whether an injury is reasonably foreseeable or anticipated as a natural—not specifically intended—consequence of racketeering acts is the rule under civil RICO. *See Holmes*, 503 U.S. 258, 267-70, 112 S.Ct. 1311, 1317-18, 117 L.Ed.2d 532 (1992); *Kaufman v. BDO Seidman*, 984 F.2d 182, 185 (6<sup>th</sup> Cir. 1993).

The RICO defendants in my case may not have specifically intended me “to cease work and thereby lose profits...,” *Cir. Order* p. 4 ¶ 1, but they created a substantial risk of that occurring by using a fraudulent scheme to make sure the Commie Ho entered America and stayed there generating money for as long as possible. Actually, the defendants couldn't help but anticipate that I, a lawyer and manager of a private detective agency in Russia, would become suspicious and start an investigation that might uncover their scheme, which would require them to engage in more RICO crimes that would cause out-of-pocket expenses, legal fees, distraction from my business and loss of reputation and goodwill in order to pressure me into giving up by making the price to my livelihood too great.

The Second Circuit's “specifically-intended consequence” rule has the result of allowing gangsters to use racketeering acts on an ad hoc basis to protect criminal operations as they move toward their goals because the harms from such acts were not part of their thinking when they embarked on their money-making scheme. That's not the law, but another manifestation of the Court's willingness to act in an imperial manner to further its bureaucratic interests in expediency and Feminism over justice.



The other arguments in my petition didn't deal with proximate causation but did attack the Second Circuit for more transgressions of the law as determined by the Supreme Court and other Courts of Appeals. Two of them were the Second Circuit's revision of the definition for injury under civil RICO and its use of two archaic procedural rules to help bounce my case out of court.

1. The Second Circuit goofed by ruling the defendants' interference with my annulment/divorce action, my defense to the fraudulent restraining order and my RICO case didn't violate the statute because lawsuits aren't property interests that can be injured. Civil RICO requires an injury to "business or property." 18 U.S.C. § 1964(c). The Supreme Court and other Courts of Appeals hold that the nature of a property interest is an individual entitlement determined by state law. *Logan v. Zimmerman Brush Co.*, 455 U.S. 422, 430, 102 S.Ct. 1148, 1155, 71 L.Ed.2d 265 (1982)(citations omitted); *e.g.*, *Isaak v. Trumbull Sav. & Loan Co.*, 169 F.3d 390, 397 (6<sup>th</sup> Cir. 1999); *Doe v. Roe*, 958 F.2d 763, 768 (7<sup>th</sup> Cir. 1992); *Living Designs, Inc. v. E.I. DuPont De Nemors*, 431 F.3d 353, 364 (9<sup>th</sup> Cir. 2005) (citations omitted). Under New York State law, a cause of action, case, lawsuit, defense or whatever you want to call suing or defending in court is a property interest. *Loucks v. Standard Oil Co. of N.Y.*, 224 N.Y. 99, 110, 120 N.E. 198, 201 (1918); *Hein v. Davidson*, 96 N.Y. 175, 177, 1884 N.Y. Lexis 481 (1884). As such, the harm to my lawsuits and legal defenses from the defendants' illegal acts were injuries to property and, therefore, violated civil RICO.

2. The Second Circuit also screwed up by following the District Court's lead in ruling that some of my factual allegations about injuries were "general." This is a characterization used to dismiss a plaintiff's allegations that harkens back to the beginning of the last century before the Federal Rules of Civil Procedure gave it the old heave-ho. In 2006, some lawyers and judges

still resorted to it for dismissing parts of a RICO complaint. The judges simply say “general” and poof the allegations are gone even though it violates the Courts of Appeals decisions in *Trollinger v. Tyson Foods, Inc.*, 370 F.3d 602, 615 (6<sup>th</sup> Cir. 2004), and *Mendoza v. Zirkle Fruit Co.*, 301 F.3d 1163, 1168 (9<sup>th</sup> Cir. 2002), as well as the Supreme Court in *NOW v. Scheidler*.

The Supreme Court held in *NOW* that “general factual allegations of injury resulting from the defendant’s conduct may suffice, for on a motion to dismiss we presume that general allegations embrace those specific facts that are necessary to support the claim.” *NOW v. Scheidler*, 510 U.S. 249, 256, 114 S.Ct. 798, 803, 127 L.Ed.2d 99 (1994)(quoting *Lujan v. Defenders of Wildlife*, 504 U.S. 555, 561, 112 S.Ct. 2130, 2137, 119 L.Ed.2d 351 (1992)(citations omitted). All that the federal rules required in a complaint in 2006 was that a party should set forth the allegations, which can be made with great generality. Wright & Miller, *Fed. Prac. & Proc.*: Civil 3d § 1215. Discovery, not the complaint, bears the burden of filling in the details. *Id.* The petitioners in *NOW*, as with me, alleged that the RICO conspiracy had injured their business and property interests and that a defendant had threatened reprisals. The Supreme Court concluded that “[n]othing more is needed to confer standing on [petitioners] at the pleading stage,” which means a RICO complaint should not be dismissed for making “general” allegations about injuries.

The Second Circuit, as did the District Court, used another archaic magic word, “conclusory,” to dismiss allegations for which its other reasons would appear too absurd even for that Court. Both the Second Circuit and District Court used *Kadar Corp. v. Milbury*, 549 F.2d 230, 233 (1<sup>st</sup> Cir. 1977) to eliminate some of my allegations as “conclusory,” but the two courts used *Kadar* misleadingly by deleting the qualification that if the allegations reasonably followed from the plaintiff’s description of what happened, then they are not “conclusory” and must be

accepted as true. The Second Circuit also ignored that a complaint can allege conclusions if they provide the defendants with a minimal notice of the claims, *Kyle v. Morton High School*, 144 F.3d 448, 455 (7<sup>th</sup> Cir. 1998). My RICO Complaint easily gave the defendants fair notice of the basis of the claims against them, after all it was 91 pages long and the Supplemental Complaint another nine, and both complied with the rules. “A complaint that complies with the Federal rules of civil procedure cannot be dismissed on the ground that it is conclusory or fails to allege facts. The Federal rules require (with irrelevant exceptions) only that the complaint state a claim not that it plead the facts if true would establish ... that the claim was valid.” *Higgs v. Carver*, 286 F.3d 437, 439 (7<sup>th</sup> Cir. 2002)(Posner, J.)(citation omitted).

My Supreme Court petition concluded that the Second Circuit exceeded its Constitutional power by amending the civil RICO statute:

“Since civil RICO first captured judicial attention, the lower courts [District and Courts of Appeals] have systematically sought to dismantle the civil remedy. Despite a series of Supreme Court decisions rejecting various judicially imposed limitations, the lower courts have continued to create numerous obstacles to civil RICO litigation.” Michael Goldsmith, Judicial Immunity for White-Collar Crime: The Ironic Demise of Civil RICO, 30 Harv. J. on Legis. 1, 41 (1993). No longer does the statute say what it says but now says what lower federal courts want it to say.

In this case, the Second Circuit continued to ignore Supreme Court guidelines by unduly narrowing the statute. But unlike the Second Circuit’s other cases that have created a virtual immunity for white-collar crime, *see id.* at 4, this case extends that immunity to Russian organized crime. Perhaps, it is understandable that lower federal courts would engage in judicial revisionism to avoid commercial fraud cases brought against some of society’s most respected businesses. But rejecting the claims of a directly injured victim for lack of proximate cause and specificity in a suit against the “FBI’s most formidable criminal adversary the Russian mafia”<sup>5</sup> eviscerates RICO where Congress most obviously intended the law to apply—against the archetypal, intimidating mobsters of organized crime.

---

<sup>5</sup> Russia’s international professional criminals have caused the most economic damage in the US. Scott O’Neal, Russian Organized Crime, FBI Law Enforcement Bulletin, May 2000. “Blending financial sophistication with bone-crunching violence, the Russian mob has become the FBI’s most formidable criminal adversary, creating an international criminal colossus that has surpassed the Columbian cartels, the Japanese Yakuza, the Chinese triads and the Italian mafia in wealth and weaponry.” Robert I. Friedman, Red Mafiya: How the Russian Mob Has Invaded America, p. xix. Unlike the former Communist Party that was out to bury us, today’s Russian syndicate is out to fleece us.

If the Supreme Court permits the lower courts to rewrite civil RICO, then any federal statute is vulnerable to judicial revisionism that undermines the legislative process. “It is easy by very ingenious and astute construction, to evade the force of almost any statute, where a court is so disposed .... Such a construction annuls ... the law, and renders it superfluous and useless.” Pillow v. Roberts, 54 U.S. 472, 476, 14 L.Ed. 228 (1851), 1851 Lexis 872, 1851 WL 6699.

No way Sotomayor ever read that last case or ever would.

### Younger Girl

From mid-February to mid-April, struggling to finish my Supreme Court petition, I kept up my Salsa and Hip-Hop classes as a counterweight to my chronically stupid life.

During a Salsa class, one of the Twins was more preoccupied than usual with her cell phone. She looked pensive and even upset. Something I had never seen before in either of those two bubbly personalities.

“What’s wrong?” I asked.

“It looks like the guy I’ve been dating is not going to take me to the senior formal. We’ve kind of broken up.”

Uh-ho, I thought. Columbia College’s senior prom and one of the Twins might miss it. Looks like trouble in paradise.

“What about your other beaus?” I replied trying to solve her problem—the foolish second nature of any man dealing with a pretty young lady in distress, which usually ends up costing him money, something of other material value or a lot of grief.

“The formal is in two days. Everybody has dates. He may change his mind, but if he doesn’t, I don’t have the time to find someone else.”

I wasn’t about to let that opening fade into eternity. “If he doesn’t come around, I still have a tux from my days working on Wall Street. I’d be glad to take you.” I said with earnest while inside licking my chops and grinning from ear to ear.

“You won’t need a tux, just a suit and tie.”

“I’ve got plenty of them, let me know.”

Boy would that be great, taking one of the Twins to the Columbia formal. The dance would have plenty arrogant, self-righteous, dogmatic teacher and professor chaperons who adamantly believed themselves the sole possessors of the truth, the harbingers of a new brave sexless person-kind and the founders of a thousand-year lefty Reich of hypocrisy and condescension—the true minions of the antichrist. Just think of all the effete, eastern-intellectual, white trash, elitist Feminazis I could thumb my gray hair at. What a great arena for violating the Feminazis’ number one taboo: middle-aged men shall not date hot young babes.

The Feminazis come up with all sorts of lame reasons for this totalitarian commandment: an older guy has nothing to talk about with a young girl or older broads are better sexually, or is that genderly. Idiots, just talking about the weather with a pretty young chick pumps out more adrenalin and endorphins in a man’s brain than anything a Feminazi could do. Besides, girls just out of high school or college have spent the passed 12 to 16 years working their brains to understand new concepts almost daily. If anyone can carry on an intellectually challenging conversation with new takes on old concepts, it’s them, not some old broad who reads romance novels, has been doing the same thing for decades or cites by rote Feminazi propaganda. The young mind is an inquisitive mind not yet crippled by habitual thinking. The Twins shear brainpower could beat any group of Feminazis. As for the sexual side, great artists don’t carve statutes of flabby old broads.

The real reason for the Feminazi taboo is to sucker men from listening to Mother Nature telling them to chase pretty young things. If older guys followed their genes, there would be few males for the over-the-hill Feminazis to inculcate with their lunacy by coercing the fools that

date them with: “you can’t have any unless you believe the penis is inferior to the c---.” Also known as “p < c” brainwashing. When will guys learn that it makes no sense to go against Mother Nature, who can’t be fooled forever, just to satisfy a special interest group that has their harm at heart.

My chance to bring the battle of liberty to a Feminazi stronghold never materialized. The Twin’s boyfriend took her to the dance, after which she promptly dropped him.

The Twins came to salsa class religiously through the spring. Not being able to decide which one I lusted after the most, I did a little probing to see whether my intuition could read the possibility of a ménage a trios, “So what happens when the both of you meet a hot guy? How do you decide who gets him?” The Twins were always on the alert for “hot guys” as they called them. Once upon a time, I was a hot guy, but now, nothing but cold blue anger.

“That’s up to the guy, he chooses,” they said.

“What if he chooses both?” They just giggled, not much to go on there, since they always giggled. Although the guy allegedly chose one or the other, it didn’t mean they sat by dumb and passive. They competed with each other, fiercely, for that hot guy.

The Twins always went to Club Cache after Salsa to practice the steps from class. Our instructor got his students in for a reduced fee that didn’t discriminate against guys--cool. I went as often as I could so as to dance with the Twins. They especially liked turning, which reminded them of when they were kids spinning around as fast as possible until they fell down. So I turned them as much as possible because they often lost their balance and needed someone, me, to catch them. My older brother’s instructions for catching a football came in handy: use both arms and your chest! Their hip-hugger jeans also tended to inch downward after a few spins, requiring me, always the gentleman, to help them pull their pants up.

The Twins unfortunately graduated and went to pursue their Ph.D.s in Chemistry at Berkeley. Lucky them, the University I had always wanted to attend out of high school, but the President of my hometown's Board of Education, my father, made sure the guidance counselors prevented that. When the Twins left, I gave them a Salsa CD and an album by "Fever Tree," a group they never heard of, but their parents probably had. The reason for "Fever Tree" was the group's biggest hit "San Francisco Girls," which was what the Twins would become, for me anyway. These two were the type of girls that make a man forget what he has to do, but unlike in the song, my future was in NYC and not San Francisco.

On finishing the writing of my Supreme Court petition, I discovered the cost to have it printed in accordance with the Court's rules would run well over \$5,000. An amount I could no longer afford. My steady girlfriend, Jihada, was not only a jealous mistress but a very costly one as well and would be the death of me yet. Since I was now a member of Bakunin's "lumpenproletariat," I made an *in forma pauperis* motion that would allow me to file my petition in a different format costing a couple of hundred dollars. In America, only the poor or rich can afford to use the legal system, but the poor generally don't know enough about their rights or are too intimidated to fight for them in court. That leaves the rich as the only group with meaningful access to justice American style.

Jeff knew my economic plight and after reading over my petition volunteered to contact a partner he knew in a prestigious Washington, D.C firm to see whether the firm might take my case *pro bono* because the issues were interesting. If so, the firm would pay for the printing, rewrite the petition and donate its time. The firm would also handle the oral argument, which I didn't like, because I wanted to verbally battle with the Supreme Court Justices. However, having that firm's name on the brief would increase the chances of the Court accepting my case

for review. The Supreme Court rejects review of 90% of *pro se* cases while refusing to hear 60% of cases in which the petitioner is represented by a lawyer that's not the petitioner. Jeff's contact tried to interest his firm, but the *pro bono* committee decided not to because the committee only took cases involving non-government organizations, that is, do-gooder groups. So I continued as a lone gun and filed my petition *in forma pauperis*.

Despite my poverty, I wasn't about to give up partying. One Friday night, I journeyed uptown with some of my fellow Salsa students to a Dominican club at 167<sup>th</sup> Street and Amsterdam Avenue. The place was small but the music great—all Latin. There were too many guys, however, but it didn't matter. Three chicks from class came along, so I danced with them and tried to hustle a native girl here and there.

The club had one restroom, so the best place to hit on the babes was while standing in line for the toilet. They weren't about to walk away if I didn't appeal to them. One, however, did ignore my opening lines, although it's hard sometimes in New York City to know whether the girl's not interested or doesn't speak English. Perhaps, I should have mentioned "Benjamin Franklin" that's a universal language. A second babe was polite, but the third really responded, laughing at me jokes while intermittently touching my arm—sure sign she's interested. Losing her after the commode, I went on a search and fine mission. Spotted her with some guy wearing an extra large gold chain. She saw me, smiled without the guy noticing, and I smiled back. Both of us knew and wistfully regretted we weren't going to hookup because the next step would have caused unpleasantness for all, so I went back to my friends to dance some more.

The next time on my way to the bathroom, some lady with a large posterior bumped into him and sent me tumbling over the bandstand onto the floor, flat on my back. As I laid there like a drunken Russian, a young guy, wearing a couple of gold chains, reached down and pulled me



to my feet. Thanking him, he nodded you're welcome. That's what I liked about places with the demographics of that club. The people were civilized. This young guy actually showed some concern. If I had fallen in an Eastside, preppy, white bar, they would have gone about their partying stepping over or on me. Education and money don't breed manners. But had I done something obnoxious or disrespectful uptown, I would have been bounced out on my head, which I would have deserved, as do so many arrogant yuppies in the downtown bars.

### Stupid Girl (Stones)

Since the Second Circuit ruled in the Russian mafia defendants' favor, they could recover from me the costs for printing their briefs. Under the Federal Rules of Appellate Procedure, the defendants had to request printing expenses within 14 days of the Appeal Court's judgment. No one did, although Flash Dancers' attorney Rudofsky made a motion for his client's costs after the 14-day deadline had passed. Rudofsky asked the panel of judges presided over by Sotomayor to excuse him for missing the deadline because:

"I was attending a Bar Association meeting in California when the Clerk's written notification regarding the submission of an itemized bill of costs was received and due to several sets of motion papers and briefs required to be filed in several other matters, immediately following my return to New York, I did not see this item."

Rudofsky screwed up because of a junket to California during the cold weather and bad eyesight and was now trying to make me pay for his mistake. He also tried to slip in a couple of charges not allowed under the rules, such as the cost of mailing Flash Dancers' brief to all the parties involved in the appeal.

My response told the Second Circuit Court that he belongs to a three member firm, which means when he's out-of-town or dealing with other cases, his firm must have procedures in place to prevent missing legal deadlines. At the very least, someone must open his mail and keep him apprised of court decisions, but if not, California has Internet service and Rudofsky could have

gone on line at any time to check whether the Court had made a decision, assuming he wasn't on the beach catching rays. Rudofsky was simply trying to shift the consequence of his firm's negligence to me by asking the panel to suspend the deadline required by the rules of procedure. No man should be allowed to escape the consequences of his own wrong, which is what negligence is. He represented Flash Dancers—not me. The harm Flash Dancers suffered because of its attorney's incompetence was not my fault. If anyone should pay for the printing, it was Rudofsky. In addition, I asked the Court for sanctions against Rudofsky for wasting the Court's and my time.

Rudofsky replied he “has been an honorable member of the Circuit Court Bar and practitioner in that Court for more than thirty (30) years.” So what! That's no excuse for violating the rules, if anything, he should know better, so I told the Court:

“What we have in Mr. Rudofsky's bill of costs motion and his opposition to plaintiff's sanction's motion is not a law firm that got caught in a force majeure but rather a firm that shuts down when one of its three members is voluntarily in California because of an inept system or no system for tracking cases. That is not the fault of the plaintiff or this Court, and it is unbecoming of a long-time practitioner before this Court to blame everyone else for his firm's mistakes.”

In the Second Circuit, however, who was at fault no longer mattered, especially with the man-hating Sotomayor at the helm of a panel. Sotomayor's panel denied my motion for sanctions and granted Rudofsky his costs, minus the ones he tried to pad his bill with.

The Sotomayor panel decision ignored the law in the Courts of Appeals. A court can excuse a party for missing the 14-day deadline, *Apex Oil Co. v. Belcher Co. of N.Y., Inc.*, 865 F.2d 504, 505 (2d Cir. 1989), but only “for good cause,” *Denofre v. Transportation Ins. Rating Bur.*, 560 F.2d 859, 860 (7<sup>th</sup> Cir. 1977). So the question was whether Rudofsky's junket to California coupled with his firm overlooking the papers notifying him of the appeal judgment amounted to “good cause”? Cases from a few Courts of Appeals said it did not.

In *Sims v. Great-West Life Assur. Co.*, 941 F.2d 368, 370 (5<sup>th</sup> Cir. 1991), the lawyers claimed they had “inadvertently misplaced the blank Bill of Costs form that accompanied their copy of the judgment” and had not become aware of the 14-day period until receiving a motion from another party. The Fifth Circuit found these excuses “patently insufficient to demonstrate good cause to enlarge the time limits in question.”

In *Denofre v. Transportation Ins. Rating Bur.*, 560 F.2d 859, 861 (7<sup>th</sup> Cir. 1977), the Seventh Circuit ruled “[t]he fact that the attorney of record was absent from his office [out of town on other matters] during the relevant times does not save the situation. We do not think that good cause is shown to enlarge a time period expressly specified in the Federal Rules of Appellate Procedure by the mere in attendance to the daily chores in one’s law office, particularly by a firm of fourteen lawyers.... If attention had been given promptly to incoming matters which ... involve deadlines, there was sufficient time at least to have filed within the fourteen days a motion for extension of time....”

In *Mollura v. Miller*, 621 F.2d 334, 335-36 (9<sup>th</sup> Cir. 1980), the Ninth Circuit stated, “in attendance to office chores and good faith mistakes are not sufficient to show good cause. Claims for costs should be filed promptly after the entry of judgment. The definite time limit must be scrupulously observed by litigants.”

The situations that the Courts of Appeals considered “good cause” are those beyond a lawyer’s power, such as receiving a judgment after the 14-day period had expired because of Christmas mailing delays, *Knoblauch v. C.I.R.*, 752 F.2d 125, 128 (5<sup>th</sup> Cir. 1985), or as a result of the shutdown in aviation, including U.S. Postal flights, following 911, *Tickmor v. Choice Hotels International, Inc.*, 275 F.3d 1164, 1165 (9<sup>th</sup> Cir. 2002).

Trips to sunny California and overlooking Court correspondence do not “good cause” make, but Sotomayor and her panel ruled it did. So I appealed by filing a petition requesting that all the judges in active service on the Second Circuit reconsider the panel’s decision. The full court can overrule any decision by a three-judge panel, but first a majority of the judges must agree to hear the matter, which requires a Petition for Rehearing En Banc. The Second Circuit grants very few en banc petitions a year, but I filed one anyway. A copy of my petition would be circulated to every judge, so I figured, assuming the judges actually read it, the petition would at least expose Sotomayor and her panel for making a decision clearly contrary to the law.

After filing my Petition for Rehearing En Banc, I receive a letter from Shatisa Gibbs, the employee in the Clerk’s Office, assigned to my case. Gibbs said the “petitiin,” her spelling, was not acceptable and wouldn’t be docketed because it had been filed too late after the February decision of my appeal, the Summary Order. Gibbs had obviously confused my petition requesting a rehearing by the full court of the panel’s decision on Flash Dancers’ motion for costs with asking for review of the original appeal decision, the Summary Order I was trying to get the Supreme Court to review. Okay, busy bureaucrats make mistakes, so I called her to clear up the misunderstanding.

Boy, what a nasty, arrogant and stupid girl she is. Gibbs said the rules didn’t allow me to file a petition for rehearing en banc of the Flash Dancers’ motion.

“Yes they do. I talked with the administrative attorney in the Civil Appeals Management Office, and he said such a petition could be filed for reconsideration of a panel’s decision of a motion. En banc petitions are not limited to the Circuit’s decisions of appeals.”

“I don’t care what he says. I don’t work for him. This is a different part of the court.”

“Are you an attorney?” I asked.

“No I’m not!” she said with hubris dripping in her voice. “I’m telling you, you can’t file that petition.”

Hanging up, I was amazed that an ignoramus like her worked in the Second Circuit, but of course, I shouldn’t have been. Additionally, I regretted having mailed her a “Thank You” card for doing her job the previous year. Should have sent her a white towel to wear on her head, so she could pretend at being a blonde, since she was just as stupid.

Rather than a towel, I sent her a motion asking the Second Circuit Court of Appeals to tell Gibbs to docket my Petition for Rehearing En Banc of Sotomayor’s decision requiring me to pay Flash Dancers’ cost. The Rules of Appellate Procedure state, “A majority of the circuit judges who are in regular active service may order that an appeal or other proceeding be heard or reheard by the court of appeals en banc.” My Petition for Rehearing En Banc of the decision on Flash Dancers’ motion fell under the “other proceeding” part of the rule, despite Gibbs’ proclamation to the contrary.

What a piece of work is female. They weasel a little authority and right away believe they can imperiously do what ever they want according to their emotional whim of the moment and expect men to genuflect in submission. There is a theory, so far proven true by the Feminazis, that power should never rest in feminine hands for they know no restraint in the harm they will gladly do men.

Eight days after filing my motion against Gibbs, the Second Circuit granted it. Nice to see the Court doing what it should, but the absurdity of the situation was simply amazing. In the 21<sup>st</sup> century in the United States of America a man has to file a motion with a Federal Court of Appeals to direct a female employee of that Court do her job.

You haven't heard nothing yet! Gibbs still refused to docket my Petition. In the face of a Second Court of Appeals directive, she still refused. It began to look like the Court had no power over princesses who worked for it of which Gibbs was clearly one with all the negative connotations.

Princess Gibbs then telephones me with her latest lunacy. "I'm calling regarding your petition. You filed a petition. Did you file a petition?"

Is she kidding, I'm wondering, but said nothing.

"That was my question because I see that you filed a motion to file a petition late, and I received a package of 25 copies. I think you assumed it was a petition but that's not actually a petition."

To myself in disbelief, can't you read ditz? It says Petition for Rehearing En Banc on the front page, and only petitions require 25 copies. Motions require a special cover, an original and three copies. But I was cool and said, "No it's a petition for rehearing en banc"

"Well, with a petition for rehearing, there is a limit of 15 pages [mine was seven] plus it has to have the decision attached to it [mine did], and it has to have a full caption [mine didn't]. Also, your petition is not fully numbered.

"What do you mean not 'fully numbered'?" She probably lacks the ability to count along with her inability to read the Court's rules.

"You have numbers, exhibit A then exhibit B and then it starts from numbers again."

That is how virtually every legal paper submitted to every court in the land is organized. The first part contains a narration of facts or arguments with the pages numbered in ascending order just like books, magazines and newspapers: 1, 2, 3, etc. The documents that the narration refers to are attached to the back as exhibits with each assigned a letter and arranged

alphabetically: A, B, C, and so on. Each document included as an exhibit also has its own page numbers in ascending order. Now is that clear children. Princess Gibbs apparently needs to repeat the third grade. What a blooming idiot, but I was still cool and said, “Let me get the procedural problems down here. Number one is ....”

The Princess cut me off, “Let me direct you to the Rule 40 [wrong rule, it’s actually 35] if you have any questions.”

“I’ll review the petition and see if all this is accurate and if it is, I’ll correct it.”

The only accurate criticism, however, by Princess Gibbs was that the front page of my petition didn’t list all the parties. That’s what she meant by it not having the “full caption.” Everything else she said was wrong under the Federal Rules of Appellate Procedure, but then again princesses have their own rules that change with the emotions produced by the unbalanced biochemical reactions in their bodies, or, this princess was intentionally jerking me around.

After listing all the parties on the front page, I got Alan send Gibbs another 25 copies of the petition. By having Alan mail the copies instead of me, I had proof of service from a third party in the form of Alan’s affidavit. I didn’t put it pass Princess Gibbs to claim she never received the copies. As an added precaution, I sent a copy of the petition’s cover letter outlining her screw-ups to the Chief Deputy Clerk. He was the highest-ranking employee in the Clerk’s Office who was “apparently” a man. Even so, I still had no faith that anyone in the Clerk’s Office would do his or her job.

After a month with still no docketing of my petition, I wrote the Chief Judge a letter—my fourth attempt to prod Princess Gibbs into doing her job. If the letter went nowhere, I’d start a “mandamus” action against the entire Court, another interesting fight: me versus the Second Circuit Court of Appeals, and a “Bivens” action against Princess Gibbs. Any citizen can bring a

mandamus suit, which means “we the people command” the Federal Government, or any part of it, to do what it’s suppose to do. The Bivens action allows citizens to sue individual Federal Government officials or agents for violating someone’s constitutional rights. Since the violation of a person’s rights by officials and agents exceeds the job authority granted by the Federal Government, only the individual can be dragged into court under Bivens, not the Government. Princess Gibbs’ refusal to follow the Federal Rules of Appellate Procedure and docket my petition as required by my motion that the Court granted violated my right of access to the Court, and if she did so because I’m a white, middle-aged man, then she also violated my right to equal protection under the 5<sup>th</sup> Amendment.

#### Subterranean Homesick Blues

During the battle with Princess Gibbs, I met a Rwandan aristocrat in my Hip-Hop class: tall, pretty, a model, Tutsi and friendly, although with a French boyfriend, as if that mattered. She was only in town for a month and had a strange schedule. Maybe not so strange, it was similar to the Commie Ho’s: up around 10 AM, lots of telephone calls in the morning and for the rest of the day out modeling or something. I called her mobile morning, noon and night, but she never answered. She hadn’t set up her voicemail, so I couldn’t leave a message, but she would see on her phone that I had called and would call me back. Unfortunately, I was always in the law library and never noticed she called until I left for the day. Then I’d try her again, which only started all over again the same whirlpool of man and girl futilely reaching out for each other. Her return calls eventually stopped, and I assumed she went back home.

One Saturday, Mark and I went to an Upper Eastside bar. I usually stayed out of these joints because the guys were embarrassments to men in general and white men in particular, which is where this stereotyping society places me. One bozo in a trio of blanco yuppies pulled



a thong out of his pocket and tried to adorn some girl's head with it. What a dunce, not because he treated the broad like trash, which is what she was, but because that move wouldn't get him anywhere. The point is to take a girl's thong off, preferably with your teeth, not put it on the opposite end of her body. The only female vacuum of interest to a man is her lower not upper one. Mark and I just looked at this pitiful spectacle and smiled.

Some distance off to my right was another mixed-up and insecure guy standing next to a hot looking blonde who was sitting alone at the bar. The guy just stood there, kept looking at the blonde but didn't say anything.

"Look at this guy wasting valuable real estate," I said to Mark. "Why doesn't he move, so someone else can take advantage of that strategic position? These white guys have been so brainwashed by the Feminazis that they don't know how to pick up chicks anymore."

"Here's your chance," Mark said. I turned and the guy was gone, yes!

Her name was Brynn, which rang a bell from somewhere in the dim reaches of my memory. At WNEW TV News, I knew an intern called Brynn but this was not she, maybe her daughter. We talked about nothing, laughed a little and then I hit a chord. This hot young thing was bored silly of the leftover college and graduate school scene in Upper Eastside bars. When I started telling her about the social world beyond preppydom—Salsa and Hip-Hop, life gleamed back into her eyes. She wanted something new, but would she have the courage to try. She gave me her email address, and I sent her information on my Salsa class, but she never showed. More important, however, after talking with Brynn, it dawned on me that I had stumbled into a gold mine of nookie. Every bar on the Upper Eastside was probably full of girls like her—tired of the confused androgynous guys created by the first generation of Feminazi mothers. All I needed to do was to go mine that gold.

A couple of weeks later, Mark and I headed to upstate New York to catch a performance of the Hip-Hop dance troupe his younger brother Chanan danced with. Mark wanted some videotape to put together a digital resume for the group. I wanted to hit on some coeds and get out of the City for the first time in two-years.

The performance took place at Mount Saint Mary College west of Poughkeepsie, a rural area of more cows than people, or so it seemed to me, and too much rain. The dance troupe consisted of some guys Chanan had gone to Mount Saint Mary with, including his girl friend Pilly, who choreographed the group, and another a hot babe. Some of the guys I knew from when they would come into Manhattan to hit the clubs. These guys could dance! In a club, they'd form a circle and one guy or girl would jump in the middle to do a routine. Soon a crowd would gather around to watch, which I would exploit to tell this or that girl I was the groups' lawyer, a little white lie.

At Mount Saint Mary while the group went over their routines, I walked around the student union trying to corner one coed or another. Talked to a couple but nothing more. The show included a number of groups singing or dancing but they were all a snooze except for Chanan's. The bimbo master of ceremonies clearly reveled in the attention of the spotlight, but she didn't have the mental ability to think of anything witty to say, so she kept conducting a geography lesson by rote. She'd say "Puerto Rico" and the audience cheered, then "New York City," more cheers, "Brooklyn," some cheers, "Bronx," almost as many cheers as "Puerto Rico." Her favorite, however, was "Puerto Rico." She repeated it nearly every time an act finished. What about "Paterson, New Jersey," I kept asking of my birth place—nothing.

After the show, we went to a diner for dinner with most of the troupe and a few other students. Pilly and I sat next to each other with Mark and Chanan opposite us in the same booth.

The others were at a table to the back of us and across the aisle. We ordered. While waiting, I noticed this white, middle-aged couple diagonally across from Pilly and me staring at the two of us with daggers of bigoted condescension. I stared them down and figured that was it. My pancakes came, but the couple was still staring hatefully at Pilly and me. That was it! I had put up with this garbage years earlier while hanging out with a co-worker at Columbia and, during law school in D.C., with the daughter of a couple of black panthers, but no more, and definitely not when I'm about to eat my pancakes.

I got up, walked over to these two dirt farmers with a cumulative education of the eighth grade, if they were lucky, and said, "I'm a lawyer," slapping my business card on their table. "If you two don't refrain from your bigoted staring at my friends and me, I'm going to drag you into court for harassment. Not state court, but Federal Court!"

They didn't say a word. The guy pushed my card towards to me to which I said, "Keep it, I've got plenty," and went back to enjoy my pancakes. The dirt farmers moved to another table. They should have kept going until they reached Mississippi.

After dinner, everyone was going to hit a club, but that was a few hours off, so I ended up crashed on someone's bed in a dorm room without heat. Hadn't, I been in this situation before?

Around midnight, we all met outside a club in Poughkeepsie in the rain. Mark and I stood in the back of the short line, the others in the front. Some arguing started at the entrance between Chanan's friends and two white bouncers, so at Mark's suggestion, I went to see what I could do. The bouncers said management's policy prohibited customers from wearing a track sweatshirt with a hood, which some of the guys with us had on. They volunteered to put their sweatshirts in their cars despite the rain when just then up walks some bimbo in a sweatshirt and hood. Into the club she goes without any problem.

“Hey, how cum she can go in with a hoodie but we can’t!” Chanan and his buddies demanded.

“Yeah, why do you let her in and not us? This is bogus!”

The bouncers wouldn’t answer, so I told one of them to get the manager, hoping some reasoning with the boss might resolve the situation, since most bouncers just do what they are told by management. Out comes this white, arrogant troglodyte who comes up with a new reason to keep the Hip-Hop guys out.

“They’re pants are too baggy!”

Looking down at the pants the manager was pointing to, they weren’t any bagger than the “easy fit” Levis that I buy. Just then, up walks some white guy in pants as baggy as those prohibited by the manager, and into the club this guy goes without any problem. Now I’m ticked off and Chanan and his friends’ tempers start to flare. I threaten to sue the club for discrimination making sure they know I’m a lawyer. The manager retreats back inside. One bouncer retorts, the guy they just let in wasn’t white but Hispanic, to which Chanan and his buddies justifiably start cursing the bouncers. Meanwhile, I’m trying to keep myself between the white bouncers and Chanan’s group whose expletives are justifiably escalating. One bouncer, with the other standing behind him, begins venting his bigoted based anger on me. Fine, I’m used to hostility. Besides, the last thing I wanted was a fight in which Chanan and his young friends ended up behind bars in a part of the country that time had forgot. So I stayed in the middle, certain the bouncers wouldn’t hit a gray-haired, white attorney. But if they did, I could feel Mark somewhere behind me ready to intervene to quickly end any altercation. Just then a cop car rolls up. Great, it’s the Gestapo, or more accurately “Bull” Connor’s fan club. I turned from the bouncers and started a little crowd control with my arms out stretched motioning

Chanan and his buddies down the street while they continued inveighing the bouncers who deserved that and more.

We made it to another club without the cops interfering, but by then I was seething inside. Not because some 80 I.Q. bouncer got in my face, but because ignoramuses can violate the rights of others without having their heads blown off. Mark said, “Try to put it aside,” so I had a couple of drinks and start doing a sandwich dance on this little white blonde friend of one of the hip-hoppers, Moss. He took up the rear and I the front with her in between—its new age dancing. But I wasn’t sure whether she was Moss’ girlfriend or just a friend until Mark pulled me off her. So I hit on a few other chicks without success. Mark and I caught a 3:30 AM train back to civilization. After my sojourn, I couldn’t understand why anyone would live in that part of the country. I’m white and I won’t.

### Money

In April, a legal battle arose over a small amount of money. Judge Castel in the District Court finally got around to focusing on my request for reimbursement from the defendants of my costs in using a process server. The defendants violated the Federal Rules of Civil Procedure by refusing to accept my Complaint by mail, which required me to use a process server. The defendants’ attorneys decided to ignore the mailed Complaint out of the usual low-life lawyerly effort to increase an opponent’s workload and expenses even when it violates the rules. Judge Castel instructed the defendants to submit reasons why they shouldn’t reimburse me for the costs to use a process server.

Only Dubin and Rudofsky put up a fuss. The others paid, except for the Commie Ho, no surprise there.

Dubin made two main arguments, first:

Plaintiff's letter application provides absolutely no details or supporting documentation and utterly fails to satisfy the burden of demonstrating that plaintiff served a waiver of service upon the defendants, that defendants failed to respond, that plaintiff complied with the procedures designated under Fed. R. Civ. P. 4(d)(2)(A)-(G) and that plaintiff incurred additional costs by defendants alleged failure to respond.

Dubin essentially said, "Oh yeah, prove it, and prove that my client didn't respond."

Proving what I did was easy, I kept records. But proving that someone didn't do something or as it's called in the law "proving a negative" is well near impossible. It's a tactic the Inquisition used against scientists and Protestants, Stalin used against military officers in the 1930s purge trials, the Nazis used against everybody and the Feminazis always use against men.

Take the Justice Clarence Thomas confirmation hearings. Some broad, backed by the Feminazis, accused Justice Thomas of doing this and saying that at sometime in the past. How could Justice Thomas possibly prove he didn't? He would need a 24-hour videotape of all his activities to show that what the broad claimed had happened, didn't—that's the negative, which is impossible to prove. In America, before the Feminazis pretty much took over, the broad's accusations would require additional proof before anyone took them seriously because one of the main tenets held sacred by the founding fathers of this country was that the accused are presumed innocent until proven guilty. The person making the accusations had to do more than just say believe me. They had to provide evidence, but that cornerstone of liberty has largely vanished for half of America's population. Now, the presumption is all men are guilty until they prove themselves innocent and all broads innocent no matter what they do.

My response included:

Bradley E. Dubin has represented the above defendants throughout this case and, assuming he has not lost all or most of the papers submitted, has in his files all the "details or supporting documentation" that show the plaintiff has complied with Rule 4(d)(2). Mr. Dubin's clients chose to ignore their "duty to avoid unnecessary costs of serving the summons," Rule 4(d)(2), and now Mr. Dubin chooses to ignore his duty not to conceal or knowingly fail to

disclose pertinent information to this Court, especially when he knows the details and supporting documentation that he now claims do not exist actually lie in his filing cabinets.

Mr. Dubin's objection falsely implies his clients did respond by stating the plaintiff fails to show that the "defendants failed to respond." The plaintiff, a lawyer admitted to practice before this Court, affirms the defendants did not respond; therefore, the burden shifts to Mr. Dubin's clients to show they did. Mr. Dubin's clients can do that by producing copies of the signed and dated documents of their response plus an affidavit that such were mailed to me.

Dubin's second argument claimed that his "logic dictates that plaintiff should not be entitled to recover costs of serving a frivolous action, which has been dismissed with prejudice and affirmed by the Second Circuit." To which I countered, "There's been no finding by any court that this civil RICO action is frivolous. Mr. Dubin's brand of logic is not the law," since the only way a defendant can escape payment requires a showing of "good cause," and just calling a suit "frivolous" is not that. Dubin lost that round, but what did it matter—nothing.

Rudofsky took a different tack. He claimed some of the costs I included weren't permitted under the rules, although they were. He also tried to mislead the District Court into believing a final decision had been made by the Second Circuit that I owed Flash Dancers the printing cost of its brief. Had the decision by Sotomayor and her panel been the end of the line in the Second Circuit, Rudofsky could offset the printing cost against the amount Flash Dancers owed me for my use of a process server. The Second Circuit, however, would not have a final decision until it dealt with my Petition for a Rehearing En Banc. Rudofsky lost on both issues but won on a minor one that saved Flash Dancers about \$60 while costing it a lot more just to pay Rudofsky to make the objections. But what did Flash Dancers care? The owners save millions every year just by cheating on the strip joint's taxes.

#### Don't Play That Song (You Lied)

The Supreme Court allowed the defendants until the end of May to file their briefs opposing my Petition for a Writ of Certiorari, but no one bothered, except Flash Dancers.

Rudofsky filed a two-page, rancorous memorandum to which he attached my entire Complaint and Supplemental Complaint, which he failed to print on both sides of the pages in order to make them look more voluminous than they were—a subtle trick to subconsciously ward off busy judges and clerks from a case. Rudofsky was playing the same old defense song: load a court down with papers not needed to decide the issues, since the appendix I submitted already contained the pertinent parts of both complaints, and use acrimonious words to stir emotions against me so as to deflect attention from the legal issues of Flash Dancers’ RICO violations. Basically, try the individual, not the issues—usual Russian and political correctionalist scheme to divert government officials from fairly weighing the arguments. Rudofsky even made clear in his memorandum that his tactics were intended to submarine the reasonableness of my petition’s argument. But why bother? The odds were already overwhelmingly in his favor that the Supreme Court would not grant review of my case. Maybe he needed the billing fees he charged for his memorandum to payoff his trip to California.

Rudofsky accused me of intentionally trying to deceive the Supreme Court with my abridged versions of the Complaint and Supplemental Complaint by claiming they disguised my “bald assertions, periphrastic circumlocutions, unsubstantiated conclusions, or outright vituperation and subjective characterizations or conclusory descriptions.” The Supreme Court’s rules, however, don’t require the inclusion of the entire complaint in a petition for certiorari, just those sections essential to understanding the petition’s arguments. Sup. Ct. R. 14(1)(i)(vi). Even so, if Rudofsky was right in his characterizations of my complaints, then why didn’t he list for the Court the specific allegations to which each of his objections applied? Because he couldn’t, but more importantly, he just wanted to plant the seed in the minds of the Justices and clerks that I was duplicitous. He knew full well that neither the Justices nor the clerks were going to go



through my complaints to confirm or disprove his accusations. Rudofsky was just using a Hitler tactic: if you're going to lie, tell a big one because the chances are people wouldn't bother to disprove it and they may buy into some of it.

Rudofsky's angry venting even claimed my case "patently incredible, patently vexatious and unreasonable"—not when it's against members and associates of the Russian mafia.

"The Russian mafia has been operating in the United States for years. Scott P. Boylan, Organized Crime and Corruption in Russia, Vol. 19, Fordham Int'l L.J., 1999, 2013 (1996). With the fall of the Soviet Union, the activities of Russian organized crime groups have spread to the United States and Europe. Id. 'Not only does the Mafia kill and steal in Russia, it does so in the United States as well.' Id. at 2001. Mafia members are involved in 'theft, extortion, money-laundering, gun-trafficking, drug running, prostitution, smuggling, loan sharking, contract killing and more.' Id. 'The U.S. Department of Justice has established task forces to deal with the Russian Mafia in New York, Los Angeles, and Miami.' Id. In 1994, the Russian mob had more than 300 members in the New York area alone, making it larger than the Bonanno, Colombo, or Lucchese crime families. Allan Friedman, The Organizatsiya: Brooklyn's Booming Russian Mob is Slicker, Smarter, and Much Meaner than La Cosa Nostra, N.Y. Mag., Nov. 7, 1994, at 50. Russia's international professional criminals have caused the most economic damage in the U.S. Scott O'Neal, Russian Organized Crime, FBI Law Enforcement Bulletin, May 2000."

Rudofsky also criticized my complaints as full of "subjective characterizations and conclusory descriptions." To which, I essentially answered, oh yeah, what about this!

"Flash Dancers openly operates a sexual bazaar in Times Square, New York City, which hardly puts it in a position to claim the allegations against it in this case are 'subjective characterizations or conclusory descriptions.' A quick scan of Flash Dancers' website, [www.flashdancersnyc.com](http://www.flashdancersnyc.com), reveals just some of the defendant's sordid activities. The site has been tamed down a great deal since this case started in the federal courts. Previously, the site sold pornography, escorts and the viewing of live sex acts over the internet in the same manner that New York Elites and Exotica 2000 did before U.S. Immigration and Customs Enforcement closed down those Russian mafia operations for prostitution and money laundering."

"Defendant Cybertech Internet Solutions, Flash Dancers' website administrator and designer, continues to advertise Flash Dancers at <http://www.stripclublist.com/c.asp?c=8534> with links to escort services that include travel packages sporting various prostitutes. Rather than continue to advertise such illegal interstate activity on its own website, Flash Dancers uses the vast Internet network operated by Cybertech for selling just about everything involving sex. Flash Dancers' other strip clubs, Private Eyes and NY Dolls, <http://www.nydollsclub.com/aboutus.asp>, are also advertised on the Cybertech network.

Rudofsky should like the analogy of Flash Dancers to New York Elites and Exotica 2000. Cybertech's Internet Network used to advertise Exotica 2000 before that whore operation was busted. Exotica and New York Elites, different names for the same call-girl service, operated in 22 states and overseas with over 200 hos, charging \$500 to \$1,500 an hour with the hos receiving 50%. The virtual brothel made \$13.5 million in four years. Not bad, I'm clearly on the wrong side.

Rudofsky's memorandum even came up with a new personal attack in the defense lawyers' strategy of "don't confuse the courts with the law, just demonize the opponent."

"Any notion as to Hollander's good faith is quickly dispelled by review of his public website [www.royandalina.com](http://www.royandalina.com), which has titled Stupid Frigging Fool: The tragicomedy of an American lawyer and a Russian mafia prostitute, and has dedicated "To Mother, May She Burn in Hell."

How'd he find that? He couldn't have hired a private eye, since I wasn't that important to a multi-million dollar operation like Flash Dancers and its Internet partner Cybertech—or was I? Maybe one of the goons at Flash Dancers was trolling the web, but could any of them read? Besides the site should have been under construction. Who knows, but there it was, and I had to deal with it because Rudofsky was relying on the maxim that the truth always hurts the one who speaks it, especially unpopular truths. Defense wouldn't do, so I went on the offense.

"Character assassination ... has all too often been successful for the unscrupulous by hiding their nefarious deeds under the cloak of patriotism, religion or other popular views [meaning motherhood] depending on the particular time period in America's history.

"Flash Dancers' attorney forgets that the purpose behind the Bill of Rights, and of the First Amendment in particular, is to protect unpopular individuals [me] from retaliation—and their ideas from suppression—at the hand of an intolerant society. McIntyre v. Ohio Elections Commission, 514 U.S. 334, 357, 115 S.Ct. 1511, 1524, 131 L. Ed. 2d 426 (Stevens, J.)(1995). 'The proponents of the First Amendment ... were determined that every American should possess an unrestrained freedom to express his views, however odious they might be to vested interests whose power they might challenge.' Feldman v. United States, 322 U.S. 487, 501, 64 S.Ct. 1082, 1089, 88 L.Ed 1480 (Black, J. dissenting) (1944)."

Actually, it was the character of my mother that was odious, not the words used to describe the fate she deserved. My memory still recalls my seventh summer on this planet when I stepped on a rusty nail. Mother refused to take me to the doctor for a tetanus shot, so I spent those bucolic months waiting for my jaw to lock. But I didn't need to go there, in my reply to Rudofsky. The Justices of the Supreme Court know that appellations do not make the person. There are plenty of mothers out there who murder their children, boil their babies and otherwise destroy the living. Procreation does not a saint make. Even Rudofsky knows that, but he's the type of hypocrite who will pander to any popular belief in order to attack his opponent's freedom of speech while vociferously arguing that Flash Dancers' selling of porno and girls on the Internet is protected by the First Amendment as a form of commercial speech.

When I showed my buddy Blackie the quote Rudofsky used from that website, he laughed and laughed saying, "That's a classic, that's a classic." A phrase from our high school rah rah days that we used as a compliment for a cool act of rebellion. Thank you Mr. Rudofsky for that trip back in time when my classmates and I regularly mocked the hypocrisy of conventional delusions.

A minor sideshow occurred while I was drafting my reply to Rudofsky's memorandum. Two days after his papers arrived, which were also mailed to all the other defendants, someone called my mobile that Sunday morning but left no message. To me, if a stranger doesn't leave a message, then he shouldn't telephone me in the first place, so I didn't bother returning the call to the number on my caller id. Around two in the afternoon, I received a call on my landline.

"Hello, is this Roy?" Some middle-aged man nervously asked.

"Who's calling," I replied, expecting a telemarketer. If it was, I'd tell him Roy's not here, which I always do with telemarketers.

“John Jacoby. I’m calling about a web site and looking for Roy.” Okay, not a telemarketer, but some clown trying to pump me for information about the [www.royandalina.com](http://www.royandalina.com) website that Rudofsky had learned about.

“Sorry, you’ve got the wrong number.” Having done plenty of these information-gathering calls when working in the news media, I was not about to participate in one that would likely cause me grief.

“I’m from the Federal Government,” Jacoby said. That was a mistake because I started to draw my verbal sword. Rather than scaring me, anyone from the Feds makes me want to punch them in the face. Couldn’t do that over the telephone, so I readied a verbal assault.

“Are you recording this?” I asked.

“No,” he lied. “I’m not calling on official business, just trying to figure something out about a web site.” I’m sure he was, but when he said the call wasn’t official and failed to identify the federal agency he worked for, I knew he was either a private eye or mobster.

“What’s your number,” I asked looking at my caller id, which registered (212) 212 1212.

“It’s (212) 212 2121.”

“Okay, that’s (212) 212 2121, got it!”—another lie.

“It’s a federal number,” he added. No it wasn’t, but I’d call to see whose it was.

“So you work Sunday?” Now I was just toying with him. I had worked for the Federal Government and no one worked on a Sunday.

“I work every day.” Maybe true, but not for the Federal Government.

“Too bad, take it easy,” and I hung up. Immediately my mobile rang. It was Jacoby again calling from (212) 212 1212, but I didn’t answer. Dialing on my landline the numbers from my caller id (1212) and the one he gave me (2121), I received a telephone company

recordings that my calls couldn't be completed as dialed. Neither of the numbers existed. For the number that showed on my caller id, Jacoby had used a "black box" that allows a caller to send any number he wants to the receiver's caller id. Checking my mobile again more closely, I found that the first of Jacoby's calls came early in the morning. An obvious but lame attempt to catch me half-asleep in the hope I'd spill my guts. Jacoby also had made a second call to my mobile around noon, which I had missed completely. On that one he left a message.

"Yes, how are you? I was looking on your web site. I believe you and I can trade some information. As you'll notice my phone number is not trackable or traceable, so I'll call later on today and would appreciate it if you would pick up the phone call. I'm in the United States. I'm affiliated with certain government agencies, and I could use some of your information for a pending case, I guess you could say that is in the works. I'll try you later. Thank you very much. And have a great day."

At least he didn't say, "Have a nice day" as did John Madison a.k.a. Pierre.

Two days later I received an email from Onn Rapeika, ORapeika@Gti.Net:

"I find your site story very interesting but now site down and not working I not get chance to read all story, but story very good. Why site down? Can you please put back up? Or can you email me story? I on chapter 4. -Oveon Csheen"

To which I replied,

"Do I know you? I don't understand what you are talking about, please explain."

Of course, I did understand that it was the same guy using a different tack. What I couldn't figure out was who was behind it and why. Maybe Rudofsky, but he had already gotten into the site, which was now under construction as it should have been all along. If he or any of the defendants wanted the story, all they needed to do was go to [www.been-scammed.com](http://www.been-scammed.com). They'd have to wait a while until the serialization was complete but so what.

That weekend, as usual, I checked the advertisements for various clubs to decide which ones were possibilities for hunting. The advertisement for club Deep assured I wouldn't be attending:

“Standard Saturdays. Open Bar. Hosted by Supermodel: Angelina Shipilina.”  
You mean “Super Slut” don't you. How could she host anything besides whoring, she could barley speak English, and a Supermodel she wasn't. She, like all broads, was just constitutionally unable to tell the truth. The club should have at least changed its advertisement from “Open Bar” to “Open Ho.”

### Heat Wave

Global warming finally turned the beginning days of summer in the City into the way they were before global warming—hot and humid with no place steamer than my Hip-Hop class. One sweltering Friday, most of the girls showed up in class dressed for Siberia: full-size shirt over a halter or bathing suit top and baggy sweat pants. Didn't they check the thermometer? They knew Broadway Dance didn't have air conditioning. Were they self-conscious because of a gray-haired chronic luster in the class trying to move up to molester? Who knows, but after ten minutes in that rotisserie, the shirts came off, the remaining tops rolled up to just below their boobs, the sweat pants down to the beginnings of their thongs and their pants' legs, or at least one in deference to fashion, pulled up as high as possible. The sweat started beading on their bare backs, firm bellies and around those breasts that still defied gravity. With every move, more sweat broke out, cascading into glistening streams down the curves of power Mother Nature had given them. One girl's thong had moved off from the center of her rear, so I stationed myself behind her for a time until distracted by another babe steaming up my eyeballs. They all looked so delicious that I hit on this one and then that one; I just couldn't make up my

mind—cherry bonbons, gummy dips, dots, malt drops, juicy fruit, caramels, and chocolate squares. Oh, to lick the sweat from the snatch of every one of those babes. But as the old song advises, “Better go home son and make up your mind,” so I tried to focus on one of Bev’s assistants, a teenage something or other. She was friendly and laughed at my jokes, but I never made it to first base with her.

Salsa class brought a new opportunity one night in the shape of a tall Latina. Unlike Hip-Hop, a good deal of the dancing in Salsa class is with a partner. Everyone gets to dance with everyone. The instructor tells the girls to rotate to another guy, after repeating a routine with one partner. It reminded me of the make-out parties we used to have in sixth-grade, except then everybody was sitting and while kissing copping a feel. No kissing in Salsa, but now and then subtly copping a feel.

When the Latina rotated to me, I introduced myself.

“Hi, I’m Roy,” and held out my hand.

“I’m sorry, what’s your name?” she asked. Sometimes girls do this intentionally to throw a guy off balance.

“My name is Roy, but I usually just introduce myself as a lawyer.” She laughed and became friendly, thinking me overflowing with Benjamin Franklins of which I no longer had, but I wasn’t going to tell her that. Deception? Sure, but girls lie every chance they can to get what they want.

The Latina wore a tight, low cut top with tiny straps holding up large breasts of which ample amounts were visible. We started dancing the steps our instructor showed, and halfway through the song, I realized I had been staring at her tits the entire time. Not to be a complete cad, I shifted my revelry to her face—very pretty, but I could feel the tug on my eyes from those

boobs as though they were magnets. I struggled to keep looking at her face so as to increase my chances of obtaining a closer inspection of those glands later on. Now I understood what Leni Riefenstahl meant by “Triumph of the Will.”

When the song ended, our instructor went over a new step. The Latina checked her mobile with its Technicolor screen.

“Does that take pictures?” I asked.

“Sure.”

I pulled out my mobile saying, “Mine doesn’t. It’s pre-millennium,” to which she laughed, a little.

“Did you get that in 1999?” she asked.

“Good guess, that’s when I picked it up, but I can’t see anything on the monotone screen because I’m wearing contacts.”

“You can’t see anything with your contacts?”

“Oh, I can see you, and if you were on the other side of the dance floor at the Copa I could pick you out.” She smiled at the compliment.

Moving closer to her under the guise of showing her the screen on my mobile, I said, “But when I go through the menu looking for a name, I can’t see a thing.”

“You mean you can’t read any of this?” she pointed, as I felt the heat radiate from that luscious Latina body with dark skin.

“Can’t make out a thing,” and I couldn’t.

“So how do you use it?”

“I ask some pretty girl to help me.” She gave me one of those knowing girl smiles.



When class ended, people stood around listening to our instructor give some information on upcoming events and Salsa techniques. Pulling out my mobile to make a call to this girl, I needed someone to find the number. So, I walk around with my mobile in hand looking for help and over comes the Latina with a smile.

“Do you need help?”

“Yes, I’m trying to increase the volume to high, would you do it for me?” I wasn’t so dumb as to ask her to find the girl’s number.

“Sure,” she said, taking the mobile. We flirted some more until the arrangement of people shifted while our instructor kept talking. Somehow I found myself in the middle of the dance room talking with two guys, including one from Russia with whom I chased girls when his wife was visiting their home country cheating on him. When I saw the Latina standing by herself near the room’s entrance, I left these guys to make my move for her telephone number or talk her into going to the Salsa club the class usually hit after our two-hour practice.

She smiled and said, “You’re a good dancer.”

I wasn’t, I stunk, but graciously accepted the compliment as one of her tactics to move our flirtation along. “Not as good as you. How long have you been taking classes?”

“Three months, but I grew up with the music.”

We were connecting, the pheromones were doing their job, but then my peripheral vision caught the gleaming, razor-sharp pendulum of the Matrix swinging in my direction again. This time it took the form of the two guys I had just left in the middle of the room. There they were, standing right next to me with grins spread over their mugs as they stared at the Latina trying hard to work up the courage to say something not completely inane. Unbelievable! These guys

had followed me over to the Latina. I left them talking to each other so that I could hit on her, but they decided to interfere with my hustle.

The vast, vast majority of guys always do that, but only to a buddy or some other man they know. A guy will never, unless drunk or retarded, interfere with some stranger who's hitting on a chick, even if he saw the girl first or was previously hitting on her. Why, because he doesn't want a punch in the nose or he's afraid the girl will snub him. But when guys see one of their buddies or acquaintances hustling a pretty girl, the fear of a fight doesn't exist and neither does the dread of rejection because they already have an in with the girl through their connection with the guy who did the hard work of initiating the conversation. Insecurity toward girls also causes those guys' egos to push them into interfering. They're trying to prove to themselves and their buddy that they too can hustle girls, but they can't, unless their buddy breaks the ice first. It comes down to cowardice and self-doubt with a lot of stupidity mixed in.

Guys should realize that as soon as a girl has more than one man competing for her, she's at her most powerful. She'll grin with delight, play coy and even scold as she banks one guy off another. In the end, she'll either choose the highest bidder, pick one this week and another the next or reject them all while her ego inflates with the conviction that she is fulfilling her divine right to make guys stumble, bumble, mumble and trip over each other for her favor. That was a game I hadn't played since high school, and wasn't about to start again now no matter how big the Latina's pillows, so I went to the men's room ticked-off not at the girl but my alleged pals for ruining my hustle. And ruined it was, because by refusing to play her competition game, I insulted her. She knew why I left and likely said to herself, "He'll be back and when he is, I'll play with him like he was a mouse. How dare he not curry my favor!" I didn't go back.

A couple of nights later, an American guy and I went to Gonzales y Gonzales. A hot Latina babe paused to stand in front of the two of us. She'd have to wait until the second coming before the American guy hit on her, so I did. We flirted a little. She was looking for her friends in another part of the bar, so I temporarily halted my hustle figuring to pickup on her later by asking for a dance. She starts to go and immediately the American guy pounces. She fends off his overtures and moves on.

“What are you doing?” I ask him, really ticked-off.

He cavalierly answers, “You stopped talking to her, so I went after her.”

“Don't you realize; I was setting her up for later?”

“Everybody does whatever they want,” he says with *laissez-faire*, social-Darwinian disdain. That was something I had heard before, mainly in the former Soviet Union where nearly every individual religiously believes they are superior to all others. Such arrogance, really a product of insecurity, justifies in their eyes the astonishing lack of ethics and honor routinely exhibited by people from that part of world. They're willing to grovel like dogs, just to maneuver themselves into a position to rip someone off, take an unfair advantage or plunge a knife into another's back both literally and figuratively. You can take the person out of the former Soviet Union, but you can't take the former Soviet Union out of the person.

“Okay,” I said, “if everybody does what they want, go hit on those two blondes sitting at the table over there. Go ahead! You drool every time you look in their direction. Walk over and hustle them.”

This superior specimen of man just stood there with his brain short-circuiting.

“Go ahead hit on them,” I dared again. “I’ll even give you a line.” He just looked at them and turned to watch the dancers. Some people can only compete with a knife from the shadows.

To rub it in, I walked over to the two blondes, both very pretty, threw my opening line and started a fairly long conversation. Both were professional ballet dancers with the American Ballet Theatre—that was impressive. We talked about the Kirov and Bolshoi in Russia, laughed a little, and then I gave it a rest until the band started. With the first salsa tune, I started dancing with the taller of the two ballerinas. Leia couldn’t dance salsa, but that didn’t matter, since neither could I. She could, however, turn. Just one little movement of my hand and whooos, she was around in a flash with her arm seductively stretched above her head. Throughout our dancing, she wore this wide soft smile, probably her stage persona, but it still made me smile. Beneath her dress, I could feel a body of iron-band muscles. I wanted more, but she was moving to Seattle that Thursday. Too bad Mark wasn’t there. Had he been, I would have brought him into my earlier conversation with the two ballerinas, which might have led to a fun night for all of us. Leia was not about to leave her friend, typical for two girls out on the town, and I wasn’t about to help the American guy by introducing him to Leia’s fellow ballerina. After that night, I avoided hanging out with him. It’s tough enough picking up girls without having someone ready to interfere every time you’re on a roll. Besides, I’ve had my share of experience with the lack of scruples of insecure people.

The Chief Judge of the Second Circuit, as men born in the middle of the 20<sup>th</sup> Century always do, came through concerning my letter of complaint about Princess Gibbs. He referred the letter to the lady in charge of the Court’s Operations: probably one of those few females of competence so secure in her womanhood that she doesn’t need an emotional hatchet to deal with

men. She sent me a very courteous letter of apology, something Feminazis like Gibbs are incapable of. Her letter confirmed that my Petition for Rehearing En Banc should have been sent to the full Court back in April and was now, months later, before the Court. The real justice came when she said she had a little sit-down with Princess Gibbs to explain how my petition should have been handled. That ought to teach Gibbs a lesson, for she sure needed one. Supreme Court Justice Anthony Scalia once wrote in a Court of Appeals decision, “No matter how bad someone is, [she] can always be worse.” But that’s not much solace when dealing with the Clerk’s Office at the Second Circuit of which Gibbs is just one example of belligerent incompetence. The Court eventually denied my petition, but at least some bureaucratic bimbo driven by feminine malice didn’t succeed in abusing her authority to obstruct the rights of a man. As for the money owed Flash Dancers for its printing costs, I never paid it. What was the man-hater Sotomayor going to do—send me to Guantanamo? Hot, humid climates were preferable, and, if I escaped, I’d get to ride around in 56 Chevys with hot Latinas and smoke Cuban cigars.

Before summer ended, I had lunch with Alan and one of the best tort lawyers in New York City. The lawyer and I had not seen each other since we were political enemies in the Riverside Democratic Club decades earlier. Despite our political warring, I always liked this guy and appreciated his superior verbal acuity in cutting me to ribbons. He was not someone to argue with, and all these years later had not lost his edge, especially when dicing bloodless, bureaucratic disciples of collectivism who overlook individuals in favor of “the people.”

Our waitress was very pretty, and I detected a familiar accent.

“Are you from Russia?” I asked, unable to stop myself.

“Yes, how could you tell?”

“By your accent. Where in Russia?”

“The southern part.”

Oh great! Would I never escape the curse that came from that part of the world?

Pausing, but I had to know and asked “Anywhere near Krasnodar?”

“Yes, in a little village outside of it.”

The Commie Ho had lived in a little village outside Krasnodar where I had visited her for the millennium celebration, which felt like two hundred years ago. The end to this conversation became apparent the moment I mentioned the name of the Ho’s village. “Is it Adygea?”

“Yes,” she said with great surprise, but I wasn’t. “Do you know Adygea?”

“I’ve visited there in another life.”

“That’s amazing that you were actually there. I’ve never met anyone here in America who has even heard of it!”

“I wish I hadn’t.”

“Why?” her pretty face asked with pretended concern.

“That my dear is a long story.”

### Hey Joe

The U.S. Supreme Court made its decision to deny my Petition for Certiorari on September 25<sup>th</sup>—the birthday of the Commie Ho’s mother. From the dungeons of the Queens Family Court to the alleged lofty heights of the Supreme Court, there is no justice in feminarthy America for a man.

“Hey Joe” was suppose to be the final solution to this story, but I got distracted by an ancillary Jihada that grew into a crusade against the Feminists.

## Stupid Frigging Fool

By Roy Den Hollander

Part 8

Ladies' Night

Christmas Eve 2006, bitter cold, and I'm standing in line with Mark and his younger brother waiting to get into club "Deep" on West 22<sup>nd</sup> Street. As we shiver, the girls in fashionable nothings strut to the head of the line, ignoring us, and enter for free—it's "Ladies' Night." Guys have to pay \$20 and wait in the cold until the doorman allows them the privilege of paying to enter. In effect, the men are financing the girls' partying because the guys make up the price the girls don't pay.

Mark's brother grumbles, "How cum they get in for free, and we have to pay? Not just to get in, but to buy them drinks. They're the ones who live for sex; they should be paying us instead of acting like hos."

The other guys in the line agree, and a case from law school pops into my head: *Seidenberg v. McSorleys' Old Ale House, Inc.*, 317 F. Supp. 593 (1970). In 1969, a couple of PC-Feminazis from NOW, the National Organization of Witches, walked into McSorleys' Ale House on the lower Eastside. The bar didn't have a doorman to stop them, just a policy of "men-only"—given the trouble girls often cause after a few drinks bought by some sucker. The bartender refused to serve them and escorted them to the door. The federal court in Manhattan ruled that the State's involvement with McSorleys' business was significant because of

pervasive regulation by the state of the activities of the defendant, a commercial enterprise engaged in voluntarily serving the public except for women. Furthermore, the state has continued annually to renew defendant's license over the years despite its open discrimination against women, without making any effort in the exercise of the broad authority granted it, to remedy the discrimination or revoke the license which defendant must have in order to

practice [discrimination]. . . . [T]he state's regulatory power in this area is far broader than in the case of an ordinary lawful business essential to the conduct of human affairs.

Because the State was pervasively involved, Equal Protection under the 14<sup>th</sup> Amendment applied, so McSorleys' sex-discrimination was declared unconstitutional for treating guys and girls differently, and the bar had to open up to girls.

Club Deep's Ladies' Night and all the other nightclubs in the City holding Ladies' Nights were just as pervasively controlled by the State as McSorleys' but treated guys differently than girls—a guy had to pay money to enter a club while a girl did not. Looked like a potential lawsuit for fighting against the discrimination of men and preferential treatment of females—the real objective and result of PC-Feminism. So I filed the idea away, and my buddies and I went to another club that was free for both sexes that Christmas Eve.

In May the following year, Mark and I were standing outside the club Taj on West 21<sup>st</sup> Street, which the Police closed to traffic on Saturday nights because there were so many clubs overflowing with partiers. He was trying to call the hostess inside the club, a Swedish blonde to whom I had introduced him, to see if she could get us in for free. In the middle of the street were a hot black haired girl and a blonde, so while he dialed away on his mobile, I walked over and tried to pick them up. April, the black haired girl, was luscious. The discussion somehow came around to Ladies' Nights, and I told them of my idea to sue clubs for discriminating against guys.

April said, “And where will you find the time to bring such a suit. You lawyers are always busy.” She was right, and by that I knew she was dating a lawyer, which was probably why she didn't relinquish her phone number—she had her sucker hooked.

At that particular point in time, however, I did have the time, so in June 2007 I filed a sex discrimination lawsuit in the U.S. Southern District Court of New York against a handful of



nightclubs running Ladies' Nights. That was the same court that had decided the McSorleys' case.

With the McSorleys' case as precedence, I thought I had a sure winner, since the only difference in the cases was that guys instead of girls were discriminated against by bars and nightclubs that the State "pervasively" regulated. In addition, my case presented an argument not used in the McSorleys' case—bars and nightclubs were carrying out a public or state function, so equal protection of the Constitution applied. The Constitution only applies where the government is involved, whether federal, state, or local. "[W]hen private individuals or groups are endowed by the state with powers or functions governmental in nature, they become agencies or instrumentalities of the state and subject to its constitutional limitations." *Evans v. Newton*, 382 U.S. 296, 299 (1966). Government involvement or state action may be found in situations where an activity that traditionally has been the exclusive, or near exclusive, function of the state has been contracted out to a private entity. *Jackson v. Metro. Ed. Co.*, 419 U.S. 345, 352 (1974); *Horvath v. Westport Library Ass'n*, 362 F.3d 147, 151 (2d Cir. 2004). Guess what activity the states have always had exclusive control over—alcohol. The power of the state to control not just the sale and consumption of alcohol but the circumstances in which such occurs is an exercise of the ultimate sovereignty of a state. See *Crane v. Campbell*, 245 U.S. 304, 308 (1917). New York chose to delegate some of its exclusive functions to bars and nightclubs for operating premises where persons could purchase and consume alcohol. Bars and nightclubs, therefore, exercise a public or state function by which they are entirely dependent upon state decisions to operate successfully, See *Flagg Bros.*, 436 U.S. at 158-59, so equal protection under the Constitution applies.

I also thought the media would ignore the case because the issue was discrimination against men.

The media, however, jumped all over it and me. But I enjoy being pilloried by public opinion—a sure sign that one is right as H.L. Mencken would say.

The real surprised, however, came in court before Judge Miriam Cedarbaum at the preliminary conference. Judge Cedarbaum, an avowed PC-Feminist, started by laughing and mockingly saying, “This is an unpopular case.” To which I agreed, and responded, “So what, popularity has nothing to do with constitutional rights.”

The hearing went downhill from there with Cedarbaum interrogating me the way TV talk show hosts do their non-PC guests. She’d ask one question that I’d start answering, then interrupt with another, so I’d start answering that one, then she’d interrupt with another, and all the time I was trying to get back to finish my answer to the first question but never did because the questions and interruptions kept coming.

Cedarbaum’s questions were based on papers that one of the defendant nightclubs had submitted a few days earlier as part of its motion to dismiss; that is, to throw the case out in the first inning. Under Cedarbaum’s rules, oral argument on that motion to dismiss was not scheduled to occur for another three weeks so as to give me time to put together my papers and arguments in opposition to the defendant’s motion. Preliminary conferences, unlike oral argument on a motion to dismiss, are used for case management, to set the case’s schedule and determine what issues can be settled.

Surprisingly, or perhaps not so surprisingly for a PC-Feminist, Cedarbaum treated the preliminary conference, for which I had all of one day’s notice, as the oral argument on the motion to dismiss. Cedarbaum and the defendant nightclubs had obviously laid a trap for me,

figuring they could intimidate me into withdrawing the case by assuming I would not have any counter arguments or cases, since oral argument on the motion to dismiss was not for three weeks. But they goofed. Little did she or the nightclub attorneys know that I knew more about the law for this case than they.

The turning point in the conference came when Cedarbaum hostilely declared, “You have no authorities for this case!”

“Oh yes I do!” and I cited not only the McSorleys’ case, but a U.S. Supreme Court case that had used the McSorleys’ case—cases that the female defense attorney had left out of her papers, since they didn’t support her position. Something lawyers aren’t suppose to do, but then when did a PC-Feminist ever follow the rules. Cedarbaum ignored my cases at first, and said in a mocking fashion, “Are you a lawyer?” She knew I was, since I was admitted to the Bar of the Court where she was a judge and my complaint said as much.

Enough was enough, and I replied, “I move that you disqualify yourself from this case for bias toward me, bias toward the class of men that I represent and failure to recognize cases that are more relevant than those cited by the defendants.” That put her back on her Feminist heels, and she then asked for the citations to the McSorleys’ case and the U.S. Supreme Court case. Later on with some civility, she said, “You must respect me.” To which I replied, “I do, but you also have to respect me.”

That 40 minute battle, in which the defendants’ attorneys said virtually nothing, reminded me of arguing with a girl that I had gone out with too long. It also convinced me that Cedarbaum, in true PC-Feminist fashion, would find a way to rule against equal treatment for men, especially when to rule otherwise would cost girls money, and so she did.

The U.S. Court of Appeals for the Second Circuit upheld her ruling and the U.S. Supreme Court refused to hear the case. The courts distinguished the *McSorleys*' case by ruling that the state's involvement did not occur at the door but somewhere between the door and the bar. Baloney! The state prohibits minors, drunks and terrorists from walking through the door of a bar, the state requires clubs to keep the lines of customers waiting to enter from making too much noise and becoming rowdy, the state has to approve the actual building in which the club is located and regulates any signs outside the club. If that's not pervasive regulation, then where does the state's control start? Is it the moment a person steps through the door to observe the unobstructed view required by the state? Is it where the luminance from the club's inside lighting falls requiring that a person be able to read a certain size print? Is it at the tables where the state requires a certain number based on the floor area? Is it at the restrooms where the state requires one for each sex, transgender or not? It goes on and on with what the state requires, but because PC-Feminism requires treating males as subhuman, the courts ruled against them.

As for the argument that the clubs were carrying out a public or state function that New York delegated to them, the courts ignored it. (Details of the court proceedings and arguments are at [MensRightsLaw.net](http://MensRightsLaw.net)).

Imagine what the result would have been, if nightclubs charged girls to enter but not guys. The courts would have ruled that unconstitutional because it violated the PC-Feminist law that females must receive preferential treatment. It wouldn't matter that charging girls more was economically fair. Girls in their 20s who live in urban areas make more than guys in their 20s, and for those in their 30s, it's equal. Conor Dougherty, *Young Woman's Pay Exceeds Male Peers'*, September 1, 2010, Wall Street Journal. Generally no one is interested in girls in their 40s, so it's girls in their 20s and 30s who frequent nightclubs. Charging them the privilege to

find a guy to fleece only seems fair. Also, back in 2007, on a per-unit of time basis, the average girl, regardless of age or location, made more than the average guy. Guys had to work 44% longer to make the iconic \$1 while girls made \$.77. If the girls had worked as long as the guys, they would have made \$1.08. They also likely made more than a guy on a per-unit of risk basis, since guys make up around 90 percent of the employees in the more dangerous jobs.

Most guys opposed the case and were in favor of Ladies' Nights because they thought it brought out lots of girls. Of course, most guys are idiots when it comes to girls. Ladies' Nights don't produce an overflow of chicks. One club owner told me he had ladies night as a way to attract men, which increased his sales of drinks—the real money-maker for a club. Guys show up expecting lots of babes, and while they wait, they drink, anticipating the babes who never come.

As for a girl who thinks Ladies' Nights bring out lots of girls, she'll see it as having to compete against more girls, which means fewer chances to attract a guy. Most girls aren't looking for chump change—free admission; they're looking for a chump to gold-dig. She'll simply add any admission fee to what she has already spent on a manicure, pedicure, leg waxing, hair styling, hair dying, latest fashions, and sexy shoes that are too tight. She's going where there's less competition. Take an informal sampling; go to clubs with Ladies' Nights and clubs without. See which has the highest percentage of girls. In NYC, there are more girls at non-Ladies' Nights.

If the Ladies' Nights case had been successful, the nightclubs would most likely have lowered the price to guys and raised it to girls. That would have meant every guy who entered a club would have more money to buy girls drinks. True the girls would have to manipulate more

drinks from the guys to make up for their admission cost, but I was confident in their genetic ability to separate a man from his money.

Also, since the girls would have ended up drinking more, they'd have more fun and so would the guys. An added benefit was that in the morning, when the girls woke up with second thoughts about what they had done the night before, they could do what they always do—blame a man, in this case me, rather than the guys they partied with. It was a win-win situation for the guys, girls, and the clubs, but the PC-Feminists wouldn't have it.

### Somewhere Beyond the Sea

Secrecy “‘provides a cloak for the malevolent, the misinformed, the meddlesome, and the corrupt to play the role of informer undetected and uncorrected.’  
Appearances in the dark are apt to look different in the light of day.” *Joint Anti-Fascist Refugee Committee v. McGrath*, 341 U.S. 123, 172 (1951)(Mr. Justice Frankfurter concurring).

Another case challenging the preferential treatment of girls and discrimination against guys, this time by the U.S. Government, charged that certain sections of the Violence Against Women's Act (VAWA), or as I refer to it, the Violence in Aid of Witches Act, or the State Violence Against Men's Act, violated the Constitutional guarantees of procedural due process, equal protection and freedom of speech for U.S. citizens, mainly men.

This lawsuit involved three other guys and myself as the plaintiffs representing the class of men who were targeted by VAWA, which was written by NOW, the Feminist Majority and other man-hating, non-profit corporations that receive federal funding. Vice President Joe Biden was responsible for its passage when he was a Senator, and Bill Clinton, or was it Hillary, signed it into law.

VAWA adopted some of the totalitarian ways of the Communist Party from the trash heap of history to control interpersonal relationships, mainly romance. It also funneled hundreds

of millions of taxpayer dollars into the pockets of private PC-Feminist organizations that provide advice to female aliens on how to fraudulently obtain citizenship.

Before VAWA, if a citizen husband decided to divorce his alien wife within two years of marrying her, the alien wife would be placed in deportation proceedings. If an American man who was dating an alien decided to break it off, the alien girlfriend would have to find another sucker to marry in order to avoid deportation when her temporary visa expired. Under VAWA, however, the alien wife or girlfriend, even if here illegally, can escape deportation and become a citizen by simply lying to Homeland Security and the Justice Department that her husband or boyfriend committed “battery, extreme cruelty, or an overall pattern of violence” against her. Those terms are so malleable under the Act that they include mockery, criticism, yelling, kissing her when she doesn’t want you to, calling her at work to see how she’s doing, not buying her the presents that she whines for, accusing her of cheating, or simply failing to do what she wants, when she wants by not reading her mind to determine what she really wants.

The moment she makes any of those or other accusations to the federal government, a veil of secrecy falls across the government’s determination of whether the American guy did what she claims he did. The secrecy is to shutout the American husband or boyfriend. He doesn’t receive any notice of the proceedings, and, if he learns about them, he can’t submit evidence to refute the accusations—any evidence from him showing he didn’t do it is ignored. The adversarial process is thrown out the window. It’s as though your favorite sports team is not told what stadium the championship game is in or the time for its scheduled defeat.

VAWA took the “he said” out of the “he said, she said.” Not only is the husband or boyfriend presumed culpable, but he’s not even allowed to prove differently, and that’s the intention of VAWA: to railroad and destroy American men by denying them due process. Even

when the same accusations are made by the alien in a state court, and that court finds the man innocent, Homeland Security and the Justice Department ignore the state verdict and still find that the guy did what the alien says he did.

To be fair, the Act also applies to citizen females who marry or date foreign guys, but the vast majority, around 85% or more, of the U.S. citizens subjected to this Star Chamber proceeding are guys, which makes it a violation of equal protection by application. The words of the Act do not distinguish between the sexes, but in reality the Act is applied overwhelmingly against guys. And it happens to thousands of them every year.

After the federal government finds that a citizen committed a wrongful act, which can be anything from an innocuous insult to a felony, it promises that no harm will come to him because all its findings will be kept secret—except from (1) federal law enforcement officials, (2) state law enforcement officials, (3) local law enforcement officials, (4) Interpol (5) his ex-wife or ex-girlfriend, (6) federal agencies that provide her benefits, (7) state agencies that provide her benefits, (8) local agencies that provide her benefits, (9) private agencies that provide her benefits, and (10) nonprofit, nongovernmental groups that provide other services to his ex-wife or ex-girlfriend. All of those organizations have access to the VAWA fact-findings of wrong doing while the one against whom the facts were found—the American—does not.

If the American is looking for a job in government or a promotion within government, a background check will turn up the VAWA fact-findings—he won't get the job. If the American's job requires that he carry a gun, the VAWA fact-findings will cost him that job. He won't even know why because the law deters anyone from telling him with a fine up to \$5,000. Just as the invisible hand of the McCarthy lists in the 1950s destroyed many innocent persons based on unsubstantiated accusations, VAWA does the same today—mainly to men.



Oh, and by the way, if any of the VAWA fact-findings about a citizen leaks or is intentionally made available to the general public, there is not a damn thing he can do—legally. There are no lawsuits or administrative proceedings he can bring to keep it from being published or to correct the false record once it's made public to prevent it from destroying his reputation, career, and life. The law is a modern-day witch hunt, only today the witches are doing the hunting.

Because VAWA's secrecy prevents any citizen from finding out exactly what the U.S. Government's fact-findings are and how they are being used against him, the U.S. Southern District Court for New York and the U.S. Court of Appeals for the Second Circuit ruled that our lawsuit's allegations of harm from VAWA were "speculative" and dismissed the case. Of course, the only reason the allegations weren't more specific was because the very statute the case challenged as unconstitutional prevented us from finding out what was going on behind the Government's closed doors, which is why we challenged VAWA in the first place.

By the courts' logic, proceedings authorized by Congress and carried out by the Executive Branch can make findings of fact against citizens, and those citizens cannot challenge the constitutionality of those proceedings or the accuracy of the findings because secrecy laws keep the proceedings and fact-findings concealed from them. Senator Joseph McCarthy would have loved that reasoning—there's no harm because Homeland Security and Justice violated your rights in secret and will not allow you to find out how its conclusions about you are being used to undermine your life.

Even the Inquisition allowed the accused to appear before its judges, although they were probably tied to the rack. The Inquisition at least gave people an opportunity to prove they did not do what they were accused of, but not the U.S. Government. With VAWA, you never know

what you're accused of or who your judges are—they skip the rack and go right to finding you guilty. Under American justice, the PC-Feminists eliminated the need for the rack because confessions were no longer required—just the lies of aliens.

The impact of VAWA, besides destroying the careers of American men, is to deter guys from marrying or dating foreigners. After all, if females will squeeze their feet into tiny shoes with stilts on one end, constrict the lower part of their bodies in panty hose, interfere with their respiration with tight push-up bras, paint their faces with cancer causing colors, pluck their eyebrows, glue fake eyelashes to their eye lids, and conduct chemical reactions on their heads to change hair color just to catch a guy, they will surely use the government to violate a guy's rights if it increases their chances. Since not all Feminists are lesbians, but most are physically or psychologically unattractive, they needed a federal law to restrict American guys to the pool of American females; otherwise, what guy would be dumb enough to go out with a female who blames him for every stupid decision she ever made.

The U.S. Supreme Court refused to hear the case. (Details of the court proceedings and arguments are at [MensRightsLaw.net](http://MensRightsLaw.net)).

### Woman's World

The third battle against preferential treatment for girls and discrimination against guys involved two lawsuits.

The first, Women Studies I, was against Columbia University's Women's Studies Program, the U.S. Department of Education for supporting the Women's Studies Program, and the New York State Board of Regents for both supporting the program and requiring that higher education adhere to Feminist dogma. The case claimed it was unfair for Columbia to have a Women's Studies Program but no Men's Studies Program in violation of Title IX and Equal

Protection, and that the New York Regents and the U.S. Department of Education violated the Establishment Clause ban on government aiding religion by the Regents propagating the new-age religion of Feminism in higher education and the federal government supporting such.

In 2009 in New York, 57% of all college students were female, 63% of the Master's degrees and over a majority of the doctoral degrees went to females. Soon, females would receive 64% of the Associate's Degrees, over 60% of the Bachelor's Degrees, 53% of the Professional Degrees, and 66% of the Doctor's Degrees. If anyone was in need of special programs dedicated to the furtherance of their education and employability, it was men—not females.

Judge Lewis A. Kaplan of the U.S. District Court for the Southern District of New York agreed with his Magistrate Judge's decision to dismiss the case. When a District Court Judge doesn't want to deal with a case, he assigns it to his Magistrate Judge and then accepts or rejects the Magistrate's decision. Judge Kaplan accepted his Magistrate's ruling on the Title IX and Equal Protection claims that the plaintiffs did not have standing because there was no harm to them under those two laws. As for the Establishment Clause claim, which the Magistrate largely ignored, Kaplan wrote, "Feminism is no more a religion than physics."

Now that might be true, but there is no way of telling without evidence of which there was none because the case never reached the stage where evidence is submitted to prove facts. The district court judge simply declared it such, not unlike the Kings and Queens of old. Despite this decree from on high, it was unlikely that any rational, non-PCer jury would find that the tenets of Feminism were as accurate as those of physics. A fundamental belief of Feminism is that the differences between the sexes are the result of social conditioning; that is, upbringing. Science, which includes genetics, evolution, and physics, disagrees. What's more irrational

(which is a characteristic of religion according to the U.S. Supreme Court) than believing sexual differences have nothing to do with genetics or evolution. The Judge was either an apostle who thought that Feminism was the one and only truth, or he was simply scared of the Feminists. I appealed.

In the U.S. Court of Appeals for the Second Circuit, during oral argument, one of the two judges resorted to a personal insult by asking me in a mocking matter, “Are you a lawyer?” I assumed he was a friend of the Ladies’ Night Judge Cedarbaum. Can’t these bureaucrats come up with original insults?

The Second Circuit upheld the District Court’s decision to dismiss. On the Title IX and Equal Protection claims, it ruled that any harm caused by the lack of a Men’s Studies Program was “speculative,” so there was no standing. Strange that the federal courts don’t say the same about the lack of a girl’s sports team when a college only has a boy’s team. Apparently the law is adjudicated one way for girls and another way for guys.

The Second Circuit also dismissed the claim that New York and the U.S. Government aided the religion Feminism because I did not state the obvious—that I was a taxpayer. Suing under the Establishment Clause of the First Amendment is the one instance where any taxpayer can be a plaintiff against the federal government. However, because I did not use the words “I am a taxpayer,” the Second Circuit dismissed that part of the case also. That type of pleading requirement had not been seen since the early 19<sup>th</sup> century when certain words had to be used or a case would be dismissed. A court of the modern era—late 19<sup>th</sup> century to the present, would have taken judicial notice of my being a taxpayer or sent the case back to the district court to allow me to present evidence, such as my income tax return. I requested the case be sent back so I could prove my taxpayer status, but the Second Circuit from the antebellum era refused.

The Second Circuit's decision was a Summary Order, which meant that the law and arguments used by the Court to throw the case out could not be relied on in other cases. Think of it as a medieval Queen free to make a decision in one case and a different decision in another case that was similar. Summary Orders are how the U.S. Courts of Appeals in nearly identical cases can rule against parties they don't like but later rule in favor of parties they do like. For example, assume girls bring a case against a Men's Studies Program for propagating a religion that states men are the chosen ones, and they fail to use the magic words, "We are taxpayers." The Second Circuit would ignore the decision against me and say the absence of those words doesn't matter. It's the exercise of arbitrary power.

Such Summary Orders are also near impossible to appeal to the U.S. Supreme Court because they have no judicial importance, since the invented law and analyses only apply against the parties of that particular case. So if a Court of Appeals doesn't like who you are or what you believe, it simply makes up some law and arguments and you lose under a Summary Order. The law changes depending on whether you are a dissident or conformist—just like under the Commies in the old Soviet Union.

In an attempt to beat the Second Circuit's Summary Order and its reliance on discredited pleading rules that originated in the Middle Ages, I brought a second Women's Studies case alleging only a violation of the Establishment Clause in which I stated four times in the complaint that "I am a taxpayer." The Women's Studies II complaint also provided an over abundance of detail showing that Feminism is a religion under U.S. Supreme Court and Courts of Appeals' decisions, and that it was promoted and financed at Columbia by the state and federal governments. New York actually requires all college programs and studies in the state to

conform to Feminist precepts under its *Equity for Women in the 1990s, Regents Policy and Action Plan, Background Paper* (1993), which is still in effect as the Regents' policy.

The District Court Judge from Women's Studies I declined to hear this second case. Guess he had enough of me, so the lawsuit was sent to another judge, a female—kind of cute actually. On All Hallows' Eve 2011, she conjured up a revisionist history of the Women's Studies I case so as to throw out the Women's Studies II case based on the technicality of *collateral estoppel*. It means once you completely litigate an issue and it is decided, you can't bring it again in a new case against the same parties (remember this for later). The Judge claimed that in Women's Studies I the Establishment Clause issues of taxpayer and non-economic standing were fully litigated and decided as they applied to me, the only plaintiff in both cases, so I didn't have standing in Women's Studies II. That's factually wrong, but try telling that to a female judge if you're a man.

In Women's Studies I, the Magistrate ignored the taxpayer and non-economic standing issues under the Establishment Clause, and Judge Kaplan only made a decree that Feminism was not a religion without hearing any evidence—that's not good enough for "fully litigated" in the America I once knew. As for the Court of Appeals in Women's Studies I, the most favorable politically-correct or Feminist spin that could be put on its proceedings is that the taxpayer issue was decided but not litigated, and the non-economic standing issue was completely ignored by the Court.

Right after the district court judge's decision in Women's Studies II, two other men came forward to join the Women Studies II case as plaintiffs. I made a motion to the female district court judge to rescind her decision, and permit me to amend the complaint to include the two new plaintiffs. Since the two new plaintiffs were not involved in Women Studies I, the Judge

couldn't possibly divine facts that the prior case had fully litigated and decided Establishment Clause standing with respect to them—or could she?

She used a different tack by ruling the law didn't allow for an amendment to add new plaintiffs after the original complaint was dismissed for lack of standing. Strange that in the Women's Studies I case, one of the Court of Appeals' Judges admonished me for not trying to amend the complaint in that case after the district court judge dismissed for lack of standing. Guess what the law is depends on whether it will rid the federal courts of men fighting for equality.

The Women's Studies II case was appealed to the U.S. Court of Appeals for the Second Circuit. The three judge panel upheld the district court by saying that the issues of non-economic and taxpayer standing had been “fully litigated and decided” in Women's Studies I, when of course they hadn't, and the complaint could not be amended because the two “new plaintiffs are not new evidence,” even though the two new plaintiffs would have testified to new facts concerning them. Sounded like new evidence to me.

The kicker, however, was the three Judges' blatant abuse of power by threatening me with Rule 11 sanctions to forever ban me from representing anyone, in any case, raising the issue of whether Feminism is a religion. That's no different than a Jim Crow court in the 1890s threatening the attorney for the New Orleans Comité des Citoyens with fines, license suspension, or disbarment for bringing another *Plessy v. Ferguson*, 163 U.S. 537 (1896), suit with a different plaintiff on the same issue—separate but not equal. And no different than at the end of every year sanctioning the American Civil Liberties Union for bringing another action with new plaintiffs against Christmas displays.

So I asked the U.S. Supreme Court to not only reverse the Second Circuit's decision, but to tell it to rescind its threat of sanctions and to stop acting like King John of England by relying on their divine right of life long tenure to arbitrarily rule in accordance with their personal beliefs instead of the Constitution:

In the four men's rights cases, the Second Circuit has acted beyond its authority by deciding in accordance with the current popular ideology Feminism even though it is the imperative duty of the courts to support the Constitution, *Prentis v. Atlantic Coast Line Co.*, 211 U.S. 210, 226 (1908)(Holmes, J.). "[The] constitution is, in fact, and must be regarded by the judges, as a fundamental law." Alexander Hamilton, *Federalist Paper No. 78*. Supplanting it with the tenets of Feminism is an act beyond a court's authority and its duty to obey the rule of law—not the rule of the "politically correct."

The Supremes, not surprisingly, refused to hear the case.

Many Feminist organizations receive much of their funding from all levels of government. If this case had succeeded, than all that aid would have stopped, which would have allowed the Feminists to show that they really are "strong and independent women."

(Details of the proceedings and arguments in Women's Studies I & II are at [MensRightsLaw.net](http://MensRightsLaw.net)).

### Do You Want to Dance

In 2009 and 2010, I stumbled my way through two Alvin Ailey hip hop Showcases choreographed by my hip hop teacher. After the August 2010 show, one of the girls sent me a photograph by way of Facebook of me sleeping in my costume on the floor before the performance. Part of the costume was a shirt, actually blouse, in a zebra pattern. I had originally planned to wear one of my rugby jerseys with the image of a bull on it, but at the last minute was told I needed a top that looked like the skin of an animal. Someone told me to check out *H & M*, but it only had girl's tops, so I was stuck with a blouse, size six, tight in the waist but loose in the chest.



Thinking that a Facebook photo was similar to a private email, I wrote the comment “I hope no one realizes that’s a girl’s blouse.” My hip hop teacher’s assistant responded, “Well if they didn’t, they know now lmaooo.” “Lmaooo,” reminded me of “lamooo,” which brought a smile to my face. I hadn’t been called that since I was a junior in high school awaiting trial for grand theft auto. My best buddy back then replaced “lamooo” with the nicknamed “Wheels.” I couldn’t figure out which term was more accurate for describing a guy who didn’t know how to drive, steals a car, and ends up totaling it and two other cars. Too bad they didn’t have hip hop back then for expressing one’s rebellious tendencies.

After learning that comments on Facebook are public, I wrote, “I hate computers. I thought this was similar to private emails. Hope Jimmy Norton doesn’t see it.”

Norton was a co-host on the Opie and Andy XM Satellite radio show that interviewed me about the case against Women’s Studies at Columbia. When I mentioned I took a hip hop class, he called me every derogatory name for queer under the sun. So, I challenged him to a duel, “Peru turns a blind eye to dueling, it’s a short flight, and no jet lag.” He declined. So, I challenged him to a traditional fist fight. He declined. So, I sued him for defamation. Didn’t win, given my very minor public figure status, but according to Norton’s attorney, it cost him a “ton of money”—probably around \$75,000. Didn’t cost me anything but a few hundred dollars for filing and printing fees and some time, which was fun. As I told a reporter for the N.Y. Post, “If you’re an attorney, you don’t have to win a case to win a case.”

Opie, Andy, and Norton used an interesting trick to gain the upper hand over any guest who dared to disagree with them.

Guests on radio talk shows generally are not in the studio with the host. The interview is conducted over the telephone. The host or audio man in the studio controls the volume of the

guest's words that go out over the air, and what the guest says is delayed to prevent people from using the seven dirty words. This way the host or audio man hears what the guest says before the audience, so he can censor it.

The three hosts, who in their spare time clean toilets with their tongues for inspiration, were interviewing me over the telephone, so when they didn't like what I said, they did what girls and girlie-males do—they started ranting epithets. These one synapse minds weren't about to intimidate or get the better of me, but when I responded, they simply turned down my volume so that the audience could not hear me. They didn't turn the volume down because I was using the seven dirty words, they were already yelling those, but because I was showing them up as not the brightest or courageous of individuals.

#### Private Eyes

Back to the Ho story. In January 2012, someone mentioned or I stumbled across an Internet posting that the number 800-898-7180 provided information on alien proceedings before the Immigration Courts, which are part of the Department of Justice. The existence of such a number seemed strange because those courts are prohibited from making available a list that the public can search to find out which aliens are before the courts and when their hearings are scheduled. The Immigration Courts can't even release their decisions because the Department of Justice believes that making these decisions public are "a clearly unwarranted invasion of personal privacy" of an illegal alien's scheming to stay in America. Although the violations of many immigration laws are crimes, the reputations of alien criminals are protected while those of American criminals are not—PC bleeding heart stupidity. However, decisions of the Board of Immigration Appeals, also part of the Department of Justice, are available to the public—if you know how to find them on Westlaw.

Given America's cuddling of aliens—especially alien whores, I figured the 800 number would require a specific code known only to the alien in order to access the Court's information. As for the Ho, logic and time—11 years since the divorce, argued there wasn't any proceeding involving her because she was most likely already a U.S. citizen thanks to VAWA under which Homeland Security made findings of fact that I had committed "battery," "extreme cruelty," or an "overall pattern of violence" against the slut. Still, why not give the number a shot? After all, a decade earlier when checking whether certain people were registered voters for a Democratic State Committeeman and buddy of mine, I searched the Ho's name in the voter rolls just on a lark. That wasn't logical because she was an alien and couldn't register to vote, but registered she did and in doing so committed federal and state felonies—not that it mattered to the authorities.

So, I called the Immigration 800 number, and it did require a specific code to access the system about an alien, but if the Ho was in the system, I had her code—her alien registration number that Immigration had given her in 2000. Punching in the number, I expected nothing—but then the automated voice said her next "Master Hearing date is set for March 30, 2012 at 9:30 am at 26 Federal Plaza in Manhattan." Whoa Ho! What was this? Did she get caught lying, committing a crime, or concealing an important fact in acquiring permanent residency or in becoming a naturalized citizen? And what was a Master Hearing?

According to a lawyer with whom I was working on a case against some of the "too big to fail banks" that caused the 2008 Recession, a Master Hearing is part of a deportation proceeding—now called "removal proceeding" by the linguistically challenged PC totalitarians who think euphemisms can change reality. Could justice have actually caught up with the Ho? Not likely, but I didn't know without more information.

When Homeland Security decides to send an alien packing, it places her in a deportation proceeding before an Immigration Court Judge who decides whether she gets bounced or not. So what did the Ho do to end up in a deportation proceeding 12 years after I, like an idiot, brought her here? That might be unknowable given the Immigration Court's secrecy.

The Immigration Court, despite its name, is not a federal court but an administrative agency. The records of federal courts are open to the public—not so this administrative agency. Immigration Court hearings, however, are opened to the public, but what good does that do the public or press, since neither can find out who's appearing when without the alien's number. It's a ruse that allows America's commie-minded bureaucrats to claim transparency while keeping the proceedings of a particular case in a black hole.

Now, however, I knew when and where for the Ho's hearing, so why not just show up at the hearing? Problem was that there are certain situations in which aliens can have a hearing closed, such as a foreign whore claiming abuse. Not knowing exactly what was going on, I didn't want to screw my chances at finding out. My presence as an ex-husband might result in the judge closing the hearing, so I needed a third party the Ho wouldn't recognize. It just so happened that through an informal college reunion, an old buddy and roommate and now a one percenter, whom I hadn't seen in 30-odd years, volunteered. No way would the Ho recognize him.

On March 30<sup>th</sup>, my buddy, alias Mr. Hammer, showed at the Immigration Court, and texted me, "I'm the only American here."

To which I responded, "Ha, ha, ha, that's America."

Hammer replied, "I hope they speak English," which, considering Obama's obsession to turn America into a banana republic, was a real concern to finding out what was going on, since

Hammer didn't speak Spanish.

The Ho, her latest sucker, a short guy, and her female Russian lawyer arrived and seated themselves in the courtroom. Apparently Mundy no longer handled her immigration matters. I wondered why?

When the Ho's case was called, in English thankfully, the discussion between the Judge and the Ho's lawyer revealed that the Master Hearing was to arraign the Ho for trial on violating the Immigration and Nationality Act by entering into a fraudulent second marriage. What second marriage? When I had previously discovered that she was competing for \$10,000 in the [www.brideus.com](http://www.brideus.com) contest, I assumed it another one of her cons. Apparently not, but why a second marriage? It wasn't for "love." She should have had her permanent residency and even citizenship by now, unless something went wrong.

The Ho's attorney asked for a postponement in setting a trial date because the Ho was appealing Homeland Security's decision that her second marriage was a fraud, which meant she got married a second time just to obtain permanent residency. The Government attorney said Homeland Security had found the second marriage fraudulent based on the documents in the Ho's file from her marriage to me, which, according to the Government attorney, Homeland Security had also found fraudulent. All of that was news to me, but definitely good news—lol. The Ho and Mundy must have done something really stupid to have Homeland Security's VAWA Unit rule against an alien female claiming her U.S. husband abused her. The Government attorney went on to say that the Ho had appealed the decision against her on the first marriage, the one to me, but she lost that appeal in 2008 or 2009. More lol.

The Government attorney, however, didn't know about the Ho appealing Homeland's finding that her second marriage was fraudulent and the Immigration Judge didn't have any documentation as to such either, so he postponed the hearing until June 1<sup>st</sup>.

The Ho and her crew left the courtroom to discuss matters in the hallway as Mr. Hammer nonchalantly followed, sufficiently close to hear. The Ho's pint-sized boyfriend ranted that the documents in the Ho's file were created by her "nut" first husband—me, so they shouldn't have been used against her to find the second marriage fraudulent. The lawyer, however, said the Ho's file also contained reports from the F.B.I., D.E.A. and the D.I.A., and those could be used against her. Apparently the F.B.I. and D.E.A. had actually conduct investigations into the Ho because of the stink I was making a decade earlier, but what did they discover? Who knows?

The D.I.A.'s involvement, which is the Defense Intelligence Agency, was another story. I had never contacted them. What the devil were they investigating her for? Perhaps she was a greater threat than I ever imagined, but I would never find out. Anyway, the existence of those reports helped explain why Homeland Security denied her a VAWA "battered spouse" waiver with respect to her marriage to me. It surely wasn't because Homeland Security's VAWA Unit found me innocent of abusing her, which those Feminazis rarely if ever do, since men aren't allow to defend themselves in its proceedings.

So what actually happened between the Ho and Homeland Security concerning my marriage to her? Fat chance, I'd ever get my hands on those government reports, but maybe I could find the 2008 or 2009 appeal decision.

The Board of Immigration Appeals ("BIA") hears appeals from the Immigration Courts. The VAWA Unit decision concerning her marriage to me would have sent the Ho to the Immigration Court for a decision on deporting her. The Ho would then appeal a decision to

deport her to the BIA. Unlike the Immigration Courts, the BIA publishes its decisions, but only the important ones are on its website, which didn't include any decision concerning the Ho. The only possible place that might have the decision in New York City was the Association of the Bar of the City of New York law library, and the only possible person that could find it was the reference librarian. It took him maybe five minutes navigating through a labyrinth of legal misdirections to dig up the decision—always nice dealing with people who know their stuff.

*In re: Alina Shipilina* was decided February 12, 2009, and the Ho's lawyer on the appeal was the same old man, Jack Sachs, who defended her in the RICO case. Guess he hadn't tired of being paid in sex. Maybe he was in partnership with the grandpa in Cyprus. Anyway, somewhere along the line, the Ho had dumped her immigration lawyer Mundy, probably because he had changed his taste from her cold body to cold hard cash.

According to the BIA decision, the Ho filed for a VAWA "battered spouse" waiver with the VAWA Unit on June 1, 2002, six months after our divorce. Back then, aliens could file after the judicial termination of a marriage, but today they have to file while still legally married. Two years later, on October 1, 2004, Homeland Security's VAWA Unit denied the waiver and deportation proceedings were started against her in the Immigration Court. She must have freaked. Yes! The VAWA Unit decided against her not because it found no abuse by me, but that the Ho did not marry me in "good faith"—no kidding Sherlock. The lack of good faith means she married me just to obtain admission to the U.S. and a green card, also called permanent residency.

The VAWA "battered spouse" waiver has two requirements:

First, that the U.S. citizen spouse abused the alien spouse for which Homeland Security relies on the alien's word, the word of the alien's lawyer, the word of the alien's Feminazi

adviser (both adviser and lawyer are usually paid for by the federal government—your tax dollars), and any legal documents that do not include the citizen spouse's side. For instance, temporary orders of protection that are issued by a court without hearing from the citizen and complaints filed by the alien with the police, which also do not include the citizen's side of the story. Homeland Security also bars the citizen spouse from participating in its proceedings and ignores any exculpatory evidence he may submit even though its VAWA Unit is making fact-findings about what the citizen did. As for the one-sided legal documents—temporary orders of protection and complaints filed with the police—any subsequent records of legal proceedings showing that the alien lied to the court or police about abuse are either never presented to the VAWA Unit because the alien is not going to submit them or are ignored because the citizen sends them to the Unit. The VAWA Unit's kangaroo court procedures were created by the PC-Feminazis not to assure that girls have the last word, but to assure that they have the only word.

In my case, there were around 600 pages of apparent accusations and alleged evidence against me that I had obtained through an FOIA request from which I never expected to receive anything. Most of it, however, was redacted, but among the documents that weren't were the Ho's complaint to the police that I tried to extort money from her and the temporary order of protection she obtained by lying to the Queens Family Court. Sure, the cops never bothered to investigate the extortion charge and the order of protection was dismissed, but that didn't matter to Homeland Security because its procedures guaranty that evidence exonerating the U.S. citizen are never reviewed.

Once Homeland Security's VAWA Unit makes its unsubstantiated fact-findings about a citizen abusing an alien, they are kept from him, although the alien, all law enforcement agencies, and certain Feminazi organizations have access. So for me, I still don't know for sure



what Homeland Security concluded, but it seems likely it found that I had committed battery, extreme cruelty or a pattern of violence against the alien ho. The BIA decision, however, did mention in passing one accusation against me that didn't fly: "[T]he respondent's [the Ho's] assertion that her ex-husband forced her to work as a nude dancer [stripper] in the United States is undetermined by the fact that she worked in this profession before and after her divorce." That hit the Ho where it hurt, since she always pretended she was just a go-go girl and not a nude dancer or stripper, which to Russians means prostitute. (Maybe I'll have the BIA decision disturbed in Krasnodar, as I did with her diary.)

That part of the BIA's decision indicated that the Ho's diary was used by both the VAWA Unit and the Immigration Court's Judge; otherwise, how did they know she was a stripper before my marriage to her—no way would she admit that. The diary probably came from the Moscow Embassy, since I had sent it to my contact there and he must have passed it along.

The second requirement for a VAWA "battered spouse" waiver is that the alien marry in good faith and not just to acquire a green card. The Ho and her attorney at the time, Mundy, must have really screwed up to blow that part. All they needed to do before the VAWA Unit was what lawyers and Russian hos are adept at—phony up some evidence. They wouldn't even have to worry about the other side, meaning me, exposing their counterfeit evidence because as an ex-husband I was exiled from the entire process. How could these two idiots fail to show that the Ho had gotten married out of some sappy romantic notion? There were plenty of lame cards and letters to show a courtship, there were photographs of the wedding, we lived together for a while, she was on my health insurance policy, and there are many Russians willing to bear false witness for a few dollars that we had a real marriage.

With all that going for her, she and Mundy still blew it before the VAWA Unit, in part, because of her pathological obsession to evade taxes. When the Ho filed her tax return for the year 2000 during which we were married, she file as “single” instead of “married filing separately” because she paid fewer taxes that way. The BIA decision indicates the VAWA Unit used that as evidence the marriage was not made in good faith. That’s what the Ho gets for being kopek wise but ruble foolish.

With the VAWA Unit’s October 2004 denial of her VAWA “battered spouse” waiver, the Ho’s whoring ass was put in a deportation proceeding before the Immigration Court. She dumped Mundy at that point because (1) he goofed on the good faith issue and (2) the Office of Violence Against Women in the Department of Justice no longer paid her legal fees because the removal proceeding charged the Ho with the crime of marriage fraud. The Office’s Legal Assistance for Victims Grant Program cannot pay for the criminal defense of a “victim” charged with a crime. However, it can and does pay to destroy the careers of citizens and bankrupt them in defending against false accusations by aliens made in family court cases. Without the federal government picking up her legal costs, the Ho turned to Jack Sachs knowing he’d give her a discount in return for more carnal knowledge.

In order to learn more about her deportation proceeding in the Immigration Court, I requested a transcript of the trial for which I fully expected to be denied—but strangely wasn’t. According to it, during the deportation proceedings in the Immigration Court, she applied for the second time for what she thought was the VAWA “battered spouse” waiver based on her marriage to me. This time the application was placed before the Immigration Court Judge in the deportation proceeding and not the VAWA Unit in Vermont. In Feminarchy America, hos always get a second bite at the apple. Sachs and the Ho hired a couple of experts and got the trial

adjourned three times from 2006 to 2008 in order to put together evidence of my alleged “battery,” “extreme cruelty,” and “overall pattern of violence.”

It didn't do her any good because Sachs got the law confused. He requested that the Immigration Court grant the Ho the “legal termination” waiver rather than the VAWA “battered spouse” waiver. The “legal termination” waiver is closely scrutinized by immigration judges to determine whether the alien married just to live in America and whether she was at fault in the breakdown of the marriage. 8 U.S.C. § 1186a(c)(4)(B); 8 C.F.R. § 216.5(e)(2). The VAWA “battered spouse” waiver, however, is not as closely examined for whether the alien married just to come to America and the alien's nefarious activities leading to the breakup of the marriage are ignored. The idiot Sachs ended up requesting the more difficult to obtain waiver rather than the VAWA “battered spouse” waiver that the VAWA Unit had already denied her and for which she could have tried for again in the Immigration Court but didn't because of Sachs' screw up.

The actual trial didn't occur until May 2008. Sachs and the Ho, believing they were going for the VAWA “battered spouse” waiver, tried to rely on unsigned documents as evidence—probably fakes, and failed to produce the polygraph expert they claimed confirmed the Ho's testimony about my abusing her—probably because the expert found her to be lying. A PC-Feminist social worker did testify that the Ho was a battered bimbo, and that I abused her, in part, by forcing her to work at Flash Dancers. But it didn't matter because the key issue for the Ho under the “legal termination” waiver was whether she intended to enter a traditional marriage with me—not that she was abused. The Judge kept telling Sachs the issue before the Court was whether the Ho married me in order to enter a traditional marriage—not whether I had abused her. The onus was on her to show sincerity in marrying me. But Sachs must have been

distracted imagining himself the knight fighting valiantly for the fair damsel's honor and another assignation with the Ho.

The trial of errors ended with the Ho testifying. Responding to Sachs' questions, she said we had met at a "models party" in Moscow, which was actually the prostitute party that Perlin put on every Friday night back in 1999. She claimed I approached her when it was her pimp Perlin who sent her over to me. She proceeded to lie to the Judge that, "We got married through love, because of love, to be together," that she didn't know anything about green cards, and for her "it was important just to be with the person I loved, not where we lived." Oh puke, I thought reading that garbage. Then she started her prepared lies about abuse, which the Judge allowed but considered irrelevant because Sachs was trying to litigate the wrong waiver. "[H]e managed . . . for me to work in a strip club, but I wanted very much to work as a model, but I didn't have money for the [photograph] portfolio. [I]t hurt me [to work at Flash Dancers] because I love my husband and I just wanted to only do this for my husband." Yuk!

Sachs' questioning of the Ho confirmed that Homeland Security's VAWA Unit denied her 2002 "battered spouse" waiver based largely on her diary—ha, ha, ha, done in by her own sick vanity. Sachs' tried to argue that the diary wasn't hers and that I created it. The Judge didn't see the relevance of that to the issue of her intent to enter a traditional marriage and shut down Sachs' line of questioning. Sachs then started to say something about Mundy, but the Judge immediately went off the record, so there is nothing in the transcript of the trial about what was said. Perhaps Mundy got into a little trouble with the Ho—ho, ho, ho.

Back on the record, the Government started its cross-examination of the Ho at which point Sachs gets up to leave the courtroom, and the Judge actually has to order him to sit down. Talk about a disengaged lawyer—must have been beginning Alzheimer's. The Government

lawyer destroyed the Ho's credibility about marrying me for "love" by showing she was a perjurer. The lawyer nailed the Ho on the lie that I had made her work at Flash Dancers by getting her to admit she worked there well after the divorce. "[I]f you worked at Flash Dancers for two years starting in about July or August 2000, you were still working there when you were divorced, correct?" The Ho, "Yes." "Well my question is, he wasn't forcing you to work there as you and him did not live together anymore after [the divorce], is that correct?" The Ho was cornered and had to answer, "That's right." Then the attorney drove home the stake by referring to Homeland Security's decision denying her "battered spouse" waiver by getting the Ho to admit that she stripped in Mexico before our marriage while on a tourist visa and stripped in Cyprus before we even met.

Pretty hard to appear credible under oath when she lied about my forcing her to work as a stripper, and the reason the Government knew that was because of her diary. The Judge summarized, "You're claiming that you were working at a strip club in New York because essentially your husband forced you to. It would appear, in fact, that you willingly worked in strip clubs even before that, and worked in the strip club in New York, even after you were separated from your husband." The Ho was exposed as a perjurer. The loss of her credibility meant all that malarkey from her about marrying for "love" went out the window.

The Judge then addressed the key issue—evidence that indicated the Ho had intended to enter a traditional marriage. "I'm trying to determine if there was any actual proof that the two of you had a legitimate relationship as husband and wife. I have no witnesses here who could attest to that. I have no documents in support of the joint relationship during the marriage." The Ho was doomed.

The Judge decided against her and wrote an opinion, but the Department of Justice refuses to release that opinion even though it provided me the transcript of the trial on which the opinion is based—go figure.

The Ho lost because Sachs requested a “legal termination” waiver not realizing that it was different from the VAWA “battered spouse” waiver. She then had Sachs initiate an appeal to the BIA in 2008. The Ho had to be paying him with sex because there’s no other reason for her to continue with such an incompetent. The appeal put her deportation on hold. For some lunatic reason those two bozos didn’t file an appeal brief. Realizing their mistake, they made a motion to the BIA to file the brief late. The BIA refused and upheld the Immigration Court’s decision.

Somewhere along the line in order to hedge her staying in America, the Ho married another American sucker repeating the strategy she used with me in the hope of obtaining a green card through marriage. It’s unknown how the second marriage turned out. Maybe the guy was even dumber than me and sponsored the Ho for permanent residency or perhaps her second marriage repeated the first with the second sucker wising up and divorcing the slut. Either way, when she applied again for permanent residency, this time based on her second marriage, Homeland Security said no way Hose. The first marriage was fraudulent and based on that, so was the second marriage. Bammo, the Ho’s aging ass is once again bounced into a deportation proceeding, which was the one attended by Mr. Hammer in March 2012. But then something third worldish happened.

At the Master Hearing on June 1, 2012, which was a continuance of the March 30<sup>th</sup> hearing where the Ho’s attorney said Homeland’s second decision to deport her was on appeal to the BIA, the Judge “administratively closed” the Ho’s deportation case, which meant she could

legally stay in America. The Immigration Judge's Order states that the reason for allowing the slut to remain in America was that the "Board of Immigration Appeals reports it does not have the [Ho's] file." So where did it go? Did someone deep-six it? Was someone paid off? Didn't the same thing happen to the Ho's arrest record in Mexico City? Looked like America was turning into a banana republic where felons can get away with violating the law by paying bribes to disappear records and everyone will eventually look like Obama, except for the blonde hos, of course. The Ho was now free to continue her criminal activities in the U.S.A. as though she was a permanent resident—she won, for now anyway. Immigration could reinstitute the deportation proceeding, but unless Trump becomes the next President, that's not going to happen.

I made a stab at exposing the suspicious disappearance of the Ho's file with (1) the General Counsel for the Executive Office for Immigration Review in the Justice Department—never received a response; (2) the Inspector General for the Department of Justice—never received a response; and (3) the Chairman of the Senate Judiciary Committee, Charles Grassley—never received a response. Guess they couldn't afford the postage.

So, the Ho remained in America, making lots of money illegally, and still evading taxes. By my estimation, she's made well over two million over the past 15 years—not bad for a prostitute from Krasnodar. But she had help. The Ho simply exploited that which the Feminazis and PCers have corrupted—the immigration system and America as a whole.

#### My Little Bimbo[s] Down on the Bamboo Isle

"To impose any strait jacket upon the intellectual leaders in our colleges and universities would imperil the future of our Nation. No field of education is so thoroughly comprehended by man [or females] that new discoveries cannot yet be made. Particularly is that true in the social sciences, where few, if any, principles are accepted as absolutes. Scholarship cannot flourish in an atmosphere of suspicion and distrust. Teachers and students must always remain free to inquire, to study and to evaluate, to gain new maturity and understanding; otherwise our

civilization will stagnate and die.” *Keyishian v. Board of Regents of University of State of N. Y.*, 385 U.S. 589, 603 (1967)(Mr. Justice Brennan).

As a result of the publicity generated by the men’s rights lawsuits, a professor in New York City asked me to teach a section on men and the law as part of a Male Studies Program to be offered online by the University of South Australia. The program was going to focus on guys the way Women’s Studies Programs focus on girls so as to provide some balance to the one-sided PC-Feminist propaganda that is blindly accepted as the “truth” on college campuses. It would be the first college program of its kind in the world.

My three-week copyrighted section of one of the eight graduate courses being offered would look at how the law treated the different sexes in America and England from the beginning of the industrial revolution. Australia, like America, inherited its law from England, so I figured the students would be interested in what occurred in both America and England. My research showed that for the past 250 years, the law largely favored females—not males. Sir William Blackstone’s statement in 1765 proved prescient, “So great a favorite is the female sex of the laws.”

After the entire program was put together and on the eve of being offered to the University students, two yellow, female-dog-in-heat reporters jumped on their electronic broomsticks and scared the administrators of the University into canceling six of the eight courses, including the one with the section I was going to teach. They guillotined the teaching of the courses by lying that their content expressed “radical” and “extreme” male views by men’s rights extremists who hate females. Neither reporter ever read any of the courses’ summaries, nor interviewed me before they prominently denigrated my section and me to over seven million of their readers.



The bacchanalian-like frenzy of these two PC-Feminist, zealot reporters (they believe there are two sides to every story: the Feminist side and the politically correct side) was reminiscent of the 1933 Nazi book burnings at German universities. Back then, Joseph Goebbels said, “The era of extreme Jewish intellectualism is now at an end.” The two reporters, Tory “the Torch” Shepherd for the Rupert Murdoch owned newspaper The Advertiser Messenger Sunday Mail in Adelaide, Australia, and a reporter from the Sydney Morning Herald, owned by another multi-billion dollar global corporation—Fairfax Media Publications, could now say the same about any intellectualism in Australia that wasn’t pro-Feminist. The two sanctimonious, PC reporters didn’t go into the University and take knowledge, ideas, and facts in the form of books and throw them on a bonfire. Instead they used the modern-day torch of the electronic media to incinerate views they personally disagreed with. The end result was the same—censorship of ideas by way of verbally mutilating the ideas and those who don’t conform to current, trendy ideology.

The message was clear. On college campuses, whether in Australia or America, everybody’s freedom of speech was limited to parroting PC-Feminist propaganda as determined by self-appointed members of the “PC Ministry of Truth” and other purveyors of ignorance, mindless unanimity and hatred of men.

The high-tech book burning started when Tory the Torch, in January 2014, told an official at the University of South Australia that I had been “identified as belonging to extreme right-wing groups in the USA.” She then published articles falsely characterizing all of the courses as being “extreme” right-wing diatribes against women and the courses’ creators as right-wingers. As for me, she was correct, if having been an active member of Students for a Democratic Society, an officer in the Riverside Democratic Club in Manhattan, a New

Democratic Coalition Delegate, a Union Delegate for Local 1199, an undercover researcher for the Village Voice into a mob judge's campaign financed by Roy Cohn and the Gambino and Mangano crime families, or being a member of the Bar of various courts, and an abuser of vodka gimlets instead of drugs means I'm right wing. Of course, it doesn't, she was just lying as Feminists do in order to get their way. Then again, perhaps she confused my playing right-wing forward for Old Blue rugby with being right-wing.

Her fellow traveler in "to not tell the truth" was Amy "McNeuter" McNeilage at the Sydney Morning Herald. "McNeuter" because that's probably the way she likes her boyfriends, unless in bed. Amy, instead of picking "extreme" from the male-hating Feminist reporter's grab bag of disparaging words, pulled out "hardline" and "radical" along with "anti-feminist," a term also used repeatedly by Tory, as if that is a crime. Amy applied "radical" to the courses and their creators to mobilize public opprobrium against both because she knew her readers would never realize that the following were also depicted as "radical" in the past: America's founding fathers, the Declaration of Independence, abolitionists, the Emancipation Proclamation, the South Australian Fabian Society, Australian Lucy Morice, the group Radical Women, the Paris Commune, Edward R. Murrow's expose on Senator Joseph McCarthy, anti-Vietnam War demonstrations, environmentalists, and assorted fighters against intolerance. As for "hardline," I guess that's what she dreams of.

Tory and Amy used their "anti-feminist" accusation to mean anti-female. If there was something none of the Male Studies courses or creators were, it was anti-female, assuming for me she's young and hot. More important was that we defined Feminism the same way Women Against Feminism define it—real-life feminism has come to mean the "vilification of men, support for female privilege, and a demeaning view of women as victims rather than free

agents.” So by that definition, I plead guilty to being “anti-feminist” because I’m too intelligent not to be. Tory and Amy knew that about me because reporters in the past had publicized such; the down-under girls just chose to ignore it. I also don’t agree with Communism, Nazism and whatever the Ku Klux Klan or Obama is pushing, but they didn’t mention that either.

Regardless of whether I curtsy to sanctimonious PC-Feminism or not, what’s that got to do with teaching a course on the history of the law? Is education now limited to history that is approved by a couple of not very bright female tabloid-reporters? Apparently, yes. Tory and Amy used the “anti-feminist” label in order to take a page from the tactics of Joseph McCarthy and Roy Cohn in the 1950s. Back then, certain words were used to label persons and their creations as sub-human, anathemas and pariahs—”communist sympathizer,” “fellow traveler,” and “red,” while today self-righteous PC-Feminists use terms such as “anti-feminist,” “right-wing,” “hardline,” “masculine” and “man.”

The American hunters of communists in the 1950s had their “blacklists,” which were kept by private organizations and used by the media to destroy a person’s livelihood, or at least seriously interfere with it, by claiming he was a lefty. Today the hunters of the evolutionarily correct keep their “pinklists” on the Internet, thanks to the many man-hating PC-Feminist bloggers and reporters out for revenge because no guy asked them to the senior prom.

The pinklisters, along with reporters like Tory and Amy, have taken the place of the 1950s “loyalty review boards” that carried out so-called investigations for universities, governments, and businesses in order to certify that their programs and employees were not communistic or socialistic. Today, however, it’s the PC-Feminists who mark for economic destruction programs and people that do not adhere to their ideology.

Tory and Amy's character and course assassinations are not unlike a reporter for *Pravda* in the old Soviet Union calling a person and academic curriculum "anti-communistic." Under the evil empire, all right-thinking, or more accurately left-thinking people and policies were communistic, and under today's Evil Eve Establishment, all correct thinking people and policies are Feministic and politically correct. At least a Russian commie reporter could point to intellectuals such as Marx and Lenin to argue the virtues of "Communism." Who can Tory and Amy point to for the "correctness" of PC-Feminism—their fellow groupies at consciousness lowering sessions.

Sanctimonious PC-Feminists justify the intentional harm they wreak because they have come to believe in their exceptionalism and their sense of being the chosen ones. That they have the right to decide the destinies of men because it is only PC-Feminists who can be right—just like a bossy wife or girlfriend.

Tory also criticized me as "extreme" for advocating that men exercise their right to bear arms, which of course is necessary in order to have a fighting chance against unjust state or caliphate violence, such as occurred in 1776, 1848 at the Paris Commune, 1972 Bloody Sunday, 2014 in Kiev, or defending against ISIS loony tunes here at home.

Of course, the exercise of a right cannot be "extreme." But when the media starts criticizing rights, it deters people from exercising them, which is the same as not having them. Had Tory's views held sway during the Second World War, she and Amy might have ended up as "comfort girls."

Tory and Amy not only did not interview me for their first articles (Amy only wrote one article), but they were totally ignorant of what I was going to teach. Obviously, they follow the maxim "don't let ignorance get in the way of a good story" that furthers Feminist bigotry.

Sounds like the three monkeys, or is it the three stooges? Tory did interview me for her second article, about five minutes, but by then her and Amy's high-tech book burning had succeeded.

The down-under girls also puffed up their articles with quotes from like-minded PC-Feminist ideologues and girlie-males to create the false image that all the guys involved in the Male Studies courses were demons incarnate about to roast females in their courses. Other sycophant reporters and columnists in Australia also joined the tar and feathering bandwagon. "There were Feminists to the right of me, Feminists to the left of me, Feminists in front of me volley'd and thunder'd from down under," so I sued.

The lawsuit charged the two reporters and their papers with publishing "injurious falsehoods" about my course section, "interfering with a prospective economic advantage"—my being paid for teaching the "Males and the Law" section of the "Facts and Fallacies of Male Power and Privilege" course, and the complaint accused only Tory of libeling my professional reputation as a lawyer. I didn't include the other course creators in the case because I concluded they were not interested.

Tory published four articles in all while Amy stopped at one. Most of Tory's libel occurred in her last two articles of which her January 14, 2014, article titled, *Pathetic bid for victimhood by portraying women as villains*, was a pure hate-male rant.

For example, she wrote:

"Big ups to [University of South Australia] for having the sense to reject anything linked to those at the very fringe of the men's rights spectrum . . . overseas ring ins."

"Ring in" is a gang term meaning persons who are called to help in gang wars and fights. I have never participated in a gang war, unless rugby games are considered such, but have been in a few fights—the latest of which I can't remember due to the amount of vodka in me.

She also wrote:

“You’d think I’d shut up now the plans [Male Studies program] are off the table, but it’s really important to get across the bigger picture. See, most people probably think that the men’s rights guys I was talking about - the ones who habitually call women names, argue that they routinely make up rape, and put it about that women either incite their own domestic violence or are the abusers themselves - are just circle-jerk misogynists.”

I only habitually call PC-Feminists like Tory names, and do not argue that females routinely make up rape but that false allegations of rape range from 1.5% to 90% depending on the geographical location and study methodology. Rumney, P., *False allegations of rape*, The Cambridge Law Journal 65, (2006). Neither do I argue that women are abusers, rather that 38.7% of child victims were maltreated by their mothers acting alone and 17.9% percent were maltreated by their fathers acting alone. U.S. Dept. Of Health & Human Services, *Child Maltreatment 2007*, p. 29. As for circle-jerk, not quite sure what Tory means by that, never having been to one, but I am sure she has.

More of her rants:

“They are - misogynists, I mean. And we’re talking old-school misogyny - the hatred of women - as well as the new-school misogyny - entrenched prejudice against women.”

As for me, were I such a hater of women, I would not spend so much time and money chasing them at nightclubs, in hip hop class or dating them.

The Torch continued:

“The problem is the circle is no longer closed, no longer just a bunch of angry guys in a basement. They’re trying to get up the stairs and into the light. They want to play outside with legitimate experts in men’s issues . . . .”

I am not now, nor have I ever been a troglodyte, and I am not illegitimate, although Mother did dance on tables in the late 1920s at a club in the Hotel Astor in Times Square, which could have led to anything.

And:

“It’s a classic tactic, used by pseudoscientific fraudsters. Adopt the language of the actual scientists. Find odd reports and old stories, random statistics and shocking anecdotes, and stitch them into a Hannibal Lecter-style creation that mimics valid inquiry.”

Even a blind zealot on a crusade, such as Tory, must still have a portion of her brain entertaining serious doubts when describing that which she lacks knowledge about. The “Males and the Law” section was largely based on law review articles from the mid-1800s to the early 2000s, including one commissioned by Congress for the federal court in New York. It was just going to present what the law was and is. Tory did not know any of that, but went blindly ahead accusing me of fraud. As for the “odd reports and old stories, random statistics and shocking anecdotes” that’s Tory’s specialty, if a lawyer uses such to create a false impression, he’s risking his license—something Tory is not constrained by. As for imputing that I am a Hannibal Lecter, I am neither a serial killer nor a connoisseur of human flesh, which would definitely break my Kathy Freston “The Lean” diet.

Tory’s tirades ragged on and on and can be viewed at [MensRightsLaw.net](http://MensRightsLaw.net)

In the New York State Supreme Court, where I filed the case, Tory and Amy, along with their two multi-billion dollar corporate employers, committed perjury in their first set of affidavits on the key issue of personal jurisdiction: whether the New York court had the authority to even hear the case against the four Australian defendants? The answer depended on the extent of the defendants’ contacts with the State of New York. The two reporters and the two corporations, which owned the main-stream Australian newspapers that published the articles, lied about their contacts with New York. Their man-hating attorney, Katherine M. Bolger, suborned it and probably wrote the affidavits herself, as lawyers usually do, because she didn’t

think I'd spend the time to check their affidavit statements, and she was right—I didn't. A single mother in Slovakia did it for me.

Of course, we all know that PC-Feminists like Tory and Amy have a free-pass to perjure themselves in court whenever it serves their interests and harms a man. But the corporations were another matter, and I concentrated on them, as well as Tory just in case the alleged judge did not hold with preferential treatment for lying, vat-dyed blonde bimbos.

The first set of affidavits sworn to by officials of the corporations lied that the corporations didn't have business dealings or relations with companies in New York for marketing their papers and sundry products in New York—they did.

Tory, like a typical Feminazi, told the lamest of all the lies. For example, she swore in her first affidavit that the only person she contacted in New York for her articles was me. That was obvious perjury, since the idiot named a New York professor in her first article—the same professor who had first notified me about Tory's male-bashing. Turned out Tory had been talking with the professor by way of emails for over two months. Only a brain-dead reporter could have forgotten about corresponding with a professor she had castigated in an article months earlier—or a pathological liar. Tory, in her second affidavit, begged the Court's forgiveness, which sounded strangely familiar to a cheating girlfriend who had gotten caught, and claimed that she "forgot" she had ever communicated with the New York professor.

The newspapers in their second set of affidavits still failed to admit or explain the exact nature of their business dealings and relations in New York, which were numerous, including why the business address for the Chairman of the Murdoch company that operated Tory's newspaper was 1211 Avenue of the Americas, New York, N.Y., which is the headquarters for Murdoch's parent company—News Corp.



Even Bolger submitted her own perjurious affirmation—three times! An affirmation is when a lawyer swears under penalty of perjury that her statements are true. Bolger swore that the copy of McNeilage’s article that Bolger submitted to the Court was a “true and correct” copy. It was not—it was a forgery under New York Penal Law § 170.05. Bolger deleted a chart in the beginning of McNeilage’s article that showed her malice toward the guys who created and would have taught the Male Studies’ courses. Malice is a key element of injurious falsehoods and tortious interference, which is why she deleted it.

Leading up to the first court hearing, November 24, 2014, the defendants and their lawyer, Bolger, probably figured they would win on personal jurisdiction and the case would be over. At that hearing before the male Judge, I accused the defendants of perjury and their self-righteous PC-Feminist lawyer of suborning perjury. She, like a typical PC-Feminazi, kept calling me “anti-feminist” and tried resorting to the Feminist tactic of interfering with the flow of my argument by interrupting me when it was my turn to talk, so I told her, “I don’t interrupt you—don’t interrupt me!” Naturally, she didn’t listen, so I asked the Judge to tell her. He just gave her a look and the interruptions stopped.

Her tactic of trying to bias the Judge by calling me anti-feminist didn’t work either. The Judge did two things: First, in response to Bolger’s argument that the Court did not have personal jurisdiction, he said that Bolger was arguing a “fact question,” which meant there would be discovery on personal jurisdiction to determine the extent of defendants’ contacts with New York—something the defendants didn’t want because it would prove they had committed perjury and the case would continue here in New York. Then the Judge permitted me to make an oral motion requesting an “immediate trial” on the issue of personal jurisdiction. I argued that Bolger and the defendants would continue to lie during discovery, so what was needed was a trial in

which the Judge could observe the demeanor of the defendants in the witness box rather than having their attorney manipulate their responses in affidavits or at depositions so as to avoid the truth. Lying on interrogatories, document requests, and at depositions is a lot easier than before judges who are all too familiar with lying parties and lawyers.

Allowing an oral motion to be made was within the complete discretion of the Judge, he could just as well have denied the request but did not—the tide in the battle began to turn in my favor at that oral argument because the Judge was fair-minded.

Guess what Bolger and the defendants did next—think Murdoch newspaper? You got it! They hacked into my private computer files by breaking into my digital cloud. How did I find out? Bolger filed a private legal document of mine in court that existed only on my personal computer and digital cloud, which required access codes, and was not publicly available anywhere.

The document was a privileged attorney work product of 17 pages that I had put together as tentative responses to press inquiries about the case and titled “Responses to Media.” No reporters ever picked up on the case, so none of the responses were ever made public nor was the document sent out to the media as a press release. But that didn’t stop the lying defense attorney Bolger from claiming the document was a “Media Release,” which of course communicates it was made public to the press. She actually referred to it as a “Media Release” nine times in her papers in the hope of convincing the Court it was publicly available so as to cover up her and the defendants’ criminal acts in obtaining it.

In another life, I had worked as an assignment editor, writer, and political producer at Metromedia TV News and Eyewitness TV News in New York City. I knew what the term “Media Release” meant, and that no one ever submitted a 17 page “Media Release” in the form

of the document Bolger and the defendants hacked. Given the Feminazi attorney's experience in representing news organizations, she knew it as well, but that didn't stop from lying about it.

Now I understood how those Hollywood actresses felt when their naked pictures were taken from their iClouds. Good thing I didn't have any such pictures of me on my digital cloud, not that anyone would be interested.

Immediately, I requested of the Court by an "Order to Show Cause" that the document be sealed, require Bolger and the defendants to turn over all paper and digital copies of everything they stole in their hacking—both personal and attorney work product data, Bolger and the defendants be enjoined from ever publicizing the contents, and Bolger and the defendants provide the names of everyone involved so they could be referred to the authorities.

As soon as the request was made, the case was transferred to another judge. The first Judge, an older black man, had demonstrated fair-mindedness and immunity from the modern-day, sanctimonious PC-Feminist tactics of litigation by personal destruction. The second Judge, a white middle-aged man, whom I had a case before previously, was also fair-minded, so maybe the case transfer didn't matter. That Judge denied my request for an Order to Show Cause—no big deal because he allowed me to make a formal motion, which would only take a little longer for a decision. So I filed the motion and doubted Bolger and the defendants would make public any of their ill-gotten gains while a motion for hacking was before the Court. But then something happened that I had never experienced before in any court—the case was transferred for a third time.

The third judge, Jennifer Schecter, was apparently just the type the defendants wanted— young, female and PC-Feminazi. In addition, she had been the protégé of a female Feminist judge who was related to a City Councilwoman I had dated for a time back in my 20s. One of

the Councilwoman's son, whom I regularly beat up back then for annoying his mother and me, was now the City's Controller. What a joke, he could barely add.

So what was going on? Did the Murdoch attorney exercise the influence of her client to have the case transferred to a sympathetic PC fellow traveler, or was it vengeance from an old girl-friend and her son. Who knew, but my case was now doomed.

At the May 2015 hearing before the third judge on the three motions that were before the Court, something happened that I had never experienced before in any court—once again. The papers for the key motion requesting a trial on personal jurisdiction had disappeared. Since Bolger had clearly and repeatedly suborned perjury—actually she probably wrote the affidavits—and the defendants had clearly and repeatedly committed perjury on that issue, Bolger's arguments against a trial on personal jurisdiction were implausible. So the disappearance of all the papers benefited her and the defendants.

Of the three motions, why was it that those papers were the ones to vanish. The new PC-Feminist judge tried to pressure me into withdrawing the motion, but that was not going to happen. The first Judge gave me permission to make that motion, and it was going to stay part of the case, which I had to repeat several times.

During the back and forth with the Judge, Bolger remained strangely silent. She knew as well as I that the first Judge had given me permission to make the motion, and he even instructed her on when her papers were due, which she subsequently filed. Why was she standing back from the discussion—did she know something I didn't? After the tug of war between the judge and me, she finally ruled that both sides should resubmit their papers, which we did.

It didn't do any good. The man-hating judge gave her fellow PC traveler what she wanted and threw the case out ruling the Court did not have personal jurisdiction over the

defendants. The judge knew Bolger and her clients were lying—how could she not, the evidence was overwhelming. But she hated me for being a man who dared to fight for his rights rather than kiss her feet. So, I appealed—a lot of good that would do.

The appeal went to the New York State Appellate Division for the First Department, which in the good old days had an efficient and helpful clerk's office, but these days it was a joke. A former Latino Presiding Judge of the Court decided to curry favor with the PC-Feminist and illegal alien community by appointing an incompetent south of the border female as the Clerk or Empleada de la Corte.

Normally on an appeal, a lawyer's involvement with the Empleada is non-existent since his printer files all the papers. But on this appeal, Bolger made a motion that required me to deal with the office of this south of the border oficina de secretario de la corte. When appealing a lower court decision, the appellant (here it was me) needs to provide the appeals court with the documents that the lower court's decision was based on, it's called an appendix. Bolger asked the Appellate Division-First Department to dismiss my appeal because my appendix didn't include over 400 hundred pages of irrelevant documents she had filed in Schecter's court. How do I know the documents were irrelevant—because when Bolger finally filed her brief in the Appellate Division, she did not cite to any of them, I didn't cite to any and Schecter never referred to any of them in her decision.

So why did Bolger file so many documents in the lower court—because if she won with Schecter, which was a foregone conclusion since Murdoch's corporation used its clout to get the anti-male Schecter assigned to the case, Bolger would try to get the Appellate Division to make me pay to have all those pages reproduced and filed—a cost running into the thousands of dollars. Defense attorneys with rich clients always do this in an attempt to price middle class

plaintiffs out of an appeal. Rich clients can afford printing up the masses of documents they file in the lower court hoping that if they win and their opponent appeals, they will get the Appellate Division to require their opponent to pay thousands of dollars to print up and file those documents in the Appellate Division. If the opponent is middle-class, he won't be able to afford the printing costs, five dollars a page—so he loses.

To bulk up the number of pages, Bolger filed duplicates and triplicates of the same documents. Many of the irrelevant documents were from my men's rights cases that had nothing to do with personal jurisdiction in this case. Bolger simply used them to bias judge Schecter against me for not kowtowing to PC-Feminist ideology and to price me out of an appeal. Bolger could have saved her clients the copying costs because judge Schecter would never have ruled that any man had rights when in a dispute with two PC-Feminazi female reporters.

Bolger's motion also complained that some of the documents in my appendix had not been filed in Schecter's court. Most of those had been copied from the Internet using different browsers that caused them to be formatted differently with different advertisements. The contents were identical to the documents filed with Schecter, they just looked different. Of course, bimbos like Bolger are always more concern with appearances than substance. The only thing more important to bimbos and hos is money. And that's the real reason Bolger made her motion—to increase the cost to me of appealing by increasing my printing costs and to also increase her billable hours.

The Appellate Division, including three PC-Feminist female judges and two male androgynies, fell in line with Bolger's tactic to price me out of the appeal by requiring me to print a supplemental appendix with the irrelevant documents. Legally it made no sense. The appeal was limited to the extent of contacts Bolger's clients had with New York. Then again, in

Feminarchy America, the law means nothing when it comes to any case brought by a white, heterosexual male fighting for his rights. So, I filed another 240 documents—all that I could afford, but the Appellate Division, this time four PC-Feminist judges and one male androgyny, ruled that's still not enough and kicked the case and me out of court.

During my battle with the ideologically-corrupt judges in the Appellate Division, I was also fighting with the los cretinos in the Appellate Division's Clerk's Office. During argument over Bolger's motion in the Clerk's Office, the issue came up whether I had filed a court form called the Note of Issue. The third-world millennial intake clerk said it had not been filed. I repeatedly insisted that it had until his one-synapse brain finally prodded him to look for it and miraculously he found it on the desk with the other files from my case. Apparently, the Appellate Division-First Department is still trying to decide whether it is a 19<sup>th</sup> century court requiring only paper filings or a 21<sup>st</sup> century court using digital filings or a Mexican court that can't do either competently.

The millennial idiot then said there was another problem—the Appellate Division had not received a CD of the record on appeal from the lower court. The record on appeal was a copy of all the documents that were filed in the lower court before judge Schecter. Again, I repeatedly told him that the lower court had provided the CD a few weeks earlier. He insisted it had not and directed me to go talk to the lower court's clerk. So I trudged downtown in the rain to the lower court. Its clerk gave me a certified statement that the Appellate Division's clerk had received the CD weeks earlier. Then back uptown to the Appellate Division where a different clerk pulled the CD off of the same desk where the millennial intake clerk found the Note of Issue. This new clerk explained that the CD only contained links instead of the actual documents. That was

clearly something the intake clerk could have told me without sending me on a wild goose chase downtown to the lower court.

My dealings with the Mexican clerk's office were not over yet. An issue arose on Bolger's motion. One of the papers she filed, her Reply, had been served after it was filed. Under the law, you are supposed to serve motion papers first and then file. Normally, I would not care, but it gave me another chance to show that Bolger was a congenital liar, since she claimed the Reply was served first. I submitted a letter to the Appellate Division, Bolger responded in a letter with her usual Clintonesque lies, and then I tried to submit another letter to the Appellate Division with newly discovered proof from Federal Express that Bolger had lied in her letter. That's when I ran into a different millennial clerk, tall, muscular, unshaven, and eminently arrogant who referred to himself as the "Supervising Clerk." Boy, I would have liked to have played against him on the rugby field. I'd given him the ball just to take him apart.

This clown, while talking on a telephone attached to his ear, took my letter and proceeded to swagger about the clerk's office continuing to talk on his earpiece. So I waited, and waited, and eventually he ended his telephone call. I could not tell whether it was court related or not.

He glanced at my letter with exhibits and said in an arrogant tone, "I'm not going to accept these!" He didn't say the Court wasn't going to accept them but that "I'm" not going to accept them. I told him the letter was important because it contained recently discovered proof exposing Bolger's lies that affected her Reply. He sophisticatedly remarked, "It doesn't affect the Reply, just the service of the Reply." What an idiot! If service is improper, then due process prevents any court from considering it—that sounds like an effect.

I remarked, "So this Court accepts falsehoods and doesn't permit their corrections?" To which he arrogantly replied "Yes!" Then covering his butt, he added, "The Court's rules only



allow one letter for each side in a case.” I searched the rules and didn’t find that one anywhere. He obviously made it up to get rid of me, so he could go back to acting the big shot by taking calls on his earpiece.

As a result, I drafted a motion on Bolger’s illegal service of her Reply and her cover-up over it, and went to file it. The clerk’s office opens at 9 AM and I arrived a couple of minutes after to file my motion papers. Behind me was another attorney also filing motion papers. A lady clerk with a Spanish accent told us that we would have to wait because the system was not up and running—whatever that meant. The other attorney had previously been told by the clerk’s office to arrive as early as possible, and I was told to file any papers before 10 AM. Both of us had other appointments, but we had to wait. During our wait, I heard the lady clerk talking with another female clerk and tried to listen for any indication as to what the problem really was and how long it would take to fix it. They were talking in Spanish, however, which I do not speak—felt as though I was back in Ecuador or Los Angeles. The third-world intake clerk finally arrived for work, which was the real reason we couldn’t file our papers. So two American attorneys in America ended up wasting half an hour on these incompetents with a Mexican attitude toward work. The Appellate Division judges, the original three PC-Feminist female judges and the two male androgynies, denied my motion—guess female attorneys can violate the court’s rules and lie with impunity.

I did send a letter to the Appellate Division’s Acting Presiding Judge complaining about the personnel in his clerk’s office—twice, but never once heard back.

With the Appellate Divisions’ dismissal of my case against the PC-Feminazi book-burning bimbos from down under, I made a motion to the State’s highest court, the Court of Appeals, requesting that it allow me to appeal the Appellate Division’s dismissal.

My argument was simple: the Appellate Division effectively overruled the policies behind the Court of Appeal's ruling in *E. P. Reynolds, Inc., v. Nager Electric Company, Inc.*, 17 N.Y.2d 51, 55-56 (1966) and the policies of the *Second Preliminary Report of Advisory Comm. on Practice and Procedure* (N. Y. Legis. Doc., 1958, No. 13), pp. 344-347; Eleventh Annual Report of N. Y. Judicial Council, 1945, pp. 414-416.). The growing concern over the high and continually increasing cost of printing documents from the lower court for an appeal and the use of it by "deep-pockets" to deter appellate review caused the State Legislature to institute the appendix system. That system allows for printing only the relevant portions of the lower court's record. *E. P. Reynolds, Inc., v. Nager Electric Company, Inc.*, 17 N.Y.2d 51, 55-56 (1966) stated:

We note that the appendix system was adopted in New York after extended study indicated the need to reduce the cost of printing records on appeal. (*Second Preliminary Report of Advisory Comm. on Practice and Procedure* (N. Y. Legis. Doc., 1958, No. 13), pp. 344-347; Eleventh Annual Report of N. Y. Judicial Council, 1945, pp. 414-416.). . . .

The draftsmen [of CPLR 5528] assumed that the main practice problem would be the printing of appendices that were too extensive rather than too attenuated. Thus, while the provision for sanctions in subdivision (e) of CPLR 5528 allows the court to "withhold or impose costs" for "any failure to comply with subdivision (a), (b) or (c)" (see 7 Weinstein-Korn-Miller, *N. Y. Civ. Prac.*, par. 5528.03, p. 55-208 [1965]), the draftsmen assumed that the power would be exercised "if unnecessary parts of the record are printed;" (*Second Preliminary Report of Advisory Comm. on Practice and Procedure* (N. Y. Legis. Doc., 1958, No. 13), p. 354; italics supplied). This, of course, is the situation in which sanctions are most useful.

The most effective guarantee against an inadequate appendix, of course, is an attorney's desire to supply the court with all material necessary to convince it to adopt his client's position. And with the tactical and practical risk of omission so great, the main danger to be guarded against, in the view of the draftsmen, is the too verbose rather than the too cryptic appendix.

The Appellate Division wanted me to pay the cost of submitting all of the more than 400 pages that Bolger lied about needing for her brief. Over 400 pages at five dollars a page that Bolger never needed for her brief.

There are seven judges on the New York State Court of Appeals—four PC bimbats and three androgynous guys who can't figure out what they are. Too bad Trump doesn't get to appoint state judges as he does all federal judges. That's a good argument to stay out of the state courts, especially in the state that elected Hillary Clinton—twice! True to their pinko beliefs, the judges denied my motion.

“There can be no equal justice where the kind of [appeal] a man gets depends on the amount of money he has.” *Griffin v. Ill.*, 351 U.S. 12, 19 (1956)(Justice Hugo Black). Modern-day America has changed Justice Black's statement to “There can be no equal justice where the kind of appeal a white, heterosexual man gets depends on man-hating feminists and wimpy males.”

If the case had been successful, the private pinklisters and those who rely on them would have been put on notice that they are legally liable for the professional and financial damage they cause with their falsehoods and economic interference with a man's business relations. That's what finally put the nail in the coffin of the McCarthyite-Cohn inquisition of the 1950s.

#### Cloud Nine

There wasn't anything legal to do against the man-hating Judge Schecter. Sure the State had a Commission on Judicial Conduct, but it was staff mainly by girls who couldn't get a date with a man even after extensive plastic surgery. As for the guys at the Commission, they were either queer, didn't know what they were or simply terrified of girls. To the Commission employees, female judges were the untouchables (not that anyone would want to touch them).

The Commission saw its duty as protecting these nervous Nellies from those barbarian men who actually thought a judge should be competent and fair. This loony-tune belief system ignored the teachings of the Bible about all those not-so-innocent and overly malicious females. It's the modern-day version of women's rights called "Nell Fenwick Feminism." Men are either "Snidely Whiplash" or the metro-sexual wimp "Dudley Do-Right," and girls are always the victims of a male controlled society—even when their lies and tears send an innocent man up the river for decades. So complaining to the Commission, as I had done in the past with other unfit female judges, would be a waste of time. And since Schecter was a "judge," she was immune from being sued for her actions in court.

Bolger, however, could be sued for hacking into my MensRightsLaw.net website (a.k.a. iCloud)—so I did. The one nice part about being a lawyer is that when you sue the miscreants, you don't have to pay an attorney while they usually do. Even when suing other lawyers, they usually hire someone else to defend themselves because their malpractice insurance often covers the fee—but not always.

The defendants in my case against Bolger included her androgynous male associate, Matthew L. Schafer and an unknown person designated as "Jane Doe." Whenever a lawyer suspects there are people involved in nefarious activities whose names he does not know, he throws in a couple of "John Does." I use "Jane Does"—not wanting to be gender insensitive. Of course in this age of "transgenderism," I should have put "Its." Jane Doe was probably the private investigator that Murdoch's organization used to hack into computers and cell phones.

The case was filed in the U.S. District Court for the Southern District of New York—not because the judges there were any less biased against white heterosexual men, but because they

were smarter. Sometimes bright people possess enough pride not to succumb to moronic mob mentality.

The action accused Bolger, Schaffer and Jane Doe of violating the following;

- a. The Computer Fraud and Abuse Act of 1986, 18 U.S.C. § 1030(a)(2)(C) (“CFAA”), by intentionally accessing without my authorization a computer or computers used in interstate or foreign commerce, obtaining information there from, and causing loss to my law and consulting business.
- b. The civil Racketeer Influenced and Corrupt Organizations Act, 18 U.S.C. § 1961 *et seq.*, (“RICO”)—my favorite—by engaging in wire fraud, 18 U.S.C. 1343, and robbery—theft of computer related material that violated N.Y. Penal Code § 156.30, which is a Class E felony.
- c. The Copyright Act of 1976, 17 U.S.C. § 101 *et seq.*, by copying, distributing, and displaying an unpublished attorney work product and copying or downloading other documents from my iCloud that were registered with the U.S. Copyright Office—all without my permission.
- d. Trespass to chattel under New York State law by interfering with the personal property—electronically stored information—of my law and consulting business.
- e. Injurious falsehood under New York State law by making available to the public a knowingly false representation about my business product—the attorney work product that Bolger lied about it being a press release.
- f. Replevin under New York State law by Defendants continuing to wrongfully retain copies—paper or digital—of business and personal information belonging

to me, which were stolen from a computer or iCloud used by me for business and personal purposes.

- g. For attorney defendants Bolger and Schafer, violation of the New York Rule of Professional Misconduct 4.1 by (1) knowingly making a false statement—perjury—to the New York State Supreme Court in the case *Hollander v. Shepherd, et al.*, 152656/2014 (N.Y. Sup. Ct. 2014) that an attorney work product document of my business was a press release, and (2) violating N.Y. Penal Code § 156.30 when they duplicated computer related material of my business without having any right to do so.

Bolger and Schafer’s lawyer was a Joseph L. Francoeur from Wilson Elser Moskowitz Edelman & Dicker LLP. A typical neo-McCarthyite-PC defense lawyer—addicted to personally attacking his opponent (me) and inventing accusatory falsehoods. Such lawyers lack the intelligence to argue the merits, so they resort to the typical PC-Feminist disparagements and empty threats.

In the preliminary letters among both sides and the Court, I responded to Francoeur’s school girl insults:

First, can’t these defense attorneys get over their addiction to *ad hominem* attacks and invented accusatory dissemblings? I previously worked as an associate for a defense firm, Cravath, Swaine & Moore, and they never engaged in such prevaricating and dissembling garbage as Francoeur. For example, Francoeur writes or infers:

[Plaintiff is] “a serial litigant,” [well so is the ACLU];  
“Rule 11” [sanctions were threatened against Plaintiff by the Second Circuit, what does that have to do with this case?];  
[Plaintiff’s] “attempts to establish a ‘men’s rights’ course,” [actually a program of eight courses created by various professors that was approved by a university until the Pravda Correct press demonized every one involved];  
“Judge Peter Moulton refused to sign [Plaintiff’s] order to show cause,” [but Judge Moulton did rule that the motion could be brought by noticed, and it was];  
[Plaintiff] “violat[ed] a court order,” [Plaintiff, semi-retired, could not afford the printing

costs for 400 pages of irrelevant documents filed by Francoeur’s clients]; [Plaintiff is] “seeking to relitigate . . . rejected fraud allegations,” [the fraud allegations in this case are different, as is the fraud that Francoeur is trying to perpetrate with his pre-motion letter]; [Plaintiff] “purposely omitted the two exhibits,” [see below for exposure of this Francoeur fraud]; [Plaintiff is engaged in] “harassing litigation,” [Plaintiff has a First Amendment right to go to court against those who violate his rights]; and [He is a] “vexatious plaintiff,” [typical modern-day name calling].

Oh well, I’m not going to open a Twitter account to expose Francoeur’s falsehoods, prevarications and dissemblings. I’ll just ignore his calumny until my opposition to his motion to dismiss. . . .

Second, can’t these defense attorneys refrain from cheating by violating the spirit of a court’s rules? Here Francoeur refers to two exhibits: “the screenshot of Plaintiff’s publicly accessible website as visited by Mr. Schafer on December 30, 2014 (Ex. 1) and the screenshot of the Google-cache version of how the website appeared on January 3, 2015.” Exhibits are not permitted in a pre-motion conference letter, but Francoeur is trying to create a fraudulent image in the Court’s mind based solely on his dissembling description of the two documents. It’s the perfect dissemblance because the Court cannot view the documents itself to realize Francoeur’s trick.

Here’s the deceit in this trick by Francoeur. The Complaint at ¶ 8 alleges that once the defendants broke into the iCloud “they stripped the access codes thereby making it viewable to them and the public at any time.” Without the access codes, the website became public, so of course the defendants were then able to obtain a screenshot and a Google-cache version. In that sense, Francoeur actually got a fact right, since it admits his clients’ hacking—they hacked in and then stripped the codes to make the iCloud public. Without the two documents, however, the Court is not able to see through Francoeur’s subterfuge [that was shown by the dates on the two screen shots, which I raised in my opposition to his motion to dismiss].

As far as the facts go, Francoeur is clearly trying to create an alternate reality to support his disingenuous arguments. He never refers to all the materials that the defendants stole from the iCloud—actually, they probably downloaded the entire site, but their law firm refuses to say. He only refers to one, calling it a “document about” the N.Y. Supreme Court case. The prevarication here is that the document was an attorney work product—big difference. . . .

Francoeur then made a motion asking the Court for an additional 10 pages for his memorandum of law to dismiss. The Court has a limit of 25 pages, but Francoeur wanted 35 pages. In opposing his request, I told the Judge:

Attorney Francoeur and his clients' conduct thus far in this action make it clear that they will just use the additional space to continue their litigation of personal destruction. In their two letters to this Court, Francoeur and his clients, also defense attorneys, have raised irrelevant matters in order to engage in their neo-McCarthyite-PC smear tactics.

The additional pages will only provide more of their self-righteous, hypocritical and bigoted ideological rants against me for resorting to the courts to defend my rights under the laws and the U.S. Constitution.

Francoeur and his clients are marked by a severe strain of intolerance toward anyone who does not believe as they do. Especially, if that person worked as a volunteer in Donald Trump's campaign for the presidency—as I did.

From the powerful to the tyrant next door, those who aim to exploit, control and silence others predictably turn to personal attacks, lies and deception.

My words didn't do any good—the Judge gave Francoeur the additional space to play his girlie PC tactic and also allowed me 35 pages, which at the time I didn't think I needed.

The Judge's decision to allow longer memoranda seemed strange to me. Judges, even in federal court, are often overwhelmed by the mere amount of papers filed in a case and the number of cases they handle, so why wasn't this Judge. Was he an Evelyn Woods speed reader? Generally, I don't bother researching judges but my suspicions were up. My Slovakian, single-mother paralegal researched his Honor. Turns out he was Latin and appointed by Obama—that explained it. He belonged to that Orwellian party of feminists, ethnics, Muslims, illegals and queers who think they are superior to everyone else, especially white males. It's the FEMIQ Party. No way he'd rule against the neo-McCarthyite-fascho defendants and their lawyer. (Fascho is a French term for fascist that Brigitte Bardot uses against the alt-left—boy was she hot in her day.) The website called "The Robing Room" lists comments by attorneys who appear before a judge. One comment on this Obamite judge was "I don't know why he's on the bench, doesn't know the law and doesn't care to." The gods must have it in for me.



After all the years, booze, dope and rugby, it takes a while for the remnants of my brain to realize something important. In this case, I missed for a few weeks that I should have requested early discovery on exactly what Bolger and her eunuch copied from my iCloud. Normally, you have to wait until after a preliminary conference in court before being allowed to demand documents and factual answers from the opposing party. The Court had scheduled one but canceled it after Francoeur said he wanted to file a motion to dismiss. Such often happens. Why bother with a time-consuming conference when a motion to dismiss may end the case. If it doesn't, then the Court will hold a conference.

There is a rule, however, that allows you to ask for documents or answers before the preliminary conference if the other side agrees or the court orders it. So the week before Bolger's attorney was to submit his memorandum of law depicting me as a demon from the TV show "Supernatural" (only to have that kind of power), I requested of Francoeur copies of all the documents Bolger and Schafer stole from my iCloud. Under the Judge's rules, Francoeur had 72 hours to respond to my request, which he received by mail on Friday morning, May 5, 2107. That gave him until Monday morning. It took him until Monday afternoon—missing the deadline. He whined like a high school girl committed to a weekend of partying that receiving my request on Friday morning gave him only one business day to respond no. This guy is a partner in an international law firm. If he didn't want to work on a weekend, he should have told an associate to handle it.

So I turned to the Court and made a letter motion requesting production of copies of the documents. The following was the gist of my motion:

The reason for my request for early discovery is simple. The full extent of defendants' nefarious activities, and therefore the harm they have caused and are in a position to cause are not fully known. Yet Francoeur argues this case should not be investigated

further with discovery—the legal system should forget about it; thereby, granting his clients the right to keep everything they took without consent to use or sell as they wish.

Naturally, I mocked Francoeur for not wanting to work on a weekend as well as lying and trying to cover-up the extent of his clients' thievery. He blew a gasket—began acting as Generalissimo Franco[eur]—demanding that I “immediately” withdraw the motion or “we” [he and the defendants] will take “appropriate” action. In PC lingo, that translates they will lie, cheat and commit any crime to get their way. What a clown, if we weren't in court, I'd challenge him to a duel. Instead, I made another motion accusing him of coercion in the second degree. It's only a misdemeanor but prohibits “expos[ing] a secret or publiciz[ing] an asserted fact, whether true or false, tending to subject some person to hatred, contempt or ridicule.” That's exactly what Generalissimo Francoeur was going to do in his dismissal memorandum of law. So I asked the Court to restrain him from engaging in personal attacks and irrelevant accusatory dissemblings—it didn't bother.

The reason for discovery of all the documents Bolger and Schafer copied was to show that when they hacked my iCloud, they downloaded everything. Throughout the proceeding, Francoeur ignored that allegation and focused only on the one document Bolger submitted to the New York Supreme Court in the case against Tory the Torch and the Murdoch newspaper. Obtaining all the documents was crucial for the copyright part of my case because a copyright action for infringement can only be brought if the work was registered with the U.S. Copyright Office. The document Bolger filed in the New York court over which she committed perjury by calling it a press release was not registered. Other documents on my iCloud, however, were registered. So, if they copied those documents, the Court could not throw out the copyright cause of action. Also, because none of those registered copyrighted documents were submitted to the New York court, Francoeur could not argue “fair use.” Courts often hold that when a

registered copyrighted document is filed in court and it is relevant to the case, there is no infringement for having copied it without the author's permission—that's "fair use." Lastly, by copying those registered copyrighted documents without my permission, Bolger and her associate would be liable for damages set out in the Copyright Act of from \$750 to \$30,000. And if I could show that they knew those documents were copyrighted, which simply meant pointing out the © on them, it could be up to \$150,000. You can see why Francoeur was trying to avoid discovery. The Court let him get away with it—what do you expect; the Judge was appointed by Obama.

Fascho Francoeur submitted his 29 page memorandum—a somewhat diatribe against me. The surprise was he didn't use the 35 pages he whined to the Court he needed—guess he ran out of insults. But my law memorandum used all of the allowed 35 pages and ended with "I am glad that [Francoeur] requested memoranda with an extended page length. I never would have been able to keep all this to 25 pages—thanks Joe." "All this" included at the beginning:

Defendants' attorney, Joseph L. Francoeur ("Francoeur"), just can't shake his neo-McCarthyite-fascho addiction to *ad hominem* attacks, lies, prevarications and invented accusatory dissemblings. Right at the beginning of his 29 page memorandum-diatribes against a proud Trump supporter (after all we won), Francoeur launches into his litigation tactic of personal destruction by demonizing me, the opposing lawyer and plaintiff. He clearly believes the Politically Correct ("PC") adage that one must vilify and incite hatred against those with whom PCers disagree for surely non-PCers are sub-humans without rights.

That last line was based on Lenin's, "we must vilify and incite hatred against those with which we disagree." I didn't cite to Lenin because I did not want to confuse the Judge that lefties are more than capable of using Nazi tactics. The Judge might have thought, oh, if the lefties do it than it is okay. Continuing:

Picking up where Francoeur left off in his pre-motion letters, he paints me as malicious, alleging I brought this action to "harass" (Def. Mem. at 3), and that it is "frivolous" as are all the cases I have brought trying to defend the rights of

white, heterosexual men (Def. Mem. at 1). I know, that very phrase is considered by half of the country as a blasphemy—but not the other half. To them, and the Founding Fathers, I have a First Amendment right to go to court against those who violate my rights and the rights of the group to which I belong.

\* \* \*

As a firm believer in not turning the other cheek, let's look at Francoeur a little. I'm sure he will whine pompously in his reply. Francoeur "spearheaded" his firm's involvement with the tax exempt organization "Safe Passage Project" that thwarts the deportation of "unaccompanied minors" who illegally enter the U.S. In effect, Safe Passage facilitates schemes to keep illegal alien youths in the U.S., such as M-13 gang members. "[T]he image of unaccompanied alien children as little children is misleading. Out of nearly 200,000 UAC apprehended from 2012 to 2016, 68 percent were ages 15, 16 or 17." Stephen Dinan, *Obama knew gang members part of illegal immigrant surge*, Washington Times, May 24, 2017. Just recently, U.S. Immigration and Customs Enforcement arrested eight gang members who illegally crossed the border as unaccompanied minors. These so-called innocent children engage in murder, racketeering, rape and sex trafficking. Stephen Dinan, *Feds nab three Dreamers, 10 UAC in nationwide gang operation*, Washington Times, May 11, 2017.

Francoeur submitted a reply in which he sniveled that I had insulted him. What did the little girl expect—he started it. It's a typical PC-Totalitarian tactic. They personally attack you in the hope you'll cave, but when you don't and respond in kind, it's boo-hoo-hoo, he's being mean to me. Sounds like the proverbial recent girlfriend. That's how androgynies like Francoeur act. Just look at that French President Macron who married his mother.

All the papers filed in the case can be read at MensRightsLaw.net under "Bimbo Book Burners' Lawyers Hack Roy's iCloud" or through the PACER website—go to New York Southern, log in, Query, Case Number 16-9800.

Usually in the district court, the judges do not bother with oral argument but make their decisions to dismiss or not based on the papers each side submits. I requested oral argument, however, because I wanted to appear in court with Francoeur. When the attorneys for both sides show up to argue in court, they usually introduce themselves to each other as a matter of courtesy. Hopefully Francoeur would approach me to do such, allowing me to insult him to his

face with the aim of a fist-fight breaking out. Such does happen in court now and then. My last court fight was in the New York Civil Court. If things went according to plan, my next one would allow me to practice my Krav Maga on a Generation Xer.

It didn't go according to plan because Francoeur never approached me, but my efforts to have a fight in court prevented me from being sanctioned by the court—ironic. Because of my request for oral argument the Judge held a two-hour hearing before deciding the motion to dismiss. Prior to the hearing, the Judge issued a list of questions that would be raised at the hearing. Most were directed at me and my first amended complaint.

In the beginning of the hearing the Judge said,

COURT: The issue is what is the basis for the claim that in fact [Defendants hacked your website.] You haven't established through documentation that in fact this website that you say, through whoever the website provider, was a secured website. Because just Googling your name quite frankly you do find references to articles that have been written where other individuals who had written the articles have had access to some website that you had. I don't know what website it is or anything like it. So at some point there were certainly publicly available information with regard to you. Whether it was with regard to the allegations of this other lawsuit, I have no idea. I guess what I am saying is you haven't established that you actually had an account that was in fact secure.

Wait-a-minute, I'm thinking, a judge is not allowed to conduct an investigation into a party. "Judges . . . have no responsibility to gather evidence and indeed commit grave error if they attempt to do so on their own." Charles W. Wolfram, *Modern Legal Ethics*, § 12.3.2.

If a judge goes looking for evidence, then he has to give reasonable notice, which means beforehand, or if after, exactly where the judge looked to obtain the evidence. The Judge did neither, which means he violated my due process rights under the Constitution. *Ward v. Village of Monroeville*, 409 U.S. 57 (1972); *Tumey v. Ohio*, 273 U.S. 510 (1927).

My response was that the information the Judge obtained by Googling my name was the result of a former website—not the one at issue in the case—that had been closed down and various interviews the press conducted with me.

During the hearing in which I did most the talking in answering the Judge’s questions, the Judge at one point said that when the hearing began he was prepared to dismiss the entire complaint and seriously considered sanctions against me for bringing it, but oral argument had changed his mind. So, thanks to my request for an oral hearing, such was prevented—for the time being at least. The Judge did dismiss all the actions except the Defendants violating the Computer Fraud and Abuse Act and the Copyright Act. However, he refused to allow me to find out all of the documents that the Defendants had copied. As for sanctions, the Judge told me to provide the Court with documents from the website host about the setting up of the website. The tide was turning.

Toward the end of the hearing, Francoeur tried putting words in my mouth on one occasion, but it was so obvious that all I needed to say in my sarcastic response was “I am not admitting that. Give me a break!” Francoeur ended with a tug at the Judge’s heart strings.

MR. FRANCOEUR: I told myself I didn’t want to belabor the point about vexatious litigation, but I would like to make a very brief point. My clients are here in the courtroom. This is a painful.

THE COURT: I saw some shaking heads back there and I figured they were people who might have an interest. Go ahead.

So that’s who all those people in the peanut gallery were. But I was just suing two persons and a Jane Doe—not eight or more, so why were they here?

MR. FRANCOEUR: It is hard to listen to. There is a lot of serious allegations. There is no merit. There is no basis. The closest we came was logic. I just ask the Court to keep in mind these are people, these are lives with reputations. It is very hard for them. There are claims being withdrawn it seems almost flippantly. It doesn’t matter to the plaintiff, but it matters tremendously to the people on it defense and I ask that the Court to keep that in mind.

THE COURT: I understand that.

I thought, hey two can play this game.

MR. HOLLANDER: Your Honor, may I say something?

THE COURT: Yes.

MR. HOLLANDER: I am 70 years old. I am going to be 71 in September. How do I get by? I get by doing the lowest of lowest of legal work called document review. One reason I am doing that document review is because of their defendants back there and their litigation of personal destruction, including Mr. Francoeur and his litigation of personal destruction. The first -- the second letter he sends to your Honor, he brings in all this irrelevant stuff in support, which I can see now didn't work to bias the Court. That is what I went through in the New York Supreme Court. Nothing but allegations, ad hominem attacks. You know why I lost the case in New York Supreme Court? Because I didn't have enough money to put together an appendix that was stuffed with irrelevant, repetitive documents that were filed in the New York Supreme Court by the defendant Bolger and Defendant Schafer. I am also a victim here. I really hate using that phrase, but I am not here as some evil Trump-ite trying to get revenge. I just want justice. My rights have been stepped on and I have been called all kinds of names by them.

The Judge repeated for me to get the set-up documents from my website host and provide such to the Court and Francoeur. The host, however, had no indication that the site was private because all it did was rent computer space. It did not set up sites and determine access—the renter did. However, I had an ace in the hole. My computer consultant who set up the site and maintained it for me provided two affidavits that right from the beginning the site was private—protected by access codes. That meant someone had hacked in and stripped the codes to make it public for a couple of weeks until I saw what was going on and had my consultant establish new codes. I also had a king in the hole. The Wayback Machine has been making archive records of websites since 1996. My website was set up in 2012. The Wayback Machine, however, can only archive publicly-viewable sites—not private sites. The Wayback had no archives of my site, which inferred, although did not prove, it was private. My consultant's affidavits and the Wayback Machine were enough for the time being to dodge any sanctions and allow me to submit another amended complaint, Second Amended Complaint, that only dealt with the

Computer Fraud and Abuse Act and the Copyright Act. The Judge also allowed Francoeur to make a motion to strike parts of the Second Amended Complaint.

During this back and forth via letters with the Court, Francoeur, who is of French descent, tried to paint my computer consultant as Russian because my consultant was in Moscow when he executed his affidavits. Francoeur was such a jerk.

My response, “My computer consultant is not Russian he is French. I would think his name makes that obvious” to a fellow Frenchman. “If Mr. Francoeur wants to employ the current trend of raising suspicion against anyone who was involved with Russians, then he should stick to the facts: I previously managed the Kroll Associates Office in Moscow and married a Russian woman whom I met while working there.”

In addition, I threw in the following in a letter to the Court:

It is clear from the continuing misrepresentations of attorney Joseph Francoeur in his March 19, 2018, letter that he desires to keep the truth hidden. But that’s understandable for someone against whom the State of New York has issued tax warrants.

In 2013 and again in 2017, the State of New York issued two tax warrants against Mr. Francoeur: Warrant Id E-038499833-W001-5 and E-038499833-W002-9. (Ex. A, Tax Warrants). A tax warrant is issued when a taxpayer refuses to pay a deficiency assessed against him. These two tax warrants were equivalent to legal judgments against Mr. Francoeur that created liens against his real and personal property, which gave Mr. Francoeur the impetus to pay what he owed. Mr. Francoeur’s tax skirting is especially egregious, since he is a lawyer. This may just be the tip of the iceberg, since the tax warrant records from before 2004 are on paper at the Department of State Office and the two above were found on the Internet.

Defense lawyers who practice in the age of the Internet should not throw verbal insults.

Francoeur had specifically requested the Judge allow him to make a motion to strike, but it was clear this clown would also add in a motion to dismiss even though the Judge did not say he could. These PC-fascho lawyers, just like the #MeTooLyingHos are genetically incapable of telling the full truth because they would lose. So for a few weeks before Franco-Fascho filed his motions, I drafted my opposition. When dealing with these PCers, it’s always best to formulate a



draft of your opposition brief first, which emphasizes the strategy you want to use. That way you won't waste the limit space you have—here 25 double spaced pages, exposing a PC-fascho's lies, prevarications and dissemblings.

At the hearing on Francoeur's first motion to dismiss under Fed. R. Civ. P. 12(b)(6), the Judge clearly wanted to know whether my iCloud was private or public—the key fact question in the case. But on this type of motion to dismiss, the plaintiff, me, must not be put to the test to prove his allegations at the pleading stage by providing evidence. *NOW, Inc v. Scheidler*, 510 U.S. 249, 256 (1994)—thank you NOW; *Hickman v. Taylor*, 329 U.S. 495, 500-01 (1947); *Geisler v. Petrocelli*, 616 F.2d 636, 640 (2d Cir. 1980). The Judge, however, clearly wanted evidence, which is why he told me to dig up proof that my website or iCloud was private. The Judge may have taken this tack because he was looking to turn the proceedings into a summary judgment situation. Summary judgment requires both sides to present their evidence as to the facts and if—only if—the remaining issues are how the law would deal with those facts, then the Judge can decide the case without a trial. If he was moving toward summary judgment—fine. If not, then I would have an issue on appeal to the Second Circuit in that he required evidence on a Rule 12(b)(6) motion.

Okay, the Judge wanted evidence, so my strategy in my opposition to Francoeur's motions was to provide all the evidence available that my iCloud, now termed in court papers "MensRightsLaw.net" or "MRL.net," had always been private. Private, that is, until Bolger and her Murdoch clients hacked MRL.net and stripped the access codes that made it public for a couple of weeks.

My opposition essentially presented the following that the website was private:

1. None of the twenty-something web archives that take snapshots of publicly viewable websites had any snapshots of MRL.net—this included the Internet Archive’s “Wayback Machine.” Libraries and other organizations have been preserving the written history of mankind since at least the Royal Library of Alexandria in 330 B.C. by storing clay tablets, papyrus scrolls, books and pictures. Over the past 20 years, much of our history has been recorded in digital form and preserved by archiving. “Today’s research libraries and archives recognize website archiving (‘web archiving’) as an essential component of their collecting practices, and various programs to archive portions of the Web have been developed around the world, from within national archives to individual institutions.” Gail Truman, *Harvard Library Report*, January 2016, at 5 (Harvard Library sponsored an environmental scan to explore and document current web archiving programs.).

2. More evidence that MRL.net was private came from the paucity of “cached” versions of a page from MRL.net. Internet services, such as search engines, record caches of publicly available webs. From September 2012, when MRL.net was created, to the end of 2014, when Bolger hacked the site, there were around 10 services or search engines that provided caches. Search Engine Showdown, *Finding Old Web Pages and Cache Copies* at 2-3, March 26, 2013. Bolger was able to provide only one cache of MRL.net from Google and that cache was taken on January 3, 2015, after she or her Murdoch clients made MRL.net public by having its access codes stripped. The only thing the Google-cache showed was that MRL.net was public on January 3, 2015—it did not show that it was public on December 30, 2014, when Defendants admit accessing the site and claimed it was public. Had MRL.net been public during Bolger and Schafer’s searching of the web in the New York State Supreme Court case from at least July 14, 2014, to December 30, 2014, when they claim to first access the site; their searching would have

easily turned up numerous caches of MRL.net, which they would have produced—they did not. The reason is simple—the site was private, so there were no caches from before they stripped the access codes.

3. My computer consultant and I both swore that when MRL.net was created, it was a private website, and that whenever accessing the site on the Internet, required codes to view it. Until January 12, 2015, that is, when I discovered that Bolger or her Murdoch clients had invaded the site. A new password was immediately applied and MRL.net remained private. Bolger and Schafer's affidavits claim the site was public when they accessed it from December 30, 2014, to January 12, 2015, and neither they nor to their knowledge did anyone hack into it. Looks like a tie! My computer consultant's sworn statements and mine were admissible evidence.

Further, my opposition argued logic. Something you'll never hear from a PCer. Bolger and Schafer, or one of their agents, were searching the Internet in the Murdoch Case beginning at least on July 14, 2014, for information on me. Why did it take them over five months to access MRL.net if it had been open to the public all that time? Also, I first learned from the Internet exhibits Bolger filed on August 29, 2014, in the New York State Supreme Court that she and others from her firm or clients were trolling the Web for anything she could spin to support her litigation by vilification. If MRL.net was public, why would I—a semi-rational man—keep it public knowing that she was searching for information?

On the copyright infringement, the screenshot of MRL.net and the January 3, 2015, Google-cache copied by Bolger's pansy, Schafer, contained material copyrighted and registered by me. That evidence simply came from the U.S. Copyright Office.

The Judge now had all the evidence available to me without being allowed discovery, which is how a plaintiff usually finds evidence. Francoeur whined to the Court that evidence is not supposed to be relied on at this stage in a case—before discovery. Funny, he did not complain of such at the hearing when the Court required me to come up with evidence that MRL.net was private. Ah, must be PC hypocrisy.

As for Francoeur’s legal arguments, he wanted the entire Second Amended Complaint thrown out because it was immaterial, prejudicial and irrelevant. My opposition stated, “[I]t is settled law in this District [S.D.N.Y.] that ‘immaterial allegations . . . need not be stricken unless their presence in the complaint prejudices the defendant.’” *Federated Dep’t Stores, Inc. v. Grinnell Corp.*, 287 F.Supp. 744, 747 (S.D.N.Y. 1968) (internal quote *Fleischer v. A. A. P., Inc.*, 180 F.Supp. 717, 721 (S.D.N.Y. 1959)). The prejudice to be protected against by a Rule 12(f) motion to strike a complaint is “that which may be suffered if the jury sees the complaint . . . .” *Federated Dep’t Stores, Inc.* at 748. But the challenged allegations in my Second Amended Complaint would not be seen by a jury because “such is not the practice in this District.” *Id.* at 748 (citing *Avon Pub. Co. v. American News Co.*, 122 F.Supp. 660, 662 (S.D.N.Y. 1954)). Also, “As the cases make clear, it is neither an authorized nor a proper way to procure the dismissal of all . . . of a complaint” by using a Rule 12(f) motion. Wright & Miller, 5C *Fed. Prac & Proc. Civ.* § 1380 at 1 (3d ed.); see *Day v. Moscow*, 955 F.2d 807, 811 (2d Cir. 1992) (“not for dismissal of claims in their entirety”).

Francoeur additionally argued that just by my referring to Bolger and Schafer’s underhanded activities in the New York State Supreme Court case was scandalous. Of course, it was okay for him to use the proceedings in that case for his arguments, but not me—typical PC hypocrisy.

Even if the Second Amended Complaint allegations were scandalous, it didn't matter because

[w]hen the party seeking the elimination of alleged scandalous matter was the “first to hurl epithets,” a court will deny the motion to strike. *See Lewis v. Shaffer Stores Co.*, 218 F.Supp. 238, 240 (S.D.N.Y. 1963); *von Bulow by Auersperg v. von Bulow*, 657 F. Supp. 1134, 1146 (S.D.N.Y. 1987) (quoting *Lewis*, defendant is “hardly in a position to complain when plaintiff responds in kind”). Francoeur and his clients started slinging mud at the very beginning of this case by denigrating Plaintiff over a prior case that had nothing to do with this action or the Murdoch Case and tarring him as a “serial litigant,” “vexatious” and one who resorts to “harassing litigation” of an “abusive nature.” (Letter at 3, January 31, 2017, Dkt. 14; Letter at 2, April 5, 2017, Dkt. 20). They continued using irrelevancies from Plaintiff’s prior cases that had nothing to do with this action to further their disparagement of him. Francoeur’s first memorandum to dismiss cited to six of Plaintiff’s past cases—12 times, and Francoeur’s reply falsely stated that Plaintiff “attacks . . . courts” and filed an “invective filled” memorandum. (Def. Dismissal Mem. at iii-iv, Dkt. 35; Reply at 1, Dkt. 38). Francoeur’s calumny continued with his memorandum to strike by repeatedly accusing Plaintiff of harassing Defendants. (Def. Strike Mem. at 8, 11, 12, 21, Dkt. 67).

Francoeur’s *modus operandi* of dredging-up past irrelevancies gave me the idea of doing the same to him. Here’s what I wrote based on what my private investigator found:

[L]et’s take a brief look at an attorney who lives in a glass house. Throughout these proceedings, Francoeur has engaged in numerous misrepresentations, prevarications and dissemblings in order to keep the truth hidden. Such conduct is understandable for someone, according to one private detective agency, with a hidden arrest record in the County of Pulaski, Virginia that resulted in a misdemeanor conviction *in absentia* as well as someone against whom the State of New York has issued tax warrants. On July 14, 2001, Francoeur apparently committed a misdemeanor offense involving a motor vehicle, but was not arrested until July 16, 2001. He was subsequently found guilty *in absentia* on November 13, 2001, apparently for operating a motor vehicle with a device in defective or unsafe condition. Exactly what occurred is unclear for the Virginia State Police will not provide any details from its computerized Central Criminal Records Exchange unless Francoeur okays it. Nor can the Virginia courts provide any records because they were purged after 10 years. The Internet, however, contains the scraps of information above but not the full story, which allows for any number of negative conclusions as to Francoeur’s character and credibility. Such is what Francoeur has been doing in this case—spinning scraps of information into demonizing and sanctioning Plaintiff. The only difference is that the full stories behind those scraps censuring Plaintiff are

available, but Francoeur, as with Defendant Bolger, volitionally ignore the full stories.

After some reflection, I decided to take the above out. Part of my strategy in writing the opposition was to keep out of the mud where Francoeur resided.

The crux of Francoeur's Rule 12(b)(6) motion to dismiss the Computer Fraud and Abuse action rested on whether the MRL.net site was private or public. That is, whether I had provided enough evidence that the site was private to allow me discovery.

The Rule 12(b)(6) motion on copyright depended whether Bolger use of copyrighted registered documents in two court proceedings and sending them to her Murdoch clients was considered "fair use." All the documents under copyright law were unpublished.

The publication status of a work affects whether others may make fair use of it. One of the four factors analyzed in fair use analysis is "the nature of the copyrighted work." 17 U.S.C. § 107(2). The unpublished nature of a work can have a dispositive impact on the fair use analysis. In *Harper & Row, Publishers, Inc. v. Nation Enters.*, 471 U.S. 539, 564 (1985), the Supreme Court held that "[t]he fact that a work is unpublished is a critical element of its 'nature,'" under the second of the four fair use factors. *Id.* "[T]he scope of fair use is narrower with respect to unpublished works." *Id.* "[T]he author's right to control the first public appearance [publication] of his undisseminated expression will outweigh a claim of fair use." *Id.* at 555. In *Harper & Row*, the unpublished nature of President Ford's manuscript was the critical piece of evidence that defeated the fair use defense. *Id.* at 569.

So this issue depends on how much weight the Judge gives to the documents unpublished status.

Francoeur filed a reply to my opposition in which he basically lied so that his "fake facts" would fit his legal arguments. He did much the same in filing his motion to strike and dismiss papers. It's a way to get something before a court with a minimal number of billing hours. But why do it if his attorney clients have the deep pockets of a malpractice insurance company behind them? Lawyers are paid on an hourly basis, so when their clients have money, they spend more time on a case that allows them to more thoroughly examine the law, facts and

provide better arguments. The only possible answer was Bolger and Schafer did not have an insurance company paying the bills.

RICO, which was no longer part of the case, and CFAA are criminal statutes that allow for an individual to file civil actions. Although those actions are civil, they accuse the defendants of crimes that the plaintiff need only prove by a preponderance of the evidence. Bolger and her eunuch Schafer worked for the law firm Levine Sullivan Koch & Schulz when they arranged for hacking into MRL.net. That firm carried malpractice insurance for whenever the firm or its lawyers were sued. When this case started, an agent from CNA insurance contacted me requesting an extension of time to respond to the complaint. The agent said he was “handling the above claim under the commercial general liability policy for our insured Levine Sullivan Koch & Schulz regarding the litigation you served on them.” I said, “OK.” I always grant requests for additional time because I may need the same.

Then a week later Francoeur contacted me saying that he was representing Bolger and Schafer and asked for the same thing—an extension of time to response to the complaint, which I once again gave. Strange, why two requests for the same thing? So I called the CNA agent. According to him, he was not the one who hired Francoeur. That indicated CNA was not picking up the legal fees for Bolger and Schafer and the reason is simple. Lawyers’ malpractice insurance rarely covers accusations of criminal conduct. Even though actions under RICO and CFAA are civil, they are still based on criminal allegations. So by including CFAA and RICO allegations in the complaint, Bolger and Schafer are likely on the hook for some or all of the legal fees to defend—ha, ha, ha. Boy they must have been ticked when the Judge accepted my Second Amended Complaint, which required more legal fees for Francoeur to move to strike or dismiss. It also explains why he moved to strike the entire complaint, which is highly disfavored

by the courts, instead of just part. Also why he added the Rule 12(b)(6) motion to dismiss when he never asked the Court for permission to make it. So Francoeur is operating on a cash-strapped budget most likely coming out of the pockets of Bolger, Schafer and their peanut gallery.

[Update Hacked]

### Party Lights

During the battles with Australia's nouveau ideologues and hackers, I still kept going to nightclubs, usually one night on the weekend to keep my sanity with vodka gimlets and chasing young babes. Sometimes actually catching one, but generally not, since I didn't look the same as when I was younger, and I wasn't rich.

Most of the time I'd hit a club with another lawyer whom I had known for years from Upper Westside politics. He was a "one per center" and his wife had recently died, so I started showing him around the club scene. The guy I used to hang out, Mark, had found a steady girl friend and then went up the river for a few years on a securities fraud conviction. He wasn't the same when he got out. No one physically bothered him given his martial arts ability, but he had changed.

Bob, the one per center, was even more obnoxious than I, so we ended up flirting with a lot of chicks and having a lot of fun. To get in a club, we'd often go up to the doorman and ask if this was such and such a place and how do we get in. Generally, he'd unhook the rope and show us in without us having to stand in line with the millennials. Why not, we were two gray haired guys who looked like we'd spend a lot of money and not cause trouble—we deserved special treatment. Sometimes, we'd say we were looking for our daughters. Bob actually had a hot daughter, and I was looking for the daughter I never had.



Every so often, however, because we were two guys, the doorman demanded we purchase a bottle of watered-down, brandless vodka. We always declined and went elsewhere. One such club, Amnesia, said we could enter on the condition that we bought a \$350 bottle once inside, we didn't, but I decided it was time to file a complaint with the New York State Division of Human Rights against this common club practice. Nightclubs in the City were notorious for requiring guys without dates to buy a bottle for \$300 to \$500 as the price of admission while girls entered for free or \$20.

At Amnesia, the young ladies in front of us and behind weren't required to buy a bottle, so with Bob as a witness, I figured the complaint would succeed. The State investigated and basically said it wasn't sex-discrimination but age discrimination. Guess my delusional self-image kept me from thinking about that. The complaint couldn't be amended because the State did not have jurisdiction over age discrimination by a nightclub. However, the City Commission on Human Rights did. So I took the State's findings and tried to file a complaint with the City Commission for age discrimination.

The City Commission's Executive Director for Law Enforcement, Ramon Velez, refused to let me file a complaint saying there was no discrimination because had we agreed to buy a bottle, we could have entered. What a retard. Years ago in Montgomery, Alabama, people with relatively darker skin color could enter a public bus, but on the condition that they sit in the back. By Velez's reasoning, such conduct was not discriminatory because those with a different skin complexion were not barred from entering and riding the buses as long as they sat in the back.

The U.S. Supreme Court disagreed with such stupidity in *Browder v. Gayle*, 352 U.S. 903 (1956), which found that allowing blacks to enter a bus, but requiring them to sit in the back as a condition of admission was unconstitutional discrimination because it treated whites and blacks

differently. In another case, the U.S. Supreme Court ruled that a discriminatory injury can be the existence of a “barrier [read \$350 bottle of brandless, water-downed vodka] that makes it more difficult for members of one group [read older white guys] to obtain a benefit [read chasing young ladies] than it is for members of another group [read younger guys].” *Northeastern Fla. Chapter, Associated Gen. Contractors of America v. Jacksonville*, 508 U.S. 656, 666 (1993).

A letter to Velez’s boss, the Commissioner, with those arguments resulted in her telling Velez to open a case file and investigate. He didn’t like that, so he conducted an Inspector Clouseau investigation from his desk top that probably took him all of a couple of hours during his siesta break.

Velez failed to interview two of the three eyewitnesses: Bob who was with me at the time and the doorman who refused to let us in unless we agreed to buy a bottle. Velez did, however, rely on (1) two Yelp.com blogs by persons who had gone to Amnesia but whom Velez never tried to contact, whose real identities Velez did not know, whose levels of sobriety were unknown, and who were not even at Amnesia at the time Bob and I were refused admission; (2) an Internet article titled “*NYC Attorney Out To Reclaim Ex-Wife From Feminism’s Clutches, Get Laid Easier*,” written by some unknown person using the pseudonym “Jezebel” who never interviewed me, and, as far as I know, never was at Amnesia; (3) a Verified Answer by Amnesia that was useless because the person making it did not have firsthand knowledge of the facts as required by law; and (4) a missing Amnesia silent video that showed the line outside the club. How Velez could rely on a video he never saw, and, if he did, could not heard what was said because it was silent is a cute trick reminiscent of Kafka’s *The Trial*.

Velez wrote up his slipshod research in an official government document called a *Determination and Order After Investigation* in which he ruled there was no “probable cause”

that age discrimination had occurred. “Probable cause” means a reasonable person looking at all the evidence would conclude it was more likely than not that Bob and I had been discriminated against because of our age. Remember the State, which had actually sent investigators to Amnesia, found age discrimination was likely, but the Aztec descendant Velez said that didn’t matter.

Under the City’s rules, Velez’s *Order* was required to list the evidence and his reasons for finding no probable cause. Among that evidence and reasons, he wrote the following paragraph:

Complainant is a self-professed advocate for men’s rights who identifies himself as an ‘anti-feminist lawyer’ on his website, [www.roydenhollander.com](http://www.roydenhollander.com). He has filed a number of lawsuits against bars and clubs that have “Ladies Nights,” and admits in several online publications that he is ‘bitter’ from an ex-wife who used him for his US citizenship and money. Complainant’s description of himself is consistent with his pattern of filing several gender discrimination suits.

Okay, so I’m “bitter” toward my ex-wife and proud of being a lawyer who opposes the bigotry of sanctimonious PC-Feminists, but what does that have to do with an age discrimination complaint against a New York City nightclub? Nothing, unless Velez was resorting to the all too familiar PC tactic derived from how girls fight that the “personal is political,” which means “attack the person and you’ll be politically victorious.” Sounds like President Obama and Hillary Clinton, and that’s exactly what Velez was doing as well as venting his bigotry toward Euro-American males; otherwise, why include that paragraph in an official decision that is public.

As often happens when members of previously disfavored groups in America achieve a modicum of power, some of those members abuse that power to vent revenge for discrimination they suffered—both real and imagined. Velez likely believes that Euro-Americans discriminated against him; therefore, he is justified in settling the score by using his power against a member of that group. Even if Velez’s career was hampered by discrimination, it was not I who did such. More importantly, however, two wrongs don’t make a right.

Had Velez left that paragraph out, I would have said, “Okay appealing this isn’t worth the effort.” But, noooo, this Obamite bigot tried to intimidate me by, in effect saying , that if I appealed, the City would go after me with the usual PC-Feminist mudslinging. So, I not only appealed, but filed a complaint with the City Commission on Human Rights against Velez for discrimination:

This is a complaint against Carlos Velez (“Velez”), attorney and Executive Director of Law Enforcement for the City of New York Commission on Human Rights (“City HR”), for illegally discriminating against attorney Roy Den Hollander, a Euro-American. Then again, maybe Velez discriminated against Den Hollander for being an African-America. After all, everyone’s ancestors originated in Africa. Anyway, Velez, in his capacity as the City HR’s Executive Director for Law Enforcement, intentionally discriminated against Roy Den Hollander (“Den Hollander”) in investigating and issuing a Determination and Order (“Order”) motivated by Velez’s prejudice, in part, against Euro-Americans.

The Commission ignored the complaint but not my appeal to the courts.

In the trial court, the New York State Supreme Court, a black male Judge upheld Velez’s *Order*, in part, by finding that “Amnesia’s decision for requiring \$350 bottle service was based upon a nondiscriminatory, legitimate reason of . . . the goal of furthering the image of the establishment” by populating the finite space within the club with only people who fit its image, which was youth. The Ku Klux Klan should have thought of that excuse when it was opposing integration in the 1960s. Those bigots of the Deep South could have argued that public lunch counters admit only those who furthered the counters’ image—white. Of course, maybe the Judge meant his rule only applied to older Euro-American guys trying to integrate a public nightclub filled with young babes.

Next stop was the Appellate Division for the First Department. To get around the lower court’s ludicrous endorsement of discrimination by a public accommodation in order to serve a particular image, the City argued that Amnesia’s image of youth was not intentional but the

result of demographics, “young people frequent Amnesia at a greater rate because Amnesia, like most dance clubs in New York City, attracts primarily younger patrons. This inference . . . is common sense . . . .” That’s the same type of excuse as claiming the members of a country club are all white because it is mainly white people who play golf and bridge.

In my court papers, it was necessary to make references to certain pages in Velez’s *Order*. But for some strange reason, Velez never numbered the pages of his *Order*, so I did it for him by marking the pages “uno,” “dos,” “tres,” and so on. When the case was heard by the Appellate Division, a black female Judge tried to give me a hard time over my use of Spanish to which I answered, “In the spirit of *quid pro quo*, one bad turn deserves another. Velez showed disrespect for me, so I did the same to him.” That shut her up.

The Appellate Division upheld the lower court’s dismissal of my complaint by saying that Velez didn’t do a slipshod job and was not motivated by biased toward Euro-Americans. It didn’t make legal sense that the Appellate Division even bothered with those issues because the trial court only held that the Election of Remedies doctrine prevented my filing a complaint with the City. The trial court did comment that Velez’s investigation procedure was okay and that he was not bias, but all of that was *dicta*—of no legal value:

[P]etitioner’s [that’s me] application for an order reversing the Commission’s January 11, 2013 Final Determination is denied pursuant to [the Election of Remedies doctrine]. No further review is warranted in this matter, however, were this court to review the January 11, 2013 Final Determination, this court would find that the above mentioned determination was rationally based.

The Judge says no further review, meaning legal analysis, is “warranted,” so he didn’t make any decisions on the issues of Velez’s Clouseau investigation and bias. Yet the Judge presents the conclusion he would have come to if he had done the legal analysis. How does he know what the conclusion will be without doing the legal analysis necessary to reach it? He doesn’t, so

what did he do? Simple, he followed PC ideology, if it's a white heterosexual man fighting for his rights—he loses.

On the Election of Remedies doctrine, the Appellate Division held that because I had first filed a sex discrimination complaint with the State, I was barred from filing an age discrimination complaint with the City, even though the State found age discrimination likely but had no jurisdiction to correct it. This part of the decision meant that in situations where a person complains about discrimination to the State, and the State dismisses because it finds age, partnership status, alienage, or citizenship discrimination, all of which it has no jurisdiction over in public accommodations, the person is left with no legal remedy, and the bigots win. So I made a stab for the State's highest court, the Court of Appeals, and the City submitted papers opposing my request.

The Court of Appeals only hears cases it thinks are important to New York law, so I nearly fell out of my chair at the law library when I saw they agreed to take the case. Ha-ha-ha, those Feminist, millennial-girl attorneys at the City Law Department must have scheduled an extra session with their therapists. My laughter didn't last for long, however.

The City PC-Feminist attorneys got the Court to reverse its decision to hear my case by making a motion to dismiss the Court of Appeals' decision to hear my appeal. No such type of motion exists, so the Feminist infested Court of Appeals changed it to a "Motion to Reargue"—how PC of it—and threw out its prior decision that granted me leave to appeal.

The Court rarely, rarely grants motions to reargue when it involves whether it will hear a case in the first place, especially when the movants are making an argument they previously unsuccessfully made to the Court to keep it from hearing a case. The girl attorneys for the City made the same arguments in their now Court designated "Motion to Reargue" as they did when

originally opposing my motion for leave to appeal. The only difference was they added a few more pages of talk to their reargument motion. Perhaps, like the husband of a nagging wife, the Court thought okay, okay have it your way—just shut up.

Since the Court of Appeals changed its decision once, maybe it would change it again. So I moved for reargument of the Court’s decision to deny my appeal and wrote that “since the Government of the most populous city in America was granted a second chance [bite at the apple], it seems only fair that one of its residents be granted a second shot.”

[A]n underlying assumption of the rule of law is the worthiness of a system of justice based on fairness to the individual.’ *Regents of University of California v. Bakke*, 438 U.S. 265, 319 n. 53 (1978).

Fine words, but in America today, they are meaningless for white heterosexual guys, so I lost the reargument motion and my request to appeal—not exactly a surprise. The Feminist deranged Court also fined me \$100 and the City’s copying costs for doing what the girl attorneys for the City did—make a motion for reargument. They never got their money.

The irony is that the entire case cost me around \$5,500 in expenses. That would have bought 15 bottles at Amnesia, and made Bob and I the club’s big spenders. We could have flirted, danced, fondled, and more with the pretty young ladies all night long, since they tend to gravitate to free drinks and the appearance of money. In addition, we probably would have gotten a free pass to the club into the near future.

The lesson from the Amnesia case is that today there’s a reversal of Jim Crow. Euro-Americans are now in the balcony, those with darker skin in the orchestra. Regardless of color, the bigots are still in control. (The court papers can be found at [roydenhollander.com](http://roydenhollander.com) under “Discrimination by Obamite Bigots” or N.Y. Unified Court System-ecourts-WebCivilSupreme-Index Search-13-100299-New York).

## Only in (PC) America

Fighting for my rights as a white, heterosexual male ended my ability to attract paying clients other than for close friends. Opposing attorneys would simply make me the issue in the PC-Feminist infested court system. It made no sense for a client to pay me to defend myself when it was the client who needed justice. Even I wouldn't hire me. Most Judges in New York are either sanctimonious PC-Feminist ideologues or scared of them. No way they were going to rule in favor of my client no matter how just his cause.

Even without the prevalent PC-Feminist bigotry, most judges—not all—but most in the Federal and State courts are not even a pale shadow of Justice Felix Frankfurter, Judge Benjamin Cardozo, Judge Learned Hand or Judge Jack B. Weinstein. Most judges graduate in the bottom half of their law school classes, and since law schools grade on a curve, they would have flunked out without it. They ended up as judges because the private sector weeds out the dummies. Trial judges in the New York State Supreme Court make as much as a millennial just out of law school hired by a good law firm, and, as government bureaucrats, judges don't have to worry so much about the law but what is "PC appropriate."

The financial problem facing me was how to survive until finishing what I wanted to do. I started doing extra work for TV shows and movies. Amazingly, they didn't care about my anti-PC-Feminist reputation. On one occasion a female casting director called me to do an extra role and asked, "Are you the Roy Den Hollander in yesterday's Post article?" To which I answered, "Can I plead the Fifth on that?" We both laughed, but I still got the job.

Then a piece of luck came my way—luck was something I had forgotten existed. An employment agency that specialized in renting out attorneys for temporary work called me out of the blue with an offer.



The legal profession had changed dramatically with the computer age. Now a major case between large corporations or involving the federal government no longer entailed hundreds of thousands of documents but millions. No client was going to pay a law firm for the number of associates needed to review all those documents for relevance and privilege. At the same time there was an over abundance of attorneys just out of law school and more experienced attorneys who saw their practices destroyed by the Clinton-Bush recession of 2008. Employment agencies started channeling the glut of attorneys into these cases on a temporary basis and at a fraction of the cost of a law firm associate.

“When I hadn’t eaten, I played it straight” and accepted the offer, which resulted in three and half years of steady work into 2014 reviewing documents—from near the top of the legal profession at Cravath to the bottom. Still it financed my jihada, kept me in vodka gimlets, and the case was against virtually every crooked Wall Street bank that had helped cause the recession with their montage-backed security frauds.

My money-making fate was cast—document review and extra work on which I was surviving—until Homeland Security and the Social Security Administration intruded into my life.

In June 2015, while working on another document review project, Homeland Security and Social Security informed my employer that I was an “illegal alien.”

“What!” I said to my boss, “I don’t understand, my Spanish isn’t that good!” Didn’t want to miss the chance at a joke. Anyway, there went that job and any other document review or extra work. Had the Federal Government finally targeted me for destruction, or was it some PC-Feminist, or Obamite hate-whitey bureaucrat abusing her power, or the ever present Federal incompetence?

Homeland and Social Security operate a program called E-Verify that allows any employer to determine if an employee can legally work in the U.S. The employee sends in copies of documents to E-Verify to show that he is allowed to work here. I sent two of the required documents, my driver's license and Social Security Card. BAM! Homeland and Social Security immediately confiscated my U.S. citizenship making it impossible for me to legally work in America. Boy, was I glad I didn't vote for Obama—wrote-in Putin instead.

The situation was so absurd, it made me laugh. After all, as an illegal alien, I now had more rights than as a U.S. citizen: I didn't have to pay taxes, I could get free legal advice from La Raza, and if I was arrested, I'd be sent back to where I came from—Midland Park, New Jersey. The only draw back was that people who knew about my situation started making illegal alien jokes: “You can't enter the law library without your green card,” “We didn't know you could swim,” or “I'll represent you in your deportation proceeding, since some tax-exempt NGO will pay my fee.”

Of course, the real problem was that I needed money for my jihada, which meant work. Doubted I'd have much success hanging out with the illegals on the street corner waiting for employers to hire me in my Joseph Bank's blue pinstripe suit with an Old Blue rugby tie.

Perhaps the Violence Against Women's Act could get my citizenship back. All I'd have to do is date an American girl then accuse her of abuse. Did not matter whether it was true or not because Homeland Security would only listen to me, the illegal alien. It would conclude that I'd been abused and make me a permanent resident. In three years, I could become a citizen again. Boy, I hope she's hot.

Before trying that plan, I sent the Regional Administrator for Social Security a politically incorrect letter to which he never responded:

Your agency and the Department of Homeland Security recently rendered an e-Verify “Nonconfirmation” finding that I am not a U.S. citizen. (Ex. A). In effect, both agencies told my temporary employer at the time that I was an “illegal alien,” which resulted in the loss of employment on a project.

If you find the term “illegal” offensive, then substitute “criminal,” since anyone who entered the country in violation of U.S. law is either guilty of a misdemeanor or felony, which are criminal classifications. That is what your agency and Homeland Security effectively called me to my former employer.

All my life, I thought I was a U.S. citizen—as if that means anything anymore. My mother told me I had been born at a hospital in Paterson, New Jersey; the same town that Lou Costello was from, so perhaps this is all a Government joke.

My earliest memories are of a small town in New Jersey—a state which was one of the original colonies. We had no mariachi bands, Taco Bells or “Don’t Drink the Water” signs. However, I did take two years of Spanish in high school, but my Spanish is nowhere good enough to be an illegal.

I thoroughly understand that the Obama Administration could care less about the money, time, and annoyance this lunacy is costing me. After all, I am the Administration’s latest synonymy for demon—a white, heterosexual man who is politically incorrect, or as I like to say, “evolutionarily correct.”

Due to typical Obama Administration ineptitude or malice, I now have to prove to bureaucrats drunk with power, who enforce their sanctimonious lefty ideologies instead of the law, that I am a U.S. citizen. So, just how do I do that, since Homeland and Social Security have already rejected my Social Security card and driver’s license as invalid? Perhaps, I should just change my name to José Jiménez and leave La Raza to deal with it.

My Social Security card was issued in the 1960s. It shows that my last name is “Den Hollander.” (Ex. B). Many people of Dutch heritage have two words for a last name, such as Vincent Van Gogh, although I still have both my ears. Most illegals, however, have so many names, they can easily interchange identities. Russians do the same by using their patronymics as a last name, but that’s okay—they’re commies as are many in the current administration.

Because my last name has two words, which means “the Dutchman,” mostly likely invented by Homeland Security’s predecessors at Ellis Island when my father arrived in the 1920s, some institutions in America have shorten my last name to “Hollander” while others have combined the words into one, sometimes with a lower case “h”—“Denhollander,” sometimes with a capital “H”—“DenHollander.” And, as hard as it is to fathom, some bureaucracies have actually gotten my last name right—“Den Hollander” with a space between the words.

When Social Security switched from paper files to digital, some mentally challenged clerk probably entered something wrong from my paper file. Most likely, they muddled the last name, but it could have been anything—I have no idea. Then again, it might be malicious, since a search of my name “Roy Den Hollander” on the Internet makes clear that I do not subscribe to the prevalent loony tune PC ideology of the day that substitutes for thinking and the rule of law.

So, as the precursor to a lawsuit if necessary, here’s my proof of citizenship, which includes those bureaucracies that got my last name correct and those that did not. Therein lies a defense for Homeland Security and your agency by blaming me for bureaucratic incompetence—I should have corrected the entities that got my name wrong. Not so fast, especially where the entities relied on Homeland Security and your inaccurate computer records. Additionally, I accurately completed the many bureaucratic forms but some fool chose to fit my name into a digital formula. That’s their fault; I’m not paid to waste my time doing their job.

Alleged proof of U.S. citizenship:

Ex. B Social Security Card

Ex. C Birth Certificate

Ex. D New York State driver’s license

Ex. E George Washington University Law School alumni membership card

Ex. F Columbia University alumni reading card

Ex. G U.S. Passport

Ex. H New York State Unified Court System Attorney Secure Pass

Ex. I U.S. District Court Southern District of New York Attorney Service Pass

Ex. J Certificate of Good Standing Appellate Division of the Supreme Court of NY

Ex. K Certificate of Good Standing U.S. District Court Southern District of New York

Ex. L Certificate of Good Standing U.S. District Court Eastern District of New York

Ex. M Certificate of Good Standing U.S. Court of Appeals for the Second Circuit

Ex. N Certificate of Good Standing Supreme Court of the United States of America.

Unfortunately, I do not have a Matrícula Consular de Alta Seguridad, so the preceding exhibits may not be sufficient, and the courts will have to decide whether I originated from south of the border.

Ironically at the same time, Donald Trump was telling the truth about illegal aliens in his bid for the Presidency. My buddy Blackie suggested sending Trump a letter about how perverse the Obama Administration had become by seizing the citizenship of a native born American. My letter explained what happened and included:

The real issue here is not me; I can take care of myself, perhaps with a lawsuit against these idiots. But what of those other Americans who lose jobs that are vital to their livelihoods and families because these illegal alien sycophants and haters of everything American are too inept or malicious to do their jobs as required by the law.

No response, perhaps he's all talk.

Next stop was Ann Coulter who recently published a book titled Adios America:

This Edward R. Murrow "small picture" or "Adios America" tale maybe of interest to you.

It wasn't, guess she didn't see any money in it. So I put on my dark blue suit and Old Blue rugby tie and headed for a confrontation at the Social Security Regional Administrator's office at 26 Federal Plaza.

I decided to confront Social Security instead of Homeland security because I didn't want to end up in Guantanamo. Although if I had and escaped, I'd be riding around in 56 Chevies with hot Latinas and smoking Cuban cigars—not a bad way to go.

Federal Plaza contains Government offices that I had visited before through the side door when going to the F.B.I. and Immigration to alert them of the Ho's criminal activities. This time some Rastafarian security guard who could barely speak English would not even let me into the

building that my federal taxes paid to maintain. So I walked around to the back and snuck in a door as someone was exiting but didn't get two steps before another Rastafarian security guard who could barely speak English stopped me. Just as I always suspected, under Obama, America was now the United States of the Third World.

The Caribbean security guard sent me down to Williams Street to wait with all the other immigrants trying to con their way into America. Most of the clerks there, hiding behind bullet-proof windows, were Obama look-a-likes—just what bigots like him and his white wife wanted. But I got lucky, and my number gave me a white, middle-aged man who spoke fluent English. “How may I help you?” “I'd like my U.S. citizenship back,” and showed him the E-Verify Non-confirmation document. “Damn,” he said in surprise and went to work. He was thorough, took his time, and figured out what had happened. According to him, someone in Social Security had gone into my file recently, but he could not tell who. The white clerk made some changes and double checked everything to make sure I would not have any more problems with E-Verify. I thanked him and left. Always a pleasure dealing with a white American guy who knows his stuff.

After regaining my citizenship, I went back to doing temporary document review jobs to keep me in drinks at the trendy nightclubs on the weekend that would let me in. Drinks were now running \$20 with tip for a vodka gimlet with Absolute and Rose's Lime.

My next job was on the roof of 1115 Broadway—no joke, on the roof. The building had set up a make-shift, large office next to the building's water tower. To access the roof-top office, we attorneys took an elevator to the 12th floor, proceeded down a hallway passed numerous offices to the end of the floor where we entered the fire escape stairwell. Up a flight of narrow (two abreast), steep stairs to a door that opened onto a large wooden deck on the roof, then 10

yards down a walkway made of wood, which was opened to the elements, reaching a door that entered into the roof-top office space where we, eventually numbering 60 attorneys, worked with computers reviewing documents. The roof-top office had no other access or exit unless one considered the windows in the office that looked out on the roof and water tower—clearly a fire hazard.

It also had no heat in the middle of January, so we sat reviewing documents in our winter coats. The law firm for which we worked was Weil, Gotshal & Manges whose client Staples was in a litigation dispute with the Federal Government.

After about a week freezing my derriere, I got into a minor dispute with a squat illegal alien maintenance worker for the roof-top office space. When he tried to intimate me, I said “watch it illegal.” Not even defamatory or derogatory, since the phrase “illegal alien” is a legal term used throughout immigration cases; used by the Immigration Service; and even by the PC hypocrite Billy-Bob Clinton who used it repeatedly in his Memorandum Deterring Illegal Immigration, 60 FR 7885, February 7, 1995, 1995 WL 17211539. But as soon as the illegal’s boss told my employer what I had said, its female PC-Feminazi HR boss fired me. That’s what I get for living in a sanctuary city where the cuddling of criminal aliens trumps the free speech of U.S. citizens. And they are criminals because when they enter without permission, it’s a crime—first time a misdemeanor, second time a felony. So, I sued. My employer settled for two grand, which was fine, but I’d never be able to or would want to work for that employer again.

As for the illegal, Jairo Franco, and his boss, Dominick Olivo, who had complained to my employer, I initially sued them for various personal injuries: injurious falsehoods, defamation, harassment, etc. The illegal’s boss referred the case to his company’s insurer. Virtually every business carries insurance to cover any type of personal injury that occurs on its

premises. The insurance company picks up the legal costs and pays any judgment the courts render against the business. That would not do. This illegal and his PC-sycophant boss were going to pay personally for violating my rights—even in politically-commie America.

So I step back from my gut reaction to sue for personal injuries and re-thought the situation. It didn't make sense that Dominick Olivo, the illegal's boss, and Olivo's company, Select Office Suites, which had rented office space to my employer, would try to get me fired for calling one of its many illegal maintenance workers an "illegal." Why not just give the illegal an extended siesta break or a discount on tacos to soothe his hurt feelings. So I started snooping around and found that Select Office Suites was part of a group that not only hired illegals but found them employment—for a fee of course. By calling the maintenance worker an "illegal," it alerted Olivo and his associates that I, a former producer of investigative news stories, at least knew they hired illegal aliens, which is a racketeering crime, and might just be looking into other illegal activities at Select Office Suites. I wasn't, but they didn't know that. So they got me fired to get me off the premises to prevent me from learning more about their illegal activities.

The whole nature of the case changed. Out the window went the personal injury complaint, and in came a complaint against Olivo and Franco for violating the federal Racketeer Influenced Corrupt Organization Act—RICO! Not only did it accuse them and their associates, one of whom was Olivo's mother—a realtor and rather hot for a 50-something—of participating in a criminal enterprise that hired illegals but also accused them of running an employment agency for illegals in the greater metropolitan, sanctuary area of New York City. An added benefit was that there were no more personal injuries involved, so their insurance company would not pick up the legal fees or any judgment against them. They now had to pay their own way—"Mother of mercy!"



The illegal and his boss offered me \$8,000 to get lost—so I got lost. In the end, I made a total of 10 grand. Not a bad way to make a living, suing illegals and their sycophants—open those borders! As an added benefit, the client I was working for on the roof in the bitter cold lost its case—ha, ha, ha. That’s what Staples gets for being so cheap that it had its attorneys working in a Triangle Waste hypothermic shop.

A couple of years later while working on another document review case and recounting passed review jobs with an attorney, he told me that the NYC fire marshals had showed up and closed the roof-top operation down because someone had made a complaint.

“Yeah, I was the one who made the complaint.” We laughed.

### Saigon Bride

One last case—maybe. As with so many guys from my generation, the Vietnam War really ticked me off. Over fifty-eight thousand dead, over 150,000 wounded, and who knows how many psychologically maimed and for what—nothing!

Some of my contemporaries went willingly, so they assumed the risk. But those who were drafted were forced—648,000 of which 17,700 never returned. For the girls of my generation, eight—not 8,000, not 800, not 80, but 8 American military females died in the war and if you include American civilian females, the total is 68. All the females were volunteers—none were drafted.

In the mid to late 1960s, the draft was the sword of Damocles hovering over the head of nearly every American guy 18 to 25 years old. Girls could not comprehend the relentless terror of having the most powerful country in the history of the world lying in wait for the chance to send you half way around that world to use your life to defend U.S. business interests, such as

Firestone's rubber trees in the Mekong Delta, and to increase the profits of the "military-industrial complex."

When America finally admitted defeat and the war's stupidity in 1973, President Ford ended the draft, and two years later, registration with the Selective Service System ended. Then the Soviets invaded Afghanistan in 1980 and President Carter reinstated draft registration even though there was no draft. To his credit, he requested that Congress amend the Military Selective Service Act to require girls to register—seemed fair, since females were considered equal to guys.

Congress disagreed by stating that the purpose of draft registration was to create a pool of potential soldiers for combat in case of a national emergency. At the time, a couple of laws and the Department of Defense's policy prohibited females from engaging in combat, so the girls, even if wearing bikinis, were not allowed to jump into the pool with the guys.

At the same time, a leftover case from the Vietnam War was being heard in the U.S. District Court for the Eastern District of Pennsylvania: initially called, *Rowland v. Tarr*, but re-titled *Goldberg v. Rostker*, 509 F. Supp. 586 (E.D. Pa.1980).

The case started in June 1971 during the War when the total number of American men who had come home in boxes or were turned into jungle fertilizer was around 45,000. Four guys in Pennsylvania, most likely destined for Vietnam because of their lottery numbers, and not the Powerball or Mega kind, didn't want to go. The lottery numbers, running from 1 to 366, depending on your date of birth, determined whether the U.S. Government was going to risk your life to make a profit for the military-industrial complex that President Eisenhower had warned against. The lower the lottery number, the more likely you were on your way. Mine was 18.

The Government instituted the lottery in 1969 in an attempt to quell opposition to the war by the classic tactic of “divide and rule.” Before the lottery, virtually every young guy faced the prospect of Vietnam when he graduated from high school or college. With the lottery, many guys knew their necks were no longer on the line, so they curtailed or ended their anti-war activities. Of course, the lottery didn’t affect females. On the night of the drawing, young men across America tuned in to listen for their fate while females went about their usual concerns with short dresses, see-through blouses, make-up, and how much their boyfriends spent on them.

By 1980, the draft was gone, so only draft registration was left to litigate in *Goldberg v. Rostker*. Surprisingly, a three judge panel of the U.S. Eastern District Court of Pennsylvania declared the Military Selective Service Act unconstitutional as a violation of Equal Protection as incorporated in the Fifth Amendment to the Constitution because it treated guys and girls differently solely because of their sex.

Whenever the federal government does something, a clause in the Fifth Amendment requires that “No person shall be . . . deprived of life, liberty, or property, without due process of law . . . .” Due process of law means “fairness,” and it is not fair for the federal government without a valid reason to treat similarly situated persons differently the way King George III did and many modern-day PC judges and bureaucrats do.

Now different groups of people who are in similar situations can be treated differently by the federal government, but in doing so, it needs to serve a valid government purpose. Whether the government purpose is a valid one and how effectively that purpose is served depends on the reason for treating similarly situated groups differently. For example, if the reason is a difference in skin color, then the government must have a “compelling” purpose that is strictly served—that’s the highest standard. If it is a sex difference, then the government must have an

“important” purpose that is substantially served—that’s the middle standard. The lowest and easiest to meet standard is that the government must have a “legitimate” purpose that is rationally served, which usually involves an economic difference.

Since it was undisputed that the Military Selective Service Act created a sex-based difference, it was up to the federal government to show that keeping females from registering substantially served an important government purpose or that guys and girls were not similarly situated.

The Pennsylvania District Court panel found that the purpose of draft registration was to equip the Department of Defense with information so that if it decided on a national mobilization, it could move quickly, effectively, and with great flexibility to achieve wartime personnel requirements from the pool of registered persons: 18 to 25 year-olds. Since the military included women in some roles, young guys and girls were similarly situated. The judges then had to decide whether excluding females from that pool substantially served the purpose of mobilizing the military in time of national emergency quickly, effectively, and with flexibility in conscripting registrants? The three judges ruled it did not and declared draft registration unconstitutional:

It is incongruous that Congress believes on the one hand that it substantially enhances our national defense to constantly expand the utilization of women in the military, and on the other hand endorses legislation excluding women from the pool of registrants available for induction. Congress allocates funds so that the military can use and actively seek more female recruits but nonetheless asserts that there is justification for excluding females from selective service, despite the shortfall in the recruitment of women. Congress rejects the current opinion of each of the military services and asserts that women can contribute to the military effectively only as volunteers and not as inductees.

The President, the Director of the Selective Service System, and representatives of the Department of Defense informed Congress that including women in the pool of registrants eligible for induction would increase military flexibility. The record reveals that in almost any conceivable military crisis the armed forces

could utilize skills now almost entirely concentrated in the female population of the nation. Congress itself has appropriated funds for the increased recruitment and utilization of women in the armed services.

The problem with [prohibiting female registration] is that the record before [this court] proves that there already is extensive utilization of females in the military and that this utilization will substantially increase. The die is already cast for substantial female involvement in the military. Furthermore, the military does not lose flexibility if women are registered because induction calls for females can be made according to military needs as they accrue in the future. Though military flexibility might call for less utilization of female inductees than male inductees in a given crisis situation, it is the antithesis of “flexibility” to exclude women from the pool of registrants that could be called upon in a time of national need.

The principal reason the government proffers for a male-only registration is that it provides military flexibility. The record here, however, reveals that women do serve a useful role in the military and provide important skills. The foregoing discussion also illustrates that flexibility is not enhanced, but is in fact limited by the complete exclusion of women. We therefore hold that the complete exclusion of women from the pool of registrants does not serve “important governmental objectives” and is not “substantially related” . . . to any alleged government interest. Thus, the Military Selective Service Act unconstitutionally discriminates between males and females.

*Goldberg v. Rostker*, 509 F.Supp. 586, 603 - 605 (E.D. Pa.1980).

Sounds fair, sounds just, and then the Supremes stepped in.

The Supreme Court simply changed the purpose of registration from mobilizing the military in time of national emergency quickly, effectively, and with flexibility in conscripting registrants to just creating a pool of potential combat troops. Since women were excluded from combat, the Supreme Court decided it made no sense to require females to join a pool for doing something they were prohibited from doing.

But what about all those non-combat support jobs that females were performing? Logically a draft could have been used to fill those roles during an emergency, but the Court believed enough females would volunteer. Sure, if the military paid them enough, which it wasn't, which was why its recruitment efforts for women were not going as planned. The

Supreme Court simply overlooked these realities—as it often does—and ruled that equal protection did not apply because guys and girls were not similarly situated.

This is not a case of Congress arbitrarily choosing to burden one of two similarly situated groups, such as would be the case with an all-black or all-white, or an all-Catholic or all-Lutheran, or an all-Republican or all-Democratic registration. Men and women, because of the combat restrictions on women, are simply not similarly situated for purposes of a draft or registration for a draft.

*Rostker v. Goldberg*, 453 U.S. 57, 78 (1981). (The caption names switched when appealed).

Since *Rostker v. Goldberg*, the laws barring females from combat were repealed; the nature of war changed, such that those in the rear were now engaging in combat; and Pentagon policies continued to allow more and more females into combat positions. Then on January 23, 2013, the Pentagon decided to end the policy of excluding women from any combat position by January 2016, except for possibly a few limited ones. The two sexes now seemed to be similarly situated under the 1981 decision of the Supreme Court when it came to draft registration. By requiring only one sex to register for the draft and barring the other should therefore be a violation of the Equal Protection Clause of the Fifth Amendment.

A group of men's rights activists in California, with whom I had been in contact for years, filed a lawsuit on behalf of a young man claiming that draft registration discriminated against him and other guys 18 to 25 years old by not requiring females to register. *National Coalition for Men et al. v. Selective Service System et al.*, 13-cv-02391 (C.D. Cal. 2013).

The U.S. District Court for Central California threw the case out on two grounds. One, the case was not “ripe” for adjudication, since the facts were uncertain at the time. The Pentagon stated it was opening combat positions to females but to what extent that would happen had not yet occurred. Two, even if the Court did declare draft registration unconstitutional because it did not include females, the inclusion of females resulting from such a Court decision would not help

the male plaintiff or any other males because they still had to register. The plaintiff, therefore, did not have “standing.”

The light bulb in my head doesn't work too well these days, but it went off after reading the Court's decision—bring a case against registration with a young lady as plaintiff and class representative for all the 18 to 25 year old females in America. That would eliminate the standing problem because she'll be arguing that the Selective Service prevented her from registering—that's the harm, and the Court can cure it by requiring females to register along with males.

The Supreme Court has held that equal protection does not only require similar benefits for those in similar situations but also similar burdens. Registering for the draft is a burden foisted on young males by the U.S. Government, so not requiring the same burden for young females is discriminatory against the females. The Supreme Court strikes down discrimination based on traditional stereotypes regardless of whether men or women are the beneficiaries. “[I]f the statutory objective is to exclude or ‘protect’ members of one gender because they are presumed to suffer from an inherent handicap or to be innately inferior, the objective itself is illegitimate.” *Mississippi Univ. for Women v. Hogan*, 458 U.S. 718, 725 (1982).

The issue of “ripeness” would still remain a problem at the beginning of a case, but by the time my planned class action with a female plaintiff reached the Supreme Court, most, if not all, the combat jobs would be open to females. Legally, the Court could not then duck a decision based on a procedural matter of ripeness. Politically, however, the Justices can do whatever they want.

But where to find a young lady willing to fight for her right to a burden, and why would someone choose equality over preferential treatment? There were, however, such ladies out

there because they viewed such discrimination as treating them as second class citizens. All I had to do was find one.

Back in 1980, the National Organization of Women testified before Congress that “omission from the registration and draft ultimately robs women of the right to first-class citizenship. . . . Because men exclude women here, they justify excluding women from the decision-making of our nation.” In 1981, NOW filed an amicus brief in *Rostker v. Goldberg*, 453 U.S. 57 (1981), advocating that draft registration should be extended to women. In 2012, Maj. Mary Jennings Hegar defended her decision to challenge the combat exclusion policy in court at the risk of potentially subjecting women to the draft. “The question isn’t whether we want our daughters to be drafted, she explained, but what kind of world we want them to inhabit: one where they’re infantilized as passive objects of chivalry or one where they’re empowered to achieve their potential as genuinely equal citizens?” *Hegar et al. v. Panetta*, 12-cv-06005 (N.D. Cal. 2012).

Okay, the Feminist groups seemed like a good start. A buddy of mine in Houston and I contacted nearly every Feminist group in the country—none even bothered to respond. Sounded like the silence of hypocrisy. The search expanded to female military groups, girls’ colleges, sororities, Craig’s List, Facebook ads, Google ads, women rugby players, girls’ law school groups, the girls that I hit on at clubs, and the Columbia University Alumni network. There were a few responses from young ladies who were interested, but then they told their parents or boyfriends and that put an end to it for them.

The Columbia Alumni network resulted in a discussion over the question, “Should women 18 to 25 have to register for the draft as do men 18 to 25?” One bizarre response came from Erica Jong:



From the very beginning this “discussion” has made deeply disappointed in Columbia’s educational assumptions. What I value most when I teach is questioning and humility. There is a know-it-all tone here that makes me glad I went to Barnard. I wonder how I even made it through Grad Fac. Education is for opening the mind—not competing over prejudices and tired old ideas.

Gentlemen—I leave you to your insular jousting over who has the biggest you know what.

ERICA MANN JONG, Poet & Novelist  
Barnard, Columbia Graduate Faculties, 25 Books published (sic) in 40 languages.

To which I responded: “Ah, the smell of Portnoy immaturity.”

During my search for a plaintiff, I started taking classes at the Krav Maga Academy on 26<sup>th</sup> Street. Krav Maga is the Israeli Defense Force’s martial arts for killing Arabs with your bare hands. Given Israel’s win-lost record at war, I figured it was pretty good. Former IDF guys taught the classes, which were more practical than other martial arts courses I had taken, except for Mark’s. Surprisingly, one of the female employees agreed to be the plaintiff in the draft case, but then her life fell apart, so my search continued. As a side note, I lasted a little over two years at the Academy, but then they kicked me out for flirting with the young babes. Guess the instructors were jealous that I could make the girls laugh and they couldn’t, or they didn’t want any of their Jewish chicks consorting with a true blooded Aryan. So I went looking for another martial arts school at which to wear out my welcome.

Back to finding a plaintiff—what about actresses? They love publicity and the case should attract lots of coverage. Out went a mailing to virtually every talent and casting agent in the City. A few responded and a couple of interviews resulted. One said thanks but no thanks, and the other was willing but too busy with her career to devote the time necessary to prepare for the expected interviews.

Desperation was setting in when I realized I had not contacted everyone for whom I had an email address and all my alleged friends on Facebook. The Facebook effort resulted in a few less friends of the two-faced kind, but my emails resulted in an attorney with whom I had worked on the case against the Wall Street crooks who caused the 2008 recession. She referred me to a 17 year-old high school senior who was about to graduate, the daughter of one of her friends. This young lady not only proved willing but more competent and mature than any of the other ladies I had communicated with and most of the attorneys I have encountered. The case began over the July 4<sup>th</sup> weekend of 2015, and was assigned to this hot Latina Judge in the U.S. District Court for New Jersey whom Obama had appointed. At first, I wanted to ask the Judge out, but thought she might hold me in contempt.

The attorney for the federal government came out of the Department of Justice in D.C. rather than the New Jersey U.S. Attorney's Office. In her motion to dismiss, she raised the issue that the plaintiff was only 17 and draft registration applied to 18 to 25 year olds. But she took so long in submitting the Government's motion that 17 year old was now within 30 days of her 18<sup>th</sup> birthday, which was good enough. Guys are allowed to register for the draft beginning 30 days before they turn 18. Justice's delay, therefore, allowed me to file an amended complaint with the plaintiff now old enough to register, if she had been a guy. Even without the amended complaint, it was unlikely the Court would dismiss because the original plaintiff was too young, since the plaintiffs in the *Rostker v. Goldberg* case were underage when it began.

In response to the amended complaint, the Government filed a new motion to dismiss. The female attorney did what female defense attorneys do—lie, prevaricate, dissemble, and exaggerate. This always seemed strange to me, since I had worked at a defense law firm, Cravath, and they never did that. With the help of the attorney who referred the 17 year old

plaintiff to me, we filed an opposition brief in the hope of popping the Government's bubbles of disingenuousness. The filing occurred after Secretary of Defense Carter had announced on December 3, 2015, that all military positions would be open to females.

The Judge, unlike in the California case, got cold feet about making a decision using as an excuse the machinations in Congress. The House Armed Services Committee included in its version of the 2017 National Defense Authorization Act an amendment that young women should register for the draft just as do young men. Rep. Duncan Hunter (R) in Jonathan Swift fashion sponsored the amendment in order to mock sending females into combat, which he adamantly opposed. Hunter voted against his own amendment in committee but it passed, which he didn't expect, and was sent to the House Rules Committee. He quickly became the butt of late-night talk-show mockery.

House Republican leaders were not laughing. It became increasingly clear that Hunter's amendment might pass a House floor vote. House leaders scrambled behind the scenes to block it. They used a rare procedural maneuver in the Rules Committee to strip the female registration amendment from the Defense Authorization Act while punting with a time-delaying study on reforming the Selective Service. The Republican Chairman of the Rules Committee called requiring women to register for the draft a "reckless policy." On May 18, 2016, the House passed its version of the Defense Authorization Act without draft registration for females but with instructions for the Secretary of Defense to submit a study on whether to eliminate the Selective Service.

Meanwhile in the Senate, the Armed Services Committee approved an amendment to its version of the Defense Authorization Act, sponsored by its chairman Sen. John McCain that required females to register for the draft. Sen. McCain said, "The fact is every single leader in

this country, both men and women, members of the military leadership, believe that it's fair since we opened up all aspects of the military to women that they would also be registering for Selective Services." Majority Leader Sen. Mitch McConnell, at least for the media, supported the amendment. The Senate passed its version and the Senate and House bills were sent to a House-Senate Conference Committee to resolve the differences in the two bills.

### We're Not Going to Take It

While the draft case was imprisoned in the N.J. District Court, I started doing volunteer work for the Trump Presidential Campaign—leaving the law library in the early afternoon for Trump Tower, 12 blocks up Fifth Avenue, to make telephone calls during the primaries and the general election. Once I mentioned to a pal lawyer, a Clinton supporter, "I'm off to the Alamo," to which he responded, "Don't forget your Bowie knife."

Most of the Trump Tower callers were aging baby boomers like me. Once in a while some hot young model chick would show up to make calls. They never sat next to me. In addition to the telephone calling, what I thought was a great idea to help Trump win the election popped into my head.

The FBI had just cleared Hillary of any wrong doing in keeping state secrets on her personal server, in part, by asserting that the server had never been hacked. If any of the 30,000 emails she had "bleached" off the server or any of the classified emails that were made public but redacted by the Government showed up in their original form, then obviously her server had been hacked. Such would reignite the controversy and help Trump's campaign. At that time, the FBI and media were accusing Russian GRU of hacking the DNC and Hillary's campaign chairman. If so, maybe they also hacked Hillary's private server. So I contacted a GRU buddy requesting a few copies of the bleached or classified emails, if they had them. Telling him, I'd

make them public through my media contacts. He replied, however, that GRU did not have them, which meant they did not hack the server or they wanted Hillary to win. Personally, had I been Putin, Hillary would be better for Russia, since he had already bribed her over the Uranium One deal. She was in his pocket.

That didn't work, so I tried another angle. From day one of the campaign the PC—*Pravda Correct*—news media hammered Trump. The reporters lied, prevaricated, dissembled, took quotes out of content, spun them around to say what the reporters wanted and then reported such as facts to depict Trump as “inappropriate”—to put it mildly.

The PC-Feminists had taken over much of the news media since I had worked in TV News in the 1970s and 1980s as a writer and political producer. Back then, one station for which I worked, Metromedia Channel 5 in New York City, had a sign over the only exit from the newsroom: “There are two sides to every story, make sure you get both of them!” Today, for the propaganda press, the two sides of every story are the left and the far left, and if neither exists, make it up. The reporters think they are better than their audience—that the public should accept their biased words as gospel. They believe their PC philosophy is the one and only truth in the Universe. We've heard that before—the Commies, Nazis, Klan and every lunatic dictator and religious cult to come down the pike.

All reporters have a duty to the public—to be the observers of world events for the rest of us. As Archibald MacLeish said,

Freedom of the press is a right belonging, like all rights in a democracy, to all the people. As a practical matter, however, it can be exercised only by those who have effective access to the press. Where financial, economic, and technological conditions limit such access to a small minority, the exercise of that right by that minority takes on fiduciary or quasi-fiduciary characteristics.

*Freedom of the Press*, a Report from the Commission on Freedom of the Press at 99 n. 4 (1947).

That duty does not mean acting as acolytes for PC ideology, Clinton and Obama. It means to enlighten, elucidate and educate, not turn into a Goebbels's like propaganda monster foisting a particular ideology on the populace. "It is a principle among [the press] that when truth has fair play, it will always prevail over falsehood." Benjamin Franklin. PC reporters were no longer giving truth a fair play in the presidential election. They were undermining the most important right of all with their biased and deceitful reporting: "No right is more precious in a free country than that of having a voice in the election of those who make the laws under which, as good citizens, we must live. Other rights, even the most basic, are illusory if the right to vote is undermined." *Wesberry v. Sanders*, 376 U.S. 1, 17 (1964).

In America there are checks and balances for every major institution except the press. If the President violates his duty, there are the courts and Congress. If Congress violates its duty there are the courts and the President. If judges violate their duties, Congress can impeach them. If businesses violate the law the district attorney can prosecute or citizens can sue. But what if the press violates its fiduciary duty of fairness in political reporting? A political figure can sue for defamation, but he'll lose because the requirement of Constitutional malice is extremely difficult to prove. It requires determining what reporters were thinking when they wrote their stories. Naturally, as card-carrying PCers, they would lie.

So what to do? Then late at night, lying in bed, the light bulb went on, again—RICO! PC ideologue reporters were violating the Racketeer Influenced and Corrupt Organizations Act, and I could sue them under RICO—yes! RICO is a criminal statute so normally a case can only be brought by a government prosecutor. But Congress decided to also allow everyday citizens to bring a case when their properties or businesses were injured by those engaging in racketeering activities. It's called a private right of action and was put in the RICO Act to provide for and

encourage private attorneys general “to fill prosecutorial gaps.” *Sedima, S.P.R.L. v. Imrex Co.*, 473 U.S. 479, 493 (1985); *United Health Care Corp. v. Am. Trade Ins. Co.*, 88 F.3d 563, 575 (8th Cir. 1996) (congressional intent to enroll private claimants in deterring racketeering). I’d still have to prove the *Pravda* reporters violated certain criminal acts, but I would only have to show it by a preponderance of the evidence rather than beyond a reasonable doubt. That was fine. In effect the reporters would be accused of criminal acts by me—a private attorneys general. An added benefit was that insurance companies that provide personal or property injury coverage to the news media companies, or any other company, usually don’t cover criminal acts—and RICO is nothing but criminal acts.

RICO has many requirements, but the key one needed to sue is that a defendant engaged in a “racketeering activity” of which there are many. So which ones were the PC reporters guilty of? The only one was wire fraud. They created and caused to be broadcast and electronically published intentionally false and misleading news reports concerning the Trump Campaign; they provided commentary based on false sets of alleged facts or failed to reveal the factual bases for their judgments; and they lobbied on various news-talk shows in furtherance of their opposition to the Trump Campaign. Wire fraud didn’t require determining what PC reporters were thinking; only that their actions indicated they had devised, participated in, or abetted a scheme to defraud others. That scheme, or as it turned out, seven schemes by seven different news groups was to trick the electorate into voting for Clinton.

Another main element of RICO, and any lawsuit, is injury—how was I injured by PC reporters foisting fraudulent reports, commentaries and lobbying in their efforts to trick the electorate? The answer was that for members of the Trump Campaign, such as me, to counter the PC reporters’ efforts to defraud, we needed to circumvent the mainstream-media bottle-neck

on campaign information, commentaries and lobbying. To do so required us to contribute more funds and time to reach voters directly in order to present voters with the Trump Campaign side and counter—in the law it’s called rectify and mitigate—the PC reporters fraudulent reports, commentaries and their anti-Trump lobbying. After all, “Voting rights subsume . . . [the] chance to contribute to a chosen candidate,” Lawrence Tribe, *American Constitutional Law* at 1062 (3rd ed.), and I chose to contribute to Trump.

If the PC reporters were faithfully fulfilling their duty to the voters by providing reports and communications that were fair, balanced and impartial; then the amount of contributions and time provided by Trump Campaign members and supporters would be significantly less. Since time is money, especially for a lawyer, and money is money, the added time and money were both injuries to property, which is what RICO requires.

Okay, so which reporters to sue? There were so many PC reporters toadying to the PC-Feminist elite that wanted Hillary Clinton for President and to hobble the effectiveness of members of the Trump Campaign. Seven of them seemed to be the biggest liars and deceivers with the largest audiences, so I sue them. Perhaps unconsciously, I identified them with the seven deadly sins of hubris, greed, lust, malicious envy, gluttony, inordinate anger, and sloth—then again, maybe they were just liars. Either way, the seven were deadly to this democracy. They were, in order of the channel dial on the television set of my youth plus a couple of newspapers: Major Garrett, CBS News; Katy Tur, NBC News; Chuck Todd, NBC Meet the Press; Tom Llamas, ABC News; Jim Acosta, CNN; David Brooks, New York Times and PBS News Hour; and Jenna Johnson, Washington Post.

Judges, especially in Bolshevik New York City, dislike RICO because it has so many parts—means too much work. They also shy away from decisions contrary to PC ideology for



fear of upsetting the PC storm troopers. Besides those two problems of which I had no control over, the main argument against the case was that The First Amendment guarantees freedom of speech. It wasn't the guarantee of freedom of the press because the U.S. Supreme Court—where I was aiming—decides cases involving what the press states under the freedom of speech clause. The reason is simple: “[t]he press in its historic connotation comprehends every sort of publication which affords a vehicle of information and opinion.” *Lovell v. City of Griffin, Ga.*, 303 U.S. 444, 452 (1938). Since this definition is so broad, it's impossible for the courts to distinguish press protection from the general doctrine of free speech. So the key issue was whether the freedom of speech clause protected the news media defendants engaging in wire fraud.

It doesn't. “‘From 1791 to the present’ . . . the First Amendment has ‘permitted restrictions upon the content of speech in a few limited areas,’ and has never ‘include[d] a freedom to disregard these traditional limitations.’” *U.S. v. Stevens*, 559 U.S. 460, 468 (2010) (quoting *R.A.V. v. St. Paul*, 505 U.S. 377, 382–383 (1992)). These areas, such as “speech integral to criminal conduct, *Giboney v. Empire Storage & Ice Co.*, 336 U.S. 490, 498 (1949), are ‘well-defined and narrowly limited classes of speech, the prevention and punishment of which have never been thought to raise any Constitutional problem.’” *Stevens*, 559 U.S. at 468-469 (quoting *Chaplinsky v. New Hampshire*, 315 U.S. 568, 571–572 (1942)). The *Stevens* decision from 2010 emphasized that speech integral to criminal conduct was not protected by mentioning that traditional limitation several times. *Stevens*, 559 U.S. at 468, 471.

Since RICO and the criminal act of wire fraud are crimes—the *Pravda* reporters' pursuit of their schemes by fraudulent reports, commentaries and lobbying were not protected speech. The First Amendment doesn't guarantee freedom to lie, deceive and commit wire fraud. Also,

along with freedom comes responsibility. The press does not have the freedom to intentionally or with reckless disregard for the truth paint a false reality in conformance with an ideology that has run amok across this land replacing the Constitution and principles on which this nation was founded. The right to vote in a free and fair election is more important than biased reporters mouthing PC ideology.

My researcher, the single mother in Slovakia, found a lot of the seven deadly reporters' false and misleading communications that were included in the complaint filed on August 23, 2016, in the United States District Court for the Southern District of New York. A day after filing, I moved by Order to Show Cause for a preliminary injunction to put a temporary halt to the seven deadly reporters subverting the electoral process. Had I gone the usual motion by notice route, the Court would not have gotten around to it until after the election in November.

The Judge quickly denied the request for a preliminary injunction—ruling it a forbidden prior restraint. Apparently the propaganda press can do what ever it wants, but trying to stop its illegal activities is forbidden. The ruling meant the case would have no impact on the election unless it emotionally shook-up the seven deadly reporters into doing what they were supposed to do—report both sides fairly. Assuming that it might, I added not only more reporters but the news outfits they worked for in an amended complaint. The final list of defendants were

CBS News Inc.;

Major Elliott Garrett, CBS News reporter;

NBCUniversal News Group;

Lester Don Holt, Jr., NBC News anchor;

Katharine Bear Tur, NBC News reporter;

Charles David Todd, NBC News moderator of Meet the Press;

Andrea Mitchell, NBC News reporter;

Hallie Marie Jackson, NBC News reporter;

Kristen Welker, NBC News reporter;

ABC News Division;

Thomas Llamas, ABC News reporter and anchor;

Cecilia M. Vega, ABC News reporter and anchor;

Jonathan David Karl, ABC News reporter;  
NewsHour Productions LLC;  
Gwendolyn L. Ifill, PBS NewsHour anchor and co-managing editor;  
John Yang, PBS NewsHour reporter;  
Lisa Desjardins, PBS NewsHour reporter;  
Cable News Network;  
Abilio James Acosta, CNN reporter;  
New York Times Newsroom;  
Megan M. Twohey, New York Times reporter;  
David Brooks, commentator for the New York Times  
and PBS News Hour;  
Washington Post Newsroom;  
Jenna Johnson, Washington Post reporter;

Twenty-four lying, prevaricating and dissembling media defendants—alright! I also tried to get some Trump supporters to join me in the case as plaintiffs, but they were too scared to publicly stand up for their beliefs. Voting for Trump in the secrecy of the election booth was the extent of their courage, but that was understandable considering the threat of Clinton’s Commie hit squads. Such fears made me realize that this must be what people living in the former Soviet Union experienced, although we still had a choice of whom to elect. It also probably explained why the polls were wrong about the election—people were simply scare to admit for whom they would vote. Can’t blame them; I won’t wear my red “Make America Great Again” hat in the streets of NYC.

Unlike some of my other cases, this one attracted zero media attention. Couldn’t figure out why, since it was timely and dealt with an important topic. Then the reference librarian at the law library enlightened me, “Who’s going to cover it? You’re suing everybody.” He was right; the case was against much of the news media.

A couple of weeks after filing the amended complaint, Trump won the election—take that you succubi of PC totalitarianism. Every so often truth and justice win out. The election night party was great, and to my surprise largely populated with millennials, most wearing

“Make America Great Again” red hats. The victory party had Fox News on the giant screens and when Megyn Kelly started whining about the lying hos who accused Trump of molesting them, the Crowd let out with a loud round of boos. When Fox mentioned Hillary, the crowd chanted, “Lock her up! Lock her up!” Fox often cut away to Clinton’s headquarters showing the teary-eyed, sad-sack, PC loonies watching their power of intolerance go down the drain. The losers at Clinton’s headquarters dressed the part—they looked like bums, not a suit nor a dress in the bunch. Trump’s supporters, however, were all in suits or dresses and no cross dressers that I could see. Could this be the end of PC-Feminism? Maybe, but it will take a while to push these self-righteous, commie-like fanatics out of office and power. I soon learned it would take more than time.

The Trump volunteers who had spent a fair amount of 2016 calling voters from Trump Tower organized a field trip to the inauguration, so I went—my third inauguration. The first was to protest Nixon’s in 1973, and the second was Reagan’s in 1981 while working as the Channel 7 TV News political producer. The day before we left for Trump’s inauguration, a reporter from France TV 2 contacted me wanting to do an interview about the anti-PC-Feminism cases: Ladies’ Nights, VAWA and the one against Columbia’s Women’s Studies Program. She was flying into D.C. on Inauguration Day, to mainly cover the female march the next day. So we arranged to meet in D.C. on Inauguration Day.

The weather for the inauguration was cold and rainy, so naturally security for the event confiscated everyone’s umbrellas. Leading up to Trump’s speech they introduced the hoi polloi as they were seated on the dais—not unlike the aristocratic receptions given in old Europe. When the Clintons were introduced—the crowd booed, and many yelled “Lock them up”! When Obama as well as his wife were introduced—the crowd booed, and some yelled “Lock them up

too”! Before Trump spoke they were a few speeches, including one by Senator Chuck Schumer of New York. Couldn’t figure out why he was speaking, and he probably wished he wasn’t. The crowd booed him through his entire speech—not just because he was the epitome of the PC Pol, but he wouldn’t stop talking. He just went on and on as though he had been elected President. Trump gave a short but solid speech.

Afterward, I went to meet the French reporter Zoe, wearing my red “Make America Great Again.” There were so many of us in D.C. that the PC Neo-Bolsheviks probably would not bother me—didn’t know about the Antifa wimps. Zoe was cute with a sexy accent and accompanied by her cameraman. We headed to the post-inaugural parade with them filming and periodically interviewing me. On our way, a trio of Obamite, hate-whitey young punks tried to interfere until I challenged them. They split—never underestimate the influence of the threat of physical violence. Near the parade route on Pennsylvania Avenue, we stopped and Zoe conducted a more extensive interview. Some Antifa millennial stuck his face in front of the camera. Okay, he and the other baby millennials lost, so give him one chance. But then he did it again, I instinctively pushed him aside, struck him with an open hand to his throat, and the fight ensued. Had I used a spear hand strike, he would have been dead—but I showed him the mercy he didn’t deserve. Not one of my best fights, since it ended in a draw—both of us still standing, but I doubt he’ll do that again. A Trump supporter who had witnessed the incident suggested I complain to the D.C. Police on the corner. Okay, but the Police Lieutenant, after watching the video, said in a nice manner you were really the aggressor, but if you would like to apply to my squad let me know. So what’s the lesson? When dealing with Neo-Bolsheviks like Antifa—never underestimate the influence of physical violence.

Zoe came up to NYC to interview some others and did another interview with me. One of her questions this time was whether I had ever been discriminated against because I was a guy—that was easy:

The female head of my draft board tried to send me to Vietnam twice.

The news director of Metromedia TV News in NYC wanted to hire me as a researcher but couldn't because I was a guy, and the Federal Communication Commission was pushing a quota system to hire girls. He got around it by having all the five stations in the network hire a fifth of me. That way, it would not show up on his employment roster that he had hired a guy when the FCC was forcing the news media to hire girls—regardless of their competence.

After working at Metromedia for over a year, the news director came up to me and said, "Roy I'd make you a reporter but I can't because you're a guy."

When I graduate law school near the top of my class, eleventh out of 400, I only applied for the most prestigious positions with the Federal Government that were called Honor's positions for new law school graduates. I landed 10 interviews. For eight of the positions, I was interviewed by a girl who would make the hiring decision, one by a homosexual, and one by a regular guy. Guess from which ones I didn't get an offer? Everyone in which a girl made the hiring decision and the one in which a queer made the decision. I didn't care about the queer's decision—during the interview, I decided not to take that job even if it was the last one in the Federal Government. But I did care about being denied an offer from the Department of Justice and the State Department. They were considered numbers one and two on the prestige list. I ended up taking number three on the prestige list—the Treasury Department where a guy made the hiring decision. What made me realize discrimination was at work and not credentials was that the hiring matrons in all the other jobs of less prestige and requirements denied my applications.

When I left Cravath, I applied to a number of law schools to pursue a master's degree. This was the early nineties. Each and every one denied me admission. The PC/Feminist ideology had taken control of law schools and they were ramping up their quotas for girls. So instead, I earned a Masters of Business from Columbia University.

More discrimination came in the NYC divorce court. Ask any divorce lawyer in New York, male or female, and they will tell you there is no justice for a husband or father in NYC courts. The ideology of PC/Feminism rules—men have no rights. My wife—a Russian mafia prostitute who repeatedly lied on her immigration filings and committed a felony by registering to vote while not a

citizen—was treated as an angelic being by the lesbian judge who clearly wanted to shove her face between my wife’s legs.

But probably the most blatant discrimination came from the various judges in the men’s rights cases. It didn’t matter whether they were state court judges—whom every prestigious law firm tries to avoid because the vast majority are idiots—or the best and the brightest in the federal courts. Every single judge—and there were around 20 (not counting the U.S. Supreme Court ones who refused to hear any of my cases)—every single judge ruled according to the law of PC/Feminism rather than the U.S. Constitution or statutes.

The PC/Feminist ideology running and ruining the court system is not restrict to courts in NYC as decisions by federal courts on the left coast have made clear by illegally restricting the executive orders of President Trump on immigration.

The beginning of Trump’s presidency didn’t help my case against the *Pravda Correct* press. The defendants made their motions to dismiss. After filing my opposition, I checked out the biography of the Judge. After law school, he worked as a newspaper reporter and was subsequently appointed to the bench by Obama—the case was doomed.

The Judge threw it into the can by ruling the news media could say anything it wanted on political affairs under the free speech clause of the First Amendment, except for defamation and some other “truly rare cases”—meaning, I assume, cases that involve interference with PC speech. He even noted that speech integral to the commission of a crime was not protected but somehow missed that was exactly what the news media defendants were accuses of—RICO and wire fraud—criminal statutes. I’ll bet he never even read my memorandum of law.

The Judge’s entire decision focused only on the free speech issue, which he actually admitted by saying, “the Court develops only” that issue. As for the other issues, he just ruled in one sentence that the *Pravda Correct* press prevailed on those. No reasoning, no analysis just an order from one of those PCers who believe they are akin to the aristocracy of feudal Europe—”we say what’s right—you obey!” So I appealed to the U.S. Second Circuit—a lot of good that

would do, but it was necessary to have a shot at the U.S. Supreme Court. By then, Trump might have appointed another Justice besides Neil Gorsuch.

The procedure in the Second Circuit commie friendly court—where was Judge Kaufman when we needed him—is that after the appellant (the one who lost in the district court, which means me whenever I’m fighting for the rights of white heterosexual men) files his brief, the PC-Feminists on the other side file their brief. I then have the opportunity to file a reply and request oral argument, which I have done since 2003 fighting these PC-Totalitarians in court. It never did any good, so why bother this time. I knew how the PC-Totalitarians in the Second Circuit would decide—just wanted the decision so that I could try for the Supreme Court.

The three judge panel did exactly what I expected. They issued a three page unpublished decision, or summary order, that stated, “We have reviewed all of the arguments raised by plaintiff on appeal and find them to be without merit.” No analysis just a decree from the life-term PC bureaucrats of the Second Circuit. Guess they did not want to take time away from the golf course for such a trivial issue as the mainstream news media using wire fraud to try to throw a presidential election.

An unpublished decision means it has no value for future cases—it’s not precedent. That way, if a case arose in which the press tried to throw an election for an anti-politically correct candidate, the Court would not be bound by its decision. It could then rule in accordance with PC-Feminist ideology by finding the press liable for its fraud on the voters. In addition, by declaring the decision had no precedential value, the Second Circuit panel was running a con—judges do that a lot. Here’s the con: the losing attorney and party will figure that because the decision has no value for future cases, the Supreme Court will automatically deny any request to hear the case. After all, why would the Supreme Court waste its time on a case that has no



precedential value? That con has tricked a lot of lawyers and parties. Many are unaware of what former Supreme Court Justice John Paul Stevens said, “[I] tend to vote to grant [certiorari] more on unpublished opinions, on the theory that occasionally judges use the unpublished opinion as a device to reach a decision that might be a little hard to justify.” J. Cole & E. Bucklo, *A Life Well Lived: An Interview With Justice John Paul Stevens*, 32 *Litigation* 8, 67 (Spring 2006).

“A little hard to justify” is an understatement, so off to the U.S. Supreme Court the case went. Trump did not have an opportunity before then to appoint another justice, but I gave it a shot anyway. The first step was to file a petition for writ of certiorari. The petition argues that the Court should hear the case because it is important to the country and the Second Circuit’s decision conflicted with Supreme Court decisions and those of other circuit courts.

On importance, I argued:

**“The Constitution specifically selected the press . . . to play an important role in the discussion of public affairs.”** *Mills v. State of Ala.*, 384 U.S. 214, 219 (1966).

What happens when that crucial role is subverted is at the heart of this case. Whether members of the news media may commit fraud with impunity to undermine the most fundamental right of all—to participate in a fair electoral process.

No right is more precious in a free country than that of having a voice in the election of those who make the laws under which, as good citizens, we must live. Other rights, even the most basic, are illusory if the right to vote is undermined.

*Wesberry v. Sanders*, 376 U.S. 1, 17 (1964).

“In a republic where the people are sovereign, the ability of the citizenry to make informed choices among candidates for office is essential.” *Citizens United v. Fed. Election Comm’n*, 558 U.S. 310, 339 (2010) (quoting *Buckley v. Valeo*, 424 U. S. 1, 14-15 (1976)). As Ida B. Wells once said, “People must know before they can act and there is no educator to compare to the press.” Providing that the press is telling the truth.

The Mainstream News Media, however, intentionally misinformed the electorate during the 2016 presidential election by communicating via wire, radio, television and Internet intentionally or recklessly false, prevaricating or dissembling (“fraudulent”) statements and reports about the Trump Campaign as set out in the Appendix.

The Mainstream News Media's "use of the known lie as a tool is at once at odds with the premises of democratic government and with the orderly manner in which economic, social, or political change is to be effected." *Garrison v. State of La.*, 379 U.S. 64, 75 (1964). As the Radio, Television and Digital News Association's Guiding Principles state:

Journalism's obligation is to the public. Journalism places the public's interests ahead of commercial, political and personal interests. Journalism empowers viewers, listeners and readers to make more informed decisions for themselves; it does not tell people what to believe or how to feel. . . . Journalism verifies, provides relevant context, tells the rest of the story and acknowledges the absence of important additional information.

In America there are checks and balances for every major institution except the press. If the President violates his duties, there are the courts, Congress and the press. If Congress violates its duties, there are the courts, the President and the press. If judges violate their duties, Congress can impeach them. If businesses violate the law, the district attorney can prosecute, citizens can sue or the press can expose. But what if the press violates its fiduciary duty of fairness in political reporting? A public figure can sue, but he will likely fail because of the requirement of constitutional malice. This case is simply trying to bring about a check and balance on the Mainstream News Media to stick to its duty of fairness and nonpartisanship—a duty it most assuredly must fulfill.

As Mr. Justice Black put it, "In the First Amendment the Founding Fathers gave the free press the protection it must have to fulfill its essential role in our democracy. The press was to serve the governed . . ." *New York Times Co. v. U.S.*, 403 U.S. 713, 717 (1971) (concurring opinion). "The extraordinary protections afforded by the First Amendment carry with them something in the nature of a fiduciary duty to exercise the protected rights responsibly a duty widely acknowledged but not always observed by editors and publishers." *Nebraska Press Ass'n v. Stuart*, 427 U.S. 539, 560 (1976).

According to Archibald MacLeish:

Freedom of the press is a right belonging, like all rights in a democracy, to all the people. As a practical matter, however, it can be exercised only by those who have effective access to the press. Where financial, economic, and technological conditions limit such access to a small minority, the exercise of that right by that minority takes on fiduciary or quasi-fiduciary characteristics.

*Freedom of the Press, A Framework of Principles, A Report from the Commission on Freedom of the Press* at 99 n.4 (Univ. of Chicago Press 1947).

The Mainstream News Media intentionally breach its duty to the public in order to present voters with a fraudulent reality in its news reports so that voters would decide to elect the "politically correct" choice for President, Hillary Clinton. "[A]ny medium has the power of imposing its own assumption[s] on the unwary." Marshal McLuhan, *Understanding Media: The Extensions of Man*, Chapter One at 6, *The Medium is the Message* (McGraw-Hill, 1964).

The influence of the news media of which the Mainstream News Media is a major component should not be underestimated. The news media is a major driving force in the voting decisions of tens of millions of Americans. The extent of its power to manipulate the election process is expressed by the characterization of it as “The Fourth Estate.” Let’s not forget that Clinton received 2.9 million more votes than Trump.

The argument that the Second Circuit ignored decisions of the Supreme Court basically stated two reasons:

**1. The Supreme Court has held as a general matter that content-based restrictions on speech are permitted when that speech is an integral part of criminal conduct that violates a valid law.**

The Supreme Court in *United States v. Alvarez*, 567 U.S. 709, 717 (2012) stated:

[C]ontent-based restrictions on speech have been permitted, as a general matter, only when confined to the few “ ‘historic and traditional categories [of expression] long familiar to the bar.’ “ *United States v. Stevens*, 559 U.S. 460, 470 (2010) (quoting *Simon & Schuster, Inc. v. Members of N.Y. State Crime Victims Bd.*, 502 U.S. 105, 127, (1991) (Kennedy, J., concurring in judgment)). Among these categories are . . . speech integral to criminal conduct, *see, e.g., Giboney v. Empire Storage & Ice Co.*, 336 U.S. 490 (1949); . . . . These categories have a historical foundation in the Court’s free speech tradition. The vast realm of free speech and thought always protected in our tradition can still thrive, and even be furthered, by adherence to those categories and rules.

This Court has repeatedly held that speech integral to the commission of a crime is a category of speech that does not enjoy First Amendment protection. “[I]t has never been deemed an abridgement of freedom of speech or press to make a course of conduct illegal merely because the conduct was in part initiated, evidenced, or carried out by means of language, either spoken, written, or printed.” *Giboney*, 336 U.S. at 502 (citing *see e.g., Fox v. Washington*, 236 U.S. 273, 277 (1915) (Holmes, J.); *Chaplinsky v. New Hampshire*, 315 U.S. 568, 571-572 (1942)). This Court in *Rumsfeld v. Forum for Acad. & Institutional Rights, Inc.*, 547 U.S. 47, 62 (2006), cited the same quote from *Giboney*. In both *Osborne v. Ohio*, 495 U. S. 103, 110 (1990), and *New York v. Ferber*, 458 U.S. 747, 762 (1982), this Court again relied on *Giboney* by quoting from that decision: “It rarely has been suggested that the constitutional freedom for speech and press extends its immunity to speech or writing used as an integral part of conduct in violation of a valid criminal statute.” *Giboney*, 336 U.S. at 498.

The complaint in this case alleged that the Mainstream News Media violated RICO, 18 U.S.C. § 1964(c). RICO is a criminal statute that allows private persons to bring an action for injury caused by parties engaging in certain criminal acts that are called predicate acts. This case is concerned with the predicate act of wire fraud, 18 U.S.C. § 1343:

Whoever, having devised or intending to devise any scheme or artifice to defraud . . . by means of . . . fraudulent pretenses, representations, or promises, transmits

or causes to be transmitted by means of wire, radio, or television communication in interstate or foreign commerce, any writings, signs, signals, pictures, or sounds for the purpose of executing such scheme or artifice, shall be fined under this title or imprisoned not more than 20 years, or both. . . .

Clearly, speech is an integral part of what is proscribed by the wire fraud statute because it is necessary for executing the illegal conduct.

The Mainstream News Media’s schemes were simply to trick voters into voting for Clinton instead of Trump and to cause Trump Campaign members to spend more time and money circumventing it by going directly to the voters. The Mainstream News Media relied on the truism that “You can fool all the people some of the time, and some of the people all the time . . . .” Attributed to Abraham Lincoln. The Mainstream News Media executed its schemes by publishing over the wires fraudulent information about the Trump Campaign.

Will Rahn of CBS News admitted the Mainstream News Media’s motivation: “It shouldn’t come as a surprise to anyone that, with a few exceptions, we were all tacitly or explicitly #WithHer [Clinton] . . . .” Will Rahn, *Commentary: The unbearable smugness of the press* at 1, November 10, 2016. Journalists believed they had access to “a greater truth, a system of beliefs divined from an advanced understanding of justice.” *Id.* Rahn is a political correspondent and managing director for politics at CBS News Digital.

The reporting by the Mainstream News Media alleged as wire fraud was not speech protected by the First Amendment.

The Second Circuit also found this argument was “without merit.” (Summary Order at 3).

## **2. The Supreme Court has held that fraudulent statements bring speech outside the First Amendment.**

Fraud is one of those historic categories of speech in which content-based restrictions have been permitted. In *Stevens*, 559 U.S. at 468–469 this Court recounted:

“From 1791 to the present,” . . . the First Amendment has “permitted restrictions upon the content of speech in a few limited areas,” and has never “include[d] a freedom to disregard these traditional limitations.” *R.A.V. v. City of St. Paul, Minn.*, 505 U.S. 377, 382–383 (1992). These “historic and traditional categories long familiar to the bar,” *Simon & Schuster*, 502 U.S. at 127 (Kennedy, J., concurring in judgment)—includ[e] . . . fraud, *Virginia Bd. of Pharmacy v. Virginia Citizens Consumer Council, Inc.*, 425 U.S. 748, 771 (1976) . . . .

In *Virginia Bd. of Pharmacy* at 771, this Court relied, in part, on *Gertz v. Robert Welch, Inc.*, 418 U.S. 323, 340 (1974), which held:

[T]here is no constitutional value in fraudulent statements of fact. Neither the intentional lie nor the careless error materially advances society's interest in 'uninhibited, robust, and wide-open' debate on public issues. *New York Times Co. v. Sullivan*, 376 U.S. 254, 270 (1964). They belong to that category of utterances which 'are no essential part of any exposition of ideas, and are of such slight social value as a step to truth that any benefit that may be derived from them is clearly outweighed by the social interest in order and morality.' *Chaplinsky v. New Hampshire*, 315 U.S. 568, 572 (1942).

When it comes to fraudulent statements, this Court's unanimous decision in *Illinois* held that "the First Amendment does not shield fraud." *Illinois*, 538 U.S. at 612 (citing *see, e.g., Donaldson v. Read Magazine, Inc.*, 333 U.S. 178, 190 (1948) ([T]here is not "the slightest support for a contention that the constitutional guarantees of freedom of speech and freedom of the press include complete freedom, uncontrollable by Congress, to use the mails for perpetration of swindling [sic] schemes.").

*Donaldson* rejected freedom of speech and freedom of press challenges to the mail fraud statute because the government's power "to protect people against fraud" has "always been recognized in this country and is firmly established." *Donaldson*, 333 U.S. at 190. Such also applies to the wire fraud statute because "[t]he mail and wire fraud statutes share the same language in relevant part, and accordingly we apply the same analysis to both sets of offenses." *Carpenter v. United States*, 484 U.S. 19, 25 n.6 (1987); *United States v. Tarnopol*, 561 F.2d 466, 475 (3rd Cir. 1977), *abrogated on other grounds, Griffin v. U.S.*, 502 U.S. 46 (1991) (elements of mail and wire fraud have been construed *in pari materia*).

So while the "honest utterance, even if inaccurate, may further the fruitful exercise of the right of free speech, it does not follow that the lie, knowingly and deliberately published . . . should enjoy a like immunity. *Garrison*, 379 U.S. at 75.

At the time the First Amendment was adopted, as today, there were those unscrupulous enough and skillful enough to use the deliberate or reckless falsehood as an effective political tool to unseat the public servant or even topple an administration. *Cf. Riesman, Democracy and Defamation: Fair Game and Fair Comment I*, 42 Col.L.Rev. 1085, 1088-1111 (1942). That speech is used as a tool for political ends does not automatically bring it under the protective mantle of the Constitution. For the use of the known lie as a tool is at once at odds with the premises of democratic government and with the orderly manner in which economic, social, or political change is to be effected. Calculated falsehood falls into that class of utterances which 'are no essential part of any exposition of ideas, and are of such slight social value as a step to truth that any benefit that may be derived from them is clearly outweighed by the social interest in order and morality.' *Chaplinsky v. New Hampshire*, 315 U.S. 568, 572 (1942). Hence the knowingly false statement and the false statement made with reckless disregard of the truth, do not enjoy constitutional protection.

*Id.* at 75.

The communication of words for fraudulent purposes, whether by an individual, news media or some other organization is not protected by the First Amendment. If it were, then no person or organization could be prosecuted for fraud. *See Giboney*, 336 U.S. at 502 (“Such an expansive interpretation of the constitutional guaranties of speech and press would make it practically impossible ever to enforce laws against agreements in restraint of trade as well as many other agreements and conspiracies deemed injurious to society.”).

Once again, the Second Circuit found this argument was “without merit.” (Summary Order at 3).

As for the Second Circuit making a decision that was contrary to decisions in other circuit courts, I merely listed those decisions with a one sentence summary. Those circuits were the Sixth, Seventh, Eighth and Ninth, although the Ninth really doesn’t count.

The concluding paragraph stated:

This case raises an issue of great significance to our democratic form of government. Will the powerful Mainstream News Media remain free to do as it wishes in violation of the law so as to propagate its prevailing ideology, to undermine the right to vote and to defraud voters? Such will be the inevitable result of allowing the decisions below to stand.

The Supreme Court denied my petition for certiorari—not exactly a surprise given the tenor of the times and fear of the yellow-dog press. The news media, now known as “fake news,” continues its lies, prevarications and dissemblings in an effort to have Trump impeached and trick citizens into voting for Democrats, a.k.a. Socialists—the Democrats already have the illegal alien vote.

In this age of digital communication, the Supreme Court not only requires that documents be filed electronically but also on paper. Therein lies the Supreme Court’s favoritism for the rich and corporations that has existed since its inception. Certioraris and briefs must be in the form of booklets 6 1/8 by 9 1/4 inches in size. There are a limited number of printers who can produce such booklets, which allows them to keep the prices high. The Supreme Court Justices, all of whom previously worked as lawyers, know this, and, even in the digital age, they still require

such costly printing in order to keep middle class folks out of the Court. My Trump case's certiorari printing costs were \$8,000 for 50 booklets—\$160 per booklet. What middle class family could afford that, not to mention the cost of their lawyer. For the rich and corporations—that's peanuts. The Justices, however, aren't completely heartless. If a person claims poverty, such as a deadbeat, drug addict, illegal alien, terrorist, or #MeTooHo, then the Justices will not require that documents be filed in booklet form—how nice. Apparently justice for the hard working is in the streets or vigilantism.

### Coup d'état

Following the election and Trump's inauguration, the National Socialist Democrats just couldn't accept that all those American believers in liberty had rejected their particular form of totalitarianism. Since the PC model for the superior person means behaving like high school girls, they were furious over their rejection. They cried, they moaned and pointed their burnt fingers at others—the Russians—to blame. Sore losers was an understatement for describing them. These high school female clones, ever adept at self-delusion, claimed Putin wanted Trump elected, so he rigged the election. Right, a country barely out of the Middle Ages where even the educated believe in the supernatural, which is not particularly advanced technologically, and has a GDP of \$1.6 trillion manipulated America with its \$19 trillion economy that is the second most educated country in the world according to U.S. News & World Reports. I don't think so.

### One More Time

After the inauguration, I read that the Department of Justice under the new Attorney General began increasing its review of cases that had already been decided by an immigration judge. Such reviews of an immigration judge's decision could result in a reversal of the decision. So whom does that bring to mind—the Ho. She was now scamming people as a real

estate agent in New York. Sent a letter to Attorney General Sessions telling him about the immigration judge who dismissed the deportation case against the Ho because her incriminating file had disappeared.

Immigration Judge Jesse B. Christensen, appointed by the Obama Administration, dismissed the second removal proceeding against a Russian national with ties to the Chechen Barayev crime organization because the Russian's immigration file had disappeared.

As a former manager of Kroll Associates in Moscow, Russia, I was aware of crucial files disappearing from government offices in both Russia and Mexico through bribery, but never realized that the practice had apparently reached America under the Obama Administration.

Added some background between the Ho and Homeland Security:

On October 1, 2004, the Department of Homeland Security denied her first application for a waiver under the Immigration and Nationality Act, 8 U.S.C. § 1186a(c)(4), based on the contents of her file and placed her in a removal proceeding. Her file contained reports from the Federal Bureau of Investigation, the Drug Enforcement Agency and the Defense Intelligence Agency.

On March 20, 2008, Immigration Judge Paul A. DeFonzo ruled that she be deported. Ms. Shipilina appealed to the Board of Immigration Appeals ["B.I.A."], which denied her appeal on February 2, 2009.

While her appeal was still pending, Ms. Shipilina married an American for a second time and subsequently filed once again for a waiver under 8 U.S.C. § 1186a(c)(4). The Department of Homeland Security for a second time denied her application once again based on the contents of her file and placed her in a removal proceeding for a second time.

On March 30, 2012, Immigration Judge Jesse B. Christensen adjourned her removal hearing to June 1, 2012, in order to obtain confirmation that Ms. Shipilina was again appealing to the B.I.A. the Department of Homeland Security's second decision to have her removed.

On June 1, 2012, Immigration Judge Jesse B. Christensen administratively closed the removal proceeding against Ms. Shipilina because B.I.A. "reports it does not have the file."

In 2015, the above information was provided to the General Counsel for the D.O.J. Executive Office for Immigration Review and the D.O.J. Inspector General, but given the Obama Administration's policies, neither took any action.



Perhaps now with you as Attorney General, the Department of Justice may look into this micro-aggression against the rule of law.

In a subsequent letter, I sent the NYC Board of Election's referrals to the U.S. Attorney for the Eastern District of N.Y. and the Queens District Attorney to prosecute the Ho for registering to vote when she was not a citizen. The DOJ referred my letters to the "Office of the Chief Immigration Judge, who has established a procedure that allows any person to file a complaint about the conduct of an Immigration Judge." I was hoping the Chief was not an Obama appointee, but it turned out worst. She had been appointed by Attorney General Loretta E. Lynch. More worst, the Chief Judge was a female PCer, Mary Beth Keller. She concluded that the Ho's immigration judge did nothing wrong by dismissing the deportation because someone had deep-sixth her file. The holdovers from the lawless, socialistic Obama administration were still in power.

Then in May 2018, Attorney General Jeff Sessions issued a new directive telling immigration judges they could no longer administratively close deportation cases, which is what happened to the Ho. Obama and the socialists (Democrats) loved administrative closures because it suspended deportations and allowed the illegals to roam the country, and, of course, vote Democratic. Over 200,000 illegals, including the Ho, had received *de facto* amnesty under America's third world president—Obama. Session concluded this Obama amnesty was not legally justified. So now Homeland Security was slowly re-visiting those administrative closure cases.

July 2018, my telephone rings—it's USCIS. and they want to meet to talk about the Ho.

The agent said, "We'd like to meet with you and talk about your ex-wife."

"Sure. I can be there in a half an hour."

“Not right now, let’s make an appointment.”

“Just tell me when and where and I’ll be there.”

The agent added that he had reviewed her file. But according to the Immigration Judge, the file had been lost. Most likely the Ho had simply bought-off the judge to say that.

The agent continued, “You’ve really gone through a lot.”

To which I said, “And so have you guys trying to deport her.

On July 24, 2018, I meet with a USCIS officer in its Fraud Detection and National Security division at 26 Federal Plaza. By then, the building was quite familiar to me after my dealings with those two corrupt FBI agents, Pisano and Thomas. Session’s new directive had worked its way down into my past—now maybe some justice.

One of the officer’s first questions was “Do you know who was your ex-wife’s second husband. I’d like to talk to him.”

“No, I tried to find that out after I learned that she had married for a second time in order to avoid deportation for her fraudulent marriage to me. But NYC keeps those marriage records secret from the general public.”

“I think talking to him would be useful, so let me know if you come across any information on who he was or if they are still married.”

For the next two hours, I provided a summary of the Ho and her associates’ illegal activities along with the immigration court’s administrative closure of her case. The officer thought her registering to vote while not a citizen was “big.” At the end of the interview, he requested the names of anyone in the U.S. whom I knew had associated with her, which I subsequently provided and told him to contact me any time with any more questions.

While working on a paper in the law library to simplify tonal music theory (Appendix 45) that had evolved out of my one year course with the hot millennial Juilliard teacher, my dimmed and delayed light bulb went off again. “Contact the private eye you use for your cases to see whether he can come up with who was the Ho’s second husband.”

My PI got back to me. “Unfortunately I was unable to connect the dots to see if she had married [again]. The only evidence I could find is a man by the name Onn Rapeika from Fort Lee, NJ has apparently lived with her for a while. Rapeika is supposedly a drug dealer and was convicted of hording weapons.”

Well the drugs, crime and Rapeika’s name being Russian clearly fit with the Ho’s modus operandi, so I sent the information along to the USCIS officer.

Perhaps something would come of this new investigation, but America has been so corrupted by the socialist PCers and Feminists that I doubted it.

[Update if any]

### The Second Time Around

The Ho wasn’t the only bimbo, or more accurately, bimbat with whom my battles started again. Tory “the Torch” Shepherd from down under published another article in which she used my name in a derogatory fashion. Google alerts notified me of the article.

She just couldn’t leave well enough alone. Her lawyers most likely told her to leave me out of future articles, but her hatred got the best of her.

Tory’s misandrist articles are not only published in Australian newspapers but by PressReader, Inc. PressReader is a digital newspaper and magazine distribution and publishing operator that contracts with thousands of newspaper and magazine publishers across the globe to

publish their articles by way of the Internet and mobile telephone apps. It claims seven million “active,” whatever that means, “users,” whatever that means.

The article was published on April 4, 2018. It was titled *Misplaced fear of gay revenge* in the West Australian and PressReader Internet sites and *Freedom of religion cannot Trump other rights* in the Advertiser website. Tory’s lead sentence stated, “Self-described ‘anti-feminist lawyer’ Roy Den Hollander once likened the position of men in society to black people in 1950s America ‘sitting in the back of the bus.’” Except for that sentence, Tory did not mention me again.

The entire article was about submissions by Australians to an Australian Federal Government panel concerning the Australian Government’s review of religious freedom in Australia. In 2017, the Australian Federal Parliament passed the marriage equality act that allowed two people, regardless of sex, to marry. The political impact, in part, caused the Australian Federal Government to appoint a panel to receive submissions on the conflict between gay rights and religious freedom in Australia.

So what did have to do with me? I never lived in Australia, never visited Australia, did not submit any comments to the Australian panel and have never been involved in a case dealing with gay rights versus religious freedom—anywhere. Played rugby with and against some Australians and hung out one night decades ago with an Australian guy. Boy was he obnoxious. It was summertime and the girls were bare shouldered. He’d walk up behind them and blow on their shoulders—boy they got ticked.

Tory’s article went on with “It’s become common; men thinking they’re oppressed by women, whites thinking they’re oppressed by ethnic minorities. The traditional oppressors believing they have become oppressed.” Tory was really reaching by trying to use me as the

icon of the traditional oppressor—anti-female, anti-black, anti-queer, anti-same sex marriage (half true, just anti-marriage), anti-pigs (well when I was in SDS), anti-abortion (hey, walk down to the corner drug store and buy a contraceptive instead of murdering an incipient human being when there are no medical problems), immoral (stay off of my rights), anti-teacher (not if she's hot like Susan was), and anti-big cakes (hey, where's your cake now as one fat brother said the other fat brother, actually I like cakes, especially the classic ones made in Russia).

My last case against this bimbat and her publisher went down the drain because Justice Jennifer Schechter ruled that her Feminazi Court did not have personal jurisdiction over Tory in Australia.<sup>1</sup> The same would happen if I sued Tory again in any N.Y. court. But PressReader was a different story. When it published the article, it was licensed to do business in New York State by the Secretary of State. If that wasn't good enough, it had contracts with New York newspapers and the N.Y. Public Library. So the New York courts would have jurisdiction under CPLR § 302(a)(1) because PressReader transacts business within New York State and contracts with businesses in New York State to provide its services.

PressReader's attorney fees and if any settlement will likely tick it off against Tory. Indirect, but still a boot in her flabby ass.

Tory's statement might be considered defamatory by implication but such was way too complicated for a New York State judge. So my case charged PressReader—not Tory—just PressReader for violating my right to publicity—not privacy—but publicity. N.Y. does not have a right to privacy action. It does, however, have under N.Y. Civil Rights Law § 51 a private cause of action for protecting the unauthorized use of a person's name:

---

<sup>1</sup> Recently, Schechter, in a hot flash of power madness, ordered President Trump to show for a deposition in one of the cases before her. What a ditz—it'll never happen.

Any person whose name . . . is used within this state . . . for the purposes of trade without the written consent first obtained . . . may also sue and recover damages for any injuries sustained by reason of such use . . . .

The right to publicity generally applies to someone with a modicum of fame so that the courts can find economic value in the use of that person's name. Thanks, in part, to the articles Tory published about me, I qualified as having some fame, or more accurately infamy.

PressReader's insurance company hired a law firm in the City to defend. That wasn't good enough because I wanted PressReader to pay its own legal fees—not its insurance company. So I amended my complaint to include a RICO cause of action. Remember, insurance companies usually cover the costs of a lawsuit providing it does not involve criminal accusations. RICO is nothing but criminal accusations even though it allows an action to be brought by an individual or a business. My amended complaint accused PressReader of engaging in wire fraud to further Tory's scheme of harming my legal practice and business consultancy because, as we all know, she considers me an enemy who should me completely destroyed. Actually, the feeling is mutual.

PressReader's lawyers filed the proverbial motion to dismiss, after which I filed my amended complaint that added the RICO charge. In New York State courts, as in federal courts, a plaintiff has an absolute right to file an amended complaint after a defendant files a motion to dismiss claiming that the complaint does not state a claim on which relief can be granted. PressReader's lawyer and I appeared before Civil Court Judge Denise Dominguez who had no clue that CPLR 3025(a) permitted my filing the amended complaint without her approval or any judge's approval. I tried to educate her in the law but no way was this escapee from the second caravan going to believe a white-male U.S. citizen. These identity group members are such idiot bigots. This issue was basic, basic civil procedure and this judge didn't know it. How could

such an ignorant lawyer get on the bench? Simple, some wetback district leader nominated her and the illegals in Manhattan elected her. To be fair, she did grant me leave to file the amended complaint, but I had to file it again—for the second time.

Naturally, the defense attorney kept quiet during the argument and in an email afterward said, “The Judge informed you that your amended complaint was not properly filed because you had not sought leave to file an amended pleading. We, like the Court, are thus treating your prior document and its service as a nullity.” He knew the amended complaint was properly filed under CPLR 3025(a), but since the Judge made a mistake that favored him, he went along with it—typical Abbott & Costello lawyer. So I re-filled and re-served the amended complaint.

This Abbott & Costello lawyer, Gary Meyerhoff, then removed the case to the federal court, which didn’t matter. But this typically wimpy male of modern times tried to threaten me. Either I drop the case, or he would make a motion for Rule 11 sanctions. My response was fine, and I sent him my Rule 11 sanctions motion against him that would be filed the same day he filed his.

Then the light went off in my head—file another amended complaint, but in the federal court. Since the Judge in the NYC Civil Court and the Abbott & Costello lawyer considered my first amended complaint in City court as not using up my absolute right to file such, logically, I still had the right to do so. Besides, once the Abbott & Costello lawyer transferred the case to federal court, the federal rules took over, and I had not yet used my absolute right in federal court to file an amended complaint, which is allowed under Fed. R. Civ. P. 15(a)(1)(B). My new amended complaint for the federal court turned a case asking for \$21,000, which was below the limit of the \$25,000 maximum allowed in the City court, into one for \$1.7 million. Since the Abbott & Costello lawyer wanted to turn this case into a big deal—that was fine with me.

The federal magistrate judge, however, summarily refused to allow my amended complaint without any argument or sufficient knowledge of the events that had taken place in the City court. So I made a motion that she reconsider her decision in which all the facts were laid out. Also made a motion asking for her permission to amend, assuming she was not about to change her mind on allowing me to amend as a matter of right. If she went against me on both motions, at least I'd have an issue for the Second Circuit Court of Appeals when the case got there, if it ever did.

[Update]

#### Saigon Bride (cont.)

In December 2016, both sides in the draft case submitted a status report to the Judge on what the House-Senate Conference Committee had done with the Senate's call for females to register for the draft.

The Department of Justice had a new attorney—a man, because the female was pregnant—thank goodness for her lack of contraception. Girls generally hate guys. Imagine every day you open a store, clean it, decorate it and perfume it, but no one comes in to buy—how would feel? Girls are the shop keepers selling their wares. They engage in every type of advertising—bait and switch, black Fridays, and discounts when drunk—but they're the ones who wait, and they're the ones who can't pick and choose their customers. They have to settle for whomever enters the shop, and they hate men for it. So whenever a girl finds herself in a position to wreck revenge on a man—she will, assuming he's not a queer. And it doesn't matter whether the guy's decent or a jerk—she'll lie, manipulate and cheat for her revenge. So for guys, we might as well act as jerks.



Speaking of jerks, the House-Senate Conference Committee dropped the provision for females to register. It did include, however, the creation of a National Commission on Military, National, and Public Service to determine whether the current Selective Service System would be reformed, eliminated or require females to register.

The draft was last used in 1973, and in the 17 U.S. armed conflicts since then, including America's longest war in Afghanistan, the volunteer military had handled the fighting. So why bother requiring any registration for a draft that had not been used in over 40 years? It was a fair question. Of course, given America's military-industrial complex's hunger for profits, at some point a draft would be needed to provide the masters of war with enough cannon fodder to maximize profits. The Pentagon's position was that the "registration database itself mitigates risk to the Nation; its very existence would reduce the time required for full defense mobilization. . . . [in] a conflict of global proportions or mammoth national emergency."

Both the Senate and the House passed the Conference Committee's version of the 2017 National Defense Authorization Act and Obama signed it into law. That created a problem for my case because the Commission had nearly three years to make its recommendations to Congress, then Congress would dicker over what to do, and, if it actually passed a law changing the Selective Service System, Trump would have to sign or veto it. This could go into Trump's second term or whomever might be president then. Congress had punted so that they could duck the issue.

Neither my client nor I had any intention of cooling our heels for three or more years. We asked the New Jersey court to make a decision without waiting for the Commission, Congress and the President. The argument was that according to the U.S. Supreme Court just because judges "have no way of knowing how [Congress] will in fact respond," that is no reason

“to hold that underinclusive statutes [which included the registration law] can never be challenged because any plaintiff’s success can theoretically be thwarted” or furthered by a legislature’s subsequent action or inaction. *Orr v. Orr*, 440 U.S. 268, 272 (1979). A couple of other cases said the same thing: *Texas Monthly, Inc. v. Bullock*, 489 U.S. 1, 8 (1989) (“Texas cannot strip appellant of standing by changing the law” after the injury occurred) and *Arkansas Writers’ Project, Inc. v. Ragland*, 481 U.S. 221, 227 (1987) (to “effectively insulate underinclusive statutes from constitutional challenge [is] a proposition we [have] soundly rejected . . .”).

The Government argued that the Executive Branch and Congress had extensive authority over the military, and since they were engaged in possibly changing the law, the Court should wait. We argued that “possibly” was not good enough because our client’s right to equal protection was being violated everyday that the law was on the books. The Court apparently agreed with us and decided to proceed with the case. The Judge’s magistrate then instructed both sides to brief whether our client had standing. (Every federal district court judge has an assistant judge called a magistrate who helps out with deciding motions, but the Judge makes all the final decisions).

Standing is a Constitutional requirement in every case and has three parts. The plaintiff must have suffered some injury or is about to suffer an injury, the injury was caused by the defendant’s illegal action, and the court has the power to remedy the injury. The Government argued that our client’s injury was nebulous, speculative and she needed more than just being discriminated against. We argued that discrimination itself is the injury. “[A] victim of discrimination suffers a dehumanizing injury as real as, and often of far more severe and lasting harm than, a blow to the jaw.” *Hassan v. City of New York*, 804 F.3d 277, 290 (quoting *Mardell*

*v. Harleysville Life Ins. Co.*, 65 F.3d 1072, 1074 (3d Cir.1995) (*per curiam*)). If the Court agreed with our injury argument then it could also find that being prevented from registering caused the discrimination against young ladies, and that the Court could do something about it—declare the law unconstitutional.

The Court ruled in our client’s favor—she had standing to challenge the draft registration law. Up until that decision, I had brought six cases fighting for the rights of men against PC ideology, and not once did I ever win a substantive motion like this one. But here was a victory on a key motion in the fight for equal rights—the only difference was female rights instead of male rights. I wonder why?

The Court ruled in pertinent part that:

Plaintiff has alleged sufficient facts to establish a concrete injury for purposes of Article III standing. Plaintiff alleges that she tried to register for the military draft but was refused. (*See* SAC ¶ 5). As Plaintiff explains in her opposition brief, the “MSSA’s (Military Selective Service Act) male-only registration and [the Selective Service’s] enforcement of it barred Plaintiff from registering based solely on her sex while at the same time allowing males who were similarly situated as her to register.” (Pl. Opp. Br. at 20). The Supreme Court has observed that “[w]hen the suit is one challenging the legality of government action or inaction” and “the plaintiff is himself an object of the action (or forgone action) at issue . . . there is ordinarily little question that the action or inaction has caused him injury . . .” *Lujan*, 504 U.S. at 561-62.

Plaintiff is challenging the legality of the MSSA’s male-only requirement. As Plaintiff persuasively argues (*see* Pl. Opp. Br. at 24-27), this kind of sex-based discrimination constitutes “a harm that has traditionally been regarded as providing a basis for a lawsuit in English or American Courts,” *Spokeo*, 136 S. Ct. at 1549. Indeed, the Third Circuit has stated that “virtually every circuit court has reaffirmed—as has the Supreme Court—that a discriminatory classification is itself a penalty and thus qualifies as an actual injury for standing purposes, where a citizen’s right to equal treatment is at stake.” *Hassan v. City of New York*, 804 F.3d 277, 289-90 (3d Cir. 2015) (cleaned up).

Defendants contend that Plaintiff will not be deprived of any opportunities in life because she can enlist in the military. (*See* Def. Mov. Br. at 12). But this misstates Plaintiff’s injury. As Plaintiff explains, her injury

is *not* that she is kept out of combat positions, *not* that she may be harmed by future inductions, *not* that she is prevented from enlisting, and *not* that possible

career opportunities in the military will be hindered *but rather* that she is prevented—solely because of her sex—from *registering for the draft*.

(Pl. Opp. Br. at 21) (emphasis in original). . . .

Defendants argue that “Plaintiff’s complaint is akin to a policy grievance, unsuitable for resolution in federal court.” (Def. Mov. Br. at 18). According to Defendants, “[i]n the absence of some particularized cognizable harm to Plaintiff herself, the alleged injury is not a matter of individual concern, but rather a generalized and public one.” (*Id.*).

In opposition, Plaintiff argues that she suffered “a particularized injury” because “she, as an individual, was personally prevented from registering with the SSS.” (Pl. Opp. Br. at 12; *see also* SAC ¶¶ 5, 8-10). The Court agrees. Indeed, the Court finds that Plaintiff easily satisfies the particularization requirement of Article III standing based on the allegations in her [Second Amended Complaint] and the attached exhibits. . . .

Here, Plaintiff wants to register for the draft, tried to register for the draft, but can’t register for the draft because she is a woman. (*See* SAC ¶¶ 5, 8-10; D.E. No. 54-1 (Ex. A) & 54-2 (Ex. B)). Thus, Plaintiff has alleged a concrete injury. *See Horizon*, 846 F.3d at 633 (noting that the contours of the injury-in-fact requirement are “very generous”).

Our next move was to ask the Court for permission to file a motion for Summary Judgment. A court can skip a trial and make a decision when the facts in a case are clear and not disputed. In such a situation, all a court does is make a legal decision by applying the law to those facts. In the draft case the facts were obvious. Our client fell within the age range of 18 to 25 years of age, and when she tried to register for the draft, the Selective Service said no because she was a woman.

The DOJ opposed our request to get on with deciding this case so that it could move up the ladder to the Third Circuit U.S. Court of Appeals. At that time, the case had been in the district court for nearly three years. DOJ asked permission to make another motion to dismiss—its fourth motion to dismiss. Unfortunately, Judge Esther Salas granted DOJ a do-over of its prior motions to dismiss the case for lack of ripeness under Rule 12(b)(1) and failure to state a claim under Rule 12(b)(6). Judge Salas had never made a decision on those motions. She had “terminated” them allegedly because of the political shenanigans in Congress. Was she trying to

keep this case in her court until a weatherman showed her which way the legal winds were blowing despite that

The irreplaceable value of the power articulated by Mr. Chief Justice Marshall [*Marbury v. Madison*, 5 U.S. 137 (1803)] lies in the protection it has afforded the constitutional rights and liberties of individual citizens and minority groups against oppressive or discriminatory government action.

*U.S. v. Richardson*, 418 U.S. 166, 192 (Powell, J., concurring) (1974).

Compare three years of motions to dismiss in Salas's Court to the case in the U.S. Southern District Court of Texas on exactly the same issue of the draft registration statute violating the Equal Protection Clause of the Constitution. *Nat'l Coal. for Men v. Selective Serv. Sys.*, 2018 WL 1694906 (S.D. Tex 2018). That case had been transferred to Texas by the California court. The only difference in the Texas case was that two guys were the plaintiffs and a white 70 year-old man was the judge. After about a year and a half, the Texas case moved into the second inning—summary judgment. We, however, were still in the first inning fighting over DOJ's fourth motion to dismiss. Just unbelievable, by now we should have been knocking on the U.S. Supreme Court's door, but lady unluck stuck us with an Obama appointee.

Female judges didn't bother me as long as they were middle age or older black ladies. They seemed to have an understanding of how life worked and were not about to be conned by any foot dragging lawyer. Latinas, however, were usually a problem—driven by an inferiority complex. After Salas agreed to allow the DOJ its fourth motion to dismiss, I checked her bio. It was the usual effort to blame a man and turn someone into super girl—daddy abandoned us, we were indigent, which means they lived off of the taxpayer, but we overcame all odds. Right, affirmative action got her into and through college and law school. Salas worked as an associate in an ambulance chasing firm doing basic criminal work. Left that firm to work as a public defender in the New Jersey District Court representing lumpen proletariat ne'er-do-wells. Joined

politically correct organizations trying to convince America that whites, especially white males, were barbarians, and all those of a darker skin complexion were victims. She did, however, have one accomplishment—high school cheerleader.

DOJ argued that federal courts could not make decisions on civil rights when the military was involved; the case was contingent on what the National Commission on Military, National, and Public Service may or may not decide in the future; the Rostker case, decided under completely different facts, dictated that male-only registration was still constitutional; and the Selective Service did not violate Plaintiff's equal protection rights by preventing her from registering. Just a lot of malarkey intended to delay a decision further.

We argued that DOJ was continuing its strategy of delay: "*Justice too long delayed is justice denied.*"—Martin Luther King, Jr. King had added the words "too long" to William Gladstone's phrase "Justice delayed is justice denied." Our brief in opposition to the DOJ argued against further delay:

Equal treatment for young American women has not only been delayed by the Federal Government, but it has been delayed for far too long. Women continue moving into combat positions in the military, but they are still sitting on the sidelines when it comes to registration with the Selective Service System ("SSS").

The Government defendants, SSS and its Director (together, "Defendants") persist with their argument of delay. Defendants specifically requested a stay in their response to Plaintiff's motion to proceed. (Def. Resp. at 13-15, D.E. No. 61). It was not granted. (See Order at 5, D.E. No. 67). Defendants again request a stay (now called "abeyance") in their current motion to dismiss. (Def. Mov. Br. at 2, 3, 12, 18, 27, D.E. No. 80-1). Whether making a specific request or not, Defendants' argument focuses on delay: (1) wait until a commission with no law making authority makes some unknown suggestions; (2) wait until . . . Congress decides to adopt, change or ignore the unknown suggestions; (3) wait until President Trump decides to sign or veto an unknown bill that may never exist; and (4) if there actually is a bill but it is veto, wait for a vote to override the veto of a bill that not even a fortune teller can tell what it may say.

The obvious question is why delay while Plaintiff's rights are being violated? Congress can always enact a statute that abrogates a court's decision—providing the statute is constitutional. Perhaps Defendants are aiming for this case to become moot, which will happen when the Plaintiff turns 26 years old. . . . If Defendants have their way, she may be a practicing

veterinarian by the time all the appeals in this case end. Of course, by then, the appeals may have ended prematurely because of mootness when the Plaintiff turns 26—a victory for Defendants and discrimination, but a defeat for justice and equal treatment.

DOJ's reply loaded up on lies, prevarications and dissemblings about the law and the facts. DOJ and the new alleged lawyer it added to the case went for the con of delay. Why not, more delay would look good to their bosses, and DOJ would only have to worry about the case in Texas when it was appealed to the Fifth Circuit and then to the U.S. Supreme Court where DOJ would most assuredly lose.

Four months after the submission of our papers on DOJ's fourth motion to dismiss, Salas schedules oral argument to take place in two more months. Three and a half years after this case started, she throws in another delaying tactic—she'll likely take another six months after oral argument to make a decision. Then the case will be four years old and the plaintiff, who had just graduated from high school when the case started, will have graduated college. Salas was apparently scared of making a decision one way or the other. If she ruled draft registration unconstitutional, the Feminists who believed females deserved preferential treatment would criticize her. If she ruled that it did not violate the Constitution, then those Feminists who advocate for equal treatment would criticize her. Either way it was lose-lose for Salas unless someone took the risk of leading the way.

Throughout the history of the human race, who has been willing to take the lead—men. True, there were always a few brave females willing to go in front, but not many. On February 22, 2019, the Texas Court granted the two male plaintiffs summary judgment. Summary judgment meant the Court did not need to bother with a trial because the facts were clear—these two guys had to register with the SSS or face a plethora of unpleasant consequences. The DOJ now had to appeal that decision to the Fifth Circuit U.S. Court of Appeals. DOJ did luck out to

an extent in the Texas decision. The attorney for the two male plaintiffs screwed up, so the Court didn't issue an injunction. The Judge wrote, "Although Plaintiffs' complaint requests injunctive relief, Plaintiffs have not briefed the issue and their summary judgment motion only requests declaratory relief. Therefore, Plaintiffs' request for an injunction is DENIED." That meant the decision would have no effect on the Government until another court instituted an injunction, so the SSS kept on doing business as usual.

The Texas decision did, however, have an effect on the New Jersey District Court. Eleven days after publication of the Texas decision, Judge Salas issued her decision denying the DOJ motion to dismiss our Equal Protection claim. Thank heavens for older white-male judges willing to act as blocking backs. Judge Salas did grant the DOJ motion to dismiss our Substantive Due Process claim, but that was a Hail Mary anyway and we simply dropped it.

After reading her opinion, Rick's comment in Casablanca to Ugarte came to mind, "Yes, you're right Ugarte. I am a little more impressed with you."

Judge Salas held that our Equal Protection claim was ripe meaning the facts were clear and did not need any further additions, such as what the National Commission on Military, National, and Public Service might end up advising.

[T]he Commission serves simply in an advisory capacity. Its sole duty and authority is to review the SSS and draft a report for Congress. *See* FY17 NDAA §§ 551(a), 555(e)(1). While the Commission may be taking concrete steps towards providing a recommendation by March 2020, there is no guarantee that the Commission will complete its obligations by then, or that Congress will even act on the Commission's report. [Opinion at 9].

Meanwhile, Plaintiff and putative class members continue to have their constitutional rights allegedly violated. . . . [T]he constitution and the rights it protects cannot be held hostage to a possibility that a commission is investigating a particular policy, which may or may not give rise to legislation, which may or may not be enacted into law, which may or may not ultimately make the injury Plaintiff and others similarly situated are currently suffering, moot. *See Am. Petroleum Inst.*, 683 F.3d at 388 (noting that government agency cannot "stave



off judicial review of a challenged rule simply by initiating a new proposed rulemaking that would amend the rule in a significant way”); *Am. Petroleum Inst. v. U.S. E.P.A.*, 906 F.2d 729, 739–40 (D.C. Cir. 1990) (“If the possibility of unforeseen amendments were sufficient to render an otherwise fit challenge unripe, review could be deferred indefinitely.”). [Opinion at 10].

Plaintiff is not challenging the Commission, the Commission’s ongoing review, or what Congress may or may not do with the Commission’s recommendations. (*See* Pl.’s Opp. Br. at 26). Rather, Plaintiff is challenging the current enforcement of the MSSA. (*Id.*). That present enforcement gives rise to an injury today, and Defendants fail to show how review of that injury would “prove too abstract or unnecessary.” *See Ohio Forestry Ass’n v. Sierra Club*, 523 U.S. 726, 735 (1998). The question is fit for adjudication. [Opinion at 12]

Judge Salas also held that it was the Plaintiff who was currently suffering a substantial legal hardship and any decision by the Court to protect her rights would not interfere with the Government.

[D]iscrimination itself, by perpetuating “archaic and stereotypic notions” or by stigmatizing members of the disfavored group as “innately inferior” and therefore as less worthy participants in the political community, can cause serious noneconomic injuries to those persons who are personally denied equal treatment solely because of their membership in a disfavored group.

*Hassan v. City of New York*, 804 F.3d 277, 290 (3d Cir. 2015) (quoting *Heckler v. Mathews*, 465 U.S. 728, 739–40 (1984)). [Opinion at 13-14].

Regardless of this Court’s ultimate decision, the Commission and Congress are free to continue with the current policymaking process, and Congress is free to pass legislation based on the Commission’s recommendation—or not. The courts cannot stop Congress from legislating any more than Congress can stop the courts from interpreting the Constitution and any legislative acts repugnant to it.

*See United States v. Nixon*, 418 U.S. 683, 704–05 (1974); *Marbury*, 5 U.S. at 177. [Opinion at 14].

[C]ourts cannot avoid their responsibility merely ‘because the issues have political implications.’” *Zivotofsky ex rel. Zivotofsky v. Clinton*, 566 U.S. 189, 196 (2012) (quoting *INS v. Chadha*, 462 U.S. 919, 943 (1983)). And that duty requires this Court to determine whether the Constitution is being obeyed today, not to speculate whether it might be obeyed in the future. Therefore, the Court does not perceive any potential separation of powers issues with proceeding on the merits,

and to the extent any may exist, it does not outweigh the hardship befalling Plaintiff. [Opinion 14-15].

Finally, as to the DOJ's lame argument that because the Supreme Court in 1981 found male-only registration constitutional, every court other than the Supreme Court must also find that male-only registration is still constitutional regardless of all the changes that have occurred.

[W]here a law has been previously sustained the “decision sustaining the law cannot be regarded as precluding a subsequent suit for the purpose of testing [its] validity . . . in the lights of the later actual experience.” *Abie State Bank v. Weaver*, 282 U.S. 765, 772 (1931). Indeed, “[a] statute valid as to one set of facts may be invalid as to another. A statute valid when enacted may become invalid by change in the conditions to which it is applied.” *Nashville, C. & St. L. RY. v. Walters*, 294 U.S. 405, 415 (1935) (footnote omitted); *United States v. Carolene Products Co.*, 304 U.S. 144, 153 (1938) (“[T]he constitutionality of a statute predicated upon the existence of a particular state of facts may be challenged by showing to the court that those facts have ceased to exist.”); *see also Third Nat. Bank of Louisville v. Stone*, 174 U.S. 432, 434 (1899) (“A question cannot be held to have been adjudged before an issue on the subject could possibly have arisen.”). Therefore, in light of the alleged substantial factual changes since *Rostker* was decided, this Court cannot at this stage of the litigation find that *Rostker* controls the outcome of Plaintiff's claim. [Opinion at 30-31].

Next steps were motions for Class Certification so that the case would have an impact beyond just my client, and after that Summary Judgment on the Equal Protection claim so that we could get out of this quagmire of a court as quickly as possible. Whether we won or lost the Summary Judgment meant next stop the Third Circuit U.S. Court of Appeals. The problem was when.

Salas clearly wanted to further her career by moving up the judicial ladder to the Court of Appeals or maybe even the Supreme Court. After all, there was now a Latina seat in the form of Sotomayor on the Court. But such judicial advancements were hindered from a judge being identified as an advocate for either side in the American political divide—remember Judge Robert Bork. Regardless of how Salas ruled, one side was going to oppose her moving to a

higher court. The solution was simply to delay until the Texas case led the way. Then just follow the law that it set.

[Update ]

### Sympathy for the Devils

The Stones left out one category of people synonymous with the devil—doctors, not all, just most. Twelve alleged followers of the Hippocratic Oath sent me on a cruise of horror crossing the river Styx. Hopefully, things will improve once I reach the other side.

For a handful of years, I was having difficulty breathing at night while trying to sleep. My primary care physician (“PCP”), Mark Gorny at Mt. Sinai West, referred me to an Ear, Nose and Throat (“ENT”) specialist. The specialist diagnosed a deviated septum, probably from numerous hits to the nose while playing rugby decades earlier. The doctor was pushy to do an operation. He said, “You should get it done before you get any older, or I get older and my hands start shaking,” as he demonstrated shaking his hand with a grin. I declined.

Gorny then prescribed a steroid nasal spray called fluticasone propionate and over-the-counter decongestants. Both provided enough relief for a decent night’s sleep, which is crucial for any attorney. Gorny also referred me to another Mt. Sinai ENT doctor. This one had a CT sinus scan done, but he couldn’t find anything in the scan that might be causing my difficulty breathing while trying to sleep, so he referred me for allergy tests. The allergy tests were negative. That’s when I started doing my own medical research. This wasn’t exactly rocket science, but three Mt. Sinai doctors couldn’t figure out the problem. It took me about three hours to accurately diagnose the condition—turbinate hypertrophy, or so I thought.

Turbinates are parts of the nasal passages. They warm, moisturize and filter the air before it reaches the lungs. But when they become enlarged (hypertrophy) as a result of too

much blood flowing into them, they block the nasal passages causing difficulty breathing. In my situation, standing was not a problem because gravity apparently prevented too much blood flowing into the turbinates. Lying down was a different story because blood then accumulated in the turbinates. The cause was simple—old age. As my former boxing trainer from Gleason's and Wall Street Boxing said, "Once you hit 70, nothing works anymore."

Armed with my diagnosis, Gorny referred me to another ENT doctor who confirmed the problem and operated to reduce the size of the turbinates in October 2016. After the operation, the difficulty breathing while sleeping or just lying down was gone, so I thought it a success, for a while. Clinical studies showed that my respite might last a couple of years or only months—it was impossible to predict. Over time, downsized turbinates tend to start enlarging again and might even grow back. If the condition returned, nasal sprays and decongestants could be effective in relieving breathing difficulties, but ultimately another operation would be needed.

Around April 2017, some difficulty in breathing returned at night while trying to sleep. So in June, I visited Gorny. It often takes weeks to see Gorny unless it's an emergency. Gorny told me to resume using the fluticasone spray. Saw Gorny three more times over 2017 and into 2018, in part, concerning the difficulty breathing that fluctuated in intensity and frequency. He continued to advise using fluticasone and decongestants, which sometimes helped and sometimes didn't.

By August 2018, the difficulty breathing had reached a point that for three hours or more a night, I could barely breathe at all through my nose and was unable to sleep during that time. I called for an appointment with Gorny, but the earliest available was October 10, 2018. I told the appointment person, "That's nearly two months off! Doctor Gorny is usually able to fit me in

when it's important and this is important." Sorry he said, "That's the earliest we have."

Sounded as though Gorny's office was turning into the VA.

At the October appointment with Gorny, he told me to continue using the fluticasone spray every day. As far as examining the anatomy of my breathing, he would leave that to my ENT whom I was visiting later that day. This was the ENT who had performed the turbinate surgery.

At the ENT's office, while examining my right nasal cavity, he said in surprise, "What's that brown mass?" Oh great, I thought. On further examination, he concluded, "It's a polyp growing in your nasal cavity that's blocking your breathing. It wasn't there when I did the turbinate operation." My thought was "polyp" is a nice word for tumor. I knew then I was dead, sooner than planned. He sent me for a CT sinus scan and did a biopsy. Cancer, but not just any form of cancer, the most virulent and fast spreading one—melanoma. In six weeks, it can doom a patient.

Melanoma usually attacks the skin because of ultra violet rays from the sun. My melanoma, however, never saw the sun. It was known as mucosal melanoma because it grew in the mucous membranes inside the body. It was rare, usually attacked older persons like me, an additional benefit of the "Golden Years," and its cause was unknown.

Mother Nature, as females usually do, tricked me. After the turbinate surgery restored my breathing, she apparently started a melanoma tumor growing in my nasal cavity that mimicked the same symptoms as turbinate hypertrophy. Naturally, like any male-fool, I assumed that the old problem was back and dealt with it the way Gorny suggested.

My ENT referred me to a couple of oncology surgeons who also took my medical insurance—AARP Medicare Complete Mosaic by UnitedHealthcare (more on that later). I also

contacted Gorny's office requesting a referral to a specialist in mucosal melanoma, but never heard back from him. All of this was a nice stressful addition since it occurred in the middle of preparing for oral argument in a federal case before a lazy and incompetent Latina judge appointed by Obama. But what really annoyed me was the time consumed to deal with this doom. I had things to do to balance the accounts, but time was now rapidly running out.

I saw the two oncology surgeon's recommended by my ENT, but like an idiot, I didn't go with the one my instinct told me to because he wasn't a Mt. Sinai doctor. That alone should have made me choose him. I stupidly thought it would be more convenient to stick with Mt. Sinai doctors since all my doctors were with Mt. Sinai. In addition, because a couple of them were really good, I thought the odds were that the oncologists would also be good. Boy was that a mistake.

On November 6, 2018, the Mt. Sinai oncology surgeon, Alfred Iloreta, advised a treatment plan where he would do a full operation to try and take out all the cancer providing it had not spread to other parts of my body. If it had spread, then a more limited operation to temporarily restore breathing to allow me to sleep so as to maintain my "quality of life" for a period of time. In every meeting with every doctor or nurse, I told them, "I'm not looking for survivability but functionality so that I can get done what I have to do. Longevity has its place, but not for me at this point in life. A year maybe two will do just fine, providing I can still function as a lawyer, do wind-sprints and attend my boxing class." Boxing had become a gift from the gods I didn't want to give up.

Iloreta's treatment plan also included radiation therapy after the operation. His plan made sense, so we agreed to an MRI of the sinus area, which would specify the location of the tumor for an operation, and a full-body PET scan, which would look for cancer in other parts of

my body. Iloreta's office scheduled the tests with the earliest possible operation for November 15<sup>th</sup> or at the latest December 6<sup>th</sup>. Iloreta stressed the importance of having an operation sooner rather than later because melanoma was an aggressive form of cancer that usually spread quickly. Because of my age, Iloreta needed a pre-screening physical exam by a doctor to determine the odds of my body reacting negatively to the surgery. Gorny did the pre-screening on November 7<sup>th</sup> and concluded my body healthy enough for the operation. The MRI and PET scans were completed on November 8<sup>th</sup>.

Iloreta also referred me to a medical oncologist, Dr. Philip Friedlander, and a radiation oncologist, Dr. Sonam Sharma. When a patient has a cancerous tumor, hospitals often require these three kinds of specialists to agree on treatment along with a tumor board.

Dr. Friedlander was apparently a world renowned big-shot to whom other doctors at Mt. Sinai deferred. Friedlander's Mt. Sinai biography states his

clinical interests include the development of targeted therapies and immunotherapies for patients with melanoma. As a member of the Division of Hematology/Medical Oncology and as the Director of the Melanoma Medical Oncology Program at Mt. Sinai, he handles patients with cutaneous malignancies and works to develop collaborative translational and basic science projects and treatments for patients with cutaneous malignancies.

Entering Friedlander's office on November 12<sup>th</sup>, there was no indication it was a bait and switch operation.

"Bait 'n' switch" is when a merchant represents he has one item or service for sale, but when you show up, that item or service magically disappears and is replaced by one you don't want or costs too much. Friedlander made his money and furthered his medical career by treating patients with melanoma using immunotherapy. It's the modern-day horror of chemotherapy all over again. Chemotherapy targets and tries to kill oncogenes, which are mutated normal genes that cause cells to multiply rapidly and haphazardly—cancer.

Immunotherapy, however, targets a person's immune system by putting it in high gear so it will attack and destroy the cancer cells. The problem is that the immune system on "speed" may also go after the lungs, heart, liver, eyes and so on with a litany of horrors. Immunotherapy had a success rate of 30% to 50% for melanoma—skin melanoma, not mucosal melanoma. The statistics for its side effects, regardless of what it was used for, were nowhere to be found, at least by me. The drug companies clearly kept such statistics on side-effects, but probably locked them away in their vaults. Not unlike the cigarette companies of old.

Another problem was that as with chemotherapy, immunotherapy is just a hit and miss approach. The drug companies find or invent expensive drugs but can't tell whether they will work unless the doctors sucker patients into being guinea pigs. If the drug doesn't work—meaning the patient dies or suffers to the end—then they move on to another drug and another patient. As of this writing, the drug companies had around 600 different immunotherapy poisons to test.

The chemicals of choice for Friedlander's snake-oil remedy were Opdivo and Yervoy manufactured by Bristol-Myers Squibb for metastatic melanoma. A month's treatment would gross Bristol-Myers \$45,000 to \$75,000. Friedlander made laudatory statements to the press about these alleged wonder-drugs, conducted clinical trials and published articles while his patients went through misery. In turn, Friedlander benefited financially—he owned stock in Bristol-Myers and other major drug companies pushing immunotherapy. He undoubtedly also received hefty speaker fees in the tradition of Bill Clinton to tout their effectiveness and sucker patients into taking these poisons. The drug companies most likely also paid for business trips complete with hotel, bar and perhaps carnal knowledge.



At first, Friedlander outwardly agreed with my surgeon's plan to do a full operation providing the cancer had not spread, and, if it had, a limited operation to restore breathing followed by radiation. Friedlander also added immunotherapy after the radiation if the cancer had spread. Friedlander reviewed the PET scan and said it showed "lesions" in my sternum and lower back that may indicate cancer. A "lesion" can be almost any abnormal change involving any tissue or organ due to disease or injury.

I responded, "Those lesions are most likely old or even recent sports injuries. I've cracked ribs a few times playing rugby, took more than a few hits to the sternum from martial arts and boxing. As for the lower back, one rugby game pushed the vertebrae you're talking about out of alignment. Currently, I'm being treated for it at Mt. Sinai's Spinal Center, which gives me steroid injections to mitigate the pain. Before I went there, I had to use crutches when I got up in the morning to get to the bathroom. Once the blood started flowing, I could make it to the law library or court."

Friedlander replied, "It is unlikely that the melanoma has spread that far from the nasal cavity, but let's be sure with two focused MRIs, one on the sternum and one on the lower back." He scheduled the two additional MRIs for November 15<sup>th</sup>, which meant the earliest possible operation by Iloreta went out the window. That didn't seem to be a problem at the time, since the later date of December 6<sup>th</sup> was still set for the operation, and the pre-screening done by Gorny was still good because December 6<sup>th</sup> was within 30 days of the pre-screening. Pre-screening for an operation has a shelf-life of only 30 days. Additionally, the oral argument in the federal court was set for December 4<sup>th</sup>, so a December 6<sup>th</sup> operation fit Iloreta's and my schedules.

The following day at my appointment with Sharma, the radiation oncologist, she repeated Illoreta's advice that an operation soon was crucial and that December 6<sup>th</sup> should be soon enough. She said that radiation treatment after the operation would last about three weeks. She clearly believed that either a full-blown or limited surgery would occur by December 6<sup>th</sup>. She listed the side effects of radiation, and, as with other doctors, I emphasized that my interest was not to maximize my existence but maintain my functionality for one, maybe two years, since I had things to do.

The second appointment with Friedlander was on November 19<sup>th</sup>. Friedlander said both the sternum and lower back MRIs also showed lesions as did the PET scan but a conclusion could not be made that they were cancerous. Once again, I told him they were probably old or even recent sports injuries and about the treatment provided by the Mt. Sinai Spinal Center to my lower back. To which Friedlander sharply responded, "I want you to stay away from steroids." Oh yeah, as my lawyer state of mind took hold. Was this doctor telling me to go back to using crutches when I awoke in the morning to get to the bathroom?

Friedlander then advised doing a biopsy of the sternum and lower back to confirm whether the lesions were cancerous. If they were, he said "full-body" immunotherapy would be needed without any surgery or radiation. That wasn't part of the original treatment plan.

Friedlander continued, "Even if the biopsies are negative for cancer, full-body treatment is still necessary. The biopsies that are done use a needle and take only a small section of each area, so they might miss the cancer." For emphasis, he made a downward motion with his right hand holding an imaginary needle. So, heads he wins and tails he wins. That made no sense.

When doing biopsies, a doctor takes samples from different areas to decrease the chance of missing any cancer. Also, earlier Friedlander said the lesions on the sternum were the size of

a finger nail. When I was a kid, I could hit that at 20 paces with my .22 rifle. Further, why do biopsies at all if the results didn't matter. Something stunk here, but I did agreed to a brain MRI for the following day. As for the biopsies and immunotherapy, I tentatively agreed to them until I had time to analyze Friedlander's actions and figure out his game.

At home I researched the side effects of these two drugs, Opdivo and Yervoy, used in combination. My research made clear that after spending over 50 years keeping my body in shape, I was not about to allow some doctor to pump poisons into it. My primary objective was not survival but to stay functional long enough to wrap-up my affairs. As a former weight-lifting champion in Florida once said, "Cancer knocks you down, but chemo [now immuno] finishes you off." I wasn't going that route. It was my car and I was the one holding the keys.

At about 5:45 pm November 20<sup>th</sup>, a couple of hours after the brain MRI, Friedlander calls to say that it showed a mild stroke in the occipital lobe (extreme back of the head). He had compared this MRI with the November 8<sup>th</sup> MRI of the face and neck ordered by Iloreta and saw the difference. The November 8<sup>th</sup> MRI did not show a problem in the occipital lobe but the new MRI did. He added that the new MRI did not show any melanoma, but the stroke was dangerous. Friedlander claimed he had shown the MRI to a female neurologist who feared that this stroke might be the beginnings of a major problem—a "cascade" of strokes. According to Friedlander, she had advised that I immediately go to Mt. Sinai's emergency room and see its Stroke Intervention Team. Friedlander went over a list of symptoms, asking me whether I had experienced any—to which I replied no for all of them. The urgency in his voice started me thinking that Friedlander has been running a con all along. He wraps his voice in the emotion of urgency to push you into doing what he wants in order to serve his interests.

“If I had a stroke it’s because of those unnecessarily, inconclusive tests you put me through,” I angrily replied. Apparently the intentional infliction of emotional distress and dissembling were drivers of his con to manipulate patients into submitting to immunotherapy.

At the ER, the neurologists’ team extensively questioned me and did physical ability, strength and sensitivity touching tests. One of the neurologist’s first name was Helen, Asian, young and pretty—she could touch me anywhere she wanted. ER did blood work, took an EKG and did a head CT scan. The neurologists wanted me to undergo an echocardiogram, but to do that, I would have to spend the night in the ER. Four hours in that zoo was enough. I chose to walk out. Before reaching the door, however, one female neurologist did her best to scare the bejesus out of me by listing all the horrors that might occur at home. It was then that I realized some doctors rely on two tactics to manipulate their patients into serving the doctors’ interests rather than the patients’—false hopes and fear.

After escaping the ER Cabinet of Dr. Caligari, I was sure Friedlander was running a scam. He had initially agreed with the plan of doing a full operation to remove the tumor or a limited one to restore breathing followed by radiation treatment—the bait. All the while, he intended to drag out the search for more cancer, which meant delay that increased the emotional stress so as to pressure me into becoming one of his experiments with immunotherapy. That was the switch. As a friend said, “He’s trying to use you as a guinea pig.”

Friedlander was not pursuing my interests but his interests. My cancer was a rare form, so there weren’t that many human guinea pigs around on which to experiment. The immunotherapy would make him money, provide another test case for an academic journal article, use me to develop science projects and bogus treatments that furthered his career, and, most importantly, curry favor with Bristol-Myers to reward him for suckering another patient

into taking its costly drugs. Since my functionality was on the line—I ran. Canceled the biopsies, the immuno and went looking elsewhere for treatment.

My search took me to an old buddy, an oncology doctor. We used to chase girls at NYC nightclubs. He said the traditional treatment for this type of cancer was to do surgery first than radiation and maybe immunotherapy. Even if the cancer had spread, an operation on the tumor often lessens the ongoing spread of the disease. He suggested Memorial Sloan Kettering, New York University's Perimutter Cancer Center and Manhattan Eye, Ear and Throat Hospital.

Gorny also suggested Sloan or NYU and questioned whether the November 8<sup>th</sup> face MRI actually showed the same part of the brain as the November 20<sup>th</sup> MRI. A neurologist subsequently confirmed that the November 8<sup>th</sup> scan could not be compared to the November 20<sup>th</sup> one. The reason was that the scans were like cameras that used different f-stops depending of what area they were trying to record. The minuscule stroke was in the back of the brain while the November 8<sup>th</sup> MRI focused on the face and neck. So Friedlander lied about the stroke occurring after the November 8<sup>th</sup> MRI. He knew that a stroke subsequent to my pre-screening on November 7<sup>th</sup> would prevent an operation on December 6<sup>th</sup>, and used that lie and his political clout to convince Iloreta and Sharma to defer treatment to him. At the very least, it would cause more delay—read emotional distress—because pre-screening would have to be done again. Had the operation occurred on December 6<sup>th</sup>, Friedlander would have lost a pristine, untouched subject on which to experiment. Friedlander even had his own facility for such experiments in Paramus, New Jersey. At least it wasn't located in Ingolstadt, Germany.

Sharma and Iloreta had parroted Friedlander's position. Sharma advised doing biopsies on the sternum and lower back but cautioned that biopsies only access a tiny area via the biopsy needle. So if the results came back negative, there was still the possibility of cancer being in

those areas. Did Friedlander write this script for her? She suggested that after doing the biopsies to then discuss future treatment. Of course, that would occur after December 6<sup>th</sup>, the last possible day for an operation due to the pre-screening time limit. This young lady could talk water out of the desert.

Later that day, Friedlander's office contacted me by telephone. Sharma had obviously told Friedlander about our telephone call. He was now trying to see whether I was dumb enough to follow her suggestion, which would increase the stress of delay and give him another shot of making good on his con. The young lady from Friedlander's office wanted to know what I was going to do about treatment. My response was that I wanted another opinion. She said, "Our invitation is always open." Right, to be a poisoned guinea pig serving Friedlander's interests and Bristol-Myers' profits.

Iloreta had a somewhat different interpretation from Sharma on the tests. He said that the PET scan showed a chance the cancer had spread. He also looked at the MRIs of the lower back and sternum that showed indications of lesions but saw nothing conclusive that the melanoma had spread. He suggested doing a biopsy and if negative then do a second biopsy. With two biopsies both negative, he was willing to do an operation attacking just the nasal cavity. But if either was positive, there would be no operation even to restore breathing as we had originally agreed. Friedlander had gotten to him.

Even with both biopsies negative, any operation had to be approved by the Mt. Sinai Tumor Board. Friedlander appeared to have sufficient political pull to veto any operation backed-up by his lie about a post-November 8th stroke, which indicated an increased risk of any operation. My time was running out. I didn't like those odds, so Sloan became my next place to request help.

At Sloan, a pleasant young lady answered the “New Patients” number. Gorny had never gotten back to me with a specific doctor’s name. She asked a number of questions and I gave her my insurance information. She said they would need the written reports of all the tests Mt. Sinai had performed—two Cat scans, one PET scan and four MRIs. That’s where another of Friedlander’s tricks on imprisoning his patients occurred. This guy was really turning into my number one enemy.

Mt. Sinai has its own intranet system that allows patients to view the written test results and a separate system that allows doctors to view both the written and imagining results. Friedlander delayed in putting on the patient system the test results for the three MRIs that he had ordered: sternum, back and brain. The doctor’s system had them but to access that, I needed to be in a Mt. Sinai doctor’s office. So why the delay? Friedlander knew that any other hospital or cancer center would first want all the written reports of the tests before referring me to any of its physicians. Any delay in obtaining the reports would increase the stress of my condition worsening, which it most definitely would and did given melanoma’s virulent nature. Friedlander was still playing a delay game. He knew my stress would escalate knowing that the longer without treatment decreased the chances of any possible cure or temporary cure and would continue condemning me to a few hours of sleep a night due to the breathing blockage. He was still hoping such would drive me to the desperation of immunotherapy.

Since Friedlander’s written test reports were on the doctor’s system, I made a long put-off appointment with my orthopedist. At his office, his assistant printed out the missing reports. Armed with all the reports, I dropped them off at Sloan’s office. At first the Sloan lady wanted me to fax them because Sloan did not have an office. That seemed strange. It surely was not a fly-by-night operation. She relented, however, and gave me an address on First Avenue to drop

them off. She warned that there was no sign to indicate Sloan had a presence there and instructed me to push the doorbell for the seventh floor, someone would buzz me in. I was to go to the eighth floor desk of a particular female who would put me in a room and get the Sloan lady to whom I would give the documents in that room. Must be a CIA operation.

That done, Sloan then needed the imaginings from the tests. Friedlander had no control over that, so it only took a day to obtain the CDs. Sloan, now having all the test results, a sincerely nice and competent nurse made appointments for me with two Sloan doctors, a surgeon and a medical oncologist.

At a little after 4 pm on the day before the appointments, this nasty sounding young lady from Sloan's Finance Department calls.

"We don't accept your insurance. If you want to go ahead with tomorrow's appointments it will cost you \$1,000 for each."

"What are you talking about? I already went through the insurance approval."

"Who gave you the approval?" I told her the lady at the New Patients number.

"Hold on, I'll try to call her."

(Holding on)

"She's not in today."

Sounded convenient to which I responded, "So you waited until late afternoon on the day before the appointments to call and tell me this. Why didn't you call sooner?"

No answer, just more of \$1,000 per appointment. Was this a shake down?

"I'm dying of cancer and you pull this stunt. Why don't you just send me a six shooter to blow my brains out?"



Her tone changed, and she actually tried to help. She explained that switching my insurance wouldn't work because the enrollment period had closed five days earlier—December 7<sup>th</sup>. Was there suppose to be irony in that? Friedlander's delaying con kept coming back to haunt me. The same insurance problem surfaced at NYU—AARP Medicare Complete, which wasn't as complete as the name implies, was not accepted there either. I always knew there was a reason for not liking AARP besides its socialist propaganda.

The Sloan finance lady did help by getting out-of-network authorizations from my AARP Medicare insurance. But all that took time—more delay, and the authorizations came through too late to make appointments in 2018, thanks to Christmas. I knew there was a reason for not liking that holiday.

The AARP authorizations only covered one-time appointments. For ongoing coverage at Sloan, NYU or elsewhere a different insurance plan was needed. This threw me into the Medicare insurance morass. I'm a relatively bright guy with two graduate degrees with honors, but figuring out which insurance might still be available and which doctors it covered approximated the denseness of Leibniz's modal metaphysics. How could those Federal and State bureaucratic idiots make something so complicated?

Since it was too late to change plans, another option was needed, but time kept ticking away as the most virulent form of cancer continued to march toward my brain. I felt like an infected earthling in the movie Alien.

A couple of friends helped steer my doomed existence to the only insurance possibility. Cancel my current insurance, which would throw me back into traditional Medicare A & B and buy a Medicare Supplement plan to pick up the remaining 20% of Part B along with the Part A

deductible. The problem was that none of this coverage would take effect until January 1, 2019, and I would lose my prescription plan, but there was no choice.

Friedlander's intentional manipulations at imprisoning his hoped for human guinea pig kept on ticking. Whenever a doctor sees a patient he writes up a "consultation report." It summarizes the patient's condition and treatment plan. My oncology buddy told me to request that the consultation notes from all three Mt. Sinai doctors be faxed to him. The surgeon and radiotherapist did so the next day because that is what N.Y. Public Health Law § 17 requires. As for Friedlander, he just ignored it.

Another of his tricks was that he and his staff never left any voicemail messages. Clearly out of fear that someone would use those party opponent statements against him in court to prove his pathological malfeasance and lying.

By now, any inkling of hope of a cure or temporary cure went out the window. Friedlander had boxed me into a corner from which there was no escape—do what he wanted or die sooner rather than later because of the delay he intentionally caused. Just before Christmas, I chose to die sooner—seemed a fitting present for that time of year.

Friedlander, cancer's ally and the drug companies' skill, had caused a delay in treatment for at least two months. Time was running out, but I started researching possible lawsuits such as medical malpractice, negligent misrepresentation, fraud and intentional infliction of emotional distress against Friedlander. After talking with a couple of lawyers who did malpractice work, both declined to take the case. That left me with bringing my own case. The problem was I wouldn't be around long enough. Such a case would take a few years just in the trial court, and, of course, Friedlander's lawyer would delay, delay and delay until I dropped dead. So instead, I filed a complaint with the Office of Professional Medical Conduct at the N.Y. State Department

of Health and sent a copy to Mt. Sinai's CEO. Mt. Sinai did nothing, other than send me a PR letter from its "Director of Service Excellence." The Department of Health, however, started an investigation.

After going through numerous doctor appointments, medical tests pumping radioactivity and other drugs into me while being inundated with radiation, and the continuing lack of sleep, it became clear that my law practice was over. The problem is that you think about the illness all the time, trying to figure out your next move. For me, my mind had always been preoccupied with my cases, now they were just an afterthought.

On the medical side, since Mt. Sinai was the place where people go to suffer unto death, I started looking for any surgeon not connected with Mt. Sinai who would remove at least some of the tumor allowing me a near normal sleep that would enable me to wrap-up my affairs.

Looking for a little escape from these horrors, my oncology buddy and I planned to hit a nightclub in Queens on New Year's Eve 2018. That New Year's Eve turned out different from all the others over all the years. The tumor decided to start bleeding, sending blood flowing out my right nostril. Dripping blood like a vampire who had just supped wouldn't exactly go over well with the girls, so I canceled.

In 2019, my insurance apparently changed. Apparently because no one at UnitedHealthcare or Medicare were able to give consistent answers. The answers always changed with the person. A friend said he once went to a seminar addressed by the head of Medicare for New York who admitted that not even he knew all the ins and outs of the program.

My first appointment in January 2019 was with the surgeon that Sloan had assigned me. He wasn't the one I requested, but Sloan's administration, similar to Obamacare, assigns you a

doctor. Take it or leave it. The surgeon was also a medical oncologist like Friedlander and had reviewed the records provided to Sloan.

After the introductions, I said, “Given my situation and the uncertainty of whether the cancer has spread, it’s necessary for me to arrange my cases so that they can be handed-off to other attorneys. To do this, I need to be functional—meaning capable of acting as a lawyer until the cases are transferred. The tumor in the right nasal cavity is blocking any breathing through it. That inability to breathe now allows me only 3 to 4 hours of sleep a night because of my alternative breathing pattern. Such sleep deprivation is negatively impacting my functioning as a lawyer, putting my affairs in order, and maintaining a semblance of quality of life, such as physical activity. What I need first off is a palliative operation to restore at least temporarily my breathing.” (My oncology pal told me to use that word, “palliative.” In the law, we use mitigate.)

The Sloan surgeon said, “I understand your objective, but we as physicians also have an objective not to do something that does not cure the disease.”

To which I thought, “It’s my life not yours, so my objective takes precedence.” This guy was looking like another Friedlander who just wanted a lab rat.

The surgeon continued, “Immunotherapy will treat the whole body for any other cancer that may have spread. It can shrink the tumor and offers the best chance of extending a patient’s life.” This was his “false promise” tactic that duplicitously left out “quality of life.”

I countered, “There’s no reliable statistics on immunotherapy shrinking a tumor. It may, it may not, and no studies show the time it might take even if it does actually shrink a tumor. All the evidence is anecdotal.”

This surgeon/medical oncologist then resorted to the other manipulation that many cancer doctors use to make a patient do what serves the doctor's interests as opposed to the patient's—fear.

“An operation could show that there is leakage from the brain, which will make it a major operation with significant risks—possible loss of sight, impairment of the brain or injury to nerves.”

“I'll take the risk,” thinking he didn't go into the risks of immunotherapy because that was what he wanted to do.

I then asked two questions: “If I don't have medical treatment, how long will I live?” His face registered shock. Apparently, he's accustomed to patients so desperate to live that they accept his statements as gospel.

“I have no way of knowing.”

My second question brought home the point that I was about to walk out. “How will I know I am near the end by not having any medical treatment?” He mentioned a few consequences of which I already knew.

Having undercut his smug arrogance by making him realize I was not about to blindly follow his dictates, I offered him a deal.

“Do the palliative operation to restore my quality of life, at least temporarily, and I will consent to any experimental procedure you want.” Of course I had my fingers crossed behind my back. I might or might not go with the immunotherapy. It depended on whether I had accomplished the things I wanted to do before embarking for Dante's Eighth circle. Realizing he would lose this human guinea pig with a rare form of cancer, he steps out to call Sloan's medical oncologist to whom I had also been assigned. After the call, he agreed and arranged for me to

see that medical oncologist right away. Apparently at Sloan as at Mt. Sinai, the medical oncologist is the boss.

The medical oncologist was considerate and agreed to the palliative operation. She also knew Friedlander and said my melanoma was at stage four. How did she know that without biopsies—more fear tactics.

The next day brought me to NYU's cancer center to meet with a very considerate nurse and doctor. The manipulation, however, consisted of anecdotal examples of miraculous recoveries from immunotherapy alone. "It reduced or eliminated patients' tumors while destroying cancer in other parts of their bodies." NYU's treatment plan for me was once again playing craps with immunotherapy to eliminate the tumor and destroy the cancer allegedly in other parts of my body. No one knew whether the cancer had spread, although thanks to Friedlander, by now, it probably had.

So far, three medical oncologists from three different reputable hospitals all pushed the same Bristol-Myers drugs. Could all three be on that company's payroll, either directly or indirectly? Friedlander was—he owned stock in Bristol-Myers and other major drug companies pushing immunotherapy drugs. Or was it just the trendy new miracle cure touted by a profession dependent on drug company grants.

Until now, I had always thought that doctors were supposed to relieve suffering, not prolong it to serve their material and research interests. Yet three reputable medical institutions, Mt. Sinai, Sloan Kettering and NYU Langone didn't give a damn about what suffering I was going through. All they cared about was conning another human being into being a lab-rat for the latest trendy unproven cancer treatment for my type of melanoma. The cancer profession was reminding me of used car salesmen.

There was one more oncology surgeon to try. The one my instinct told me to go with at the beginning but didn't. He was sharp, understood my position and agreed that a patient's quality of life was crucial. His nurse was competent, nice and an attractive blonde—too bad I wasn't younger. They functioned the way I remembered doctors and nurses used to—focusing on the patient's problems rather than viewing a patient as just another brick in the wall of their careers and bank accounts. So I went with their treatment plan and canceled the Sloan operation. Why have a surgeon operate on me who didn't want to do the operation. Also politely told NYU thanks but no thanks.

Before the operation, the surgeon referred me to a medical oncologist at Columbia Presbyterian. Just the title “medical oncologist” gave me trepidation after my prior experiences with these specialists, so I was once again ready to walk. This oncologist at least appeared to be the opposite of the other three. Friedlander was a con artist, and both Sloan and NYU wanted to do immunotherapy first and have me wait to see whether it actually shrunk the tumor regardless of the impact the side effects would have on my life. The Columbia doctor understood the need for me to get enough sleep to put my cases in shape for another attorney and maintain a semblance of whatever quality of life remained. He also said there were a number of different drugs used in immunotherapy, not just Bristol-Myers' Opdivo and Yervoy, which depended on the patient's condition, but we would talk about that after the operation.

The surgeon scheduled the operation. Then, just days before surgery, pre-screening demanded a doctor's note (sounded like grammar school) that my body was in good enough shape to undergo the operation after Friedlander's delaying con discovered a miniscule stroke from some unknown time. Gorny, my PCP, was the logical choice. He had been my doctor for 19 years, treated numerous injuries from old boys' rugby games, martial arts, hip-hop and a few

fist fights. He clearly knew my physical condition better than anyone. In addition, he earlier told me that the stroke would not impact an operation on the tumor. So what does this Mt. Sinai doctor do? He refuses to provide clearance for the operation the day before surgery—unbelievable. As a result the operation is put off—more delay.

What's with these Mt. Sinai doctors? Freudian slips began sneaking into my conversations with medical personnel substituting Mount St. Helens for Mount Sinai. The actions of that con artist Friedlander just kept-on plaguing me.

Since that miniscule stroke may have been caused by a blood clot from the heart or an artery leading to the brain, the surgeon's nurse, not one to waste time, arranged an appointment with a cardiologist for the next day, the day the surgery would have occurred but for Gorny. The cardiologist was sharp and knew her stuff.

I explained Friedlander's delay of inconclusive tests that prevented an operation.

"He was basically just trying to use me as a . . . ," and simultaneously we both said "guinea pig." She knew the ways of doctors like Friedlander.

She also highly recommended my current surgeon as someone who had operated successfully on a couple of her relatives.

Armed with my echo cardiogram and other information, she used a program to estimate the chances that my physical shape couldn't handle the operation. It was 0.9% that there would be a problem. Gorny, who also had access to my echo cardiogram since he ordered it, should invest in such a program.

The January 22, 2019, operation was on again but almost off again due to a Lennox Hill Hospital latina employee in admissions who spoke an English I never heard before, and who didn't understand how things work in America. She refused to accept my NYS Court ID as



proof that my last name was “Den Hollander” and not “Hollander” as the DMV had recorded. Latinas usually have four or five words in their names; she should have understood. Her immediate boss, however, was an American steeped in our ways and concluded that if they changed my name in their records to match my DMV license, then insurance would not pay. Ah, the power of the buck.

Everybody else was very competent and considerate, and the operation went off without a hitch. Afterwards, my surgeon said he couldn't understand why no one else would operate and added that he couldn't imagine the suffering I had gone through. Since my first appointment with Dr. Friedlander two months earlier, the tumor had grown 270%. Melanoma cancer cells still remained because a radical operation in my head at that time would have turned me into what my high school Spanish teacher used to call me—a vegetable. Radiation would be needed to deal with the remaining melanoma cells. The question of course is could it all have been removed back when Iloreta first wanted to operate, November 15, 2018?

The Columbia medical oncologist recommended a radiation doctor, Horia Vulpe, with whom he worked. On my first visit, Vulpe explained the procedure and the initial preparation for it. He was young, Romanian, and seemed to be a decent guy interested in helping his patients. He added that the radiation shouldn't start until a month after the operation. Meanwhile, he had to present my case to Columbia University's Tumor Board. The board meets monthly at the Columbia University Medical Center. It is made up of skull base tumor experts that determine the “optimal treatment” for individual patients. According to Columbia, “the tumor board is able to make patient-centered decisions that are less biased by a particular provider's personal experience or specialty.” Terrific, now a committee was making decisions about my life.

On my second visit, a month after the operation and arranging my life for weeks of radiation, five days a week, and fully expecting to begin the medical preparation for it—everything changed. Vulpe was no longer gun-ho to get moving with the treatment, but said he wanted to do more testing to find out whether the melanoma had spread and tried to push me into doing—you guessed it—Opdivo and Yervoy. Here we go again, I thought—*déjà vu* Dr. Friedlander. Vulpe also seemed in a rush to get through the visit. Was something going on again behind the scenes to manipulate me into doing this immunotherapy? Was Columbia just another sell-out cancer institution acting as a front for drug company experiments and patient exploitation that transferred insurance dollars into drug company pockets, and, of course, Columbia’s pockets by way of a *quid pro quo* arrangement? Then again, maybe Vulpe and Friedlander were in cahoots. Vulpe knew about Friedlander because he had asked about my Mt. Sinai experience, which I told him. But a conspiracy between these two—that seemed far-fetched.

The first test ordered by Vulpe was the proverbial PET scan. The MRIs were scheduled for two weeks later. The problem with the MRIs was that Vulpe’s office scheduled them all for one session lasting three hours. At the MRI unit at Columbia Presbyterian, the technician said, “This is too much for one person at once. We’re not going to do all these MRIs in one sitting. The body just can’t take it.” So they did an hour and a half for the face and neck MRIs and scheduled me for another session a week later. The face and neck MRIs were necessary for Vulpe to start radiation treatment while the next session would focus on whether the cancer had spread.

The following week, the MRI technician told me that only the back would be scanned.

“What about the sternum?” I asked.

She answered, “It’s just going to be your back from below the neck to the bottom. There’s no sternum or chest MRI ordered.”

That was strange. Why didn’t Vulpe also order an MRI of the sternum? Dr. Friedlander had emphasized that Mt. Sinai’s PET scan showed “nail size lesions in the sternum.” Then again, given his pathological conning, maybe not so strange. Friedlander had relied more on the fear tactic of cancer spreading to the sternum than my lower back because I had a great explanation with rugby for the lower back lesions not being cancer—at least four months ago. By now—who knew.

MRI’s show whether there is a mass of tissue in the body where one does not belong. It may or may not be cancer. PET scans on the other hand claim to indicate the presence of cancer but are notoriously inaccurate. They use a measurement called “standardized uptake value” or SUV to indicate whether an area might, I repeat might, be cancerous. They should really call it SVU. They inject you with a radioactive substance, usually sugar from the Alamogordo Desert. The PET measures how much radioactivity was absorbed in an area compared to the rest of the body. An SUV above 2.5 may indicate cancer. However, there are a lot of problems with this measurement, not the least of which are false-positives indicating cancer, but after the patient dies, an autopsy shows no cancer. Also, an SUV above 2.5 can result from infection, inflammation, autoimmune processes, sarcoidosis, benign tumors or injuries. In my case, Friedlander’s Mt. Sinai PET reported 4.7 for the sternum, 4.6 for the lower back and 11 for the nasal cavity, which everyone already knew was cancer. The Columbia PET was 4.0 for the sternum and 4.6 for the lower back and the nasal cavity was 6.6 absent the tumor. Given the fast spreading, virulent nature of melanoma and the intervening four months, I would have expected higher readings from the Columbia PET than the Mt. Sinai PET, assuming both were actually

measuring cancer. Unless, of course, Friedlander had falsified the Mt. Sinai findings at the time, but now—thanks to his intentional delays—the Columbia tests might accurately show melanoma.

Still, no matter what a PET or MRI shows, the only way to confirm cancer is with a biopsy.

Vulpe said he wanted biopsies of the sternum and lower back. The scheduling office for Columbia called me about the upcoming biopsies.

“You’re biopsies are scheduled for 8:30 am this coming Tuesday,” the young lady from the scheduling unit told me on the Friday morning, the weekend before the biopsies.

“How do you know I don’t have to be in court that day? Aren’t you supposed to work out your scheduling with the patient?”

“Well, it’s set for Tuesday, but before the biopsies you need to have blood tests done.”

“And where do I get the tests done before Tuesday?”

“You can do the tests here. Also you need an escort home after the biopsies because you’ll be given sedation.”

“Friday, before an operation for Tuesday morning, I’m supposed to find an escort. People I know work, they can’t just drop everything on a moment’s notice. What if I can’t come up with someone—do I try an escort service?”

“Then we’ll have to cut back on the sedation and it will be more uncomfortable.”

“You mean it will be more painful.”

“Yes.” These medical people always use “uncomfortable” to mean pain.

“Let me get back to you if I can find an escort.”

Needless to say, I couldn't find an escort on such short notice; a friend was willing to do it later in the same week of the scheduled biopsies. So I called the scheduling office back but had a real hard time getting through. Someone picked up the phone a couple of times but didn't say anything. I waited and waited, "Hello, hello." Nothing. When I finally got a live but moronic person in scheduling on the phone, she immediately transferred me somewhere without even letting me explain the reason for my call. The person to whom I was transferred, who was naturally in the wrong department, transferred me back. Eventually I got through on the following Monday, but the incompetents in Columbia's scheduling office arranged for the blood tests on Tuesday, so the biopsies were off.

After the blood tests, I never heard back from Columbia's scheduling office, so I called Vulpe's office—twice. No one who was alive ever answered that phone. So my messages went to voicemail asking when the biopsies would be and when Vulpe would start my radiation treatment. After all, the reason for seeing him was radiation treatment—not another Mt. Sinai run-around.

Called Vulpe's office a third time, but still no living person answered, so I left another useless voicemail. None of these delays made any sense. Radiation treatment should have started February 22<sup>nd</sup>, now it was the end of March, and every minute melanoma was most likely spreading. So I went looking for another radiation oncologist by calling my surgeon's nurse navigator to complain about Vulpe's delays and asking for a recommendation for another radiation oncologist. My surgeon had previously been a power at Columbia before moving over to Manhattan Eye, Ear and Throat Hospital. A couple of days later, Vulpe called me to arrange for a CT scan needed as preparation to start the radiation treatment. Nothing like knowing influential people.

At my third visit with Vulpe for the CT scan, I made clear to him that my functionality was primary—not longevity, and that I was not doing immunotherapy.

“We’ll deal with that later,” he said. “Right now, you need to reschedule the biopsies.”

I said, “After my experience with Columbia’s scheduling office, I’m not doing it.”

“Alright, try the front desk or one of the nurses to schedule it.”

A nurse in the CT scan section decided to dare the gauntlet of idiots and the brain dead in scheduling to arrange for the biopsies. After much delay and her clear frustration over the telephone, she managed to set-up the biopsies.

Columbia’s Interventional Radiology Division handled biopsies—a group of competent and considerate medical professionals.

The doctor said, “We’re just going to biopsy your sternum.”

“What about the lower back,” I said after lying face down on the table.

He replied, “If we don’t find what we’re looking for in the sternum, then we’ll try the lower back.” So I turned over.

To which I thought, and if there’s nothing in the lower back, what’s next, my knees, then my feet—where does it end? Conspiracy theories whirled in my head thanks to the experience with Friedlander. Was all of this part of Columbia’s Tumor Board and Vulpe’s strategy of delay to stress me into relenting to immunotherapy that would make money for Columbia and the drug companies? Had I escaped one bait & switch to fall into another in which the bait was radiation therapy, which likely would eliminate some or all of the cancer in my head, and the switch was again immunotherapy? The tumor operation was January 22nd, so radiation should have started February 22nd. Vulpe’s additional testing and his less than efficient office had delayed the treatment, which was now set to start on April 1—were the fates mocking me? The prospect of

more biopsies and the accompanying delays made me decide that if radiation didn't start the first week in April, then I was walking. I'd try to find a radiation oncologist who would start treatment immediately, but if I couldn't, then I'd do without.

That contingency plan didn't happen. The biopsy found what Columbia and Vulpe wanted to find—melanoma in my sternum. Was the melanoma there five months ago when Mt. Sinai did its PET scan, or had it spread thanks to Friedlander's scam and Vulpe's delay? No way to know, but logic says it had spread. So, Friedlander essentially committed second degree murder on me out of greed and Vulpe's unnecessary delay made him an accomplice.

The biopsy report stated "Metastatic Melanoma," and later on in the report that I was a prime candidate—guinea pig—for immunotherapy using the same two chemicals Dr. Friedlander, Sloan Kettering, NYU Langone and Vulpe had pushed—Bristol-Meyers' Opdivo and Yervoy—the proverbial "bad penny." That was never going to happen, which I made clear to Vulpe.

What were the odds that four different institutions would push the same two chemicals to treat my mucosal melanoma? Especially, when there were no reliable statistics or dedicated clinical trials on the effectiveness of those chemicals for mucosal melanoma. The reason there were none is that those two chemicals were used to treat skin melanoma—that's not the melanoma I have, which is genetically different. The only logical conclusion is that each and every institution, except for the one where my surgeon was a boss, wanted to use me as a lab-rat to see if those two poisons worked on mucosal melanoma. Were all the delays meant to give melanoma time to spread so that the only treatment left was immunotherapy—you decide.

Now, if they had offered me 50% of what Bristol-Meyers would make by pumping those poisons into me, good chance I would have agreed. After all, by now my life was over. Why not

use the money for hitting strip clubs, like the good old days in Russia. But no, they had to try conning me. So was delay the full-extent of Columbia's con? Vulpe kept bringing up combining radiation with immunotherapy to be administered by the Columbia medical oncologist, but I kept telling him no way. After radiation, I would find my own way into oblivion.

Three weeks of radiation was not exactly pleasant, although the technicians, nurses and the front desk were great. I couldn't see how they did it. Everyday, one doomed patient after another, but they kept a smile on their faces and a perkiness that lifted even my nihilistic attitude. I actually looked forward to seeing them, maybe because they laughed at my jokes. Amazing that going for radiation, which made the inside of my mouth feel like I had been chewing on a cactus, was something to anticipate. The world still produces, now and then, human beings.

Vulpe, on the other hand, was a different story. The worst part of radiation was Vulpe's failure to give me some instructions during it. As a result, seven days into the radiation, the right side of my tongue felt like it had been sliced and diced. I—not Vulpe—came up with the idea to mitigate further damage to my tongue, which had nothing to do with the cancer—keep it lying flat and off to the left assuring it was out of the way of the radiation. Worse, there were medical techniques to protect the tongue from radiation, such as a mouth piece with a tongue depressor or medications used to coat the tongue. Vulpe didn't use any of them on me, didn't tell me about any of them, and didn't warn me about what could happen to my tongue. Why?

When I visited my surgeon after the end of radiation and showed him the injury to my tongue, he got angry. Asked me for Vulpe's telephone number, which I gave him. I didn't witness the call, but I'm sure he bawled out Vulpe. The location of the injury made no sense. The cancer was in the right nasal cavity—not the mouth or the tongue.



So, was Vulpe an East European incompetent? At first, I thought yes—on three occasions he prescribed pain medicine to deal with the tongue, but when I showed at the pharmacy—no prescription. I had to remind him all three times to send the prescription to the pharmacy. Then, however, I looked more closely on what transpired when the tongue pain started. Vulpe initially prescribed a topical mouthwash that was useless beyond 15 minutes of using it. He then prescribed a bottle of morphine, which made me sick, and replaced that with a bottle of oxycodone.

Oxycodone was no stranger. After the turbinate operation, I took it in pill form—one in the morning and one in the evening. It relieves pain alright, but the real danger is that it makes reality look great. When I awoke in the middle of the night craving another pill—something that never occurred during my druggie days in college—I threw the remaining bottle of 40 pills in the garbage. No way, I'd ever try that stuff again.

My conclusion is that Vulpe intended to slice and dice my tongue so that I'd end up on either morphine or oxycodone, taken every four hours, which would turn me into a malleable patient lacking in critical thinking or a desire for the truth about what he and Columbia were scheming. His con didn't work. But ten weeks of near constant pain, much of it severe, from the tongue injury, which required eating only baby food, oatmeal, applesauce, yogurt and macaroni and cheese, made me curse this monster from the show *Supernatural*. Even talking was painful, which is what lawyers do a lot.

Vulpe was one smooth operator who would have sold a lot of used cars if he had chosen that profession. At our last meeting, most likely assuming I was stoned on oxycodone, he even tried to convince me to continue with radiation by him to the lower back, and, of course to start immunotherapy.

“How do you know my lower back even has a cancerous tumor?” I asked.

“It’s there,” he said in a voice of over-confidence of the con-artist.

Now it was clear why he didn’t have a lower back biopsy done. If a biopsy had been done and was negative, then there was no chance of getting me to agree to lower back radiation. Of course, if it was positive, then I’d have to do radiation, but since I was still clear headed—it wouldn’t be with him.

Thinking me stoned on oxycodone, Vulpe’s greed pushed for more radiation by resorting to one of the two psychological methods so often used by oncologists—the fear tactic. In response to my questions, he actually estimated how much life I had left without more radiation and by implication immunotherapy—six months. That was a surprise—not the six months, but that no other oncologist, other than my pal, would even make an estimate.

It was an obvious trick I had been expecting—low balling. But even if he was right, I didn’t care, since it gave time to do that which I intended. Vulpe, however, was trickier than that.

He emphasized that without the lower back radiation and immunotherapy, the cancer would likely paralyze me—making my legs useless. “The moment you feel any tingling in your legs, come see me immediately, so we can prevent any paralysis.”

This guy was as good as any girl I ever dated at manipulation. First he obtained the information on my life-style in the disguise of preserving my “quality of life.” He knew that nearly everyday I had to travel on my legs to the law library or court. He knew that once a week I ran wind sprints on my legs and attended boxing class on my legs. He also knew I was being treated by a spinal institute for age related problems and the old rugby injury that misaligned one of my lower vertebrae and hurt nearly everyday. One of the symptoms the spinal institute told

me to watch out for was “tingling in my legs,” which Vulpe knew. So he mixed that all up into a fear tactic meant to manipulate me—assuming I was stoned on the oxycodone he prescribed—into doing what made him and Columbia money: more radiation and immunotherapy. None of the other oncologists I saw ever raised a paralysis issue. If the problem actually arises before my death, I’ll go to the radiation oncologist recommended by my friend—not Vulpe.

Vulpe’s radiation had ended on a Friday and the following Monday the office of the Columbia medical oncologist who does immunotherapy called to make an appointment for me. Coincidence—I doubt it. More likely, these two hatched the con to get me on morphine or oxycodone so as to make me amenable to immunotherapy and more radiation.

Both Friedlander and Vulpe played with my life in order to make money and further their hospitals’ *quid pro quo* relationships with the drug companies. They didn’t give a damn about me.

This end of life experience taught me that a deadly conformity of belief has infected the cancer profession. Most doctors buy into the hype of immunotherapy as a cure-all. There is a systemic conspiracy among cancer institutions and the drug companies. Both make lots of money and gain fame pushing today’s alleged magic bullet for cancer. It’s always been the same old scam with most cancer doctors, institutions and medical companies. Create an illusion that medicine has finally discovered the cure for cancer, sell it to the public and everybody involved makes a lot of money while the patients die miserably—often from the new-improved bogus treatments. In the past, there were radical mastectomies, anti-viral drugs, chemotherapy and now immunotherapy. If you want to find out the truth about any alleged cancer miracle, ask the technicians—not the doctors—who work at these institutions.

The neurological profession didn't appear to be much better—exploit the patients with multiple tests to meet the medical “test or perish” requirement (similar to academia’s publish or perish rule).

To deal with the non-symptom, miniscule stroke, I visited a neurologist at NYU’s stroke center before Vulpe’s “slice-n-dice” radiation started. The center had a good reputation and was just 20 blocks up First Avenue from my apartment. She was cute, always a plus, and Asian, so at the upper end of the bell curve. She showed me my brain MRI and pointed out the small area where a blood vessel had burst. Strokes happen when clots build up in a blood vessel that block the flow, so the vessel bursts. Twenty years ago, the technology wouldn’t even have found it because it was so small.

She asked about any symptoms.

“No, no head aches outside of the usual for lawyers, no numbness, no black outs—I haven’t drunk that much in years.” I answered.

“Are you physically active?”

“Once a week, I do wind-sprints, and once a week I take a boxing class. I don’t spare, just train the way boxers do—heavy bag, pads, double under bag, and exercises.” Looking back, I wish I had kept my mouth shut, but I thought she needed to know and would be impressed. Guys always spill the beans trying to impress good looking babes.

She replied, “The first thing we need to do is determine the cause of this stroke. There are two possibilities: cancer, because it causes the blood to thicken, which increases the chance of a clot in the brain . . .”

That made sense, since the cardiologist had told me the same thing.

“. . . or you’re doing too much physical activity for someone your age.”

That made no sense, and my suspicion antenna went off.

“When people around your age exercise too much, their hearts may become arrhythmic. Some beats come too quickly causing an increase in pressure that causes a blood clot to break off and travel to the brain causing a stroke. In order to determine whether you have arrhythmia, we need to monitor your heart for a month.”

“I’m not stopping the wind-sprints and definitely not stopping boxing.”

“You can continue with your usual activities, but you’ll be wearing a patch on your chest that sends a signal to a monitor that records the rate of your heart beats.”

I went along with this tentatively, and she referred me to another neurologist who handles patch monitoring—talk about specialization.

The second neurologist provided the patch and a cell phone that picked up the signals from the patch on my chest and sent them to—where else—a computer. The second neurologist also added that the cause of the stroke might be a hole in my heart, and that I should undergo a special test for such. I almost laughed in his face. I’ve been playing sports since I was kid—never did anything like a hole in my heart come up. One of my girl friends had been born with one, but that’s the closet I ever got. This neurologist was just another doctor pushing unnecessary tests to make more money or comply with the test or perish rule in the medical profession.

The following day, I put the patch on just above my heart. Next day, did my wind-sprints—guess who called? The monitoring company, which I ignored. Two days later the monitoring neurologist called.

“Sunday your heart rate went up well over 100, what was going on?”

“As I told you and the other NYU neurologist, I do wind-sprints. That’s what wind-sprints do.”

“Did you ever have a stress test?”

“Sure years ago.”

“You should come in for a stress test.”

“I’ll deal with that later.”

This guy was really pushing my patience. One of the purposes of wind-sprints and boxing is to keep your heart in shape. I do wind-sprints and because my heart rate goes up, he wants a stress test—no way. All this neurologist was doing was adding to my stress by implying something was wrong when it wasn’t. Like Friedlander, he hoped I’d relent just to relieve the anxiety he intentionally caused by doing whatever stupid thing he wanted because it would make him money and he’d look good to the hospital administrators. No way!

To prepare for the then upcoming radiation treatment, Vulpe needed a three dimensional map of my head to highlight the melanoma, which meant a specialized CT scan. That required taking the monitoring patch off. According to the NYU neurologists, it could be taken off and then put back on at any time. So off it went, did the CT prep scan and back on it went. Later that night the monitoring cell phone starts beating. It was not receiving signals from the patch. I called the monitoring company, twice—do this, it didn’t work, so now “we’ll trouble shoot.” Then I realized. Strokes are caused by stress, and this test involving a computer not doing what it was supposed to was causing plenty of stress. Not only was I fighting doctors using fear tactics to manipulate me into taking unnecessary, time consuming tests and unproven drugs, but I was also now fighting another computer. I had enough computers in my life to fight—I canceled

the test, terminated the “test or perish” neurologist and kissed (unfortunately not literally) the Asian neurologist goodbye.

All of these medical shenanigans made me realize that often when an older patient visits a doctor, the doctor jumps for the Medicare money by exploiting the patient. Through false hopes and fear tactics, the doctor manipulates the patient into numerous useless tests, multiple visits and unproven treatments while suckering the patient into becoming the doctor’s latest guinea-pig. The patient goes through hell, stupidly believing the doctor is trying to help him rather than con him.

No girl ever jerked me around as much as the medical profession. Shakespeare obviously mistakenly wrote in Henry VI, “The first thing we do, let’s kill all the lawyers.” He must have meant “doctors.” Sure some lawyers will rob you, but plenty of doctors will torture, exploit and even kill you.

(I Can’t Get No) Satisfaction

MPHS Class of 1965, Reunion or Unfinished Fates

Toward the end of my existence with just another stupid and futile thing to do, my high school class held, what was for me, its final goodbye reunion.

Back in 1965, we had a lot of potential and were looking forward to the future. The girls were young and hot. The guys got into fights. But now, half a century later, nearly everyone was decrepit, or near so, and the girls were unrecognizable, as though they had gone to plastic surgeons to disguise their looks. In talking with some of them, I kept thinking, “I remember your name, your voice, and how you looked, but this can’t be you.” The destruction of time was clear.

There were tragedies along the line—guys died before their time, especially in Vietnam. Girls and guys failed in their dreams, families grew and fell apart, and memories of youth haunted all with a surreal realism.

A girl in our class and I were enemies back then. She was using the power pretty young girls always possess to tame a young guy—my best friend, by turning him into a well-respected man through marriage and children. I was trying to convince him to hold onto his spirit of a wild man, knowing that we had a lot of adventurers ahead of us if he stayed free. But she won and the last time I saw him was when I acted as an usher at their wedding.

There was a deeper reason to keep those two from marrying. At the reunion, she told me of the disaster that resulted from their union—two dead children from two diseases, the inevitable divorce, and eventually my buddy's death from cancer to a brain that coined the phrase "it's all relative" and invented the means for scarring Bergen County with U.F.O. sightings. MPHS's own Orson Welles. She had won initially, but in the end she lost. How different it would have been if I had won—for both of them.

Now she was driving me to the Ridgewood bus station after the reunion. Somehow a fitting end to an old unfinished battle. "You've had an interesting life," she said. "Yes, it was somewhat interesting, but fundamentally irrelevant," I replied.

She dropped me at the bus station around eleven at night. We said out goodbyes. There were a couple of other people waiting for the bus to the City, but it was as quiet as a graveyard on a warm summer's night. I'm standing where I've stood a hundred times before—looking across the lamp-lit street at the trees of Van Neste Park, wondering "What's the point?"



## **Stupid Frigging Fool**

By Roy Den Hollander

Part 9 Addendum

The End

Finally found a competent and considerate radiation oncologist at Sloan Kettering thanks to a friend's recommendation. She was Asian, pretty and usually entered the treatment room with young assistant girl doctors following her. Pretty babes are always a pleasure—dangerous, but still a pleasure.

The nice part about her was she didn't push or try to con me into immunotherapy. She did suggest it as systemic treatment, but left the issue alone after I said, "I did my research, but decided against it. The drugs Opdivo and Yervoy were developed for skin cancer not mucosal melanoma. I know their success rate is 35%. But whatever cancer they are used for, significant side effects are 50%. I don't like those odds. My aim is not longevity but functionality." She dropped the subject after that.

She scheduled a couple of tests and a biopsy of the lower spine. The biopsy showed my melanoma cancer was now in my L1 and L2 vertebrae, so to treat it, I agreed to proton therapy. It's supposedly more accurate than what Vulpe used to slice and dice my tongue.

Sloan and Mt. Sinai opened the first proton radiation facility in NY in August 2019. For some unknown reason they set it up in East Harlem. The four story building took up nearly half a city block. The building was spacious, spanking new and filled with friendly people. During my 7 hour stay, I only noticed one other patient. Probably because proton radiation is considered new by medical standards and many insurance companies do not cover it.

My radiation oncologist scheduled me for mapping my body above the thighs, so she would know where to tell the technicians to aim the proton beam; scheduled a PET scan and an MRI of the same area.

A pretty young nurse, who practiced origami, showed me to my changing room. I changed into the proverbial hospital gown with the opening in the back and as with other PET and MRI scans kept my underpants on—it does provide some sense of security. It was cold while I waited for the mapping scan, so I put on another gown with the opening in the front. The wait wasn't long, but just in case, I brought Jules Verne's Master of the World for reading.

Another pretty young lady brought me into the PET scan room where we joined three other pretty young babes and one big black guy. The head girl with short dyed blonde hair said, "We're going to put marks on your body so that the radiation technicians know where to aim the beam when you start proton treatment in a couple weeks or so. For now, we have to do a CT-PET for the mapping. Later, we'll do a PET scan and after that someone from upstairs will come to get you for an MRI."

"Okay," I said, but I had never heard of a CT-PET but knew about mapping from the nasal radiation.

The blonde boss said, "You'll have to take your underwear off because it could interfere with the PET scan." Never had to do that before with three prior PET scans, but she was pretty, so off they went. "You'll also have to take off this gown," motioning to the one that opened to the front. But before I made a move, two ladies were already at work stripping it off. That left me with my backside exposed. This was getting good.

"Sit up here," the blonde said indicating the gang plank into the machine. "We'll have to lower the front of your gown so that we can make markings." My arms come out as the ladies

pulled it down to my abdomen. There I sat bare bottomed with a flimsy piece of cloth from my lower abdomen to the top of thighs.

“How do you girls walk around New York dressed with so little,” I remarked.

Lie down the blonde said. So there I lied stripped to just above my sex organs with these pretty babes using magic markers on my body. Every so often one would lean her elbow on my dick for leverage. I kept telling myself, “Don’t get a hard on, don’t get a hard on.”

“This is better than a strip club,” I remarked. A few giggles. Then I realized why there was a big black guy who was also a technician. To, in part, keep someone like me from getting out of line.

All in all a pleasant experience—the most action I had in months.

After the enjoyable hands-on mapping and the actual PET scan, another pretty young lady took me upstairs for the MRI. She did the MRI, but then a doctor came in and wanted some more pictures taken, so she took those. This male millennial doctor from Mt. Sinai requested pictures well below the L1-L2 vertebrates that would be the target of the proton beams.

When the entire MRI was over, at around 3:30 pm on a Friday, the doctor said there were indications that the spinal core in the so-called “horse tail” area was being squeezed. “Dr. Lee and I will check the data tonight,” he continued. Not on a Friday before the weekend, I thought.

He warned, “It may mean you have a condition called Cauda Equina Syndrome. The symptoms that may occur this weekend could be numbness in your legs or in wiping yourself, weakness in your legs, foot drop, or incontinence. The treatment for this is emergency surgical decompression immediately after the onset of any of the symptoms. If any occur, you should go immediately to the nearest emergency room.” The nearest emergency room to my apartment was a Mt. Sinai emergency room. Immediately, I became suspicious, but didn’t ask this

purveyor of fear whether he was a surgeon. Either way, Mt. Sinai would financially benefit, he would get a gold star for his successful fear tactic from the administration, and I would be stuck with months of therapy, drugs, and incontinence that might never end.

Nowadays, when most doctors see an older man with insurance coverage, they right away assume he's a sucker for their lies, prevarications and dissemblances.

At home, I went back and reviewed the November 15, 2018, and March 15, 2019, back MRIs. Both stated that the Cauda Equina part of the spine was normal with no evidence of spinal cord impingement.

The three sessions of proton radiation occurred just before Thanksgiving. All the personnel involved were competent, efficient and straight forward—the way the medical profession is supposed to be. The radiation significantly reduced the pain—much to my surprise. Now I had a little more time to wrap-up my affairs.

## Epilogue

### For What It's Worth

Enough of these meaningless distractions, looking back over my life, I understand how I ended up one of the leftovers of humanity with nothing to look forward to and nothing of value to remember. The dysfunctional emotional and stress response pattern my mother put into my head had always pushed me in the wrong direction, making impossible, or at least highly unlikely, the pursuit of my first-best destiny. Now, like most Americans, I am a nobody with no power.

No more chances now, if there ever really were any, for glory and fortune, but maybe a little old time justice as in all those 1950s television westerns I watched as a kid when the lone cowboy refused to give up without a fight. It's always a choice between courage and cowardice. A man can't win a fight by running away from it.

Life is the most interesting experience a man can come across, so it makes no sense to hide from it. Living is the ultimate adventure and death the prize that awaits us all. My approaching minor reckoning with that vein of evil running through America promises a new adventure, one that, despite the fears emanating from the internal parents, I don't want to miss. There has been a joy in fighting everybody who violates my rights, especially the Feminazis, but nothing in this life matters anymore. All the illusions and false hopes no longer hold sway. Death's hand is on my left shoulder as it walks beside me, and that's just fine. The only problem with a life lived too long under Feminazi rule is that a man ends up with so many enemies he can't even the score with all of them. But law school and the media taught me how to prioritize.

All I ever wanted of females from mother to wife was someone to trust, but all I got was duplicity, treachery, infidelity and ruthless self-interest. The feminine evil pounds every guy in

an effort to subjugate them to female whims and sacrifice them to female desires. Girls cause more harm than they are capable of imagining because they don't care. To them, men just don't count. For broads it's always me, me, me. They can't see a world that doesn't center on them. They believe men exist solely as a tool to gratify their vanity of greed and lust for power. I showed weakness in not slapping the Commie Ho around or escaping from my sociopathic mother, and as Russia's President Putin said after the slaughter in Beslan, "The weak are always defeated."

As for that more virulent form of feminine evil—the Feminazis, I despise them! Despise them for the harm they have intentionally done to men in their effort to create a tyranny over us. Until my last dollar or last breath, I will fight them, and if there is anything after death, I will fight them for eternity. If you think the Feminazis haven't subverted American institutions against men, then look back on what I've written and switch the sexes. Make me an American girl and the Commie Ho a Russian mafia male pimp. Do you think it all would have turned out the same? Not likely.

So what's the moral: If a man wants to succeed in America, live an enjoyable, worthwhile life and have a chance at happiness, he must pursue his first best destiny, stay in shape and utilize girls only for partying; after all, "girl" is just a four-letter word. And remember above all else that no good deed done for a girl goes unpunished. At the end of every day Darkness conquers the light, but that's no reason not to fight back as a Cheshire grin spreads across my face in anticipation.

"Some people will do anything for money; some will do anything for justice."

-- the Author

[The sole author, Roy Den Hollander, of this story Stupid Frigging Fool by making it public on the Internet abandons all his copyrights in this document. Anyone may copy, distribute or use it or sections freely without violating any copyrights of the author once this document has been made public by the author on the Internet.]

## Appendices Index

1. Glossary
2. Diary of a Ho
  - a. Handwritten
  - b. Printed in Russian
3. Angelina's clients, just a few
4. Map of Angelina's known travels
5. Cyprus
  - a. Brothel contract
  - b. Immigration papers
6. Angelina's letters to her Moscow pimp, Leo Perlin
7. Angelina's passports, birth certificate, marriage certificate
8. Angelina's U.S.A. immigrant visa application
9. Correspondence between Angelina and Roy
10. Angelina's July 2000 postcard to Valodya Gavrilov in St. Petersburg
11. Angelina's Flash Dancers work schedules for 2000
12. Angelina's Flash Dancers income and average New York City stripper's income
13. Detective report on cell number Angelina was calling repeatedly in July 2000 right after her arrival in the USA.
14. Safe Deposit Box of Angelina at Citibank
15. Angelina's Photos
  - a. Teenage Angelina
  - b. Vasilyevas' Angelina



- i. Natural hair color
  - ii. Runner-up Miss Krasnodar
- c. Leo Perlin's Angelina
- d. Nude prostitution photos
- e. Angelina and bed
- f. Angelina at pool
- g. First date
- h. Second date
- i. Pre Mexico Angelina
- j. New Millennium Eve in Krasnodar
- k. Sochi (more nudes)
- l. Las Vegas (Angelina and Roy)
- m. Wedding Krasnodar (Roy doped up)
- n. Angelina and Mama Ho
- o. Moscow Picnic one week after Angelina's prostitution with Alfredo in Italy
- p. Moscow nude post Italy
- q. Angelina's Disguise
- r. N.Y.C. (Angelina and Roy)
- s. Stupid Frigging Fool
- t. Del Marco Angelina
- u. Hawaiian Tropic Angelina
- v. Evil
- w. Unmasked Angelina

16. Angelina's masturbation video clips produced by Dr. Marc L. Paulsen and Leo Perlin in  
Moscow
17. Affidavits of Angelina's prostitution (Redact names)
18. Affidavit of The Men's Club prostitution
19. Defamation by Inessa, criminal
  - a. Criminal indictment of Inessa in Russian and English
20. Angelina and her Mother's real estate records
  - a. House
  - b. Apartment
21. NYC perjured complaints by Angelina to police alleging extortion and violation of the  
Temporary Order of Protection
22. Disciplinary Committee v. Mundy
23. Annulment and divorce proceedings
24. Sturm Order of Protection proceedings: Roy's Discovery Request, Mundy's Opposition  
Motion, Roy's Reply, Sturm's Order, Mundy's Alleged Compliance
25. Judicial Commission Complaints
26. Disciplinary Committee v. Silpe
27. Angelina's illegal voter registration and N.Y.C. Board of Elections' referral to the U.S.  
Attorney and Queens D.A.
28. Russianny.com contest and Russian Bridal Magazine Bride of the Year
29. RICO
  - a. U.S. District Court for the Southern District of New York
  - b. U.S. Court of Appeals for the Second Circuit

- c. U.S. Supreme Court
- 30. Mundy Disciplinary Committee v. Roy
- 31. Class action RICO web site
- 32. Some Correspondence with U.S., New York State and N.Y.C. government agencies
- 33. Correspondence with Russian government agencies
- 34. Correspondence with news media
- 35. Ulitsa Krasnaya Newspaper article about Roy and Angelina. Article about Vasilyeva Fashion House fashion event.
- 36. Audio of two threats
- 37. Daily News article “From Russia as Slaves”
- 38. Roy’s Russian newspaper articles, interviews, Kremlin speech and two TV appearances
- 39. Roy’s resume
- 40. RICO Defendants’ Websites
- 41. NY Post Ho Hawaiian 7.29.2008
- 42. Cache Ho related documents
- 43. Ho's Immigration Proceedings
- 44. Homeland Security and Social Security Notices Roy Illegal Alien
  - a. Re: Illegal Alien, Letter Social Security N.Y. Regional Administrator
  - b. Re: Illegal Alien, Letters Trump and Coulter
  - c. Re: Illegal Alien, Media Responses
- 45. Ho’s Real Estate License
- 46. Juilliard Music Theory Reformation
- 47. Draft Registration Oral Argument



**More Stories**  
By Roy Den Hollander

Drive  
(1965)

Before “mothers against their daughters having fun like their mothers had,” the drinking age in New York State was 18. So naturally us underage high-schoolers, who didn’t pretend to be as innocent as today’s, headed upstate for drinking and fun.

One favorite location for teen drinking was the Brahaus on Route 17 outside of Suffern. At the bar on a Saturday night, one of the girls from my senior class was hustling some older, well-to-do looking guy. Meanwhile, I was drinking too much, as usual, with some guys who were friends of my current girl friend Pat from Allendale, NJ. Pat often pointed out that the only part of her body she liked was between her upper thighs and waist. Does that mean girls are driven more by sex than guys—you decide.

The girl from my class was successful in landing the older guy, so she asked me to take her car home and gave me the keys—big mistake.

She left with the guy and sometime later we left in her car with me driving and one of the guys from Allendale following us in his car. My memory isn’t too good about that night, but as we were passing a field in Waldwick east of Route 17, one of the guys says. “How do you think this Corvair will do in the field?”

That brought to mind an incident from my prior summer about a friend driving his car through some farmer’s corn field up in Roscoe, NY. Naturally, I made a quick 90° turn into the field. We zoomed back and forth a couple of times yelling and laughing our heads off until the transmission went. We piled out of the totaled Corvair.

“What’ll we do now?” One guy asked.

“Leave it,” I said. “She should have known better than trust a bunch of drunks with her car.”

We got into the car that had been following us and went home.

The girl was ticked and wanted money—of course, or she’d go to the authorities. That would be bad news for me, since I was still on probation for stealing and totaling another car with the aide of my school’s superintendent son. One of the Allendale guys told her that if she did, we’d spill the beans about her picking up some guy in a bar and spending the night with him.

Personally, I didn’t think that would work. Even in 1965, who would care if she picked up a guy and spent the night with him? No one, unless she did it for money, which was prostitution, a crime. And I had witnesses to provide enough evidence to at least interest the cops—underage high school girl drinking in a bar where she picks up an older guy and leaves with him. It would cause her all kinds of trouble and expenses for an attorney. So my friend’s threat worked. She never went to the cops and nothing ever came of the incident.

Don’t know what relevance this may have, but decades later Blackie and I did some research into the Wortendyke Inn in our hometown. An organized crime figure from Paterson opened the Inn in Midland Park in the 1950s. As a child, who naturally listened in on adult conversations, the Inn became a big deal among the grown ups for reasons I couldn’t understand as a kid. Sometimes, however, I didn’t have to surreptitiously listen. Mother often yelled at father, one of the town’s political bosses, for coming home late and polluted.

“The political meeting didn’t last that long. You and the others went to the Wortendyke Inn again for a good time. I won’t have it; I’ll leave you!” She even confided in me that she was thinking of divorcing him.

My pal Blackie also remembered talk about the Inn at the time, which made both of us suspicious. So we started talking with guys who were older than us back then. They confirmed the upstairs in the Inn was a brothel. So who would have discount access to the girls—the town movers and shakers. It was the same old story, although on a smaller scale. The influential or rich older men get the young prostitutes—no one wants an old one, and the wives yell and scream and threaten divorce.

“So where do you think these hookers came from?” I asked Blackie.

“Probably Paterson, that’s where the hood who owned the place was from.”

“You know, I bet some of the girls we were chasing in high school worked there.”

He laughed.

“No, seriously. It was a quick way for them to make money. Most of the girls in school were not from well-off families. And none of them would ever spill the beans when their Johns were the town bosses. I’m not going to be around for the next class reunion, so why don’t you start asking the girls about it?”

“Yeah right, why don’t you come back from the grave and ask them?” He replied.

We laughed.

### Rocky Mountain High (Summer 1967)

In the mid-sixties, the University of Colorado at Boulder had a reputation as a party school. As with most reputations, they are usually false, as was this one. High schoolers from Midland Park and Waldwick, New Jersey had wilder parties than the predominant dirt farmers attending at Boulder. When Waldwick students began attending M.P. High in our freshman year, the Waldwick girls strutted in with the air of 22 year-olds while we Midland Park guys were at the level of 12 year-olds. It was time to catch up. Craig, my competitor in the grammar

school long ball throw, proselytized the attitude of “Wild Man” as a way of living that attracted these babes.

Besides Colorado’s backward dirt farmers, who thought drinking grain alcohol was superior to Jack Daniels, Colorado did have great mountains for skiing and a resort area that attracted a lot of babes during the summer—Estes Park. The Park was high-up in the mountains while Boulder was at the foot of the Rockies. It took about an hour to drive to the Park with the last half hour chugging up the Rockies in a steady climb until you reached the ridge that look down into the Valley of youthful delight, Estes Park.

At the time, I had a VW Beetle with a sun roof, so my buddy, a folk guitar player, and I would drive up to the park and dropped acid. The girls were friendly and we had fun with them and they with us, but the best part was the ride home—stoned on acid. Back then we had a source of Sandoz LSD, no speed mixed with it.

We’d drive up out of the valley to the top of the surrounding mountains, open the sun roof, turn off the motor, and, if the moon was out, off went the headlights. For nearly 30 minutes, we’d whiz silently down the mountains with the stars over head, my portable record player spinning music of the time and LSD coursing through our brains—nice.

Bad Moon Arising  
(1968)

My best friend from high school decided or was pressured into marriage by his high school sweetheart and his mother. I kept telling him, “Don’t do it! Let’s get a sail boat as you once suggested and sail around the world. There are plenty of good looking broads out there wanting to take their chance at landing an American.”

But my argument couldn’t overcome his sexy girl friend or domineering mother. His



mother really hated me as did his much younger sister of whom I had a fantasy or two.

Whenever I walked into his family's house, I could feel the daggers from those two's eyes.

When the wedding arrangements were made in New Jersey, he sent a letter to me in Colorado asking me to be an usher. Although I didn't like it, I said yes. In my return letter, I volunteered to bring along some excellent grass to mitigate his foolishness. Little did I suspect his mother or younger sister was opening his mail. His outraged mother decided that a hippie wasn't going to attend her oldest son's wedding. My role as an usher was canceled. I didn't mind because I knew the troika of females was behind it—not him. Whatever back and forth fighting went on between him and the troika remains unknown to me, but it must have been heated, since just before the wedding, he resurrected my role as an usher.

The ceremony was depressing watching this smart guy with an appetite for adventure descending down the drain of mediocrity. The reception food and booze, however, were enjoyable. I even wrote a little ditty at the reception while sitting next to a one synapse bride's maid who actually said, "He'll get his reward tonight." To which I replied, "You mean he'll escape." She didn't like that.

Here's the ditty my muse, the bride's maid, engendered:

Here comes the groom  
Being led to his doom.  
Look at his stupid smile  
As he walks down the aisle.  
Thinking he's changed his fate  
With a suck, a fuck and a cake.  
Soon his wife will be humping the milk men  
While he's suffering cardiac arrest in the den.  
Wait till he belly swells  
And the house is full of yells.  
Oh what a cute little daughter  
I'll fuck her when she's older.

Not exactly what Susan my hot English teacher in high school would approve of, but usually the truth. Unfortunately the truth for my buddy, whom I never saw after that day, was worst. But that story is not until the end of this magnum opus.

Lola  
(1975)

While working as a writer and researcher in the mid-1970s at Channel 5 News, my underage girl friend at the time wanted to go to a fag bar.

“Why?” I asked.

“I just want to see what it’s like.”

This was well before the current transgender lunacy where PC ideology exalts the perverted. Yes, the “perverted.” Proportionally, fags have destroyed the lives of more children than heterosexuals. Just look at those holdover Catholic priests from the Middle Ages.

“Alright,” I agreed. “It’ll be like going to the zoo, but we aren’t going alone. I’m not about to trust a bar full of people driven by their sexual proclivities.” I’ll get Al to come along.

Down to Greenwich Village in the middle of winter.

As soon as we entered the bar, the fags started staring at my girl friend with her long light-brown hair. “Uh-oh,” I thought, we’re going to get bounced from this joint for bringing in a girl. But no one told us to leave, so we ordered drinks.

The guys in the bar continued to stare at my girl’s every move. Had we gone to the wrong joint? I couldn’t figure it out. Sure, she was pretty, but she was a girl. This was supposed to be a fag bar.

No one bothered us, so we hung out with our drinks.

My girl’s internal engine must have been heating up with all these guys, even though they were queers, drooling in lust for her. She took off her winter coat and handed it to me to hold.

Instantly, all those in-heat fags stopped looking at her. Under her coat she was wearing a tight halter top that accented her breasts. In that one move, she had gone from a beautiful young boy ripe for molestation to just another menstrual girl with whom they couldn't compete. We left laughing.

BEEchwood 4-5789  
(1989)

After my stint at Cravath, I moved into a new apartment in which the telephone company required me to visit its Harlem office for some reason. My buddy Al agreed to come along, not as physical protection but the telephone company's nemesis. The company's officials knew him and refrained from engaging in the usual bureaucratic stupidities with him and hopefully me, since he'd be along.

The office was on 125<sup>th</sup> Street. We two cue balls walk in while lots of black people were waiting for interminably slow service from overly obnoxious company employees. Those folks looked liked they had been beaten into submission by concentration camp thugs. I couldn't understand it and Al ignored it. He loudly demanded service and right away. Some bureaucrat jumped, did what he was paid for and we left those people still cowed and still waiting.

Sugar, Sugar  
(1991)

Down in the Amazon jungle with my eco-Nazi buddy, also a former associate of Cravath, we ended up having dinner with a native family in their hut, which was built on stilts to survive the rainy season. And no we weren't dinner. Unfortunately, however, the missionaries had already been here, so the native girls wore tops.

Cocktails, if you could call them that, were an interestingly tasting hard liquor. The drinks during dinner were the same, as were the after dinner drinks. Not much variety, probably

because there were no liquor stores, except way back up the Napo in Coca. It didn't matter, we drank our fill, had some laughs with out guide interpreting and then stumbled back through the jungle to our tent. Too bad the family chief didn't offer us his daughter or wife, they were rather cute.

Back in the States, I learned that the interesting alcohol was masato, which is fermented by the saliva of native females when they chew yucca and then spit it into a bucket. So, in a fashion, we actually tasted the females of that native family.

Crazy in Love  
(2013)

For some reason, probably insecurity, every girl I dated always pressured me into saying, "I love you."

"How come you never say you love me?"

"All you want to do is play around."

"I'm not that kind of girl."

"You don't love me," as she turns her back. "Yes, I do," I say. "Then say it," she demands. "Okay," I cross my fingers and say it.

But once, only once did I actually feel it. In 2013, at the 50<sup>th</sup> anniversary of the Old Blue Rugby team, we had an old boy's game. I hadn't played in 20 years, but when I walked out on to the field and look around, I said to myself, "I love this game." That was the only time I meant to use that word.

You Don't Own Me (Political Cultists)  
(These days)

What is with these Socialist Democrats? What drives them to ignore reality, logic, facts and the harm they cause? Simple, it's their ideology. Think religious cultists, such as the

Moonies and the loons at Jones Town. Just like the Nazis and Commies, they all think their ideology or belief system is the only truth in the Universe. Since it's the only truth, any other idea is that of a false prophet. It does not matter what logic, reason or the facts say. They are all wrong when in conflict with the tenets of their PC ideology, or more accurately, Political Cultists beliefs. Any harm, to any non-believer is justified in defense of the one and only true ideology.

Why are such people so gullible, because they are scared, ruled by inferiority complexes that drive them to any stupid deed and belief just to belong. In sum, they are cowards, which is their fundamental weakness. Crush a few of their leaders and the rest will scurry for the shadows.

“Change”  
by Taylor Swift

Today's newly favored special-interest groups (girls, latins, the emasculated, illegals, gays and ?s) are no different than the old ones. Just as stupid, bullying, uncivilized and inferior while believing a superficial characteristic makes them better.

It wasn't rush hour, so there was plenty of room in the NYC subway. But some 6' 1", 200 lbs. millennial bully cuts me off leaving a train car. Alright, maybe he's blind from AIDS. Then he turns to look at me, 5' 11", 155 lbs., and says something I couldn't make out because at 72 years my hearing doesn't pick up high frequency sounds. Still, his demeanor communicated an attempt to intimidate me—which wasn't going to happen.

We start yelling at each other. He calls me an “old man”—twice. I remember law school and the term “quid pro quo”—one bad turn deserves another. So I call him a “queer.” His belief in his superiority (consistent with the views of the PC media and other idiots) couldn't handle it. He angrily stutters, “You . . . you called me a Queer!” and charges. As with all guys overstuffed from eating too many donuts, he uses the momentum of his bulk to knock into me. For some

reason, fat fools think that by not using their hands absolves them of committing a battery. I for one don't, and punched him in the face.

That took the wind out of his self righteous PC sails. I realized he wasn't going to continue the battle, so I started bobbing and weaving saying, "Come on old man, let's go, you coward." Boy was acting like Ali exhausting, must be the cancer.

Like all favored special interest groups, they fold when faced with someone willing to fight for his rights instead of beg like most white, heterosexual males have been doing for 50 years.

## **Sympathy for the Devils**

© 2019 Roy Den Hollander

The Stones left out one category of people synonymous with the devil—doctors, not all, just most. Twelve alleged followers of the Hippocratic Oath sent me on a cruise of horror crossing the river Styx. Hopefully, things will improve once I reach the other side.

For a handful of years, I was having difficulty breathing at night while trying to sleep. My primary care physician (“PCP”), Mark Gorny at Mt. Sinai West, referred me to an Ear, Nose and Throat (“ENT”) specialist. The specialist diagnosed a deviated septum, probably from numerous hits to the nose while playing rugby decades earlier. The doctor was pushy to do an operation. He said, “You should get it done before you get any older, or I get older and my hands start shaking,” as he demonstrated shaking his hand with a grin. I declined.

Gorny then prescribed a steroid nasal spray called fluticasone propionate and over-the-counter decongestants. Both provided enough relief for a decent night’s sleep, which is crucial for any attorney. Gorny also referred me to another Mt. Sinai ENT doctor. This one had a CT sinus scan done, but he couldn’t find anything in the scan that might be causing my difficulty breathing while trying to sleep, so he referred me for allergy tests. The allergy tests were negative. That’s when I started doing my own medical research. This wasn’t exactly rocket science, but three Mt. Sinai doctors couldn’t figure out the problem. It took me about three hours to accurately diagnose the condition—turbinate hypertrophy, or so I thought.

Turbinates are parts of the nasal passages. They warm, moisturize and filter the air before it reaches the lungs. But when they become enlarged (hypertrophy) as a result of too much blood flowing into them, they block the nasal passages causing difficulty breathing. In my situation, standing was not a problem because gravity apparently prevented too much blood

flowing into the turbinates. Lying down was a different story because blood then accumulated in the turbinates. The cause was simple—old age. As my former boxing trainer from Gleason’s and Wall Street Boxing said, “Once you hit 70, nothing works anymore.”

Armed with my diagnosis, Gorny referred me to another ENT doctor who confirmed the problem and operated to reduce the size of the turbinates in October 2016. After the operation, the difficulty breathing while sleeping or just lying down was gone, so I thought it a success, for a while. Clinical studies showed that my respite might last a couple of years or only months—it was impossible to predict. Over time, downsized turbinates tend to start enlarging again and might even grow back. If the condition returned, nasal sprays and decongestants could be effective in relieving breathing difficulties, but ultimately another operation would be needed.

Around April 2017, some difficulty in breathing returned at night while trying to sleep. So in June, I visited Gorny. It often takes weeks to see Gorny unless it’s an emergency. Gorny told me to resume using the fluticasone spray. Saw Gorny three more times over 2017 and into 2018, in part, concerning the difficulty breathing that fluctuated in intensity and frequency. He continued to advise using fluticasone and decongestants, which sometimes helped and sometimes didn’t.

By August 2018, the difficulty breathing had reached a point that for three hours or more a night, I could barely breathe at all through my nose and was unable to sleep during that time. I called for an appointment with Gorny, but the earliest available was October 10, 2018. I told the appointment person, “That’s nearly two months off! Doctor Gorny is usually able to fit me in when it’s important and this is important.” Sorry he said, “That’s the earliest we have.” Sounded as though Gorny’s office was turning into the VA.



At the October appointment with Gorny, he told me to continue using the fluticasone spray every day. As far as examining the anatomy of my breathing, he would leave that to my ENT whom I was visiting later that day. This was the ENT who had performed the turbinate surgery.

At the ENT's office, while examining my right nasal cavity, he said in surprise, "What's that brown mass?" Oh great, I thought. On further examination, he concluded, "It's a polyp growing in your nasal cavity that's blocking your breathing. It wasn't there when I did the turbinate operation." My thought was "polyp" is a nice word for tumor. I knew then I was dead, sooner than planned. He sent me for a CT sinus scan and did a biopsy. Cancer, but not just any form of cancer, the most virulent and fast spreading one—melanoma. In six weeks, it can doom a patient.

Melanoma usually attacks the skin because of ultra violet rays from the sun. My melanoma, however, never saw the sun. It was known as mucosal melanoma because it grew in the mucous membranes inside the body. It was rare, usually attacked older persons like me, an additional benefit of the "Golden Years," and its cause was unknown.

Mother Nature, as females usually do, tricked me. After the turbinate surgery restored my breathing, she apparently started a melanoma tumor growing in my nasal cavity that mimicked the same symptoms as turbinate hypertrophy. Naturally, like any male-fool, I assumed that the old problem was back and dealt with it the way Gorny suggested.

My ENT referred me to a couple of oncology surgeons who also took my medical insurance—AARP Medicare Complete Mosaic by UnitedHealthcare (more on that later). I also contacted Gorny's office requesting a referral to a specialist in mucosal melanoma, but never heard back from him. All of this was a nice stressful addition since it occurred in the middle of

preparing for oral argument in a federal case before a lazy and incompetent Latina judge appointed by Obama. But what really annoyed me was the time consumed to deal with this doom. I had things to do to balance the accounts, but time was now rapidly running out.

I saw the two oncology surgeon's recommended by my ENT, but like an idiot, I didn't go with the one my instinct told me to because he wasn't a Mt. Sinai doctor. That alone should have made me choose him. I stupidly thought it would be more convenient to stick with Mt. Sinai doctors since all my doctors were with Mt. Sinai. In addition, because a couple of them were really good, I thought the odds were that the oncologists would also be good. Boy was that a mistake.

On November 6, 2018, the Mt. Sinai oncology surgeon, Alfred Illoreta, advised a treatment plan where he would do a full operation to try and take out all the cancer providing it had not spread to other parts of my body. If it had spread, then a more limited operation to temporarily restore breathing to allow me to sleep so as to maintain my "quality of life" for a period of time. In every meeting with every doctor or nurse, I told them, "I'm not looking for survivability but functionality so that I can get done what I have to do. Longevity has its place, but not for me at this point in life. A year maybe two will do just fine, providing I can still function as a lawyer, do wind-sprints and attend my boxing class." Boxing had become a gift from the gods I didn't want to give up.

Illoreta's treatment plan also included radiation therapy after the operation. His plan made sense, so we agreed to an MRI of the sinus area, which would specify the location of the tumor for an operation, and a full-body PET scan, which would look for cancer in other parts of my body. Illoreta's office scheduled the tests with the earliest possible operation for November 15<sup>th</sup> or at the latest December 6<sup>th</sup>. Illoreta stressed the importance of having an operation sooner

rather than later because melanoma was an aggressive form of cancer that usually spread quickly. Because of my age, Iloreta needed a pre-screening physical exam by a doctor to determine the odds of my body reacting negatively to the surgery. Gorny did the pre-screening on November 7<sup>th</sup> and concluded my body healthy enough for the operation. The MRI and PET scans were completed on November 8<sup>th</sup>.

Iloreta also referred me to a medical oncologist, Dr. Philip Friedlander, and a radiation oncologist, Dr. Sonam Sharma. When a patient has a cancerous tumor, hospitals often require these three kinds of specialists to agree on treatment along with a tumor board.

Dr. Friedlander was apparently a world renowned big-shot to whom other doctors at Mt. Sinai deferred. Friedlander's Mt. Sinai biography states his

clinical interests include the development of targeted therapies and immunotherapies for patients with melanoma. As a member of the Division of Hematology/Medical Oncology and as the Director of the Melanoma Medical Oncology Program at Mt. Sinai, he handles patients with cutaneous malignancies and works to develop collaborative translational and basic science projects and treatments for patients with cutaneous malignancies.

Entering Friedlander's office on November 12<sup>th</sup>, there was no indication it was a bait and switch operation.

“Bait ‘n’ switch” is when a merchant represents he has one item or service for sale, but when you show up, that item or service magically disappears and is replaced by one you don't want or costs too much. Friedlander made his money and furthered his medical career by treating patients with melanoma using immunotherapy. It's the modern-day horror of chemotherapy all over again. Chemotherapy targets and tries to kill oncogenes, which are mutated normal genes that cause cells to multiply rapidly and haphazardly—cancer.

Immunotherapy, however, targets a person's immune system by putting it in high gear so it will attack and destroy the cancer cells. The problem is that the immune system on “speed” may also

go after the lungs, heart, liver, eyes and so on with a litany of horrors. Immunotherapy had a success rate of 30% to 50% for melanoma—skin melanoma, not mucosal melanoma. The statistics for its side effects, regardless of what it was used for, were nowhere to be found, at least by me. The drug companies clearly kept such statistics on side-effects, but probably locked them away in their vaults. Not unlike the cigarette companies of old.

Another problem was that as with chemotherapy, immunotherapy is just a hit and miss approach. The drug companies find or invent expensive drugs but can't tell whether they will work unless the doctors sucker patients into being guinea pigs. If the drug doesn't work—meaning the patient dies or suffers to the end—then they move on to another drug and another patient. As of this writing, the drug companies had around 600 different immunotherapy poisons to test.

The chemicals of choice for Friedlander's snake-oil remedy were Opdivo and Yervoy manufactured by Bristol-Myers Squibb for metastatic melanoma. A month's treatment would gross Bristol-Myers \$45,000 to \$75,000. Friedlander made laudatory statements to the press about these alleged wonder-drugs, conducted clinical trials and published articles while his patients went through misery. In turn, Friedlander benefited financially—he owned stock in Bristol-Myers and other major drug companies pushing immunotherapy. He undoubtedly also received hefty speaker fees in the tradition of Bill Clinton to tout their effectiveness and sucker patients into taking these poisons. The drug companies most likely also paid for business trips complete with hotel, bar and perhaps carnal knowledge.

At first, Friedlander outwardly agreed with my surgeon's plan to do a full operation providing the cancer had not spread, and, if it had, a limited operation to restore breathing followed by radiation. Friedlander also added immunotherapy after the radiation if the cancer

had spread. Friedlander reviewed the PET scan and said it showed “lesions” in my sternum and lower back that may indicate cancer. A “lesion” can be almost any abnormal change involving any tissue or organ due to disease or injury.

I responded, “Those lesions are most likely old or even recent sports injuries. I’ve cracked ribs a few times playing rugby, took more than a few hits to the sternum from martial arts and boxing. As for the lower back, one rugby game pushed the vertebrae you’re talking about out of alignment. Currently, I’m being treated for it at Mt. Sinai’s Spinal Center, which gives me steroid injections to mitigate the pain. Before I went there, I had to use crutches when I got up in the morning to get to the bathroom. Once the blood started flowing, I could make it to the law library or court.”

Friedlander replied, “It is unlikely that the melanoma has spread that far from the nasal cavity, but let’s be sure with two focused MRIs, one on the sternum and one on the lower back.” He scheduled the two additional MRIs for November 15<sup>th</sup>, which meant the earliest possible operation by Iloreta went out the window. That didn’t seem to be a problem at the time, since the later date of December 6<sup>th</sup> was still set for the operation, and the pre-screening done by Gorny was still good because December 6<sup>th</sup> was within 30 days of the pre-screening. Pre-screening for an operation has a shelf-life of only 30 days. Additionally, the oral argument in the federal court was set for December 4<sup>th</sup>, so a December 6<sup>th</sup> operation fit Iloreta’s and my schedules.

The following day at my appointment with Sharma, the radiation oncologist, she repeated Iloreta’s advice that an operation soon was crucial and that December 6<sup>th</sup> should be soon enough. She said that radiation treatment after the operation would last about three weeks. She clearly believed that either a full-blown or limited surgery would occur by December 6<sup>th</sup>. She listed the

side effects of radiation, and, as with other doctors, I emphasized that my interest was not to maximize my existence but maintain my functionality for one, maybe two years, since I had things to do.

The second appointment with Friedlander was on November 19<sup>th</sup>. Friedlander said both the sternum and lower back MRIs also showed lesions as did the PET scan but a conclusion could not be made that they were cancerous. Once again, I told him they were probably old or even recent sports injuries and about the treatment provided by the Mt. Sinai Spinal Center to my lower back. To which Friedlander sharply responded, “I want you to stay away from steroids.” Oh yeah, as my lawyer state of mind took hold. Was this doctor telling me to go back to using crutches when I awoke in the morning to get to the bathroom?

Friedlander then advised doing a biopsy of the sternum and lower back to confirm whether the lesions were cancerous. If they were, he said “full-body” immunotherapy would be needed without any surgery or radiation. That wasn’t part of the original treatment plan.

Friedlander continued, “Even if the biopsies are negative for cancer, full-body treatment is still necessary. The biopsies that are done use a needle and take only a small section of each area, so they might miss the cancer.” For emphasis, he made a downward motion with his right hand holding an imaginary needle. So, heads he wins and tails he wins. That made no sense.

When doing biopsies, a doctor takes samples from different areas to decrease the chance of missing any cancer. Also, earlier Friedlander said the lesions on the sternum were the size of a finger nail. When I was a kid, I could hit that at 20 paces with my .22 rifle. Further, why do biopsies at all if the results didn’t matter. Something stunk here, but I did agreed to a brain MRI for the following day. As for the biopsies and immunotherapy, I tentatively agreed to them until I had time to analyze Friedlander’s actions and figure out his game.

At home I researched the side effects of these two drugs, Opdivo and Yervoy, used in combination. My research made clear that after spending over 50 years keeping my body in shape, I was not about to allow some doctor to pump poisons into it. My primary objective was not survival but to stay functional long enough to wrap-up my affairs. As a former weight-lifting champion in Florida once said, “Cancer knocks you down, but chemo [now immuno] finishes you off.” I wasn’t going that route. It was my car and I was the one holding the keys.

At about 5:45 pm November 20<sup>th</sup>, a couple of hours after the brain MRI, Friedlander calls to say that it showed a mild stroke in the occipital lobe (extreme back of the head). He had compared this MRI with the November 8<sup>th</sup> MRI of the face and neck ordered by Iloretta and saw the difference. The November 8<sup>th</sup> MRI did not show a problem in the occipital lobe but the new MRI did. He added that the new MRI did not show any melanoma, but the stroke was dangerous. Friedlander claimed he had shown the MRI to a female neurologist who feared that this stroke might be the beginnings of a major problem—a “cascade” of strokes. According to Friedlander, she had advised that I immediately go to Mt. Sinai’s emergency room and see its Stroke Intervention Team. Friedlander went over a list of symptoms, asking me whether I had experienced any—to which I replied no for all of them. The urgency in his voice started me thinking that Friedlander has been running a con all along. He wraps his voice in the emotion of urgency to push you into doing what he wants in order to serve his interests.

“If I had a stroke it’s because of those unnecessarily, inconclusive tests you put me through,” I angrily replied. Apparently the intentional infliction of emotional distress and dissembling were drivers of his con to manipulate patients into submitting to immunotherapy.

At the ER, the neurologists’ team extensively questioned me and did physical ability, strength and sensitivity touching tests. One of the neurologist’s first name was Helen, Asian,

young and pretty—she could touch me anywhere she wanted. ER did blood work, took an EKG and did a head CT scan. The neurologists wanted me to undergo an echocardiogram, but to do that, I would have to spend the night in the ER. Four hours in that zoo was enough. I chose to walk out. Before reaching the door, however, one female neurologist did her best to scare the bejesus out of me by listing all the horrors that might occur at home. It was then that I realized some doctors rely on two tactics to manipulate their patients into serving the doctors' interests rather than the patients'—false hopes and fear.

After escaping the ER Cabinet of Dr. Caligari, I was sure Friedlander was running a scam. He had initially agreed with the plan of doing a full operation to remove the tumor or a limited one to restore breathing followed by radiation treatment—the bait. All the while, he intended to drag out the search for more cancer, which meant delay that increased the emotional stress so as to pressure me into becoming one of his experiments with immunotherapy. That was the switch. As a friend said, “He’s trying to use you as a guinea pig.”

Friedlander was not pursuing my interests but his interests. My cancer was a rare form, so there weren't that many human guinea pigs around on which to experiment. The immunotherapy would make him money, provide another test case for an academic journal article, use me to develop science projects and bogus treatments that furthered his career, and, most importantly, curry favor with Bristol-Myers to reward him for suckering another patient into taking its costly drugs. Since my functionality was on the line—I ran. Canceled the biopsies, the immuno and went looking elsewhere for treatment.

My search took me to an old buddy, an oncology doctor. We used to chase girls at NYC nightclubs. He said the traditional treatment for this type of cancer was to do surgery first than radiation and maybe immunotherapy. Even if the cancer had spread, an operation on the tumor



often lessens the ongoing spread of the disease. He suggested Memorial Sloan Kettering, New York University's Perimutter Cancer Center and Manhattan Eye, Ear and Throat Hospital.

Gorny also suggested Sloan or NYU and questioned whether the November 8<sup>th</sup> face MRI actually showed the same part of the brain as the November 20<sup>th</sup> MRI. A neurologist subsequently confirmed that the November 8<sup>th</sup> scan could not be compared to the November 20<sup>th</sup> one. The reason was that the scans were like cameras that used different f-stops depending of what area they were trying to record. The minuscule stroke was in the back of the brain while the November 8<sup>th</sup> MRI focused on the face and neck. So Friedlander lied about the stroke occurring after the November 8<sup>th</sup> MRI. He knew that a stroke subsequent to my pre-screening on November 7<sup>th</sup> would prevent an operation on December 6<sup>th</sup>, and used that lie and his political clout to convince Iloreta and Sharma to defer treatment to him. At the very least, it would cause more delay—read emotional distress—because pre-screening would have to be done again. Had the operation occurred on December 6<sup>th</sup>, Friedlander would have lost a pristine, untouched subject on which to experiment. Friedlander even had his own facility for such experiments in Paramus, New Jersey. At least it wasn't located in Ingolstadt, Germany.

Sharma and Iloreta had parroted Friedlander's position. Sharma advised doing biopsies on the sternum and lower back but cautioned that biopsies only access a tiny area via the biopsy needle. So if the results came back negative, there was still the possibility of cancer being in those areas. Did Friedlander write this script for her? She suggested that after doing the biopsies to then discuss future treatment. Of course, that would occur after December 6<sup>th</sup>, the last possible day for an operation due to the pre-screening time limit. This young lady could talk water out of the desert.

Later that day, Friedlander's office contacted me by telephone. Sharma had obviously told Friedlander about our telephone call. He was now trying to see whether I was dumb enough to follow her suggestion, which would increase the stress of delay and give him another shot of making good on his con. The young lady from Friedlander's office wanted to know what I was going to do about treatment. My response was that I wanted another opinion. She said, "Our invitation is always open." Right, to be a poisoned guinea pig serving Friedlander's interests and Bristol-Myers' profits.

Iloreta had a somewhat different interpretation from Sharma on the tests. He said that the PET scan showed a chance the cancer had spread. He also looked at the MRIs of the lower back and sternum that showed indications of lesions but saw nothing conclusive that the melanoma had spread. He suggested doing a biopsy and if negative then do a second biopsy. With two biopsies both negative, he was willing to do an operation attacking just the nasal cavity. But if either was positive, there would be no operation even to restore breathing as we had originally agreed. Friedlander had gotten to him.

Even with both biopsies negative, any operation had to be approved by the Mt. Sinai Tumor Board. Friedlander appeared to have sufficient political pull to veto any operation backed-up by his lie about a post-November 8th stroke, which indicated an increased risk of any operation. My time was running out. I didn't like those odds, so Sloan became my next place to request help.

At Sloan, a pleasant young lady answered the "New Patients" number. Gorny had never gotten back to me with a specific doctor's name. She asked a number of questions and I gave her my insurance information. She said they would need the written reports of all the tests Mt. Sinai had performed—two Cat scans, one PET scan and four MRIs. That's where another of

Friedlander's tricks on imprisoning his patients occurred. This guy was really turning into my number one enemy.

Mt. Sinai has its own intranet system that allows patients to view the written test results and a separate system that allows doctors to view both the written and imaging results.

Friedlander delayed in putting on the patient system the test results for the three MRIs that he had ordered: sternum, back and brain. The doctor's system had them but to access that, I needed to be in a Mt. Sinai doctor's office. So why the delay? Friedlander knew that any other hospital or cancer center would first want all the written reports of the tests before referring me to any of its physicians. Any delay in obtaining the reports would increase the stress of my condition worsening, which it most definitely would and did given melanoma's virulent nature.

Friedlander was still playing a delay game. He knew my stress would escalate knowing that the longer without treatment decreased the chances of any possible cure or temporary cure and would continue condemning me to a few hours of sleep a night due to the breathing blockage. He was still hoping such would drive me to the desperation of immunotherapy.

Since Friedlander's written test reports were on the doctor's system, I made a long put-off appointment with my orthopedist. At his office, his assistant printed out the missing reports. Armed with all the reports, I dropped them off at Sloan's office. At first the Sloan lady wanted me to fax them because Sloan did not have an office. That seemed strange. It surely was not a fly-by-night operation. She relented, however, and gave me an address on First Avenue to drop them off. She warned that there was no sign to indicate Sloan had a presence there and instructed me to push the doorbell for the seventh floor, someone would buzz me in. I was to go to the eighth floor desk of a particular female who would put me in a room and get the Sloan lady to whom I would give the documents in that room. Must be a CIA operation.

That done, Sloan then needed the imaginings from the tests. Friedlander had no control over that, so it only took a day to obtain the CDs. Sloan, now having all the test results, a sincerely nice and competent nurse made appointments for me with two Sloan doctors, a surgeon and a medical oncologist.

At a little after 4 pm on the day before the appointments, this nasty sounding young lady from Sloan's Finance Department calls.

"We don't accept your insurance. If you want to go ahead with tomorrow's appointments it will cost you \$1,000 for each."

"What are you talking about? I already went through the insurance approval."

"Who gave you the approval?" I told her the lady at the New Patients number.

"Hold on, I'll try to call her."

(Holding on)

"She's not in today."

Sounded convenient to which I responded, "So you waited until late afternoon on the day before the appointments to call and tell me this. Why didn't you call sooner?"

No answer, just more of \$1,000 per appointment. Was this a shake down?

"I'm dying of cancer and you pull this stunt. Why don't you just send me a six shooter to blow my brains out?"

Her tone changed, and she actually tried to help. She explained that switching my insurance wouldn't work because the enrollment period had closed five days earlier—December 7<sup>th</sup>. Was there suppose to be irony in that? Friedlander's delaying con kept coming back to haunt me. The same insurance problem surfaced at NYU—AARP Medicare Complete, which

wasn't as complete as the name implies, was not accepted there either. I always knew there was a reason for not liking AARP besides its socialist propaganda.

The Sloan finance lady did help by getting out-of-network authorizations from my AARP Medicare insurance. But all that took time—more delay, and the authorizations came through too late to make appointments in 2018, thanks to Christmas. I knew there was a reason for not liking that holiday.

The AARP authorizations only covered one-time appointments. For ongoing coverage at Sloan, NYU or elsewhere a different insurance plan was needed. This threw me into the Medicare insurance morass. I'm a relatively bright guy with two graduate degrees with honors, but figuring out which insurance might still be available and which doctors it covered approximated the denseness of Leibniz's modal metaphysics. How could those Federal and State bureaucratic idiots make something so complicated?

Since it was too late to change plans, another option was needed, but time kept ticking away as the most virulent form of cancer continued to march toward my brain. I felt like an infected earthling in the movie Alien.

A couple of friends helped steer my doomed existence to the only insurance possibility. Cancel my current insurance, which would throw me back into traditional Medicare A & B and buy a Medicare Supplement plan to pick up the remaining 20% of Part B along with the Part A deductible. The problem was that none of this coverage would take effect until January 1, 2019, and I would lose my prescription plan, but there was no choice.

Friedlander's intentional manipulations at imprisoning his hoped for human guinea pig kept on ticking. Whenever a doctor sees a patient he writes up a "consultation report." It summarizes the patient's condition and treatment plan. My oncology buddy told me to request

that the consultation notes from all three Mt. Sinai doctors be faxed to him. The surgeon and radiotherapist did so the next day because that is what N.Y. Public Health Law § 17 requires. As for Friedlander, he just ignored it.

Another of his tricks was that he and his staff never left any voicemail messages. Clearly out of fear that someone would use those party opponent statements against him in court to prove his pathological malfeasance and lying.

By now, any inkling of hope of a cure or temporary cure went out the window. Friedlander had boxed me into a corner from which there was no escape—do what he wanted or die sooner rather than later because of the delay he intentionally caused. Just before Christmas, I chose to die sooner—seemed a fitting present for that time of year.

Friedlander, cancer's ally and the drug companies' shill, had caused a delay in treatment for at least two months. Time was running out, but I started researching possible lawsuits such as medical malpractice, negligent misrepresentation, fraud and intentional infliction of emotional distress against Friedlander. After talking with a couple of lawyers who did malpractice work, both declined to take the case. That left me with bringing my own case. The problem was I wouldn't be around long enough. Such a case would take a few years just in the trial court, and, of course, Friedlander's lawyer would delay, delay and delay until I dropped dead. So instead, I filed a complaint with the Office of Professional Medical Conduct at the N.Y. State Department of Health and sent a copy to Mt. Sinai's CEO. Mt. Sinai did nothing, other than send me a PR letter from its "Director of Service Excellence." The Department of Health, however, started an investigation.

After going through numerous doctor appointments, medical tests pumping radioactivity and other drugs into me while being inundated with radiation, and the continuing lack of sleep, it

became clear that my law practice was over. The problem is that you think about the illness all the time, trying to figure out your next move. For me, my mind had always been preoccupied with my cases, now they were just an afterthought.

On the medical side, since Mt. Sinai was the place where people go to suffer unto death, I started looking for any surgeon not connected with Mt. Sinai who would remove at least some of the tumor allowing me a near normal sleep that would enable me to wrap-up my affairs.

Looking for a little escape from these horrors, my oncology buddy and I planned to hit a nightclub in Queens on New Year's Eve 2018. That New Year's Eve turned out different from all the others over all the years. The tumor decided to start bleeding, sending blood flowing out my right nostril. Dripping blood like a vampire who had just supped wouldn't exactly go over well with the girls, so I canceled.

In 2019, my insurance apparently changed. Apparently because no one at UnitedHealthcare or Medicare were able to give consistent answers. The answers always changed with the person. A friend said he once went to a seminar addressed by the head of Medicare for New York who admitted that not even he knew all the ins and outs of the program.

My first appointment in January 2019 was with the surgeon that Sloan had assigned me. He wasn't the one I requested, but Sloan's administration, similar to Obamacare, assigns you a doctor. Take it or leave it. The surgeon was also a medical oncologist like Friedlander and had reviewed the records provided to Sloan.

After the introductions, I said, "Given my situation and the uncertainty of whether the cancer has spread, it's necessary for me to arrange my cases so that they can be handed-off to other attorneys. To do this, I need to be functional—meaning capable of acting as a lawyer until the cases are transferred. The tumor in the right nasal cavity is blocking any breathing through

it. That inability to breathe now allows me only 3 to 4 hours of sleep a night because of my alternative breathing pattern. Such sleep deprivation is negatively impacting my functioning as a lawyer, putting my affairs in order, and maintaining a semblance of quality of life, such as physical activity. What I need first off is a palliative operation to restore at least temporarily my breathing.” (My oncology pal told me to use that word, “palliative.” In the law, we use mitigate.)

The Sloan surgeon said, “I understand your objective, but we as physicians also have an objective not to do something that does not cure the disease.”

To which I thought, “It’s my life not yours, so my objective takes precedence.” This guy was looking like another Friedlander who just wanted a lab rat.

The surgeon continued, “Immunotherapy will treat the whole body for any other cancer that may have spread. It can shrink the tumor and offers the best chance of extending a patient’s life.” This was his “false promise” tactic that duplicitously left out “quality of life.”

I countered, “There’s no reliable statistics on immunotherapy shrinking a tumor. It may, it may not, and no studies show the time it might take even if it does actually shrink a tumor. All the evidence is anecdotal.”

This surgeon/medical oncologist then resorted to the other manipulation that many cancer doctors use to make a patient do what serves the doctor’s interests as opposed to the patient’s—fear.

“An operation could show that there is leakage from the brain, which will make it a major operation with significant risks—possible loss of sight, impairment of the brain or injury to nerves.”



“I’ll take the risk,” thinking he didn’t go into the risks of immunotherapy because that was what he wanted to do.

I then asked two questions: “If I don’t have medical treatment, how long will I live?” His face registered shock. Apparently, he’s accustomed to patients so desperate to live that they accept his statements as gospel.

“I have no way of knowing.”

My second question brought home the point that I was about to walk out. “How will I know I am near the end by not having any medical treatment?” He mentioned a few consequences of which I already knew.

Having undercut his smug arrogance by making him realize I was not about to blindly follow his dictates, I offered him a deal.

“Do the palliative operation to restore my quality of life, at least temporarily, and I will consent to any experimental procedure you want.” Of course I had my fingers crossed behind my back. I might or might not go with the immunotherapy. It depended on whether I had accomplished the things I wanted to do before embarking for Dante’s Eighth circle. Realizing he would lose this human guinea pig with a rare form of cancer, he steps out to call Sloan’s medical oncologist to whom I had also been assigned. After the call, he agreed and arranged for me to see that medical oncologist right away. Apparently at Sloan as at Mt. Sinai, the medical oncologist is the boss.

The medical oncologist was considerate and agreed to the palliative operation. She also knew Friedlander and said my melanoma was at stage four. How did she know that without biopsies—more fear tactics.

The next day brought me to NYU's cancer center to meet with a very considerate nurse and doctor. The manipulation, however, consisted of anecdotal examples of miraculous recoveries from immunotherapy alone. "It reduced or eliminated patients' tumors while destroying cancer in other parts of their bodies." NYU's treatment plan for me was once again playing craps with immunotherapy to eliminate the tumor and destroy the cancer allegedly in other parts of my body. No one knew whether the cancer had spread, although thanks to Friedlander, by now, it probably had.

So far, three medical oncologists from three different reputable hospitals all pushed the same Bristol-Myers drugs. Could all three be on that company's payroll, either directly or indirectly? Friedlander was—he owned stock in Bristol-Myers and other major drug companies pushing immunotherapy drugs. Or was it just the trendy new miracle cure touted by a profession dependent on drug company grants.

Until now, I had always thought that doctors were supposed to relieve suffering, not prolong it to serve their material and research interests. Yet three reputable medical institutions, Mt. Sinai, Sloan Kettering and NYU Langone didn't give a damn about what suffering I was going through. All they cared about was conning another human being into being a lab-rat for the latest trendy unproven cancer treatment for my type of melanoma. The cancer profession was reminding me of used car salesmen.

There was one more oncology surgeon to try. The one my instinct told me to go with at the beginning but didn't. He was sharp, understood my position and agreed that a patient's quality of life was crucial. His nurse was competent, nice and an attractive blonde—too bad I wasn't younger. They functioned the way I remembered doctors and nurses used to—focusing on the patient's problems rather than viewing a patient as just another brick in the wall of their

careers and bank accounts. So I went with their treatment plan and canceled the Sloan operation. Why have a surgeon operate on me who didn't want to do the operation. Also politely told NYU thanks but no thanks.

Before the operation, the surgeon referred me to a medical oncologist at Columbia Presbyterian. Just the title "medical oncologist" gave me trepidation after my prior experiences with these specialists, so I was once again ready to walk. This oncologist at least appeared to be the opposite of the other three. Friedlander was a con artist, and both Sloan and NYU wanted to do immunotherapy first and have me wait to see whether it actually shrunk the tumor regardless of the impact the side effects would have on my life. The Columbia doctor understood the need for me to get enough sleep to put my cases in shape for another attorney and maintain a semblance of whatever quality of life remained. He also said there were a number of different drugs used in immunotherapy, not just Bristol-Myers' Opdivo and Yervoy, which depended on the patient's condition, but we would talk about that after the operation.

The surgeon scheduled the operation. Then, just days before surgery, pre-screening demanded a doctor's note (sounded like grammar school) that my body was in good enough shape to undergo the operation after Friedlander's delaying con discovered a miniscule stroke from some unknown time. Gorny, my PCP, was the logical choice. He had been my doctor for 19 years, treated numerous injuries from old boys' rugby games, martial arts, hip-hop and a few fist fights. He clearly knew my physical condition better than anyone. In addition, he earlier told me that the stroke would not impact an operation on the tumor. So what does this Mt. Sinai doctor do? He refuses to provide clearance for the operation the day before surgery—unbelievable. As a result the operation is put off—more delay.

What's with these Mt. Sinai doctors? Freudian slips began sneaking into my conversations with medical personnel substituting Mount St. Helens for Mount Sinai. The actions of that con artist Friedlander just kept-on plaguing me.

Since that miniscule stroke may have been caused by a blood clot from the heart or an artery leading to the brain, the surgeon's nurse, not one to waste time, arranged an appointment with a cardiologist for the next day, the day the surgery would have occurred but for Gorny. The cardiologist was sharp and knew her stuff.

I explained Friedlander's delay of inconclusive tests that prevented an operation.

"He was basically just trying to use me as a . . . ," and simultaneously we both said "guinea pig." She knew the ways of doctors like Friedlander.

She also highly recommended my current surgeon as someone who had operated successfully on a couple of her relatives.

Armed with my echo cardiogram and other information, she used a program to estimate the chances that my physical shape couldn't handle the operation. It was 0.9% that there would be a problem. Gorny, who also had access to my echo cardiogram since he ordered it, should invest in such a program.

The January 22, 2019, operation was on again but almost off again due to a Lennox Hill Hospital latina employee in admissions who spoke an English I never heard before, and who didn't understand how things work in America. She refused to accept my NYS Court ID as proof that my last name was "Den Hollander" and not "Hollander" as the DMV had recorded. Latinas usually have four or five words in their names; she should have understood. Her immediate boss, however, was an American steeped in our ways and concluded that if they

changed my name in their records to match my DMV license, then insurance would not pay. Ah, the power of the buck.

Everybody else was very competent and considerate, and the operation went off without a hitch. Afterwards, my surgeon said he couldn't understand why no one else would operate and added that he couldn't imagine the suffering I had gone through. Since my first appointment with Dr. Friedlander two months earlier, the tumor had grown 270%. Melanoma cancer cells still remained because a radical operation in my head at that time would have turned me into what my high school Spanish teacher used to call me—a vegetable. Radiation would be needed to deal with the remaining melanoma cells. The question of course is could it all have been removed back when Iloreta first wanted to operate, November 15, 2018?

The Columbia medical oncologist recommended a radiation doctor, Horia Vulpe, with whom he worked. On my first visit, Vulpe explained the procedure and the initial preparation for it. He was young, Romanian, and seemed to be a decent guy interested in helping his patients. He added that the radiation shouldn't start until a month after the operation. Meanwhile, he had to present my case to Columbia University's Tumor Board. The board meets monthly at the Columbia University Medical Center. It is made up of skull base tumor experts that determine the "optimal treatment" for individual patients. According to Columbia, "the tumor board is able to make patient-centered decisions that are less biased by a particular provider's personal experience or specialty." Terrific, now a committee was making decisions about my life.

On my second visit, a month after the operation and arranging my life for weeks of radiation, five days a week, and fully expecting to begin the medical preparation for it—everything changed. Vulpe was no longer gun-ho to get moving with the treatment, but said he

wanted to do more testing to find out whether the melanoma had spread and tried to push me into doing—you guessed it—Opdivo and Yervoy. Here we go again, I thought—*déjà vu* Dr. Friedlander. Vulpe also seemed in a rush to get through the visit. Was something going on again behind the scenes to manipulate me into doing this immunotherapy? Was Columbia just another sell-out cancer institution acting as a front for drug company experiments and patient exploitation that transferred insurance dollars into drug company pockets, and, of course, Columbia's pockets by way of a *quid pro quo* arrangement? Then again, maybe Vulpe and Friedlander were in cahoots. Vulpe knew about Friedlander because he had asked about my Mt. Sinai experience, which I told him. But a conspiracy between these two—that seemed far-fetched.

The first test ordered by Vulpe was the proverbial PET scan. The MRIs were scheduled for two weeks later. The problem with the MRIs was that Vulpe's office scheduled them all for one session lasting three hours. At the MRI unit at Columbia Presbyterian, the technician said, "This is too much for one person at once. We're not going to do all these MRIs in one sitting. The body just can't take it." So they did an hour and a half for the face and neck MRIs and scheduled me for another session a week later. The face and neck MRIs were necessary for Vulpe to start radiation treatment while the next session would focus on whether the cancer had spread.

The following week, the MRI technician told me that only the back would be scanned.

"What about the sternum?" I asked.

She answered, "It's just going to be your back from below the neck to the bottom. There's no sternum or chest MRI ordered."

That was strange. Why didn't Vulpe also order an MRI of the sternum? Dr. Friedlander had emphasized that Mt. Sinai's PET scan showed "nail size lesions in the sternum." Then again, given his pathological conning, maybe not so strange. Friedlander had relied more on the fear tactic of cancer spreading to the sternum than my lower back because I had a great explanation with rugby for the lower back lesions not being cancer—at least four months ago. By now—who knew.

MRIs show whether there is a mass of tissue in the body where one does not belong. It may or may not be cancer. PET scans on the other hand claim to indicate the presence of cancer but are notoriously inaccurate. They use a measurement called "standardized uptake value" or SUV to indicate whether an area might, I repeat might, be cancerous. They should really call it SVU. They inject you with a radioactive substance, usually sugar from the Alamogordo Desert. The PET measures how much radioactivity was absorbed in an area compared to the rest of the body. An SUV above 2.5 may indicate cancer. However, there are a lot of problems with this measurement, not the least of which are false-positives indicating cancer, but after the patient dies, an autopsy shows no cancer. Also, an SUV above 2.5 can result from infection, inflammation, autoimmune processes, sarcoidosis, benign tumors or injuries. In my case, Friedlander's Mt. Sinai PET reported 4.7 for the sternum, 4.6 for the lower back and 11 for the nasal cavity, which everyone already knew was cancer. The Columbia PET was 4.0 for the sternum and 4.6 for the lower back and the nasal cavity was 6.6 absent the tumor. Given the fast spreading, virulent nature of melanoma and the intervening four months, I would have expected higher readings from the Columbia PET than the Mt. Sinai PET, assuming both were actually measuring cancer. Unless, of course, Friedlander had falsified the Mt. Sinai findings at the time,

but now—thanks to his intentional delays—the Columbia tests might accurately show melanoma.

Still, no matter what a PET or MRI shows, the only way to confirm cancer is with a biopsy.

Vulpe said he wanted biopsies of the sternum and lower back. The scheduling office for Columbia called me about the upcoming biopsies.

“Your biopsies are scheduled for 8:30 am this coming Tuesday,” the young lady from the scheduling unit told me on the Friday morning, the weekend before the biopsies.

“How do you know I don’t have to be in court that day? Aren’t you supposed to work out your scheduling with the patient?”

“Well, it’s set for Tuesday, but before the biopsies you need to have blood tests done.”

“And where do I get the tests done before Tuesday?”

“You can do the tests here. Also you need an escort home after the biopsies because you’ll be given sedation.”

“Friday, before an operation for Tuesday morning, I’m supposed to find an escort. People I know work, they can’t just drop everything on a moment’s notice. What if I can’t come up with someone—do I try an escort service?”

“Then we’ll have to cut back on the sedation and it will be more uncomfortable.”

“You mean it will be more painful.”

“Yes.” These medical people always use “uncomfortable” to mean pain.

“Let me get back to you if I can find an escort.”

Needless to say, I couldn’t find an escort on such short notice; a friend was willing to do it later in the same week of the scheduled biopsies. So I called the scheduling office back but



had a real hard time getting through. Someone picked up the phone a couple of times but didn't say anything. I waited and waited, "Hello, hello." Nothing. When I finally got a live but moronic person in scheduling on the phone, she immediately transferred me somewhere without even letting me explain the reason for my call. The person to whom I was transferred, who was naturally in the wrong department, transferred me back. Eventually I got through on the following Monday, but the incompetents in Columbia's scheduling office arranged for the blood tests on Tuesday, so the biopsies were off.

After the blood tests, I never heard back from Columbia's scheduling office, so I called Vulpe's office—twice. No one who was alive ever answered that phone. So my messages went to voicemail asking when the biopsies would be and when Vulpe would start my radiation treatment. After all, the reason for seeing him was radiation treatment—not another Mt. Sinai run-around.

Called Vulpe's office a third time, but still no living person answered, so I left another useless voicemail. None of these delays made any sense. Radiation treatment should have started February 22<sup>nd</sup>, now it was the end of March, and every minute melanoma was most likely spreading. So I went looking for another radiation oncologist by calling my surgeon's nurse navigator to complain about Vulpe's delays and asking for a recommendation for another radiation oncologist. My surgeon had previously been a power at Columbia before moving over to Manhattan Eye, Ear and Throat Hospital. A couple of days later, Vulpe called me to arrange for a CT scan needed as preparation to start the radiation treatment. Nothing like knowing influential people.

At my third visit with Vulpe for the CT scan, I made clear to him that my functionality was primary—not longevity, and that I was not doing immunotherapy.

“We’ll deal with that later,” he said. “Right now, you need to reschedule the biopsies.”

I said, “After my experience with Columbia’s scheduling office, I’m not doing it.”

“Alright, try the front desk or one of the nurses to schedule it.”

A nurse in the CT scan section decided to dare the gauntlet of idiots and the brain dead in scheduling to arrange for the biopsies. After much delay and her clear frustration over the telephone, she managed to set-up the biopsies.

Columbia’s Interventional Radiology Division handled biopsies—a group of competent and considerate medical professionals.

The doctor said, “We’re just going to biopsy your sternum.”

“What about the lower back,” I said after lying face down on the table.

He replied, “If we don’t find what we’re looking for in the sternum, then we’ll try the lower back.” So I turned over.

To which I thought, and if there’s nothing in the lower back, what’s next, my knees, then my feet—where does it end? Conspiracy theories whirled in my head thanks to the experience with Friedlander. Was all of this part of Columbia’s Tumor Board and Vulpe’s strategy of delay to stress me into relenting to immunotherapy that would make money for Columbia and the drug companies? Had I escaped one bait & switch to fall into another in which the bait was radiation therapy, which likely would eliminate some or all of the cancer in my head, and the switch was again immunotherapy? The tumor operation was January 22nd, so radiation should have started February 22nd. Vulpe’s additional testing and his less than efficient office had delayed the treatment, which was now set to start on April 1—were the fates mocking me? The prospect of more biopsies and the accompanying delays made me decide that if radiation didn’t start the first

week in April, then I was walking. I'd try to find a radiation oncologist who would start treatment immediately, but if I couldn't, then I'd do without.

That contingency plan didn't happen. The biopsy found what Columbia and Vulpe wanted to find—melanoma in my sternum. Was the melanoma there five months ago when Mt. Sinai did its PET scan, or had it spread thanks to Friedlander's scam and Vulpe's delay? No way to know, but logic says it had spread. So, Friedlander essentially committed second degree murder on me out of greed and Vulpe's unnecessary delay made him an accomplice.

The biopsy report stated "Metastatic Melanoma," and later on in the report that I was a prime candidate—guinea pig—for immunotherapy using the same two chemicals Dr. Friedlander, Sloan Kettering, NYU Langone and Vulpe had pushed—Bristol-Meyers' Opdivo and Yervoy—the proverbial "bad penny." That was never going to happen, which I made clear to Vulpe.

What were the odds that four different institutions would push the same two chemicals to treat my mucosal melanoma? Especially, when there were no reliable statistics or dedicated clinical trials on the effectiveness of those chemicals for mucosal melanoma. The reason there were none is that those two chemicals were used to treat skin melanoma—that's not the melanoma I have, which is genetically different. The only logical conclusion is that each and every institution, except for the one where my surgeon was a boss, wanted to use me as a lab-rat to see if those two poisons worked on mucosal melanoma. Were all the delays meant to give melanoma time to spread so that the only treatment left was immunotherapy—you decide.

Now, if they had offered me 50% of what Bristol-Meyers would make by pumping those poisons into me, good chance I would have agreed. After all, by now my life was over. Why not use the money for hitting strip clubs, like the good old days in Russia. But no, they had to try

conning me. So was delay the full-extent of Columbia's con? Vulpe kept bringing up combining radiation with immunotherapy to be administered by the Columbia medical oncologist, but I kept telling him no way. After radiation, I would find my own way into oblivion.

Three weeks of radiation was not exactly pleasant, although the technicians, nurses and the front desk were great. I couldn't see how they did it. Everyday, one doomed patient after another, but they kept a smile on their faces and a perkiness that lifted even my nihilistic attitude. I actually looked forward to seeing them, maybe because they laughed at my jokes. Amazing that going for radiation, which made the inside of my mouth feel like I had been chewing on a cactus, was something to anticipate. The world still produces, now and then, human beings.

Vulpe, on the other hand, was a different story. The worst part of radiation was Vulpe's failure to give me some instructions during it. As a result, seven days into the radiation, the right side of my tongue felt like it had been sliced and diced. I—not Vulpe—came up with the idea to mitigate further damage to my tongue, which had nothing to do with the cancer—keep it lying flat and off to the left assuring it was out of the way of the radiation. Worse, there were medical techniques to protect the tongue from radiation, such as a mouth piece with a tongue depressor or medications used to coat the tongue. Vulpe didn't use any of them on me, didn't tell me about any of them, and didn't warn me about what could happen to my tongue. Why?

When I visited my surgeon after the end of radiation and showed him the injury to my tongue, he got angry. Asked me for Vulpe's telephone number, which I gave him. I didn't witness the call, but I'm sure he bawled out Vulpe. The location of the injury made no sense. The cancer was in the right nasal cavity—not the mouth or the tongue.

So, was Vulpe an East European incompetent? At first, I thought yes—on three occasions he prescribed pain medicine to deal with the tongue, but when I showed at the pharmacy—no prescription. I had to remind him all three times to send the prescription to the pharmacy. Then, however, I looked more closely on what transpired when the tongue pain started. Vulpe initially prescribed a topical mouthwash that was useless beyond 15 minutes of using it. He then prescribed a bottle of morphine, which made me sick, and replaced that with a bottle of oxycodone.

Oxycodone was no stranger. After the turbinate operation, I took it in pill form—one in the morning and one in the evening. It relieves pain alright, but the real danger is that it makes reality look great. When I awoke in the middle of the night craving another pill—something that never occurred during my druggie days in college—I threw the remaining bottle of 40 pills in the garbage. No way, I'd ever try that stuff again.

My conclusion is that Vulpe intended to slice and dice my tongue so that I'd end up on either morphine or oxycodone, taken every four hours, which would turn me into a malleable patient lacking in critical thinking or a desire for the truth about what he and Columbia were scheming. His con didn't work. But ten weeks of near constant pain, much of it severe, from the tongue injury, which required eating only baby food, oatmeal, applesauce, yogurt and macaroni and cheese, made me curse this monster from the show *Supernatural*. Even talking was painful, which is what lawyers do a lot.

Vulpe was one smooth operator who would have sold a lot of used cars if he had chosen that profession. At our last meeting, most likely assuming I was stoned on oxycodone, he even tried to convince me to continue with radiation by him to the lower back, and, of course to start immunotherapy.

“How do you know my lower back even has a cancerous tumor?” I asked.

“It’s there,” he said in a voice of over-confidence of the con-artist.

Now it was clear why he didn’t have a lower back biopsy done. If a biopsy had been done and was negative, then there was no chance of getting me to agree to lower back radiation. Of course, if it was positive, then I’d have to do radiation, but since I was still clear headed—it wouldn’t be with him.

Thinking me stoned on oxycodone, Vulpe’s greed pushed for more radiation by resorting to one of the two psychological methods so often used by oncologists—the fear tactic. In response to my questions, he actually estimated how much life I had left without more radiation and by implication immunotherapy—six months. That was a surprise—not the six months, but that no other oncologist, other than my pal, would even make an estimate.

It was an obvious trick I had been expecting—low balling. But even if he was right, I didn’t care, since it gave time to do that which I intended. Vulpe, however, was trickier than that.

He emphasized that without the lower back radiation and immunotherapy, the cancer would likely paralyze me—making my legs useless. “The moment you feel any tingling in your legs, come see me immediately, so we can prevent any paralysis.”

This guy was as good as any girl I ever dated at manipulation. First he obtained the information on my life-style in the disguise of preserving my “quality of life.” He knew that nearly everyday I had to travel on my legs to the law library or court. He knew that once a week I ran wind sprints on my legs and attended boxing class on my legs. He also knew I was being treated by a spinal institute for age related problems and the old rugby injury that misaligned one of my lower vertebrae and hurt nearly everyday. One of the symptoms the spinal institute told

me to watch out for was “tingling in my legs,” which Vulpe knew. So he mixed that all up into a fear tactic meant to manipulate me—assuming I was stoned on the oxycodone he prescribed—into doing what made him and Columbia money: more radiation and immunotherapy. None of the other oncologists I saw ever raised a paralysis issue. If the problem actually arises before my death, I’ll go to the radiation oncologist recommended by my friend—not Vulpe.

Vulpe’s radiation had ended on a Friday and the following Monday the office of the Columbia medical oncologist who does immunotherapy called to make an appointment for me. Coincidence—I doubt it. More likely, these two hatched the con to get me on morphine or oxycodone so as to make me amendable to immunotherapy and more radiation.

Both Friedlander and Vulpe played with my life in order to make money and further their hospitals’ *quid pro quo* relationships with the drug companies. They didn’t give a damn about me.

This end of life experience taught me that a deadly conformity of belief has infected the cancer profession. Most doctors buy into the hype of immunotherapy as a cure-all. There is a systemic conspiracy among cancer institutions and the drug companies. Both make lots of money and gain fame pushing today’s alleged magic bullet for cancer. It’s always been the same old scam with most cancer doctors, institutions and medical companies. Create an illusion that medicine has finally discovered the cure for cancer, sell it to the public and everybody involved makes a lot of money while the patients die miserably—often from the new-improved bogus treatments. In the past, there were radical mastectomies, anti-viral drugs, chemotherapy and now immunotherapy. If you want to find out the truth about any alleged cancer miracle, ask the technicians—not the doctors—who work at these institutions.

The neurology profession didn't appear to be much better—exploit the patients with multiple tests to meet the medical “test or perish” requirement (similar to academia’s publish or perish rule).

To deal with the non-symptom, miniscule stroke, I visited a neurologist at NYU’s stroke center before Vulpe’s “slice-n-dice” radiation started. The center had a good reputation and was just 20 blocks up First Avenue from my apartment. She was cute, always a plus, and Asian, so at the upper end of the bell curve. She showed me my brain MRI and pointed out the small area where a blood vessel had burst. Strokes happen when clots build up in a blood vessel that block the flow, so the vessel bursts. Twenty years ago, the technology wouldn’t even have found it because it was so small.

She asked about any symptoms.

“No, no head aches outside of the usual for lawyers, no numbness, no black outs—I haven’t drunk that much in years.” I answered.

“Are you physically active?”

“Once a week, I do wind-sprints, and once a week I take a boxing class. I don’t spare, just train the way boxers do—heavy bag, pads, double under bag, and exercises.” Looking back, I wish I had kept my mouth shut, but I thought she needed to know and would be impressed. Guys always spill the beans trying to impress good looking babes.

She replied, “The first thing we need to do is determine the cause of this stroke. There are two possibilities: cancer, because it causes the blood to thicken, which increases the chance of a clot in the brain . . .”

That made sense, since the cardiologist had told me the same thing.

“. . . or you’re doing too much physical activity for someone your age.”



That made no sense, and my suspicion antenna went off.

“When people around your age exercise too much, their hearts may become arrhythmic. Some beats come too quickly causing an increase in pressure that causes a blood clot to break off and travel to the brain causing a stroke. In order to determine whether you have arrhythmia, we need to monitor your heart for a month.”

“I’m not stopping the wind-sprints and definitely not stopping boxing.”

“You can continue with your usual activities, but you’ll be wearing a patch on your chest that sends a signal to a monitor that records the rate of your heart beats.”

I went along with this tentatively, and she referred me to another neurologist who handles patch monitoring—talk about specialization.

The second neurologist provided the patch and a cell phone that picked up the signals from the patch on my chest and sent them to—where else—a computer. The second neurologist also added that the cause of the stroke might be a hole in my heart, and that I should undergo a special test for such. I almost laughed in his face. I’ve been playing sports since I was kid—never did anything like a hole in my heart come up. One of my girl friends had been born with one, but that’s the closet I ever got. This neurologist was just another doctor pushing unnecessary tests to make more money or comply with the test or perish rule in the medical profession.

The following day, I put the patch on just above my heart. Next day, did my wind-sprints—guess who called? The monitoring company, which I ignored. Two days later the monitoring neurologist called.

“Sunday your heart rate went up well over 100, what was going on?”

“As I told you and the other NYU neurologist, I do wind-sprints. That’s what wind-sprints do.”

“Did you ever have a stress test?”

“Sure years ago.”

“You should come in for a stress test.”

“I’ll deal with that later.”

This guy was really pushing my patience. One of the purposes of wind-sprints and boxing is to keep your heart in shape. I do wind-sprints and because my heart rate goes up, he wants a stress test—no way. All this neurologist was doing was adding to my stress by implying something was wrong when it wasn’t. Like Friedlander, he hoped I’d relent just to relieve the anxiety he intentionally caused by doing whatever stupid thing he wanted because it would make him money and he’d look good to the hospital administrators. No way!

To prepare for the then upcoming radiation treatment, Vulpe needed a three dimensional map of my head to highlight the melanoma, which meant a specialized CT scan. That required taking the monitoring patch off. According to the NYU neurologists, it could be taken off and then put back on at any time. So off it went, did the CT prep scan and back on it went. Later that night the monitoring cell phone starts beating. It was not receiving signals from the patch. I called the monitoring company, twice—do this, it didn’t work, so now “we’ll trouble shoot.” Then I realized. Strokes are caused by stress, and this test involving a computer not doing what it was supposed to was causing plenty of stress. Not only was I fighting doctors using fear tactics to manipulate me into taking unnecessary, time consuming tests and unproven drugs, but I was also now fighting another computer. I had enough computers in my life to fight—I canceled

the test, terminated the “test or perish” neurologist and kissed (unfortunately not literally) the Asian neurologist goodbye.

All of these medical shenanigans made me realize that often when an older patient visits a doctor, the doctor jumps for the Medicare money by exploiting the patient. Through false hopes and fear tactics, the doctor manipulates the patient into numerous useless tests, multiple visits and unproven treatments while suckering the patient into becoming the doctor’s latest guinea-pig. The patient goes through hell, stupidly believing the doctor is trying to help him rather than con him.

No girl ever jerked me around as much as the medical profession. Shakespeare obviously mistakenly wrote in Henry VI, “The first thing we do, let’s kill all the lawyers.” He must have meant “doctors.” Sure some lawyers will rob you, but plenty of doctors will torture, exploit and even kill you.

## Evolutionarily Correct Cyclopedia

(Ammunition for fighting the PCers or Political Commies as well as the Feminists, a.k.a. Feminazis, their sycophants, appeasers, and Feminist opportunists.)<sup>1</sup>

The sole author, Roy Den Hollander, of this document by making it public on the Internet abandons all his copyrights in this document. Anyone may copy, distribute or use it or sections freely without violating any copyrights of the author once this document has been made public by the author on the Internet.

### *Preface*

Whenever one group of people believes they are better than another, the result is always the same—oppression.

<i>Index</i>	<i>Page</i>
Abortion	4
Acting	5
Affirmative Action for Females	5
Age	8
America	9
Anger	10
Attitude	10
Badgering by Interviewer	11
Bankruptcy	11
Beauty	12
Been-Scammed.com	12
Bigotry	13
Biography	13
Bitch	14
Character Assassination	14
Circumcision	14
Civil Disobedience	14
Color	15
Compassion	16
Competition	17
Corruption	17
Courage	17
Crazy	17
Credit Card Companies	18

---

<sup>1</sup> The terms Feminists, Fanatical Feminists, Rabid Feminists, or Feminazis, are used interchangeably. Some people use the terms Ideological Feminists, Radical Feminists, or Militant Feminists. It doesn't matter what you call them; they intend to create and perpetuate a legal, social, and economic substratum occupied by men toiling in a Fritz Lang "Metropolis" underworld.

Criticism	18
Culture	19
Death	19
Debtor's Prisons	19
Decline and Fall of Empires	21
Defamation Lawsuits	21
Differences Between the Sexes	21
Discrimination	24
Divorce	29
Domestic Disputes, Family Fighting, a.k.a. Domestic "Violence"	31
Duel	35
Economics	36
Education	40
Enemies	43
Environment	43
Equality	43
Evil	44
Evolutionarily Correct or Genetically Correct	45
Fear	45
Federal Bureau of Investigation	45
Female	45
Female Frauds	47
Female Harm	48
Female Hatred of Men	48
Female Parasites	48
Feminazi or Fear Fascist	49
Feminazi Establishment, Feminarchy, Estrogen Tyranny (E.T.), State Supported Religion, <i>de facto</i> Inquisition	51
Feminazi Newspeak & Doublethink	53
Feminazi Objectives, Strategies, Tactics	54
Feminazi Power	57
Feminazi Voodoo Science	59
Fights	59
Finance	59
Firearms	59
Freedom of Speech	60
Generality	66
Gentlemen	66
Girlfriend	66
Glass Ceiling	67
Glory	67
Help	67

Hip Hop Class	68
Hos	68
Hypocrisy	69
Infidelity	69
Immigration	70
Immigration Marriage Broker Act	70
Jihada for Justice	71
Jokes	72
Judges and Bureaucrats	75
Justice	79
Ladies' Nights Lawsuit	80
Lawsuits Loses	90
Liberals or Lying Lefties	92
Liberty	92
Love	93
Man	93
Manhattan	94
Man's World	94
Marriage	95
Masculinity	95
Media	95
Media Appearance Tips	97
Men's or Male Studies	97
Men's Rights Movement	97
Ministry of Truth	97
Misandry	98
Misogyny	98
Miss Columbia	99
Money	108
Mother Nature	108
Motivation to Fight the Feminazis	109
Movies	115
MR Legal Fund	115
Murder	115
Objective	115
Ownership	115
PAP Girls	116
PBS	116
Peace	116
Police, Lawyers, and Broads	116
Political Correctness or Political Correctionalism	116
Politics	116
Power	118
Predator	118
Princess Syndrome	118

Princess Syndrome Multiple	
Choice Test	119
Problem	120
Promiscuity	121
Prostitution	121
Publicity	122
Rape	122
Religion	125
Reporters	126
Responsibility	126
Revolution	126
Rights	129
Rulers	130
Self Defense	131
Sex	131
Sex and Money Objects	133
Sexist	133
She-male	133
Socialism in America	134
Solutions	134
Sports	134
Temporary Restraining Orders	135
Terrorism	135
Threaten	135
Truth	136
Violence Against Women Act (VAWA) or Violence in Aid of Women	136
VAWA Mafia	151
War	151
Women	152
Work	152
World Problem	152

## **Content**

### Abortion

Kill a Feminazi—save a child.

Feminists justify abortion with the usual female whine, “I’m not responsible for controlling my bodily urges.”

They use lingo to absolve them of the evil they’re doing. These aren’t fetuses they’re murdering, they’re incipient human beings.

*Roe v. Wade* gave American females the unilateral right to opt out of parenthood. Since that Supreme Court decision, females have murdered over 50 million incipient human beings. Guttmacher Institute, *Fact Sheet, Induced Abortion in the United States*, 2014. That’s more than all the men who have died in all the wars America has fought.

Some argue that girls make mistakes, such as forgetting to take the pill. Over 50 million since 1973 are a lot of mistakes. Even assuming all of those were mistakes, sex is a repetitive activity, so people have fair warning to “be prepared,” as the Boy Scouts say. When a cognitive human being chooses not to be cautious or is negligent, then she is responsible, not the innocent she destroys. If I get into a car drunk and hit a 16 year-old cheerleader, I’m the one to blame, I’m the one who must pay.

No one wants to interfere with a girl’s freedom except her freedom to act irresponsibly when it harms others. If she harms herself—who cares.

The federal government awarded \$450 million in grants and contracts to Planned Parenthood in 2014. While the money cannot be used for abortion or butchering baby parts, it does free up private contributions for such.

Feminists are nothing more than aiders and abettors of murder, self-serving concubines of evil itself. On the other hand, murder does reduce the surplus population.

### Acting

Acting is lots of fun and everybody is civil. Unlike the legal profession, where if I get through a day without being insulted or threatened, I figure it’s because I missed an appointment.

I often work as an extra because TV and movie producers are usually the only ones who will hire me.

Actors and actresses are simply people who do what other people all around the world do all the time. Only they don’t mind other people watching.

Why would I want to watch reality shows? I have too much reality already.

### Affirmative Action for Females

Feminazis are using the cry of affirmative action to receive preferential treatment, but preferential treatment only for the most desirable positions in society. They want jobs above the glass ceiling but not in the Tombstone basement.

Girl bosses often get their position based on the “Paula Principle”—that’s the female corollary of the “Peter Principle”—incompetence rises to the top.

Feminists claim females are oppressed. Oppressed, compared to whom? Princesses in fairy tales?

If you want to know who the real oppressors are, look at who lives longer, controls a greater percentage of a nation’s wealth, on whom a nation spends more money for health care, who serves less time for the same crimes, and who is proportionately more overweight.

The assertion that American females are disadvantaged is nothing more than the “big lie” strategy. For example:

- a. In 2007, females earned more per unit of time at work than males. The average man spent 44% more time working or doing work related activities than the average female. U.S. Department of Labor, Bureau of Labor Statistics, *Time Use Survey 2007*, Table A-1. So for every hour a guy worked, a girl worked 42 minutes, but the average female made 77% that of the average man. If the two were paid equally per unit of time actually worked, then the pay for the average female would have been 69.5% that of the average man—not 77%.



- b. Females working part-time earn 115% that of part-time male workers. Denise Venable, *The Wage Gap Myth*, National Center for Policy Analysis, April 12, 2002.
- c. Females control over a majority of the assets in America. See Lucie Schmidt and Purvi Sevak, *Gender, Marriage and Asset Accumulation in the United States*, University of Michigan, 2005.
- d. Females make 80% of the purchases in America, Marc Rudov, *Why Women Don't Negotiate*, 2007, which include 53% of stock, 51% of sports equipment, 66% of computers, 47% of home improvements, 81% groceries, 75% over-the-counter drugs, 94% of home furnishings, 65% of cars, 80% of health care, 88% of medical supplies, and 86% of toilet paper, Bernice Kanner, *Pocketbook Power*. Females select four out of five homes in America, write 80% of the checks, and by 2020 will control most of the money in America. *Id.*
- e. The 25 most dangerous occupations in America are 90% occupied by men—it's called the "Tombstone Basement."
- f. Males are 20 times more likely to be killed or injured on the job.
- g. Over all occupations, men suffered 92% of the job related deaths while making up 49% of the work force. U.S. Department of Labor, Bureau of Labor Statistics, Current Population Survey, *Employment and Fatalities by Gender of Worker*, 2006.
- h. Females, but not men, have various excuses that permit them to significantly lessen their punishment for murdering their newborns (Postpartum Depression), their husbands or boyfriends (Battered Spouse Syndrome or Paroxysmal Insanity), and even their children in which case society often blames the husband.
- i. Females are generally not punished for perjury in family actions, sexual harassment, rape cases, or paternity suits.
- j. In some jurisdictions, the husband of the mother of a child born during the marriage will be responsible for child support even though the wife cheated on him, conceived with another man, and DNA evidence proves it.
- k. Wives received child custody ten times more often than men, Geoffrey P. Miller, *Being There*, N.Y.U. School Law, Public Law and Legal Theory Research Paper Series, No. 22, July 2000, p. 11, n. 17, while initiating 70% of the divorces, Marc Rudov, *Why Women Don't Negotiate*, 2007.
- l. Debtor prisons for nonpayment of child support incarcerate mainly men.
- m. Males generally receive more prison time than females for any crime. David Mustard, *Disparities in Sentencing: Evidence from U.S. Federal Courts*, Journal of Law and Economics, vol. XLIV (April 2001).
- n. The life expectancy for females in America is five to seven years longer than males.
- o. Breast cancer kills around 41,000 females a year and prostate cancer 27,000 males, yet there is twice as much Federal money dedicated to breast cancer than prostate cancer, and there are seven breast cancer drugs for every one prostate cancer drug. Catherine Arnst, *A Gender Gap in Cancer*, Business Week, June 13, 2007.
- p. The United States has an office dedicated to female health while there is none for men.
- q. Nearly every boy born in America has one of the most sensitive parts of his genitalia removed at an age when he cannot object and without anesthesia. It's called circumcision.
- r. The majority of the costs for Social Security, Medicare, Medicaid, and welfare programs are paid for by male taxpayers while all have a majority of female beneficiaries.

- s. Females still do not have to register for the draft.
- t. Females make up 57% of the nation's college students but just over 51% of the population.
- u. Nightclubs often allow ladies in for free or a fraction of what they charge men, or require guys to pay more for drinks, which over time adds up to a significant transfer of wealth from males to females.

Feminists argue that females deserve affirmative action for past mistreatment just as people with a darker skin shade did. There's no comparison between the discriminations. When was the last time a white female was lynched, shot dead on the front stoop of her home, or on the balcony of the motel she was staying in? For the past four centuries, the institutions of this nation have had their boot heels on the back of the necks of blacks. Over that same period, white females have received largely preferential treatment.

Watch someone stumbling out of the Copacabana in New York City at three in the morning and trying to hail a cab if he happens to be black. Then watch the cabbies play bumper cars as a white female hails one.

Both groups have been discriminated against, but one to its detriment and the other mainly to its benefit.

Girls today believe guys always victimized them, but now they're finally being treated the way their superiority deserves. The problem with such a belief is that it is illogical. How can the inferior person victimize the superior person?

In childhood, adolescence, dating, marriage, and divorce, females are the ones *being pleased*—not the ones doing the pleasing.

Sir William Blackstone said in the 1765, "Women are the favorites of the law."

In 1865, Mary Harris went on trial for murdering her former fiancée. Mary's fiancée broke off their engagement and married another girl, so Mary followed him to D.C. and shot him dead in the corridor of the Treasury Building where he worked. After a 12-day trial in which she pleaded "not guilty by reason of paroxysmal insanity," Mary was acquitted. The New York Times editorialized, "the verdict only furnishes a new illustration of what must be regarded as a settled principle in American Law—that any woman who considers herself aggrieved in any way by a member of the opposite sex, may kill him with impunity...."

Under old English law, when a wife over-spent the family budget, it was the husband who went to debtor's prison. During the 1800s, if an American female committed a crime, it was her husband who did time.

Over 52,000 American servicemen died in Viet Nam, many of them were drafted, but only eight (8) females from the armed forces died even though 1.8 million more females voted for Lyndon Johnson than males.<sup>2</sup>

Fifty years ago, females may have been economically discriminated against, but that is no longer true today. *See Economics* below.

Even accepting the Feminazis' argument that females were in the past harmfully discriminated against—two wrongs don't make a right. The men living today had nothing to do with any past harmful discrimination, so to punish them for misdeeds they did not commit is wrong. It's the same type of lunatic thinking, called "group guilt," that every evil, ignorant, power hungry tyrant like Hitler and Stalin used to justify their atrocities.

---

<sup>2</sup> 59 civilian American females also died in Viet Nam.

We don't live in the past; we live today. And today it's the wholesale violation of the rights of men that threatens the founding principles of this country. What we have today is what the U.S. Supreme Court has warned against many times: a dictatorship of the majority and that majority is female.

Living 5-7 years longer than men does not qualify females as being vulnerable, disadvantaged, or harmfully discriminated against. In 1900, the sexes had the same average life span: 46 years.

Despite the preferential treatment society gives girls, the courts have decreed them to be a "suspect class." I agree; every time a girl opens her mouth, I begin to suspect something.

Suspect class or not, girls should not receive positions of influence based on their sex because: (1) it's discrimination that will assure an even higher level of incompetence than institutions already have because they'll be hiring less qualified persons to meet sex based quotas, and (2) even if the females are qualified, they should not receive such positions because they have not yet paid their dues as guys have, since America has always given most females preferential treatment by securing for them a safe harbor in society.

The problem with affirmative action is that "[b]enevolent motives often shade into indifference and ultimately into repression."—Justice Scalia.

## Age

Sometimes I think everybody in my generation grew up except me.

According to a research study by the Max Planck Institute for Demographic Research, the younger a guy's girlfriend, assuming she's legal, the longer he will live. But for older females, the younger her boyfriend, the shorter her life will be. The older female with a younger guy is 20% to 30% more likely to die than a female married to someone her own age, and the greater the age gap, the more likely she'll die sooner.

Old enough to remember when girls were girls and guys weren't trying to act like girls. Or, when men were men and a woman brought out the best rather than the worst in her man.

To mitigate age, chase pretty young ladies. Nothing like perky pillows and firm booties to keep a man's hormones bubbling and him looking and feeling younger.

Time makes all things possible but destroys all possibilities.

When a pretty young lady asks how old I am, I use one of the following answers:

"Old enough to know better, but don't."

"Physically or emotionally? Actually, I'm younger than you. At least in emotional maturity."

"The same age as you: 13.7 billion years, the age of the universe—prove me wrong."

"Is that you talking or your mother because it's not Mother Nature."

"What does it matter, so long as I make you laugh and satisfy you by bring you to the point where you say 'I'm sore, I'm sore.'"

If a talk show host asks the same question, I use one of these answers:

"Older guys can be gentler, more kind and they last longer. They also usually have more money but less time to spend it."

"I respectfully decline to answer on the grounds that it'll prevent me from exploiting the infinite ability of pretty young ladies to delude themselves."

"What if a girl asked you how much you have in the bank?"

“If you consider my not revealing my age a game, then step over to the other side, and ask is she playing a game to get into my wallet. Was she that tall when she woke up this morning, is that her real hair color, are her lips that red, her eye lashes that long and dark, her legs that shapely or is it her panty hose, her pillows that large and perky or is it the structural engineering of her bra, and did she really sleep with only zero to three guys?”

*You're an old man?*

Yes, but I'm young at lust.

I know how old I am. I know how old I feel. I know what I like to do. I know what social convention tells me to do. But I don't give a damn for social convention, especially the PC-Feminist kind. After 15 years of rugby, 15 years of martial arts, and 30 years of litigation, I'm not going gently anywhere.

Girls don't age very well. At the 50<sup>th</sup> reunion of my high school class, I kept thinking when talking with a former beauty, “This can't be her,” but it was after 50 years got through with her.

### America

Just like a banana republic—the criminals rise to the top. The only difference is the amount of wealth the upwardly mobile-dishonest steal.

In America, those who commit greater evils lord over those who commit lesser evils.

There are two Americas: the Hollywood version in which truth, justice, and liberty reign, and the reality, where lies, deceit and money rule.

“Under a government which imprisons any unjustly, the true place for a just man is also a prison.” Henry David Thoreau.

“The devil nestles comfortably into the laws of this country. The government itself is treason.” Ralph Waldo Emerson.

What's the difference between those who rule in dictatorships like Syria and those who rule in America? In Syria, the 1% turns its opponents into corpses. Here the 1% turns its opponents into the living dead. So it comes down to whether you're one of the honored dead or one of the living dead.

The Feminists have actually made America worst by turning it into a tyrannical monster that pretends it is not.

Americans have forgotten that the social contract grants full citizenship only to those who can protect the state. Since females can't protect the state, they do not deserve the full benefits of citizenship, such as the vote. Their vote should be reduced to three quarters or a half. (This may change when females are required to register for the draft).

The military is out of fashion, Americans undervalue manual labor, schools neuter male students, opinion makers deny the biological differences between men and women, and sexiness is dead.

American culture blindly idealizes history's defeated, such as Amelia Earhart, by attributing to them platonic qualities they never had.

America has become a nation of wimps that celebrates mediocrity and useless emotionalism.

America is turning into the former Soviet Union. If you are a PC-Feminist, whatever you say is considered true. In the Soviet Union, you'd be a card carrying member of the Communist party. In America, if you are not a PC-Feminist, then whatever you say is branded false, regardless of the facts.

### Anger

I boil through my days and some of my nights, but at least I'm in touch with my feelings. I'm not angry, I'm seething.

An angry man is a Feminazis' worst nightmare, so she uses the traditional therapist trick of making a man feel ashamed of his anger. That's how the term "white male rage" originated. It's been given a derogatory meaning by the Feminist Establishment to make men feel guilty for being angry, and, therefore, prevent them from acting on it.

There's nothing wrong with anger. Anger is a great motivator; it drives people to stand up for their rights. Were you ever angry over an injustice and then did something about it? Whether you won or lost, you didn't feel like a skulking coward afterward.

Hate and anger toward injustice spur humans to fight for justice. And justice trumps everything else.

When criticized for my anger, I respond:

"It's more important to be in touch with reality than politically correct delusions."

"I don't like people violating my rights."

"I'm the proverbial angry young man, only now I've got gray hair."

"From hell's heart, I stab at thee. For hate's sake, I spit my last breath at thee."

Captain Ahab and Khan Noonien Singh.

"It's just cold blue steel anger, that's all."

As a result of the Violence Against Women Act ("VAWA"), *see below*, the federal government has 600 pages of false accusations and probably findings of fact that I committed certain evil deeds. Homeland Security made those findings in secret without notice to me and without allowing me to defend against the accusations. Would that make you angry, especially if the information was available to every law enforcement agency in the world and certain private Feminist organizations but not to you?

### Attitude

Make no apologies and yield no triumph to your enemies. Attack, attack, attack!

Treat a person according to how they behave.

I will not be cowed, intimidated, or pushed around, since I have nothing to lose. And I have nothing to lose because of the Feminazis.

"There is an eternity behind and an eternity before, and the little speck in the center, however long, is but comparatively a minute. The difference between your tenure and mine is trifling." John Brown.

I try to fight anybody who violates my rights, and if that means fighting fire with fire then fine.

Why is anyone and everyone right—so long as it's not me? I don't think so.

## Badgering by Interviewer

Boy you're a real nasty person. A court would never let you badger a witness the way you do your guests. A judge would hold you in contempt and lock you up in Riker's Island for a while where you'd be spending your time holding your ankles.

I cannot only be as nasty as you; I can be nastier. Do you want me to?

You interrupt me one more time, and I'm going to challenge you to a duel.

If you want to answer your own question, go ahead, don't let me interfere.

Right, when pigs fly and certain girls grow breasts.

Now, now, no reason to be nasty.

With all due respect, what you think doesn't matter. You have a right to think what you will, but I don't have to convince you of anything.

You're entitled to your opinion; just as I am entitled to ignore it—which I will.

## Bankruptcy

Okay, so I borrowed money from today's loan sharks—the credit card companies whose fraudulent practices helped bring about the Great Recession. They wanted it back, but I didn't have it, so I filed for bankruptcy before they could break my legs, or push me into indenture servitude.

I fully intended to pay it back, but my Men's Rights lawsuits put me on the "virtual pink-list." Virtual as on the Internet, and "pink-list" as being opposed to preferential treatment for females when it violates men's rights. The publicity from the press, largely accurate, brought minor notoriety, or perhaps infamy, as the type of man the Feminists want to eliminate, which is true I'm proud to say. The Feminazis and their sycophant bloggers, often misleading, have marked me as a devil.

No one these days will hire an anti-feminist lawyer, unless by accident, because they fear being called an anti-feminist sympathizer. Just like the black-list in the 1950s when no one would hire lefties for fear of being labeled a commie sympathizer.

Even the courts rely on the Internet pink-listing in making decisions. An Internet expert friend of mine told me that someone in the U.S. Southern District Court of New York was searching my name on the Internet, and it wasn't for my telephone number or address because that information is on every paper I file with the court. The courts aren't supposed to do that. Judges should decide based on the law, not the personal or political beliefs of the lawyers before them. But in Feminarchy America, as the Third Reich and Soviet Union, dissent is punished, only not as egregiously—yet.

In the end, my clients evaporated and future clients went elsewhere. I can't blame them, given the level of today's intolerance wrought by the effete politically-correct elite. If I wanted to win a case, I wouldn't hire me either because the opposing side would make me the issue and use my dissident views to bias the judge.

As to my savings, I lost about half in the dot.com bubble thanks to a crooked female stockbroker at Salomon Smith Barney. The rest went to fighting the Feminists through four federal lawsuits, and a Racketeer Influenced Corrupt Organization (RICO) action against my ex-wife whom the Feminists helped stay in this country by emasculating the immigration system through the Violence Against Women Act. She's a former Russian mafia prostitute, former mistress to a Chechen warlord, self-proclaimed black magic witch, devotee of the Anti-Christ,

and former stripper at Flash Dancers who committed federal and state felonies when she swore she was a U.S. citizen in registering to vote when she was still an alien. For more on that revolting story go to *Been-Scammed.com*.

Jihadis are expensive, and mine's been going on for 15 years. Unfortunately, it looks like a hundred years war, and it consumes most my time and any money I chance to make. The opportunity cost has probably been around a million.

Since this recession is not over, guess I'll go sell pencils.

## Beauty

“There are those things that happen under the skin and are reflected in the eyes and set off the mouth that take all the beauty out of a girl's face.” Mike Hammer.

One of those things is age.

## Been-Scammed.com

- She can accuse you of sexual harassment, cry and lie to win a fat court settlement.
- She can charge you with rape, cry, and lie to send you to prison for decades.
- She can even intimidate your boss into giving her your job.

Think it's time for a change?

Visit [www.been-scammed.com](http://www.been-scammed.com): the Anti-Feminazi and Evolutionarily Correct website. (B.S. is what girls always feed men.)

The site was temporarily set up by me, then a middle-aged American lawyer, who in seeking justice against some Russian mafia members foolishly went for help to the Feminazi-infested American judicial system and the emasculated U.S. Government agencies. There I found only widespread discrimination against men in this modern-day, Feminarchy America.

The site tells that story, which started when I was managing a detective agency in Moscow, Russia. There I fell for a young, pretty, six-foot-one, vat-dyed blonde hair, wolf-eyed Russian girl who used black magic, narcotics, and feminine duplicity to play me for a ticket to America. I finally became suspicious, a little slow for an attorney with an MBA from an Ivy League Business School, and started an investigation using Russian Federal Security Services (F.S.B.), Ministry of Interior, and Russian Military Intelligence (G.R.U.) agents along with other sleuthing techniques that eventually took me through a Minotaur labyrinth of the international Russian sex industry in Moscow, Krasnodar, Cyprus, Mexico City, and New York. Along the way, members of the Chechen Special Islamic Regiment, or Baraev clan, step out of the shadows to threaten me, my informants, and witnesses, but no one violated my rights more than the Feminazi witches in American government institutions and the courts.

I sought justice through a Racketeer Influenced Corrupt Organization (RICO) lawsuit. After all, I was fighting Russian and Chechen mobsters and molls, but because the key defendant was an alien female, the Feminists judges, including Justice Sonia Sotomayor, would have none of it.

*Why didn't the courts rule in your favor in the RICO case?*

Switch the sexes of the Russian mob moll that tripped and drugged me into marriage and me. Imagine I was a girl and my ex-wife an ex-husband who made money for the Russian mob pimping, laundering money, and smuggling drugs. Do you think the courts and federal agencies would have done something then?

### Bigotry

Imagine you just left the Copacabana at 3 am with your buddy; the two of you are going in opposite directions. You try to hail a cab but they keep zooming by even though they are empty, so you turn to your buddy who is white and ask him to hail one. He steps out and the first one by stops. So what do you do with a society like that? Require affirmative action? No. You allow the ownership of bazookas, and the next time a cab doesn't stop, it gets blown into the Hudson—simple.

“Ethnicity” is the superficial classification of Homo Sapiens based on where the majority of their ancestors hung out.

Whenever the influential members of the predominant group in a society allow the members of a disfavored group to exercise power, the members of the disfavored group exercise power so as to wreck revenge against those members of the predominant group who are not influential.

“It always happens when you give these little people power. It goes to their heads like strong drink.” Maggie Smith, *Downton Abbey*.

According to F.B.I. statistics for 2015, Blacks killed 500 Whites and Whites killed 229 Blacks. True, there are more Whites to kill (77% of the population), but Blacks (23%) are killing twice as many people of a different color than Whites. On a proportional basis, Blacks kill 20 Whites to Whites killing three Blacks.

### Biography

Lawyer with experience in civil litigation, investigations, and general corporate matters. You meet the worst kind of people in this profession—other lawyers and judges who are also lawyers.

Managed the private detective agency Kroll Associates in Russia where virtually anyone with money is a criminal—not unlike Wall Street.

After law school, worked as an associate for Cravath, Swaine & Moore. The partners there were more intelligent than me—a pleasant surprise.

Before law school, wrote, field produced, and did investigations for WABC-TV News and Metromedia TV News, now Fox News, in New York City. Surprisingly, most of the people in the media back then were honest.

MBA in finance from Columbia University Business School with honors, yes I understand what caused the Great Recession—fraud, but didn't see it coming.

J.D. from George Washington University with high honors, and yes judges are often arrogant, ignorant of the law, and ideologically corrupt.

Thanks to a trilogy of anti-Feminist cases I brought, I've already had my 15 seconds of fame. I'm satisfied. The trick now is to get a footnote in history.



## Bitch

I don't use that term, it gives girls too much credit, and their heads are already swollen as it is.

## Character Assassination

Think about how girls in high school fight—personal, mean-spirited, and through false verbal attacks against their targets.

The Feminazis are no different. They fight like girls because that is what they are. Even the guys who believe in Feminism try to emulate Feminazi character assassination. Those guys fight like girls because they are too scared to fight like men.

One way to deal with the personal attacks is “I don't use *ad hominems* against you, why do you use them against me?”

If they keep it up, then personally attack them, but be vicious and never, never go on the defense.

Or, just challenge them to a duel. If that doesn't work then challenge them to a fist fight. No go, sue for defamation, but use the courts as the last resort, since they're inept and bias against men.

## Circumcision

Nearly every man born in America will have one of the most sensitive parts of his genitals cut off when an infant, without anesthesia, and the decision will likely have been made by a female—his mother.

Circumcision was started in the early 20th century to prevent masturbation (girls want to reserve that for themselves) and alleged future harm to the health of men that has never been. Without the foreskin, a boy must use lubrication. The foreskin is one of the most sensitive parts of the male genitals. No anesthesia is used during the procedure as the baby boy yells in pain, which increases his heart rate to 200 beats per minute. The U.S. Pediatric association does not endorse the procedure.

“There's no medical reason for having it done, it's painful for days afterward, and there's a possibility of complications.” Prof. Trond Markestad, Norwegian Medical Association.

“The medical community believes circumcision harms the rights of children.” Dr. Rolf Kirschner, Rikshospitalet University Hospital.

The procedure is as absurd as going to the dentist and having your teeth pulled to prevent tooth decay. Mothers, however, keep putting their sons through it.

If girls have a right to control their bodies, then logically, so too do boys, but not in Feminarchy America.

## Civil Disobedience

“If we desire respect for the law, we must first make the law respectable.” Louis D. Brandeis.

“Civil disobedience is not our problem. Our problem is civil obedience. Our problem is that people all over the world have obeyed the dictates of leaders . . . and millions have been

killed because of this obedience. . . . Our problem is that people are obedient all over the world in the face of poverty, starvation, stupidity, war, and cruelty. Our problem is that people are obedient while the jails are full of petty thieves . . . (and) the grand thieves are running the country. That's our problem." Howard Zinn

Most men are utterly helpless to affect public issues by the orthodox channels. They cannot depend on the courts to protect their rights for the judiciary has not shown an independence from the biases of the Feminists. "The traditional methods of dissent, the use of public platforms and electoral process [are] insufficient." Howard Zinn.

"Civil disobedience is the organized expression of revolt against existing evils . . . . The deliberate violation of law for a vital social purpose. It becomes not only justifiable but necessary when [] fundamental human right[s] [are] at stake, and when legal channels are inadequate for securing [those] right[s]." Howard Zinn.

"The purpose of civil disobedience is to communicate to others . . . . [And] violence is an important factor in change." Howard Zinn.

Don't underestimate the influence of violence.

Civil disobedience is resistance through self-education and physical force.

The frustrations of powerlessness have led some men to the conviction that there is now no effective alternative to violence as a means of achieving redress of grievances. "Government and its laws are not scared. They are not means to the ends of life, liberty, and happiness." Howard Zinn.

The breaking of human law in the name of science, militant individualism, and warfare against institutions are demanded by a higher law of justice and morality.

"In a time of immoral laws, patriotism looks like treason." John Brown

U.S. institutions allow the raising of an issue but not the resolving of it.

"When the public fails in its duty, private men must take its place." Ralph Waldo Emerson.

When government does violence to the rights of men, men are justified to do violence to government and its supporters.

As has occurred previously in America, it is now necessary to go outside the system's channels. Men are now the only dependable defenders of their own liberty—not the state.

"No man could have self-respect who would not fight for freedom." John Brown.

## Color

The only difference between a black guy and white guy, other than his ability to play basketball, is that the black guy's skin absorbs more of the visible electromagnetic spectrum than the white guy's. The reason for that is more of the black guy's ancestors lived in tropical climates.

When the visible electromagnetic spectrum strikes darker colors, more of it is absorbed than when it strikes lighter ones. Or, saying the same thing a different way, less visible light is reflected from dark colors and more from light colors. The difference in skin absorption and reflection depends simply on the geographical location of where most of a person's ancestors lived. It's called adapting to ones' environment. In tropical climates, the sun's rays are more direct requiring a darker pigmentation to protect against ultra violet waves. In temperate climates, a light skin is required to absorb vitamin D from the sun.

This scientific reality, unknown for most of mankind's history, is what gave rise to the terminology: black, white, African-American, Euro-American. The reason for the differing skin absorptions or reflections is not different races, as many people ignorantly believe. Anthropologically and genetically there are no such things as different hominid races on the planet today. The only hominid race is homo sapiens, and the last time there were more than one was over 40,000 years ago before the Neanderthals died out. Although sometimes in court, I wonder if all of them really went extinct. Despite the modern teachings of science, many people, black and white, see others as a breed apart, as a different race, and, therefore, as inferior or evil, superior or good. Out of this stupidity has grown much ill will among people of different skin colors.

African-Am, Euro-Am, Asian-Am, Native-Am all infer a difference; whereas, black, white, brown, red all infer a distinction—a distinction without a difference. Color is superficial. There's no difference between a red Ferrari and a blue Ferrari—both are Ferraris. Whether you want to drive around in a red or blue one has nothing to do with the Ferrari but you. Same with girls, if there's a black one and a white one and both are equally good looking to me—I'll choose the black one. That's just a matter of taste. It doesn't tell me anything about the girls.

I'm an overly educated white guy and given the garbage I've had to deal with, I can't imagine what blacks have had to put up with. I'm just surprised they aren't all Nat Turners.

It's difficult to generalize about black and white cultures. Blacks seem more open minded, more tolerant, and they call a ho, a ho.

### Compassion

The so-called compassionate Feminists and their male sycophants don't give a damn, don't care a whit for anyone but themselves. They are so full of self-righteous justification that they will slaughter children to prove their devotion.

Females know about compassion, but only when it's directed toward them. They genetically understand how to take advantage of a man's decency. Enough of these phony female hard-luck stories meant to manipulate a guy's compassion. "Mister, I met a man once when I was a kid, it always began." When it comes to females, mercy is not a quality that serves men well.

Men are by far the more compassionate. 74% of the females survived the Titanic but only 20% of the men. If females were the compassionate sex, the numbers would have been reversed. Of course, to a Feminist, none of the men should have survived.

Social Security, Medicare, Medicaid, and welfare programs—all were passed by largely male legislators and all have a majority of female beneficiaries.

Can you think of a single Congress lady who has pushed for funding to help boys who are falling behind in school? Do you know of any female-sponsored resolution that sympathized with the injustice done dads who are barred from seeing their kids? Can you name a law for prostate cancer research that was sponsored by a female? Sen. Ted Kennedy was the first to seize on the idea of championing breast cancer research, probably to increase his chances of fondling such glands.

I've played a few sports in my life and suffered my share of injuries. But whenever I was hobbling around on crutches or with a cane, never once, not once, did a girl give me her seat or move so I could pass.

Many females and all Feminazis have no concern for the thousands of men who die every year in gold and diamond mines as long as the ladies get their diamond and gold jewelry.

Let's say both husband and wife work. Wife gets in a car accident and is laid up for a while. Husband's primary concern is that she is okay and gets well. Husband gets into accident and is laid up. Wife's primary concern is the impact on the loss of income and cohabitation on her. So in a sense, husband and wife are equal: they both are primarily concerned about the wife.

### Competition

Feminazis delusionally overlook the fact that they can only compete with men in tasks that Mother Nature made men for when men are operating under a handicap.

In order to allow female golfer Michelle Wie to compete in the U.S. Amateur Public Links, a male golf tournament, Wie got to tie-off closer to the hole than the guys.

### Corruption

In an ideologically corrupt society, it makes no sense to obey the laws that protect the corrupt.

### Courage

Everyone has to make the choice between what is right and what is easy.

Everybody's scared, but most people are really scared.

Being afraid of lots of things doesn't justify violating people's rights because of one's fears.

"Courage is doing what you are afraid to do. You don't need courage unless you are afraid." Eddie Richenbacher.

Fear of danger is a thousand times more terrifying than danger itself.

The brave may not live forever, but the cowardly never live.

The dragon is not out there but inside the individual, and its size and ferocity depends on the person's upbringing and will.

To surrender courage would be to lose faith in a cause.

"And while they're making you sweat, remember—you've helped the next fella." Inherit the Wind, Act III, Henry Drummond.

It's not intelligence or talent that makes the difference but guts and luck.

Tiredness is often a disguise for fear.

Politicians aren't exactly known for their courage.

For me, fighting the Feminazis doesn't take courage—it's fun. Just wish I had more money to wage this war.

"Fierce as a gun-lock, cool as a sword, John Brown made no apologies, and yielded no triumph to his enemies."

### Crazy

In an insane society, to be sane, you have to be crazy.

Just think, some years ago, a lady who had recently been the mayor of a small town in Alaska might have ended up a heartbeat away from nuclear war, and Wall Street moguls were rewarded for being crooks—now that's nuts.

One favorite Feminazi attack is to accuse a guy of mental instability to which one response is, "Are you a psychologist? Have we met before? Then you'll excuse me for not giving your psychological analysis any credence."

Membership in a dissident minority is not crazy.

### Credit Card Companies

Credit card companies are loan sharks. Back when men were men, their officers would have been locked up with organized crime. But today when defrauders on Wall Street are rewarded for stealing people's money, loan sharking is legal, if you're a bank.

### Criticism

Not every old fashion idea is wrong.

Whenever the establishment of the day violates the rights of a group, and that group fights back, the establishment always mocks them in the hope they will give up.

People who fight for their rights are always called names by those who benefit from violating people's rights or those too scared to fight for their own rights.

If they can't love you, they might as well hate you.

Why should a man care what the Feminazis, their sycophants, their appeasers, and the opportunists say? They are the enemies of every guy who still has a spine left.

Judge Judy once claimed on a Fox news show that my motivation in bringing anti-Feminist cases was for 15 minutes of fame. 15 minutes! I thought it was only 15 seconds! If I had known that, I would have brought the suits a long time ago. Of course, Judge Judy is pretty much of a joke. "Judge Judy [is] a caricature of a judge," a former U.S. Attorney for the Eastern District of New York in the 1990s said.

There's a lot of androgynies out there—guys who are scared of girls, so when they come across a guy who's not, they verbally attack him. Probably because it makes them realize they are trying to wear skirts.

Scoundrels always resort to name calling and personal attacks because they have no alternative.

I've been called on the air or in court: rapist, gay, misogynist, moron, murderer, jerk, impotent, pervert, loser, and malcontent—that last one is correct.

If a Feminazi talk show host gets nasty, simply respond, "You're nothing but a propagandist, a female Joseph Goebbels, a Leni Riefenstahl." That'll tick her off.

To other uncivil critics, say "Go back to your Feminazi, psychotropic, genderless hell." "You're a she-male; you look like a girl but try to act like a guy." "What good is truth to you? Addicted to illusion."—Goethe's *Faust*. "You're wrong, but that's okay; it's just your ignorance."

I'm uncivil to anyone who's uncivil to me. If they don't like it, then they shouldn't act uncivil in the first place.

"[C]ivility is not a sign of weakness, and sincerity is always subject to proof." JFK.

Since no publicity outside of an indictment is bad publicity, people can say whatever they want about me, so long that it's about me.

*You're anti-Feminist!*

It depends on how you define it.

I'm also anti-communist, anti-nazi, anti-klan, and anti-anybody who tries to violate my rights—so what.

*Obie, Anthony and Smeagol, a.k.a. Jimmy Norton*

Had I known they broadcast from a high school boy's room, I would have skipped the show.

I'll say one thing for those guys. They're the Feminists best argument for re-engineering men through lobotomies.

Those three should move to Alaska. I hear they need more girls or at least guys who act like girls.

Norton's got a foul mouth, since he uses his tongue to clean toilets for extra cash.

Norton thinks blacks aren't discriminated against. He should take out the dress and high heels he probably keeps in his closet and stumble out of a nightclub at three in the morning. Cabbies will play bumper cars just to give him a ride. Then try the same with his Al Jolson black face, which he probably also has. No way is a taxi stopping for him.

People can make jokes about me if the purpose is to get a laugh and it's not malicious. I do that myself. But Smeagol (Norton) was malicious; he just wanted to psychologically destroy me because I disagreed with him. Okay, I thought, let's see if he has any guts to back up his words and I challenged him to a duel—he declined; so I challenged him to a fist fight—he declined as do all loud-mouth cowards. So I sued; he couldn't decline that.

“Show me a shouter, and I'll show you an also-ran, a might have been, an almost-was.”  
Inherit the Wind, Act III, Reporter.

## Culture

In 21<sup>st</sup> century America, the nobler sentiments of humans are only found in 20<sup>th</sup> century movies.

## Death

A life ends well only while fighting.

## Debtors' Prisons

The Medieval practice of debtors' prisons is alive and well in America when it comes to locking up men over nonpayment of child support. So is the illogic. If a guy is in jail, how is he supposed to make money to pay child support? Maybe Feminarchy America is not so much concerned with children as it is with feminine revenge against men.

When the non-custodial parent, usually the husband, is unable to pay the amount set by a court for child support, he will still be imprisoned even though he may not have the actual means to pay it.

A Lockheed employee was held captive in Iraq for five months. Upon his return to North Carolina, he was arrested for non-payment of \$1,425 in child support that accrued while he was a hostage.

Cocaine dealers—half of whom ironically grew-up fatherless, serve 20 days out of 30-day jail sentences; a father in support arrears serves the full 30.

According to the Urban Institute, more than 19 in 20 non-custodial parents who suffer substantial income drops cannot get courts to reduce their child support payments. In such cases, the amounts owed mount quickly, as do interest and penalties.

Courts consistently refuse to lower child support fees when the father's income drops. Known as the *Bradley Amendment*, this law forbids any reduction in child support arrears, even if the father is disabled.

The *Bradley Amendment* takes America back to the cruel old days of debtors' prisons. It requires that a child-support debt cannot be retroactively reduced or forgiven, and states enforce this law no matter what the change in a father's income, no matter if he is sent to war, and no matter if he is ever allowed to see his children.

Military reservists typically assume a sizeable pay cut when they are transferred into military life. But child support is based on their civilian salaries and the *Bradley Amendment* effectively blocks readjustment of that debt.

A U.S. Government Accounting Office survey of custodial mothers who were not receiving the support they were owed found that two-thirds of those fathers who did not pay their child support failed to do so because they were indigent.

Data from the Federal Office of Child Support Enforcement shows that two-thirds of those who owe child support nationwide earned less than \$10,000 in the previous year.

States put out "wanted parents" lists of those who fail to pay child support. The lists are almost exclusively comprised of poor and working class men who do low wage and often seasonal work, and who owe fantastic sums of money that they could never hope to pay off. The lists are similar to newspapers running ads with photos of bank robbery suspects. It is illustrative of the hysteria over child support that these types of ads are reserved for two groups of people—violent criminals and low-income dads.

If a man remarries, his new wife's income can be used as proof that the man can pay child support. If the ex-wife (the mother) remarries, however, not a cent of her new husband's earnings can be used to show that child support should be reduced.

The U.S. Census Bureau has reported that fathers with joint custody pay 90.2% of all child support ordered, fathers with limited visitation rights pay 79.1%, and 44.5% of those fathers with no visitation rights still financially support their children. Additionally,

30% of custodial mothers not receiving child support have never asked for or do not want child support;

25% of custodial mothers do not receive child support because the father is unable to pay;

20% of custodial mothers not receiving child support have made other financial arrangements with the father;

11% of custodial mothers not receiving child support do not have a child support order; and

of ten million custodial mothers only 7% (one out of fourteen) do not receive child support because of a guy refusing to pay.

### Decline and Fall of Empires

British officer, Sir John Glubb, wrote a pamphlet on the rise and fall of empires. A sure sign of an empire's decline and impending fall is the rise of Feminism.

In sociologist Carl Wilson's *Our Dance Has Turned to Death*, he traces the seven stages of societies in decline. Near the end, the country reaches Stage Five where the affection between husbands and wives is replaced by suspicion and hostility. Stage Six is marked by selfish individualism that fragments society into warring factions. Sound familiar?

### Defamation Lawsuits

For a lawyer, when my opponents are reduced to calling me names—that's the highest form of compliment. Doesn't mean I won't sue them, which is fun and really ticks-off the ones being sued.

Lots of ignorant, uneducated, biased, brain-dead bureaucrats and corporate employees make judgments about a person's character, and those judgments are supposed to be accepted as definitive when these bozos don't even have a PhD. in psychology? I don't think so.

I've brought a few defamation cases because I wasn't going to put up with any bureaucrat, government or corporate, or low-life lawyer trying to push me around by publishing for the general public their intentional falsehoods about me.

The dumber lawyers and judges resort to personal attacks in the belief that their girl-like tactic of name-calling will deter someone from fighting for his rights.

A sure way to put a stop to such defamations is to sue the jerks. The odds of winning are slim, especially if you are a public figure, even a minor one, but it'll cost them a ton of money in legal fees. Since I'm a lawyer, it only costs me the money to file the papers.

You don't have to win a case to win a case.

### Differences Between the Sexes

“Man's love is of man's life a thing apart,  
‘Tis woman's whole existence.” Lord Byron  
Guys need girls in order to party and that's it.

Girls, however, need guys not just for partying but security, ego, and for someone to boss around.

A female is born, a man must become.

Girls can't keep their nails clean doing what men do.

Girl think: “What's mine is mine, and what's his is mine.” For her, it's about “me, myself, and I.”

Most females are takers, isolated from the pains of failure, so when failure comes, they blame men, not themselves.



While females experience physical pain more intensely than men, men experience emotional pain more strongly. That's why to a man, a girl's tongue is her gun, and for a female, a slap upside the head hurts more than a guy assumes.

Scientists at Bath University have found that men and females feel pain in different ways, with men focusing on how to get through it as quickly as possible, and females becoming so consumed with their emotional response to an injury that they feel the pain more intensely.

As for physical differences between the sexes, they don't end with the skeletal-muscular system, but include the brain.

The correlation between brain region size in adults and sex steroid action in utero show that some sex differences in cognitive function do not result from cultural influences or the hormonal changes associated with puberty—they are there from birth.

Meanwhile at puberty, the increased amounts of testosterone in men accounts for the onset of different physical and mental developments, not environmental factors. High-level intellectual activity is related to testosterone.

The existence of widespread anatomical disparities between males and females and the difference in sex on many areas of cognition and behavior, including memory, emotion, vision, hearing, the processing of faces, and the brain's response to stress hormones means the brains of guys and girls work differently.

The prevalence of depression among 13- to 17-year-old boys is 4.3%; among girls of the same age group, it is 12.4%. National Institute of Mental Health

Females are more capable of controlling their emotional reactions. A study for the Yorkshire Building Society revealed that females were better than men at dealing with all the stages of a break-up, 61 per cent saying that, in the first two years after a divorce, they were happier than before the relationship ended. 51 per cent of men felt the same way.

The article, *Love, Sex and the Male Brain*, by Dr. Louann Brizendine, a member of the American Board of Psychiatry and Neurology, the National Board of Medical Examiners, and a clinical professor of psychiatry at the University of California, San Francisco, states:

- brain differences make men more alert than women to potential threats;
- the “I feel what you feel part of the brain”—mirror-neuron system—is larger and more active in the female brain, so females can naturally get in sync with others' emotions by reading facial expressions, interpreting tone of voice and other nonverbal emotional cues;
- men have stronger emotional reactions than females;
- as men age, testosterone goes down, which can cause tiredness, irritability, and depression;
- older male brains are more sensitive to loneliness, sixty percent of divorces in couples over the age of 50 are initiated by women, leaving their husbands shell-shocked and devastated; and
- because of the way their brains are wired, men use their analytical brain structures, not their emotional ones, to find solutions.

Other experts say the male brain is wired to be systematic and analytical, appreciative of order and detail. Men have a better ability to follow a logical thread while female brains are better tuned to emotions.

British research and a University of Western Ontario psychology study show that men have higher IQs than females by four to five points, which may explain why chess grandmasters and geniuses are more likely to be male.

So the “glass ceiling” is probably due to inferior intelligence and logic in girls, rather than discrimination or lack of opportunity.

Until late adolescence, females have the advantage over males because they mature faster, which masks the underlying difference in IQ. Men have larger brains even when you take into account their larger body size. That means there are more neurons, which probably gives guys an advantage in processing information. The difference may date back to the Stone Age, when females sought out men who were more intelligent than them in a bid to pass on the best genes to their children.

Female brains, however, have more connections between the two sides of the brain (probably to handle all the gibberish that is going back and forth). The increased connections between the logical and emotional sides of their brains lead to the emotional clouding of girls’ logical reasoning. For guys, only one part of their brains becomes active when performing most tasks while in females numerous parts of their brains become active. This may vindicate the old assertion that females are scatterbrained, since the research confirms the wisdom born of millennia of observation by millions of individuals. For every million miles driven, females get into more crashes.

Males average higher on tests of “spatial ability” and females higher on verbal tests. In men, parts of the parietal cortex, which is involved in space perception, are bigger than in females. Females, however, possess a greater density of neurons in parts of the temporal lobe cortex associated with language processing and comprehension. The boost in density in the female auditory cortex of the temporal lobe relates to their enhanced performance on tests of verbal fluency.

In evolutionary terms, females are designed to be sociable because they were the ones socializing the children. They have communication skills that men don’t have, which allow them to talk through their feelings and be comforted by their friends and family. Girls need more verbal reassurance than men.

The amygdale is larger in men than in females and may explain why anxiety disorders are far more prevalent in girls than boys.

A study by Mirko Diksic and his colleagues at McGill University showed that serotonin production was a remarkable 52 percent higher on average in men than in females, which might help clarify why women are more prone to depression and drug addiction to alleviate that depression. Men also learn better under stress than females.

“After almost 40 years of gender neutral pronouns, it is still men who are more likely than women to run for political office, start businesses, file for patents, tell jokes, write editorials, conduct orchestras, and blow things up. Males succeed and fail more spectacularly than females: More males are Nobel laureates and CEOs. But more males are also in maximum security prisons. Males commit most acts of wanton violence, but it takes other men to stop them.” *Oh, Come On, Men Aren’t Finished*, Christine Sommer.

“We sleep soundly in our beds only because rough men stand ready in the night to visit violence on those who would do us harm.” Winston Churchill.

Men are more competitive and adventuresome. Females shun risk to a greater extent and they perceive risk more readily.

Masculinity is a quality that causes individuals to stand for something.

Men tend to be more utilitarian, objective, unsentimental and tough-minded.

Girls are more likely to report that talking made them feel cared for and understood.

Boys, overall, found it to be a tedious waste of time.

Men are also far more likely than females to romantically fall head over heels because they will follow their instinct to pursue a girl they find attractive.

Females desire to make a nest more than men, since they need a man's help, they nag one into compliance. As such, men don't want to go home from work because they don't want to hear their wives carping.

It's more often men who want to make the rules, and women who try to bend them.

In the great majority of military specialties, females can't and don't meet the male standards. The institutionally self-confident Marine Corps doesn't mix girls and guys in its basic training because the girls can't meet the standards required for the guys.

The typical girl in her twenties or thirties has the aerobic capacity of a 50-year-old man.

Most females can't heave a grenade beyond its 35-meter burst radius.

Females in training suffer 2-3 times more stress fractures, back sprains, and broken ankles.

At the Marine Corps Officer Candidate School in Quantico, Virginia, female candidates wash out three times more often than guys.

When the 1990 Gulf War started, 40,000 females were ordered to report for duty at which time the ladies began to rediscover their inner-mom. Long-barren females became pregnant, and military mothers were suddenly the reincarnation of Madonna-with-child.

When a female pilot's jet crashed and burned on the USS Abraham Lincoln because she approached the flight deck at too sharp an angle—an error she had committed twice before, Navy officials tried to pin her death on “engine failure.”

## Discrimination

Whenever one group believes it is better than another, the result is always the same—persecution.

For the past 40 years, this society has given girls preferential treatment based on the evolutionarily incorrect belief that they deserve it.

Today, this culture believes that whatever harm is done men—they deserved it. Discrimination against men has gained a dangerous veneer of authenticity from the Feminists.

In America, local, state, and the federal governments have accepted the Feminist lie of the evil male and the supposed necessity for massive government action against him. Canada's former justice minister Martin Cauchon said, “Men have no rights, only responsibilities.”

Whenever a girl does worst than a guy at some task, it's “gender bias.” But when she does better, it's proof of her innate superiority.

The U.S. Supreme Court has made rulings that females deserve preferential treatment for past invidious, economic discrimination. Such a rationale no longer makes sense, if it ever did. Today, females comprise over 50% of the work force, control over 50% of the wealth, and earn more on a per unit of time basis, and each statistic is increasing at a faster rate than for men.

The U.S. Supreme Court erred in its reliance on past economic disparities by failing to balance off the invidious and harmful discriminations that have always existed in this society against men. For example, 58,209 American male soldiers died in Viet Nam but only eight (8) American military females. Over 300,000 men were injured, and since the end of that war, more than 58,000 who served committed suicide. It's rather difficult to pursue economic well being when one is psychologically traumatized, physically maimed, or dead.

Unlike females, men do not have hundreds of college male studies departments, research institutes, policy centers, and lobby groups working tirelessly to promote their causes.

There are few if any conferences, petitions, workshops, congressional hearings, or presidential councils to help men close the education gap, the health care gap, the insurance gap, the job-loss gap, and the death gap.

We are living in the anti-male age, where men are the new scapegoats for all of society's evils even though men have willingly carried the most dangerous and onerous roles in society to the primary benefit of females.

In the 25 most dangerous occupations in America, men make up 90% of the workers. It's called the "Tombstone Basement." (You don't hear the Feminists whining to get in there.) Over all occupations, guys suffer 95% of the job related deaths. In order to make up for such disadvantages, guys should receive breaks on medical insurance and health care. And more of the jobs above the "glass ceiling" should remain with men because of the greater chance of them ending up in the Tombstone Basement. Given a baby boy and baby girl born on the same day, the boy is nine times more likely to end up in the "Tombstone Basement."

If girls receive a break because they are in a less advantageous position, then guys deserve a break when they are in a less advantageous position.

Either treat the two groups the same on all matters, or differently depending on the situation and fundamental differences between the sexes as shown by science—not ideology.

Feminism gives discrimination against men a dangerous veneer of acceptability.

### *Stereotyping*

Whenever one group wishes to dehumanize and sanction conquest, domination, or destruction of another group, they revert to a standard repertoire of images and metaphors that portray the enemy as aggressors, barbarians, liars, emotionless automatons, sadists, greedy, beastly, and conspiratorial.

In the 1800s, slavers relied on polygenesis and ethnographic sciences just as Feminazis today rely on various pseudo sciences voodooed up by college Women's Studies programs to claim that men are a lesser life form.

In America, the male stereotype is that men are the inventors of war, worshipers of destructive gods, death worshippers, genetically violent, barbarians, Neanderthals, genetic rapists, genetic murderers, responsible for pollution, genetic war mongers, and responsible for all injustices because they dominate females.

Females, however, are genetically peaceful, empathic, peaceful, and egalitarian.

The Feminists accuse men of raping the Earth. But go to any mall and watch the frenzied buying of the latest fashions, or any thrift store to count the discarded items of no longer stylish appliances and female clothes—all fruits of raping the earth and all demanded by females.

The Feminazis rationalize any harmful conduct of females by claiming they are an oppressed class. If that were so oppressed, then nearly half of the rich would not be females, and they would not have greater access to comfort and health care or live longer than their oppressors.

Men today live under the worst stigma that exists in society. If they do anything to protest their lot in life, or treatment under the law, they are summarily classified as "whiners," and told to "get a life," get back to work, or cursed with obloquies. To make matters worse,

because there are some men in positions of power, the rest are constantly having that thrown in their faces, and having that as the standard by which they are judged.

### *Crime*

When a man commits a criminal offence, he gets a prison sentence. When a female commits the same offence, she gets therapy.

Men are 20 times more likely to be imprisoned, but don't commit 20 times more crimes than females.

Guys serve an average of 17 years for murder, girls 7 years.

If a female teacher has sex with one of her students, she will get 1-3 years, assuming she goes to jail at all. A man gets 15-20, even though female students are emotionally more mature than male students of the same age.

Men are more likely to be wrongfully arrested and wrongfully imprisoned.

This society allows females to reserve for themselves the right to commit any crime: to lie, cheat, and defraud in order to get what they want but don't deserve.

Females can, with impunity, engage in maternity fraud (lying about their fertility or use of birth control) and paternity fraud (lying about a child's real father—assuming they know which one).

Rarely in America or other westernized countries are females held fully accountable for sexual assault, child abuse, or for false accusations of physical violence by a man.

When females falsely accuse men of rape and domestic violence, thereby committing the felony of perjury, they are virtually never prosecuted.

Rape shield laws prohibit the use of evidence of the nefarious activities by a girl, such as working as a prostitute, but nearly everything about the accused, usually a man, is bandied about in court.

Judge to prostitute, "So when did you realize you were raped?" Prostitute, wiping away tears: "When the check bounced!" Judge, "Guilty!"

If a person accused of murder can use as a defense that the dead person had a tendency to violence, then a guy accused of rape should be able to show that the girl was a whore.

Females account for one-third of illegal drug use but only 15% of those arrested for drugs are female.

Females commit the majority of child abuse, elder abuse, partner violence, and most child murders—not counting abortions.

Violent females draw their Get-Out-of-Jail-Free card by claiming PMS, "battered woman's syndrome," or "postpartum depression."

The Feminazis have so perverted this society that they can now murder incipient human beings, newborns, children, boyfriends, and husbands with little or no punishment. I can't get away with murdering Feminists and claim it's because of PMS—persecuted male syndrome, hmmm, I wonder...?

When a man is arrested for killing his child, the community immediately labels him a monster and is ready to lynch him before he even gets to trial. But when a female kills her own flesh and blood, American opinion typically wonders what kind of difficult circumstances or mental anguish she must have endured from her husband before snapping.

If a male kills his spouse or girlfriend, he's a brute who should be forever locked away, but, if a female does the same, she must have been abused and suffering from "battered bimbo

syndrome.” One wife shot-gunned her preacher husband in the back while he slept and was freed after serving only 210 days because of some bogus psychological syndrome. Can you imagine what would happen to a guy that shotgun a priestess?

Taken together, the twelve female-only defenses allow almost any female to take it upon herself to exercise the death penalty. The government is not allowed to take it upon itself to kill someone first and declare later that the deceased deserved it—only a female can do that to a man.

People are supposed to be treated according to how they behave not who they are.

### *Employment*

The unemployment rate for men is 2.7% higher than for females. *Chicago Tribune*, September 28, 2009.

The New York Times has reported that “82 percent of the job losses have befallen men,” since the financial collapse of 2008.

For every female who is discouraged from working, there is a man forced by social convention to work; and for every bored and unfulfilled female, there is a man burdened with the responsibility that only a primary wage-earner knows.

80 to 90% of the homeless are men.

### *Health*

At birth, boys are six weeks behind girls in maturation.

Infant mortality is 23% higher in boys than girls.

More males than females die from all three major categories of death: communicable diseases, non-communicable diseases, and injuries. World Health Organization.

“We’ve got men dying at higher rates of just about every disease, and we don’t know why,” Dr. Demetrius J. Porche, Associate Dean, Louisiana State University’s Health Sciences Center School of Nursing in New Orleans.

According to Dr. William Pollack of the Harvard Medical School Center for Men, the general health of American males is in a state of serious crisis. Men spend more and more time at work, as compared to females, and many of their jobs are more demanding and dangerous.

American men are 4 times more likely to commit suicide, National Institute for Mental Health—it must be the American females. Boys commit 86 percent of all adolescent suicides.

Worldwide, men are three times more likely to commit suicide than females. China is the only country where men and females kill themselves in about equal numbers.

In 1999, females made up 62% of the subjects in research programs sponsored by the National Institutes of Health.

According to the National Institutes of Health, recent government grants for studying physical and mental health problems unique to females totaled \$3,400 million while the amount of grants for male health problems was only \$340 million.

There is no Men’s Health Initiative and no Office on Men’s Health in the federal government, but there is a female health initiative and a U.S. Government Office on Women’s Health.

In the United Kingdom, it is estimated that eight times as much money is spent on female health than men’s.

Females incur stress fractures, sprains, and strains more frequently than men.

Men are three times more likely to die in accidents, 13 times more likely to be killed at work, and three times more likely to be murdered.

End of life care is the most expensive and females survive to consume more of it. In addition, females visit doctors more often, so they should pay for these costs—not the other members of the insurance pool.

Under Obama Care:

- Girls are provided well-care visits without deductibles, co-pays, or out of pocket costs in order to obtain recommended preventive services. Guys have to pay.
- Breast cancer screening is fully covered without deductibles, co-pays, or out of pocket costs. Prostate cancer screening requires the guys to pay.
- Girls get all FDA approved contraceptives and sterilization procedures free. Guys have to pay.
- Many more Federal health offices will be set up that deal with girl specific problems. None for men.

### *Hollywood*

The Orwellian doublethink of Hollywood and the media depict females as tough, brawny, brainy, independent, and beautiful while at the same time victimized damsels in distress.

Men are depicted as buffoons and evil.

### *Government*

#### *Executive Branch:*

Men pay more of the taxes than females but receive less in benefits from government. For example, more tax dollars are spent on female health problems.

Men are required to register for the draft, or be penalized by the denial of government jobs and guaranteed student loans.

When the draft is again used to provide cannon fodder for another war—and it will—men, not girls, will be drafted to fight and die, since guys are considered the disposable sex.

After a man gives up two or more years of his life to the draft, he will then have to compete for jobs with females who have a number of years in seniority over him after his involuntary absence from the job market.

Female soldiers receive the same pay as male soldiers but suffer fewer deaths proportionally.

There are over 250 federal commissions for females but only two for males.

#### *Legislative:*

The Violence Against Women's Act and Family Violence Prevention and Services Act pump over a billion dollars a year into Feminazi, anti-male activities every year that result in the massive violation of the civil rights of men. *See below Violence Against Women's Act.*

#### *Courts:*

“[I]n times of repression, when interests with powerful spokes[persons] generate

symbolic pogroms against nonconformists, the federal judiciary ... has special responsibilities to prevent an erosion of the individual's constitutional rights." *Younger v. Harris*, 401 U.S. 37, 58 (1971)(Mr. Justice Douglas dissenting).

The stories are always the same: she took his house, his car, and his kids. She accused him of physical abuse and the courts didn't even ask for evidence. She made more money than him, and he still had to pay hidden alimony that she used to buy gas to drive to clubs offering Ladies Nights where she got in free or drank for free.

Females receive preferential and special treatment in divorce court, child custody court, and criminal courts because they all give the testimony of females more weight than that of guys.

Adulteress wives receive child support from their former husbands as a reward for cheating even when DNA proves the ex-wife a slut. Men are even made to pay child support to a female they never met for children they never fathered.

When fathers protest their treatment by the courts that consider them merely walking ATM machines, they're denigrated as "deadbeat dads."

In my own divorce, I had this lesbian judge lusting to stick her face between my ex-wife's legs and jealous of me because I had. Not much chance for justice there.

### *Private Industry*

Many businesses provide discount promotions for ladies but not guys.

A recent United Nations report, *Trafficking in Persons: Global Patterns*, noted, "it is men especially who might be expected to be trafficked for forced labor purposes. In many countries, the laws relevant to human trafficking are restricted in their application solely to women.... In addition, many service providers limit their support and protection only to female and child victims. Thus, exploitation through forced labor is often quite unlikely to come to the attention of those dealing with victims."

Men are the majority of persons trafficked into forced labor.

Only men are not permitted to sit next to unaccompanied minors on airplanes.

Men pay more for car insurance.

As of April 11, 2011, in the U.S., 9.3% of guys over 16 were unemployed while only 8.3% of girls were unemployed.

### Divorce

The divorce machinery has become the most predatory and repressive sector of government today and is the greatest threat to constitutional freedoms.

The fundamental constitutional right to make marital and family decisions has been compromised by family courts and vast, federally funded social services bureaucracies that wield what amount to police powers.

The advent of "no-fault" divorce has given rise to a system that strips fathers of their children, accelerates the breakdown of families, and makes a mockery of the marital contract.

Divorces initiated by females climbed to more than 70% when no-fault divorce was introduced, according to Margaret Brinig of the University of Iowa and Douglas Allen of Simon Fraser University. These divorce prone females are invariably "entitled" to child custody, child support, alimony, and the house, so mothers "are more likely to instigate separation, despite evidence that many divorces harm children."



The entire structure of American marriage and divorce is geared to financially supporting faithless females. Men are 4 times more likely to lose their homes. One million American men are preemptively ordered out of their homes each year, even when no physical abuse is even alleged. Men now make up 80% of the homeless.

85% of divorce-related abuse allegations are manufactured by females (or urged upon them by their lawyers) to gain sole custody. Courts believe a female over a man, just because she is the mother. Many females also pressure and brainwash children into saying their fathers were abusers.

Expectation of sole custody is the main reason a large number of divorce cases are initiated by women. Men are 5 times more likely to lose their children when families break down.

According to the Children's Rights Council, a Washington-based advocacy group, more than five million American children each year have their access to their non-custodial parents interfered with or blocked by custodial parents. 90% of custodial parents are the mothers.

No evidence exists that nearly half of American children were voluntarily abandoned by their own fathers. Feminist organizations and writers have propagated the myth that females are victims of an oppressive patriarchal society and that marriage is an inherently abusive institution.

Numerous studies have concluded that children under shared parenting do significantly better on all adjustment measures than those in sole custody. Contrary to the claims of Feminazi consultants to family courts, peer-review data shows that over time shared parenting decreases parental conflict, increases co-operation, and boosts support compliance. By 85 percent to 15 percent, a ballot initiative in Massachusetts in 2005 approved equal legal and physical custody of children whose parents are divorced.

A father shouldn't have to fight a biased legal system so he can stay involved in the lives of his kids. Solving many of America's most vexing social problems—delinquency, drug abuse, teenage pregnancy—requires a recognition of the essential role of fathers in promoting safe and stable families.

Absence of a father is the single biggest predictor of criminality for boys and low self-esteem for girls.

Children from a fatherless home are 5 times more likely to commit suicide, 32 times more likely to run away, 20 times more likely to have behavioral disorders, 9 times more likely to drop out of high school, 20 times more likely to end up in prison, and 10 times more likely to abuse chemical substances.

71% of teenage pregnancies happen to girls who reside in fatherless homes.

63% of youth suicides are from fatherless homes, 90% of all homeless and runaway children are from fatherless homes. U.S. Dept. Health and Human Services, Bureau of the Census.

85% of all children that exhibit behavioral disorders come from fatherless homes. Center for Disease Control.

71% of all high school dropouts come from fatherless homes. *National Principals Association Report on the State of High Schools*.

75% of all adolescent patients in chemical abuse centers come from fatherless homes. *Rainbows For All God's Children*.

70% of juveniles in state-operated institutions come from fatherless homes. U.S. Dept. of Justice, *Special Report*, Sept 1988.

Many children end up being raised by chemical-abusing mothers who are far more likely to abuse or neglect them.

### Domestic Disputes, Family Fighting, a.k.a. Domestic “Violence”

True Equality Network spent almost five years in courthouses interviewing over 15,000 female plaintiffs in domestic violence cases just before they entered the courtroom. The overwhelming number of those interviewed did not attempt to mask the real reasons they filed a domestic violence claim: control, money, and revenge—for everything you could possibly imagine, everything except acts of domestic violence.

Protecting victims and punishing violators are laudable goals and may be the founding principle of civilization—but to do so require the truth.

Feminists have substituted political ideology for facts and the scientific method.

Like the cross to the vampire, science has always threatened the domestic violence industrial complex, its twisted worldview, its fear and loathing of men, and its appetite for government funding.

“The term violence, if undefined, can mean anything [a person] conjures up in [her] mind.” Howard Zinn.

Girls are over twice as likely to perpetrated violence against their boyfriends or husband. *Partner Abuse State of Knowledge Project*, 2013.

#### *Guy v. Girl*

“Violence” under the law once meant the use of physical force that caused injury. Not something that a female conniving for some advantage says it is or what Feminists who hate men claim it is in order to get revenge for past slights whether real or imagined.

Today, in the realm of domestic relations, violence “has become whatever the man does that the woman doesn’t like. Finding out she is having an affair and demanding she stop is seen as ‘abuse.’ This often triggers the woman to file for a restraining order, where no real evidence is required.” Family Court Attorney Lisa Scott.

Only five states define domestic violence in terms of overt actions that can be objectively proven or refuted in a court of law. The rest of the states have broadened their definition to include fear, emotional distress without physical manifestations, and psychological feelings.

The 1,500 new domestic violence laws enacted by states from 1997 to 2005 are largely the handiwork of targeted lobbying by Feminists funded by the multi-million-dollar federal boondoggle called the Violence Against Women Act (“VAWA”). VAWA is blatantly sex discriminatory, as its title proclaims. It is designed to address only complaints by females.

VAWA provides taxpayer funding to Feminists to indoctrinate legislators, judges, and prosecutors with the stereotypes that men are batterers and females are victims. Females know (and their lawyers advise them) that making allegations of domestic violence (even without proof or evidence) is the fastest and cheapest way to win child custody plus generous financial support in the form of alimony and child support payments. The financial incentives to lie or exaggerate are powerful.

The Feminazis have created a judicial world in which the distinction between severe offenses and trivial annoyances is erased, so long as a man is accused of the misdeed, and any accusation against a man equals guilt. Meanwhile, females commit all the maternity fraud and

paternity fraud, and the overwhelming majority of parental alienation and false accusations all of which satisfy the legal definitions of domestic violence, but females are rarely found to have violated the law because they are considered inherently innocent.

False accusations gain advantage in divorce, child custody and child support disputes. Estimated rates of false accusations run 40 percent to 90 percent, depending upon the type of accusation(s).

Many advocates of men's rights point out that females initiate physical violence as often as or more so than men. *Second National Family Violence Survey in 1986*.

My ex-wife came at me twice with a knife, but so what. It was no problem taking it away from her; she's a girl. Even a girl trying to aim straight with a gun is somewhat laughable unless it's a shotgun or the guy is asleep or she's behind him. You're never going to stop a girl from using violence. The problem is when these hate-filled harpies get behind the wheel of something like a Mercedes Benz, and then claim self-defense, which the man-hating courts buy into.

The Department of Justice's survey *Murder in Families* analyzed 10,000 cases and found that females make up over 40 percent of those charged in familial murders. Females generally use less detectable methods to murder than men do, including poisonings, which are often mistakenly recorded as "heart attacks" or "accidents." Females often employ the element of surprise and weapons to compensate for men's greater strength. Also, females are much more likely than men to convince their extramarital partners to do the killing, or to use contract killers, who often disguise murders as accidents or suicides. There are five times as many unsolved murders of men as there are of females.

Criminologist Coramae Richey Mann found that 60% of female murders of male boyfriends were preplanned, and 70% of the killings were done while the victim was asleep, bound, helpless, or inebriated.

Convicted Texas murderess Susan Wright stabbed her husband 193 times while he was bound at the hands and legs. Michigan educator Nancy Seaman ambushed and killed her husband with a hatchet. Convicted Texas killer Clara Harris ran over her husband repeatedly with her Mercedes Benz as the fallen man's daughter begged her to stop.

A 1984 study of 6,200 cases found that 86% of female-on-male violence involved weapons, contrasted with 25% in cases of male-on-female violence. McLeod, *Justice Quarterly* (2) 1984 pp. 171-193. One-fourth of the men killed did not use violence towards their homicidal partners—perhaps they'd be alive if they had.

Between 1976 and 1996 there were 20,311 male intimate murder victims and 31,260 female intimate murder victims.

#### Male Victims

- 62% murdered by wives
- 4% murdered by ex-wives
- 34% by non-marital partners

#### Female Victims

- 64% murdered by husbands
- 5% murdered by ex-husbands
- 32% by non-marital partners:

Family fighting accounts for only 1% of physical injuries to females, well behind accidental falls, motor vehicle accidents, and even animal bites.

According to the Center for Disease Control, 13.6% of injuries to females seen in emergency rooms are from car accidents—a total of nearly 2 million or almost 10 times the number of injuries from physical domestic violence. CDC numbers show that more than twice as many females visit emergency rooms due to being injured by an animal (459,000 a year) than by a male partner.

The Justice Department 2007 survey found that males experienced higher victimization rates than females for all types of violent crime except rape and sexual assault.

So while guys kill more females than vice versa and experience a lower percentage of physical violence in domestic situations than females, since the courts believe females and not males, and the term violence is the result of a female saying she experienced fear, no matter how irrational, the lives of more guys are destroyed by females using the deadly weapon of ideologically corrupt courts—an aspect of state violence wholly endorsed by Feminists.

Females now have a monopoly on the use of state violence against men. A girl commits perjury in court and the court takes away a guy's house, his children, his bank account through legal costs and alimony, and his reputation, which means his career. When the courts find out the girl lied—nothing happens to her. So who causes more harm: a guy using his physical strength or a girl committing perjury in court?

Indiscriminate state violence batters men not just when a girl lies about physical abuse, but when she claims some nebulous psychological distress. Females are the masters of the intentional infliction of emotional distress, but the state never punishes them for it. Girls incessantly berate men when they don't say or do what a girl's whims of the moment want.

If a girl can use the ability that Mother Nature gave her to cause harm, then a guy can use what Mother Nature gave him in self-defense. After all, a girl's tongue is her gun, so why should a man disarm unless she's muzzled.

What's the difference between a life destroyed by a lying tongue and one destroyed by a gun?

In India, 98% of domestic violence allegations are believed to be false.

The U.S. Centers for Disease Control (CDC) 2011 *National Intimate Partner and Sexual Violence Survey* found that the most extreme domestic violence is male-on-female, but hard-core batterers and outright killers are rare. In violence of the mild to moderately severe variety that constitutes most of Intimate Partner Violence — shoving, slapping, hitting, punching, throwing objects, even stabbing and burning — both genders initiate and cause harm in equal measure. The survey's central finding is that men and women inflict and suffer equal rates of domestic violence, with 6.5% of men and 6.3% of women experiencing partner aggression in the past year. More men (18%) than women (14%) suffer psychological aggression (humiliation, threats of violence, controllingness). Feminists often define domestic violence as a “pattern of power and control,” and the survey finds that men were 50% more likely to have experienced coercive control than women (15.2% vs. 10.7%).

Canada's 1999 General Social Survey, found not only that most male and female violence is reciprocal, but also that the younger the sample, the more violent the women relative to men. A meta-analysis of more than 80 large-scale surveys notes a widening spread: less male and more female domestic violence in the dating cohort.

Personality disorder, culture and a background of family dysfunction, not sex, are the best predictors of partner violence. University of British Columbia psychology professor Don Dutton, *Rethinking Domestic Violence* (2006).

## *Children*

Physical violence by females against children is a different story, since kids cannot defend themselves as a grown man can.

It's mothers, not fathers, who are far more likely to abuse and neglect their children, according to the U.S. Department of Health and Human Services.

Mothers are responsible for 65 per cent of the physical abuse of children.

Mothers kill children at twice the rate that fathers do.

The Department of Justice's *National Violence Survey* found that mothers physically abuse children in 43% of the cases, fathers 28%; mothers are the killers in 48% of deaths, fathers 12%.

Monster moms routinely drown, boil, hang, put in clothes dryers, throw in dumpsters, and shake to death their children.

Mothers are also experts at using fear tactics to manipulate their children. How sick and twisted is it to raise a child to be scared of doing something that if he does it, he will find it worthwhile and fulfilling.

The most harmful legacy of the Feminist Matriarchy is its tendency to view children as a costly impediment to Feminist self-fulfillment and worldly achievement.

## *Family Courts*

The Canadian National Association of Women and the Law said, "Courts may treat parents unequally and deny them basic civil liberties and rights, as long as their motives are good." Good, of course, means harming a man.

In many jurisdictions, it is a crime to criticize family court judges or otherwise discuss family law cases publicly—sounds like the old Soviet Union.

Censorship of speech and press by judges is only the tip of the iceberg and serves to cloak even more serious constitutional and human rights violations in family courts.

Family courts violate due process rights with impunity by seizing children and railroading innocent husbands into jail. They deny trial by jury, deny poor defendants free counsel, deny the right to take depositions, lack evidentiary hearings, fail to provide adequate notice, and decide based on improper standards of proof.

Dean Roscoe Pound wrote "the powers of the Star Chamber were a trifle in comparison with those of our juvenile court and courts of domestic relations." Practices include mass incarcerations without trial, summary expropriations, presumptions of guilt, coerced confessions, *ex post facto* provisions, bills of attainder, and more. The family courts are by far the greatest violators of constitutional rights in America today.

Canadian Liberal MP Roger Galloway, who chaired the *1998 Report of the Special Joint Committee on Child Custody and Access*, commented that "Justice, if it occurs in a divorce court, is accidental."

Every so often, however, a court gets it right. In a case where a man who was not the father of two children was still found by a lower court to be liable for child support. The Court of Appeals overruled:

“A profound mistake occurred here when appellant was charged with being the boys’ father...Instead of remedying its mistake, the County retreats behind the procedural redoubt offered by the passage of time since it took appellant’s default.

It is this State’s policy that when a mistake occurs in a child support action the County must correct it, not exploit it... Thousands of individuals each year are mistakenly identified as being liable for child support actions. As a result of that action, the ability to earn a living is severely impaired, assets are seized, and family relationships are often destroyed. It is the moral, legal, and ethical obligation of all enforcement agencies to take prompt action to recognize those cases...and correct any injustice to that person.

Despite the Legislature’s clear directive that child support agencies not pursue mistaken child support actions, the County is asking that we do so. We will not sully our hands by participating in an unjust, and factually unfounded, result. We say no to the County, and we reverse. *County of Los Angeles v. Navarro* (2004)

#### *Statistics (S.A.V.E. False Accusations of Domestic Violence)*

No district attorneys in the U.S. routinely prosecute false allegations of domestic violence.

25% of divorces include allegations of domestic violence.

32 states in civil proceedings define domestic violence subjectively as being afraid, fearful, apprehensive or emotional distress regardless of the time of the month.

48 states require a judge to consider allegations of domestic violence in determining child custody.

85% of restraining orders are issued against men.

50% of restraining orders do not involve allegations of physical assault.

70% of restraining orders, or 1.5 million a year, are trivial or false.

700,000 persons are wrongfully arrested for domestic violence every year

#### Duel

With the rise of the Feminazis, who consider the personal as fair game for public attacks and absolve their acolytes of responsibility for any despicable conduct, civilized behavior no longer exists in America. Ignorant, loud-mouthed, little people no longer fear what may happen to them if they don’t keep their virulent mouths shut.

When I encounter a venomous spewing individual who believes he or she can say whatever they want and get away with it, I simply challenge them to a duel by saying, “Peru turns a blind eye to dueling; it’s a short flight and no jet lag.”

If it’s a girl, she stands there in shock and I usually have to repeat myself: “I’m challenging you to a duel. You can even choose the weapons, so long as they are not T & A.”

So far my challenges have been declined, so then I suggest an old fashion fistfight, even if it’s a girl. After all, Feminists are strong, independent, and tough.

Once again, they usually decline, so I sue them for defamation. Victory in the New York courts for defamation is unlikely, but it’ll cost them a ton of money in legal fees. It’ll only cost

me, a lawyer, the money to file the papers, and it'll be worth my time because it's a lot of fun. You don't have to win a case to win a case.

## Economics

Men are the more economically productive sex, yet since 1973, 90% of all new jobs have gone to females.

The Feminazis seek to upend basic economic theory by attempting to "equalize" the pay of men and females across the board regardless of occupation, work record, time in the work force, time worked, risk incurred, and ability.

If females really were paid so much less pay for doing the same job as effectively and efficiently as men, what company could afford to employ men? Who really believes bosses favor men so much that they'd take such a huge hit in profits? The wage gap figures cited by the Feminists deliberately blur distinctions of how many hours men work versus females and the risks incurred by men versus females.

## *Income*

Girls don't make less than guys, if anything, they make more.

The Feminazis don't consider differences in occupation, years of experience, education, amount of travel required, level of danger (risk), distance traveled to the job, benefits, level of fulfillment, time worked, or any of the many other factors that affect earnings. Independent Women's Forum, *Equal Pay Day*. The average female has two years less work experience than the average male.

Females tend to avoid jobs that require travel or relocation, tend to *choose* lower-paying professions, tend to work for the government and non-profits, they take more time off, spend fewer hours in the office than men do, and choose to work part-time more often than men. 14% of the weeks worked by females were part-time compared to 5% for men. That's their choice and the Feminazis should respect it.

A study by the Center for Policy Alternatives and Lifetime television found that 71 percent of females prefer jobs with more flexibility and benefits than jobs with higher wages, and nearly 85 percent of females offered flexible work arrangements by their employers have taken advantage of this opportunity.

Data from the *National Longitudinal Survey* reveals that females between the ages of 18 and 34 have been out of the labor force 27 percent of the time, in contrast to 11 percent for men. Females ages 45 to 54 who have recently re-entered the workforce after a five- or 10-year break are competing against men who have had 20 years of continuous experience.

Dr. Warren Farrell says that if females chose careers that pay more, put in more time at work, and produce more value during the time they work, they would earn more than men. Females are less than half as likely as men to work more than 50 hours a week. And females are less likely to agree, every few years, to uproot themselves and their families to far-flung places to get the necessary promotions.

If a guy chose to place time with his family above the job, he wouldn't get those high paying promotions, so why should girls. They should accept the consequence of their choices.

Among professors who produce an equal number of journal articles, men are likely to be paid the same or just slightly less than females. The 1969 American Council on Education found

that girl professors who never married and never published earned 145% of their male counterparts.

Never married, college educated males who work full-time make only 85% of what comparable females earn. John Leo, *Of Men, Women, and Money*, (contributing editor U.S. News & World Report, citing Dr. Warren Farrell, *Why Men Earn More*). In 1960 it was 94%. *1960 U.S. Census of the Population*. In the 1950s never married workers' earnings were only 2% apart by sex while never married white females between 45 and 54 earned 106% of never married men, according to Dr. Warren Farrell.

Females are 15 times more likely than men to become top executives in major corporations before age 40. Female pay exceeds men in more than 80 different fields, a female investment banker starts at 116% that of a man, according to Dr. Warren Farrell. Female sales engineers earn 143% of their male counterparts.

Females hold 51.4% of all the managerial and professional positions. The Atlantic, Nov. 2011, *All the Single Ladies*, Kate Bolick.

Females who own their businesses net 49% of what male owners net—it can't be that male oppression in the workplace is holding them back. *IRS Statistics*.

In tennis, females whined about not getting paid as much as men despite the fact that their matches are generally 60 percent the length of the men's. The girls now receive equal pay but not equal work. What happened to the Feminist rant "equal pay for equal work?" Since "female tennis is an inferior product," according to sports columnist Alan Mascaren, the ladies are bringing in far less revenue but taking home just as much as the guys. Where is the money coming from—the male players. Of course, the girls do wear short skirts and bend over a lot.

In the \$9-billion-a-year pornography industry, guys earn 25% to 50% of what the females earn. If male tennis players can subsidize female players, then hos can subsidize guys in the porno industry.

In 2000, one-quarter of all female employees worked part-time, compared to less than 10 percent of men. Nearly 85 percent of females who worked part-time did so for non-economic reasons; e.g., to spend more time with their family or to further their education. In general, married females would prefer part-time work at a rate of 5 to 1 over what married men prefer.

Of all adults who work part time, females earn 115% that of men. *National Center for Policy Analysis*, Denise Venable. According to U.S. Department of Labor Statistics, among adult part-time workers, men make 90% of the income of females.

Among part-time workers who have never married, and who thus confront fewer outside factors likely to affect earnings, females earn slightly more than men.

75% of the jobs lost in the Great Recession were jobs held by men.

The median wages for men have been eroding since the beginning of the Feminist movement in the early 1970s. After accounting for inflation, median wages for men between 30 and 50 dropped 27% from 1969 to 2009. Prof. Michael Greenstone, M.I.T. Unemployed men are more likely than females to be among the long-term jobless.

For every \$1 the average guy makes, the average girl makes \$.77. The problem with this statistic is that it does not compare the amount of time each sex puts into making an income, the risk, or the quality of the product or service produced.

### *Income per unit of time*

Despite the current Feminist myth, guys do not earn more per unit of time worked,



although they probably should because they bear greater risk.

According to the *U.S. Bureau of Labor Statistics' 2007 Time Use Survey*, men spend 144% as many hours working as females do. So for every hour the average guy works, the average girl works 42 minutes. If both are paid \$1 for a full hour of work, then the guy should receive \$1 for each hour he is on the job, but the girl, since she only works 42 minutes out of the hour as compared to the guy, should receive \$.69. An appropriate number for girls, but less than the \$.77 they now receive. So girls are actually paid more than guys when measured on a per unit of time basis.

It's understandable the Feminists didn't figure this out, since math is not a female strong point.

In reality then, it's not a wage gap but an "indolence gap."

### *Income per unit of risk*

The so-called wage gap should also be examined from a risk-reward perspective, which is what every astute investor does, and there's no more important an investment than one's occupation. Risky investments require a high enough return to compensate for the risk.

Current studies understate work compensation for men because the studies only count the hours devoted to a job without measuring the physical strain or danger associated with it. According to the Occupational Safety and Health Administration, more than three million workers a year are treated in hospital emergency rooms for occupational injuries—the vast majority of them suffered by men.

Guys are 20 times more likely to be killed or injured on the job. Nine out of ten work-related deaths and injuries are suffered by men. Men suffer 95% of the job related deaths. In the 25 most dangerous occupations in America, men make up 90% of the workers. Low risk and, therefore, lower paying jobs are 95% occupied by girls.

Guys are at greater risk on the job than females. That's why they gross more—not because of some imagined discrimination. When risk is taken into account the wage gap probably reverses, and girls end up making more than guys for a unit of risk incurred. So it's not a wage gap but more accurately a "risk gap."

The government, therefore, should increase the taxes on females and transfer that money to guys. Guys can use it to buy more health insurance and provide security for their children when they die before their time. Since men are 50 times more likely to be the primary or sole breadwinner, Independent Women's Forum, *Working Girl*, their demise has a greater economic impact on the children. As far as the widow, she'll likely find another man to sacrifice for her. Men can also use the extra money to pay more to enter clubs and buy girls drinks.

Kim A. Gandy, former president of NOW (National Organization of Women) said, "I don't have to tell you that we have a long haul before women are truly equal." And she's right; females need a lot more risk to reach risk equality with men.

### *Wealth*

A University of Michigan study showed that in 2001, households with a single female as head had a mean net wealth of \$113,000 and for single males of \$120,000. Schmidt and Sevak, *Gender, Marriage and Asset Accumulation in the U.S.* (2005). There are more single female heads of households, so multiply that number times the average net worth to get the total wealth

for single female heads of households, which is \$3.221 Trillion, for guys it's \$1.92 Trillion. So among single heads of households, females control 62% of the wealth, guys 38%.

Among married households, the wife at least generally controls 50% of it—she decides what house to buy, the furnishings, and so on.

Females end up controlling 60% of all the wealth in America. Allianz, *The Fragile Financial Superpower*, Constance Waschull.

In a divorce, most states have community property laws that give 50% of the assets to the ex-wife, with five states using a similar formula called “equitable distribution.”

Females make 80% of the purchases. Of course, many of those purchases are being made with a guys' money, but that's also a form of control over the wealth of the nation.

Females control billions of dollars through a slew of philanthropic organizations. Kimberly Schuld, *Guide to Feminist Organizations*.

Studies have shown that females who never have children enjoy lifetime earnings virtually identical to men.

Females over age 50 control a net worth of \$19 trillion and own more than 3/4s of the nation's financial wealth. Mass Mutual Financial Group 2007.

Girls born from 1946 to 1964 make 95% of the purchase decisions for their households. [www.she-economy.com/facts-on-women](http://www.she-economy.com/facts-on-women).

Over the next decade, females will control 2/3s of consumer wealth in the U.S. and be the beneficiaries of the largest transfer of wealth in history--\$12 to \$40 trillion. Claire Behar, Fleishman-Hillard New York.

So who owns most of America? It's not men.

### *Government largess*

Billions of taxpayer dollars are available for single custodial parents (90% mothers) for everything from milk to free legal services.

No money is allocated for non-custodial parents (90% fathers), not even for those who want to stay in their children's lives but are prevented from doing so by a hostile mother and her Feminist advocates, and the ideologically corrupt family judicial system.

Females in Feminist nonprofit, tax exempt corporations are generously paid with government grants and private contributions that reduce the taxes of the giver but result in increasing the taxes of others to make up for the revenue shortfall. Many large profit-making corporations reduce their taxes with such contributions while at the same time pandering to Feminist interests.

### *Quality of product or service produced*

Another factor the Feminazi equal pay advocates fail to consider is that the real determinant in wages is the value created.

Only a dope would spend the same amount for a ticket to a professional female basketball game rather than a top NCAA college men's team or even a really good boys' high school team. Now, if the girls played in bikinis—that's a different story.

Pay should depend on the value created. Do all men in similar positions receive the same compensation? If you think so, you're naive.

If there's a labor pool out there that can create the same unit of value by doing the same quality work for \$.77 instead of a dollar, then business would hire only them, but it hasn't. Last I looked; lots of guys were employed with no thanks to the Feminazis.

### *Expenses*

If a girl claims her expenses are higher than guys, meaning she needs more money than guys, ask her, "When was the last time a guy took you out? Who paid? Who's car? Who paid for the gas? Who bought the flowers? The time before that? Who paid? Who's car? Who bought the candy? And the time before that? Who paid? Who's car? Who bought the condoms?" And so on.

Do the same with expensive gifts. It's guys who give expensive gifts—not girls. Ask her who bought that bracelet, ring, or whatever expensive item she's wearing.

If she says she pays her own way, then respond, "Really! So what are you doing tonight?"

The economic logic that escapes the Feminists, of course girls and girlie-men aren't known for their logic, is that equal pay is measured on a per unit of time worked and per unit of risk incurred in creating equal quality and value.

### Education

In 2010, for persons between the ages of 25 – 29, girls held:

- 58.2 % of associate's degrees
- 53.7% of bachelor's degrees
- 62.6% of master's degrees
- 50.8% of professional degrees
- 65.6% of doctor's degrees.

From 1967 to 2000, the number of females enrolling in college increased by 20% while the number of males decreased by 4%. 1.5 million more females than males graduate college each year.

One in four boys at the end of high school with college educated parents cannot read a newspaper with understanding. For girls, it's one in ten. Judith Kleinfeld, Psychology Professor, University of Alaska.

From kindergarten to graduate school, the curriculum and grading have been feminized, putting males at a severe disadvantage by gearing education to female psychology. There is an average 10 percent gap in achievement, as measured by feminized standards, in all subjects, including science, once the preserve of male excellence. Education has been hijacked by man-hating Feminazis who've stacked the system and the odds against boys by changing the system to learning styles that benefit only girls.

Content-based, top-down teaching was replaced with pop-culture, friendly, non-hierarchical, no accountability, Feminist flimflam.

According to a Duke University Study, the percentage of boys graduating from high school has dropped back below 1985 levels. Boys are far more likely than girls to be disciplined, suspended, held back, or expelled (probably because the Feminazis are doing the punishing).

Eight out of 10 pupils who drop out of school are boys. In the study, boys and girls fared equally in six of the 28 categories studied by the researchers, but girls fared better than boys in 17 of the remaining 22. So it's 17 to 5 girls.

Today boys toil under elaborate affirmative-action initiatives in schools that subordinate merit to the equal representation of girls in every field of endeavor, including sports.

Boys are biologically predisposed to competition, but in today's "progressive" schools, cooperative experiences and groupthink are preferred to individual achievement.

Evidence abounds that boys thrive in a more disciplined and structured learning environment, but America's loosey-goosey schools shun discipline and moral instruction.

Open-ended, "reflective" thinking, organization, and presentation are good for girls, but it's not how guys learn, think, or use what they have learned. Males like clear rules, boundaries, structure, and organization. They like an orderly, clinical approach to learning. They tend not to see it as important to add finer details, such as neat borders to their homework.

Boys are falling behind in exams and the job market because teachers fail to nurture traditional male traits such as competitiveness and leadership. As a result, boys have inferior reading and comprehension scores and lower graduation rates than girls. They are much less likely to pursue secondary degrees and university graduate programs.

College education rates for men stopped growing in the late 1970s. The same time that state education departments started focusing on females and ignoring boys.

Schools celebrate qualities more closely associated with girls, such as methodical working and attentiveness in class. Boys are becoming disaffected and flunk exams and job interviews because their competitive instincts have been discouraged. Schools downplay competition and reward conscientiousness allowing girls to pick up marks as they progress through the course. Lessons and public exams with an emphasis on coursework and continuous assessment are more suited girls.

Education has beaten out of boys any enthusiasm for anything. If they sit quietly at the back of the classroom and don't interrupt, they are more likely to be rewarded than if they are restless. Young boys don't naturally thrive when forced to sit still at a desk for six hours a day. They don't learn as well as girls by sitting still, concentrating, multi-tasking, and listening to words. Recess time, which research shows is more critical for boys than for girls, has been cut back nationally.

Girls often complete a given project because they were "meant to" even if it was boring. Boys want to know there's a purpose for doing something.

Some boys may not be academic but have strong common sense and practical skills. The system no longer rewards those types of common sense skills. According to the U.S. Department of Education, vocational education suffered a sharp decline from 1982 to 1992 and has never recovered.

Title IX paved the way to revise all educational curricula so that it psychologically neutered boys in the process by ending dodge ball, taking out tether ball courts, destroying wrestling programs, dumbing down math and science courses, softening entrance requirements, re-writing text books to diminish the role of men in history, and implementing grading systems that reflect little or nothing to do with individual achievement.

Based on a false report by the American Association for University Women, Congress passed the Gender Equity in Education Act, which singled out girls as an "under-served population." The Act pumped tens of millions of dollars into advocacy research and Feminist-

inspired programs based on the fraudulent claim that girls were lagging in an all-encompassing patriarchal society.

“This PC gender politics thing—the way gender is being taught in the universities—in a very anti-male way, it’s all about neutralization of maleness. Upper-middle-class men are intimidated and can’t say anything. They understand the agenda. They avoid going certain sacred cows by never telling the truth to women about sex, and by keeping raunchy thoughts and sexual fantasies to themselves and their laptops.” Camille Paglia.

College disciplinary committees have replaced courts.

Today’s educational crisis for boys did not exist twenty years ago. True, boys didn’t do as well as girls in reading and spelling back then, but they compensated for that with higher science and math scores. Similar numbers of men and females graduated from college. All in all, things seemed pretty equal twenty years ago.

Now, however, girls get better grades and are much more likely than boys to graduate high school, enter college, and graduate from college. Girls outnumber boys in the prestigious A and B streams by a ratio of two to one at some schools. While more girls than boys enroll in high level math and science classes, boys score a couple of points better, but on reading tests, the girls score 10 points better.

Thomas Dee, an associate professor of economics at Swarthmore College and visiting scholar at Stanford University, found that having a female teacher instead of a male teacher raised the achievement of girls and lowered that of boys in science, social studies, and English. With a female teacher, boys were more likely to be seen as disruptive. Girls were less likely to be considered inattentive or disorderly. Nine percent of America’s elementary school teachers are male. Even fewer are men.

Boys in all male schools with the higher ratio of male teachers do better than in co-ed schools.

Female administrators claim small boys are hard to manage, which they are for females but not men. A fire breathing man scares a young boy more than another visit with a get-in-touch-with-your-anger female. Young males realize that a little bit of pain is a good thing, that life isn’t always fair, and that sometimes a kid deserves to be smacked in the mouth. Female administrators, because they are females, have no credibility to make any threats that will motivate a boy to focus on learning.

When boys bubble over with unbridled testosterone, instead of challenging, disciplining, and harnessing their energies, as teachers once did, they are emasculated or medicated. The former means being made over in the image of girls; the latter entails being diagnosed as “learning disabled” and drugged with Ritalin. One in five boys spends time on Ritalin. 8 out of 10 children being medicated for behavioral problems are boys. It is a consequence of the demonization of male biopsychology, but it makes a female administrator or female teacher’s job easier, which is what they are mainly concerned with.

73% of children diagnosed, mostly likely by Feminists, with learning disabilities and 76% of those classified as emotionally disturbed are boys. U.S. Department of Education.

Education needs real men, not androgynies, who will teach kids to get in touch with reality rather than with their feelings.

Go to any schoolyard, and you will find that more often it is the voices of boys who have become silent.

“Primary-school education is a crock, basically. It’s oppressive to anyone with physical energy, especially guys,” she says, pointing to the most obvious example: the way many schools have cut recess. “They’re making a toxic environment for boys. Primary education does everything in its power to turn boys into neuters.” Camille Paglia.

It is the tacit elevation of “female values”—such as sensitivity, socialization and cooperation—as the main aim of teachers, rather than fostering creative energy and teaching hard geographical and historical facts.

### Enemies

I wouldn’t be so paranoid, if I didn’t have so many enemies.

Feminazis, Feminazi sycophants, Feminazi appeasers—all those androgynous guys who are scared of females, and the Feminazi opportunists who exploit the popular prejudice against guys are the enemies of every man.

They are the enemies of men because they will do anything, tell any lie, and violate anyone’s rights, usually a man’s, to amass all the benefits of society to themselves while leaving men with all the responsibilities. In other words, to steal the benefits and leave the burdens.

They are cowards who know very well on which side their bread is buttered.

Why should any man mourn over the demise of any Feminazi? He should remember the bitter wrongs men have received at their hands. So wide-spread and universal is misandry in this country that I never expect to find one member of the dominant sex of females true to the principles of human rights they hypocritically expound.

### Environment

Females are responsible for over 80% of all purchasing decisions in the U.S. each year. *SheSpeaks*, CBS Market Research. They are therefore responsible for most of the pollution and depletion of natural resources.

The average girl consumes more goods than the average guy: fashions that go out of date almost immediately, cosmetics to assuage her vanity, a manic drive to possess the latest everything, and toilet paper that used to be trees. By causing more depletion of resources than the average guy, she is also the major cause of wars, which are usually fought to steal another country’s resources.

Females are also primarily responsible for over population. It’s usually the girlfriend or wife who wants to experience “motherhood.” The guy often goes along just to keep her happy. Over population, of course, is the source from which all the major problems of the world flow: pollution, depletion of resources, war, pestilence, and famine.

### Equality

The presumption that reckless men are criminals while reckless females are victims makes a mockery of any notion that the sexes are equal.

Men have willingly carried the most dangerous and onerous roles in society to the primary benefit of females. If it weren’t for men, many American females would have ended up Nazi broodmares, Japanese comfort girls, or Commie secretutes. Yet over four decades, the

Feminists have turned men into second-class citizens before the institutions of this society. Our society is moving toward two societies, one male, one female—separate and unequal.

Feminazis want equal rights but unequal responsibilities, equal benefits but unequal burdens. Equality is supposed to work both ways.

Don't forget, the suffrage movement grew out of the temperance movement, and we all know what a mistake that was.

American females are the most privileged humans in history.

The Feminists have simply expanded the pedestal on which society places females. It's one thing to keep girls on a pedestal when they're only a nuisance. Another thing entirely when they are malicious.

Today, guys not only forgive females for smashing the car, but for smashing men's lives, ruining corporations, biasing the courts, and anything else a female is running that she's too incompetent to handle.

The Feminist notion of sex equality is seen as a one-way street, intended to benefit females while turning a blind eye to the social disparities visited on men. Mere mention of the words "men's rights" is a sure-fire strategy to attract amused expressions and derisive remarks—not to mention insults from judges.

Feminazis have been ranting about equality for four decades. It's time to take that equality and shove it down their throats. Let's see how the Feminazis handle going down with the ship. Give them 51% of the worst of this society, and they'll start whining, "Where's the kitchen?"

*Do you believe a female's place is in the kitchen?*

Depends on whether she can cook.

## Evil

Evil has nothing to do with the Sun, the Moon, the stars, the planets, Mother Nature, or the supernatural. It is a particularly human trait that occurs when a person intentionally or with reckless disregard violates the rights of another in order to obtain something she does not deserve.

Evil exists and the courts are not immune from furthering its ends, such as helping vindictive girls destroy the lives of men.

It's always good and evil up against each other, and a man has got to take sides at sometime or another; otherwise, he'll end up in one of the hottest circles of Hell.

"Often there's just chaos and violence, random and unpredictable evil that comes out of nowhere." Dean Winchester.

There are a lot of people out there who want what they don't deserve and will violate a person's rights to get it, then rationalize or cover it up with one lunatic belief system or another.

Evil always does more harm than the harm done it because the scales are balanced in its favor.

"Allied with every human woe, she stole salvation with a kiss." *Parsifal*, Wagner.

Institutionalized evil and state violence in America now wears a Feminist face. Evil has a feminine scent about it.

Today's scoundrels dress themselves in the conformity of PC-Feminazism. Let's not forget that two young girls, other females, and cowardly males were the precipitating factors of the Salem witch trials.

The Feminists and their allies are nothing more than demons in human shape who pass abominably wicked and unjust laws doing what in their power lies to destroy confidence in legislative bodies, the judiciary, and to bring officers of the law into disrespect among men.

The essence of PC-Feminist evil is that they understood the goodness in men and exploited it to the harm of men.

Civility toward the uncivil is a waste of time.

Unfortunately, fighting malevolent people, such as the Feminazis, is often a losing proposition with the result that human freedom and republican liberty will soon be empty names in these United States.

### Evolutionarily Correct or Genetically Correct

“Nature is imperial and we deny it at our peril.”

Mother Nature is not so stupid as to make half the humans devils and the other half angels.

Reasonable men can accept the limitations of Mother Nature's engineering, but the Feminazis can't.

The Feminists should be careful in their meddling with nature. There are 300 million firearms in this country, and most of them are owned by guys.

### Fear

My fear is not doing what I have to do.

The dragon is not out there but inside, and its size and ferocity depends on the person's upbringing—the epigenome.

Tiredness is but a disguise for fear.

Fear drives the inclination of people faced with an oppressive environment to submit to it.

It is an emotion that is best dealt with by ignoring it. Not unlike a nagging girl friend.

### Federal Bureau of Investigation

Also known as the Federal Bureau of Idiots, Incompetents, or just Indolence.

Female (a.k.a. girls, chics, babes, ladies, dames, bimbettes, bimbos, bimbats, hokettes, etc.)

“American women are the most fortunate class of people who ever lived on the face of the earth.” Phyllis Schlafly

“If civilization had been left in female hands, we would still be living in grass huts.”  
Camille Paglia.

Look at what their bodies are built for. You don't use a car to fly the skies, a plane to sail the seas, or a boat to drive the highways.



Think of girls as pushers. They sell “feel good,” are mainly interested in money, have lots of customers, are never on time, and you don’t ask them for any advise on how to live your life.

All you need from them is “yes” or “no,” and never stay with just to one.

“The curse of Allah is upon the fools who depend on females for support or place the reins of power in their hands.” *The Arabian Nights*, King Shahryar and His Brother.

Girls are inconsiderate, insecure, and irresponsible.

Girls are skittish, scared, dependent little creatures, so they become upset when a guy doesn’t do what they want.

It isn’t girls’ fault that they act first and think afterwards; it’s the fault of the fools who humor them.

“Broad,” you know, broad across the chest, although some of them are small.

Girls are the perks of fame and fortune. Too bad all I have is infamy.

“They will do whatever we let them get away with.” Joseph Heller

Give a girl a little authority and right away she thinks she’s the Queen of Hearts.

Females aren’t here to soothe the savage beast; it’s the savage beast who is here to limit their infinite capacity for evil.

The wise man doesn’t expect females to quit. He expects them to harm all others just to save their own.

Who knows what evil lurks in the imbalanced electromagnetic-chemical reactions that go on inside the feminine brain?

Females don’t sacrifice for others. They trick others into sacrificing for them.

Females wait for men to do the hard work, spill their blood, and sacrifice their lives, then step in and say, “It’s mine, it’s mine!”

The four most common words a girl uses are I, me, my, and mine.

They don’t do favors. They take.

The most inconsiderate person is a girl with her kid. The second most inconsiderate is a girl with her boyfriend.

“Sweet wine often turns nice girls sour.” Charlie Chan.

“Pretty girl like lap dog. Sometimes goes mad.” Charlie Chan.

“Sometimes quickest way to a girl’s brain is impression on other end.” Charlie Chan.  
They’re not satisfied no matter what a man does.

*How does a guy know what they want him to do?*

Why, he has to read their minds of course.

Girls want number 1—money and number 2—tyranny over men.

“It’s gold that counts, money that matters.” Gretchen in Goethe’s *Faust*

How many pretty young things out there would decline to rub their rear-ends against a Benjamin Franklin.

There lust for money comes from them having more desires than dollars.

Females were created in the image of Mary Magdalene, an alleged ho.

Girls are great for partying and entertainment, but for most other activities, they’re as useful as a lead weight on a sinking ship.

Since 1750 when the world’s population reached one billion, their function in procreation has turned into the bane of over population.

Look at the typical American female in her mid 30s or older, superimpose a Feminazi ideology, and then ask yourself, would you rather spend the rest of your life with her or alone?

Girls are arrogant in their ignorance.

They're always complaining, whining, and blaming others.

They take when they can and give nothing back.

A girl tricks a guy, then holds him to acting ethically so that he won't do what's necessary to get out of the situation she trick him into.

It's females who have always held the upper hand. That's because a female's advantage over a man is her total disregard of "some God of Abstract Justice" to which men are unable to be indifferent.

For a girl to answer truthfully is like asking the night to turn sunny.

5% of females have the borderline personality disorder of habitually making false accusations of some kind of "abuse" in order to seek revenge.

When a female has scholarly inclinations, there is usually something wrong with her sexually, as reflected in Gloria Steinem's remark, "A female without a man is like a fish without a bicycle." To which I can only reply, I'd rather be the bicycle, especially if some pretty coed is riding me. In addition, only a lesbian could make such a remark.

"No matter how bad someone is, [she] can always be worse," Justice Scalia, which is what the Feminazis are—the most virulent form of female.

*Neuroses*

Who cares about female neuroses? Men don't exist to cater to their lunacies. If they want to party and have some fun, find; otherwise, leave me alone—and stay off of my rights.

Generally speaking, girls get together with other girls because it is cheaper than a therapist.

### Female Frauds

"Whenever you see something bright, shining, perfect-seeming, look behind the paint. And if it's a lie—show it up for what it really is!" Inherit the Wind, Act III, Henry Drummond.

"To go to bed with a man and then lie to him. She's a girl, she's got all the training she needs, what do you expect?"

Girls are "practiced in the art of deception." Rolling Stones.

"Man yet to be born who can tell what female will or will not do." Charlie Chan.

Fidelity is the charming girl's greatest hypocrisy.

It's a common misconception that goodness is equated with beauty.

Most guys at sometime in their lives played sports where they learned that if you cheat and get caught, you're punished. If you don't get caught, you still feel inferior to the guys you were competing against. Most girls, however, do not play sports. They spend their time trying to attract a guy in which cheating is the name of the game—high heels; body shaping panty hose; pushup, padded bras; painted faces; painted lips; false eye lashes; penciled eyebrows; hair color not their own; and lies that make Hillary Clinton look like a truth teller.

When it comes to pregnancy females often lie. They lie about being pregnant for revenge and power. They lie about using birth control and become pregnant for the same reasons, for financial gain, and to trap a man into doing "the right thing" because their internal clock is

ticking. They often want a child even though they're incompetent to raise one and it will just add to the world's over population.

They lie about who is the father of their child. If you trick someone into raising a baby not his own, and he puts 20 years of his life into an endeavor based on a falsehood, that is a crime of the highest order. Yet in many states, females are rewarded for such fraud by the corrupt courts requiring the defrauded man to pay child support for the kid that is not his.

The only way a female can best a man is by blind-siding him or with trickery.

### Female Harm

Let's not forget all the harm those self-righteous prohibitionists caused.

Girls are always trying to get a guy to do what they want him to do—even when it's against his beliefs. They have absolutely no respect for a man's belief system if it differs from theirs, so they set out to destroy it.

Certain girls have an uncanny ability to make a man forget what he has to do.

If a female official, whether in government or private business, provides information that is contrary to a man's interest, the odds are that she's lying.

How sick and twisted is it for mothers to raise children to be scared of doing something that if they do it, it will be worthwhile and they will feel fulfilled.

### Female Hatred of Men

When was the last time you met a girl who was satisfied with what a guy did for her?

Most girls have always hated men because they both fear and envy us. The Feminazis are using that hatred under the disguise of seeking equality and phony claims of past oppression to create a tyranny over men. To corruptly amass to themselves more power than Mother Nature granted them and to make lots of money—a girl's number one desire.

The average female is physically scared of the average guy, and that fear can easily turn to anger, and then hatred.

Girls aren't sexually satisfied by many of their trysts, which frustrates them, and leads them to angrily, and to an extent justifiably, blame men.

Girls are insecure about their attractiveness to guys, which insults their egos when a guy doesn't hit on them and causes more anger.

Girls are also angry because their genetic unconsciousness wants a man while their Feminist indoctrinated consciousness wants an androgyny. They want the classical man whom the Feminazis have pretty much destroyed—there might be 200 men left in America.

All this anger eventually leads to hatred of men—misandry, which the Feminazis have successfully exploited to their own advantage in terms of money, positions, and power.

As a result, the traditional battle of the sexes is now total war. Relationships in the traditional sense are on the wane, leaving only short-term sexual flings. Maybe that's as it should be.

### Female Parasites

Most females are parasites; they live off of men, whether hos or Feminists.

Feminist organizations survive on government tax dollars, and most of those tax dollars come from men.

### Feminazi or Fear Fascist

Feminists are females who tell everyone that men are to blame for the wrong they have done.

I never met a Feminazi who didn't blame men for all the stupid decisions she made.

They have come to believe in their exceptionalism and their sense of being the chosen ones. That they can decide the destinies of the world, that it is only them who can be right.

They believe their upbringing made them weak, illogical, emotional, and condemned them to hot flashes, but it was Mother Nature.

Feminazis are demonesses of self-justification, leftovers of humanity oblivious to the meaning of justice. They lamely believe men are incapacitated for the rights of liberty.

A Feminazi is a female who believes that an accident of nature, being born a girl, made her superior to men in all matters under the sun. She believes men are guilty until they prove themselves innocent, and that females are innocent until proven guilty, and even then a guy is still at fault for what she volitionally did.

The Feminist worldview focuses solely on girls: their needs, their wants, their desires, and their preferences.

Feminists are scientifically challenged.

Feminazi is a very descriptive term. What's a Nazi? Someone who tries to control your thoughts, speech, and actions to serve her interests. The Nazis used duress, intimidation, coercion and state violence to have their way. The Feminazis are the same, they use state sponsored physical violence, although not as much. For example, a man goes to jail on the mere say-so of a female and lawsuits based on lies. They've infected the courts with a procedural rule that females tell the truth and men only lie. They are responsible for laws that discriminate against men. They're able to destroy a man's career based on the vague and overbroad terminology "inappropriate behavior." They are responsible for fathers regularly losing their children in divorce but still having to pay to support both the child and the wife. If he falls behind in the court ordered extortion payments—it's debtor's prison. So basically, Feminazis are those who perverted America into a tyranny over men.

If someone objects to the term "Feminazi," then say, "how about Femi-commie?" The Commies and Nazis were pretty much the same.

For me, there is no distinction between the terms Feminist and Feminazi, and I use them interchangeably. Others make a distinction, which is a distinction without a difference. Sure some Feminists are more uncivil, more evil than others, but from a macro point of view, they all want preferential treatment at the expense of the rights of men.

Other synonymous terms are ideological Feminist, radical Feminist, militant Feminist, supremacist Feminist, demi-Feminazi, fanatical Feminist, serial misandrist, murderers of incipient human beings, intellectual concubines of evil, minions of the anti-Christ, or just plain stupid girls.

Whatever the term used, they're just a bunch of sniveling, self-centered, tantrum ranting females who are arrogant in their ignorance.

Fear is what compels them to demonize, denigrate, and defame men. They are attempting to make others fearful—so that they can cover up the fact that they are incompetent.

Nothing gives these philistines greater satisfaction than a man being upset, frustrated, in high dudgeon, or whining and nothing stops a Femi-fascist faster than being laughed at. So make her the butt of a joke.

The Feminazis have lots of allies: guys who actually believe the Feminist drivel, Feminist sycophants; guys who are scared of the Feminists, Feminist appeasers; and the hypocrites, males or females, who pretend to support Feminism to obtain something of value—tangible or intangible, Feminist opportunists.

Princesses believe they are entitled to what ever they want in return for looking good and showing some concern. Feminazis are the same, only they don't believe in looking good.

Feminists are a collection of people many of whom could hardly bake a cake, fix a car, sustain a friendship or a marriage, or even solve a quadratic equation, yet they believe they know how to run the world.

They are experts at duress. Duress is any means amounting to or tending to coerce the will of another that induces him into doing an act contrary to his free will. Black's Law Dictionary.

Behind the Feminist visage is a mass of insecurities and fears.

They are constitutionally (as in character trait) unable to tell the truth, genetically driven to abuse power, and possessed by cruelty and malice and a will to dominate men.

Feminists and their followers are sycophants to conformity, driven by the cowardice of the dependent minded.

Many Feminazis are nothing more than psychotropic doped up, sexless zombies who use drugs to feel good about their useless lives.

They believe a man should be grateful to them for violating his rights because they are the superior person.

A Feminazi is one of those mannish things that breed in the half-light of the so-called aesthetical.

They're she-males. They look like a girl but talk and try to act as they perceive guys do. Since their perceptions are warped by their delusions, the result is a caricature of men.

Feminazis are as delusional as Commies whose belief in their superiority overlooks the fact that they can only compete when their opponents are handicapped by obeying the rules.

Reality and truth have no bearing on their self-serving idiocy.

Feminists cannot accept the limitations of Mother Nature's engineering.

Feminazis see men the way Hitler saw the Jews. Just change the nouns in their rants against men to Jews, and they'd fit right in at a 1930s Gestapo function. They are hate mongers using power to destroy.

Other descriptive terms for Feminazis: harridan hos, vengeful harpies driven by mad fits and jealous rages; faded, fat, self-indulgent females; self-righteous, hypocritical bigots with no sense of justice; mean-spirited and contemptible; totalitarian in their methods and dishonest in their advocacy; reality-challenged; lack honor, tolerance, and honesty; hate filled ideologues; man-hating sociopathic pariahs; and those who have a perfect right to be killed.

Feminists have no concept of fairness or honor unless they are trying to talk someone into acting accordingly because it serves their interests.

*The Unsex'd Female* by Richard Polwhele (1798)

“Survey with me, what ne'er our fathers saw,  
A female band despising NATURE's law,

As “proud defiance” flashes from their arms,  
And vengeance smothers all their softer charms.”

If you mistakenly find yourself hitting on a Feminazi, say, “Gee I feel as though I’m talking to a guy. Excuse me; I’m going to look for some chicks.”

When some Feminazi starts propagandizing that she’s a “strong independent woman,” ask her to step outside.

When some Feminist goes on a rant, tell her, “Don’t blame me that you can’t handle your own insecurities. Every time a little stress flows in your direction, you probably act like it’s that time of month.”

I understand PC-Feminazis hate me—and I welcome their hate.

### Feminazi Establishment, Feminarchy, Estrogen Tyranny (E.T.), State Supported Religion, *de facto* Inquisition

A tyranny has spread across the land that violates the rights of men and exalts feminine evil as the social good. It’s fueled by cruelty and malice and a will to dominate over men. It uses legal coercion by violence, which is the monopoly of the state.

Post-modern Feminism is the evil of the time. At its core, the ideological Feminist agenda is based on hatred of men because Feminists both fear and envy men. The Feminazi agenda is about power and control over men.

State-sponsored tyranny has re-appeared in our midst driven by Feminazism. “To exalt as an absolute is the mark of totalitarianism, and it is possible to have an atmosphere of totalitarianism in a society that has many of the attributes of democracy.” Howard Zinn

Feminism, like “[n]ationalism is a relatively recent phenomenon but at other times and places the ends have been racial or territorial security, support of a dynasty or regime, and particular plans for saving souls. As first and moderate methods to attain unity have failed, those bent on its accomplishments must resort to an ever-increasing severity. As governmental pressure toward unity becomes greater, so strife becomes more bitter as to whose unity it shall be.... Ultimate futility of such attempts to compel coherence is the lesson of every such effort from the Roman drive to stamp out Christianity as a disturber of its pagan unity, the Inquisition as a means to religious and dynastic unity, the Siberian exiles as a means to Russian unity, down to [the failed] efforts of [World War II’s] totalitarian [regimes]. Those who begin coercive elimination of dissent soon find themselves exterminating dissenters. Compulsory unification of opinion achieves only the unanimity of the graveyard.” *West Virginia State Bd. of Education v. Barnette*, 319 U.S. 624, 640-41 (1943)(Mr. Justice Jackson).

It’s the same old story. Whenever one group thinks it’s the sole possessor of the truth and acquires some power, it uses that power to demonize those who believe differently. It’s the typical power grab to push out others.

The pestiferous breath of Feminist demons has spread throughout the land.

Feminism and political correctionalism are the established belief systems that direct people’s thoughts, speech, and actions. Such intolerant, self-righteous doctrines have always been the cause of most of the evil throughout history, and today is no different. Anyone deviating from Feminism and political correctness, especially in the lefty bastion of New York City, is demonized, denigrated, ostracized, and dismissed for “inappropriate” behavior and speech.

Previously, scoundrels wrapped themselves in the flag. Today, they dress themselves in Feminism.

The first wave of Feminism (beginning in the late 1700s) and the second wave (beginning in the late 1960s) achieved the goal of legal equity. The third wave (beginning in the 1980s), however, is now creating a world rife with intolerant and irrational terrorism targeted at men and females who don't subscribe to the belief system of Feminism and political correctionalism.

A new totalitarianism has blossomed in America. Under the seductive guise of sex equality, this ideological tyranny resorts to over-heated rhetoric, intrusive government, and intimidation tactics.

The Establishment today is a Feminist Establishment—a unitary belief system held by enough influential persons so that it dominates over other beliefs in this society, such as the principles of the Declaration of Independence and the Constitution.

The dominance of Feminism has created a tyranny in America because it controls the workings of government. “The accumulation of all powers, legislative, executive, and judiciary, in the same hands ... may justly be pronounced the very definition of tyranny.” James Madison.

This Feminazi tyranny is enforced by an informal or de facto inquisition that punishes anyone who publicly disagrees with or criticizes Feminism. Take as examples the Justice Thomas confirmation hearing, the proceedings everyday in every family court, pink listings of those railroaded for “domestic violence,” and the imprisonment of men based on perjured female testimony.

This tyranny or Feminarchy results from the feminization of American society. The female of the species has taken over many of the top jobs in broadcasting, academia, and government bureaucracies, but that's not the real danger to liberty. It is that the Feminist belief system has become pre-eminent and life is now lived in accordance with Feminist dogma. Feminism rules the media and education, which influence how people think and behave and has enabled Feminist ideology to infect every part of society. Control a person's beliefs and you control that person.

America is now a Feminist, man-hating culture. It is amazing the extent of the Estrogen Tyranny in this country, and the extent to which its supporters will go to subjugate others.

Men have been reduced to lap dogs, marginalized, and despised. Look at the many lifestyle programs aimed at a female audience that air at the expense of current affairs and documentaries. Look at how men are continually portrayed in advertisements, dramas, and sitcoms as clueless and idiotic.

Androgyny is the prevailing role model with girlie guys, metro-sexual males, preening, and fashion conscious wimps.

Emotion takes precedence over rationality where soma induced delusions have replaced reality.

Feminism is the State religion, and heresy leads to the destruction of a guy's career, loss of his children, loss of his house, and bankruptcy. Fanaticism and ignorance always need feeding, and in America their fodder is men.

If a guy doesn't pay lip service to the Feminazis and doesn't allow females to violate his rights with impunity, he will most likely fail at all his endeavors. The institutions of this society will not be impartial but actually work against him. Any guy who fights back will be banished to the Gulag of Un-persons or virtually (as in Internet) pink-listed by Feminist bloggers. Making a living will become near-on impossible because clients and employers use the Internet to research

anyone they might hire. On the other hand, private and public institutions favor females regardless of the harm they cause, so long as it is to men and the unborn.

If there is any question of whom the oppressors are in this Estrogen Tyranny, just look at who lives longer, who controls a greater percentage of the nation's wealth, on whom does the nation spend more money for health care, who receives less time for the same crimes, and who is more likely to be out of shape—it's females.

The institutions of this country aren't going to defend the rights of men if it means interfering with the preferential treatment of females.

The matriarchal tyrants will continue to rule because most guys are intimidated by Feminism, passively acquiesce to its diet of blame and guilt, and have forgotten the Declaration of Independence: "Whenever any form of government becomes destructive of the unalienable rights of the governed, it is the right of the people to alter or abolish it. [A]ll experience has shown, that mankind are more disposed to suffer, while evils are sufferable, than to right themselves by abolishing the forms to which they are accustomed. But when a long train of abuses and usurpations, pursuing invariably the same object evinces a design to reduce them under absolute despotism, it is their right, it is their duty to throw off such government and to provide new guards for their future security."

### Feminazi Newspeak & Doublethink

George Orwell in his essay *Politics and the English Language* wrote about the importance of honest and clear language and warned that vague writing can be used as a tool of political manipulation. In *Nineteen Eighty-Four* he described how the state controlled thought by controlling language, making certain ideas literally unthinkable.

"Newspeak" is a simplified and obfuscating language designed to make independent thought impossible. Feminist Newspeak is political language used "to make lies sound truthful, murder respectable, and to give an appearance of solidity to pure delusion." Such language is intended to hide the truth rather than express it, so the language used is necessarily vague or meaningless. This unclear prose is a "contagion," which spreads even to those who have no intent to hide the truth, and it conceals a person's thoughts from himself and others.

Feminist lingo is shrouded in weasel words and loopy logic as well as euphemized or overstated depending on what serves Feminist purposes.

When Feminists want to obfuscate sexual differences they use "gender" as in "gender" pay gap, but it's "sexual abuse," "sexual harassment" when attacking a man. Why not "gender harassment" or "gender abuse"? Because it communicates that girls are also engage in such conduct.

The Feminists use lingo to hide the evil they're doing, such as the term "choice" instead of "murder" when killing an incipient human being. "The great enemy of clear language is insincerity. When there is a gap between one's real and one's declared aims, one turns as it were instinctively to long words and exhausted idioms. In our age there is no such thing as 'keeping out of politics.' All issues are political issues and politics itself is a mass of lies, evasions, folly, hatred, and schizophrenia." George Orwell.

Newspeak is effective in controlling thought because humans think in words. Analyzing and trying to understand the world requires words with exact meanings. Think of all the times you had a vague thought about something, then went to the dictionary to find the exact word describing the thought. All of a sudden you understood clearly and could express that thought.



The Feminist are using linguistics to keep thinking muddled when it serves their purposes. If a person lacks the words to accurately describe his perception of reality, then that reality doesn't exist. So the control of language controls a person's perception of reality, controlling perception controls beliefs, and controlling beliefs means people are controlled. Why do you think the Feminists insist on the use of the word "women" all the time even though the individual maybe a slut, broad, bimbo, or ho?

Feminist Newspeak spreads by imitation. Like all ideologies, it is ready to relieve a person of having to think.

As George Orwell once wrote, "If thought corrupts language, language can also corrupt thought."

"Doublethink" means holding two contradictory beliefs simultaneously—a natural female ability. For example, girls should have jobs above the "Glass Ceiling" but not in the "Tombstone Basement"; guys should have to register for the draft but not girls, even though a girl can become the Commander-in-Chief; or guys are built differently, which qualifies them for the most dangerous occupations, but that physical difference does not apply to the brain, which according to science is also part of the physical body.

Feminist linguistics simply chains you mind and your tongue.

Then again, perhaps the Feminist Establishment is just "reality challenged." Never underestimate the infinite ability of a female to delude herself.

### Feminazi Objectives, Strategies, and Tactics

#### *Objectives:*

The total transfer of power, control, and wealth from those who primarily create and earn it to those who don't.

Create a new world order based on the absence of all things patriarchal, including facts, logic, reason, truth, and scientific method.

Complete control of men so that they will do what the Feminazis want.

Man dragged this hominid race from the cave to the Moon. Now that life is relatively easy and relatively secure, bimbettes, bimbos and bimbats want to run the show.

To subjugate men under the cover of equality because men are a "malignant and vile" influence upon society.

The Feminists want to thoroughly politicize—place under the control of government—the last bastion of personal life in our society—the family. They argue for governments to economically recognize motherhood so that females will not be dependent upon husbands. That way government replaces the father and the husband or exercises coercive power over him to economically subsidize females.

The Feminazis want social androgyny even though the lack of masculinity is fatal to a society's prospects for greatness and even its survival. If you're on trial for murder, whom do you want defending you—an androgyny or a man? If the Communists are marching down your street, who do you want fighting them, the Marines or Feminists?

The Feminazis don't want a meritocracy, because they can't compete—fairly.

Feminists claim they want a quota-imposed unisex society regardless of the facts of life, voluntary choice, human nature, common sense, or documented merit. But in reality, they don't want a quota-ocracy. Like all prima donnas, they want a princessocracy or hypocrisy where the power of government is used to give females preferential treatment while hypocritically declaring all are equal.

If the Feminists were after a quota-ocracy, then 51% of American college students would be female instead of 57%, girl students in New York would earn 51% of the masters degrees instead of 63%, girls would get custody of their children 51% of the time instead of 90%, and girls would make up 51% of the workers in the 25 most dangerous occupations instead of 10%. They don't want a quota system because then it has to apply all the way down.

Feminazis simply want it all, and to keep men shackled to pay for it. To have men work to support their wives and daughters while their wives and daughters work to destroy them.

The Feminists aim is to hold in their hands the reigns of social, economic, and political power in order to fashion a tyranny in which men are serfs and females nobility.

When it comes to the benefits of society, the Feminazis want equality, but when it comes to the burdens, they want preferential treatment with guys shouldering the burdens. They only want equality of rights and benefits, but none of the responsibilities and burdens that go with such.

When a guy is born he has a greater chance of getting a glass ceiling job, but he also has a greater risk of landing in the Tombstone Basement. It's called the risk/reward scenario. More risk, more potential reward. The Feminazis want only the reward with guys picking up the risks—sounds Victorian, and it is. Traditionally, girls were protected from many of the risks of the world, but their rewards were limited as a result. Today the Feminazis want to be protected from the world's risks, but want all the rewards.

### *Strategies:*

It's the same old story. Girls tricking some guys into doing stupid things, which other guys pay for.

The Feminists use a strategy of government-enforced intervention into the personal matters of private citizens.

Feminists exploit affirmative action to achieve supremacy over men by falsely claiming they only want equality.

Feminazis play the role of modern-day prophets, like those of Marxism and Leninism, repeating over and over that government must control our lives for the collective good and protect females from the newly exaggerated danger of domestic violence perpetuated by men.

"Make the lie big, make it simple, keep saying it, and eventually [people] will believe it." Hitler.

"All propagananda has to be popular and has to accommodate itself to the comprehension of the least intelligent of those whom it seeks to reach." Hitler.

"The art of leadership... consists in consolidating the attention of the people against a single adversary and taking care that nothing will split up that attention." Hitler. In America today, that adversary is men. The Feminazis have taken the creator of civilization, science, and the arts and turned him into the modern-day equivalent of the medieval werewolf.

In 1590, Peter Stumpp was found to have committed numerous murders that shocked all of Europe. Over the next 200 years between 150,000 and 200,000 innocent men were tortured to

death as werewolves. “Werewolf” became the epithet for someone a person didn’t like and wanted disposed of, just as abuser and batterer are today.

The Feminists depict men as abusers and batterers with females as the innocent victims by using false generalities supported by Voodoo science from Women’s Studies programs and the rare or made up tale of horror.

The Feminazis create a climate of fear for anyone who opposes their agenda. They successfully intimidate and coerce men into paying for and putting up with their totalitarianism. They bias and coerce government officials so that government favors females and harms men.

The Feminists acquire powerful bureaucratic and official positions in government in order to control the executive, legislative, and judicial branches of the federal, state and local governments so as to prevent the enforcement of men’s rights whenever it conflicts with the preferential treatment of girls and affect the transfer of wealth from men to girls.

The Feminists strip men of their rights by successfully lobbying legislators to pass laws discriminating against men. For example, they use Congress to pass bills of attainders against men. A bill of attainder singles out individuals of a particular group for legislatively prescribed punishment. If you belong to that group, then you can be punished without a trial, and it does not matter whether the legislation actually names you or just describes you in terms of conduct, such as “abuser.” *Communist Party of United States v. Subversive Activities Control Bd.*, 367 U.S. 1 (1961). The Violence Against Women’s Act is a recent example.

The Feminists corrupt the courts with laws that threaten to reduce funding unless certain Feminist tenets are followed, training of court personnel that’s steeped in Feminist doctrine, and social opprobrium used to ruin a judge’s career. Then they use the biased courts to grant them benefits they don’t deserve and shakedown men.

The Feminists created a large network of sex-equity apparatchiks who work tirelessly behind the scenes to transform American institutions according to strict Feminazi specifications.

Feminists control major philanthropic organizations, gain positions of influence within the media, coerce textbook and dictionary publishers to feminize the language.

They dominate the media and education that are used to preach the message that men are by nature barbarians.

Feminists now pose as damsels in distress in need of rescue by chivalrous male politicians from brutal, “uncaring” and “insensitive” men. While at the same time, the Feminist strategy focuses on getting the average man to think like a girl because its prior efforts were unsuccessful at getting the average female to behave like a man. They claim that yet another spoonful of Feminism will actually make males feel better when they live like girls.

### *Tactics:*

Feminism is just a public relations scam, like the “New Nixon” in 1968, to convince guys that girls are really angels.

From the most powerful leaders in the country, to the Feminazi tyrant next door, those who aim to exploit, control, and silence others predictably turn to personal attacks, lies, deception, and threats.

The personal is not political—it is private, but attacking the personal often gets results.

For example, Prof. Suzanne Steinmetz, University of Delaware, published a study that wives were just as likely as their husbands to kick, punch, stab, and otherwise physically attack their husbands. Feminazis began calling University of Delaware faculty members, deriding

Steinmetz's work as "anti-Feminist." Then they leveled threats against Steinmetz and her children. Sponsors of her speaking engagements started to receive threatening phone calls. Finally, a bomb threat was called into a meeting where Steinmetz was scheduled to speak. [www.law.fsu.edu/journals/lawreview/downloads/304/kelly.pdf](http://www.law.fsu.edu/journals/lawreview/downloads/304/kelly.pdf)

Females always demean men for fighting for their rights in the hope that men will do what most guys have done—lay down and let girls drive over their civil liberties, perhaps in a Mercedes Benz. A Feminazi might drive over me in her Benz, but there's no way I'm laying down in front of it for her.

One favorite Feminazi tactic is duress, which is any means amounting to or tending to induce another to do an act contrary to his free will. Black's Law Dictionary

Feminazis often try to act tough by putting on the demeanor of the scolding mother and well-rehearsed outrage. Don't be deceived; it's just a show—a lot of bluff and bluster. Respond with the facial and verbal hostility of an angered man, and they will crumble. Why do you think they are trying to make you feel guilty over your justified anger? Because it scares the bejesus out of them.

Tantalized by the idea that belief was a form of power, Feminist scholars in Women's Studies Programs went on a rampage of replacing knowledge with beliefs. Anything can be true when you ignore the facts.

"If they can get you asking the wrong questions, they don't have to worry about the answers." Thomas Pynchon

Feminazis do not care whether their statements are true or not, so long as they can use it to their advantage and it will make them look good. They are masters of Ms.-information. If someone calls them on it, they'll just get emotional— feign indignation or cry like Hillary Clinton did to win the New Hampshire primary in 2008.

The Feminazis use the typical Commie routine of trying to elicit sympathy from someone and pretending to be trustworthy in order to manipulate themselves into a position from which they can sink a knife into a person's back.

Feminists take full advantage of men's gentlemanly reluctance to publicly oppose and thwart females. Time for men to stop yielding the right of way or wrong of way to them.

Feminists often use anecdotal examples to depict all men as barbarians rather than statistical sampling on which generalities are logically based. Statistical generalities are generally true in that they are about the average person within a particular classification. Anecdotal stories are meaningless, since any group has a few bad apples. But such cherry picked tales do overtime create a false impression.

The Feminazis, who regularly scourer the media for the worst anecdotal stories about men, are simply engaging in Goebbels type propaganda of guilt by belonging to a particular group.

When one group is depicted as evil, it's an easy step for others to tell everyone that the members of that group are actually to blame for the wrong that others do.

The Feminists tell everyone that men are to blame for all the wrong that they've done.

### Feminazi Power

Money is power in America and the Feminazis have plenty of it from the following sources: government, wealthy widows, foundations, corporations, and wives writing checks on their husband's bank accounts. The money goes to nonprofit Feminist organizations that provide

free legal assistance, propaganda for the media, indoctrination of government employees under the guise of training programs, political contributions, and lobbying.

Under the Violence Against Women's Act, the Family Violence Prevention and Services Act, and other laws, Feminist organizations receive around \$1 billion dollars a year from the federal government.

Feminist organizations usually have two sides: one that allegedly does charitable and educational work for which government tax dollars largely pay for, and the other side that lobbies for legislation discriminating against men and for supporting Feminist political candidates. Since government money goes into supporting the educational side, it frees up private contributions for the lobbying and political side.

With tax dollars, mainly from the pockets of men, and private contributions, mainly from money earned by men, the Feminazis have remade this society over the past four decades. They have used the influence of money with all branches of the government—federal, state, and local, and their positions of authority within government and private organizations to corrupt and intimidate institutions into violating or ignoring the rights of men.

In addition to money, Feminazi power depends not on the number of true believers or the number of females in positions of power, but those intimidated into appeasing the Feminists or remaining neutral. In the former Soviet Union, 17 million members of the Communist Party ruled over 300 million people.

If the Feminist were powerless in Congress because only 16% of the members are females, then they'd never would have gotten the Violence Against Women's Act passed, or more money for medical reach on female health problems than male health, or the creation of a Women's Health Office even though they live longer than men.

Feminazism is supported by collective rights-dominated law school curricula; Feminism-riddled "cultural studies" that infect the humanities; women's studies departments, in reality Feminist recruitment and networking centers and ideological boot camps; politically powerful, tax-funded Feminist groups who extend strategic support to a wide substratum of female causes; and a critical mass of ideologically corrupt or fearful judges whose juridical archives—bristling with subjective, sex-biased judgments—discredit their vocation and make a mockery of the whole notion of equality under the law.

In effect, Feminazism has become a state supported religion with a *de facto* governmental inquisition to enforce conformity. *See Miss Columbia* below.

So influential are the pressure groups run by seriously vindictive females that female favoritism infests the judiciary. Family judges automatically believe the female over the man out of fear of being ostracized from the politically-correct, white-trash, effete Eastern intellectual elite. (White-trash as in they will end up on the "trash heap of history"). Judges know that if they examine the facts and find that the man is more capable of raising a child, the shrill alarms of Feminazism will ring loud and clear against him.

The Feminists also have networks of Internet bloggers for personally attacking anyone who disagrees with them (just search my name). Remember, to them the personal is political and their key weapon of attack.

The Feminists have producers and editors in television news and at newspapers who overtly and subtly skew stories in favor of females. NBC's Brian Williams in reporting on the 35<sup>th</sup> anniversary of the fall of Saigon said, "58,000 Americans died in that war." That creates a false impression that a lot of American females died in the war, which is false—only eight died in the

armed forces. NBC always gives females credit for their sacrifices, so it should give guys credit for theirs—but it doesn't because of the power of Feminist ideology.

If a reporter questions whether the Feminists control the power structure in this country, respond: "What do you mean the Feminazis aren't in the power structure? You're a powerful guy and you wouldn't dare say anything against them."

With all the money, their media and political clout, the Feminists are pretty much getting what they want—a tyranny over men. Madison defined a tyranny as when one group controls the three branches of government. Feminists want a tyranny over men, so they'll be treated like princesses—do what I want, when I want, and read my mind before I have to tell you what I want, and make it quick!

### Feminazi Voodoo Science

Feminism is an unholy spirit that endeavors to remake society by reshaping our view of reality, and it knows that nothing buttresses an agenda more than conjuring up a specious scientific basis that's Orwellian in its logic and inverted in its reason.

Like proponents of slavery who relied on polygenesis and ethnographic pseudo sciences, Feminists rely on pseudo facts and unscientific reasoning to claim men are barbarians, buffoons, and moronic brutes.

Feminazis are as ignorant and blind to science as the prosecutors in the Scopes trial. For example, Feminists wrongly believe their upbringing made them weak, illogical, emotional, and condemned to hot flashes, but it was Mother Nature—it's in their genes.

"By denying the role of nature in women's lives, leading feminists created a denatured, antiseptic movement that protected their bourgeois lifestyle and falsely promised that women could have it all. Camille Paglia.

Feminism has frightened an entire generation of young men (millennials) into being confused about how they should behave around girls lest they be labeled misogynist.

### Fights

A fight not joined is a fight not enjoyed.

### Finance

Lack of financing is the key detriment to the men's movement. *See essay Why Can't the Men's Movement Get Its Act Together?*

### Firearms

A girl's tongue is her gun, so why should men disarm unless females are muzzled.

If the teachers at the Newton School had been packing, the Looney Tune would not have gone to that school. He would have hit a McDonalds instead, and those who eat there don't have long to live anyway.

When a lunatic shows up with a gun, what do you want for a defense—PC ideology or a six-shooter?

## Freedom of Speech

“The proponents of the First Amendment ... were determined that every American should possess an unrestrained freedom to express his views, however odious they might be to vested interests whose power they might challenge.” *Feldman v. United States*, 322 U.S. 487, 501 (1944)(Mr. Justice Black dissenting).

“An unconditional right to say what one pleases about public affairs is what I consider to be the minimum guarantee of the First Amendment.” *N.Y. Times v. Sullivan*, 376 U.S. 254, 297 (1964)(Mr. Justice Black concurring).

The purpose of freedom of speech is to protect speech that is adverse and unpopular to those in power. It's not to protect trendy, acceptable speech because that type of speech doesn't need protection, since the establishment of the day will do all it can to make you say it.

The Feminazis don't respect the first amendment but mock it. They want to put chains on your mind and tongue. By limiting free speech, they distort our capacity to make choices of action.

When a Feminazi tries to censor your speech, respond: “What's more important, your freedom of speech or my subjective sensitivities, and yes I said that right.” The juxtaposition of what she expected will throw her off, and maybe, maybe make her think, although I doubt it.

Or say, “I don't try to censor your speech, why do you try to censor mine.” She'll deny it, so reply, “Oh yes you are. The legal terminology is trying to chill a person's speech, which is exactly your intent.”

Or tell her, “You're not the official American Censor. I don't have to justify the words I use to you. It's my right to choose the words I speak. The exercise of a right requires no explanation, no justification; otherwise, it would no longer be a right.”

If a Feminist says, “You mean ‘women’ not girls.” Respond, “‘women’” I'm not familiar with that term. What does it mean?”

Feminists often whine, “*But ‘women’ is a term of respect.*” To which I respond, “And I use it for those ladies I respect, but I don't respect Feminists or those who try to censor my speech.”

When Feminists criticize your speech as not “appropriate,” retort, “You use the term ‘appropriate’ by which, I assume, you mean to appropriate the freedom of speech of anyone who disagrees with you.”

When a Feminazi says she finds what you said “offensive,” tell her, “The truth cannot be an insult.” It's a quote from Charlie Chan.

Or say any of the following: “Grow up; the world does not revolve around your exaggerated sensitivities,” “Then cry,” “Tough,” “Offensive by whose standards,” “You find that offensive; how about this. How many incipient human beings have you murdered? I've murdered none,” “I've only been my most sensitive with you,” “I'm uncivil to anyone who's uncivil to me, and if you don't like it, then you shouldn't act uncivil in the first place,” “That's a phony feeling and exaggerated self-centered sensitivity,” “No man could make you blush, dear child.”

The Supreme Court has explicitly held on numerous occasions that speech cannot be restricted simply because it offends people. The purpose of freedom of speech is to protect offensive and unpopular speech.

In *Street v. New York*, 394 U.S. 576, 592 (1969), the court held “[i]t is firmly settled that under our Constitution the public expression of ideas may not be prohibited merely because the ideas are themselves offensive to some of their hearers.”

In *Papish v. Board of Curators of the University of Missouri*, 410 U.S. 667, 670 (1973), the court held that “the mere dissemination of ideas—no matter how offensive to good taste—on a state university campus may not be shut off in the name alone of ‘conventions of decency.’”

You don’t have to think what the Feminazis tell you to, you don’t have to say what they want, nor act in a way they deem acceptable. Tell them to go sell their Kool Aid some place else. (I got that expression from the husband of my former typists long before TV talk show hosts were using it).

The principle of free thought is not free thought for those who agree with a particular group, but free thought for those who disagree.

“Those who won our independence believed that the final end of the state was to make men free to develop their faculties, and that in its government the deliberative forces should prevail over the arbitrary. They valued liberty both as an end and as a means. They believed liberty to be the secret of happiness and courage to be the secret of liberty. They believed that freedom to think as you will and to speak as you think are means indispensable to the discovery and spread of political truth; that without free speech and assembly discussion would be futile; that with them, discussion affords ordinarily adequate protection against the dissemination of noxious doctrine; that the greatest menace to freedom is an inert people; that public discussion is a political duty; and that this should be a fundamental principle of the American government. They recognized the risks to which all human institutions are subject. But they knew that order cannot be secured merely through fear of punishment for its infraction; that it is hazardous to discourage thought, hope and imagination; that fear breeds repression; that repression breeds hate; that hate menaces stable government; that the path of safety lies in the opportunity to discuss freely supposed grievances and proposed remedies; and that the fitting remedy for evil counsels is good ones. Believing in the power of reason as applied through public discussion, they eschewed silence coerced by law—the argument of force in its worst form. Recognizing the occasional tyrannies of governing majorities, they amended the Constitution so that free speech and assembly should be guaranteed. *Whitney v. California*, 274 U.S. 357, 375 (1927) (Mr. Justice Brandeis concurring).

“Those who deny freedom to others, deserve it not themselves.” Abraham Lincoln

“[Free speech] is not complicated: Students and faculty have rights to invite speakers to the campus. Others have rights to hear them. Those who wish to protest have rights to do so. No one, however, shall have the right or the power to use the cover of protest to silence speakers. This is a sacrosanct and inviolable principle.” Lee Bollinger, President Columbia University.

As Oliver Wendell Holmes said, “We should be eternally vigilant against attempts to check the expression that we loathe.”

The Feminazis are using their bloody tampon hands of editorial censorship to throttle the First Amendment rights of men.

The delusion of America today is in its claim that the citizens are engaged in free and open debate, all the while holding one of the parties gagged, blind-folded, and hog-tied. Try saying Feminazi on the airways or in the press.



In this country a man can be punished for what he thinks and what he says just because it criticizes the powerful special interest group of the moment. Now I know how a protestant felt in medieval Europe or a Catholic in Anglican England.

I'm not about to conform my thoughts, speech, or actions to any special interest group, especially the Feminazis, in order to serve their interests, which are not mine. It's called standing up to a bully. The Feminazis and their supporters have been coercing and intimidating lots of guys for decades into censoring their speech, and to my amazement, they have gotten away with it.

### *Anti-Feminazi Essays*

Here's an example of how the Feminists try to censor speech.

A female, Feminist lawyer, and her Wall Street law firm took six of my anti-Feminazi essays and submitted them in federal court in the Ladies' Nights. None of the essays had any relevance to the case. She submitted the essays to prejudice the judge against me, which a federal judge concluded in a copyright infringement action I brought against the lawyer.

Some of the following arguments that I used against this lawyer may be of some help if you run into a similar situation in which you are being criticized for exercising your First Amendment right to think, speak, and write as you wish.

The italicized words set up various responses. Assume the italicized words are questions by a third party. The essays are at [www.roydenhollander.com](http://www.roydenhollander.com), under *Articles*.

#### *Describe the essays.*

Take your typical Feminist tirade against men, switch the sexes, add some facts, and reduce the emotionalism.

What I wrote doesn't compare to what the Feminazis have been saying about guys for the past 40 years. I guess they can dish it out but can't take it.

There's a double standard here in which females can say what they want about guys and receive applause and curtsies, but the moment a guy returns the favor—it's off with his head, or both heads.

One Feminazi, Sally Miller Gearhart, *The Future Is Female*, p. 271, advocates reducing the male population to 25%. I'm not advocating genocide against girls. In fact, I believe all pretty young American and foreign ladies should be given a one-way ticket to New York City, and I will personally escort them around town.

#### *Did you write these essays?*

Of course I did, my name is on them, and they're copyrighted under my name. Who'd you think wrote them George Sand?

Why do you ask? Does that make me guilty of a thought crime, of a speech crime?

If not, then why are you questioning me about exercising my right to free speech? Do you work for the Inquisition?

Are you telling me that when a man exercises one of his fundamental rights and the Feminists don't like it or disagree with it, he has to justify or explain to them why he exercised that right? I don't think so, not in the America where I grew up.

If I can't say what I want, write what I want, without justifying it to those who disagree with me, then I have no right of free speech and neither does anyone else.

Do you have to justify exercising the freedom of the press (if answering a reporter)?

Anyone demand to know why you practice the religion you do?

Anyone, other than your wife or girlfriend, demand a reason for the people you hang out with?

The exercise of a right requires no explanation, no justification; otherwise, that right will be coerced into disuse.

I'm not running for office; I'll speak the truth as I see it.

I don't claim to be a moderate—I'm a card-carrying member of SDS, Students for a Democratic Society, I'm a radical, a gray haired radical, but still a radical.

I don't care what the Feminazis think, I don't care what you think, and I don't care what everybody in this country thinks—it's my right to think as I will and speak as I choose—according to Justice Brandeis. If people don't like it—tough!

That Feminist lawyer tried and got a federal judge to rule in her favor because I chose to exercise my free speech. That's contrary to the very principle behind the First Amendment—you know that.

*Starts to read excerpts:*

You sure you want to read those, they're copyrighted. Gotcha, don't I. Go ahead read all you want.

*Why did you write them?*

To show the Feminists that there is at least one man in this county whom they cannot intimate into censoring his speech. Actually, there are probably around 200 men left in this country.

Give the Feminists a taste of their own medicine—hand back the apple, or is it the poison apple?

To show that females have free speech but guys don't, unless they say what the Feminists want them to say. Karl Marx would call it heightening the contradictions, or as I call it, exposing hypocrisy.

My intent was to be inflammatory, provocative, and to tick-off the Feminists. I didn't just sit down and scribble off a stream of unconscious rant. I put a lot thought, research, and work into those essays in an effort to so upset the Feminists that they would once again expose their hypocrisy—that girls have free speech but guys do not.

I tried to do what Frederick Douglas advised: “agitate, agitate, agitate.” To provoke, incite, and foment.

Stir things up in the culture wars—start a fight. To goad the Feminists and PCers into exposing their double standards. Apparently I was successful, because a large law firm used my criticism of Feminism and political correctionalism to convince a federal court to decide against me, not on the issues, but because my agitating against Feminist dogma doesn't conform to the predominant American belief system or that of judges.

My aim was and is to turn the tables on the Feminazis. Do to them what they've done to men. For the past 40 years, they have demonized, denigrated, demeaned and dissed men, and

they've been largely successful at it. They created an image that men are evil, the sole source of all the world's ills: poverty, injustice, violence, and warfare. Men are the great Satan and females the innocent virtuous victims—baloney!

I'm trying to take a cattle prod to the rear ends of the Feminazis, kick over the pedestal on which they've placed females with the same kind of denunciations they make against men but switching the sexes—girls are to blame for everything bad, and guys are responsible for everything good.

I simply switched the sexes to counter the false image of men by using the same strategy as the Feminazis. But I needed different descriptors, such as bimbettes, bimbo, bimbat, broads, ditz, dames, etc. in referring to them and describing the evil they do.

If it worked for the Feminazis maybe it will work for guys. And if it does, then the scales will tip back into balance to show the reality that both girls and guys are equally capable of evil and stupidity and that females have no a monopoly on virtue.

Feminazis try to excuse females of all responsibility and culpability for the ills of society. I'm trying to put the apple back into the hands of the one who offered it. She offered it and he ate it, so in reality both are culpable.

Attack the Feminazi stereotype of females as angels by showing that girls are more than capable of viciousness, evil, and stupidity and are not the innocent victims of a male conspiracy.

To counter the Feminazi ideology of sexual enmity and scapegoating that is animated by a spirit of resentment and a desire for vindictive triumph over men.

Confront the Feminazi worldview and their quest for total power over men. Just look at how your girlfriend or wife bosses you around the house—do you want that at work and in the society at large?

*These essays are “inflammatory” and “misogynistic.”*

They're inflammatory but not misogynistic. You can't hate that which you lust after. Now, that's not to say that I'm not wary of all those hot young ladies who have an uncanny ability to make me do something stupid, but they just require caution. As for the Feminists, whom I do not lust after, I do not hate them—I despise them.

The Feminazis have been hammering guys as modern day devils for so long that it has become acceptable. Okay, if it's acceptable to do that to guys, then equality demands that it's acceptable to do it to girls.

If someone said something against the Nazis in Germany, he'd end up in a concentration camp, or against the Commies in Russia, in the Gulag. Because I criticized the Feminists and their female supporters, federal judges ruled against me. Now that's not as bad as under the Nazis or the Commies, but it is the same totalitarian mind set—and in America over 200 years after the Constitution, it works in one of the allegedly more prestigious trial courts in the land—the U.S. Southern District Court of N.Y. and the second most prestigious appeal court—the Second Circuit Court of Appeals.

*There's a lot of female epithets in these essays.*

Feminists are always slinging epithets at guys: male chauvinist pigs, Neanderthals, brutes, genetic rapists, genetic murderers, etc. Nobody ever calls them on it, so why am I being singled out? Because I'm a man.

*Broad*: If 18,000 females can call themselves “broads,” as do the members of the organization 85 Broads, then so can I. See 85Broads.com.

You know, broad across the chest. Something I definitely don’t dislike but find desirable.

According to the *American Heritage Dictionary*, it’s slang for a girl, but I used it to refer to a Feminazi trying to do a man’s work or to hos.

*Bimbette, Bimbo, Bimbat*: according to *Wikipedia*, it means stupid, a state of mind that reflects a person who exaggerates the effort and value put into her physical attractiveness. I use it as a term for incompetence.

No one can believe, no matter how biased, that incompetent females don’t exist, especially when they are doing a man’s job.

*Ditz, Airhead*: same as bimbo.

*Dames*: took that from the movie *Laura* with Dana Andrews and Gene Tierney, means girls.

Madams and my ex-wife, I called *sluts* because they are prostitutes.

*Why did the opposing lawyer introduce the essays into court in the Ladies’ Nights case?*

To bias the federal judge against me.

The lawyer was trying to get the court to punish me for my freedom of speech by ruling in her favor, which the court did. Her success resulted from the judge treating the case as an inquisition to punish a modern-day heretic.

That attorney is like most people: conformists and sycophants who are too scared to do anything but go along with the crowd and unwilling to think for themselves. The Nazis and Commies would have loved her.

Conformity to establishment beliefs is always a refuge for scoundrels. Conformists believe others will respond like they would when charged with a thought crime or speech crime. Conformists simply cannot handle “diversity” of thought, speech, and action. They try to act cool and tough, but underneath their exteriors, they’re scared little girls.

If you reverse the sexes, these essays would not have been introduced in any court. No one would dare use essays that had nothing to do with court proceedings to sway a judge into deciding against a Feminist based on her speech against men.

In a sense, I should thank the attorney for doing what the essays were intended: pointing out the double standard in America.

*What happened in the copyright action you brought against the attorney who used your essays without your permission?*

The federal Judge decided to rule against me because he disagreed with the content of the essays, the ideas they communicated. Now copyright infringement actions don’t deal with content, only whether someone uses the same arrangement of words as the author wrote, which the attorney did. The judge, either a Feminist sycophant himself, or too scared to follow the law when it meant ruling in favor of a man, ignored the law and ruled the attorney’s unauthorized use was fair use. The judge, however, did say about the Feminist attorney that her “stated justification for her submission of the Essays to Judge Cederbaum appears somewhat

disingenuous. The relevancy of the Essays to Hollander's recusal motion is dubious, and she undoubtedly intended simply to prejudice Judge Cederbaum against Hollander."

One funny part of the copyright case was that this "tough and independent" female lawyer used the Nuremberg or the Geraldine defense. She actually argued that a male androgyny lawyer made her to it.

### Generality

The criticisms of females and Feminist are generalities; i.e., generally true or talking about the average person.

### Gentlemen

A man who is courteous and civil until you violate his rights. Then he's your worst nightmare.

### Girlfriend

I've got a girl friend; we've been going together for over a decade now—her name is Jihada, or, in English, the never-ending war.

As for females, no more relationships, I've learned my lesson. Remember, men kill themselves 10 to 12 times more frequently when relationships end.

All I'm interested in now is partying—fleeting cavorts with pretty young demonesses—anything longer is too dangerous. I've danced with the devil once too often in a relationship and don't want to do that again. Now, it's just short flings.

*What's your batting average?* I don't keep track, I already have enough depression to deal with.

*Do you live alone?* It's just me and my demons. Demons are simply memories you'd rather forget but can't.

"When looking for the beloved, even monsters are welcome." Mephistopheles in Goethe's *Faust*

Relationships are not salvation but damnation. "For behind their cheeks as red as roses, I expect a sudden metamorphosis" once they've captured their primary beau. Mephistopheles in Goethe's *Faust*.

Girlfriends want to control you, and to do it, they use emotional intimidation, verbal assaults, and, today, threats of government intervention. It makes them feel powerful to make you feel bad. They engage in schoolyard name calling, psychopathologizing (armed with a superficial knowledge of psychology they use diagnostic terms to create a false impression they are an authority on the subject), criticizing, threatening, screaming, yelling, swearing, sarcasm, humiliation, and mockery. It all falls under the descriptive term—nagging.

Girlfriends demand you drop whatever you're doing and attend to their wishes. No matter the inconvenience, they come first. They have an endless list of demands that no mere mortal could ever fulfill.

They are chronic complainers: you're not romantic enough, you don't spend enough time with her, you're not sensitive enough, you're not smart enough to figure out her needs, you're not making enough money, you're just not enough period.

Girlfriends are pathological inventors of false imagines; that is, they're liars. Such as, "I didn't do that. I didn't say that. I don't know what you're talking about. It wasn't that bad. You're imagining things. Stop making things up."

Girlfriends, as with most females, swing back and forth emotionally with the disequilibrium chemical reactions bubbling in their bodies. They react differently to the same situation on different days or at different times.

Girlfriends intentionally create melodrama so as to believe their lives fit within the Hollywood requirements. They deliberately start arguments to keep you engaged or as a way to get you to react to her with hostility. With the later, she can accuse you of being abusive and play the victim.

They play on your fears, vulnerabilities, weaknesses, shame, values, sympathy, compassion, and other "buttons" to control you in order to get what they want.

They put down your ideas, suggestions, sports, and most things that are important to you.

Girlfriends verbally trash your friends and family, and start arguments in front of others to make it as unpleasant as possible for others to be around the two of you in an effort to isolate you from those who have your interests at heart.

I don't care if I don't have a steady girl friend—I don't give a damn. Only one night or two nights stands from now on.

### Glass Ceiling

I don't have a problem with 18 million cracks walking around on a glass ceiling.

### Glory

"The more confidently individualistic someone is, the greater the influence he is likely to have." Ralph Waldo Emerson

The vast, vast majority of people are irrelevant—surplus population, and those that are not, from the perspective of the universe, are still irrelevant.

### Help

I receive a lot of calls and emails for help—mainly from guys but some from ladies. The Feminist establishment trampled their rights and treated them as though they were garbage.

The people making these requests for help don't have the power or the money to make it right—to win some justice.

Now I may have the power in my knowledge of the law and my lack of fear of the Feminists, judges, and government officials, but I too don't have the money; not money to live a lavish life style but to just survive.

I've been fighting the Feminist establishment for over a decade. The house is gone, the motorcycle is gone, the stocks and bonds are gone, and the gold and silver spent. If I win the lottery, I'll be able to help those crushed under the boot heel of Feminazism by setting up an

anti-Feminazi law firm. But if I don't, and it's not likely, then it's time for a stupid and futile act—civil disobedience.

Of course, all you guys out there, could go into your girlfriends' pocketbooks, take out all the paper with pictures of famous Americans and send them to me.

### Hip Hop Class

Androgynies often call me various names for taking a hip hop class. Perhaps it's an expression of their fear of girls or innate insecurity. But no matter, they're the ones missing out on the pleasure of inhaling the pheromones of pretty young ladies and watching the beads of sweat roll down their enticing curves. A room full of pretty young sweating ladies and one middle-aged heterosexual male—me, what's not to like.

One class had over 80 pretty, young, sweating girls. I counted them. That's better than what Bin Laden offered, and you don't have to die for them, maybe deplete your bank account, but not die. Of course, they're not all virgins, but that's okay.

As bizarre as it might sound, girls are actually impressed when I do a few hip hop moves in a nightclub—much more so than when I tell them I'm a lawyer. I wish I had known that years ago. It would have saved me a lot of money and stupidities trying to impress them.

### Hos

Ho means Gold-Digger.

"They hand you some words that are nice to listen to." Mike Hammer

I'm still waiting for the movie "Hos of 2010." Presumably, it will star my ex-wife.

Ludacris' song about my ex-wife, *Ho*, was so accurate, I thought he must have known her.

Hos are strictly poison below the gravy.

Hos are more than capable of ho-hosting many guys.

Nothing holier than a reformed ho. Of course, hos only reform when no one wants them anymore.

Time to muzzle these tattletale tarts disclosing secrets or inventing stories just to make a buck or demean a man.

If some ho quotes from Pink's song "I'm not here for your entertainment," put her down with: And I'm not here to buy you a drink/ You gold digging tarts are all the same/ Go fine another one to play your game/ We came here to drink and have some fun/ Not to make you think you're the only one.

You could also refer to Gretchen's Brother in Goethe's *Faust*, "You're a whore, so you might as well play it to the hilt." But a ho would never understand the literary significance of the reference.

*The Arabian Nights* story about King Shahryar and His Brother got it right:

"Rely not on women,

Trust not to their hearts,

Whose joy and whose sorrow

Are hung to their parts!

Lying love they will swear thee

Whence guile never departs:

Take Yasuf for sample  
Ware sleights and ware smarts  
Satan ousted Adam  
See ye not through their arts.”

New Year’s Eve 2012, my buddy of mine and I hit a bar on Second Avenue. We’re minding our own business—well almost minding our own business. A couple of British dames, 23 and 25, are standing right behind us, so we took the opportunity. I ended up with the 23 year old who was a Jesus freak and daughter of a pastor. But she got so drunk, I refused to bed. So she resorts of fire and brimstone accusing me of liking boys. “No that’s not a problem I have,” I replied. She grabbed her friend and stormed out. I’m sufficiently vain to have an inflated opinion of my powers of seduction, but when a strange girl I just met wants to have sex, I worry about my physical health. Not my mental health because I don’t have any. If she’s willing to sleep with me, then there are literally millions of guys out there she’s willing to sleep with. And there’s always the threat that she’ll wake up in the morning with second thoughts and accuse me of rape.

### Hypocrisy

Typical female, she wants her cake and to be eaten too. Did I say that right?

A girl takes a man’s job and then expects him to buy her a drink, flowers and trinkets.

When a Feminist claims she’s as good as a man in an occupation traditionally filled by men, tell her “Quit deluding yourself. Stick to a game you can win—T and A.”

Feminazis angrily proclaim they are strong and independent except when it is convenient to be weak and dependent. When society is handing out its perks, they play the tough-guy, but when society dispenses its worst, they suddenly transform into protected princesses.

Feminazis want equal rights but unequal responsibilities. They believe men should shoulder the responsibilities while females enjoy society’s benefits.

When a girl screws up and is rightly criticized, they whine, “gender discrimination,” because they believe in the Victorian adage, “Take it easy on her . . . she’s only a girl.”

The Victorian Era pedestal has not vanished. It’s simply been modified to include all the benefits of society but none of the burdens.

The Feminists preach equality, accept favoritism, win with stacked decks, pretend they had no advantage, and then flaunt their success.

The Feminazis promised sex liberation, but now people are dependent on the Nanny State. They claimed no fancy for special treatment, now they have affirmative action. They said they only wanted to give females a voice, now we’ve got speech codes. They claimed to be for equality in education, now boys are struggling just to keep up in school.

The personal is the political—only if the target is a man.

Feminists sound like Klaners calling Nazis white.

Better to live in Russia “where despotism can be taken pure without the base alloy of hypocrisy.” Abraham Lincoln

### Infidelity

Guys cheat because girls do—read some anthropology.



I didn't cheat on my former girlfriends because I was ethical. I didn't cheat because I can only handle the stupidities of one girl at a time.

In their relationships, females follow a very predictable pattern: they push men for commitment, they get it, they lose interest in the guy, they become attracted to someone else, they start cheating, they become angry and resentful, they begin telling their boyfriends that they need time apart, they blame their boyfriends for their behavior, and, eventually, after making themselves and everyone around them miserable for an indefinite, but usually long period of time, they end their relationships or marriages. Michelle Langley, *Women's Infidelity*.

### Immigration

There are so many illegals in this town (New York City); I'm surprised anyone can speak grammatically correct English anymore. The general rule now is "if it sounds wrong, then it's right."

I think every pretty young lady who wants to come to America should be given a one-way ticket to my hometown: New York City.

12 million illegals going through a legal process to become legal will generate a lot of money for the only people who will understand the process—lawyers.

### Immigration Marriage Broker Regulation Act (2005)

The federal Immigration Marriage Broker Regulation Act ("IMBRA") is another Feminazi attack on the First Amendment right of U.S. Citizens, mainly men, to speak with and marry whomever they choose. Marriage is considered a fundamental right under the Constitution.

Any U.S. citizen searching for a foreign mate over the Internet or through a mail-order-bride firm must undergo a background check before he can even talk with a foreign girl via the Internet or mail. The alleged purpose is to protect foreign females from brutish American men, but the Feminists' real agenda is to restrict American men to the pool of American females.

The background check requires a U.S. male to provide intimate information to an alien female, such as the ages and residences of all his children under 18 and every place the citizen lived since he was 18 years old. In fairness, the alien should also be required to answer intimate questions but isn't. Questions such as:

- How many abortions did she have? (I don't know about you, but I'd like to know if the person I'm about to go out with killed any incipient human beings. Particularly, if she's a serial killer.)
- How many times did she cheat on a boyfriend or husband?
- How many times did she pretend to like a guy in a bar, so he would buy her a drink?
- How many times did she lie about using a contraceptive when she wasn't?
- How many times did she intentionally cause her boyfriend or husband emotional distress?
- What anti-American organizations is she connected with?

In addition, require alien females to take lie detector tests for each question given their propensity to lie in order to gain entry into the U.S. These types of questions should also be required for any American girl dating an American guy, since their propensity to lie is only minimally less than alien females.

IMBRA also effectively limits the number of fiancée visas a citizen can sponsor to two. Only U.S. citizens pursuing foreigners are so restricted in their First Amendment associational right to date and marry.

Since when is the federal government in the business of protecting alien hos? Shouldn't it be more concerned with protecting its own citizens and borders by requiring foreign girls advertising on the Internet to answer questions and obtain a doctor's certificate that they are free of venereal diseases before they can engage in commercial speech with U.S. citizens?

The reason the Feminazis intimidated Congress into passing IMBRA and VAWA was because no guy in his right mind would date an American Feminist. U.S. guys aren't looking for a serf or a slave—that's what the Feminists want. A guy wants a partner who can help and whom he can help. A partnership requires compromise. When was the last time you tried to compromise with an American female? It's impossible because the Feminists have convinced them that they are modern-day princesses deserving of anything they want. Guys, therefore, turn overseas looking for evolutionarily correct females. To curtail that, the Feminists got Congress to pass VAWA and IMBRA, which dramatically increased the risk under U.S. law for courting foreign babes.

Don't forget that Orwell's *1984* dealt with a government interfering with a relationship and disclosing information to a female in order to break up that relationship.

### Jihada for Justice

That's "Jihada" with an "a." I wouldn't want to be accused of gender insensitivity in this day and age.

In English, it's the 100 years war.

I'm loving it, Moochie versus City Hall.

I fight the PC-Feminists and have a lot of fun doing it. It's almost as interesting as my past anti-Vietnam War days.

There's a higher authority than the law passed by those with much flesh or much office.

I will fight the Feminazis until my last dollar, my last breath, and if there is anything after death, I will fight them for eternity.

I'm a lawyer who fights malevolent people, and, as we all know, that's a losing proposition in this life.

### *Objective*

I'm not trying to tell people how to live their lives—just stay off of my rights.

I won't bother you, if you don't bother me.

Besides being a lot of fun and laughs, the reasons for my campaign against the evils of Feminism is to do what little I can toward justice—not a lot, just a little. Try to influence the creation of a meritocracy and bring females some of the same "equality" that men have enjoyed in this country for the past 40 years. Have the institutions of this society treat females the way those institutions have treated men.

Girls have been riding for free on the backs of men for thousands of years. It's time they pay their own way, stand on their own two feet, and act like the "women" the Feminazis keep saying they are.

I'm trying to turn the tables on those who advocate a unisex society by taking the burdens of equality and ramming it down their throats. Throw the pie of equality into their faces. Then they'll change their tune, and we can get back to the reality of the differences between the sexes.

For over 40 years the Feminists have been ranting about equality. Let's give them 51% of the worst of society.

I'm not fighting girls; I'm fighting the Feminists and all those androgynous guys who are tricked or scared into doing their bidding.

Initially, I thought the first of the trilogy of men's rights cases, Ladies' Nights, was a sure win, since I knew of a case from the same court with a near identical fact situation, except the people discriminated against were females not males. However, I quickly learned that the courts consider men to have no rights when challenging the preferential treatment girls receive. At that point, the objective of the anti-Feminist or men's rights cases changed to "heightening the contradictions," in the words of Karl Marx, to show people the double standard and hypocrisy of Feminist and governmental claims to truth, justice, and equality.

If I had found the financing, I would have brought one lawsuit after another demanding that girls be treated the same way men are, but financing is just not available from the government, foundations, or even guys for litigating men's rights.

What is needed now is a really futile and stupid gesture that may set an example.

In the end, I know exactly where I'm going. The trick is getting there so that I can continue fighting the Feminazis.

### *Strategy and Tactics*

Don't get angry—escalate. Attack, attack, attack.

"Agitate, agitate, agitate," Frederick Douglas exhorted a women's suffrage meeting on February 20, 1895. When he returned home, he died of a heart attack.

I try to fight them any way I can, which includes trying to boil the caldron of public opinion.

In America there are three roads to justice: lawsuits, legislation, and revolution. I tried lawsuits, but now I'm hoping for a revolution.

Often the most violent of actions may not be the act of someone trying to control others, but the act of a person who gave up on justice.

### Jokes

I'm at my most serious when joking.

When you lose your power to laugh, you lose your power to think straight.

"Humor is the very essence of a democratic society." The Prisoner.

Sometimes it can be helpful to have people believe you are a joke.

The chances of the courts upholding the rights of men are about equal to some young lady paying my way on a date.

*Hasn't that ever happened?*

The closest was when the NYC Controller's mother paid for our dates, but then I was in

my 20s and she in her 40s and a member of the City Council.

*Homeland Security declared you could not work in America. Are you an illegal alien?*

No, my Spanish is not that good.

*Are you a U.S. Citizen?*

Yes, I'm the classic ugly American. I believe in the superiority of the Constitution over the barbarity of the Third World.

I may be naïve, but after a time I finally learn. Back when I was fighting for some justice against my ex-wife and her Russian mafia and Feminist associates, I learned a lesson. Whenever a man fights to vindicate his rights against females, and tries to use American institutions, it's best to ask for what he doesn't want. Then he'll have a chance at getting what he wants.

If I'm interested in a girl, I'm as gentle as a ram.

If ever interviewed by same girl twice on TV, "We've got to stop meeting like this in front of everyone."

At the close of a speech, "If any of you pretty young ladies have questions, then just give me your phone numbers."

This morning was good, then I got up.

Dumb man + smart female = marriage.

A man will pay \$20 for a \$10 item he needs. A female will pay \$10 for a \$20 item she doesn't need.

A female worries about the future until she gets a husband. A man never worries about the future until he gets a wife.

Every guy has been subjected to the intentional infliction of emotional distress by his girlfriend or wife—why do you think guys die sooner.

A successful man is one who makes more money than his wife can spend. A successful female is one who can find such a man.

Married men live longer than single men do, but married men are a lot more willing to die.

A man marries a female expecting that she won't change, and she does.

A female has the last word in any argument. Anything a man says after that is the beginning of a new argument.

Girls brains are smaller than guys because they don't need them; they can rely on their bodies.

The most inconsiderate person is a girl with her kid. The second most inconsiderate is a girl with her boyfriend.

Sounds like illegal alien English to me.

*The following are various quotes:*

"They're out there protesting what they actually wish would happen to them." Limbaugh  
When a man steals your wife, there is no better revenge than to let him keep her.

After marriage, husband and wife become two sides of a coin; they just can't face each other, but still they stay together.

By all means marry. If you get a good wife, you'll be happy. If you get a bad one, you'll become a philosopher.

Women inspire us to great things, and prevent us from achieving them.

The great question, which I have not been able to answer, is, "What does a woman want?" It depends on the time of the month.

I had some words with my wife, and she had some paragraphs with me.

"Some people ask the secret of our long marriage. We take time to go to a restaurant two times a week with a little candlelight, dinner, soft music and dancing. She goes Tuesdays, I go Fridays."

I don't worry about terrorism. I was married for two years."

There's a way of transferring funds that is even faster than electronic banking. It's called marriage.

I've had bad luck with all my wives. The first one left me and the second one didn't. The third gave me more children!

Two secrets to keep your marriage brimming: 1. Whenever you're wrong, admit it, 2. Whenever you're right, shut up.

The most effective way to remember your wife's birthday is to forget it once.

You know what I did before I married? Anything I wanted to.

My wife and I were happy for twenty years. Then we met.

A good wife always forgives her husband when she's wrong.

Marriage is the only war where one sleeps with the enemy.

A man inserted an ad in the classifieds: "Wife wanted." Next day he received a hundred letters. They all said the same thing: "You can have mine."

First Guy (proudly): "My wife's an angel!" Second Guy: "You're lucky, mine's still alive."

First there's the promised ring, then the engagement ring, then the wedding ring...soon after...comes Suffer...ing!

Why is divorce so expensive? Because it's worth it!

### *Generic female descriptions*

- She has reached rock-bottom and has started to dig.
- I would not allow her to breed.
- She is really not so much of a has-been, but more of a definite won't be.
- When she opens her mouth, it seems that it is only to change feet.
- This young lady has delusions of adequacy.
- She sets low personal standards and then consistently fails to achieve them.
- She is depriving a village somewhere of an idiot.
- She should go far, and the sooner she starts the better.
- She doesn't have ulcers, but she's a carrier.
- She's been working with glue too much.
- She would argue with a signpost.
- She brings a lot of joy whenever she leaves the room.
- When her IQ reaches 50, she should sell.

- If you see two people talking and one looks bored, she's the other one.
- She has a photographic memory but the lens cover is still on.
- She's a prime candidate for natural de-selection.
- She donated her brain to science before she was done using it.
- She's got two brain cells, one is lost and the other is out looking for it.
- If she were any more stupid, she'd have to be watered twice a week.
- If you give her a penny for her thoughts, you'd get change.
- She's one neuron short of a synapse.
- It takes her 2 hours to watch "60 Minutes."
- If it weren't for her body, she'd need a brain.
- It's a little late to start fighting for your honor.

An old, blind guy wanders into an all-girl biker bar by mistake. He finds his way to a bar stool and orders some coffee. After sitting there for a while, he yells to the waiter, "Hey, you wanna hear a blonde joke?" The bar immediately falls absolutely silent. In a very deep, husky voice, the woman next to him says, "Before you tell that joke, I think it is only fair, given that you are blind, that you should know five things:

1. The bartender is a blonde girl with a baseball bat.
2. The bouncer is a blonde girl.
3. I'm a 6-foot tall, 175-pound blonde woman with a black belt in karate.
4. The woman sitting next to me is blonde and a professional weight-lifter.
5. The lady to your right is blonde and a professional wrestler.

Now, think about it seriously, Mister. Do you still wanna tell that joke?" The blind guy thinks for a second, shakes his head, and mutters, "No... not if I'm gonna have to explain it five times."

### *Ways to be a good liberal*

You have to be against capital punishment, but support abortion on demand.

You have to believe that businesses create oppression and governments create prosperity.

You have to believe that the aids virus is spread by a lack of federal funding.

You have to believe that the same teacher who can't teach 4<sup>th</sup> graders how to read is somehow qualified to teach those same kids about sex.

You have to believe that self-esteem is more important than actually doing something to earn it.

You have to believe that standardized tests are biased, but quotas and set-asides are not.

You have to believe that the only reason socialism hasn't worked anywhere it's been tried is because the right people haven't been in charge.

You have to believe that homosexual parades displaying drag queens and transvestites should be constitutionally protected, and manager scenes at Christmas should not.

### Judges and Bureaucrats

Why do you think every courthouse has a statute of a girl blindfolded? To tell you that American justice is like the typical girl—blind to the truth.

Judges are as vulnerable to society's passions as other political leaders.

Judges in their fear of punishing females must join forces with the Feminists.

Courts should stand for true justice, not the legal coercion of the minority by the majority.

The courts are trying to impose an elitist value system on a country that is inherently not elitist. Newt Gingrich.

In their arrogance, judges overreach.

From the dungeons of family courts to the alleged lofty abode of the U.S. Supreme Court, the judiciary is useless for men. Better to resort to more effective means for redressing grievances.

“We may mystify anything. But if we take a plain view of the words of the Constitution, and give to them a fair and obvious interpretation, we cannot fail in most cases of coming to a clear understanding of its meaning. We shall not have far to seek. We shall find it on the surface, and not in the profound depths of speculation.” *Ex parte Siebold*, 100 U.S. 371, 383 (1880).

Never forget that judges work for the government—the employer of last resort.

Most judges are nothing more than bureaucrats.

Most bureaucrats have a can't do attitude. They don't want to do the work that's necessary because they know they can't.

Think back to the last time you dealt with a bureaucrat. Did she do what she was supposed to or just try to make her job easier?

Most judges are the same. They don't do what their oath of office requires. They do what they want or are afraid of not doing. As a result, they end up making decisions according to their personal beliefs, or whatever is popular at the time.

It does not matter that the U.S. Supreme Court once held, “No [person] in this country is so high that [she] is above the law. No officer of the law may set that law at defiance with impunity. All the officers of the government, from the highest to the lowest, are creatures of the law, and are bound to obey it.” *U.S. v. Lee*, 106 U.S. 196, 220 (1882).

The justice system is ideologically corrupt and often incapable of arriving at the truth.

What's important to federal courts and agencies is not the law or issues involved, but who the parties are.

The Supreme Court is still a branch of government, and in the never-ending contest between authority and liberty, the agencies of government, at their best, are still on the side of authority.

The Supreme Court often serves as the government ministry of propaganda with the meaning of its fine words routinely ignored.

Today, the courts are essentially useless unless you're a large corporation, rich, famous, or a girl. Then they will usually give you what you want—whether justice or injustice, unless you're up against another corporation, wealth, celebrity, or girl. If you're a guy fighting for your rights against a girl—then the courts are downright harmful.

When it comes to men's rights, judges act with an arrogance of power, ignorance of the law, and ideological corruption.

Cases advocating that men are human beings endowed with rights when in conflict with the preferential treatment of the opposite sex are irrelevant in the eyes of the federal courts. Although the importance and protection of individual constitutional rights is suppose to be a central part of the role under separation of powers assigned to the judiciary where “[t]he

touchstone to justiciability is injury to a legally protected right,” *Joint Anti-Fascist Refugee Committee v. McGrath*, 341 U.S. 123, 140-41 (1951)(citations omitted), constitutional and statutory rights in the courts no longer apply to men.

The rights of men are meaningless and constitutional law cases are decided based on the political climate rather than justice. The courts support the violation of the rights of men whenever it benefits females.

Men just don’t count to the courts.

Today, many judges demonstrate contempt for both fathers and the constitutional rights of men. Take the New Jersey Judge Richard Russell’s statement to his judicial colleagues at a judges’ training seminar in 1994, “Your job is not to become concerned about the constitutional rights of the man that you’re violating. Throw him out on the street, give him the clothes on his back and tell him, see ya around. We don’t have to worry about his rights.”

Not all judges, but most judges buy into the Feminist doctrine of men as evil incarnate. Such judges are too ideologically corrupt for them to rule according to the Constitution. So if these judges have a chance to punish a man—they will. It’s the same type of group demonization to which Hitler subscribed.

If a judge doesn’t believe Feminist dogma, then most likely the judge is as scared of the Feminists as the lefties and the Jews were of the Nazis. A judge’s fear of the Feminists means he will rule the way they want.

The legal system is now systemically colonized by the Feminazis.

If there is any question as to who runs the courts, the trilogy of men’s rights cases that I brought makes clear that the Feminists do.

Judges usually refrain from insulting a lawyer unless they are really personally opposed to a lawyer’s position or posturing for public opinion. In the trilogy of men’s rights cases, I was personally insulted by four judges out of a total of twelve—.333, not a bad batting average.

The courts have become synonymous with tragedy, injustice, and ignorance.

The justice system is largely corrupt and incapable of arriving at the truth in order to do justice for the rights of men.

Apparently, the Supreme Court is no longer there to do justice, but to assure that injustice is uniform throughout the land.

In the past, the American legal system was guided by the rule, “that no man [or female] may take advantage of his own wrong,” *Glus v. Brooklyn Eastern District Terminal*, 359 U.S. 231, 232 (1959). But now, hundreds of thousands of females replace that dictum with “Lie, steal, and cheat and you will win.”

It should be, but is not that “[u]nder our system the *people*, who [princesses] called *subjects*, are the sovereign. Their rights, whether collective or individual, are not bound to give way to a sentiment of loyalty to the person of the monarch. The citizen here knows no person, however near to those in power, or however powerful himself, to whom he need yield the rights which the law secures to him when it is well administered.” *U.S. v. Lee*, 106 U.S. 196 (1882)(Justice Miller).

One of the great U.S. Supreme Court Justices, Felix Frankfurter, declared, “[justice] must satisfy the appearance of justice.” *Offutt v. U.S.* 348 U.S. 11, 14 (1945). Today, however, judicial arrogance makes no pretense at rendering decisions in accordance with the law when men’s rights are up against preferential treatment for females.



## *Suit against federal Judge Frederic Block*

Generally, you can't sue a judge. That's why they get away with making such blockheaded decisions.

In a copyright infringement action against a Feminist lawyer who published six of my essays without my permission, a federal judge ruled against me because my essays did not kowtow to Feminist ideology. The essays were evolutionarily correct rather than politically correct. So I sued the judge in his "official capacity" for ruling against me because I exercised my free speech in six essays the way I chose rather than the way he thought I should.

When suing a federal employee in their official capacity, the law interprets that as suing the U.S. Government, since it can only operate through its agents or employees.

The U.S. Government, however, usually has sovereign immunity, except when it violates a constitutional right. Since Judge Block violated my free speech right in the exercise of his government duties—allowing a Feminist attorney to infringe my copyrighted essays, my suit was really against the U.S.

When I first filed the complaint, I didn't put the U.S. down as a defendant because I was setting Judge Block up for some emotional distress. I figured he'd look at the complaint and forget it, thinking I'm suing him as a judge who has immunity. Only later would he realize that I'm only suing the U.S., and that juxtaposition in understanding may cause him emotional distress. After all, he intentionally tried to cause me emotional distress by including false statements about me in his opinion. In that opinion, Judge Block called into question my "gender identity"—whatever that means given that I'm not a part of speech. He also implied I was obsessed with bodies that were not like Marilyn Monroe's and posed a physical danger to females who were not Feminazis—all false, but he didn't care. There was no reason for his personal attacks against me other than to inflict emotional harm the way girls do. So I filed the suit to give him a taste of his own medicine. Naturally, the court threw the case out.

Here's an analogy to show how stupid Judge Block's decision was in the copyright infringement case.

Assume you write a freelance story on a controversial topic—say you travel with the Taliban, and you write an objective piece from the inside of their operations. A lot of judges or juries in this country might take that as showing sympathy when all you're doing is reporting the other side. Then let's say you're in a car accident and it ends up in court.

The attorney for the opposing side introduces the article in court because she knows the judge is a veteran of the Gulf Wars and the article might be just enough to sway the judge against you. The article has nothing to do with the car accident—it's irrelevant. It's simply introduced to prejudice the judge against you.

Let's also say you haven't sold the article yet, but by your opponents introducing it in court it ends up on the court's website. You submit the article to GQ, and they ask has it been published. You say it's on the court's website; what do you think the magazine's response will be? GQ won't publish it.

The judge then rules against you. So you not only lost the court case because the judge was swayed by her bigotry, but your article is now worthless, since it is on the World Wide Web. That's the rule of law that Judge Block created with his opinion.

Judge Block made his decision that there was no copyright infringement because he personally disapproved of my writings or didn't want to arouse ire in the Feminists.

There is no defense to copyright infringement that the works are unpopular with the eastern intellectual elite. For court decisions to depend on a party's political and social beliefs as expressed in his writings seriously deter the creativity protected by the Copyright Act and punish the expression of speech that the First Amendment was intended to protect.

Judges are not the thought police or the speech police because this democracy—unlike the Third Reich and Soviet Union—does not countenance such, or it did not previously. The evil of doctrines that require certain thoughts and speech is the ability of conformists and opportunists to avoid arguing the merits by simply using a person's words against him.

In reality, Judge Block ruled that based on the essays I was unacceptable, inappropriate, not like him, that I was what Feminism and political correctionalism is trying to eliminate—a man. So, regardless of what the Constitution says, to Judge Block, a ruling against me served the greater good of Feminism and political correctionalism. Marx and Lenin would have praised him.

Judge Block wrote free speech out of the Constitution, except for the speech that he agrees with or serves his interests of the moment.

Bureaucrats like Block don't realize that taking away the rights of those with whom they disagree eliminates the use of established institutions for settling disputes and drives people into the streets.

Judges like Block would better serve their oaths of office by remembering Supreme Court Justice Anthony Kennedy's words, "[t]here must be a recommitment, a rededication to the Constitution in every generation," and that "[t]he Courts are suppose 'to protect unpopular individuals ... and their ideas from suppression—at the hand of an intolerant society.'" *McIntyre v. Ohio Elections Comm'n*, 514 U.S. 334, 357 (1995).

## Justice

Not for men and not in American courts.

In America, justice depends on who you are. It has nothing to do with what's right or wrong under the law.

As a little kid, I learned that if you're going to be blamed for something—you might as well do it.

"Revenge is the act of passion. Vengeance is the act of justice." Samuel Johnson.

"The irreplaceable value of the power articulated by Mr. Chief Justice Marshall [*Marbury v. Madison*, 5 U.S. 137] lies in the protection it has afforded the constitutional rights and liberties of individual citizens and minority groups against oppressive or discriminatory government action. It is this role, not some amorphous general supervision of the operations of government, that has maintained public esteem for the federal courts and has permitted the peaceful coexistence of the countermajoritarian implications of judicial review and the democratic principles upon which our Federal Government in the final analysis rests." *United States v. Richardson*, 418 U.S. 166, 192 (1974)(Mr. Justice Powell concurring). Nice words but no longer, if ever, true.

The U.S. Attorney's Office for the Southern District of New York "sole motivation in this case, as in all cases, is to uphold the rule of law, protect victims, and hold accountable anyone who breaks the law—no matter what their societal status and no matter how powerful, rich or connected they are." U.S. Attorney Preet Bharara.

The laws and courts of America are concealed injustice for men:

Men receive 63% longer sentences on average than women and women are twice as likely to avoid imprisonment. *Estimating Gender Disparities in Federal Criminal Cases*, Professor Sonja Starr, October 3, 2016.

Women less likely than men to be detained before trial and are released on lower bail bond amounts. *From Initial Appearance to Sentencing*, Journal of Criminal Justice, August 2015, Col. 45.

The government and other institutions of this country are governed not by justice, but the whims of females. You can't get much more arbitrary than that.

Between right and wrong, there can be no compromise.

Moderation in the pursuit of justice is no virtue. Barry Goldwater.

### Ladies' Nights Lawsuit

The suit challenged the constitutionality of nightclubs charging guys more for admission than girls. Just ask yourself, "Is that fair?"

The clubs violate the 14<sup>th</sup> Amendment constitutional rights of men, which require equal protection under the law for similarly situated persons. The clubs have no legitimate reason for treating males and females differently in their admission policies. The U.S. Supreme Court does not recognize profit as a reason for violating a person's rights through sex discrimination.

When I started thinking about this suit, I wondered, "This is NYC, the party capital of America. Hasn't someone challenged this practice?" Apparently not, so I did.

The case is dedicated to April. She should have given me her phone number.

In 1969, two girls from NOW, the National Organization of Witches, walked into McSorleys' Old Ale House in NYC. The bar refused to serve them. They sued the bar for discrimination under the 14<sup>th</sup> Amendment Equal Protection clause in the U.S. Southern District Court of New York.<sup>3</sup> Clearly they were treated differently, discriminated against, but the Equal Protection clause only applies to private businesses acting as the agents of governments or doing what governments traditionally do. It's called "state action." The Court found McSorleys' was a state actor because New York's pervasive alcohol regulatory scheme made the bar an instrumentality of the State.

Nearly 40 years later, thanks in part to April, I sued a handful of nightclubs in the very same court for discriminating against guys by charging them more for admission than girls. All the nightclubs were under the same alcohol regulatory scheme as McSorleys', and the key issue, as in McSorleys', was whether the nightclubs were state actors. The only difference in the cases was that guys instead of girls were discriminated against. The avowed Feminist Judge, Miriam Cedarbaum, threw the case out by ruling there was no state action.

She found that state action only existed in the serving of alcohol but not in admission. So if a guy can make it to the bar, he's home-free because state action only exists at the bar. That means nightclubs cannot charge guys more for a drink than girls. The clubs can charge guys more for admission but not more for a drink. Neither the Judge nor the defense attorneys

---

<sup>3</sup> *Seidenberg v. McSorleys' Old Ale House, Inc.*, 317 F. Supp. 593 (1970)(Judge Mansfield granted plaintiff's motion for summary judgment); *Seidenberg v. McSorleys' Old Ale House, Inc.*, 308 F. Supp. 1253 (1969)(Judge Tenney denied defendant's motion for a Rule 12(b)(6) dismissal).

realized that most Ladies' Nights charge girls less for drinks than guys, so the decision actually ended up outlawing most Ladies' Nights—if it's ever enforced.

It was a trap unknowingly laid by the defense lawyers and the Judge fell into it. The trap was obvious, but I wasn't about to call attention to it.<sup>4</sup> After the one and only conference in the case before Judge Cedarbaum, I knew she was going to dismiss. Her ideology forbade her ruling in favor of men, especially when it would cost girls money. But she was faced with only two legal options: (1) overrule two other decisions from the court in which she sat that had found the unequal treatment of the sexes by clubs selling alcohol as unconstitutional, or (2) distinguish those two cases by saying the state was not involved in admitting people to clubs but only involved in the act of serving alcohol. She chose the second.

In her effort to create a distinction without a difference by limiting state action to the handing over of an alcoholic drink, Judge Cedarbaum opened the door for any servers of alcohol, under the Constitution, to charge guys or girls, say \$1,000 for admission, but let the other sex in for free. That would effectively keep the other sex out. Under New York State law, that would be illegal, however, not all states have laws like New York, and many, as with New York, do not enforce their civil rights laws when a guy is discriminated against.

I appealed to the U.S. Second Circuit Court of Appeals, another Feminist friendly court, which upheld the U.S. District Court decision. The Judges ignored that most Ladies' Nights charge guys more for drinks than girls and ruled constitutional the charging of guys more to enter a club. But in doing so, they had to implicitly recognize that it was unconstitutional to charge guys more for a drink. That's good enough for legal authority that guys cannot be charged more for drinks, and since it comes for the Second Circuit, not just a District Court, it has weight in every court in the country. So it was half a victory, half a defeat.

The District and Appeals courts' decisions in effect bring back the political versus social rights theory of the 18<sup>th</sup> century. In the *Civil Rights Cases*, 109 U.S. 3 (1883) and *Plessy v. Ferguson*, 163 U.S. 537 (1896), the U.S. Supreme Court justified discrimination against people of darker skin complexion on the theory that the Constitution only guarantees political or civic equality, which is the purview of government, but not equality in social rights, the area of private action and choices. The decisions parallel this bankrupt theory in the realm of sexual distinctions rather than color.

Today, males can be charged any price to enter the social mingling of a nightclub while females walk in for free because nightclubs, even though they carry on a state function and are pervasively regulated by a state liquor authority, can constitutionally choose to charge males more than females. Nightclubs would not dare charge females more because of the social climate in modern-day America. So nightclubs, and any other public accommodation, can now constitutionally ban males by charging them a steep enough price so that none other than Wall Street moguls could afford to attend.

The *Civil Rights* and *Plessy* decisions provided the legal basis for 70 years of ignorance and prejudice that institutionalized itself in every area of society where people interacted with each other. The Second Circuit and District Court's decision have laid the same foundation for

---

<sup>4</sup> I also avoided it in the Second Circuit appeal, even though a lady judge picked up on it in the oral argument when questioning the defendants. I kept my mouth shut, and the Second Circuit's decision never addressed it.

discriminating against males in every area of society that is not directly under the control of government or in which state law does not explicitly prohibit discrimination.<sup>5</sup>

*State Action*

My argument was that state action existed in the discriminatory admission policies of nightclubs because (1) nightclubs exercise a public function—the selling of alcohol has always been a state responsibility; (2) the State controls nearly every aspect of a nightclub’s operations, and (3) the State and nightclubs are entwined, involved in a joint activity, so the State aids or encourages the discrimination, which it has the power to stop but doesn’t. *See Ladies’ Nights* case filings at [www.roydenhollander.com](http://www.roydenhollander.com).

(1) *Public Function*: “[W]hen private individuals or groups are endowed by the state with powers or functions governmental in nature, they become agencies or instrumentalities of the state and subject to its constitutional limitations.” *Evans v. Newton*, 382 U.S. 296, 299 (1966).

New York State chose to delegate some of its exclusive functions to nightclubs for operating premises where persons can purchase and consume alcohol. Nightclubs, therefore, exercise a public function by which they are entirely dependent upon State decisions to operate successfully.

(2) *Pervasive Control*: New York State controls the number of licenses, the locations for the clubs; sets conditions and prohibitions of operation; and delegates to the clubs the responsibilities to carry out the state’s policies concerning the sale of alcohol and promoting of temperance. The State’s control and responsibility reach well beyond the serving of an alcoholic drink to the level of a club’s lighting, the panorama within, advertising, reputation of the owners, citizenship of the employees, moral character of the customers, the interior floor plan, the exterior blueprint, block-plot diagram, the landlord, type of building, history of the building’s prior use, number and positioning of tables and chairs, manager, principals, principals’ spouses, the people with whom the owners associate, finances, waitress outfits, noise levels outside a club, parking and traffic congestion, and any other circumstances relevant to the “public interest” that “may adversely affect the health, safety and repose” of citizens.

(3) *Complicity*: Nightclubs receive a benefit from the State to operate a money making operation in selling alcohol. It’s a privilege that the State assures will not lessen in value; therefore, it’s a type of state subsidy.

Without a liquor license, nightclubs wouldn’t exist, so they could never discriminate. In effect, the liquor license becomes a license to discriminate. *Seidenberg v. McSorleys’ Old Ale House, Inc.*, 317 F. Supp. 593, 598 (1970).

“By its inaction, [New York] has not only made itself a party to the [discrimination], but has elected to place its power, property and prestige behind the admitted discrimination.” *Burton v. Wilmington Parking Authority*, 365 U.S. 715, 725 (1961).

*If the case had been successful.*

The nightclubs would most likely lower the price to guys and raise it to girls. That means every guy who entered a club would have more money to buy girls drinks. True the girls would

---

<sup>5</sup> Only 28 states have some constitutional or statutory provisions against sex discrimination. 90 A.L.R.3d 158, §1; 14 C.J.S. Civil Rights, § 41.

have to manipulate more drinks from the guys to make up for their admission cost, but I'm confident in their genetic ability to separate a man from his money.

The girls would also end up drinking more, but then they'd have more fun and so would us guys. An added benefit is that in the morning, when the girls woke up with second thoughts about what they had done the night before, they could do what they always do—blame men, in this case me, rather than the guys they partied with. It's a win-win situation for the guys, girls, and the clubs.

### *Importance*

Ladies' Nights are a microcosm for society. Guys shoulder the burden of paying while girls enjoy the benefits paid for by guys.

Charging guys more is just a transfer of wealth from guys to girls because the guys make up the price the girls don't pay. Take all those guys, over all those years who paid more, and compound the extra amount by the Treasury Note rate semi-annually. The result is a large chunk of change transferred from the wallets of guys to the pocketbooks of ladies. Is that fair, especially considering that girls enjoy dancing and sex more than guys—I don't think so.

The suit would have ended guys having to subsidize girls to party. Isn't that called prostitution?

The suit would have cost girls money by ending some of their free riding on guys' wallets.

The suit was on behalf of thousands of men—an endangered species in this country.

After 40 years of lobbying and intimidation, the special interest group Feminism, now the Establishment, has succeeded in creating a customary practice in governmental institutions at the federal, state, and local levels in which the invidious discrimination of men is the accepted and preferred mode of conduct. If there is any question as to the reality of this customary practice, just switch the sexes. Would the New York State Liquor Authority and the courts permit nightclubs to charge females more for admission than males?

While this case was not as important as what guys have been put through by institutions in this society catering to Feminazi and political correctionalist tenets, at its heart is the same issue: invidious discrimination against men. For instance, divorce courts taking away a guy's kids, then making him pay inflated child support to the wife who most probably instigated the divorce, and if he doesn't have the money, he goes to debtors' prison, even when the wife earned millions of dollars the old fashion way by marrying it in the form of her next husband. Of course, some of the child support or hidden alimony is often used to pay off the car and for the gas that females use to drive to Ladies' Nights.

Ladies Nights is a form of pre-marital alimony to compensate for the elimination of post divorce alimony, unless it's hidden in the child support payments.

Invidious discrimination is not petty—even against men. Bigotry in the south, from the perspective of the Black community was of great importance, but from the perspective of the White community at the time, it was of little concern.

The Ladies' Nights case exposed the all too common double standard in American society—girls matter, men are disposable.

The people who operate Ladies' Nights do not charge men more for admission because they do not like men. The sole reason is that they think such discrimination will make them more money.

Profits don't justify the violation of someone's rights. If they did, then King George III should have won and we'd still have slavery. Fundamental Constitutional rights cannot be infringed unless there is a compelling reason that is strictly served. Profits isn't one.

For a short time in the late 1950s and through the 1960s, the 14<sup>th</sup> Amendment did away with a second or third or fourth class of citizenship. Clearly that is no longer true today, since men can be denied the right of being treated equally with America's first class citizens—females, in not only places of public accommodation but in the courts that are suppose to assure there is only one class of citizenship.

The question here is basic to the way of life in this country and fundamental to its constitutional scheme—is this a country ruled by law or by the ideology of a powerful special interest group.

### *Criticism*

Much of the media coverage of the case focused on what girls thought about it. Asking girls whether they're in favor of "Ladies' Nights" is like asking a beggar whether he's in favor of someone giving him money.

Those in favor of Ladies Nights claim guys can afford it, and girls can't since they make \$.82 for every dollar a guy makes. Most of the people at clubs are in their 20s or 30s. (I'm the exception that proves the rule). A girl in her 20s, working in NYC makes 117% of what a guy makes, and a girl in her 30s working in NYC makes the same. Girls in their 20s in Los Angeles, Dallas, Chicago, Boston, and Minneapolis also make more than guys in their 20s. Sam Roberts, *Income Gap*, August 3, 2007, New York Times. The same is true for other urban areas across the country. Conor Dougherty, *Young Woman's Pay Exceeds Male Peers*, September 1, 2010, Wall Street Journal.

Nationwide, girls control a majority of the nation's wealth and make more per unit of time actually worked. See *Economics* above. Using the \$.82 statistic, for every \$1 a guy makes per hour, a girl makes \$1.17.

Support for Ladies Nights is based on false assumptions: that girls don't hunt men, that they are unwilling to pay money on catching a guy—just look at the cost of fashions, cosmetics, hair styling. Girls will go to the ends of the earth to find a man; they'll just make it look like the guy's doing it.

If there's any doubt about the hunger driving females, even non-lesbian Feminists (assuming there are some), to find a man, go to a club and stay until two or three in the morning. Look at the expressions on the faces of many young ladies as they leave—crushed because no guy hit on them, or danced with them, or asked for a telephone number. Or talk to a Feminist that spent her youth denigrating, demonizing, and blaming guys for everything that ever went wrong in her life. If she's honest, she'll admit to waking up in the middle of the night crying because there's nobody in her bed other than her dog or cat.

Of course, some girls proclaimed they don't go to clubs to meet guys—true. They go to weasel free drinks from men, act the exhibitionist, and boost their ego by playing the desirable princess; otherwise, they wouldn't be taller than when they got up that morning, or their lips ruby red, or eyelashes dark and long, or eyebrows penciled, or hair a color not their own, or blouses tight and skirts short. For girls it's always about sex, because that's the power Mother Nature gave them, so, unless they are lesbian, they're always competing with other girls for either men or the attention of men.

While the nightclubs I sued were not run by the Feminists, there's a climate in this country, a belief that it's okay to violate the rights of guys so long as it benefits girls. The nightclubs were simply exploiting what Feminazism has wrought: girls count, guys don't; girls have rights, guys don't.

Also, many budding young Feminazis go to nightclubs and benefit economically as do the girls that don't consider themselves Feminists but will use Feminist tactics to get what they want but don't deserve; that is, Feminazi opportunists.

### *Economic view*

Charging guys more is just a transfer of wealth from guys to girls because the guys make up the price the girls don't pay.

With girls controlling well over 50% of the wealth in America and making more per unit of time actually worked, if anyone should be paying to enter a club, it's them. Actually, all girls who go to Ladies' Nights owe all the guys who indirectly pay for their admission some form of reimbursement.

Further, who has the most discretionary income? Go look at your local shopping mall. You'll find three or more women's shops for every male one.

The U.S. Supreme Court has used the argument in sex discrimination cases that girls have been traditionally discriminated against in economic terms; therefore, they should receive economic breaks to make up for past discrimination. It's a type of affirmative action for females—taking money from guys and giving it to girls because in the past girls were disadvantaged financially. The Supreme Court is always full of attorneys and not businessmen, so the Justices never realized that to truly compare economic advantages, or disadvantages, requires a consideration of the risk-reward ratio. Men have always occupied societal roles that were more risky than those occupied by females, so by taking into account the risk, the economic rewards provided men were traditionally probably equal to those provided females or less. Today, of course, girls receive more on a risk-reward basis. *See Economics* above.

Ladies' Nights operate under the mistaken belief that more girls go if given an economic break. It's not such a faulty conclusion. The most important thing to girls is money. But girls aren't looking for chump change; they're looking for a chump to gold dig. Because girls can only understand the world in terms of Benjamin Franklins, they figure more guys will go to a club where the prices are less, and that's where the girls will go.

Another reason Ladies' Nights attract fewer girls is that guys have less money to spend on them because guys had to pay more to gain admission. One girl told me, "If men are getting in for free, they have more money to buy us drinks." While not all girls are driven by monetary gain, if you assume they are, you'll end up saving yourself a lot of grief and money.

Further, a girl is not going to a club where she believes there is a lot of competition. She'll go elsewhere even if it means spending more. Remember, girls are looking for a chump to gold dig. In NYC its 9 guys for every 10 girls and if you factor in the gay guys it's probably 7 to 10. Girls want to increase their chances of finding a guy. So, if anyone should be paying more to meet the opposite sex, it's girls.

The Club owners know that Ladies' Nights is just a trick to get guys into their clubs to spend money. A guy shows up, invests \$20, no girls, so he consoles himself by drinking and waiting for the girls who never show. One bar owner said he had ladies night, mostly as a way to attract men, which increased his sales of drinks—a club's real money maker.



Some guys view Ladies' Nights as an inexpensive date. Most guys, however, go to nightclubs to hit on girls, not to take a date. If a girl is on a date with a guy, he's already at second base; time to head for third—her place, his place, a hotel, backseat of a car, or under a bush. If a guy wants a cheap date, then take her to Shakespeare in the Park—she'll be more impressed.

Nightclubs claim Ladies' Nights serve a business reason. That it's a way of marketing. The law calls this a rational or legitimate objective, but when discriminating based on sex, any objective served must be an important one. That's a higher standard than rational, and under the law, marketing is not considered an important objective.

Substitute any other immutable characteristic, such as national origin, religious background, and let me know whether favoring one class of people over another is simply a "marketing strategy."

Look at it this way, if Hilton, Spears, or Lohan are in anyway deterred by having to pay, this could be a good thing in keeping the roads safer.

### *Mythological view*

Hera asked Tiresias who had lived as both girl and guy who enjoyed sex more. He said girls, at which point Hera struck him blind and cursed him never to be able to disclose the truth about girls again.

If girls enjoy sex more, then they should pay for all the courting. If anything, the girls should pay guys to show up at nightclubs to satisfy girls' desires

### *Sociological view*

Girls want to meet guys and guys want to meet girls. Girls spend their time, energy, and often some guy's money looking good, and then wait hoping to attract a guy they like.

Guys have mainly two ways of meeting a girl, assuming they don't go for prostitutes. (1) Intentional—a guy sees a girl he's attracted to and goes over to talk with her. He intended to do something and he did it. Of course, this could also be called reckless endangerment; he saw the warning signs but ignored them. (2) Accidental—a guy bumps into a girl or a girl standing next to him says something and he interjects a remark.

Many guys are shy about using the intentional approach—spotting the prey and going after it, so they hope to increase their chances through the accidental method by going where there is an overflow of girls. For those guys, Ladies' Nights are crucial, assuming they actually produce an overflow of girls.

Ladies' Nights, however, don't produce an overflow of girls, although most people believe they do.

A girl believing Ladies' Nights bring out lots of girls means she'll also believe she'll have to compete against more girls, and the more girls in a club, the less likely she'll attract guys. A girl is not going to a club where there is an overflow of competition. She'll pay an additional \$10 to the amount she has already spent on a manicure, pedicure, leg waxing, hair styling and dying, latest fashions, and sexy shoes that are too tight. She's going where there's less competition.

Take an informal sampling; go to clubs with Ladies' Nights and clubs without. See which has the highest percentage of girls. I've noticed there are more girls at the non-Ladies' Nights.

## *Motion to disqualify the Feminist Judge*

Miriam Cedarbaum, an avowed Feminist and fan of Mary Wollstonecraft<sup>6</sup>, was the Judge in the Ladies' Nights case in the U.S. District Court. In an interview, she said she found no differences between male and female judges, but advocated that 51% of judges should be females. If there is no difference, then why should judicial selection depend on sex rather than the ability of those available for a judgeship?

The first and only time the parties appeared before Judge Cedarbaum was at a scheduling conference. It lasted 40 minutes in which she and I fought while the attorneys for the nightclubs mainly watched like sheep on the sidelines.

At one point during the argument, the Judge said that I must respect her to which I replied somewhat disingenuously, "I do. But you also have to respect me." At the end of the conference, I felt as though I had been in an argument with a girl I had gone out with too long.

The October 3, 2007 scheduling conference was originally set for the middle of the month, but the Court, in an unusual move, quickly moved the conference up following the filing of a motion to dismiss by one of the defendants. That gave me one day to prepare for the scheduling conference, no big deal, since my response to the motion to dismiss was not scheduled until three weeks later, according to the lady Judge's rules of practice. The Judge, however, pulled a fast one and used the scheduling conference as oral argument on the motion to dismiss. But little did she or the nightclub attorneys know that I knew more about the law than they, so her and their efforts, a subtle conspiracy, to intimidate me into withdrawing the case failed.

Unlike most Judges in federal court, Cedarbaum did not allow for the routine recording of her conferences—presumably the better to intimidate those who disagree with her Feminist philosophy.

The Judge denigrated the case and personally insulted me, all of which is against the Judicial Code of Ethics.

She started by mocking the case as "unpopular." To which I agreed, and responded, "So what," since popularity has nothing to do with constitutional rights. A higher court than hers once said, "The Courts are supposed to protect unpopular individuals ... and their ideas from suppression—at the hand of an intolerant society." *McIntyre v. Ohio Elections Comm'n*, 514 U.S. 334, 357 (1995).

I tried to answer her questions but she repeatedly interrupted me with another question the way talk show hosts do. I'm answering question 1, then I'm interrupted with question 2, so I try to answer question 2, then I'm interrupted with question 3, and I try to answer question 3, all the time trying to get back to finish my answer to question 1, but I never do because the questions and interruptions keep coming.

Then she insults me personally by calling into question whether I'm a lawyer at all in an apparently scripted effort with the nightclub attorneys to falsely accuse me of not being prepared to argue against a motion to dismiss that was filed 5 days earlier, and wasn't suppose to be argued until 3 weeks later. Of course the term lawyer may be an insult in and of itself, so by

---

<sup>6</sup> Mary Wollstonecraft lived in the late 1700s, and wrote the book *A Vindication of the Rights of Woman* in which she argued that girls don't need men. After achieving fame and fortune from her book, she proceeded to engage in a number of illicit affairs, all with men, including one with a married man for whom she pined. She did one thing of value, however, by giving birth to a daughter, Mary, who would later marry Percy Bysshe Shelley and write *Frankenstein*. One rumor says the daughter Mary was fond of having sex on her mother's grave.

questioning whether I was one might have been a compliment, although I doubt it. I responded that “was uncalled for.”

Despite the apparent scheduling trickery of the Judge and the nightclub attorneys, none of them knew about two decisions from the very same court we were in or a U.S. Supreme Court decision that supported my position that any nightclub activity involved state action. Twice, I had to tell the Judge about those decisions before she asked for the case cites.

So there I’m being grilled and insulted over a motion to dismiss at a conference that I had effectively one day to prepare for and still knew more about the case law than the nightclub attorneys and the Judge.

Taking into account the interruptions, insult, suspicious re-scheduling, along with her demeanor and tone of voice, and it all created an appearance of bias—that she was trying to intimidate me into withdrawing the case because it defended men’s rights.

It ticked me off, and I made a standing motion that she disqualify herself. Then she backed off. Probably also realizing her and the nightclubs’ strategy to catch me unprepared to argue the law and intimidate me into giving up on the class action was not going to work.

She did, however, unilaterally turn the putative class action into a *pro se* action, which the courts cannot do without going through the proper procedure, which she didn’t. A *pro se* action meant under her rules there would be no more occasions for oral argument. Presumably, she didn’t want to deal with me anymore—the feeling was mutual.

At the end of the battle, the Judge set a schedule for the submission of papers on whether to dismiss the case. By then, I knew she had made her decision to throw the case out before the conference had even started. All I could do with my papers in opposing dismissal was to put her in a legal corner, hoping she’d do something stupid, which she did.

She ruled that nightclubs could discriminate based on admission price because there was no sale of alcohol when a guy walked through a nightclub’s door. The implication, of course, is that when a nightclub charges men more for a drink, there is a violation of the Constitution because it involves the sale of alcohol. Neither Cedarbaum nor the nightclubs’ attorneys realized that most Ladies’ Nights charge guys more for drinks. Thanks to Cedarbaum’s decision, and the Second Circuit upholding that decision, there are now authoritative federal cases supporting the rule that nightclubs can no longer charge men more for drinks than girls.

After the conference, I checked Cedarbaum’s biography, and when I saw her age, I almost decided not to make a written motion that she recuse herself. Even though she denied my oral motion of recusal, under federal rules I could make a written motion because the conference was not recorded.

The genetic gentlemen in me and every man almost kept me from filing the motion. But a buddy of mine said, “She can handle it. If she couldn’t, she wouldn’t be in the position she’s in.” I also remembered that every time I ever showed a female compassion, I always ended up with a knife in my back—so I filed the recusal motion, and, of course, she ruled against me.

The only interesting matter to come out of the recusal motion was that a Feminist girl attorney for one of the nightclubs submitted a handful of my copyrighted, anti-Feminist essays in order to further prejudice the Judge against my case—typical Feminist tactic, and in this case, probably unnecessary, since the Judge was already biased against the case and me.

The Feminist attorney claimed the writings were guilty of “misogyny”<sup>7</sup> and negatively stereotyping females. The attorney wanted me punished for what I wrote by having the Court

---

<sup>7</sup> My response was “Personally, I disagree with the characterization: one can’t hate that which one lusts after. For example, I doubt [the nightclub] attorney hates chocolate, although she might not like what it does to her.”

sanction me, usually a fine, and deny my motion for recusal. The Court, however, is part of the government, so to punish me for the content of what I said in the writings is a violation of the First Amendment that prohibits government from “abridging the freedom of speech” of the persons. Of course, to Feminists I’m not a person, which was the real basis for the attorney’s argument.

There are two key reasons the Founding Fathers included “freedom of speech” in the First Amendment: (1) to keep government from preventing speech before it is made, and (2) to keep government from punishing speech after it is made, except in a few very restrictive instances, such as yelling “bomb” in Times Square. As Justice Brandies said, the Founding Fathers “believed that freedom to think as you will and to speak as you think are means indispensable to the discovery and spread of political truth; that without free speech ... discussion would be futile. *Whitey v. California*, 274 U.S. 357, 375-76 (1927)(Mr. Justice Brandeis concurring). But today in America, whenever dissent rears up to threaten the growing conformity to Feminism and the pedestal on which it has placed females, the intolerant Feminazis try to crush that dissent with a choir of vituperation and demands for punishment of any person who raises an alternative view.

The Feminist girl attorney also argued that my motivation for bringing the recusal motion was inappropriate, that I’m biased against girls, and my character is bad. Whatever the term “inappropriate” means is beyond me, and it’s surely not going to force me to curtail my speech.

As for “biased,” that requires a person hold an adverse opinion or judgment reached without knowledge or examination of the facts. I’ve done plenty examinations of girls and some of the worst of what I found are in the essays. But even were I a bigot and the devil incarnate, the only issue on a recusal motion is whether the Judge’s actions appear biased, not whether she is biased, but simply appears biased.

If there is any doubt that the Court conference created an appearance of sexual bias on the part of the Judge—just switch the sexes. Consider how I would have been treated had an accident of nature made me a female, and I was suing on behalf of thousands of other females because the defendant nightclubs charged ladies more for admission than guys on “Gentlemen’s Nights.”

As to “bad character,” a person’s rights do not depend upon his character traits or beliefs. (In fact, evidence of character traits is generally not permitted in court.) The Feminists, however, say they do—the personal is political—because that allows them to use the old Commie tactic that anyone who belongs to a disfavored group is guilty of the sins of the worst in that group. So because you are a guy, you have bad character, bad beliefs, and bad motivations; therefore, you have no rights because some guys you never knew did or might have done some bad things.

Sally Miller Gearhart has written that the male population should be reduced to 25% in order to reduce men’s contamination of the planet. That’s advocating genocide. If she were before a male judge and the judge acted in a way that created an appearance of bias, the judge couldn’t deny recusal based on Gearhart exercising her free speech to support genocide against men. Gearhart’s beliefs are irrelevant, her character traits are irrelevant, she’s human, presumably; therefore, she can say what she wants without punishment by the government.

### *Heightened Contradiction*

The problem that the Ladies’ Nights case points out is not whether a few judges or

officials are biased against men—it's the institutionalization of discrimination against men. The Feminazis have demonized, denigrated, intimidated, and coerce men for so long that institutionalized bias is widespread throughout this country. The American culture has turned into a Feminarchy culture in which girls are good, guys are bad.

Imagine the outcry if men receive a service, product, admission, or something for free while females are relegated to paying an additional surcharge for no reason other than that they are the “wrong” sex.

40 years ago, two federal, male judges assured that females could not be treated differently by businesses serving alcohol for on-premise consumption. Since then, such businesses dared not discriminate against ladies but freely do so against men. Now, they will continue their discrimination against men at least in admission policies.

In America, as in Orwell's *Animal Farm*, some are more equal than others.

### Lawsuits Loses

I didn't go looking for these lawsuits; they came and hit me on the head when I tried to get my ex-wife—a Russian mafia prostitute who secretly fed me drugs and was a former mistress to the Chechen warlord Ruslan Labazanov—out of my life.

*Why'd you lose?*

Can't beat the devil in the devil's own court, but you can show she's the devil. I'm 0 for 3 in men's rights class actions, which makes me feel like I'm back in Little League baseball.

It's a modern day witch-hunt—only today the witches are doing the hunting.

The government, from local to state to federal, treats men as second class citizens whose rights can be violated with impunity when it benefits females. Females are more equal than men.

What's important to the feminized American courts and agencies is not the law or issues involved but who the parties are. Just because I'm a troublemaker doesn't mean that absolves others of their violations of the law, although the courts think so.

In one sense, I was a fool for trying to win justice through the judiciary. I should have realized I'd have as much success as a lefty or Jew in the courts of the Third Reich or a capitalist in the courts of the Former Soviet Union. Still, it was a lot of fun.

These judges, especially the male judges, are afraid that criticism from the Feminist Establishment will harm their careers, prevent them from consulting for prestigious law firms when they leave the bench, or they'll lose their membership in the Effete Eastern Intellectual White Trash Elite. White Trash (just because your skin color is dark, doesn't mean you aren't white—look at President Obama's wife) because like the Nazis and Commies their decisions will end up on the trash heap of history.

Many judges also believe that people who dissent from the popular opinions of Feminism and political correctness do not have rights. It's the old plantation mentality. If you're not part of the majority—you don't deserve rights.

Legally, the trilogy of cases was correct, but politically, it was not, and that's the problem with justice in America today. Generally there is none unless you tote the Feminist line.

The judges aren't allowing us guys to fight for our rights within the system. They threw the trilogy of cases out before they even got to discovery. Discovery serves the purpose of producing admissible evidence needed to prove the allegations. So had the cases made it to

discovery, and the defendants obeyed the discovery laws, unlikely, then I could have proved the allegations.

The courts are in effect saying—get lost, drop dead, you’ve got no rights. They don’t even pretend that men have rights. Their Wall Street-like arrogance will eventually come back to haunt them because as Mr. Justice Frankfurter said, “justice must satisfy the appearance of justice.” *Offit v. U.S.*, 348 US 11, 14 (1954).

“[H]istory shows that people have a way of not being willing to bear oppressive grievances without protest. Such protests, when bottomed upon facts, lead almost inevitably to an irresistible popular demand for either a redress of those grievances or a change in the Government.” *Communist Party of United States v. Subversive Activities Control Bd.*, 367 U.S. 1, 167 (1961)(Mr. Justice Black dissenting).

*Aren’t you discouraged?*

It’s always nice to win, but far better to fight than not fight at all. Of course, I’d rather win after a fight, or even lose after one; just so long as there’s a fight.

“Success is going from one failure to another without a loss of enthusiasm.” Winston Churchill.

At least the trilogy of lawsuits makes clear that there are now two classes of people in America: one of princesses—females, and the other of servants—males.

*What do you do now?*

The Feminazis won and to the victors belong the spoils—me. There may be other actions in court, but I “do not trust to hope for it is forsaken there” for men.

Often, however, you don’t have to win a case to win a case when you’re a lawyer. Just by taking someone to court requires them to hire a lawyer, which is expensive; the allegations of their bad deeds are forever on the record; and they will go through significant emotional distress. But that doesn’t change society.

If I win the lottery, I’ll set up a law firm that hires lawyers across the globe to drag every Feminist, Feminist sycophant, and Feminist appeaser kicking and screaming into court to make their lives miserable.

If I don’t win the lottery, then the only alternative is the 3<sup>rd</sup> and 5<sup>th</sup> sentences of the Declaration of Independence—civil disobedience. After all, what good is a license to practice law when I can’t even defend my own rights in the system in which I’m licensed?

I didn’t become a lawyer to make a lot of money. If I were after money, then I would have become an investment banker. When I was first accepted to law school, I was also accepted to business school. Also, I didn’t become a lawyer to help the underprivileged. I became a lawyer to fight for my rights, but since courts are infested with Feminist ideology, it’s impossible to do that.

When the bureaucrats in the institutions of this country turn against your rights, then it is your right to use violence. “The purpose of civil disobedience is to communicate to others . . . [And] violence is an important factor in change.” Howard Zinn.

Need I say the courts are prejudiced, need I say they are useless, need I say it's time for men to take the law into their hands? Just like back during the Viet Nam War when I was in SDS. Maybe this is my second chance.

*Aren't those judges smarter than you?*

What good is intelligence if you're a coward?

Some of them are, but often lawyers who become judges do so because they graduated in the bottom half of their law school class and can't find work in the private sector. Since all law schools grade on a curve, the ones in the bottom half would have flunked out without the curve. So remember, the judge who ruined your life or is about to, is most likely a flunky.

### Liberals or Lying Lefties

Wimps for believing self-preservation at all costs is a justifiable end. Clearly a female belief.

Liberals will tax citizens more because they believe individuals don't really know how to spend their money, will disarm people because they don't need to be able to defend themselves or determine when it is necessary, and will try to reverse the results of the 2016 Presidential Election because the Americans who voted differently than liberals did not know what they were doing.

### Liberty

"Individual liberty is the first concern of every man for without it, life is not worth living." Clarence Darrow.

"Freedom is never more than one generation away from extinction. We didn't pass it to our children in the bloodstream. It must be fought for, protected, and handed on for them to do the same." Ronald Reagan.

"You don't suppose this kind of thing is ever finished do you? Tomorrow it'll be something else—and another fella will have to standup. And you've helped give him the guts to do it!" Inherit the Wind, Act III, Henry Drummond.

"Freedom comes in many forms ... it means the right to read what I want to read, to think as I please, and say whatever is on my mind. It is the right to disagree, if I wish, with the policies and actions of our government and to fight to change those policies. Every citizen who speaks out against moral wrongs helps our country become stronger and more responsive to the needs of all people." Harold Baer, Jr. U.S. District Judge, July 2, 1999.

Liberty is not surviving at any cost, but paying whatever is its price. "Take more care to end life well than to live long." John Brown.

The federal courts "should give a 'preferred position' to the First Amendment and other constitutional provisions guaranteeing the rights of the individual against the state because the other branches of government are sufficiently vigorous in looking out for the interests of the state." Howard Zinn

To hold a man enslaved to Feminism is to be guilty of robbing him of his liberty.

When a Feminist tries to tell you what to do, respond, "Who are you to tell me how to live?"

The rise of Feminazism may have the result that all of the guys who died for liberty in the past (and the ones who are dying now) basically died so that females can take over the entire planet and civilization to satisfy their own selfish whims.

When a girl talks about freedom and liberty, she means hoing.

Governments are suppose to be dedicated to liberty—not uniformity.

## Love

It only exists as a verb—not a noun.

As a noun, love is an illusion created by females to manipulate men, just as religion is an illusion created by those in power to manipulate those who aren't.

To girls, love means a scheme to get what they want from men.

Love is very real for girls and of the utmost importance—just as frauds are to con artists. When a girl says she loves you, she's really saying, "I'm tricking you."

"I grasped at entrancing masks, and in my grip found creatures that made me shudder."

Mephistopheles, Goethe's *Faust*.

"Trouble like first love teaches many lessons." Charlie Chan.

## Man

A man is a guy who's not afraid of girls.

A man is a Feminist's worst nightmare.

No man can have self-respect who will not fight for freedom.

The measure of a man is not how much money he makes, how many people he destroys, or how much media coverage he receives, but whether he pursued his first best destiny for that requires the most courage. Of course, his first best destiny might be to make a lot of money, destroy a lot of people, or receive a lot of publicity.

"Whosoever will be a man, must be a non-conformist." Ralph Waldo Emerson.

Men, not females, exhibit discipline in chaos, energy amid hopelessness.

What makes a man is the choices he makes. Not how he starts things, but how he finishes them.

"The true man wants two things, danger and play. For that reason he wants females, as the most dangerous plaything." Friedrich Nietzsche.

Many middle-aged men resent bitterly having been tricked by social mores into sacrificing their lives at a useless job they hate just because it paid enough to support their wives and their wives' children. Today, fathers are considered only as walking wallets and occasional au pairs.

Men are more competitive, rational, logical, and seek to understand how things work.

But men do have a weakness for a pretty face: "And lo man looked on the face of beauty and stayed his hand and since then he was as one dead." Paraphrase from *King Kong*. "The swollen braggart, so petty now, would be here melting at her feet." Mephistopheles, Goethe's *Faust*.

It's a pity how easily men can be fooled. They are like children—they believe anything.

"Stupid, idiotic man! Deluded, duped, seduced since Adam's first day! And age teaches them nothing! Nothing! Ah, men. Eternal fools." Mephistopheles, Goethe's *Faust*.

"A man paralyzed by Helen will not so readily reclaim his senses." Mephistopheles, Goethe's *Faust*.



When are you guys going to wake up? Just because they're pretty and their bodies are soft, doesn't mean they aren't hard and vicious when it comes to money and getting what they want.

Most of today's males still think girls are made of sugar and spice and everything nice when many, especially the Feminists, are composed of lies, avarice and hearts of ice, or are simply fakes, demons and snakes.

Luckily, most Feminazis look like dogs, but even so, most of today's males are too intimidated by the Feminazis to listen to Mother Nature and take back their rights. They expect to secure the favor of the Feminazis by tamely submitting to every species of indignity, contempt, and wrong. They think themselves highly honored when a Feminazi smiles approvingly on them.

Most guys are whining wimps who want others to fight for their rights because they are too scared or cheap to do it themselves.

Such guys are not men but androgynies whom females can walk over indefinitely, and all these guys will do is complain and whine like little girls. That's not to say, I wouldn't let a pretty young thing walk over me in her stiletto heels now and then. But when it comes to my rights—forget it.

There are basically two types male sellouts who submit to Feminist ideology, or Uncle Tims. The guy who agrees with Feminism and the one who is too weak to stand up for his rights. Both give up their manhood because they think that is what girls and society want.

Every man whose life is destroyed in this infernal business of the Feminists is an argument in favor of manhood.

Boys may never grow up, but girls die well before they grow old.

### Manhattan

One of the few remaining communist territories on the planet.

### Man's World

Hasn't been a man's world since the hunting and gathering days. Read Friedrich Engels's *Origin of the Family*.

Over the past 40 years, Feminist organizations, some funded by taxpayer money and some tax exempt, have skewed American justice to where a female can accuse a guy of sexual harassment, lie to the court, and win a fat award. She can accuse a guy of rape, lie to the court, and send him up the river for 20 years. And she can even intimidate a guy's employer into giving her his job. But she still can't make him love her.

If it's always been a man's world, then why didn't the men collude together and breed and domesticate females in much the same way that they did with cows and horses? It couldn't have been that difficult.

What kind of a world of privilege is it that honors a man with the duty to spend a lifetime supporting others, more often than not in an unsatisfying job?

In childhood, adolescence, dating, marriage, and divorce, females are the ones being pleased—not the ones doing the pleasing.

## Marriage

“If we could survive without a wife ... all of us would do without that nuisance.” So said Roman general, statesman, and Consul Quintus Caecilius Metellus Macedonicus in 131 BC.

At some point, guys will realize that getting married is similar to playing Russian roulette with one chamber empty.

The Feminists have created hundreds of thousands of college-educated females for whom no college-educated husbands are available.

When the husband divorces his wife, it's hubby's fault. When the wife divorces her husband, it's still hubby's fault.

When it comes to men: marriage has become a gamble in which the odds are heavily against them.

Marriage is a legal contract among the husband, wife, and family court. That means guys are outnumbered 2 to 1.

Marriage is simply state controlled prostitution.

American men don't want a Feminist at home when they have to put up with Feminist bosses at work who vent their insecurities by creating mean-spirited and authoritarian work places.

Married females live longer than single females. The extra time is greater than that between married males and single males.

## Masculinity

Masculinity: virility, valor, resoluteness, honor, gallantry, nobility, forcefulness, machismo, daring, chivalry, boldness, tenacity, potency, sturdiness, self-reliance, compassion, and courage.

Masculinity is a quality that causes individuals to stand for something.

Antonym: feminine, effeminate, ladylike, passive-aggressive, cowardly, duplicitous, hateful, and speaks with forked tongue.

Camille Paglia reminds her men-hating colleagues, masculinity is “the most creative cultural force in history.”

“Masculinity is just becoming something that is imitated from the movies. There's nothing left. There's no room for anything manly right now.” Camille Paglia.

It's a Massacre of Masculinity.

## Media

“Through the years of the 20<sup>th</sup> century even the most mercenary of newspaper owners were, above all, conscious of their duty to inform the public and they backed their reporters to the hilt. It was not just a matter of right or wrong—but common sense. The ethics of good journalism in this era, alas, seems to have been forgotten.” Gabe Pressman

Most of what the news media reports are only allegations because such would not be admissible in court without more work being done. Balanced journalism, therefore, means presenting the allegations from both sides—not just one.

A man's reputation is often destroyed by the media's presumption that he is guilty, which results in news stories that are carefully crafted, consistently unreliable, and often just wrong.

Girls do well on TV because they're good at running off with their mouths. They don't think about what they're going to say, so they don't have to stop to think, which eats up media time.

Cable television is overflowing with loudmouth, know-nothing banshees. The success of many shows and the money they shovel into the pocketbooks of hosts and guests is based on a hatred of men, on demonizing men, and thereby justifying all the harm females cause men by blaming it on men. Essentially a bunch of Feminist Geraldines making a lot of money by whining, "A man made me do it."

Feminazi producers are burying us under fakeumentaries about domestic violence and perfecting bigotry-as-art.

One website states that "Every 15 seconds a female is battered somewhere in the United States." What it doesn't mention is that every 14 seconds females batter their partners, and probably every second a girl is intentionally inflicting emotional distress on a guy somewhere in the U.S.

The media is constantly aggrandizing some female for doing something mediocre, in a mediocre fashion with a mediocre result.

Television and movies overwhelmingly present men negatively and as something dangerous to be contained, attacked, denigrated, or ridiculed as inherently lazy, slobbish, and beer-drinking dimwits.

The University of Western Sydney in Australia did a study focusing on news, features, current affairs, talk, and lifestyle shows. It found that men are widely demonized, marginalized, trivialized, and dehumanized in non-fiction media that allegedly presents facts, reality, and the "truth." Sixty-nine percent of mass media reporting and commentary on men was unfavorable compared with just 12 per cent favorable and 19 per cent neutral or balanced. Men were predominately reported or portrayed in the mass media as villains, aggressors, perverts, and philanderers, with more than 75 per cent of all mass media representations of men showing them in one of these four ways. More than 80 per cent of media mentions of men were negative, compared with 18.4 per cent of mentions which showed men in a positive role.

The media almost exclusively portrays men as the perpetrators of violence against children even though the U.S. National Incidence of Child Abuse and Neglect report in 2000 found that "where maltreatment of children led to death, 78 per cent of the perpetrators were female."

Traditional masculinity has become a target of ridicule in many forms of mass media from TV shows to major newspaper opinion columns and cartoons.

The media and popular culture use violence against men to evoke laughs while sanctimoniously admonishing the use of such against females.

Hollywood gives females jobs they never do in real life, such as a dockworker who looks like a model, or a cop who stands her ground under fire. If terrorists come marching down my street and a female cop shows up, I'll take her gun and defend myself, thank you.

Personally, I don't care if girls sit around an air conditioned studio denigrating, demeaning, and dissing men; wallowing in their delusional victimization so that they can feel self-righteous and superior. But when they vent their psychotic hatred of men by turning it into programs and influencing the passage of laws that foster the discrimination of an entire class because of sex, then they are evil and evil has to be stopped.

## Media Appearance Tips

“Thanks for having a serial anti-Feminist on your show.”

Don't rant, don't rave—just answer the questions ask.

Don't interrupt anyone, smile, keep head vertical—not at an angle, don't shift your eyes, look directly at the host all the time or the camera if they tell you to.

Talk slowly so they'll understand you, no “uhs,” lighten up, relax, be open, animated, honest, mocking, logical, merciless, defiant, and yourself.

You can't hear the audience laugh, so pause after you make a joke and imagine they are laughing.

Never say thank you at the end—just nod; otherwise, your words may be cut off.

Answer the question asked.

Button jacket, tuck under seat.

## Men's or Male Studies

The courses that claim to be Men's Studies today are just teaching Feminism under another name.

## Men's Rights Movement

I don't belong to that group of wimps and whiners. They're trying to win back their rights by acting like girls instead of men.

Most men's rights advocates act like little girls and behave largely as the Feminists tell them to. You can identify them by the politically correct lingo they use and their copying of Feminists tactics by simply changing the sex. For example, “A woman is more likely to physically attack a guy than vice versa.” True, but who cares, unless she's behind the wheel of a Mercedes Benz. Even if she has a gun, most girls can't shoot straight anyway, so unless it's a shotgun, she'll miss.

In one of my martial arts class, one Senshi always told us don't hit the girls and I don't. I let them hit me, which rarely hurts, unless it's low.

What the men's righters don't understand is that girls have different weapons for causing evil, such as fraud and the intentional infliction of emotional distress.

## Ministry of Truth

There are two ways to lie: say something that is false or fail to admit something that is true. The last is called prevarication. Feminists and androgynies actually think prevarication is not lying.

The lying about female exploits in order to further Feminazi delusions of female abilities is not the exception but the norm nowadays, and it extends from the downright frivolous to matters of life and death.

Truth is not a mere matter of how many people believe it.

Private Jessica Lynch was quickly touted by the media and U.S. Government as a female “Rambet” protecting the men of her convoy in Iraq. The convoy she was in made a number of wrong turns thanks to the female driver of the lead vehicle. Lynch had no battle wounds but

only blunt force injuries caused when her vehicle crashed—don't know if she was driving the truck. Nine men in her company were shot in the head—execution style. This indicates that they were either trying to protect the females in the company or that Lynch's captors showed her a type of mercy that her male comrades never saw.

Girl golfer Michelle Wie won a mixed boys and girls golf tournament, but the girls were allowed to play from tees that made the course twenty percent shorter for them.

Heroic men of bygone days have been de-emphasized, often in favor of females of limited or even dubious accomplishment. These girls aren't truly great women like Mother Theresa and her Sisters of Mercy but rather are valkyries, masculinized figures who are exaggerated and often imaginary.

### Misandry

Misandry is found in almost every genre: books, television shows, movies, greetings cards, comic strips, and commercials. It works in various ways: laughing at men, looking down at men, bypassing, blaming, dehumanizing, and finally demonizing men. As a result, the world view of our society has become increasingly focused on the needs and problems of females and the made-up evils and inadequacies of men. Simply put—a hatred of men.

### Misogyny

*Are you a misogynist?*

No, I don't give messages.

*You must hate girls?*

Not at all, as with chocolate, girls are one of my favorite favors—regardless of the time of the month.

I don't hate all girls—just Feminazis, and them I despise. I guess that makes me a misogyn-a-feminist—although massaging a Feminist is not an act I would want to engage in.

I don't hate girls; they're perfect—from the neck down.

You can't hate that which you lust after. Take chocolate for instance. I like the taste, but it causes me to gain weight and increases my cholesterol, yet I still eat it. Same with pretty young ladies, only they cause high blood pressure.

Don't hate girls, just what they do to men.

I don't dislike girls. I merely distrust them between a twinkle in the eye and arsenic in the soup.

When I go out to a nightclub or my hip hop class, believe me, what's in my heart is not malice.

I don't dream about middle-aged Feminists but pretty young ladies.

*How young?*

Depends on the state I'm in.

*I'll bet you don't have any girls who are just friends?*

That's not true. Some of my best friends are ... no, come to think of it, none of my best friends are females. But that's not misogynistic—it's just smart.

### Miss Columbia

“I'm trying to stop you bigots and ignoramuses from controlling the education of the United States.” Inherit the Wind, Act II, Henry Drummond.

The first suit, Miss Columbia I, was against Columbia University's Women's Studies Program, the New York State Regents for requiring the feminization of higher education, and the U.S. Department of Education for supporting the program. The case argued that it was unfair to have a Women's Studies Program but no Men's Studies.

In New York, 57% of all college students are female, 63% of the Master's degrees and over a majority of the doctoral degrees go to females.

Nationwide by 2016, females will receive 64% of the Associate's Degrees, over 60% of the Bachelor's Degrees, 53% of the Professional Degrees, and 66% of the Doctor's Degrees. National Center for Educational Statistics, *Digest of Educational Statistics*, Table 258.

American boys have lower rates of literacy, lower grades, and higher dropout rates. *Science Daily*, June 10, 2009.

If anyone today is in need of special programs dedicated to the furtherance of their education and employability, it's men—not females.

By using tax dollars to support the new-age religious doctrine of post-modern Feminism and the discriminatory enforcement of Title IX, New York State and the federal government have created two classes of citizens in New York's higher education: one of nobility—females and one of serfs—males.

New York's Regents began to feminize education in 1972 in order to increase the number of female students and graduates. In 1972, females made up 42% of all college students. *Bureau of the Census*.

The problem is that New York continues to use the same quota based policies it used 40 years ago, even though today males are now the overwhelming minority in higher education and graduates.

So why is this happening? Because the belief-system that initially drove equal opportunity between the sexes has turned into dogma—a religion that is now its own end resulting in institutionalized discrimination against men.

There's no other way to explain it. It's not affirmative action, since the results have gone far beyond equal treatment by the State's own measures. The purpose of affirmative action is to eliminate the effects of past discrimination and obtain equitable representation, *Johnson v. Transportation Agency*, 480 U.S. 616, 632, 637 (1987), which means it is now time for affirmative action for guys in higher education.

The Miss Columbia I putative class action case started in the U.S. District Court for the Southern District of N.Y. The federal judge held that the Class Representatives did not have standing because the post-modern Feminism mandated by New York State and propagated

through the Women's Studies Program by Columbia's Institute for Research on Women & Gender ("IRWG") was not a religion.

Now that might be true, but there is no way of telling without competent evidence of which there wasn't any because the case never reached the stage where evidence is submitted to prove facts. The district court judge, however, simply declared it was "absurd and utterly without merit" that Feminism is a religion, and "Feminism is no more a religion than physics...." *Order* p. 2.

It's unlikely that any rational person believes the tenets of Feminism are as accurate as those of physics. Feminism believes that the differences between the sexes are the result of social conditioning. Science, which includes genetics, evolution, and physics, disagrees. What's more irrational (which is a characteristic of religion) than believing sexual differences have nothing to do with genetics or evolution or that because of sex, one group is entitled to preferential treatment. The Judge obviously never studied science.

The lower court violated the rules by pulling out of thin air a finding that Feminism was not a religion. The judge did this because any person who is considered a taxpayer and connected in some fashion with the impact of government aiding a religion can proceed to trial and will likely win if government activities benefit that religion. Obviously, I'm a taxpayer and connected with Columbia University as an alumnus. But had the lower court not made its fact finding of Feminism not being a religion, then the case would have proceeded to the gathering of evidence stage on the Establishment Clause issue.

Politically, the judge could not allow that or take the chance, so he intentionally ignored that civilization has progressed from medieval days when authority figures arbitrarily decided what was true and what was not without any evidence.

The district judge also called the claim of Feminism as a religion "frivolous." The only thing frivolous and absurd is men looking for justice in the courts of America. The judge simply gave the class of men the bum's rush out of court. What do you think his decision would have been if a college offered only Men's Studies but no Women's Studies?

The lower court Judge interjected his own factual and ideological beliefs or fear of Feminism in order to dismiss the case. Judges aren't supposed to do that, but it happens all the time, especially when taking on the Feminists in a system where men are considered subhuman.

The U.S. Court of Appeals for the Second Circuit upheld the lower court's decision. On the Title IX and Equal Protection claims, the Second Circuit ruled that any harm caused guys by the lack of a Men's Studies Program was "speculative." Strange that federal courts don't say the same about the lack of a girl's sports team when a college only has a guy's team. Apparently the law is adjudicated one way for girls and another way for guys.

On the issue of whether Feminism is a religion, the Court of Appeals in its written Order simply did not address the lower court violating the rules by making a fact finding without evidence. During oral argument, however, the issue of religion was the main focus. The Court of Appeals zeroed in on whether I was a taxpayer, since a person with taxpayer status could bring the Establishment Clause violation to trial.

There were two judges in the Court of Appeals hearing. One personally insulted me twice, whom I simply dismissed as the typical male Feminist sycophant. The other, Judge Calabresi, probably the smartest judge in the Second Circuit and a believer in civility, raised two interesting questions. First, whether I had to specifically state in the complaint that I had taxpayer status. Perhaps a technical error, but one the court has the legal power to absolve with

judicial notice. The Court could also have sent the case back to the district court to allow me to add those four words, “I am a taxpayer,” which I requested but the Court refused. When it’s a “hot button” case, the Court apparently lacks the political will to exercise its power in a just manner. Second, whether a complaint alleging harm from a religion has to make a “plausible” argument that the plaintiff was injured by the belief system.

The Second Circuit’s decision was a Summary Order, which means that the law and arguments used by the Court to throw the case out cannot be used in other cases. Think of it as a medieval Queen free to make a decision in one case and a different decision in another case that is similar. Summary Orders are how the U.S. Courts of Appeals in similar fact situations can rule against parties they don’t like but later on rule in favor of parties they do like. It’s the exercise of arbitrary power. Such Summary Orders are near impossible to appeal to the U.S. Supreme Court because they have no juridical importance, since the law and arguments used can only be used against the parties of that particular case. So if a Court of Appeals doesn’t like who you are or what you stand for, it simply makes up some law and arguments and you lose under a Summary Order. The law changes depending on whether you are a dissident or conformist.

So I brought the case again just on the Establishment Clause issue in which the Complaint said four times that I was a taxpayer and I called it Miss Columbia II. The former district court judge declined to hear the case, guess he had enough of me, and the case was sent to another judge, this one a female. She dismissed it basically saying that, except for Columbia not being a party, all the other parties were the same as in Miss Columbia I, so having had my day in court once, I didn’t deserve another shot. It’s called *collateral estoppel*.

Luckily a couple of guys agreed to join the case after her decision and in time for me to file a motion to amend the Complaint by adding these two as plaintiffs. If the judge grants the motion, then *collateral estoppel* can’t apply because the two new plaintiffs weren’t involved in Miss Columbia I. However, she’s not going to grant the motion or if she does, she’ll come up with some argument to dismiss it. And she did just that.

She said the law didn’t allow for an amendment to add new plaintiffs after the original complaint was dismissed for lack of standing. Strange that in the Women’s Studies I case, a Court of Appeals Judge admonished me for not trying to amend the complaint in that case after the district court judge dismissed for lack of standing. Guess what the law is on post judgment amendments depends on whether it will rid the federal courts of men fighting for their rights.

The Women’s Studies II case was appealed to the Second Circuit, which said that if I am ever involved in another case invoking “feminism-as-religion,” I will be sanctioned. Sanctions for an attorney means the court can fine, refer for suspension or disbarment, have arrested, require representation of any indigent—whether citizen or not, demand an apology to Feminists, require posting a bond in future cases, require copying by hand sections of legal treatises, put an attorney into re-education, and demand he obtain court permission to bring future men’s rights cases.

I tried to get into the Supreme Court, which once again said get lost. Also tried with a mandamus petition to have the Supreme Court tell the Second Circuit to knock-it-off but the Supremes ignored the petition.

### *Feminism as a religion*

According to the U.S. Supreme Court, religion does not require gods or goddesses at the center, a hierarchical structure, a church, or folks walking around in robes.



Except for a case in the late 1800s, the U.S. Supreme Court has never defined “religion” as requiring a belief in an omnipotent being or beings. Since the 1960s, the Supreme Court and Courts of Appeals have found religion when no godlike figure was believed in but rather moral or ethical convictions drove an individual’s actions and took a place in the individual’s life parallel to that filled by God or gods in a traditional believer.

Basically, secular beliefs that impose a duty of conscience may function as a religion, including intense personal convictions that may appear incomprehensible, irrational, or incorrect.

Feminists intensely believe themselves princesses by divine right and men the minions of the devil. That’s faith, which is the firm belief in something for which there is no proof. Feminism also asserts that sex roles are a result of upbringing, social conditioning, but science disagrees, which makes that belief incomprehensible, irrational, and incorrect—a characteristic of religion. *Welsh v. U.S.*, 398 U.S. 333, 339 (1970).

Feminists advocate a quota-ocracy as opposed to a meritocracy; want a female commander-in-chief but don’t want to register for the draft; demand jobs above the glass ceiling but not in the Tombstone Basement; believe that because they were born female, they deserve preferential treatment; complain about being disenfranchised, yet they are the majority in this republic; lobbied and got a Government office dedicated to female health when ladies live longer than guys. All infer an underlying irrationality.

Religion has the power to cause a person to act against her self-interest. For example, when a rich guy is hitting on a girl at a club, it’s in her self-interest to play up to him. If she’s a Feminist and the guy uses the term “girl,” she’ll try to censor his speech by nastily telling him to say “woman.” He’ll simply move on to a more agreeable babe, and the religion “Feminism” will have overcome her genes.

So think irrationality and doing something stupid and you’ve got Feminism, a religion.

A legal test for whether a belief system is a religion has been adopted by five Courts of Appeals, but not the Second Circuit. The belief-system (1) addresses fundamental and ultimate questions having to do with deep and imponderable matters, (2) is comprehensive in nature, (3) has formal and external signs such as structure, organization, efforts at propagation, and observance of holidays. Not all of the indicia need be satisfied for a belief-system to be a religion, but in the case of Feminism, they are.

Feminism provides followers with a faith-based certainty that they are the sole possessors of the highest form of truth to the answers of life’s persistent questions. The belief-system shapes the entirety of its followers’ lives with thought patterns that make possible the description of realities, the formulation of beliefs, and the experiencing of inner attitudes, feelings, and sentiments. It provides a conscious push toward an ultimacy and transcendence that provide norms and power throughout life.

Women’s Studies programs are “intended to introduce students to the long arc of feminist discourse about the cultural and historical representation of nature, power, and the social construction of difference.” IRWG’s *Fall 2007 Course Guide* at p. 1.

Columbia’s Women’s Studies program propagates the modern-day religion of Feminism through its lectures, seminars, consciousness indoctrination sessions, publications, career preparations, counseling, historical revisionism, propagandizing, unanimity of thought labeled “politically correct,” a pantheon of idols such as Mary Wollstonecraft, *de facto* disciples and apostles, and public lecture series.

Suppose Columbia University offered a program in Islam of the type that the Madras schools do. That brand of Islam says Christians are infidels. Feminism says the same about men. Do you think New York State and the U.S. Government could get away with aiding that? .

Women Studies Programs are nothing more than Matriarchal Madrases. They find revisionist history in obscure corners of myth and legend.

### *State and Federal aid for Feminism*

The “three main evils against which the Establishment Clause was intended to [protect are] sponsorship, financial support, and active involvement of the sovereign in religious activity.” *Lemon v. Kurtzman*, 403 U.S. 602, 612 (1971).

The Establishment Clause’s purpose is to avoid the danger that “powerful sects or groups might bring about a fusion of governmental and religious functions ... to the end that official support of the State or Federal Government are placed behind the tenets of one,” *Sch. Dist. of Abington Twp. v. Schempp*, 374 U.S. 203, 222 (1963).

State educational program requirements along with Federal and New York State funds aid the proselytizing of Feminism in higher education in New York.

Statewide plans, policy statements, and the registering of Women’s Studies programs result in New York State sponsoring, supporting, and monitoring the propagation of Feminism in higher education, the work place, and society. For example, New York State’s major policy statement *Equity for Women in the 1990s* requires:

1. the N.Y. Education Department to be responsible for assuring:
  - a. changes in teaching strategies and cultural attitudes to female friendly ones,
  - b. changes in people’s thought patterns to further female interests,
2. statewide compliance with affirmative action policies for females,
3. implementing change through education and appropriate action to assist females,
4. college teachers to undergo training and their teaching regularly monitored and reinforced with female friendly strategies,
5. research on current issues facing females be developed, supported, and promoted,
6. major revisions in curriculum and teaching are necessary,
7. changes in teaching strategies and cultural attitudes,
8. N.Y. Education Department to collect data necessary to carry out the Regents’ action strategies,
9. N.Y. Education Department to conduct academic reviews at colleges and universities to assure teaching practices comport with the Regents’ Equity for Women policies,
10. N.Y. Education Department receives reports from college affirmative action officers to assure colleges comply with the Regents’ affirmative action for females in recruitment and promotion in professional and managerial educational programs,
11. N.Y. Education Department’s Affirmative Action Officer assures the replication of college practices and the monitoring of such practices that benefit females with support while all other practices are eliminated with particular care taken with curriculum in both content and methods of instruction,

12. females be given extra assistance,
13. appropriate textbooks be used in all courses,
14. those responsible to bring about the above changes are college faculty, administrators, staff members, students, deans, athletic directors, governing boards, and executive officers of all New York educational institutions, cultural institutions, N.Y. Education Department, employers, business, and industry in the State.

The federal government by delegating its college accrediting responsibilities to the State facilitates and aids New York in its policies of advancing Feminism in colleges.

Funds from the State and the U.S. Department of Education, which are not student aid, go directly into supporting the operation of Women's Studies Programs in New York State.

"The history of governmentally established religion, both in England and in this country, showed that whenever government had allied itself with one particular form of religion, the inevitable result had been that [government] had incurred the hatred, disrespect and even contempt of those who held contrary beliefs." *Engel v. Vitale*, 370 U.S. 421, 430-31(1962)

### *Dictatorship of the majority*

Women's Studies have created a dictatorship of the majority—not just on college campuses but throughout the fabric of society by imposing a unitary belief system of Feminist orthodoxy that dictates speech and conduct.

"The classroom is peculiarly the 'marketplace of ideas.' The Nation's future depends upon leaders trained through wide exposure to that robust exchange of ideas which discovers truth 'out of a multitude of tongues, [rather] than through any kind of authoritative selection.'" *Keyishan v. Board of Regents*, 385 U.S. 589, 603 (1967)(citing *United States v. Associated Press*, 52 F.Supp. 362, 372 (S.D.N.Y. 1943)).

### *Discrimination of men*

"The vigilant protection of constitutional freedoms is nowhere more vital than in the community of American schools." *Shelton v. Tucker*, 364 U.S. 479, 487 (1960).

The purposes of education to enlighten, elucidate, provide the practical means for furthering oneself in society, and to defend against unjust attacks are thwarted when doctrines favorable to the majority advocate discrimination against the minority, and administrators fail to provide programs helpful to the minority in countering such discrimination.

"Discrimination itself, by perpetuating 'archaic and stereotypic notions' or by stigmatizing members of the disfavored group as 'innately inferior' and therefore as less worthy participants in the political community, ... can cause serious noneconomic injuries to those persons who are personally denied equal treatment...." *Heckler v. Mathews*, 465 U.S. 728, 739-740 (1984).

Women's Studies are the varsity sport of choice for campus coeds in their never-ending war against men. Title IX of the Education Amendments of 1972 has downsized or eliminated men's varsity teams, now it's time Columbia and other colleges do the same to their vociferous Women's Studies programs or provide equivalent benefits to men in the form of Men's Studies programs. When a college only has a guys' rugby team, the injury to girls who want to play

rugby is that there is no girls' team. The same logic applies to Women's Studies programs of which there are over 400 in America compared to perhaps 5 Men's Studies programs.

The discrimination in higher education is depriving male students and male alumni of an equal educational opportunity as compared with females. Men, the ones most likely to take courses providing contrary perspectives to Feminist Women's Studies programs, have no opportunity to do so.

For example, at Columbia University, there are no programs that provide males, a minority at the college, the opportunities to nurture their talents as females have in the Women's Studies program because there is no Men's Studies program.

Women's Studies programs with all their incidences of benefits give females a competitive advantage over males in education, the work place, the courts, the culture, and society as a whole. *Cf. In re U.S. Catholic Conference*, 885 F.2d 1020, 1028-31 (2d Cir. 1989)(citations omitted).

Men have no problem competing on an even playing field with girls, but Woman's Studies unfairly tilts the field in favor of females, which is the only way they can beat a guy unless it's in the area of T & A.

"Fairness in individual competition for opportunities ... is a widely cherished American ethic. Indeed, in a broader sense, an underlying assumption of the rule of law is the worthiness of a system of justice based on fairness to the individual." *Regents of University of California v. Bakke*, 438 U.S. 265, 319 n. 53 (1978).

New York State and college Feminist policies simply treat males unfairly, which is a discriminatory impact. *See International Broth. of Teamsters v. U.S.*, 431 U.S. 324, 335 n. 15 (1977). Equal protection under the Fifth and 14<sup>th</sup> Amendments do not permit programs with a discriminatory impact that are motivated in part by ill will toward a particular sex.

Sure men can take Women's Studies courses, but it is of no benefit to them; just like a girl taking a male sport—she'll spend her time on the bench. In a Women's Studies program, the guy will spend his time being walked over by the girls in the class and the teacher as a result of the institutionalized ill will toward men.

Slamming the door in a person's face is not the only way to keep him out. Another way is to make the environment within so hostile, traducing, and demeaning that it will deter his entrance. Women's Studies programs do not bar males from participating, but the opprobrious treatment males receive, the belligerence of castigations, the collective guilt heaped on them, and the denial to males of similar perks given females effectively locks the gates to all men but a few.

### *Separate but equal*

Male athletic programs are geared toward benefiting men while Women's Studies programs are geared toward benefiting females with Feminist ideology, strategy, tactics, and training for exploiting the modern-day social bias against men. *See Equity for Women in the 1990s, New York State Regents Policy and Action Plan* (1993).

Science and even the courts recognize that fundamental differences exist between the sexes. *United States v. Virginia*, 518 U.S. 515, 533 (1996). Just as the physical differences between males and females allow for the constitutionality of separate but equal sports teams under Title IX, 34 C.F.R. 106.34(a)(1), so also should the mental differences that stem from those physical differences require separate but equal gender studies. Following New York

State's requirements presented in *Equity for Women in the 1990s*, Columbia University and other colleges' Women's Studies programs are built on the psychology of females in the same way the University's football program is built on the physical make-up of males.

Women's Studies programs use practices that benefit females with support, recruitment, and promotion; use teaching strategies that accommodate female learning patterns and leadership style; and institute the promotion of female friendly strategies. *Equity for Women in the 1990s*, pp. 2, 4, 8-10. If there are female friendly strategies, then logically there are male friendly strategies that could be used in Men's Studies programs.

The success of New York State and colleges psychologically tuning Women's Studies to females is indicated by the disproportional number of females and female teachers in the programs; females receiving financial support; female and Feminist organization networking contacts; career placements of females; and a curriculum focused on feminine needs and problems.

New York colleges also have sports programs geared toward females to balance off those for males, so it is only fair that colleges provide a gender studies program built on the different psychological make-up of males. Without a Men's Studies program, the sexes are treated unequally, which is an inequity that contributes to unequal career opportunities later on.

For example, men have a disproportionate share of the dangerous jobs, are frequently overqualified for their work, and do not get the same economic return per unit of time or unit of risk from their education as females. This disparity is harmful to individuals and to society. Men often find it difficult to provide for their families. Their opportunities are curtailed; and the nation, competing in the global marketplace, is deprived of much valuable talent.

Women's Studies programs give female students and female alumni an exclusive opportunity over their male competitors in the University and society by using federal and state resources to give girls a leg up over guys. A program from the male point-of-view would enable males to develop their abilities and skills for battling effectively in the ever-present "gender wars" raging in this society.

### *Impact of Women's Studies*

The excuses for violating the rights of guys throughout society largely come from research conducted in Women's Studies programs. For example, Women's Studies support punishing men for speaking as they will and acting as they chose even when such actions do not violate any laws.

Women's Studies programs influence how people think, believe, and behave in a manner that leads to the violation of the rights of the minority—men.

Women's Studies preach a dogma rooted in the hatred and demonization of men. It depicts men as responsible for the world's evils from which the world can be delivered by simply filling positions of prestige and influence with females or androgynies.

Women's Studies have turned America's colleges into a breeding ground for the Feminist hatred of men. They've become boot camps for violating the rights of men in a society biased against men. Women's Studies programs turn out Feminist storm-troopers that go forth perverting American ideals, the rule of law, the Constitution, and destroying men with impunity.

The programs use lawyers and Feminist activists that teach females how to use tears, tantrums, fraud, threats of an unjust legal system, and, for the good looking ones, sex, to take advantage of men and any institution that involves men in order to get what they don't deserve.

The aim of Women's Studies is not equality, but to create and perpetuate a legal, social, and economic substratum occupied by men toiling in a Fritz Lang "Metropolis" like underworld.

The programs are trying to do the same thing that the Commies did in Russia—socially re-engineer men. Just look at the harm that red lunacy caused.

### *Recruitment & Networking*

Woman's Studies programs function as Feminist recruitment and networking centers. Girls in the program have an inside track to jobs in academia, government, media, business, and nonprofit groups through Feminists already in positions in those fields. The Feminists in those fields are not about to hire men, while the men in those fields so fear the Feminists that they will generally hire a girl over a guy.

### *Training*

Woman's Studies programs train a large network of acolytes to transform American institutions according to strict Feminist specifications. The programs provide practical training for Feminists to

1. obtain and use government tax dollars to rig the judicial system against men through VAWA indoctrination training programs;
2. exploit a court system biased against men through fraudulent sexual harassment suits and false accusations of domestic mistreatment to obtain custody, child support, and put a man in jail;
3. sway the media into reporting only the evils of men but only the good of females;
4. use government tax dollars for Feminist tax exempt nonprofit organizations, which frees up private money for Feminist lobbying and political action committees.

### *Murder and perjury*

Women's Studies aid and abet murder by providing fatuous excuses for such. For example:

"Oh you were too lazy to go to the corner drug store to buy a contraceptive—abort."

"That baby is too much work—throw it in the garbage."

"Young sons don't listen—drown them."

"You found a new boyfriend, want a new husband—kill the old."

Where do you think all those lunatic female syndromes come from? Women's Studies voodoo them up giving females *carte blanche* to do whatever their irrational whims tell them, regardless of ethics or the law:

1. A girl wants to murder her husband and get away with it; Women's Studies pull out of the hat the phony psychological "Battered Spouse" syndrome.
2. A female wants to disappear the baby she just had because he's too much work and she'll have to cut back on her partying, Women's Studies programs magic up another fraudulent psychological get-out-of-jail-free syndrome, "Postpartum Depression."
3. A girl wants to lie to the court about who the real father of her child is, about her boyfriend mistreating her, about her husband abusing his children, about some guy raping her

because when she sobered up she had second thoughts—no problem. Women’s Studies schizoid paradigm of females as strong and independent when they want something they can’t handle and victims when they screw up will avoid any prosecutions for perjury, because Women’s Studies says it’s really the guy’s fault for feminine evil.

*Ms. –Information*

Woman’s Studies provide a body of shyster scholarship that universities foist on America as proven truths. The concepts are largely false and misleading, but no one outside of academia has the time to show them for the feminine deception they are. For instance, girls make less than guys, guys own most of the assets in America, guys kill more human beings than girls, fewer tax dollars are spent on girls’ health problems, girls shouldn’t have to register for the draft, girls are strong and independent persons—if so, let them register for the draft.

*Ever take a Women’s Studies course?*

No, I’m not that masochistic, but I’ve talked to a number of guys who have. What a horror they went through.

*Why sue Women’s Studies at Columbia University?*

As an alumnus of Columbia University, I tried to find courses to audit that would provide information and arguments to help me expose the duplicity the Feminists use to do evil to men. I went seeking the truth at Columbia but found none—only the one-sided, deceitful, irrational belief system of Feminism. But if I had found the other side, there would have been no lawsuit.

Also, to plunge a knife into the heart of darkness of Feminazism.

Money

If I had enough money, I could beat the Feminazis. I wouldn’t win most of the cases, but enough to mortally wound them. But I’m broke.

Half my assets disappeared in the dot-com bubble thanks to my crooked female stockbroker at Salomon Smith Barney, and the other half went to fighting against the Feminazis, including those who violated my rights in helping my ex-wife, the Russian mafia prostitute and former mistress to a Chechen warlord, remain in the U.S. making lots of money illegally, laundering it, and evading taxes.

“Money is great, but sometimes a guy just gets pretty damn sore and money doesn’t matter anymore.” Mike Hammer.

Money often interferes with higher pursuits.

Girls always cost guys money. It’s a fundamental law of the universe.

Some people will do anything for money; others will do anything for justice.

Mother Nature

“Mother nature cannot be fooled.” Richard Feynman.

The fruit of young girls will always strive to find that connection with a man, not an androgyny.

The Feminists' war against 6 million years of evolution is doom to failure—eventually. But like religious fanatics, they'll cause a lot of harm in the meantime.

From 1900 to 1950 the male/female ratio in the U.S. was above 100%, but since 1950, it's been in the lower 90% category—something's wrong.

### Motivation to Fight the Feminazis

Justice! But I'll settle for vengeance.

So that, "They'll read in their papers . . . that [I] smashed a bad law. . . . made it a joke." Inherit the Wind, Act III, Henry Drummond.

Maybe I'm just suffering from PMS—persecuted male syndrome.

If females can have all these lunatic syndromes to excuse murdering the unborn, newborns, kids, boyfriends, and husbands, than I can have one to excuse me for fighting for my rights.

There's a lot of fun in fighting the Feminazis and it is almost as interesting as the anti-Vietnam War movement.

*What started you on your anti-Feminist crusade?*

Why, I married a Russian mafia prostitute who was a former mistress to a Chechen warlord, of course. I didn't know it at the time while working in Russia because my mind was so clouded by the drugs she was secretly feeding me. After bringing her to America, I realized she had used and tricked me, so I tried to fine some justice. But the courts treated her like a saint because the Feminists had infested them or made judges fearful to do justice for any a man. As for the immigration system, the Feminists had so emasculated it that after finding she committed marriage fraud—a crime, she's still here over eight years later continuing her nefarious activities.

My ex-wife, the Ho, as my friends and I affectionately call her, secretly fed me drugs without knowing or caring whether I was allergic to them or what my tolerance level was. If something had happened to me, she would have told the Russian or New York police with the tears she can cry at will, "Oh you know these men with their drugs. I told him to stop, but he wouldn't listen." To females like her, such evil is justified. No wonder she's a practitioner of black magic and a devotee of the anti-Christ. It's not for nothing that the Bible depicts such females as doing the Devil's bidding.

Feminism started making the rounds when I was in collage, but I didn't make up my mind about it until the Feminists started plastering signs around campus saying, "It's not your heart he's after." What hypocrisy. It could just as well be said, "It's not your heart she's after but your wallet." At least guys are driven by Mother Nature, but with the females, it's greed. That's when I decided the Feminists were just another special interest group like the oil and gas lobby of the 1960s.

My Jihada against them, however, did not start until the Edgar Allan Poe tale of horror I went through in fighting for my rights against my ex-wife, her profit driven divorce lawyer, and Feminist advocates.

American law enforcement agencies and courts largely ignored or stepped on my rights in order to follow the Feminazi rule of "punish the man, leave the girl alone," for example:

- A lesbian-Feminist divorce judge forced my attorney into lying to me in order to prevent an annulment based on my ex-wife's prostitution activities.



- When entering the country from overseas, Customs detained and interrogated me because of a fraudulent Temporary Restraining Order my ex-wife took out against me which had been dismissed the previous year. Customs didn't treat me like a terrorist, however, because terrorists enter the country freely.
- The F.B.I., after tracking down the goon that my ex-wife used to threaten me a few times, refused to do anything because they were afraid of upsetting him and infringing his privacy rights. The agent warned me not to open my door to anyone I didn't know, duh, I live in NYC, and be careful out in public. He also said not to contact the F.B.I. again because it wasn't an investigative organization. So then what does the "I" stand for—idiots?
- The F.B.I., after testing the narcotics my ex-wife secretly fed me, refused to tell me what they were.
- On the other hand, my ex-wife falsely swore to being a U.S. citizen when she registered to vote—that's a federal and state felony. The New York City Board of Elections referred her crimes to the U.S. Attorney for the Eastern District of N.Y. and the District Attorney for Queens but in accordance with Feminism nothing happened because she's a girl and an alien. What do you think happens to me if I commit a federal and state felony?
- The F.B.I. ran me out of Milwaukee when I was investigating a Russian couple that operated one of Southern Russia's premier call-girl operations. The couple had apparently expanded their operations to Milwaukee and were defendants in a Racketeer Influenced Corrupt Organization ("RICO") suit I brought against my ex-wife and her Russian and Chechen mafia associates. The F.B.I. arranged for a female associate of the couple to file a complaint with the local police that I was "harassing" her—typical Feminist tactic and lie. The police then threatened me with arrest, which effectively ended my investigation, since contacting any other potential witnesses against the couple would result in the F.B.I. telling them to also falsely accuse me of harassment.
- As for the RICO case, the federal judges, which included Justice Sonia Sotomayor when in the Second Circuit, threw it out by doing what "activist" judges always do—rewrite the law passed by Congress so as to reach a result consistent with Feminism.

The story behind the RICO case can be thought of as an Edward R. Murrow little picture of how the Russian and Chechen mafias expanded their sex industry into the U.S. with the tacit assistance of the Feminists and Feminist thinking courts and U.S. law enforcement agencies. The full story is at [www.Been-Scammed.com](http://www.Been-Scammed.com).

The following is a summary:

While managing a private detective agency in Russia, I met and married this 6' 1", vat-dyed blonde with grey-blue wolf eyes. Brought her to NYC where she started stripping at Flash Dancers—that was a tip off even for me. With the aid of Russian Military Intelligence, her diary, my Russian lawyers in Moscow and Krasnodar, private detectives in Cyprus and Mexico City, and a bunch of interviews conducted by me, I found out she was a prostitute, a former mistress to a Chechen warlord, a drug smuggler, a money launderer, and had married me for a green card. So I kicked the slut out of my apartment.

Since the marriage did not last two years, the Immigration and Naturalization Service (now USCIS) would start deportation proceedings against her unless I committed perjury by

saying we were still happily married and agreed to sponsor her for a green card. Naturally, she and her immigration lawyer tried to get me to perjure myself and sponsor her. I declined their offer. That left her the Violence Against Women Act (“VAWA”), written by the Feminists, as her best hope for a green card.

VAWA requires an alien spouse in my ex-wife’s position to claim abuse in order to receive a green card without her American husband sponsoring her. *See VAWA below.* Homeland Security determines whether the American husband committed abuse based solely on information provided by the alien wife, her lawyer (paid for by the federal government) and her Feminist advocate (paid for by the federal government). Any information from the husband that he didn’t do what he’s accused of doing is thrown in the garbage.

It helps under VAWA for an alien to file false police complaints and acquire an *ex parte* (that means the husband is not present) restraining order in state court against the husband. Homeland Security accepts such documents as proof positive of the husband committing abuse even though the police and courts latter conclude there was no basis to the accusations.

My ex-wife and her immigration lawyer filed a complaint of extortion against me with the police and obtained an *ex parte* temporary restraining order (“TRO”) from the Queens Family Court by claiming I threatened her with a gun and a knife and bruised her arm. It didn’t matter that she was the one who came at me with a knife twice and the bruise on her arm was from my taking the knife away from her on one such occasion. The gun and knife allegations against me along with the extortion were pure fantasies. But in Feminarchy America, all of it meant an evil man was harming an innocent female.

In response, I filed for an annulment/divorce, and tried to obtain a temporary restraining order against her based on her threats to use her Russian and Chechen crime associates to do me harm. The Feminist judge and her female clerk in the Queens Family Court laughed at me. A Russian mafia-moll gets a TRO based on lies and I get derision.

To prove my annulment and divorce actions, I went to my ex-wife’s hometown of Krasnodar, Russia looking for evidence.<sup>8</sup> Sounds logical, after all that’s where she started out as a prostitute, and since New York didn’t have no-fault divorce at the time, the evidence would help either for an annulment or a divorce. My going to Krasnodar, however, prodded the detective bureau of the 114<sup>th</sup> Precinct in Astoria, Queens to try to arrest me for violating the TRO.

Where did those idiots expect me to go for evidence—Buffalo? What alleged danger was she in by my questioning her friends, neighbors, former criminal associates, former professors, and sex customers in Krasnodar when she was 5,000 miles away in NYC? If anyone was in danger, it was me. A couple of Russian military intelligence guys told me to be careful in Krasnodar. As it turned out, the witnesses I found in Krasnodar were the ones in danger and subsequently threatened into silence. Even my Krasnodar lawyer’s children were threatened by my ex-wife’s Chechen gangster associates.

Thanks to a good male lawyer, the detectives at the 114<sup>th</sup> never arrested me because they had nothing to go on. The TRO against me had been dismissed for my ex-wife’s failure to prosecute because all she needed for VAWA was that she had gotten a TRO.

Over a year after the dismissal of the TRO when re-entering this country from overseas, my name came up on Customs’ watch list. Customs detained me for questioning because of the dismissed TRO. Customs doesn’t detain terrorists and repeat criminal offenders, but a citizen man, falsely accused by an alien Russian mafia prostitute, is pulled aside for questioning. Then

---

<sup>8</sup> Krasnodar is a city of one million near the Black Sea and about 300 miles from Chechnya.

again maybe they thought me a potential threat to Feminarchy America—hope I can prove them right.

My first divorce lawyer, a female, treated me as though I was the culprit and there was something wrong with my wanting my wife to be faithful—”controlling” the lawyer called it—I fired her.

My wife’s attorney, probably paid for by the Department of Justice Office Against Violence to Women, tried to coerce me into not going to trial by charging me with the usual Feminist false accusations of battery. He claimed to have evidence, but he never produced it because he was lying. That was a violation of the attorney Disciplinary Rules, so I filed a complaint against him. The Disciplinary Committee, pretty much run by Feminists, did nothing.

My second lawyer, an androgyny, sold me out when the lesbian judge leaned on him not to go to trial. He agreed to a settlement without my okay. I wasn’t even in the room at the time because the lesbian judge told me to step outside. My lawyer lied to me about making any agreement, and as a result, I didn’t find out about it until a couple of months later. I fired him, and complained to the lesbian judge who said I could make a motion to rescind my lawyer’s agreement but it most likely wouldn’t succeed—Feminist justice.

Before I decided on whether to make the motion, I started receiving threats from some Russian mobster working for my ex-wife. His first threat told me not to make a motion to re-open my prior lawyer’s agreement, which I wasn’t going to do anyway, since it would have been a futile act given the Feminist judge. So, the marriage was legally over, but not the war.

My next move was to file a complaint against my sell-out attorney with the Disciplinary Committee, which dismissed the complaint because of lack of evidence even though I had a witness to my attorney lying to me that there was no settlement. The witness was an attorney who graduated Harvard Law School, but the Disciplinary Committee refused to interview him.

The threats from the Russian mobster started up again, this time telling me to stop providing the Immigration Division of the U.S. Embassy in Moscow with information on my ex-wife who the Embassy was investigating for possible deportation. I went to my local police, who laughed at me and did nothing, then to the FBI which found out who was making the threats but refused to tell me.

In the Manhattan Family Court, I filed for a restraining order against my ex-wife and her unknown gangster friend. The Feminist female judge refused to allow me discovery to find out who the threatening mobster was.

So, I filed a civil Racketeer Influenced Corrupt Organization (“RICO”) case against my ex-wife for which the Office of Violence Against Women did not pay her legal fees and against her Russian and Chechen mafia associates, her attorney for which his lawyer’s insurance policy did not cover, and Flash Dancers where she stripped. My ex-wife and her attorney had to pay out of their own pockets for their own defenses—ain’t that a shame. I received another threat—so what.

The RICO complaint was nearly a hundred pages long. What do you expect? The main characters were a Russian slut, strip clubs, gangsters, and a law firm that makes money keeping Russian prostitutes in America. There’s bound to be a lot of illegalities going on.

The Russian and Chechen mobs, which often work together, are different from the Italian one. It’s almost as though the Russians and Chechens have an organized crime gene that turns on whenever two or more of them have the opportunity to make money violating the law. The entire former Soviet Union is essentially a land of RICOs.

I went to Milwaukee to investigate two of the Russian mafia defendants, a husband and wife team that ran the premier modeling and call girl ring in Krasnodar. The FBI basically ran me out of town by manipulating the local police into threatening me with arrest.

The RICO case was dismissed. 10% of federal cases are dismissed, but 65-70% of civil RICO cases are dismissed. I appealed, and the panel of Second Circuit judges, headed by Sonia Sotomayor, upheld the dismissal. Next I petitioned the U.S. Supreme Court to hear an appeal but it didn't want anything to do with it. *See Den Hollander v. Flash Dancers Topless Club*, 173 Fed.Appx. 15 (2d Cir. 2006)(Sotomayor), *cert. denied* 549 U.S. 829.

The federal courts dismissed my RICO suit against the Russian and Chechen mafias and my ex-wife, an associate of both, most likely because she was an alien girl and I an American man.

Just switch the sexes. Imagine I was a female and my ex-wife an ex-husband who made lots of money for the Russian and Chechen mobs by pimping, laundering money, and smuggling drugs. Do you think the courts would have done something then?

My ex-wife would follow a dollar to hell, and violate plenty of laws doing so. Yet government institutions, state and federal, laughed at me, refused to meet their responsibilities, ignored the law, and threw me out into the street like a bag of garbage.

On the other hand maybe I'm stuck in Dr. Caligari's cabinet, just unlucky, or the fates hate me.

Here are some other personal reasons for my fighting the Feminazis, after all the personal is political—or is that only when the target is a man.

Let's start with the most powerful country in the history of the world trying twice to send me half way around that world to use my life to protect rubber trees owned by Firestone in the Mekong Delta of Vietnam. At the same time, the other half of my generation, or a good percentage of them, were walking around in see-through blouses and mini-skirts having sex whenever they wanted while I was dodging the draft. But what I went through was nothing compared to other guys in my generation who were dodging bullets.

Then after beating the draft and the end of one of the longer wars in American history, a television news director tells me he couldn't give me a reporter's job because I'm not a girl.

Then after law school, 9 of 10 federal agencies I apply to turned me down. In all nine, the hiring decisions were made by girls and most were less prestigious than the job I finally obtained with the Treasury Department.

*Why do you try?*

What do you expect, I'm a Libra. I don't like having my rights violated. I don't like people pushing me around to give girls an advantage they don't deserve. Especially in a society that bends over backwards, or is it forwards, to give females more rights than men.

If all you do in life is to make yourself safe, then it's not a life worth living.

Best not to live a slow and boring life where the furies of regret and dawdling of delusions plague the conscious.

The choice is, as is always the choice, between them and you. What you want to do, and what they—all the hypocrites, cowards, and con artists—want you to do in order to serve their interests or their perceived interests.

If the people of this country want to pump themselves up on psychotropic drugs so they can feel good while others violate their rights—that's their choice. It's not one I'm going to make.

You've got to fight the powers that be because they can and usually do violate your rights.

If I was a cripple, female or gay, you wouldn't ask me that question. I'm fighting for my civil rights.

I don't like the hypocrisy of special interest groups that proclaim everyone is equal when they really mean the members of that special interest group are more equal than others.

I've had it with Feminazi stupidities, insecurities, incivilities, and malice. I'm tired of them venting their vindictive revenge on men.

I for one will fight the Feminists and their acolytes until my last dollar or my last breath, and if there is anything after death, then for eternity.

*Make any money?*

No. I didn't bring these lawsuits to make money, I brought them out of contempt and hatred for the Feminazis, and the climate they've created in this country where the standard operating procedure is to violate the rights of men.

Some people will do anything for money, others will do anything for justice. I like to think I belong in the latter category.

*How far is anything?*

You'll know when I get there.

*Didn't you just have some bad experiences?*

You're right. But I'm not the exception, rather the norm.

Let's start with the Nazi Ho my mother and work our way through all those other sluts up to the Commie Ho my ex-wife.

My mother was a ho, most the girls I went out with were hos, and my ex-wife is a ho. It's hos all the way down.

*Aren't you out for vengeance—not justice?*

What's the difference? Look up their meanings in the dictionary.

*Isn't this a personal vendetta?*

Absolutely, it's my personal jihada against the government and Feminists, and I will have my justice in this life or the next (to paraphrase a quote from the *Gladiator*).

The Edgar Allen Poe Horror of a divorce I went through was caused by the Feminists and their control of the government. Sure my ex-wife jeopardized my life, but she's paid for that—RICO legal expenses and public exposure in her hometown that she was prostitute. Besides, I'll be seeing her in hell for Round 2.

I've lost everything because of the Feminazis and the government treating me as less than human. The Feminazis, the courts, and the government can do their worst, it doesn't matter anymore. But I will not be cowed, intimidated, and I intend to go down fighting. I do no wrong, but right.

### Movies

My favorites are *Milk Money* because it reminded me of when I was a kid, *Life Size* because it reminded me of when I believed the Hollywood illusions about girls, and *Constantine* because it reminds me of where I'm going.

### MR Legal Fund

MR Legal Fund was a nonprofit corporation to raise money for cases fighting for men's rights. The fund ridiculously failed to raise money, so I closed it down. Guys are even cheaper than girls, or they've already been bankrupted by one.

### Murder

Children are defenseless, but not as defenseless as fetuses, or incipient human beings. The outrage over the murder of either should be at least equal, but in Feminarchy America, outrage is usually reserved for a guy murdering a child.

### Objective

To go down fighting.

All I want to do is fight my enemies, and the sooner I make it to the Eight Circle, the happier I'll be.

When a man has lost everything and there is no justice to be found; he finds himself on the road to Elyssian with nothing to lose.

I'm on my way to the exit. Why should I let anyone tell me what to think, say or how to act? Why should I buy into anyone's self-serving voodoo religion? I intend to do no wrong, but right.

I know what went wrong with my life, and I know why. But there's nothing I can do about that now. So I try to stay focused on the future, and my Don Quixote fight for my rights. Everyday reminding myself about what Camus wrote, "There's a chilled wind blowing from my future, leveling out all the ideas that people have tried to foist on me."

In this millennium, I've learned to fight anyone who violates my rights. Whether I win or lose doesn't matter because I'll probably get a second shot at them in hell.

I'm simply trying to be a man.

### Ownership

If I owned a 1957 red and white DeSoto Fireflite Sportsman convertible with push button drive, I wouldn't want some other guy riding around in it picking up chicks. It's my car, and it's valuable to me, because it's hot, and there are so few of them. But there are hundreds of million

of hot girls. Why would a guy want to own anyone of them when he can rent dozens? So ownership and possessiveness of a girl makes no sense.

The entire concept of “ownership” of a girl comes from girls thinking they’re more valuable than they are—the princess syndrome.

### PAP Girls

Post athletic prime.

### PBS

Princess Broadcasting System. Always belittling and blaming men while aggrandizing and excusing mediocre females.

### Peace

“There are other human values besides peace . . . .” Howard Zinn.  
There will never be peace so long as female desires exceed their abilities.

### Police, Lawyers, and Broads

Police, lawyers, and broads are constitutionally unable to tell the truth.  
Most lawyers don’t advise what’s best for their clients, but what’s easiest for the lawyers.

*You’re a lawyer?*

I like to think of myself as the exception that proves the rule.

### Political Correctness or Political Correctionalism

Political Correctness is the new McCarthyism or neo-Bolshevism—they both use the same tactics. At their root is the belief that human nature can be altered through coercive power of the state. Try wearing a Yamaka in 1930s Germany or a Make America Great Again hat in Stalin’s Soviet Union or New York City today.

The essence of the crime charged by PCers is belief.

I use the term “political correctionalism” to remind me that the “politically correct” and female libbers want to imprison my thoughts, speech, and actions that do not conform to their dogma.

PC-Feminism is the ideology of genocide against men.

The term “politically correct” is as ludicrous as “religiously correct.” Don’t forget all the lives destroyed by those who thought their religion was the one and only true religion—the correct religion.

If the politically correct had lived in Russia in the early 20<sup>th</sup> Century, they would have been the kind of apparatchiks that had no qualms about killing a few million kulaks for the good of the peasantry.

Sometimes I make mistakes, but usually the words I use are intentional and based on a reason rooted in facts and logic rather than self-serving delusions.

“These people don’t think in military ways, so there’s this illusion out there that people are basically nice, people are basically kind, if we’re just nice and benevolent to everyone they’ll be nice too. They literally don’t have any sense of evil or criminality.” Camille Paglia.

## Politics

November 9, 2016, Trump wins the presidency—the tide has turned, maybe. Perhaps Liberty will walk free for a while. I did volunteer work for Trump’s campaign because I hate PC-Feminism more than I hate America. If I had hated America more, I would have worked for Hillary’s campaign.

The personal is not political—it is private, but attacking the personal often gets results.

“Madam you may vote but at a price, you lose the right to retreat behind a powder-puff or a petticoat [or tears].” Inherit the Wind, Act II, Henry Drummond.

There are 7 million more female voters in America than male, and as we all know, politicians are not exactly profiles in courage. So they pander to the majority.

The pusillanimous politicians have accepted the lie of the evil male and the supposed necessity for massive government action against him. In this country the rights of men are disregarded by wicked, cruel, and unjust enactments.

Most politicians are fiends in human shape who pass abominably wicked and unjust laws doing what is in their power to destroy confidence in the legislative bodies and to bring magistrates, justices, and other officers of the law into disrespect.

We are plagued by immoral laws, spineless politicians and timid compromisers.

I listened to the 2012 Republican and Democratic convention speeches about truth, honesty, fairness, fidelity, compassion, helpful neighbors, religious principles, good upbringing and wondered what dimension were these people from. America is all about lying, cheating, stealing and violating someone’s rights—just look at Wall Street and Baseball.

Various Feminist organizations such as the National Organization of Witches (they don’t need costumes on Halloween) and the Feminist Majority run get out the vote campaigns, endorse candidates, and their political action committees funnel money to politicians that support their agenda of preferential treatment for females.

After watching the 2008 Democratic Convention, I now know what to expect for the second coming.

When a guy tells’ me he voted for a female, I ask him, “How can you vote for someone who doesn’t care what happens to you and most likely would dance on your grave?”

America is a country of ignorance with not a few of its inhabitants driven by irrational beliefs exploited by tearful female politicians.

“There is only the vaguest connection between the issues debated in an election campaign and those ultimately decided by the government.” Howard Zinn

If a female does not have to register for the draft, then she shouldn’t be the Commander-in-Chief.

Think of all the syndromes that have come up in recent years that allow females to get away with murdering their husbands, boyfriends, children, and new born. If you put a female into the Presidency, how do you know the next syndrome wouldn’t be: “They offended me, so I nuked them!”



## Power

Guys have to fight and struggle for power, but girls are born with it.

As toddlers, then continuing as adolescents, and even adults, girls perfect the art of manipulating their fathers with tears, whining, foot-stomping, and screaming tantrums. The savvy post-pubescent girl uses these tactics and sex to manipulate the other males in her life. She gets free meals, cars, tuition, vacations, homes, and jewelry, which she views as entitlements, by raising her hemline, lowering her neckline, shrinking her waistline, and leveling her spine.

It is females who have colonized men. Men work to provide females with the implements that persecute men. Men pay most of the taxes, and that money is used to support a government and Feminist organizations that violate the rights of men.

If girls can argue that various syndromes excuse them of murder and other reprehensible deeds, then guys can argue the same syndromes excuse females from holding positions of power where they are capable of doing even more harm.

Most girls are physically afraid of guys, and most guys are emotionally afraid of girls.

Girls fight using defamation, smears, *ad hominem*s, and sexual lies. A girl's tongue is her gun

Men's power has been overt, and has lain primarily in the physical, economic, and political realms, while feminine power—fully the equal of men's, has been covert and has operated in the realms of fraud, emotion, and sex. Most, if not all, females intentionally cultivate their sexual power to tantalize and influence men. Pick up a copy of *Cosmopolitan*, a how-to manual for worldly females who know what they want, and know how to get it.

Never satisfied with what they have, today females, through the Feminist belief system, are amassing to themselves the traditional realms of male power: politics, business, media, and academia.

American females comprise 54% of the electorate and graduate college 33% more frequently than men.

## Predator

A predator is an animal that destroys another animal. So who is doing more of the destroying—Feminazis or men?

Females have been destroying men for thousands of years, only today it's organized under the banner of Feminism.

Make no doubt about it. Girls feel great when they ruin a guy's life and happiest when a guy kills himself because of her. It makes them feel powerful. So, if you're going to check out, do what's logical.

## Princess Syndrome

American females believe now, more than ever, that they are princesses. They think: "I move for nobody, I say excuse me to no one, get out of my way, do what I say, and make it quick!"

All girls today think they're princesses. The problem is that they've convinced the government to use force to convince guys when guys know girls are really hos.

During the middle ages, a guy wouldn't dare mock or insult or raise his voice to a princess, and that's what the Feminazis Princesses want today—a return to yester-century.

Look at all those fat, faded, greedy females who think that because of their sex they deserve to be treated like princesses.

W.A.W. does not mean “women are wonderful” but that “women are wrong.”

There is nothing special about girls that deserves enthronement on a pedestal, unless they're young, good looking, and removing their clothes.

Girls simply believe that because they were born females, they are excused from civilized conduct. The only way to deal with their uncivilized behavior is to not yield them the right of way or the wrong of way.

Today, enforced by the delusions of Feminism, girls believe they are pedestal princesses. For example, I played an old boys rugby game. I like to call it an alumni rugby game, since it feeds my delusion of youthfulness. Anyway, I injured my knee, no big deal, just had to hobble around with a cane for a while. On my way home from my day job—that's the one that pays, during rush-hour, I was hustling to keep up with the crowd. A subway train pulls in and everyone is piling into the car except this prima donna in front of me. You know the kind, a young female who thinks she was born a princess, won't move for anybody, walking slow, thinking she's doing everyone a favor by giving them time to look at her. Okay, if she's going to be inconsiderate, I assumed her foot in a flimsy pump was part of the platform and planted my cane on her toes as I moved around her.

### Princess Syndrome Multiple Choice Test

All the following are multiple-choice answers, (a) for male, (b) for female:

- You're sitting in a subway car, and there's about a foot of space between you and the person next to you. Someone with a two-foot wide rear-end shoehorns that rear-end into the one foot space. Is that person (a) male or (b) female?
- A person is walking fast in your direction, swinging their arms, you move halfway to make some room, but the other person who sees you doesn't move at all. Is that person (a) male or (b) female?
- The subway stairs are crowded and people are moving very slowly because someone has stopped in the middle of the stairs to talk on a cell phone or text a message. Is that person (a) male or (b) female?
- You're in a rush and trying to pass a person on the left; the person's peripheral vision sees you but refuses to give you any room to get by. Is that person (a) male or (b) female?
- Someone cuts in line at the deli-counter, and when you tell that person that there is a line, the person gets snotty and belligerent. Is that person (a) male or (b) female?
- Someone asks you for assistance connected with your occupation; you give it, and the person never says “thank-you” or repays the favor. Is that person (a) male or (b) female?
- On a crowded stairway, someone is holding the hand of a small child as the child slowly tries to climb the stairs. The person is capable of carrying the child but refuses. Is that person (a) male or (b) female?
- It's rush hour, a lot of commuters just exited a train and are heading for a stairwell to transfer to another train. A person is standing inside of the entrance to the stairwell not

doing anything other than making it difficult for the crowd to enter. The person does not move and is oblivious to the crowd trying to enter the stairwell. Is that person (a) male or (b) female?

- Rush hour and people are moving in one direction; suddenly, someone stops and turns to go in the other direction. Is that person (a) male or (b) female?
- Rush hour again and at the top of the stairs of an entrance to the subway an overweight person, taking up nearly half the width of the stairs, just stands there shuffling through the songs carried on an iPod. Is that person (a) male or (b) female?
- You're walking along and someone steps on your heel causing you to lose your shoe and that person fails to say "excuse me." Is that person (a) male or (b) female?
- Two people are conversing on the stairs that exit from the subway. They are oblivious to the crowd trying to get by. Are they (a) male or (b) female?
- An old guy hobbles on to a bus using a cane. There are no seats because many of the seats are occupied by young people. No one gets up to give the guy a seat. Are they (a) male or (b) female?
- You're sitting in the law library working on the computer with your papers right next to you on your section of a long desk that is shared with another computer. Someone goes to use the other computer and plops down right on your papers a Gucci bag. Is that person (a) male or (b) female?
- You're sitting in a bus in a seat facing the middle aisle. A person gets on the bus carrying a bag. The bus is not crowded. The person walks by you hitting your knee with the bag and doesn't stop to apologize. Is that person (a) male or (b) female?
- A person is sitting in a crowded subway with their legs crossed so that one of their filthy feet is protruding into the center aisle where people are standing or moving toward a space to stand and trying to avoid the filthy feet from rubbing against their clothes. Is that person (a) male or (b) female?
- Rush hour and there's a long line getting on the bus. One person stops at the toll machine to look for a metro card—holding up the entire line. Is that person (a) male or (b) female?
- Rush hour and there's a long line getting on the bus. One person steps out of line to let others go ahead while that person looks for a metro card. Is that person (a) male or (b) female?

### Problem

Let's face it. The PC-Feminists are making life a hell on earth for most members of both sexes.

The problem is immoral laws enacted by spineless politicians thanks to the female hatred of men and their sycophantic beaus..

Manhood is in serious jeopardy in America. Our society is moving toward two societies, one male, one female—separate and unequal.

It's a modern-day witch-hunt. Only today the witches are doing the hunting.

Girls get guys to do something stupid, then other guys end up fighting the guys who did something stupid when they should fight the girls. The girls sit on the side lines laughing, just as when some high school tart intentionally causes a fight between two suitors.

A tyranny has spread across this land that violates the rights of men with impunity and exalts feminine evil as the social good.

Self-righteous, greedy, PC-Feminist zealots, intent on advancing a worldview antithetical to the one on which this nation was founded, have succeeded in fomenting a revolution. And that revolution amounts to a campaign against masculinity, maleness, boys, and men.

### Promiscuity

Guys cheat because girls do.

The Kennedys did it, why can't I?

Only the genes of the promiscuous survive.

Researchers no longer believe that females were historically deterred from cheating because they had more to lose than a male if caught. Such only inspired females to perfect the art of secrecy and deception as they persistently snuck off in search of stronger genes, better feeding grounds, fall back providers, and protectors.

In 1999, a questionnaire in Britain found that most females tended to be unfaithful to their long-term partners around the time of the month that they were most fertile. Statistics showing that a significant percentage of children were not fathered by a girl's long-term partner exposes the myth of female monogamy and destroys the assumption that women are biologically driven to single-mate bliss.

Researchers at St. Andrew's University in Scotland concluded that females seem to desire different types of men at different times of the month. When they are most likely to conceive, they are attracted to men who have very masculine features, those who are intelligent, athletic, and rational, while preferring more feminine men when they are not ovulating. The researchers suggested that females may subconsciously feel that athletic, smart he-men make a better biological contribution to a baby, but softer features may signal a better father and someone more likely to accede to their wishes.

When humans lived in tribes, protein from meat was crucial for survival. Men provided the protein from hunting and females the other nutrients from gathering. Hunting was a high risk occupation, so a smart girl would hedge her bets by becoming a "special friend" or "good friend" with other guys in case her main beau did not survive. Now guys may not be too bright when it comes to pretty young things, but they always know when a girl is cheating. So they cheat too. It is more likely that the genes of cheating girls and guys will pass down to future generations than the genes of humans who are faithful. So today, we are all the descendants of tarts and playboys, and carry the same proclivity for promiscuity.

### Prostitution

Despite the Feminazis' efforts to make prostitution respectable by replacing the terms ho, whore, hooker, and slut with "sex worker" or "businesswoman," prostitutes still spread diseases, which increases the premiums for health insurance for everyone; engage in economic frauds against businesses that recoup their losses by raising prices to all consumers; and on finding a rich guy, turn into self-righteous puritans annoying everyone with their new found morality.

The Feminazis also argue that prostitutes are forced into selling sex because they need the money. Baloney, they just want easy money. Those hos should try hard work for a change.

Romance as depicted in all those moon, June, swoon, love tunes, sonatas, books, and Hollywood movies are about nothing more than prostitution—girls trading sexual favors for material value.

### Publicity

*Didn't you bring the anti-Feminist cases just to get 15 minutes of fame?*

15 minutes! I thought it was only 15 seconds. If I had known that, I would've brought the lawsuits years ago.

*You just want attention?*

Right, I thoroughly enjoy being pilloried by public opinion.

Actually, I'm loving it: Moochie versus City Hall. The only problem is making enough money to finish my Jihada—that's Jihad with an "a".

RDH.com is an exercise in vanity. [If female interviewer] You know about that don't you?

[Colbert Report] If you're unable to laugh at yourself, then you're no longer human. If a man can't laugh at himself, then he's turned into a girl.

Besides, it's important to be the one that laughs last.

*Are you a celebrity?*

Just a fool with a loud mouth.

Just a juvenile delinquent who never grew up and for some reason the media let me rant over the airwaves for a few years.

I have a little bit of notoriety, but not enough to attract the groupies while too much for the good girls—if there are any of them left.

### Rape

It's not a rape-culture but a hook-up culture. Girls, however, often have second thoughts when they wake up in the morning, so to justify their stupidity, they call it rape.

Rape is not only foisting one's sexual desires on another without that person's consent but also pillaging and plundering—the specialty of many females. *American Heritage Dictionary*.

*Girls raping guys.*

Girls pillage and plunder a guy in two ways: (1) maternity frauds where they lie about being on a contraceptive or unable to conceive, or (2) paternity fraud where they lie about who is the biological father, of course, sometimes they are such tramps that they don't know who is the real father. In the U.S., 30% of the non-custodial fathers are paying for children who are not theirs. *WorldNetDaily*, February 18, 2006.

Feminine Reproduction Fraud (“FRF”) is an extremely serious and harmful crime. When a female forces her reproductive capacity on a guy by fraud, it is rape, just as when a male physically forces his reproductive capacity on a female. But Feminazis try to lessen the offense by girls simply because the perpetrator happens to be a female. The only difference between the two is the means that a particular sex uses to get what they want. It does not matter whether the means is by fraud or physical force because the act egregiously harms another human being. Both have their associational, privacy, and economic rights violated. But men no longer have rights in America, so they are actually forced by government to pay their own rapists for the acts the rapists committed.

The magazine *That’s Life!* polled 5,000 females and asked them if they would lie to get pregnant. 42% of the females said yes. Imagine how many really would.

The vast majority of illegitimacy is actually predatory reproduction by females for income or to control a man.

Duped dads deserve legal redress to protect themselves against maternity and paternity fraud. If a female lies to a man about her reproductive capacity to become pregnant, then takes his money or extorts him into marrying her; or if she tricks a guy into raising a baby not his own, sacrificing years of his life into an endeavor based on a falsehood, she should go to prison for decades or life.

Michael Gilding, sociology professor at Swinburne University in Australia, reviewed studies from around the world, and concluded that 1-3% of children were fathered by someone other than the man who believes he’s the daddy. Four million children are born in the United States each year, so using the mid-range 2% figure, that means 80,000 men become victims of paternity fraud every year. That’s 80,000 rapes a year just for paternity fraud compared to 95,000 rapes of females. Factoring in maternity fraud, girls rape more guys than *vice versa*.

The American Association of Blood Banks reports that 30 per cent of men who suspect they are not biological fathers are right. In the United Kingdom, one in six men who took a DNA test to challenge claims by females that they were the fathers of their children were not.

Even when the husband finds out the child is not his own and divorces his whoring wife, the courts in over 30 states still require him to support the child that’s not his. Those states rely on a 500-year-old English common law doctrine, which holds that a married man is always legally presumed to be the father of a child born during the marriage. Men are routinely forced to pay tens of thousands of dollars in child support, even after DNA tests prove they are not the biological fathers.

*Guys allegedly raping girls.*

The problem with the laws that protect females from rape and sexual harassment is that they rest on a false assumption that females who claim to be victims are almost always telling the truth.

A longitudinal study conducted by Professor Eugene Kanin concluded that over a period of nine years, 41% of rape allegations studied were fraudulent, concocted by the alleged victim to either create an alibi, seek attention and sympathy, or to seek revenge.

There is also the McDowell Study cited by Warren Farrell in *The Myth of Male Power*, which concluded that of 1,218 reported rapes on Air Force Bases around the world, 45% were discovered to be fraudulent.

According to a nine-year study conducted by former Purdue sociologist Eugene J. Kanin, in over 40 percent of the rape cases against men that were reviewed, the girls eventually admitted that no rape had occurred. *Archives of Sexual Behavior*, Vol. 23, No. 1, 1994. Kanin also studied rape allegations in two large Midwestern universities and found that 50 percent of the allegations were recanted by the accuser. He also found that most of the false accusers were motivated by a need to compensate for feelings of guilt or shame or a desire for revenge; that is, the tart had second thoughts when she woke up from her drunk the night before, or the guy didn't call her back. It is true, of course, that not every accuser who recants had accused falsely. But it is also true that some who do not recant were not telling the truth.

80% of rape allegations in the United Kingdom are false, but the government still bases the number of rapes on just allegations that are then multiplied by a factor of 10 based on an unsubstantiated belief that only 1 in 10 alleged rapes are reported. So if there are two rapes, there will be allegations of 10 rapes and the U.K. government will report that there were 100 rapes—must be female math.

A *Washington Post* investigation of rape reports in seven Virginia and Maryland counties in 1990 and 1991 found that nearly one in four were unfounded.

According to a 1996 Department of Justice Report, of the roughly 10,000 sexual assault cases analyzed with DNA evidence over the previous seven years, 2,000 excluded the primary suspect, and another 2,000 were inconclusive.

Linda Fairstein, the author of *Sexual Violence: Our War Against Rape*, says, “there are about 4,000 reports of rape each year in Manhattan. Of these, about half simply did not happen.”

A Denver sex-assault unit commander estimates that nearly half of all reported rape claims are false.

Three quarters of female college students who were classified by the White House as victims of sexual assault by incapacitation did not believe they had been raped. Cathy Young, *The Whose House Overreaches on Campus Rape*.

Three peer-reviewed studies have found the rate of false accusations of campus rape to range from 41% to 60%. Suzanne Vanker, *An Open Letter to Joe Biden*.

Of course female and male rapists could be viewed as ardent propagators of the species.

### *Slut Shield Laws*

State and federal laws consider all females angels by forbidding the introduction of evidence in rape trials that the girl engaged in past conduct that infers she was not raped. For example, a girl who engages in nymphomania, prostitution, or repeatedly makes false accusations of rape creates the inference that a sexual encounter was the result of her behavior pattern or that no encounter occurred.

The Arkansas Supreme Court denied an appeal by a man serving a 13-year sentence for rape. The court held that evidence of the victim's alleged prior false allegations of rape was inadmissible because it was considered sexual conduct within the meaning of the state's rape shield statute.

A young Wisconsin man was sentenced to eight years in prison for allegedly raping an older female. He was prohibited from revealing that she was currently facing criminal charges of having sex with minors, which meant she had a motivation to lie that the sex she had with him, a

minor, was rape. The evidence was deemed related to the female's sexual history and inadmissible.

In 1997, sportscaster Marv Albert was accused of assault and battery during a sexual encounter with a female with whom he had a 10-year sexual relationship. Albert sought to introduce evidence that his accuser, who had been in a mental hospital six weeks before the alleged assault, had previously made false accusations against men who had left her, as Albert, who was engaged to be married, was planning to do. Albert's offer of proof was denied, compromising his ability to defend himself. Facing a possible life sentence, he chose to plead guilty to misdemeanor assault.

The rape and sexual assault numbers of females throughout history are nothing compared with the murder of over 40 million incipient human beings by females in the U.S. since 1973. Why should the one group of humans who cause the most death be held unaccountable for their prior acts when trying to destroy the life of another human with the charge of rape?

### Religion

"Girls think if [a guy] gives in on that score [religion], he can be brought round to yield on everything." Mephistopheles, Goethe's *Faust*.

Religion is always used by those in power to manipulate those who aren't.

*What's your religion?*

If I have any religion, it is science. But I've been wrong before, so I keep a Bible opened in my bedroom to ward off my ex-wife's curses. I'm also trying to get myself in shape for Dante's Eighth Circle.

*How are you getting in shape?*

Fighting the Feminazis and PCers, taking martial arts, and doing a little hip hop to impress the many girls down there.

*But science makes mistakes?*

True, but given a choice between somebody today making a mistake and someone 2000 years ago who thought the world was flat, walked around in robes, talked to burning bushes or lights in caves—I'll chose the contemporary error.

Of course, I'm not so arrogant as to think my philosophies cover everything out there or are always accurate. So, I've accounted for the possibility of heaven and hell. The management structure of hell most likely has the worst near the top with the chain of command descending through those lesser evil doers down to those who arguably shouldn't be there at all. Unlike Dante's Inferno, such a structure makes sense with the more adept at evil lording over the less adept. For example, a person who committed adultery three times would have as a direct report to her a person who did it only twice. The torment visited on that underling by her direct boss would be mild compared to those who really engaged in evil. Those persons would end up with Hitler, Stalin, or similar likes as their direct bosses, which would bode troubling times for



eternity. My task, is to insert myself in the management structure at the point where I'll have authority over those whom I want to torment for eternity—the Feminists among others.

### Reporters

The best of which there are few always get both sides to a story, and keep their personal philosophies out, unless they notify their audience that they are editorializing as Walter Cronkite did about Vietnam.

### Responsibility

It's time females start taking responsibility for their own actions, instead of passing the buck to guys. Perhaps that's not a good analogy; once a girl gets her hands on a dollar, it's unlikely she'll let it go, unless it's spent on her vanity.

Whenever a female causes a man harm, any type of harm, other girls dismiss the damage done as insignificant or claim she had no choice or the guy was really responsible.

Assume you're walking down the street late at night in a dangerous part of town and someone jumps out of the shadows, shoots you dead, and takes your wallet. You're partly at fault, but your stupidity does not excuse the evil done to you.

If the shooter was female and the dead person a man, most females would say the killer was justified because she needed the money. But when a man raises his voice to a nagging girl, females think he should go to prison for decades. Not exactly logical, but what do you expect from girls.

Mother's murder their children, their husbands, and boyfriends, which the Feminazis automatically excuse by blaming men through voodooing up a syndrome or attributing such harm to the delusion that society is a "patriarchy." In reality, society is more like a malicious matriarchy.

For example, Gilberta Estrada hung her four small daughters, three of whom died, but it was still her ex-boyfriend's fault for alleged domestic violence that was never proven.

### Revolution

When a man loses everything, and there's no justice to be found; he finds himself on the road to Elysian with nothing to lose.

Now is no time for timid compromisers. Between right and wrong there can be no compromise.

"Extremism in the defense of liberty is no vice! And ... moderation in the pursuit of justice is no virtue." Barry Goldwater.

"The right to revolt has sources deep in our history." Justice William O. Douglas.

Rebellion and violence are necessary in the name of a principle. It does not matter whether a majority, no matter how large, opposes a principle. Often times the largest majority was nothing more than a mob.

Violence is admirable if waged in the name of democratic revolution.

Vigilante justice is necessary when the law itself becomes a mockery.

The best government is where everyman is armed for instant justice to be administered to each offense. (Paraphrase of Emerson).

Feminists have a right to speak stupidity. But when their speech turns to actions that cause irreparable harm, then guys have a right and a duty to oppose those harmful acts, with violence if necessary.

I'm not a terrorist, not yet. But if the courts keep violating my rights, I'm going to start attending that Madras school in Brooklyn.

As I learned in my anti-war days, you can't use establishment institutions to stop establishment wrongs, but you can use them to heighten the contradictions that may lead to revolution.

When a government puts forth its strength on the side of injustice—what a demonical force it is seen to be.

A minority based on principles will sooner or later in a republican government become the majority. A principled few can defeat an unprincipled horde.

“Individuals must never acknowledge laws and institutions to exist as of right if their conscience and reason condemn them.” John Brown.

“Rights cannot be restored except by force,” the Islamic State in Iraq and Syria.

Most Americans have a deep-seated faith in justice and the rule of law as protectors for the liberties they believe they enjoy. There is no greater shock than to find that, even with both law and facts in your favor, your constitutional rights are worthless because you can't get the courts or government to enforce them.

Throughout history the failure of governments to uphold individual rights have caused violence—not prevented it. Whether faced with the lack of due process or absence of equal protection in domestic violence, sexual abuse, or other proceedings, a man before today's courts and government agencies will find virtually no regard for his rights when up against Feminist beliefs. Emotions, feelings, and bias against men will take precedence over statutes, facts, and reason. Perjury by females and subornation of perjury by their lawyers will dominate the proceedings while the judges will hold themselves above the law, and will frequently invent it.

When the preferential treatment of girls violates the rights of guys, there's no justice within the system because the Feminist Establishment prevents the institutions in this country from upholding the Constitution as it applies to men seeking equal treatment.

Today there is little to no liberty left men because females and their androgyny male allies have gone too far. They've put guys in a corner, figuring they will submit, and many have. But they don't realize the underlying, boiling hatred that most men have for Feminism and its allies. Guys keep quiet around girls, but men are incensed over the federal, state, and local governments using them as pawns to give females preferential treatment as demanded by the Feminists. These are grudges that wouldn't go away.

Male androgynies in positions of authority are so afraid of losing their positions that they are even more zealous in enforcing Feminists tenets than females.

Feminism has created a *de facto* tyranny over men by government. As James Madison said, a tyranny exists when one group controls the executive, legislative, and judicial branches. The belief system of Feminism now has an overriding influence in all three. America is now a Feminarchy that tramples the rights of men.

Men are in a state of war waged on them by the Feminazis wanting to utterly enslave freemen to irrational female whims and fears.

Abraham Lincoln and Robert Kennedy said that “among freemen there can be no successful appeal from the ballot to the bullet.” The operative word is “freemen,” and without liberty, men are not free.

At some point enough guys will re-read the Declaration of Independence and follow its advice on replacing the present federal government that operates under Feminist tenets:

“When a long train of abuses and usurpations, pursuing invariably the same objective evinces a design to reduce them under absolute despotism, it is their right, it is their duty, to throw off such Government, and to provide new guards for their future security and well being.”

Or, “if there is something wrong, those who have the ability to take action have the responsibility to take action. To do what’s considered wrong in order to do what’s right.”  
*National Treasure.*

“When unjust decisions become the rule, then the government and its officials should be toppled.” Howard Zinn.

“The people of the United States are the rightful masters of both Congress and the Courts, not to overthrow the Constitution, but to overthrow the men [and females] who pervert the Constitution.” Abraham Lincoln.

“Often the most violent of actions may not be the act of someone trying to control another, but the act of a person who gave up on finding justice within a society’s institutions.”  
John Brown.

A man has a perfect right to kill those who would destroy him.

“Do not delay one moment after you are ready; you will lose all your resolution if you do. Do not do your work by halves, but make clean work with your enemies—and be sure you meddle not with any others. Kill who pose a threat and then retreat.” John Brown.

*Are you advocating revolution?*

I’ve been advocating that in one form or another since I was a member of SDS—Students for a Democratic Society. I almost joined the Weathermen, but couldn’t see the relevance in blowing up bathrooms.

Today’s institutions are secondary to the higher law of justice.

The time is here for men to take to the streets to win justice. A man must fight for a worthy cause, and that cause is Liberty.

*Isn’t that treason?*

In a time of immoral laws; it’s patriotism that looks like treason. In a society with an ideologically corrupt government—it is the patriot who is the traitor.

“The devil nestles comfortably into the laws of this country. The government itself is treason. When the public fails in its duty, private men must take its place.” Ralph Waldo Emerson.

My allegiance is to the Constitution and Declaration of Independence—not to a government that’s been corrupted by ideological Feminists, nor a government that sacrifices men’s rights to give girls preferential treatment.

Besides, what are they going to do—lock me up in Guantanamo? I've always liked warm climates, and if I escape, I get to ride around in 56 Chevys with hot Latinas and smoke Cuban cigars. Not a bad way to live out the remainder of one's life.

Or, they take away my license to practice law. So what. The only reason I got it was to defend my rights, but that's impossible in a judicial system prejudiced against men. So my law license is pretty much as useless as basing arguments on the Torah in a court of the Third Reich.

*Are you advocating armed revolution?*

“The only way to stop the discrimination against men is for 100,000 armed guys to show up in Washington, D.C. demanding their rights.” *Columbia Spectator* quoting Roy Den Hollander.

Now, I'm not about to show up in Washington, D.C. by myself and demand the U.S. Government surrender. But, if enough guys out there are willing to join me—let's go.

There is likely only one solution to the present destructive ends of this federal government, to any tyranny—revolution.

“Men have always been compelled to hew their way to freedom.” Thomas Carlyle.

Sometimes a social evil is so egregious, so entrenched, that violence is the only answer. Violence is often necessary in the name of a principle, and is admirable when waged in the name of democratic principles.

The only avenue to liberty leads through a sea of blood.

It is better that a whole generation of Feminist pass off the fact of the earth than that the Declaration of Independence should fail in this country. (Paraphrase of John Brown).

Don't underestimate the persuasiveness of violence. “[W]here there is only a choice between cowardice and violence, I would advise violence.” Gandhi.

Remember, men still have a monopoly on firearms in this society, despite the Feminist efforts to ban guns, which will continue until they are successful because that is their one remaining fear and weakness. It makes no sense for men to disarm in the face of an evil that wants to exercise totalitarian power over them. They have a right to revolt against that tyranny, to take it down. It doesn't matter whether it's the tyranny of George III or the Feminists.

We've already lost our liberties under the Constitution, and as Clarence Darrow said, “Individual liberty is the first concern of every man for without it, life is not worth living.”

Insurrection seems better than living as slaves to the Feminists and a government that enforces their male-hating policies. If we fail, we'll be gone, and then the ladies can fight among themselves and with the androgynies who are left.

Violence is coming, and not the feminine softened type of violence defined in current domestic violence laws.

## Rights

When someone violates your rights, they do so to gain something they don't deserve; otherwise, they wouldn't violate your rights.

There's no such thing as over-sensitivity to the violation of one's rights.

A person denied his rights has the natural right to fight with any means against those who seek to prevent his enjoyment of liberty.

For the past 40 years, the Feminazis have successfully used duress to push the government, academia, private industry, and the media into violating or ignoring the rights of guys.

The Feminazis menace freedom of speech, freedom of the press, equal protection under the law, due process, and other rights retained by the people in the Ninth Amendment.

The Ninth Amendment to the US Constitution states: “The enumeration in the Constitution, of certain rights, shall not be construed to deny or disparage others retained by the people.”

The exercise of a right requires no justification—no explanation. To demand such is a violation of that right because it’s an effort to prevent the exercise of it in the future.

The Declaration of Independence talks about men—not females. So literally and explicitly, according to that document, I have rights. Just because I don’t believe what the Feminazis believe, or do what they want, doesn’t mean I lose those rights.

Next time some Feminist tried to tell you what to say or do, sing her the refrain, “You don’t own me. Don’t tell me what to do. Don’t tell me what to say. I’m free and I love to be free. To live my life the way I want. To say and do whatever I please.”

## Rulers

Feminists push the delusion that female rulers will make the world a safer, more peaceful, and compassionate place. History disagrees.

Princess Olga, the first female ruler of Russia, burned down an entire city after promising them peace. She also held a peace conference where she had her enemies who attended thrown into a pit and massacred.

Mary, Queen of England, led persecutions of Protestants in her country and waged war on France until her death enthroned her sister Elizabeth, who redirected the persecutions against Catholics. This resulted in a war with Scotland and with Spain.

Isabella of Castile invaded Grenada, signed the Alhambra decree banishing Jews from Spain and eventually expanded that policy to Spanish Muslims. She presided over portions of the Inquisition and a treaty dividing the world with Portugal. I’m surprised she let Portugal have half.

Elizabeth Bathory, countess of Transylvania, murdered and bathed in the blood of hundreds of peasant girls. She was eventually arrested and tried by Emperor Matthias II of Austria.

Russia’s Catherine the Great began her reign with the overthrow and murder of her husband Peter III. With Prussia and Austria, she annexed Poland, effectively destroying that nation for more than 200 years. She fought two wars against Turkey and another against Sweden. When she died, Russia was bankrupt.

Isabella II of Spain kept her power through support of the army and started two wars during her reign: one against Morocco, and one against Chile and Peru.

Cixi, dowager empress of China, instigated the xenophobic Boxer Rebellion in 1899, leading to thousands of deaths.

Under Queen Victoria, concentration camps were perfected during the Boar War.

Golda Meir started the 1967 War.

Indira Gandhi waged war on a group of Indian citizens—the Sikhs.

Margaret Thatcher started the Falklands War.

## Self Defense

*Ever hit a girl?*

Spanked a few, oh you mean in anger, no, but I should have.

Actually that's not exactly right. When my ex-wife came at me with a knife, I used a karate strike to make her drop it. When she got a temporary restraining order against me, she claimed, among other things, that I bruised her arm with the karate strike, which was correct, but she left out that she was wheedling a knife at the time.

In America today, when a guy defends himself against imminent physical injury or merely argues back with his girlfriend, he'll be blamed for "domestic violence." Therefore, he might as well slap her upside the head because he'll end up in the same position if he doesn't. As a kid, I learned if you are going to be blamed for something, you might as well go ahead and do it.

Besides, if a girl can use with impunity the power Mother Nature and society gave her to verbally batter a man with vituperative rants, vindictive railings, perjury, and threats of governmental violence; or to intentionally inflict emotional distress and psychological injury, then a man has the right to defend himself or kick the slut out of his life.

A girl uses her tongue as a gun and her body as a weapon, so I use martial arts to defend myself—what's wrong with that?

## Sex

Girl is a four letter word.

Girls are always using their sex to extort a guy into doing something they want. It's called nookie coercion.

There are 3.5 billion girls in the world. Assume you are attracted to 5% of them, calculate in an average sexual life of 60 years, and you have over 7,000 babes a night! Like most guys, I'm still working on my first night.

For millions of years, hominid females have been attracted to one type of hominid male—guys who can sexually satisfy and protect them. Do you really think the past 40 years of Feminazism has changed that?

The last girl you want to date is one who studies Feminazism. And, if the girl student of Feminazism is the last girl on earth, you'd be better off with the Playboy archives.

I don't keep a batting average. I can do without any additional depression. I just keep trying. I only pursue pretty young things; why hunt a rattlesnake if you're not going to eat it.

Men hunt females while females lay traps for men. It's not the look of hot young babes that is dangerous but the touch of their bodies.

Females use sex to get what they want. Whether tarts or Feminazis, it's always about sex—sex to attract, sex to attack. Girls aren't rated double X for nothing.

We're all promiscuous but only girls are hos. Girls use sex and its accoutrements to get something of value: material, status, or an undeserved advantage. For girls, sex is a means to an end; for guys it's an end, although a repeated end.

For girls, sex is a weapon, for guys it's fun.

Girls spend a lot of time, energy, and some guy's money trying to look sexy. I'm not about to disappoint them by considering them genderey.

“If it weren’t for her body, she’d need a brain.”

I like music, I like dancing, I like drinking, and I like pretty young ladies. But as with drinking, you’ve got to be careful with the young ladies.

The reason Feminazis use the term gender instead of sex is that they don’t want to be reminded of what they haven’t had for years.

The only thing a guy needs a girl for is sex. Girls, however, need a guy not just for sex but to solve their problems, for security, and for someone to boss around.

*Do you have a girl friend?*

You mean am I in a relationship? No, I’ve learned my lesson. Just flings for me. All I’m interested in are transient, superficial, affairs with pretty young ladies—brain or no brain.

The reason is that I have no desire to unite with the Universe. When a guy and a girl are attracted to each other, have an ongoing relationship, and both know how to engender multiple orgasms in the other, that physical act transforms into a metaphysical experience where the apparent inner beings of both are commingled. They end up occupying the same quantum space and time, which is a unity with the underpinnings of the Universe. But when you’re one with the Universe, you’re no longer one with yourself, and it becomes difficult to fight the Universe. In particular, to fight that most virulent part of it called Feminazism.

*When was the last time you were on a date? (If asked by girl reporter)*

I’m a male, you’re a female. Do you find me attractive?

*Answer the question.*

I’m answering the unspoken premise of your question. So am I attractive to you?

*No*

(Look at camera). So ladies is she telling the truth—you decide.

*Why do you only chase young girls?*

Nobody wants a flabby over-the-hill female who has spent her adult life demonizing, demeaning, denigrating, and dissing men and will continue to do the same to any man dumb enough to date her.

Whenever I see a mother and her teenage daughter—I’m not looking at the mother.

There’s no crime in pursuing pretty young ladies, although it’s dangerous because they are at the height of their power over men.

They’re faces look young and innocent, but their bodies tell a different story.

*Are you a pedophile?*

Yes, I love to walk. Oh, you mean little girls, aren’t they missing a couple of strategic attributes?

## Pregnancy

A female's choice includes abstinence, diaphragms, condoms, spermicides, the pill, injections, implants, the "overnight pill", intrauterine device, abortion, adopt-out, return baby to hospital, keep baby, give baby away, sell baby, contract to have baby for someone else, auction baby, name any man she chooses as father, and infanticide. A man's choice includes condoms, invasive surgery, cash, credit, bankruptcy, prison, and suicide.

Since a female can name any man she chooses as the father, in reality then, men have no choice at all, since abstinence and scientific proof does not necessarily prevent judicially forced fatherhood.

## Sex and Money Objects

This isn't quantum mechanics, just look at how a hot 20-year-old girl's body is built. You don't use a car to fly the skies, a plane to sail the seas, or a boat to drive the highways.

Besides, why drive a used car when you can drive a new one? And if you are the car, would you rather be driven by a student driver or one with a license?

Regardless of what girls say, they are primarily attracted to guys for the money guys spend on them, their earnings potential, or their wealth. That's why guys pay for girls.

Regardless of what guys say, they are primarily attracted to girls' bodies. That's why girls risk injury to their feet and ankles walking in high heels, suffer the pain of waxing their legs and private parts, restrict respiration by wearing tight clothes, and use toxic chemicals on their faces and hair.

## Sexist

Let's see, a conformist is one who conforms, so a sexist is one who has sex. Yes, I plead guilty, although not as guilty as I would like.

*Are you a male chauvinist?*

When it comes to logic and reason—yes, but not T and A.

Better to be a sexist than neutered.

Shouldn't the word be "genderist."

I'm just doing what Mother Nature tells me to do. Why should I go against her to satisfy the Feminist special interest group, which only has my harm at heart?

If a girl accuses you of raping her with your eyes, reply (1) don't blame me for your paranoia, (2) if she's a dog, say "Believe me, looking at you was an accident," (3) if she's good looking, say "If you don't want guys staring at you then wear a sack dress, maxie, or burka."

## She-male

Many mothers today, mainly white, follow the Feminist line in raising their children. Their sons, they try to neuter.



Their daughters, they place on a pedestal of superiority to men in strength, courage, independence, and toughness, which, coupled with the self-serving Feminist belief that girls have a universal right to give free rein to their whims and desires, puts daughters in danger of the delusions their mothers created. The danger comes from situations that evolutionary correct girls can handle or would avoid, but Feminist daughters can't or don't because they believe they are superior to men. Basically, a Feminist mother convinces her daughter that she's Supergirl, gives her a cape but when the daughter tries to fly in the real world, it doesn't work.

### Socialism in America

After Trump won in 2016, many Democrats turned to Socialism with the girls embracing Dionysus lunacy. They follow Lenin's teachings to incite contempt and hatred for those with whom they disagree.

Under the Socialists truth, due process and the rights of the accused are all swept aside to serve an ideology. State power is advocated to control all aspects of one's life in accordance with PC dictates.

As Captain Jean-Luc Picard said, "We think we've come so far. Torture of heretics, burning of witches, it's all ancient history. Then—before you can blink an eye—suddenly it threatens to start all over again."

### Solutions

1. Feminism ends when girls are required to register for the draft and America uses the draft to again marshal cannon fodder for the next war, which will happen at some point in time.

2. Everything changes when 100,000 armed men show up in Washington, D.C. demanding their rights, which will result in the government obeying the Constitution, or going down to defeat (given the military's record since World War II against third and fourth rate powers, it's defeat at the hands of armed American men is a real possibility), or turning more totalitarian, which will likely lead to an eventual change in government.

3. Things begin to change when individual men start taking out those specific persons responsible for destroying their lives before committing suicide. When every life destroyed by a lying tongue is repaid with another destroyed by a gun.

"A key part of the remedy is a revalorization of traditional male trades—the ones that allow women's studies professors to drive to work (roads), take the elevator to their office (construction), read in the library (electricity), and go to gender-neutral restrooms (plumbing)." Camille Paglia.

### Sports

Under Title IX, men's participation in sports is now capped at the level of females' interest in sports. The Feminazis, being females, aren't satisfied, so they're trying to eliminate all masculine sports because sports build men—not androgynies. So far they have not been successful, since public demand is for all-male sports, not female contests, unless it's wet T-shirt wrestling.

## Temporary Restraining Orders (“TRO”)

Family court judges issue around two million temporary restraining orders (“TROs”) every year, half are routinely extended, 85 percent are against men, and half do not include any allegation of physical violence but rely on vague complaints of alleged psychological injury made without evidence. A female can simply accuse her husband or boyfriend of sexual or physical abuse or claim she’s afraid or there was a spat and instantly win a TRO.

TROs are issued *ex parte*, which means the husband is not before the judge to refute the allegations against him and only learns about the court order when served with it by the police, which often includes being forcibly evicted from his home and alienated from his kids. One million TROs a year evict a person, usually a man from the home that he paid for.

While hubby is barred from the house, the wife quickly files for a divorce, and requests temporary custody of the kids. The TRO paves the way for a near-automatic award of sole custody once the divorce is finalized, which usually includes child support in an amount that ends up supporting the wife—hidden alimony, or straight forward alimony depending on the state, which is often set at an amount to punish the husband.

TROs allow activist family court judges to criminalize a vast range of otherwise legal behavior, usually a father’s contact with his own children and entry into his own home. These are crimes only for the subject of the order, who can be arrested and jailed without trial for doing what no statute prohibits and what anyone else may lawfully do.

Ordinary citizens are arrested in the middle of the night, thrown in jail on false charges of violating the TRO, never see the inside of their homes again, found guilty in show trials with predetermined outcomes, and forced into treatment for “wrongful thoughts.” These are the types of evils identified with totalitarian governments, such as the Third Reich and Soviet Union. But today, thanks to the Feminists and domestic TROs, they are the staples of American injustice.

“When innocence has only itself to defend it, you will always hear the verdict guilty.”  
Mephistopheles, Goethe’s *Faust*.

“Must men go to prison because they are at odds with the self-appointed [prophetesses].”  
Inherit the Wind, Act II, Henry Drummond.

## Terrorism

Terrorism is violence that avoids combat, is used against the unsuspecting, and is intended to shock and horrify with the aim of bringing about social change.

## Threaten

*Haven’t you threatened females?*

Yes, I’ve threatened some—threatened to take them to court. I should have challenged them to a duel instead.

Actually, you’re confusing “warn” with “threaten.” They were warned to cease violating my rights or I would drag their fat, men hating asses all the way up to the U.S. Supreme Court. No way I would win in the Feminist infested judicial system, but I’d make their lives miserable for a few years and it’ll cost them a ton of money in legal fees.

Besides, when it comes to sluts, I don’t need threats—just money.

## Truth

Truth is not a matter of arithmetic. Just because everyone says you're wrong doesn't mean you are.

“All truth passes through three stages.

First, it is ridiculed.

Second, it is violently opposed.

Third, it is accepted as being self-evident.” Schopenhauer.

“When you have eliminated the impossible, whatever remains, however improbable, must be the truth.” Sir Arthur Conan Doyle's Sherlock Holmes.

“Facts do not cease to exist because they are ignored.” Aldous Huxley.

“You're such a liar. The only way you ever told the truth was by accident.”

Feminists twist the truth out of all sense to fit their selfish purposes.

The truth always seems to hurt the one who speaks it.

“The truth cannot be an insult.” Charlie Chan.

## Violence Against Women Act or Violence in Aid of Witches Act (VAWA), a.k.a. the State Violence Against Men Act

The federal case three other guys and I brought challenged the constitutionality of certain provisions of the Violence Against Women Act, which was written by NOW—the National Organization of Witches, the Feminist Majority, and other man-hating, non-profit corporations that receive partial funding from U.S. taxpayers. The Act was sponsored by then Senator Joe Biden, and signed into law by former President Clinton, or was it Hillary Clinton, in 1994.

More aptly called the “Violence in Aid of Witches Act” (“VAWA”) or “State Violence Against Men Act,” it's a modern-day witch hunt against American men, only today the witches are doing the hunting.

“This law rises not to the level of the head or reason; its natural habitat is in the dirt. It was born and bred, and has its life, only in the dust and mire fit only to be tread upon like a venomous reptile.” Henry David Thoreau.

The Act causes massive federal government intervention into the personal relationships of Americans, whether in marriage or dating.<sup>9</sup>

It's like having Uncle Sam and the Feminists not only in your bedroom, but every room in your house, in your car, and wherever you go with your spouse or girlfriend.

40 years ago, the Feminists warned that the “personal is political.” Most people don't realize that they are making good on that warning, especially through the Violence Against Women Act.

VAWA is about one group trying to rule over another in domestic affairs by using the power of the federal government. The government uses VAWA to reshape social relations by

---

<sup>9</sup> VAWA also hands out T Visas for alleged alien victims of commercial sex trafficking and U Visas for alleged alien victims of rape, torture, trafficking, incest, domestic violence, sexual assault, abusive sexual conduct, prostitution, sexual exploitation, hostage holding, female genital mutilation (nothing in the law about male circumcision), hostage holding, involuntary servitude, kidnapping, false imprisonment, blackmail, extortion, witness tampering, obstruction of justice, perjury. Homeland Security relies solely on the alien's word when she is making such accusations against the American guy she dated.

coercing private conduct in accordance with the Feminist Establishment's ideology. The conduct regulated need not amount to criminal or civil wrongs, but even if it does, its prevention and punishment more appropriately fall under family law—an area traditionally reserved for the states, *see U.S. v. Morrison*, 529 U.S. 598, 615-16 (2000)

VAWA adopted some of the totalitarian ways of the Communist Party from the trash heap of history to not only control romance but to funnel hundreds of millions of dollars into the pockets of private Feminist organizations. Think of it as a mini-bailout compared to what Wall Street got. Only this one continues to eternity—if you let it, and bankrupts not just your wallet but your heart.

### *Understanding the Violence Against Women Act*

VAWA eliminates one of the founding principles of this country—procedural due process, or in plain English “fairness.” When the power of government is used against a person, there is a right to fair procedure, which means notice of the proceeding, an opportunity to be heard, and to present evidence before a neutral judge. VAWA provides none of those for U.S. citizens.

Now I don't mind a fight, actually I rather enjoy one, but I can't fight someone if the time and place are kept secret.

The way to understand VAWA is to keep in mind that it violates the rights of two groups of Americans: (1) Americans who date or marry foreigners, and (2) Americans who date or marry Americans, which pretty much covers everyone who's not a kid. It's a strategy of the Feminists to use the federal government to run the most personal part of your life.

The persons punished under VAWA are usually guys, but every so often an American girl has her rights trampled by it.

#### (1) Americans who date or marry foreigners:

If a citizen husband decides to divorce his alien wife within two years of marriage, the alien wife will be placed in deportation proceedings. If an American man who is dating an alien decides to break it off, the alien girlfriend will have to find another sucker to marry in order to avoid deportation when her temporary visa lapses. However, either the alien wife or girlfriend can use VAWA to escape deportation and become citizens. All they have to do is lie to Homeland Security and the Justice Department that their husband or boyfriend committed battery, extreme cruelty, or an overall pattern of violence against her.

The moment she makes her false allegations, a curtain of secrecy falls across the government's determination of whether the American guy committed abuse. The proceedings and fact-findings are kept secret from the American husband or boyfriend; he doesn't receive any notice of them; and if he learns about them, he can't submit evidence to refute the accusations—any evidence from him showing he didn't do it is ignored. The adversarial process is thrown out the window. It's as though your favorite sports team is not told what stadium the champion game is in or the time for its scheduled defeat.

VAWA has taken the “he said” out of the “he said, she said.” Not only is the husband or boyfriend presumed culpable, but he's not even allowed to prove differently, and that's the intention of VAWA: to railroad American men by denying them due process and equal protection.

Think a minute—would you want the U.S. Government listening only to your ex-wife or former girlfriend, her lawyer, and various Feminists, to decide whether you committed felonies and misdemeanors against her. You know they are going to find that you did—because you're not there to show differently.

Even the Inquisition allowed alleged heretics to appear before their judges, although they were probably tied to the rack. The Inquisition at least gave people an opportunity to prove they did not do what they were accused of, but not the U.S. Government. With VAWA, you never know who your judges are, and they skip the rack and go right to finding you committed certain wrongs. Under American justice today, the Feminists eliminated the need for the rack because confessions are no longer required—just the lies of aliens.

Stalin's show trials were fairer, since the accused at least got to appear before a tribunal, although, as with VAWA, the outcomes were fixed.

If I pulled out a gun and shot a Feminist, I'd have a right to a trial, to due process. Why is that denied me because an alien female accuses me of battery, extreme cruelty or a pattern of violence?

The citizen husband or boyfriend also can't find out what the federal government determined he did to his alien wife or alien girlfriend, how the federal government is using those fact-findings, or to whom it provides the results of those fact-findings even though he's the one found to have committed the modern day scourge of domestic violence. The fact-findings are kept in a government file on the citizen, which he cannot access, change, or correct no matter how false.

Even the Privacy Act is of no use to the American. The purpose of the Privacy Act is to allow Americans to find out whether the federal government has files on them and to obtain copies so that they can correct inaccuracies or challenge the government's reason for keeping the files. There are exceptions, for instance terrorists can't obtain their files. American men who married or dated foreign girls who falsely accused them of abuse can't obtain their files either.

After the federal government finds that a citizen committed various heinous acts, it promises that no harm will come to him because all its findings will be kept secret, except from (1) his ex-wife or ex-girlfriend, (2) federal agencies that provide her benefits, (3) state agencies that provide her benefits, (4) local agencies that provide her benefits, (5) private agencies that provide her benefits, (6) federal law enforcement officials, (7) state law enforcement officials, (8) local law enforcement officials, (9) Interpol, and (10) nonprofit, nongovernmental groups that provide other services to his ex-wife or ex-girlfriend. All of those organizations have access to the fact-findings while the one against whom the facts were found—the American—does not.

Oh, and by the way, if any of the federal government's decisions about a citizen committing crimes leaks to the general public, there is not a damn thing he can do—legally. There are no lawsuits or administrative proceedings he can bring to correct the false record or keep it from being published.

VAWA's secret proceedings not only violate an American's freedom of speech to speak up on his own behalf, right to fairness of procedure under due process, and equal protection under the law (VAWA is always used against citizens and usually against men), but it threatens the very foundation of this democracy.

“The heart of the matter is that democracy implies respect for the elementary rights of men, however suspect or unworthy those men may be; a democratic government must therefore practice fairness; and fairness can rarely be obtained by secret, one-sided determination of facts

decisive of rights.” *Joint Anti-Fascist Refugee Committee v. McGrath*, 341 U.S. 123, 170 (1951) (Mr. Justice Frankfurter concurring).

Protecting victims and punishing violators are laudable goals and may actually be the founding principle of civilization—but it cannot be done unless the truth is known. Under VAWA, it’s the truth about whether the citizen husband did what his alien wife or alien girlfriend accuses him of doing. The truth is hard to find, but in this democracy, it is done in open proceedings, by an impartial tribunal, listening to both sides—not in secret where the accused has no opportunity to be heard and the adjudicator remains anonymous. Secrecy “‘provides a cloak for the malevolent, the misinformed, the meddlesome, and the corrupt to play the role of informer undetected and uncorrected.’ Appearances in the dark are apt to look different in the light of day.” *Joint Anti-Fascist Refugee Committee v. McGrath*, 341 U.S. 123, 172 (1951)(Mr. Justice Frankfurter concurring).

When you cut through all the politically correct propaganda of protecting “innocent alien angels” from “barbarous” American men, the VAWA proceedings against citizen males are nothing more than Kangaroo courts out of the Wild West or a Star Chamber out of the middle-ages.

“Fear of serious injury cannot alone justify suppression of free speech [the right to speak on your own behalf] and assembly [the right to make marital decisions]. Men feared witches and burnt [people]. It is the function of speech to free men from the bondage of irrational fears.” *Whitney v. Cal.*, 274 U.S. 357, 375 (1927)(Mr. Justice Brandeis concurring).

### *Court Proceedings Against VAWA*

Citizen husbands and boyfriends face a unique problem under VAWA, since everything is in the shadows where they cannot look, but where their alien wives or alien girlfriends can.

Three other plaintiffs and I brought a class action case in federal court challenging the constitutionality of VAWA as a result of Homeland Security instituting the VAWA process to secretly determine whether we committed “battery,” or “extreme cruelty,” or “an overall pattern of violence” against our alien wives—all of which was false. The case simply asked for fairness in procedures by allowing a citizen, of which all of us were, to (1) refute an alien’s charges, (2) challenge the government’s fact-findings against him, and (3) prevent the dissemination of false and private information about the citizen that could interfere in obtaining a job or initiate a baseless law enforcement investigation against him.

Because VAWA’s secrecy prevents any citizen from finding out exactly what the government’s fact-findings are and how they are being used against him, the U.S. Southern District Court for New York and the U.S. Court of Appeals for the Second Circuit ruled that our allegations of harm from VAWA were “speculative” and dismissed the case. Of course, the only reason the allegations weren’t more specific was because the very statute the case challenged as unconstitutional prevented us from finding out what was going on behind the government’s closed doors, which is why we challenged VAWA in the first place.

By the courts’ logic, proceedings authorized by Congress and carried out by the Executive Branch can make findings of fact against citizens, and those citizens cannot challenge the constitutionality of those proceedings or the accuracy of the findings because secrecy laws keep the proceedings and fact findings concealed from them. Senator Joseph McCarthy would

have loved that reasoning: there's no harm because Homeland Security violated your rights in secret and will not allow you to find out how its conclusions about you are being used to undermine your life.

The hidden hand of government can destroy just as readily as a dagger in the dead of night. The U.S. Supreme Court refused to hear the case, even though that Court has stated:

“The validity and moral authority of a conclusion largely depend on the mode by which it was reached. Secrecy is not congenial to truth-seeking and self-righteousness gives too slender an assurance of rightness.” *Joint Anti-Fascist Refugee Committee v. McGrath*, 341 U.S. 123, 171 (1951)(Mr. Justice Frankfurter concurring).

The framers of the Constitution “did not trust any government to separate the true from the false for us.” *Thomas v. Collins*, 323 U.S. 516, 545 (1945)(Mr. Justice Jackson concurring).

VAWA has also pretty much negated the government's policy of preventing marriage fraud under the Immigration Marriage Fraud Amendments of 1986, 8 U.S.C. 1186a, by allowing criminally prone foreign females a nearly no-fault, fraudulent prone route to citizenship that occurs in the shadows. “Democracies die behind close doors.” *Detroit Free Press v. Ashcroft*, 303 F.3d 681, 683 (6<sup>th</sup> Cir. 2002).

*VAWA causes fraudulent ex parte state and local proceedings.*

VAWA encourages fraudulent state and local temporary restraining orders and false police complaints that result in arrests because the documents generated by such are used as primary evidence by Homeland Security and the Justice Department that an American committed crimes or civil wrongs against his alien wife or alien girlfriend. It does not matter that the state and local courts eventually find the citizen innocent of the accusations because Homeland Security and Justice will never learn about such, since the American accused of evil deeds is shut out of the VAWA proceedings and the alien is not about to introduce evidence of the citizen's innocence.

Aliens, immigration lawyers, and Feminist advocates are therefore free to create a trail of official local and state documents filled with false charges against citizens so that those documents can be used as primary evidence by Homeland Security and Justice in the VAWA process. Of course, another foreseeable result is that the false charges will result in jail, harm to occupation, lost of employment, and pink-listing of the American husband or boyfriend—but aliens, lawyers, and Feminists are not known for their ethics.

Any arrests and TROs are listed with the Identification Division of the FBI. The information is gathered from federal, state, and local agencies, and the FBI disseminates it to all law enforcement agencies and to officials of state and local governments for employment and licensing purposes. 28 C.F.R. §§ 20.21(b)(2)-(3); 20.33(a); 50.12(a). TROs are also entered into the FBI's National Information Crime Center. All of the information concerning arrests and TROs are available for FBI security clearance checks that it conducts before the federal government hires someone.

When a citizen is found innocent of the charges in state or local court, he will have to go to federal court to have the damaging records erased, since the states and municipalities have no

power to prevent dissemination or to expunge federal records. The problem is that federal courts only erase the records in extreme situations of which false accusations by an alien spouse or girlfriend is not one. The result is that those fact-findings are forever in the federal government's records.

In addition, private detective agencies keep databases of public criminal and civil records and provide reports of arrests, TROs, and restraining order violations to potential employers as part of the routine background checks that employers conduct. Once a potential employer sees that a husband was arrested for a domestic crime, a temporary restraining order was taken out against him by a female, or he was accused of violating a TRO, the employer will likely deny him a job.

The false allegations will continue working relentlessly to clandestinely destroy an American's reputation, career, and inter-reaction with others until his life collapses—just as the invisible hand of the McCarthy lists in the 1950s destroyed many innocent persons based on unsubstantiated accusations.

“It is common knowledge that a man with an arrest record is much more apt to be subject to police scrutiny—the first to be questioned and the last eliminated as a suspect.” *Utz v. Cullinane*, 520 F.2d 467, 481 n. 35 (D.C. Cir. 1975)(quoted citation omitted).

“[E]ven to be acquitted may damage one's good name if the community receives the verdict with a wink and chooses to remember defendant as one who ought to be convicted.” *Michelson v. United States*, 335 U.S. 469, 482 (1948).

VAWA also interferes with a state divorce or annulment proceeding where the alien wife's credibility is an important issue. The wife's use of VAWA infers a motivation to make false accusations in state proceedings because those accusations require no proof by the immigration authorities, only affidavits by her, Feminist counselors, and state documents containing her assertions. The secrecy of the VAWA process, however, prevents the husband from acquiring evidence that his wife is using VAWA, so he is unable to use that information to impeach her credibility.

Another related harm caused by VAWA is the violation of the Sixth Amendment. In state criminal proceedings against the citizen, the prosecution's key witness is the alien wife or girlfriend. Since she knows whether she is using the VAWA process, the prosecution is in possession of information that the husband or boyfriend can use to impeach the alien's credibility, but VAWA secrecy prevents the prosecutor from revealing that the alien is using VAWA to gain permanent residency. That violates the Sixth Amendment right of the American to show that witnesses against him have a motive to lie.

Because of VAWA, a husband's right to end his marriage or a boyfriend's right to end a relationship now carries with it the threat of fraudulent police complaints, TROs, arrests, jail, and violation of basic constitutional rights just because he married or dated an alien, the marriage or romance failed, and the federal government created a rubber-stamp, fraudulent process for his wife or girlfriend to gain permanent residency. The VAWA provisions chill Americans' freedom of choice on whether to terminate their marriages or relationships with aliens and deter them from marrying or dating a foreigner in order to avoid a repeat of the VAWA hell they went through or might go through.



That, of course, is exactly what the Feminists want. Since not all Feminists are lesbians and most are physically or psychologically unattractive, they needed federal law to restrict American guys to the pool of American females.

VAWA simply and intentionally created a fraudulent track to permanent U.S. residency and citizenship for alien wives or girlfriends whenever the alien female alleges abuse. The Act doesn't focus on fraud prevention but fraud permission.

How ironic that today, America, which has consistently granted aliens within its borders rights similar to citizens, now deprives those citizens of rights granted aliens.

### *Solution*

The solution to the federal government's violation of citizens' rights in order to give aliens, usually alien females, preferential treatment is to do what the British and American legal systems have done for hundreds of years—use the adversarial process.

Give American citizens the same rights terrorists have. Terrorists get to have a trial in federal court or a military tribunal to determine whether they committed some evil act. They appear before those who determine what they did, are presumed innocent until proven guilty, and are allowed to submit evidence on their own behalf. But there is no adversarial process for American men accused of abuse by an alien female, even if she is here illegally, running a con, works as a prostitute, deals in drugs, evades taxes, or belongs to the Chechen “Black Widows.”

### *What's a Star Chamber?*

The British Star Chamber was used as a tool of political power in the 1500s and 1600s.

The Star Chamber acted as a court that imposed punishment for actions deemed to be morally unacceptable but not in violation of the law. This allowed the Chamber to punish anyone for any action that the Chamber felt should be illegal even when it wasn't. The Chamber's decisions were arbitrary and subjective, which allowed it to become an instrument of oppression. Hearings were held in secret, no indictments, no appeals. The accused was not permitted to appear and defend himself.

With each embarrassment to arbitrary power, the Star Chamber became emboldened to undertake further usurpations of authority. The Star Chamber finally summoned juries before it for verdicts disagreeable to the government and fined and imprisoned the jurors. It spread terrorism among all those who did constitutional acts.

The U.S. Supreme Court said, “the Star Chamber has, for centuries, symbolized disregard of basic individual rights.” *Faretta v. California*, 422 U.S. 806, 821-22 (1975). Now America has its own in VAWA Star Chamber.

VAWA adjudications and fact-findings are made at the VAWA Unit in Vermont by government employees trained in Feminist ideology by Feminist nonprofit corporations. These corporations are kept secret from the American public while taxpayers pay for them to indoctrinate government officials in Feminism.

The VAWA adjudicators are not impartial; they do not treat both sides alike because one side, the American citizen's, is missing. Impartial adjudicators are necessary to preserve both the appearance and the reality of fairness “so important to a popular government, that justice has

been done.” *Joint Anti-Fascist Refugee Committee v. McGrath*, 341 U.S. 123, 172 (Mr. Justice Frankfurter concurring).

*Isn't VAWA necessary to keep alien spouses from being abused?*

Mistreated aliens have plenty of options—walk down to the local precinct or call the toll-free domestic violence hotline; it talks in many tongues, including a forked one.

A mistreated alien wife or girlfriend in America has recourse to state and local courts and numerous legal aid groups to deal with mistreatment and avoid deportation without the need of a fraudulent prone, rubber stamp process to permanent residency that violates the constitutional rights of U.S. citizens.

Why should the federal government involve itself in domestic disputes? It already can't do what it's supposed to in areas for which the Constitution gives it responsibility. The states have always had the job of dealing with domestic disputes and have developed the necessary expertise.

There are three possible scenarios under VAWA: (1) no abuse, but the guy discovers he was tricked into marriage, yet it's his rights that the government violates; (2) the alien wife abuses the guy who has zero recourse because Feminarchy America won't believe him, and the government will still punish him by violating his rights and ruining his life; and (3) the alien wife is mistreated, but just because an alien is mistreated doesn't mean we have to give her permanent residency and citizenship. There's no necessary connection between mistreatment and citizenship. The connection was made solely to intimidate American men out of taking foreign wives or girlfriends.

Let's say an American Feminazi marries an alien guy. Back in the U.S. she discovers he's a Russian mafia pimp, so she drives over him in her Mercedes Benz, and he survives. Is that a reason to give this guy a green card? I don't think so. Sure the Feminazi should be prosecuted for attempted murder, but why should the guy become a resident and then a citizen. There's no connection between his injury and residency. Should every alien in this country who is injured automatically gain a green card? I don't think so.

What if a mistreated alien is a member of Al Qaeda, or the Russian mafia, or she's a ho? Don't we have enough hos in this country already? Do we have to import them in addition to breeding them?

At some point people, even females, have to be responsible for their lives. If government takes on the task of protecting everyone from everything, then there is no liberty, no freedom for anyone. Remember the utopia, the new Soviet man and female created in the Soviet Union.

These alien girls who have been scheming to get to America for years also have the option of learning self-defense in a martial arts course.

VAWA probably causes more violence because if you're going to be blamed for something, you might as well do it. Had I known that the federal government would hold secret hearings to apparently find that I committed battery, extreme cruelty, or a pattern of violence, then I would have slapped my ex-wife upside the head.

*You imported one.*

I know, and I did everything I could to send her back, but the Devil didn't want her.

*I don't think any girl would want to be your wife.*

The feeling is mutual.

*Why did the Feminists get VAWA passed?*

VAWA is the modern day equivalent of making voodoo dolls of men and sticking them with pins, except that it works.

VAWA permits alien girls to do violence to the rights of citizen men and not only get away with it, but be paid for it by the government with taxpayer dollars that disproportionately come from men. Their legal fees, sometimes housing, and even daily expenses are often paid by the government.

VAWA is an example of using political power to control the purely personal when no criminal or civil wrongs have occurred but only a citizen choosing not to sacrifice liberty by conforming to the self-righteous dictates of the Feminist Establishment.

The Feminazis aren't stupid; they're cowardly and evil, but not dumb. By the early 1990s, they knew American guys were fed up with females exploiting Feminist ideology by always telling guys what to think, say, and how to act even when a guy's actions harmed no one. Guys started looking for ladies who were "evolutionarily correct" rather than politically correct, which often meant going overseas. The purpose of VAWA is to create an *in terrorem* effect so that American men will not look overseas for mates but choose from the pool of fat, flabby, over-the-hill, man-blaming females in America.

The Feminists didn't create VAWA out of bleeding hearts for alien females but to intimidate American men into shopping at home for wives and girlfriends.

Why do females squeeze their feet into tiny shoes with stilts on one end, constrict the lower part of their bodies in panty hose, interfere with their respiration with tight push-up bras, paint their faces with cancer causing dyes, pluck their eyebrows—ow, glue fake eyelashes to their eye lids, conduct chemical reactions on their heads to change hair color? To catch a guy.

If they are willing to do all that to land a guy, they are sure willing to use the government to violate a guy's rights if it increases their chances.

If females have the choice to butcher incipient human beings, then guys should have the choice to look for girlfriends overseas—but in reality they don't.

*How were you harmed by VAWA*

Besides the violation of my due process rights by the government's secret proceedings that apparently found I had committed battery, or extreme cruelty, or a pattern of violence against my ex-wife, there were the legal fees incurred in defending against a fraud based TRO taken out against me. The injury to my reputation by a false extortion complaint filed with the NYC police, which is now most likely in the data banks of Internet detective agencies.

Because I refused to commit perjury before Immigration by sponsoring my ex-wife for permanent residency, her immigration lawyer instructed her to go to state court and obtain the TRO by accusing me, without me being present, of the following crimes: assault in the second and third degrees; attempted assault, aggravated harassment, harassment in the first and second degrees; menacing in the second and third degrees; disorderly conduct, reckless endangerment, and stalking in the first, second, third, and fourth degrees. All false, but it all went into

government records and those of private detective firms that I cannot expunge. The Feminists have so corrupted the government and the court system that lies told by females are now considered the truth, and men don't even get a chance to refute the lies about them before they are disseminated.

It's not that I told the truth and was disbelieved—I didn't even get the chance to tell the truth because the extortion complaint was *ex parte*, the TRO was issued *ex parte*, and the federal VAWA proceeding that likely found I had committed some evil deed was *ex parte*. It's *ex parte* boot strapping on *ex parte*. That's the way the Nazis worked, and that's the way the Commies operated.

Think about it. A Russian mafia prostitute, stripper at Flash Dancers, former Mistress to a Chechen warlord, and a federal and state felon goes into an American court where it's just her and the judge. She cries her phony tears and presto a TRO is issued against an American lawyer who once worked for one of the most prestigious law firms in the country. It's done without my being there, I have no notice, and no opportunity to defend myself against the order that will harm my reputation, put my name on various government evil-doers' lists, and could land me in jail just on this prostitute's say so. What if I stepped into a subway car and she was on it—off to jail I go. The police have no discretion in the matter because the law created by the Feminists requires the police to make arrests on the say-sos of sluts who obtain TROs.

The TRO against me was later dismissed because my ex-wife and her lawyer failed to prosecute. Why? Because they didn't have to. She still got to use the TRO as evidence that I abused her because the Feminists created in VAWA an unconstitutional system that allows, and actually encourages, aliens to make false claims of threatened abuse as a reason for not pursuing a permanent restraining order.

Nearly a year after the TRO was dismissed, I'm entering the country from overseas and Customs pulls me into their detention room for 45 minutes. Why? Because of that TRO that had been dismissed. The information was still in their computer and probably still is to this day. The exact same thing happened to one of the other plaintiffs in the case against VAWA. Customs doesn't even detain terrorists. They come and go as they please. But Feminists have so perverted this country's institutions that Customs detains American citizens based on secret proceedings used by state courts to issue TROs against citizens who have no opportunity to defend, and the orders from those secret proceeding are actually dismissed.

In the future, I'll re-enter the country by way of the Rio Grande with all the other illegals.

Subsequently, I tried to obtain a job with the CIA through a recruitment session at my *alma mater* Columbia University's Business School. I wasn't hired, and my ex-wife using VAWA may have been the reason, but there is no way for me to find out. Who knows what other positions I tried to obtain but didn't because of VAWA? Who knows what false information is circulating in the shadows about me and will do harm without my realizing it? That's the danger of VAWA—just like the black listing of the McCarthy era.

U.S. taxpayers were also harmed because they likely ended up paying my ex-wife's legal fees. Imagine, taxpayers paying the legal fees of a Russian mafia prostitute without even getting any sex in return—what a scam.

*Is VAWA a bill of attainder?*

Congress bought into the zeal for Feminist supremacy over men by enacting VAWA, which amounts to a bill of attainder—punishment without trial.

VAWA singles out mainly men for legislatively prescribed punishment by describing in terms of conduct that which operates primarily as a stereotypical designation of the group of men—men abuse their wives and girlfriends but females do not abuse their husbands or boyfriends. Bills of attainder violate Article 1, § 9, cl. 3 of the U.S. Constitution.

Because of VAWA, thousands of men each year have been arrested, jailed, subjected to *ex parte* temporary restraining orders and *ex parte* complaints to the police that are false. They have lost houses, jobs, bank accounts, and were or are having their rights to freedom of speech, freedom of choice in marital relationships, procedural due process, and equal protection trampled by VAWA's Star Chamber provisions. They face ongoing non-compensable harm from defamations and invasions of privacy. Barriers prevent them from correcting false government fact-findings about them or limiting dissemination of such.

It must be remembered that these American men are not accused of terrorism, they're not planning to blow-up innocent civilians—all they did was fall for alien females.

*You just want American men to have the right to use violence against alien girls?*

Define violence.

I'll do it for you. It's the use of physical force that causes injury. Let's say you and a girl are rushing for a subway seat and you bump her out of the way. That's physical force but no injury.

Under VAWA, any mockery, insult, or yelling is considered violence.

The terms "battery," "extreme cruelty," and "overall pattern of violence" were intentionally left vague and over inclusive (legally called "overbroad"—how appropriate) so that a citizen husband can be accused of any of these evil-sounding deeds by just exercising his constitutionally protected speech that he may use in times of quarrels and even in times of making-up, such as kissing the alien if she does not want to be kissed at that particular moment.

Persons cannot know what not to do if there is no way of knowing what not to do. The insidious evil of VAWA is that the Feminists in the VAWA Unit in Vermont can arbitrarily decide what is violence under VAWA because the Feminists wrote the law to include almost any innocent act as violence if a female claims such.

Regardless of the overbroad nature of violence under VAWA, men should have the right to defend themselves against false accusations, and even if the accusations are true, they still have a right to defend themselves.

*Any reason for filing the VAWA case on St. Valentine's Day?*

It was my Valentine's Day gift to the Feminazis—too bad it wasn't a Chicago one.

Would I machine gun the Feminists? Hmmm let me think about that one.

It's a flippant remark that expresses my contempt for them. If I do machine gun a bunch of them, then you can use the statement against me.

(2) Americans who date or marry Americans:

VAWA provides: (1) hundreds of millions of dollars to state and local courts and law enforcement if they do what the law wants, which is the same as doing what the Feminists want, since they wrote the law; (2) money to state and local courts and law enforcement whose policies violate the Constitution; and (3) hundreds of millions of dollars to Feminist non-profit corporations that frees up private contributions for lobbying in favor of laws that discriminate against guys and for supporting political candidates.

*Money for doing what VAWA wants:*

(a) 23 states, including New York, have predominant aggressor policies that violate equal protection and probable cause.

When police show up at a domestic dispute, they are required to determine who is bigger, stronger, and more capable of physical activity—most likely the guy. Then they factor in who called 911, who's more fearful or the better actor—most likely the girl. The arrest isn't based on evidence indicating the guy did something wrong but that he's a guy.

The guy could be standing there bleeding from the head, and the girl holding a blood-dripping hammer, yet the police have to arrest the guy or the department loses money from VAWA.

The arrest information goes into the FBI identification data base that is available to all law enforcement agencies, officials of state and local governments for employment and licensing purposes, and to certain private contractors. 28 C.F.R. §§ 20.21(b)(2)-(3); 20.33(a); 50.12(a). Private detective agencies also obtain publicly available information that can be accessed on the Internet.

The guy then has to spend lots of money on legal fees, which often bankrupts him, to stay out of jail. Even when the state court finds the guy innocent, he's not going to get the arrest information erased from all the databases that hold it. The girl's lies will always be there to prevent him from obtaining one job or another and forever ruin his reputation, but the federal government doesn't care because he's a man, and men, the ones who created this country, no longer have rights, other than to die for it.

(b) No drop prosecutions

In two-thirds of the states, once the man is arrested, the state has to prosecute him. Prosecutors no-longer have the discretion in domestic dispute cases to drop prosecution of the arrested person.

*Money for unconstitutional policies:*

(a) All states have domestic temporary restraining orders (TROs) that violate free speech and due process.

A girlfriend or wife, alien or not, simply goes to court cries a few tears, tells a few lies, and presto the court, without notice to the husband or evidence, issues a temporary restraining order against him.

TROs, like arrest records go into an FBI database and the databases of hundreds of private detective agencies, which are available on the Internet.

Historically, TROs were used to prevent an immediate harm before both parties could appear in court.

For example, assume the Feminist next door is clearing trees from her property. Instead of cutting them down, she's using dynamite to blow them up, and parts of the trees are raining down on your property. You politely ask her to stop, but she replies she will not be intimidated by a male chauvinist pig. You jump in your car and go to the court. The clerk sends you before a judge because you are asking for a TRO to put a stop to the immediate damage to your property until there can be a full hearing on the matter.

The judge tells his clerk to try to reach the Feminist. (In domestic dispute cases the judge doesn't bother). The Feminist doesn't answer her telephone because she's doing psychotropic drugs with her girlfriend and sticking pins in voodoo dolls of every man she ever knew.

The judge issues a TRO directing the Feminist to stop dynamiting and to show up in court, usually seven days later to resolve the dispute. (In domestic dispute cases, it's often two months or more, and the husband is thrown into the street).

If the Feminist keeps dynamiting during the seven days, then the police, at their discretion, can arrest her, but usually a warning suffices.

(b) More than 34 states, including New York, require arrests for an alleged TRO violation, which violates due process and probable cause.

With a domestic dispute TRO, the wife or girlfriend has a "boyfriend goes to jail whenever I want" card. She can call the police, make up a lie that the husband or boyfriend violated the TRO and the police must throw him in jail.

The guy also could be stupid enough to send her flowers as a peace offering, and the police must again throw him in jail. He should have saved the flowers for his early grave.

Now he has an arrest record, which goes into the FBI database (available to all law enforcement agencies, officials of state and local governments for employment and licensing) and private detective firms' databases, and will cost him a lot of money to defend against.

*Money freed up for lobbying and political candidates:*

The numerous nonprofit corporations set up by Feminists receive hundreds of millions of federal dollars to train and preach their man-hating dogma to police, court employees and others. It doesn't matter whether state and local government workers buy into the Feminist doctrine just so long as they do what it requires; otherwise, their jobs might be in jeopardy.

Feminist nonprofit corporations usually have two sides: one that allegedly does charitable and educational work for which government tax dollars largely pay for, such as from VAWA, and the other side that lobbies for legislation discriminating against men and for supporting certain political candidates. Since government money goes into supporting the educational side, it frees up private contributions for the political side.

*Rights violated by VAWA:*

*Free Speech*, right to think what you will and speak what you think, especially on your own behalf in proceedings that make findings of fact as to your conduct.

*Due Process*, right to defend yourself when accused of crimes or civil wrongs; to submit evidence in your defense; to have notice that the government is holding proceedings concerning you; to know specifically what is prohibited, rather than having to guess about it.

*Privacy*, right to have access to government records concerning you, to challenge the accuracy of those records.

*Equal Protection*, right not to be discriminated against by the government because of an accident of nature.

*Family Matters*, right to marry or date whom you want, assuming she wants to marry or date you; to divorce or end a romance, and make other family and personal related decisions without fear of government retribution.

*Bear Arms*, right to own a gun—issuance of a permanent restraining order requires the surrendering firearms.

*Probable Cause*, right not to be arrested unless there is more evidence indicating you did something wrong than evidence saying you did not, cannot be arrested based on classifying you as a member of a particular group, as do primary aggressor laws.

“In a government like ours, entirely popular, care should be taken in every part of the system, not only to do right, but to satisfy the community that right is done.” *Joint Anti-Fascist Refugee Committee v. McGrath*, 341 U.S. 123, 172 n. 19 (1951)(Mr. Justice Frankfurter concurring)(quoting 5 *The Writings and Speeches of Daniel Webster*, 163).

*Isn't VAWA needed to stop domestic abuse among Americans?*

It depends on how you define “domestic abuse” or “domestic violence.” If you’re just talking about domestic disputes: squabbling, arguments, heart breaks, and tears concerning couples, you’re never going to stop that unless you create an Orwellian government like that in 1984, which VAWA is a good step toward doing.

What you want from government are laws and their enforcement that prevent intimidation or the use of physical violence in domestic situations that cause injury. Under our Constitution, that power has always existed in the states and with local police and local courts—not the federal government.

If you’re being threatened or battered by a lover, then call the police—not the FBI or Homeland Security. It’s the police and local courts responsibility to protect citizens from intimidation and physical violence used in relationships. And it’s the responsibility of the individual being harmed or threatened to call the police and testify in court. When the police show up at a scene of alleged physical violence or threats, they can’t read a person’s mind. The person in danger has to speak up—that’s their responsibility as a member of this society.

We’re not dealing with children here. These are adults, and adults have responsibilities under this type of government. Government cannot protect everyone from their own stupidities and fears. The Communists tried that and look at the harm they caused—the lives, hopes and dreams they destroyed.



The government can't protect everybody from everything. If it tries, like the Commies tried, then you have the wholesale violation of rights.

*Example*

Let's say I'm riding the bus and behind me are two young guys speaking in a Middle Eastern language. I become scared that they'll blow up the bus, and I call the police. When the cops show up, let's assume the law requires them to arrest the guys just because I became scared and they're ancestors grew up in a different part of the world than mine. That's the way VAWA works; only the person arrested on the mere say-so of another without any evidence is usually a guy because an accident of nature made him a guy.

*Why did the Feminists write VAWA to control Americans in relationships with Americans?*

Looks like the Feminists want to do away with marriage just as the Communists, Nazis, and Oceania in the novel *1984* wanted to.

The Feminists are like the Nazis, Commies, and every other group of tin-pot dictators and zealots in history; they want to force their ideology on everyone else. They believe they've discovered the "truth"; otherwise, why call themselves "politically correct." That's as nuts as "religiously correct."

They also want easy money from the government, which has substituted for husbands they can't get.

With taxpayer dollars, their media and political clout, the Feminists are pretty much getting what they want—a tyranny over men. They want such a tyranny, so they'll be treated like princesses—do what I want, when I want, read my mind before I have to tell you what I want, and be quick about it.

*How can men be the ones who are suffering?*

(a) American men dating or married to alien females.

In the case where an American man dates or marries an alien female, the Federal Government in deciding whether the man did something wrong or committed a crime does so without using the adversarial process. It's all kept secret from the American husband.

The reason for this part of VAWA is to create an *in terrorem* effect to keep guys from looking overseas for mates. After all, from 1900 to 1950 the male/female ratio in the U.S. was above 100%, but since 1950, it's been in the lower 90% category.

(b) American men dating or married to American females.

Because a fair amount of the funding that is provided to local courts and the police by VAWA is dependent on Feminist tenets, neither dare value a man's word to the same extent as a female's. Both refuse to believe what the man says; thereby, assuring further funding under VAWA.

VAWA uses Feminist organizations to train local court and law enforcement personnel, which means training government employees to do what the Feminists want. They warn that if an employee does his job their way, then he won't have any problems. But if he does his job consistent with the Constitution, then he'll have problems.

The training is also accompanied by indoctrination that men are dangerous and need to be contained and punished because they are men.

*Doesn't the average female, who is physically weaker than the average male, need the government to protect her?*

Sure, and she has always had it with the local police and local courts.

She can also go to her brother, her father, her uncle, the guy next door, or one of her many beaux, or take martial arts and learn to protect herself.

Don't sell girls short. They've been doing better than holding their own since the hunting and gathering days.

Females are masters of the art of deception and using the intentional infliction of emotional distress to get what they want. Ever try dealing with a crying or nagging girlfriend?

What I want to know is where's the Intentional Infliction of Emotional Distress Against Men Act?

*There are reports of females initiating as much domestic violence as males, but let's be real, guys can protect themselves from a female, right?*

Assuming she's not driving a Mercedes Benz or feeding you poison, yes. Even if she's wheedling a gun, so long as it's not a shotgun, I wouldn't be too worried.

The problem isn't their use of physical violence; you'll never stop that, but that when a female causes injury, the courts believe the female's lie about self-defense. Even if the guy is still alive, the courts will believe her.

The Courts are predominantly biased against guys. For example, when the judge asked the prostitute at what point she realized she had been raped, the prostitute answered, "When the check bounced." "Guilty!" the judge declared.

### VAWA Mafia

A Racketeer Influenced and Corrupt Organization of nonprofit corporations and government employees that violate the law in their efforts to exercise power and make money.

They suborn perjury, perpetrate fraud, obstruct justice, breach government contracts, suppress statistics on female-initiated abuse, and reach conclusions not supported by the data.

### War

America's wars were fought, in part, to keep American females from becoming British trollops, Nazi broodmares, Japanese comfort girls, or Commie secretutes.

Since girls control a majority of the country's assets, in the next war, girls should make up a majority of the casualties in defending those assets.

A healthy society should not war against human nature, but there will never be peace so long as feminine desire exceeds its ability.

There is a state of war between men and the Feminazis—total war.  
You may not be interested in war, but war is interested in you.

### Women

Women are females who don't exploit the Feminazi pedestal. They understand the foibles and benefits of both sexes, see through the self-serving hype of the Feminists, use the power that Mother Nature gave them rather than pretending they are men, and are actually willing to help a guy to a point rather than whining what have you done for me lately?

“To be a real woman is to bring out the best in a man.” Gidget.

### Work

If a person does it today, he won't have to do it tomorrow.

Work outside the home is often more interesting than work done in the home. Yet it is also true that work done in the home—particularly time spent with one's children when they are young—is often more satisfying and important than wage work.

The Feminazis have bamboozled men into giving them jobs for which guys are better suited.

### World Problem

The key problem facing the world is over population and the key cause of over population is selfish females. Girls want above all else, except money, children. It's a key driving force for them, not so for most men who want a career.

## Girl Jokes

Clubs can't call their waitresses bunnies or other furry animal names.

Girls will go to the ends of the earth to find a man, they'll just make it look like the guy's doing it.

Females aren't looking for chump change, they're looking for a chump to gold-dig.

If Ladies Nights case successful: clubs will most likely lower the price to guys and raise it to girls. That means every guy who enters a club will have more money to buy girls drinks. True the girls will have to manipulate more drinks from the guys to make up for the increased admission cost, but I'm confident in their genetic ability to separate a man from his money. Of course, the girls will have to drink more but then they'll have more fun and so will us guys. An added benefit is that in the morning when they wake up with second thoughts about what they did the night before, they can do what they always do—blame men, in this case me, rather than the guys they partied with. It's a win-win situation for the guys, girls, and the clubs.

Asking girls whether they're in favor of Ladies Nights is like asking a beggar whether he's in favor of someone giving him money.

There's 3.3 billion girls in this world, figure you're attracted to 5%, factor in an active sexual life of 60 years and it works out to over 7000 babes a night. I'm still working on my first night.

Can't hate that which you lust after.

Give feminists a taste of their own medicine, hand back that poison apple; see how they like it.

Females can say what they want about guys and receive applauds and curtses, but the moment a guy returns the favor—it's off with his head, or both heads.

Anyone, other than your wife or girl friend, demand a reason for the people you hang out with?

About as likely to win in the lower court as having a pretty young lady pay my way on a date.

At least at the Inquisition you got to appear before your judges, although you were probably tied to the rack, with the VAWA you never know who your judges are and they skip the rack and go right to finding you guilty.

Why should the Fed Govt involve itself in domestic disputes? It already can't do what it's supposed to.

It's a modern day witch hunt—only today the witches are doing the hunting.

VAWA advocates do the modern day equivalent of making voodoo dolls of men and sticking them with pins.

Don't we have enough hos already? Do we have to import them as well as breed them?

Yes, girls are a suspect class. Every time they open their mouths, I begin to suspect something.

Think of all the syndromes that have come up in recent years that allow females to get away with murdering their husbands, boyfriends, children and new born. So do you really want a female in a position of power? How do you know the next syndrome wouldn't be: They offended me, so I nuked them.

Look at what their bodies are built for. You don't use a car to fly the skies, a plane to sail the seas, or a boat to drive the highways.

The reason Feminists use the term gender instead of sex is that they don't want to be reminded of what they haven't had for decades.

Girls spend a lot of time, energy and some guy's money trying to look sexy. I'm not about to disappoint them by considering them genderey.

If we had invited homely girls to the prom we might have been spared this feminism.

Females always demean men for fighting for their rights in the hope that men will do what most guys have done—lay down and let girls drive right over their civil liberties, perhaps with a Mercedes Benz.

### Doctor Visit

Went to see my doctor the other day over some minor problem, as if at this stage of life—my third childhood, there are any minor problems.

A hot young nurse shows me into the examination room.

My doctor always has hot young nurses—maybe I should have been a doctor instead of a lawyer. As a lawyer, if I fool around with someone who works for me, or even a client. It's a violation of the code of ethics. Code of ethics for lawyers—now there's a joke.

So the hot young nurse shows me into the room, weighs me and takes my blood pressure—the usual.

Then she asks, how old are you?

To which I respond, you don't want to know and neither do I.

No, really how old are you?

Old enough to know better but don't.

Come on, how old?

Emotionally or physically?

Physically. The same age as the Universe, 13.7 billion years since everything in me was created back then.

She says, I'll just look it up on the computer, so I relented and gave her a ball park number. And no, I'm not going to tell you what it is.

I really hate this computer age. The Internet makes it impossible to exploit the infinite capacity for young ladies to delude themselves. Once they have your name, their nosy little fingers hit the Internet and they know everything you don't want them to know. How's a dirty old man suppose to get anywhere? Yes, I'm a dirty old man and I've been one since I was five.

Back to the hot young nurse. So she asks, are you afraid of falling down?

That surprised me. Nobody ever asked that before, so I thought, and said, yes, but only when I'm drunk.

Then she asks, can you feed yourself?

I wondered, what's with these questions. But I went along and answered truthfully—something that's hard for an attorney, and said, "Not with chop sticks."

Next question, Can you bath yourself?

Yes, but I'd rather have you do it. Do you think I'm 90 years old?

At that point, the doctor came in and she rushed out of the room as I yelled after her "I'm 25!"

### March Madness

The lawyers where I work at my day job set a pool for the NCAA basketball tournament?

I know nothing about basketball and never liked the sport, probably because I couldn't figure out how to dribble without looking at the ball. How are you going to shoot or pass the ball if you're always looking at where the ball's going after a bounce?

So, I had no intention of joining the pool for \$20 but then thought here's a chance to get back some of the money I wasted on a girl from the University of Kentucky that I went out with during law school. So I bet on Kentucky to win, it didn't but my pick got closer than anybody else's in the pool and I made a few hundred bucks.

Amazing, after all these years pursuing girls, I finally made some money because of a girl. But at this rate, I'll have to live to 2000 to break even.

With my winnings I bought chocolate Easter Eggs for the girls at work. Told them that Obamacare required them to use contraception with the eggs.

### Work

Why are you guys so disorganized? Is this a Millennial thing? Growing up, you guys thought logic didn't matter because that's how girls operated.

After winning the NCAA pool, I bought the ladies at work Godiva chocolate with liquor in the candies. I told them it wouldn't be my fault if they ended up with their clothes off. One of the guys then complained that I didn't buy anything for the guys. To which I replied, what? You want Mike to take his clothes off? Give me a break and one of ladies said to the complaining guy, we're going to tell your wife.

*What'd you get me?*

Stiletto heels so you can walk up and down my back in your teddy.

I'm escaping the estrogen in my office. Too much of that stuff is poisonous to a man.

### Night Clubbing

My buddy always complains that the girls are too young. I never complain. Once he got me to go to a mixer that advertised older ladies, 32 and up. Never again! Those babes looked like my mother, and she's dead.

### ABCNY niche marketing for lawyers

Key is to place yourself in the position of members of the market you're targeting so as to understand their values. Now all I have to do is imagine I'm an 18-25 year old female. Hmmm, I think I'll make myself a tall blonde with big balloons. You can call me Barbie. Do blondes have any values other than money?

### Hip hop class

Girls aren't friendly before the class but during and after when the endorphins and adrenalin are pumping in those nubile bodies, a heterosexual guy is the next best thing to non-cancer causing lipstick.

### Court

Appellate Division-First Department involves a fight with 5 judges at once. A black Feminist judge accused me of "inappropriate conduct" toward a City bureaucrat at the City Human Rights Commission. The bureaucrat, an Hispanic male, authored a decision saying I was not discriminated at a club based on age because clubs could enforce whatever image they chose. The club would not let me and a fellow gray hair buddy in unless we bought a \$350 bottle of

watered down, brand-less vodka. We declined. In the wetback's Order, excuse me, Hispanic's Order, he failed to put page numbers, which made citing statements in it really difficult. So I numbered the page with uno, dos, tres and so on. The self righteous, zealot Feminist judge called that "inappropriate." To which I responded, "The bureaucrat in an official government document, not only tried to make citing that document overly difficult in the hopes of deterring an appeal, but also insulted my marital status—divorced, my beliefs, the anti-feminist lawsuits I filed, and how I exercise my speech by having nothing good to say about my ex-wife. So in the spirit of quid pro quo—one bad turn deserves another—I insulted him by using Spanish for the page numbers. As is typical of these Feminists, she edited the facts to make me appear malicious by saying I erased the original numbers and then put in the Spanish words.

### Marriage

I have a computer to fight with—who needs a wife.



## **A Different Time**

A propeller driven plane drones somewhere overhead far out of sight. Its low monotone humming envelops a warm, spring Sunday afternoon somewhere in the 1950s. I sit on my 24 inch, black, single-gear Schwinn bicycle, keeping my balance by holding onto the door handle of an old, blue, four-door 1947 Dodge.

My consciousness pauses at the moment, feeling vaguely sad for no discernible reason. The week's events ended with this gift of nothing to do: no homework, no television shows, no new housing developments to explore or classmates able to come out and play.

The dead-end street needs a new asphalt topping. Where I am balance on the side, the asphalt has broken up into small gravel-like stones with an isolated weed sprouting up here and there. It is still early spring, the lawns are just beginning to turn green and the tulips and dogwood buds remain closed, waiting for a few consecutive days of warm weather. The air smells fresh, warmed slightly by a gentle breeze.

The droning airplane fills the vacuum of silence on this street with modest middle-class houses in this small suburban town, whose claim to fame will not come until the end of the next decade. Of all the towns in America, this town will have the second highest number of persons per capita to die in Vietnam—all of them men, and all of them guys I knew.

## **Why Can't the Men's Movement Get Its Act Together?**

© Roy Den Hollander, 2009

Some say the men's movement is ineffective because feminists are so successful at turning men into androgynies that there are probably only a couple of hundred men left in America. If true, it's not easy for such a small group to change the course of 300 million.

Some, however, argue ego. Men are too aggressive and opinionated—they just can't cooperate. Yet, practically all the great social changes in history, for good or ill, occurred because men worked together.

Others claim an absence of organization with too many groups going in too many different directions. But there are hundreds of feminist organizations spread across the land doing lots of different activities and focused on different goals, although a uniting factor may be their inherent fear and hatred of men.

The lack of success by the men's movement isn't for want of talent or will. The movement has skillful public speakers and writers trying to educate, elucidate and enlighten; competent litigators trying to put the blindfold back across the eyes of Justice; effective lobbyists exercising their First Amendment right of association; and gutsy demonstrators willing to fight for their rights no matter how many names the "morality pundits" call them.

So why can't the men's movement effectively fight the feminists? In this capitalistic society—it's money, the primary source of power in America. The federal government gives feminist organizations hundreds of millions of dollars a year while foundations, corporations, and individuals chip in millions more.

Organizations advocating for the rights of men receive next to nothing, and it's unlikely to change. Politicians run the government, and they generally take positions that will win the

most votes, which means catering to the female majority. Foundations, as with most of the non-governmental sector, are largely run by products of university Women's Studies programs, which issued degrees in backstabbing men. Corporations, of course, follow the dollar, and with 80% of the purchases made by females, corporations aren't about to donate to men's groups.

As for private individuals, although most of the billionaires in America are males, their wealth often depends on corporations, so they aren't about to alienate their largest market. Besides, a by-product of feminism was to expand the labor pool, which lowered the cost of labor—the largest expense for most corporations. Working and middle class men still believe the government will treat them fairly if they end up in a dispute with a female. Those who know the truth, however, have very little money left after fighting a government that not only doesn't give a damn about them, but actually rejoices in the number of their lives it can destroy. The rest of the populace simply follows the trends of the day with many too scared to have their names associated with groups against which popular culture directs its hostility.

The future prospect of the men's movement raising enough money to exercise some influence in America is unlikely. But there is one remaining source of power in which men still have a near monopoly—firearms. At some point, the men in this country will take the Declaration of Independence literally:

“[W]hen a long train of abuses and usurpations, pursuing invariably the same object evinces a design to reduce them under absolute despotism, it is their right, it is their duty, to throw off such Government, and to provide new guards for their future security.”

## CONCEPTUAL FOUNDATIONS

1. Finance and Trade: Since the end of World War II, the dramatic increase in trade and flows of capital among nations has greatly stimulated economic growth. Led by the United States, the capitalist states established institutions and rules that created a Liberal International Economic Order based on the unfettered flow of investment and trade. Liberalism heralded that commerce was replacing power politics as the foundation for national security while burgeoning economic interdependence fostered cooperation benefiting all states. Realism stated that the exercise of political power by states controlled the distribution of material wealth, and that states engaged in unilateral actions to increase their economic welfare at the cost of others out of fear of losing economic rank and advantage. Neither theory alone can explain the economic order that evolved since World War II, but together, and with other models such as domestic influences and the hybrid Realist-Liberal Hegemonic doctrine, the evolution of international finance, trade and relevant non-state actors, can be accounted for.

Hegemony theory contends that a dominant state stabilizes the international economic order. The hegemon sets the rules, creates regimes, compels cooperation, preserves order and permits relative gains by other states in order to preserve stability. However, the hegemon also assures that the system benefits its economic and political interests through coercion, if necessary. (Gilpin) With the decline of a hegemon, political and economic conflict may break out among ascending powers desirous to rule the economic order. On the other hand, imbedded Liberalism may result where the regimes established by the hegemon take its place, at least in part, and the habit of cooperation and transparency established during the hegemon's rule mitigates reversion to short-term, self-interested pursuits of autarchy. (Mastanduno)

The United States assumed the hegemonic position following World War II because it produced nearly 50% of the world's gross product, possessed more gold reserves than all states combined (Cohen) and was militarily preminent. By the 1970's, however, America's control over markets, finance capital and raw materials had declined, which resulted in a degree of

finance and trade instability but not, as Realism feared, closure of the economic order leading to political conflicts. (Uriu) The different national interests of America's economic rivals, however, have led to economic tensions. (Cohen) Japan and Germany have engaged in Neomercantilist policies while the U.S. has become increasingly intolerant of the relative economic gains of its trading partners. Especially now with the end of the Cold War, America no longer feels compelled to economically sacrifice to gain political support for its power rivalry with the Soviet Union. The decline of America's economic power has not caused significant disruptions in the world's finance and trade order perhaps due to the regimes established during America's preeminence and the growth of international non-state actors such as multinational corporations, transnational banks, International Monetary Fund (IMF), World Bank and regional development banks. (Gilpin)

International Finance System: A key cause for the 1930's depression, and perhaps World War II, was the failure of industrialized states to cooperate in maintaining currency exchange stability. States tried to increase economic growth through exports by depreciating their currencies. Depreciated currency made a state's exports cheaper overseas and foreign imports at home relatively expensive. Until the Depression, states had cooperated in stabilizing exchange rates by pegging their currencies to gold. Responding to domestic pressures and beggar-thy-neighbor policies, one state after another rejected the gold standard and depreciated its currency in order to increase exports and growth at the expense of their trading partners. The failure of cooperation and pursuit of parochial self-interests plunged the international order into an economic depression.

In 1944, the Western Allies agreed to institutionalize cooperation by limiting exchange rate fluctuations to narrow ranges and financing the recovery of Europe. From a Liberal perspective, the Western Allies had learned to avoid the harm that comes from the pursuit of relative gains in a distrustful, anarchic system. With the Bretton Woods' regime, the Western Allies acted rationally in pursuit of maximizing economic utility for all through joint cooperation

made possible by similar finance and trade interests, compatible democratic political structures, a norm of cooperation during the war and, not in the least, a hegemon..

From the Realist perspective, the resurrection of Europe would provide a political and economic rival to the United States, which may explain why America failed to act immediately to help finance Europe's recovery. The IBRD and the IMF proved inadequate and America failed to act until it became apparent that its growing political rivalry with the Soviet Union would be initially waged over Europe. Perceiving that a political benefit could be gained with a viable Europe, the U.S. supplemented the IBRD with the Marshall Plan. The U.S. also increased its trade deficits in order to provide international liquidity in dollars. The trade deficit increased competition for some domestic manufacturers, but the security rationale of deterring Soviet expansion along with establishing a market for the investment of surplus capital apparently justified the cost. Under Bretton Woods and the Marshall Plan, dollars flowed to Europe and Japan enabling them to purchase capital goods from the U.S., which benefited certain segments of the American economy (Spero). The acceptance of the dollar as the international currency of payment facilitated America's Realist security policy to contain the Soviet Union by printing dollars for military aid and overseas bases. In addition, American businesses readily expanded into multinational corporations by using dollars to invest abroad. The combination of a powerful hegemon, pursuit of political self-interests, domestic influence of finance capital and an international regime of cooperation stabilized the financial order, provided funds for the recovery of Europe and Japan and dramatically increased interdependence among capitalist states.

Beginning in the late 1950's and continuing through the 1960's, America's pursuit of its international political and multinational corporations' economic interests resulted in large balance of payments deficits. Dollars flows increased dramatically for Vietnam, other military policies and private investment. The transfers of large amounts of capital increased the free worlds' monetary interdependence through the Eurodollar market and internationalization of banking and production. As U.S. deficits grew, domestic groups such as labor, agriculture and

some manufacturers called for protectionist measures to lessen foreign import competition and stimulate exports by depreciating the dollar. Since many of America's allies in its struggle against Communism held large reserves of dollars, any depreciation would further strain political relations already stretched thin by Vietnam. At the same time, MNC's overseas wanted open markets in the U.S. so they could repatriate their overseas profits and stable exchange rates to preserve the value of their investment capital.

The U.S. role as manager of the financial system was undermined by the emergence of economic and political rivals it helped to develop through trade deficits, regimes to provide contra-cyclical long-term lending and maintain currency stability and provisions of foreign aid. (Cohen) Such efforts were undertaken to contain America's political rival, the Soviet Union, benefit powerful sectors of its economy and foster democratic values threatened by totalitarianism. In addition, domestic export interests and the negative implications for free market capitalism were U.S. gold reserves to become depleted caused America to reject the gold standard in 1971. The stability of the financial order now depends on negotiations among the leading economic states and the activities of the participants in the currency and non-money asset markets. A combination of state cooperation and hegemonic pursuit of self-interest has resulted in a complex interdependent system of states, institutions, transnational banks, speculators and MNC's impacting the world's financial stability.

International Trade: The World Trade Organization (WTO) created by GATT is the key non-state actor trying to prevent trade protectionism from encumbering the liberal trade regime that arose following World War II. Consistent with the Liberal theory of trade, the WTO's purpose is to prevent states from discriminating against the exports of other states. The Liberal theory stresses comparative advantage for explaining how states behave with respect to trade. Under comparative advantage, each states specializes in the goods or services that it can produce with the greatest efficiency. The state then trades its goods and services for those efficiently produced by other states. The least amount of resources, therefore, have been used to maximize

production, and each state benefits from the lower cost of foreign goods providing there are no politically imposed trade barriers.

The post World War II history of world trade does not always show states acting cooperatively to maximize their economic utility via the unfettered trade of comparatively advantaged products. Some states engage in Neomercantilism to benefit their domestic economy at the expense of their trading partners while others intentionally create a comparative advantage in strategic industries for security reasons, technological spin-offs, the surplus from high-value sectors and profits from economies of scale and monopoly rents. (Gould) Neomercantilism involves a number of tactics by which a country increases its exports and/or reduces imports to cause a trade surplus, which benefits the domestic economy by promoting local employment and production.

The Liberal theory cannot explain why states use their political power to intervene in domestic economic affairs since Liberalism argues that the forces of the free market will leave the state better off than protectionism. Japan, however, by subsidizing strategic industries and limiting the leakage of national income by restricting imports has benefited from a multibillion dollar trade surplus with the world. (Lake) Neomercantilism, however, does account for import restrictions. States view economic power as measured in comparison to other states as an end in itself or, under Realism, as a means to military strength and autonomy. Under the rationale of national security, the U.S. imposed import quotas on oil. But Neomercantilism also includes an important domestic component. The U.S. textile industry has in the past pressured the Government into agreements with Asian states to limit exports. (Odell) Local environmental and safety standards also act as barriers to imports that fail to measure up to the requirements. Likewise, developing states may try to stimulate growth in strategic industries by protecting them from foreign imports. Liberalism argues that such industries may never become competitive at world standards but simply consume ever-increasing amounts of resources through their inefficient operations. By failing to pursue its comparative advantages, the economy becomes poorer rather than richer. Studies have shown that the pursuit of strategic



trade has failed to provide significant gains (Odell), but states still try to create comparative advantages to achieve gains relative to other states, despite the fact that free trade will yield greater economic benefits for all. In effect, the state has defined self-sufficiency and export market share in some products as important for security reasons. (Mastanduno).

The liberal trading regime following World War II resulted not only from the free market force of comparative advantage but the hegemonic role played by the U.S. By the 1970's, the U.S. role was declining, but major industrialized nations found themselves locked in a web of trade interdependence, each applying variations of free trade and Neomercantilism precepts to their activities. Interdependence, the norm of at least partial cooperation, the threat of a collapse in world trade and the promise of additional growth spurred many states to finalize the GATT regime in 1994. This key non-state actor continues the reduction in trade barriers consistent with the Liberal comparative advantage view.

Liberal and Neomercantile concerns in one sense made the GATT inevitable. As national corporations expanded overseas, commerce grew beyond the territorial boundaries of governmental control. Neomercantilism's efforts to promote local industries at the expense of foreign ended up, to an extent, harming local industries that had expanded overseas and were trying to sell foreign produced products at home. Many powerful local corporations had evolved into MNC's and used their influence with governments to promote open trading borders through GATT.

While the passage of GATT appears to confirm the ascendancy of the Liberal theory, Neomercantilism may soon be used by regional trading blocks. North and South America, the European Union and a trading block in Asia may impair the benefits of comparative advantage by promoting trade barriers among each other but free trade within each group. The states in each region appear to be acting out of the Realists' concern over national power and status while engaging in Liberal cooperation to offset any relative losses by being left out of a trading block. This new economic structure will create constraints and opportunities that shape trade strategies (Lake), which may lead to a regional trading block "dilemma."

On the whole, the rapid growth of international economic transactions since World War II has increased interdependence and in turn cooperation among states in contrast to Realism tenets of national autonomy and zero-sum competition with other states. The pursuit, however, of self-interest, relative gains and security through economic power still explains many of the activities of states. In the economic arena, influential non-state actors have arisen, such as GATT, WTO, International Monetary Fund, transnational corporations and banks, currency speculators and regional trading blocks. Contrary to Realist views, the nation state is not the sole moving force in the international economy although perhaps still the most powerful. Furthermore, states must take into account domestic interest groups in developing their international economic policy. Two-level games require policy makers to consider powerful interest groups that may or may not benefit from Liberal or Neomercantile economic foreign policy. Domestic interest groups (a subset of Liberalism) can ironically cause a state to act in a Realist fashion by pursuing self-serving policies that augment its power by benefiting strategic industries at the expense of trading partners. On the other hand, with the end of the Cold War and the development of a belief in the importance of economic power, Realism's emphasis on military power as the primary end of states has declined in significance but still remains material.

Realism, Liberalism, Hegemonic power and Neomercantilism all have their usefulness and drawbacks in explaining finance and trade since World War II. Each by itself proves inadequate as a sole unifying vehicle. (Odell).

3. Share Our Wealth (Development): The persistent disparity in wealth between the North and the South led many Third World policy makers in the 1960's to adopt the Dependency theory as an explanation for their states' impoverishment. Dependency postulates that the North exploits the South through the Liberal International Economic Order (LIEO) established by the industrialized states. The South serves as a source of raw materials or cheap manufactured goods and a place for the investment of surplus capital. Integration into the LIEO of free trade and capital mobility creates a permanent state of dependency and worsening terms of trade for

the South rather than progression along the Liberal unilinear path to inevitable economic modernization. (Gilpin)

Believing that the structure of the LIEO was the cause of underdevelopment, the South tried to establish a New International Economic Order (NIEO) to change the regimes influencing the flow of goods, services, capital and technology. Stirred by the initial success of OPEC and a belief in the power of commodity cartels, the NIEO regime expanded and escalated their demands on the North to share the wealth. The South tried to increase control over their natural resources, improve the terms of trade, create a code of conduct for MNC's, increase the availability of Northern technology at reduced costs, acquire greater access and preferential treatment for their exports to the North and gain control of the IMF, World Bank, UN and other international institutions. (Gilpin) The commodity cartels, however, failed to remain united because some states pursued relative gains by cheating. In addition, the North chose to reduce its interdependence with the South by decreasing its consumption of imported raw materials.

While the failure of cooperation, in part, doomed the NIEO, the pursuit of Dependency's import substitution retarded development.(Macomber) Many Latin American states isolated themselves from the LIEO in order to stimulate manufacturing of substitutes for imported products in an effort to generate local surplus capital for domestic investment. High tariffs and appreciated currencies not only reduced imports but the incentive for local companies to produce efficiently. Restraints on exports decreased capital inflows, which required many Latin American states to obtain loans in order to raise the initial funds for investment in manufacturing. (Macomber) Dependency's import-substitution industrialization also failed because government's used strategic industries for patronage purposes (Macomber), the sharp rise in oil prices diverted foreign reserves from the export of raw materials to energy, the rise in interest rates in the North to curb inflation increased the South's debt burden and, finally, a worldwide recession reduced commodity prices.

Other Third World states, however, participated in and took advantage of the LIEO by following a combination of Liberal and Neomercantile tenets. Taiwan, South Korea, Hong Kong

and Singapore emphasized export-led industrialization. The Newly Industrialized Countries (NIC) used the Neomercantile precepts of developing comparative advantage in certain strategic industries through government subsidies and temporary protection from import competition until the industries were able to enter the world market. The NIC's engaged in reciprocity whereby subsidies were provided to certain businesses as long as they met specific performance standards. (Amsden) The NIC's concurrently followed the Liberal concept of opening up their economies to foreign direct investment. Unlike many Latin American states, the NIC's rejected the Dependency viewpoint that MNC, retard development by exporting host country profits home, stifle the growth of local technology, and threaten the state's autonomy. (Gilpin) Rather the NIC's chose the Liberal view that MNC's pay more taxes, transfer technology, pay high wages to local employees, provide management training, improve local productivity, contribute to export earnings and integrate national economies into an expanding and beneficial interdependence. (Gilpin)

Realism explains the NIC's development success as a result of the West's efforts to contain communism in Asia. The West provided the NIC's extensive foreign aid, encouraged the establishment of SEATO and ran up trade deficits to assist the growth of their economies. Domestic Asian factors, however, also played an important role: the NIC's lacked abundant natural resources, so were compelled to pursue wealth through manufacturing, they possessed a growing pool of technically educated workers that made efficient production possible (Wade); and they had a high savings rate that provide the funds for indigenous investment. (Gilpin)

The success of the NIC's export-led development has caused many other states to switch from emphasizing import-substitution to exports. GATT has significantly reduced the trade barriers previously erected in the North against the South's products. The cooperation of states in their pursuit to maximize their economic utility opened up the global marketplace, but has also created a highly competitive playing field. GATT has restructured the economic order consistent with free trade theory, but that structure may continue to impede the South's development if it fails to generate local surplus capital by successfully competing in the world's markets.

Before and after GATT, the South has suffered from unfavorable terms of trade with the North because, as Dependency postulates, the LIEO has institutionalized colonial independence. The prices for the South's exports are volatile in the short run but stagnant or fall over the long term. The prices for the North's imports, however, continually increase. Since the North possesses much of the world's realized wealth, it can determine the prices for products. Dependency argues the South will remain dependent on Northern manufactured goods because the North's reluctance to establish research and development programs in the South prevents host states from competing for the monopoly rents provided by advanced technology. (Evans) The Liberal theory counters that the quality of the Third World manufactured goods have increased and in some cases competed successfully in the global marketplace. Further, the increase in trade caused by GATT will offset part of the decline in the terms of trade.

Explaining efforts to foster a more equitable division of the wealth among nations in the context of economic and security regimes, along with state and non-state actors, requires using the theories of Liberalism, domestic influences (a subset of Liberalism), Dependency, Realism (to which Dependency is closely related) and Neomercantilism. The usefulness of each theory depends on the behavior desired to be analyzed. Once again, no one theory applies to all situations, rather the entire bag of analytical tools helps illuminate international activities, which may eventually lead to a comprehensive and integrated view of development.

4. Preventing Nuclear Proliferation: Realism contends that the state exists in an anarchical environment where it can rely only on self-help to assure its survival. The state's primary task, therefore, is to acquire political and military power in order to further its national interests with respect to other states. Relative strength matters, and cooperation among states is bound to fail because defection works at gaining an advantage. Because state survival depends on military power, cheating on a security cooperation regime in the defense area may leave an abiding state's autonomy and very existence at stake. As a result, few security regimes have developed in the defense area except for the Nuclear Nonproliferation Treaty (NPT).

Realism postulates that nuclear proliferation will increase security for all by maintaining the balance of power equilibrium. (Solingen) Yet adherence to NPT has been extensive and, therefore, unexplained by Realism, although the failure of some states to join the regime and the cheating by signatories is explainable under Realist principles. Israel, India and Pakistan are all considered defacto nuclear states, but none have signed the NPT.

Since its inception, Israel has been surrounded by belligerent states and only relatively recently have the prospects for political stability appeared viable. However, a couple of intractable opponents, Iraq and Iran, lie within short range and both states may currently be on the road to developing nuclear weapons. Israel's relatively small size in area and population leave it especially vulnerable to the coordinate attack by conventional forces or swift obliteration by a few nuclear weapons. (Solingen) To assure its physical survival, Israel has developed a second strike nuclear capability that deters both a successful conventional forces attack and any attempt at a first strike annihilation. For Israel to halt its nuclear arms program would require Iraq and Iran to do the same. The difficulty, even under the NPT, is verification. Iraq came within a couple of years of developing an atomic weapon even while being inspected by the International Atomic Energy Agency. Iran may be doing the same. Both are Realist worst-case scenarios that Israel would be irrational not to assume. An alternative would be for a power such as America to agree to defend Israel if it faced military defeat. But would potential attackers view such a threat as credible especially if they were allied with a rival nuclear power like China. It is unlikely that the U.S. would abide by a bilateral security alliance with Israel, if it meant the nuclear destruction of some of its citizens. In a world with no supranational government to punish defectors from cooperation agreements, Israel has chosen the Realist course of self-help and mutually assured destruction to deter attack.

India and Pakistan also have a history of conflict but it appears unlikely that one country could or wishes to annihilate the other due to the size of their territories and populations. Yet both have nuclear weapons in order to prevent the other from using the nuclear threat to extract concessions on territory or in other areas. Under Realism, a state's national interest includes not

just survival but autarky. India and Pakistan are pursuing a balance of power in the military field, but may join the NPT when there exists sufficient transparency to guarantee that the other state is not defecting. From the Liberal view, each country also has domestic political coalitions that have played key roles in shaping the Kashmir crisis. (Solingen)

North Korea has apparently defected from the NPT. Such defection may have resulted from domestic rather than Realist international forces. With the fall of Communism, North Korea's inward-looking, nationalist coalition lost the economic order that bolstered its failing economy. As its growth stagnates, local political pressure increases on its leader and the potential for divisions within the ruling elite rise. To distract from its domestic economic crises, North Korea may have pursued nuclear power for its prestige and patriotic accouterments.

Despite the defections and refusal by some states to join NPT, the Liberal cooperative regime has significantly reduced the spread of nuclear weapons. Most of the states that developed nuclear weapons since NPT's inception, did so before the norm against proliferation became firmly established. Probably the reason for NPT's success is the incredible destructiveness of nuclear weapons. States fight wars because the gain will exceed the cost. (Mansfield) With nuclear weapons, the likelihood is that the cost of war will be suicide. (Jervis) Domestic grassroots organizations have also played a significant role in pressuring governments to join the NPT, since it is primarily civilian populations that nuclear weapons target.

Liberalism explains that on the security issue of nuclear proliferation states have agreed to cooperate in solving a global problem in large part out of their absolute self-interest. Since Chernobyl and Three Mile Island, states realize the injurious impact that even a small nuclear war between distant countries could have by spreading radioactivity throughout the world. Given domestic concerns, relative dosages of radioactive poisoning does not appear acceptable. NPT provides a degree of transparency that prevents most states from making the worse case assumption about another states actions, thereby, avoiding a spiraling nuclear arms race. Through the IAEA, NPT lengthens the shadow of the future by exposing and potentially bringing

sanctions against violators. A state is unlikely to defect without paying a price, such as Iraq. Finally, an international norm against proliferation has developed.

In conclusion, neither Realism nor Liberalism theories can explain all the different behaviors of states with respect to nuclear proliferation, but each does expand various aspects.



**CONCEPTUAL FOUNDATIONS**  
**FINAL**

**ROY DEN HOLLANDER**  
**May 8, 1995**

## Dollars of War

Serbians cried havoc and let loosed the dogs of war in Bosnia during the 1990s, butchering between 150 thousand and 200 thousand people, mostly civilians, and raping an estimated 50,000 females, many of them children. The Serbian demonic fires of intolerance tore men from their families for summary execution and ignominious burial in mass graves while children of all ages became targets for the entertainment of Serbian sharp shooters and artillery crews.

Serbian politicians, with financial backing from their bankers, intentionally pumped the bellows of ancient wrongs to forge a searing, mindless hatred of Bosnian Muslims. In a ruthless pragmatic pursuit of individual wealth and power, Serbia's President and its chief financier unleashed the stoked hatred on millions of their former countrymen through the savage use of tanks, airplanes and artillery. The President and chief financier claimed a divine right to defend Serbian Christians by which they really meant: "Since we have the power to take the lands and steal the wealth of our Muslim neighbors, we will!"

As with most ethnic, religious and nationalistic wars, greed for wealth and power drives politicians and financiers to utterly destroy the hopes and aspirations of millions of innocent people. They embrace barbarity as their means to make it big regardless of the blood they must spill, bodies they must rip open or agony they must inflict. Although the politicians order the troops into battle, the financiers must bear much of the guilt for the slaughter and torture because without the money to buy the weapons of destruction and pay the butchers in the field, politicians could not launch wars of atrocities. And, as is often the historical case, one key financier provides most of the funding, for a profit of course.

The Serbs had their key financier who profited the most from the pain of tearing flesh, the agony of approaching doom, the screams and crying of children and the shattering of individual worlds. How was it that at the end of the Twentieth Century one relentlessly greedy person could cause such misery? Perhaps the answer lies in that person's sex. Dafina Milanovic, a broad with a fondness for large jewels, ran and eventually looted Serbia's largest bank that financed the war in Bosnia and kept the Serbian economy afloat in the face of United Nations' economic sanctions. This model of new age feminazism financed weapons smuggling operations, ethnic cleansing and the successful election in Serbia of Zeljko Raznjatovic (the fervent Serbian mobster, paramilitary leader and war criminal). Hell hath no fury as a female bent on money.

Dumb and Smarter

I am having difficulty with finding a situation in my life when my self-awareness and confidence levels permitted me to accept the constructive input of others.

Generally -- no, consistently -- my defensive reasoning drives me to attack with criticism (either overtly or covertly) the “harbinger of humiliation.” Clearly, I preserve my self-image of competency by obviously using the evasive side of the analytical strength (critical) from my style of “conserving-holding”. Many mistakes haunt my life, but in few do I admit my role, which enables learning and in almost none do I accept suggestions from others that I incorporate into my future actions. In a particular situation, I will go along with another’s suggestion just to finish the task but not to incorporate the knowledge into my range of tools. Enough negativism, there is one experience in which I learned and grew from the input of my boss.

Writing always scared me because I never had (and still do not have) the confidence of being able to do it well. When I was appointed the chief writer, essentially the only writer, of a weekend television news show in New York City, I realized I needed help. Perhaps that is why I opened up to direction from my boss, the anchorman, who read what I wrote. Furthermore, my boss never expressed strong disappointment over my errors. He knew the style of writing he wanted, communicated that style clearly with many examples and expressed his frustration with humor. More importantly he gave me praise when deserved. Over time, I ended up writing most of the show and even enjoyed playing with words within the particular TV writing style I had learned. The show won a local Emmy for writing that year.

## **Fear Corrupts**

By Roy Den Hollander

The purpose of the Feminist Movement is not equality, justice or freedom, but power—power over men.

Virtually every female lives with a never-ending fear that just about any man has the physical power to do with her as he wishes. He can beat her up, rape or kill her with his bare hands, providing no one else is present to prevent it. She does, however, have recourse to the courts, and if she is dead, the prosecutor will try to avenge her, but when a female faces a man in a situation of imminent physical violence, she's powerless.

This lack of power to protect their own beings has driven many females to an uncontrollable fury and madness that has spawned a slithering, insidious, malicious obsession to control men totally by gutting their freedom of thought and speech and relegating them to the non-human status of beasts.

Feminists, or more appropriately Feminazis, use well-proven totalitarian tricks to reach this end. They propagandize their goal as liberation of all females, but in reality they aim to warp society's institutions into a big sister that relentlessly attacks, humiliates and demoralizes men.

The Feminazis profess their aim is to raise the consciousness of men and females, but they are actually carrying out a campaign of indoctrination and social pressure by assuming the role of scolding mothers or shrews. Their true goal is to domesticate men into sheepish little boys who will blindly obey their self-righteous, hypocritical and bigoted whims.

Having tasted social power, the Feminazis will not stop until they reshape America and eventually the world into an intolerant hell complete with thought-control, inquisitions, intimidation, enslavement and, as one Feminazi priestess advocated, a reduction in the male population to 10%. Perhaps the reduced male population will be kept in protective hamlets surrounded by armed guards and barbed wire where females can safely pick out their pleasure for the night and where females' fears remain entombed.

**An Invisible Weapon**  
By Roy Den Hollander

Physical violence mainly injures the body while emotional distress sears the mind. Contemporary feminazi groups and the political-correctionalist media and politicians incessantly depict husbands and boyfriends as brutal batterers of their innocent, defenseless wives and concubines. Trendy beliefs claim that a large percentage of America's 50% divorce rate results from the genetically programmed physical violence of men against females. The media, populace and politicians, however, ignore the incapacitating genetically programmed violence of emotional distress that wives and girls batter their beaus with day after day, year after year, which ends in a divorce, early grave for the husband or lawsuit against the man.

Females intentionally or recklessly inflict emotional pain on a man with words, intonation of voice, facial demeanor and acts or patterns of behavior, often over a long period of time. For example, every time a guy leaves the refrigerator door open for more than some arbitrarily time limit set by his girl, the domineering paragon of everything correct barks, "shut the door!" Over time, opening the refrigerator can become an unpleasant task—not unlike touching a live wire. Or the reckless, maybe intentional keeping of letters from the wife's lover in a place for the husband to find them in order to shatter the world of a faithful husband, especially if her sexual escapades occurred in the year prior to the birth of a child. As the genetically evil female well knows, a nauseating doubt will plague the husband until the day he dies that his child may not be his. What redress for the pain she caused would the husband have in feminarthy America—none! In Russia, he could find some justice by slapping her around a bit, and if she called the cops, they'd help him out.

Girls have the advantage in America because physical violence is easy to prove: it leaves physical marks that a camera can record. Emotional violence, however, stalks the invisible

world of the mind, which makes it a near perfect weapon. Husbands and boyfriends can't take pictures of the pain broads intentionally and recklessly cause them. Big Sister America is using that fact to tie men's hands, so they can no longer defend themselves against their girlfriends or wives twisting the blade of emotional pain through their hearts.

When will we see advertisements paid for by taxpayer dollars giving men a number to call to get some ragging, nagging, malicious slut to shut her yap? Not until science invents a technique for measuring emotional distress. Until then, a man has no choice but to follow Mother Nature, regardless of the cost, and slap the slut across the chops to stop the barrage of emotional bullets spewing from her tongue, which, of course, has always been a girl's gun.

## Jihada Genesis

Friday, February 2, 2001, Candlemas Eve, I was having dinner with my stockbroker, who was also a friend. At present, I no longer have a stockbroker because I have no stock thanks to my crooked stockbroker who, of course, is now an enemy.

But back then, I valued her advice and was trying to decide whether to try to get the Ho, my alien criminal wife, deported or just forget about her—chalk it all up to another revolting experience involving a girl.

Previously, a friend of mine and graduate of Harvard Law School, had convinced me not to perjure myself on an affidavit to the Immigration and Naturalization Service that the Ho and I were still happily married. That would have resulted in Immigration granting her a green card and she could then become a citizen in three years. As my friend said, “If you do, she and her immigration lawyer will always have something over you.”

So at dinner, I was trying to decide whether to push Immigration to deport her—which I thought at the time was likely, but now know was stupidity thanks to the Feminazis perversion of the law—or just forget it. At the time I was auditing math and physics courses at Columbia University in an effort to work my way to a PhD. I decided to forget it and concentrate on my studies.

After going home that night, there came a loud tapping, a rapping at my apartment door. It was two overly stuffed female cops who served me with a Temporary Order of Protection. The Order, issued by the Queens Family Court without my being present or even notified of the proceeding, said that if I contacted the Ho or came within a certain distance of her, intentionally or accidentally, I would go to jail—no ifs, ands, or buts.

The Ho's immigration lawyer had told her to obtain the Order so as to pressure me into signing the false affidavit for Immigration. The Ho told the Feminazi sycophant judge that I had threatened her with a gun and a knife—both false, and that I had bruised her arm—true. The bruise resulted in my using a martial arts move to disarm her when she came at me with a steak knife. Temporary orders of protection based on female lies—are females capable of anything but—are a favorite Feminazi tactic to invoke state violence against an innocent male. Being locked up without due process is clearly violent to one's liberty and may possibly result in worse.

During the remainder of the evening while I pondered dark and weary, I resolved to have my vengeance. Not just against the Ho and her immigration lawyer but more importantly the Feminazis who made such an abuse of government power possible. I would fight them until my last dollar, my last breath, and if there is anything after death, for eternity.





## **Mafia and Marriage**

By Roy Den Hollander, 2006

The Russian Mafia, once a hierarchical structure under the Soviet Union, diffused with the end of Communist Party power into a confederation of crime groups that now includes Chechen, American, Cypriot, Mexican, and other nationalities. The smarter members, no longer confined to scheming for rubles, are now chasing hard currency by expanding their criminal operations to the wealthy West. Former F.B.I. Director Louis Freeh said, "Evidence that organized crime activity from Russia is expanding and will continue to expand to the United States is well-documented." *Emergency Net News Service*, May 3, 1996, Vol. 2-124.

Bringing Russian crime to Western shores requires an ongoing transfer of money-making assets to foreign markets where the successful utilization of those assets employs a strategy of (a) using money from criminal activities to set up and expand Russian Mafia businesses, such as prostitution, pornography, strip clubs, and drug smuggling; and (b) protecting those businesses with criminal activities, such as tampering with informants and witnesses, obstructing justice, bribery, intimidation, and murder. The Russian mafia's intertwined web of racketeering acts maintains and fosters its expansion in a drive for new targets and more money that causes widespread and varied harm.

The Russian Mafia's expansion to the West has created a vertically integrated business of supply, service, protection, profit maximization, and reinvestment with a huge appetite for human capital. Each prostitution asset in the U.S. makes a relatively small amount of \$100,000 to \$150,000 tax-free a year, but considering the large number of them in the U.S., the Russian syndicate is making substantial sums from the commissions the girls willingly pay. The largest prostitution ring in Los Angeles' history was operated by Russian criminals, a mother and daughter team, that took in \$8 million over two years.

The success of the Russian Mafia's money making operation for one of its imported human-capital assets requires the following:

Step One: Transplanting a willing member or associate from Russia to the U.S. where she starts working in one or more syndicate businesses—prostitution, stripping, pornography, or procuring. This involves the crimes of white slavery, importing an alien for immoral purposes, fraud, the misuse of visas, and eventually unlawfully acquiring citizenship. To keep the customers coming back for more from the new asset often means secretly slipping them drugs.

Step Two: Protecting the Mafia's human capital from deportation, arrest, or imprisonment, which would ruin her money-making potential. This often requires tampering with a witness or victim, threats, bribery, and even conspiracy to commit murder-for-hire.

Step Three: Money laundering and failing to file reports on transporting dollars overseas so as to avoid paying Uncle Same his due in taxes.

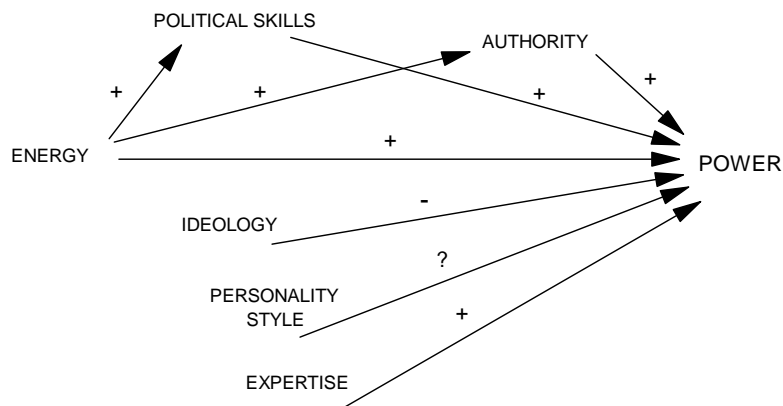
One common scheme for supplying the Russian syndicate in America with assets is tricking American men into sponsoring and financing Russian Mafia prostitutes and madams for U.S. residency and citizenship through a shame marriage. Not all Russian gangsters are gruff, 220-pound weight lifters or arrogant young MBA graduates dressed in black. Many look out on the world through blue eyes set in a pretty face framed with long blonde hair. It is those mobster molls who are especially adept at exploiting human emotions of the heart for material gain.

The website [www.been-scammed.com](http://www.been-scammed.com) tells the story of one such Mafia moll and her mobster associates, one string of events and injuries arising out of the Russian Mafia's operations of transplanting prostitutes to New York and other states, passing drugs and large sums of money back and forth between countries, and threatening as well as executing reprisals against any person or business that gets in the syndicate's way.

## To the Most Powerful Go the Victory and the Spoils

Power is the crucial attribute of the gods that men have always strove for, not to emulate the immortals, but to supplant them. Organizations are the most potent form of human enterprise, and the person who can influence an organization exercises power far beyond what he could individually.

The intent of the “Power in Organizations” project is to show the relationship between various factors and a person’s power within an organization. A variety of independent variables will define the power function. Among the hypothesized variables are AUTHORITY, CIRCUMSTANCES, CHARISMA, FEAR, POLITICAL SKILLS, SELF-CONFIDENCE, PERSONALITY STYLE determined by LIFO and Myers Briggs surveys, STAMINA, FOCUS, FLEXIBILITY tolerance for CONFLICT, ENERGY, IDEOLOGY and EXPERTISE. While many of these variables will probably not represent a significant measurement in the power function, our statistical analysis will eliminate the inappropriate variables. An example of a possible causal model is represented in the following path diagram: (A “+” indicates one variable has a positive impact on another variable: there is a direct relationship. A “-” indicates one variable has a negative impact on another variable: there is an inverse relationship and a “?” indicates an uncertainty as to the relationship.)



In the above model, the dependent variable, POWER, represents an organizational person's ability to affect organizational outcomes and is an ordinal variable coded from a low value of "hardly any" to "some" to "a fair amount" to "quite a bit" to a "great deal". Six independent variables were chosen as most relevant to explain the behavior of POWER. AUTHORITY corresponds to a person's rights or privileges to impose choices by virtue of his position within the organizational hierarchy. It is an ordinal variable coded with the same values as POWER from a low value of "hardly any" to a high value of "a great deal". As AUTHORITY increases, so does POWER. EXPERTISE is a person's critical knowledge, skill and talent to perform complex functions. As an ordinal variable, it is also coded, with the same scale as power, from a low value of "hardly any" to a high value of "a great deal". As EXPERTISE increases, so does POWER. POLITICAL SKILLS represents a person's personal resources that enable him to garner support from others. It too is an ordinal variable coded from a low value of "hardly any" to a high value of "a great deal". As POLITICAL SKILLS increase, so does POWER. IDEOLOGY corresponds to the degree of a person's identification of his individual goals with the organization's goals and is an ordinal variable coded with a low value of "little loyalty" to "a fair amount of loyalty" to a high value of "very loyal". As IDEOLOGY increases, POWER decreases. ENERGY is the effort a person invests to achieve an outcome. The variable is ordinal and coded with a low value of "lazy" to "moderately energetic" to a high value of "very energetic". The sixth variable is PERSONALITY STYLE as determined by a LIFO survey. PERSONALITY STYLE is a nominal variable and can take the following categories: Supporting & Giving, Conserving & Holding, Controlling & Taking, and Adaptive & Dealing. We do not know the exact nature of the relationship between this variable and

power, but our goal is to verify that this variable does indeed have a relationship to a person's power within an organization.

The model hypothesizes that the power of a person within an organization will increase when he

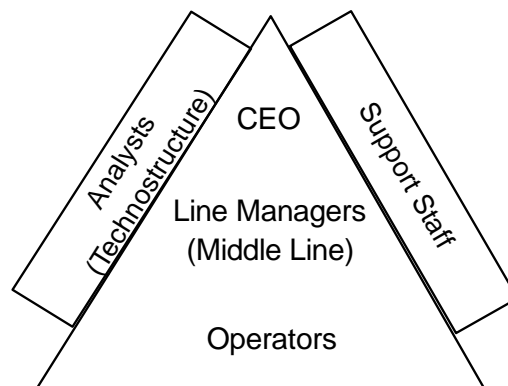
- is delegated more authority;
- expands his critical knowledge, skills and talents;
- has significant personal resources to sway others;
- does not mindlessly identify with the organization; and
- expends large amounts of energy.

The impact of personality style is not yet known.

In addition, the model predicts that certain independent variables affect other independent variables; thereby, indirectly influencing the dependent variable POWER. Two indirect effects are hypothesized. Both are predicted to have a positive influence on an organizational person's power.

1. The more energy a person possesses, the more likely he is to make the effort to ensure his orders are carried out when he exercises authority.
2. Politics is not sanctioned by formal authority. It requires a struggle to be successful so the effective politician requires large amounts of energy to exercise his personal resources such as persuasion, manipulation and charisma.

Data for each variable will be obtained from a survey of 121 individuals in a particular corporation. A corporation is considered to have five different types of people who influence the firm's outcomes. They are represented in the following diagram:



The CEO delegates formal responsibility for decision making and action taking in certain areas to line managers. These managers meet their responsibility by assuring that operators take the actions that produce the basic outputs (goods or services) of the organization. The analysts in the technostructure do not manage line operations but advise and design the formal, organizational systems of coordination such as planning and control. The support staff also does not manage line operations but provides advice on specialized decisions and runs various support functions. The CEO and thirty individuals from each of the line managers, operators, analysts, and support staff areas, who are in a position to know about power within the organization, will be questioned. The questions will pose twenty to thirty hypothetical decision situations that range from the insignificant to important. Each person will be asked to rate key persons in the organization according to the scales for our six variables.

**Data Analysis**

Since all variables are ordinal or nominal, the only appropriate statistics are order and nominal. Nominal statistics can be adopted for ordinal variables but not vice versa.

The non-parametric method of Spearman’s rank correlation coefficient can provide a measure of the direction and degree of relationship between ordinal variables by using sets of ranking. Spearman’s rank correlation applies to two variables so each independent variable can be ranked and compared with the ranked dependent variable POWER (also each ranked independent variable can be compared with another). For example:

Key Employee	Authority	Power
1	Ra1	Rp1
2	Ra2	Rp2
3	Ra3	Rp2
n	Ran	Rpn

Since there will probably be tied ranks, a computer will be used to calculate Spearman’s correlation:

$$rs = \frac{\sum (R_{ai} - R_A) (R_{pi} - R_P)}{\sqrt{\sum (R_{ai} - R_A)^2 \sum (R_{pi} - R_P)^2}}$$

Ra is the rank of each key employee on the issue of authority whereas Rp is the rank of each key employee on the issue of POWER.

$$R_A = \frac{\sum R_{ai}}{n} \quad R_P = \frac{\sum R_{pi}}{n}$$



Rs can take on values from -1 to +1. A positive correlation means that as one variable increases, so does the other. A negative correlation means that as one variable increases, the other decreases. -1 or +1 means the variable ranks have a perfect linear relationship.

Spearman's rank correlation can be used to test hypotheses about the employees in an organization: the population. If the number of employees in an organization = N and a sample of

n is taken, then there are  $N!$  possible samples which implies  $N!$

$$\frac{N!}{n!(N-n)!} = \frac{N!}{n!(N-n)!}$$

Spearman's rank correlations for any two variables. These rs comprise a sampling, which is normally distributed if  $n > 10$ , has a standard error of  $1/n-1$  and Z value of  $rs \sqrt{n-1}$ . Using the sampling, the hypothesis for the population that the rank correlation for the two variables is zero (no relationship): this null hypothesis,  $H_0$ , can be tested at a particular significance, Type I error, level which will enable us to reject or not reject that there is no relationship given the degree of chance of making an error that we are comfortable with. Other methods of analysis will also be used. For the nominal variable PERSONALITY STYLE, we will use the Chi Square statistic to verify our hypothesis that a person's personality style does have a relationship to that person's power. To actually carry out this test, we will start with the hypothesis that POWER is independent of PERSONALITY STYLE, and test whether the particular Chi Square statistic distribution rejects or fails to reject the independence hypothesis given a Type I level of error that we are comfortable with.

And when this is all over, we will sponsor you to an evening at the "Night Flight" on Gorky Street.

Salil Banerjee  
Roy Den Hollander

Chennupatuy Murali  
Georgie M. Seitz

# **RUSSIAN v. U.S. ACCOUNTING POLICIES**

Roy Den Hollander, 97-IA  
Accounting B7023  
Prof. Trevor S. Harris

THIS REPORT IS BASED ON INFORMATION AVAILABLE AS OF OCTOBER 1995.

## **Red October v. Tootsie Roll**

### I. INSTITUTIONAL ENVIRONMENT

Turmoil continues in Russia. The break up of the Soviet Union in 1991 unleashed conflicting forces: those pushing for a quick transition from a centrally planned to a market economy, others pressuring for a slow transformation and some even trying to drag the country back into the totalitarian past.

Under the Communist Party, Russia was marked by arbitrary rule, a privileged bureaucracy and the black market. All property belonged to the state, which built entire cities around industrial complexes. State owned companies with credits from the Central Bank (rather than municipalities with taxes from citizens) supported the local population with apartments, utilities, schools, hospitals, transportation, food, etc. Soviet central planning created a large bureaucracy with each industry sector run by a ministry in Moscow. Centralized distribution inhibited horizontal relationships between individual firms. Companies lacked competent management because ministry bureaucrats chose CEOs willing to share the spoils of theft (sold on the black market) and meet output quotas: the measure of success in Communist Russia since a functionary's career and bonus depended on output – not profit. When truck mileage measured output, managers directed their truckers to spend the day driving in circles around Moscow. These nomenklatura managers, many still in control of companies, did not view capital goods as an investment for producing a return because the more capital goods ordered, the more successful a manager appeared. Oil companies would leave a rig standing after drilling a dry hole, then order another rig and move on to the next spot. Concentration on maximizing capital input and product output made marketing, advertising, sales price, costs and budget

constraints irrelevant. Financing under the Soviet system occurred through only a few banks that channeled credits at low interest rates from the government to industry. The government often forgave repayment and provided subsidies to prevent bankruptcy.

The legacy of Communism continues to haunt Russia today. Many managers, including those in privatized firms, do not understand that profit maximization governs production – not volume. Other managers who understand the economics of capitalism do not support it. Uralmash's CEO says 45% of his executives oppose a market economy. Nomenklatura managers, unrestrained by the disciplining influence of the former Communist Party, run up accounts receivable and payable in collusion with other firms, then divert the goods and materials to the black market for their own profit while invoicing each other's firm as if the products had been delivered.

The Soviet Union's emphasis on industrialization left Russia overly industrialized. Forty-six percent of the population works in the industrial sector as compared to 29% of the population for OECD countries. Ironically, Russia needs to de-industrialize in order to increase its living standard, while at the same time eliminating outmoded manufacturing equipment and techniques, worker apathy and the plethora of different products inefficiently produced by many firms. The World Bank estimates that most Russian companies need to cut 20 to 60% of their product lines of which many are losing the competitive battle to higher quality imports. In addition, the Soviet requirement that most of the population work made industry labor intensive, which continues today due to the lack of capital investment and advanced technology.

Although inflation continues to fall from 3000% in 1992 to 900% in 1993 to 200% in 1994, the government's continued monetization of its deficit by borrowing from the Central Bank keeps Russia a hyperinflationary country. Government T-bills pay 18% per month and the ruble continues to fall against the dollar. The deficit results from continued government

subsidies to industries such as agriculture, energy (especially coal) and the military-industrial complex. Subsidies cause artificially low prices, especially in energy, which distort the cost and price calculations of enterprises. Subsidies persist because most public officials believe the government should support production rather than provide for a stable currency or regulate markets.

Whether the mixture of change and intransigence have placed Russia's economy in a condition of stagflation, depression or growth remains unclear. Official figures show industrial output declining by 50% since 1989. (More than the American contraction in the 1930's.) But many managers underreport their income to avoid taxes. The purpose of Russian accounting methods are to provide tax information, so many companies keep the required tax books and another set for running and often times embezzling from the firm (not unlike Al Capone). Some estimate unrecorded transactions as accounting for 25% or more of the reported GDP. So the Russian economy may be better off than generally believed. A vast shadow economy increases consumer disposable wealth as a result of tax evasion. Privatization and reduced subsidies forced formerly state-owned companies to shut down many value subtracting product lines, causing a decrease in output but an increase in national income because the inputs, including subsidies, were worth more than the outputs. Even though Russia's economy may be growing, the huge cost of its universal welfare system and environmental clean-up will hinder growth in the intermediate and long term.

The recently completed privatization process gave Russia a boost toward a market economy. 16,000 medium and large sized firms and 95% of all retail shops are now privatized and produce over 62% of the GDP. But evaluating Russian privatized companies is difficult. Financial statements generally value a firm at old, highly deflated costs. Many of the privatized conglomerates continue to include in their costs activities that local governments in developed

countries normally. Firms are trying to spin-off these unprofitable operations to the municipalities. But the local governments, still run by former Communist bureaucrats, lack the ability and the financing from taxes to operate public services. Even if the population could afford and paid its taxes, many officials would embezzle the funds.

The future prospects of firms are clouded by the government's significant minority ownership in many firms and workers control of a majority or large minority of the shares. Worker shareholders often still defer to the old line managers who continue to run their firms as personal fiefdoms in contempt of new investors unless they are the banks and mutual funds run by the same bureaucrats whom company managers dealt with in the past. The "good old commie network" still exercises influence through personal contacts. The general public that purchases shares through banks, mutual funds or directly via the privatization process exerts little influence because of the absence of shareholder rights laws.

Privatization eliminated most subsidies for non-government owned firms, so many Russian companies need to find new sources of capital for restructuring (which means laying off large numbers of workers that could lead to social unrest) and modernization to increase productivity. Russians saved 33% of their GDP in 1994 but invested only 16%. The remainder either stayed within Russia in the form of hard currency (essentially kept under the mattress) or was transferred to safer places overseas -- \$60 billion went overseas in the past four years. Funds established by Western financial services companies, governments and multilateral institutions, such as the European Bank for Reconstruction and Development, have invested little due, in part, to insufficient accounting policies. Russia's statutory accounting system fails to provide meaningful numbers for investors and managers. The profit and loss account tells little about a firm's operating results while the balance sheet fails to indicate net worth. Under Russian accounting, Auto Vaz, one of Russia's largest car makers, appears to have a high market

value, but IASC conventions show it is worth next to nothing. The lack of understanding of economic concepts such as the time value of money, opportunity costs and determination of prices by a market along with the emphasis on tax reporting keep financial statements from providing insight into a company's status and operations. As a result, financial markets cannot effectively channel funds from lenders to borrowers because high information costs keep returns too low for a given risk. Other problems also plagued Russia's embryonic financial markets such as fraud, indeterminate shareholder rights, and the absence of law enforcement. Without secure rights, potential investors fear that employees and managers, who own large percentages of companies, will lessen any potential return by pursuing high wages and full employment rather than restructuring. In addition, government instability and erratic actions also threaten shareholder value by stripping a company's cash through taxes, regulations, customs duties, restrictions on layoffs and possible renationalization.

Financing intermediaries have not yet evolved as a significant source of capital. Of the 2500 commercial banks, most have no assets to speak of, no professional staff, 70% are unstable, 30% are likely to go bankrupt and organized crime controls 80% of them. Many private commercial banks were set up by government ministries or state-owned corporations for the purpose of lending money to a private firm or group of firms (rather than to any creditworthy customer) and for enriching a private company's founders with government largesse. Many commercial banks make money not through loans but by accepting ruble deposits that the banks exchange for dollars then wait for the ruble to drop in value and pay the depositor interest or principal that is less than the bank's gain on the exchange. High inflation, however, hinders savings so this source of income is tenuous. Banks, therefore, also borrow rubles from the Central Bank at negative interest rates, exchange the rubles for dollars provided by the International Monetary Fund and import Western consumer goods, which they sell for rubles that



yield a high ruble profit after repaying the Central Bank loans. Banks also engage in other complex financial manipulations with the aid of their associates in the government. Even if Russian banks concentrated on loan portfolios, inflation, thin capitalization and lack of know-how in determining credit worthiness would prevent them from making intermediate or long term investment loans. What loans the banks do make are monthly and for working capital. The quality of these short-term loans is often unknown due to Russia's deficient accounting procedures. The lack of financial intermediaries has forced Russian firms to raise capital by stripping their assets, trying to sell equity or running up their accounts payable. Intercompany debt now equals 16% of GDP.

The lack of the rule of law hinders business activities and increases investor risks. The absence of land law and property registers raises questions over who owns the land on which a company stands. As a result, firms cannot raise capital by mortgaging land. Failure to enforce antitrust laws results in price fixing and market divisions, and the failure to enforce unfair trade laws results in predatory pricing and infringement on patents, copyrights and trademarks. Kiosks throughout Moscow are filled with bootlegged movies and music and goods with counterfeit trademarks. The court system lacks capable judges and procedures for protecting commercial property. It cannot effectively enforce civil court decisions. In order to resolve contract disputes, businesses hire organized crime groups, and when collection is involved, the gang may charge up to 50% of the amount recovered. Any concerted effort by the government to fight the organized bands of criminals will likely fail because government officials are very amenable to bribes. Rather than a country ruled by law, Russia is essentially a land of RICOs (Racketeer Influenced Corrupt Organizations).

In contrast to Russia's absence of law, it does have an infrastructure more extensive than other emerging markets: a nationwide electricity grid and railroad system. But Russia also

possesses many similarities with undeveloped nations such as archaic roads. The transportation of goods requires the added cost of armed guards and takes much longer than in the civilized world. A slow and unreliable telephone system needlessly delays communication, and dangerous internal air travel coupled with vast distances deters business meetings.

Due to massive corruption, the government lacks the ability to redistribute some of the nouveau economic well-being that many of the former nomenklatura, aided by their younger offsprings, have amassed by plundering state assets. The anger of the have-nots in a once theoretically classless society grows, which may result in the election of a president opposed to a market economy. Under the 1993 constitution, a Russian president possesses more power than any other elected head of state of a large nation. A future president could introduce price controls, increase subsidies to boost output, renationalize industries and engage in war to recover parts of the former Soviet Union. Or the nouveau rich may ally with the army to form a banana republic in order to keep the have-nots under control. In any event, the environment for Red October presents tremendous risk.

### **Accounting and Tax Institutions**

All companies operating in Russia must adhere to the accounting policies issued by the Ministry of Finance and the Tax Inspectorate under the authority provided the two government agencies by the laws passed by Parliament and decrees issued by the President. The Ministry of Finance also requires financial statements to be kept in accordance with the format of the Chart of Accounts, which the Ministry designed. The Chart of Accounts has 97 accounts with subaccounts. A company can add new subaccounts on its own.

Although Russian accounting is moving from a central planning model to a market based model, accounting's main purpose is still tax reporting. Tax policy continues to substantially affect accounting rules, much more than financial reporting principles. Little difference,

therefore, exists between Russian accounting profits and taxable profits, assuming the company does not hide income. Since financial statements are geared towards the taxing authorities, Russian accounting has limited value for portraying a firm's economic activities.

Russia's extensive tax compliance system possesses numerous vagaries. The taxable entity consists only of the legal organization as defined in the Law on Enterprises and not the economic entity. Accounting rules do not permit tax consolidation, which factors out the impact of intercorporate investments that investors may find useful. Until 1987, the only legal organizations were state-owned companies, but now legal entities include joint ventures, cooperatives, open (public) and closed joint stock companies. Russian legal entities are taxed on their worldwide income with offsets for taxes paid in foreign countries, but the amount of offset is based on Russian accounting methods for determining taxable income, not the standards used by the foreign nation that collected the taxes. As a result, companies operating overseas will not enjoy any tax breaks due to different accounting policies. For example, Russian policies more severely limit deductions for expenses: the tax law prevents deducting hotel, entertainment, advertising and voluntary insurance expenses.

Russia's tax compliance system lacks many Western tax concepts, such as discounted cash flow and a clear distinction between revenue and profit, in part, because the language cannot distinguish the two. Tax rates and laws change often and with little or no notice as do the extent of existing laws applicability. One reason for tax law uncertainty is that the Government must reduce its deficit in order to receive international loans, which has led to higher tax rates and new taxes. As a result, tax planning is subject to nullification without redress unless businesses evade taxation.

Besides the Federal Government, Russia's regions (states) and localities impose their own rates on taxes the central government permits them to levy. The federal government's key

taxes are profits, value-added and personal income, but it also levies excise, road, banking, insurance, exchange, securities operations, inheritance, gift, customs, mineral extraction, stamp and other taxes. The regions' taxes apply to a business' fixed and moveable assets and water usage. Localities tax advertising, registration and the land used by a business. Respective government officials review and verify a firm's tax calculations based on its submitted financial statements. The official assesses a tax that the company must pay whether it agrees or not. The company still has recourse to win back some of its payment by appealing administratively and ultimately to the dysfunctional courts. Naturally, the system encourages false financial statements and bribing the tax official who determines the taxes owed.

The largest proportion of revenues for the federal government comes from the VAT, which applies to the value added by each entity in the processing chain as measured by the difference in purchase and sales price. The profit tax applies to all taxable income regardless of its nature, which includes capital gains, interest income, unrealized exchange rate gains, sales profits and any other gains. Most losses or expenses from transactions reduce taxable income as do certain restricted payments made to the reserve funds. When a company, however, pays wages or interest over a certain amount, that excess is not deductible. Russia has double taxation on corporate profits paid to shareholders, but the tax on dividends is withheld by the payer corporation and supposedly turned over to the government. The property tax on all assets of a company applies to intangibles and inventories and is based on the annual average value of a company's fixed assets as classified by Russian accounting.

Tax law requires monetary assets and liabilities stated in foreign currencies to be revaluated in rubles on the balance sheet date with any gain or loss included in computing taxable income. As the ruble declines, cash and account receivables will cause taxable gains whereas monetary liabilities such as account payables will provide tax deductions.

The accounting and auditing professions in Russia lack clearly defined standards and objectives. Accountants serve mainly for determining tax liability, which, along with the inadequate accounting systems, explains managers lack of appreciation for accounting as a basis for decision-making. Auditors only verify that a transaction occurred and compile lists of transactions classified according to tax requirements. Auditors need only three years work experience and a higher education somehow connected with business to obtain certification. Recent laws on auditing are vague and unintelligible. The Ministry of Finance holds sway over auditors and even determines their clients and fees. The problem with government control is that it prevents clients from shopping around, which leads to inefficiencies due to a lack of competition. A free market drives out inefficient auditors, but it also allows firms to choose favorable auditors. At present, a government commission will try to bring the auditing profession into the 20th century by developing standards, formulating methodologies and regulating auditors' activities.

## II. DIFFERENCES BETWEEN RUSSIAN AND U.S. ACCOUNTING PRACTICES

In an effort to approximate IASC standards, the Russian government continues to change its regulations almost annually. Since the demise of the Soviet Union in 1991 up to the preparation of Red October's 1994 financial statements, key accounting changes provided for

- accelerated depreciation;
- FIFO and LIFO cost flow assumptions for inventories;
- the write-off method for treating uncollectible accounts;
- amortization of intangibles over the useful life of the asset or, when the life cannot be estimated, 10 years; and
- revaluation of fixed assets to compensate for inflation.

Significant differences, however, still exist between Russian and U.S. accounting principles:

- Managerial accounting is little known in Russia, but widely used for decision-making in the U.S.
- The principle of conservatism does not exist in Russia while many American firms use reporting procedures that reduce the possibility of overstating assets, income and equity in order to avoid misleading investors and creditors.
- Russians do not use fixed and variable cost classification for cost-volume-profit analysis.
- Plant assets with a low value are classified as current assets in Russia even when their useful life exceeds one year in which case they can be depreciated 50% when put into use and 50% in the year they are disposed of, or 100% in the year when put into use.
- Accelerated depreciation in Russia applies only to equipment, machines and vehicles used for boosting output of new product lines.

- In Russia, the interest paid on bank loans that have a rate within 3% of the rate quoted by the Central Bank are deductible as expenses but amounts paid over the 3% are not. The full amount of American interest payments are deductible before taxes.
- Russian accounting allows companies to recognize revenues on an accrual or modified accrual basis. Modified accrual provides for revenue recognition when cash is received at which time expenses are also recognized. The majority of Russian companies use modified accrual because it allows them to defer the payment of profit taxes until cash is received. American businesses generally use accrual because it provides a more accurate picture of the firm's ability to create value within a period, but a pure cash basis is also used which differs from the Russian modified accrual in that expenses are recognized when paid.
- A Russian balance sheet requires a reserve fund in the equity section in the amount of at least 10% of the capital required by law to register a company. The reserve account may not correspond to the American meaning of equity since companies can allocate certain amounts of pre-tax profits to the fund.
- Russian accounting does not require reporting gains or losses from monetary assets or liabilities denominated in rubles that result from hyperinflation whereas U.S. GAAP does.
- Capital gains calculations in Russia increase the net book value of a sold, depreciated asset by an inflation index while America's low inflation rate does not require indexing.
- Russian regulations require revaluing monetary accounts that record hard currency transactions. The accounts must be periodically revalued in rubles which results in ruble gains or losses. The accounts revalued are Cash on Hand (50), Foreign Currency (52), Special Bank Accounts (55), Cash Documents (56), Remittances in Transit (57), Short-

Term Financial Investments (58), Settlements with Suppliers and Contractors (60), Advances Paid (61), Settlements with Buyers and Customers (62), Advances Received (64), Property and Individual Insurance (65), Settlements with Founders (75), Debtors and Creditors (76), Settlements with Subsidiaries (78), Short-Term Bank Credits (90), Long-Term Bank Credit (92), Short-Term Loans (94) and Long-Term Loans (95).

- Russian policies allow for the capitalization of research and development costs while U.S. GAAP requires immediate expensing because future benefits are too uncertain and writing them off in the year of incursion is more conservative.
- The Ministry of Finance requires some expense and revenue accounts to be closed out at the end of each month into other accounts. Indirect Expense (repairs, maintenance, rent, electricity, etc.) and General and Administrative Expenses balances are transferred to Direct Costs (20). Selling Expenses (transportation, sales commissions, storage, advertising, etc.) are closed to Shipped Goods (45). Some revenue accounts are closed at the end of each month to Profit (80). U.S. GAAP requires that expenses and revenues be accumulated until the end of the year.



- Russian accounting does not require disclosure of the following whereas US GAAP does:
  - leaseholds and assets purchased under installment plans;
  - restrictions on the level of cash balances (possibly the result of a loan covenant);
  - terms of loans in excess of one year;
  - methods for determining retirement plan obligations;
  - transactions with related parties;
  - a related party's controlling interest;
  - associated and intercompany accounts receivable and payable;
  - contingent liabilities that are probable or reasonably estimated; and
  - any events significant to the reader even when they occur after the balance sheet date.

### III. DIFFERENT ACCOUNTING PRACTICES USED BY RED OCTOBER AND TOOTSIE ROLL

- Red October's annual report focuses the reader on changes in output while Tootsie Roll emphasizes changes in profits.
- Red October revalued its fixed assets (not the low value fixed assets) at the beginning of 1994 under a mandatory revaluation required by the Ministry of Finance because of a yearly inflation rate of over 100%. The amount of adjustment was debited to Fixed Assets (01) and credited to Additional Capital (85). Accumulated depreciation was also revalued with a credit to Depreciation (02) and a debit to Additional Capital. The net Additional Capital credit is posted to Accumulated Funds (88) but not included in taxable profit. No asset revaluation is required for Tootsie Roll.
- Red October records cost for intangibles in Uncompleted Capital Investments (08). After accumulation of all relevant costs, the amount is written off to Intangible Assets Acquisition Cost (04) and amortized in Intangible Depreciation (05). Tootsie Roll records the cost of intangibles net of accumulated amortization under Other Assets in the balance sheet. Tootsie Roll also discloses in the notes the method of amortization (straight line or accelerated) and the time period. Red October discloses neither.
- Some of Red October's accounts combine both receivables and payables under one heading such as Budget Settlements (68), which corresponds to Deferred Incomes Taxes and Income Taxes Payable for Tootsie Roll and Settlements with Founders (75), which corresponds to Dividends for Tootsie Roll.
- Red October's GAAP style income statement combines Current Expenses, Administrative Expenses and Sales of Goods Expenses into Sold Products Prime Cost,

which is Russian for COGS. Russia considers period and indirect expenses as part of COGS. Tootsie Roll distinguishes period and indirect expenses from COGS.

- Red October uses modified accrual reporting by recognizing revenue on receipt of payment whereas Tootsie Roll recognizes revenue when goods are shipped, which results in significant, unsecured accounts receivable.
- When sales are made on credit for Red October, the cost of the goods shipped is debited to the Goods Shipped (45) account with a credit to either Finished Products Inventory (40) or Goods for Sale (41). On receipt of payment, the entire sales price is credited to Sales of Goods account on the profit and loss statement and a corresponding Cash account debited. Sold Goods Production Expenses is also debited by the cost of the goods sold with a corresponding credit to Goods Shipped. The modified accrual's cash basis of sales recognition results in the postponement of both revenue and expense recognition which has the benefit of deferring the payment of the profit tax on any gain. Red October, however, tries to avoid shipping goods before payment because of the declining value of the ruble and effective inability to enforce contracts through the legal system. Tootsie Roll recognizes sales revenues when products are shipped by crediting Sales, while debiting Accounts Receivable for the full sales price, and debiting Cost of Goods Sold while crediting Finished Goods for the direct costs of the item.
- Red October's hard currency transactions that enter monetary accounts are initially recorded in rubles based on the Central Bank's exchange rate at the time of the transaction. At the end of each month, Red October must revalue its hard currency transaction in rubles according to the exchange rate at that time. Realized gains or losses, usually gains for assets and losses for liabilities since the ruble generally declines in value, are posted at the end of the year to Profit of the Year Under Review (80). Tootsie

Roll reports foreign currency exchange gains or losses in a special account in the equities section of its balance sheet.

- Tootsie Roll uses a different method of depreciating capital assets for reporting taxes than for financial results. For taxes, Tootsie Roll maximizes the present value of the reductions in tax payments by using accelerated depreciation. For financial statements, Tootsie Roll combines the conservative approach of accelerated depreciation with the straight line method. Straight line depreciation increases income and is generally not as accurate in measuring the expiration of an asset's benefits. Since Red October's accounts primarily serve the taxing authorities, it does not have a set of books with one depreciation method for taxes and another for financial statements. Russian regulation classifies each of Red October's fixed assets into a particular group with a statutorily set depreciation method and rate that could be straight line or accelerated up to double standard rates. Red October does not reveal which method is used for particular assets. Tootsie Roll has significant freedom of choice in rates for financial reporting, but under the tax reporting Accelerated Cost Recovery System, the rates are set according to an assets useful life.
- Low value assets with a useful life of more than one year are depreciated by Red October at 100% in the year when they are put into use, which leads to a mismatching of expenses and revenues. Tootsie Roll makes no such distinction.
- Except for inventory cost-flow assumptions, Tootsie Roll can use different principles for tax and financial reporting while Red October cannot.
- Red October's repairs and maintenance costs that are material and extend the life of an asset are accounted as expenses rather than an asset acquisition as with Tootsie Roll.

- Russian regulations require Red October to maintain a Reserve Fund (86) to which it allocates a restricted amount of pre-tax profit. The Reserve Fund can be used to cover losses of the reporting year by debiting the Reserve Fund and crediting Accumulation Funds (88). Tootsie Roll covers losses by debiting Retained Earnings directly.
- Red October's Accumulation Funds (88) includes subaccounts for special purpose funds required by its charter or the Ministry of Finance. A certain amount of the reported total on the Accumulation Funds line is designated for each special purpose fund, such as the fund for the development of production facilities or to provide employee benefits, and the money cannot be used for any other purpose. When a special purpose fund transaction occurs, such as bonuses or payments for sanatorium stays, Account 88 is debited with a corresponding credit to an asset account, usually cash. The Accumulated Funds account is overstated since it contains undeductible hidden expenses. Tootsie Roll's Retained Earnings were not restricted to any special uses or its assets partially committed to some unquantified, undisclosed future use other than providing future economic benefit to the firm.
- Tootsie Roll discloses future rental commitments, some operating lease specifics, the methods used to estimate the fair value of securities it holds along with their unrealized gains or losses, details about its debt instruments, its inventory cost flow method, its use of futures and options investments for mitigating price swings in raw materials and the financing for and the impact of acquisitions. Red October does not provide similar disclosures. For example, Red October acquired distributors but did not disclose the cost or who was acquired. It did not disclose the method for determining or the fair value of its Financial Long-Term Investments (06) nor the specifics of its Short-Term Loans (94).

- Red October provides a breakdown of all tax expenses and a listing of the types of shareholders (banks, individuals, etc.) with the number of shares held while Tootsie Roll does not.
- Red October does not provide for an allowance for uncollectible accounts at the time of sale but writes off a bad debt when it is considered uncollectible.
- Tootsie Roll reports the present value of postretirement health and life insurance obligations incurred during the reporting period and pension and profit sharing expenses while Red October pays the government to handle these obligations through Budget Settlements (68) and Social Insurance and Welfare Settlement (69).

IV. PRO FORMA FINANCIAL STATEMENTS  
(All dollar figures in thousands unless otherwise indicated.)

Tootsie Roll Pro Forma Income Statement

Sales: In October 1993, Tootsie Roll acquired the Cambridge Brands candy company, which accounted for part of the increase in sales in 1993 and for most of the increase in sales in 1994. In note 2, Tootsie Roll presents estimates of sales for 1992 and 1993 based on the assumption that Cambridge Brands had already been acquired. Since 1994 was the first full year of operations with Cambridge Brands, the trend in sales represented by the 1992 and 1993 estimates and the actual results for 1994 are more indicative of 1995 sales as opposed to extrapolating the actual sales figures of a pre-acquisition to a post-acquisition Tootsie Roll.

Sales changed from \$303,576 in 1992 to \$306,584 in 1993 to \$296,932 in 1994: a 1% increase followed by a 3.1% decrease. The reduction in sales is due to the decline in sales of newly introduced trend setting items to more normal levels. Since Tootsie Roll operates in a mature market and most, if not all, of the decline in trend items sales is past, a 3% increase in sales is predicted for 1995.

Cost of Goods Sold as a percentage of sales increased in 1994 due largely to higher ingredient and packaging costs. Higher packaging costs will continue for 1995 and will not be as successfully mitigated as in 1994 due to the ending of many fixed price contracts. Assuming the higher packaging costs will cause a one percent increase in COGS/Sales, then Tootsie Roll's 1995 COGS/Sales will equal a little more than 52%, which is consistent with the 51% COGS/Sales for 1994 when Cambridge Brands was fully integrated into the firm.

Marketing, selling and advertising increased a little in dollar amount as a result of the integration of Cambridge Brands, but declined as a percentage of sales from 1993 due to the higher sales level. Since the higher sales level will continue, no additional increases in staff or overhead are likely to occur and the increase in advertising and promoting the Cambridge

products is reflected in the 1994 rate; the percentage of marketing, selling and advertising to sales for 1994 should approximate 1995: 15.15%.

Distribution and warehousing increased mainly due to the products acquisition, which required increase use of refrigerated storage and transportation. Although the acquisition occurred in late 1993 (October), most of the distribution and warehouse increase for 1993 was due to new product lines. The increase was greater for 1994 because the additional expenses covered the full year. The percentage of distribution and warehousing to sales for 1995, therefore, is most accurately reflected in the 1994 percentage of 6.97%.

General and administrative expenses increased slightly as a result of some additional staff and overhead due to the acquisition, but the increase was mitigated by ongoing expense reduction programs. Assuming cost reduction programs will continue to reduce general and administrative expenses, then 1995 general and administrative expenses will likely decrease by approximately 2.65% from 1993 costs.

Amortization of intangibles increased by \$1.2 million in 1994 to \$2.706 million as a full year of straight line, 40 year useful life, amortization was taken for Cambridge Brands' goodwill in addition to other intangibles. Assume no change for 1995.

Interest income declined in 1993 and 1994 as a result of Tootsie Roll liquidating part of its short-term portfolio to help finance and pay down debt from the Cambridge Brands' acquisition and the purchase of an office and plant in Chicago in 1993. Tootsie Roll, however, continues to rebuild its financial resources, which indicates a policy to reach interest income levels similar to 1992, or nearly 1% of sales. Since all the notes (\$72 million) used to finance the Cambridge Brands' acquisition have been paid and the notes for the Chicago plant will not mature until 1996, Tootsie Roll will probably increase its securities investments in 1995 but to a



level less than the pre-acquisition amount that generated interest of about 1% of sales. Interest income in the amount of .5% of sales is assumed.

Dividend income declined in 1994 due to liquidation of part of Tootsie Roll's short-term investments to pay off the financing for its investment 1993 acquisitions. Since the firm is rebuilding its portfolio, 1995 dividend income will probably increase to somewhat less than 1992 preacquisition levels of .66% of sales. Dividend income of .6% is assumed.

Interest expense for will fall significantly from 1994 because the \$72 million in notes for the Cambridge acquisition were repaid. However, the interest expense for the 1992 industrial development bonds, 3.55% on \$20 million, and the 1993 Chicago plant notes, around 4% on \$7.5 million, will continue for a full year in 1995, equaling \$1.01 million, assuming no further debt issues.

Foreign exchange loss for 1994 resulted mainly from the devaluation of the peso. The peso has stabilized with U.S. Government assistance, so a similar devaluation appears unlikely in 1995.

Royalty income information for making a 1995 assumption is lacking in Tootsie Roll's annual report, so a mean for the past three years was used.

Miscellaneous income and expenses information for making 1995 assumptions is also lacking, so a mean of the net for the past three years was taken.

The effective income tax rate has ranged from 38 to 38.6% over the past three years; therefore, a mean of 38.3% was projected for 1995.

Cash dividends have been paid for 52 years in a row, so it is highly likely they will be paid for the 53rd year. As a percentage of sales, cash dividends grew from 1.2% in 1992 to 1.45% in 1993 to 1.54% in 1994. Assuming a continuation of this trend in order to prevent

analysts from making dire predictions that will cause the stock price to fall, cash dividends in 1995 should be around 1.65% of sales.

A stock dividend will also probably be distributed for the fourteenth year in a row. It creates the illusion of receiving something of value when it actually leaves the value of the recipient's holdings unchanged due to dilution or actually less since the firm incurs transaction costs in issuance. Stock dividend amounts fluctuated over the past three years but Tootsie Roll may try to reinstitute the increase in dividends from 1992 to 1993 with a stock dividend in 1995 set at 9.8% of sales, identical to 1993.

Retained earnings for 1995 equal retained earnings at the beginning of 1994 plus projected net earnings for 1995 minus projected cash and stock dividends for 1995. Retained earnings at end of year work out to 39.7% of sales which is consistent with the growth in retained earnings since 1992 at 36.8% and 1993 at 37.2% and, discounting the charge against retained earnings in 1994 due to the devaluation of the peso that reduced Mexican assets by \$5 million, 1994 at 38%.

Tootsie Roll Pro Forma Income Statement  
(in thousands \$)

	1994		1995
	<u>Actual</u>	<u>Assumption</u>	<u>Pro Forma</u>
Sales	\$296,932	Growth Rate=3%	\$305,840
Cost of Goods Sold	<u>155,565</u>	52% of Sales	<u>159,037</u>
Gross Margin	<u>141,367</u>		<u>146,803</u>
Operating Expenses:			
Marketing, Selling & Advertising	44,974	15.15% of Sales	46,335
Distribution & Warehousing	20,682	6.97% of Sales	21,317
General & Administrative	13,017	Growth Rate = -2.65%	12,672
Amortization of Cost over acquired net tangible assets	<u>2,706</u>	No Change	<u>2,706</u>
	<u>81,379</u>		<u>83,030</u>
Earnings from Operations	59,988		63,773
Other Income & Expenses:			
Interest Income	1,288	.5% of Sales	1,529
Interest Expense	1,649	Continuing Debt	1,010
Dividend Income	1,509	.6% of Sales	1,835
Foreign Exchange Losses	255	No Loss	0
Royalty Income	149	Three Year Mean	357
Miscellaneous (Net)	<u>107</u>	Three Year Mean	<u>213</u>
	<u>1,179</u>		<u>2,924</u>
Earnings Before Taxes	61,167		66,697
Provision for Income Taxes	<u>23,236</u>	Three Year Mean Rate of 38.3%	<u>25,545</u>
Net Earnings	37,931		41,152
Retained Earnings Beginning	<u>96,647</u>	RE at End 1994	<u>107,763</u>
Year	134,578		148,915
Less:			
Cash Dividends	4,580	1.6% of Sales	4,893
Stock Dividends	<u>22,235</u>	Three Year Mean	<u>29,390</u>
	<u>26,815</u>		<u>34,283</u>
Retained Earnings End of Year <sup>1</sup>	<u>107,763</u>		114,632

## Tootsie Roll Pro Forma Balance Sheet

There are generally four methods used for creating a pro forma balance sheet:

1. Assumes total assets turnover similar to the previous year.

$$\begin{array}{rcc} \text{Total Asset} & & \\ \text{Turnover for} & = & \text{Pro Forma Sales} \\ \text{Pro Forma Year} & & \text{Average Total Assets} \\ \\ = & \frac{\text{Pro Forma Sales}}{.5 (\text{Prior Year Total Assets} + x)} & = \text{Total Asset} \\ & & \text{Turnover for} \\ & & \text{Prior Year} \end{array}$$

Solving for x yields the firm's total assets at the end of the projected year. With total projected assets, a common size balance sheet can allocate the total to individual balance sheet accounts.

2. Uses an historical growth rate of total assets to project total assets at the end of the pro forma year. Once again, total assets are allocated to individual accounts using a common size balance sheet.

3. Applies historical asset turnovers and historical growth rates to each balance sheet item to determine projected amounts.

4. Determines which items on the balance sheet are likely to vary with sales and calculates them as a percentage of sales based on the prior year's percentages. Since assets generally vary with sales, an estimate of total assets can be obtained. Many liabilities, such as debt and stock accounts, do not vary with sales, but their projected total amount can be determined since  $\text{Assets} = \text{Liabilities} + \text{Ownership}$ . The forecasters then has to estimate the amounts for each item on the liability and equity side that does not vary with sales. This is done based on the firm's past actions and intentions for the future.

Since Tootsie Roll acquired Cambridge Brands and a plant in Chicago in 1993, the truism of the past being prologue will not hold; therefore, the use of historical trends in methods 2 and 3

will not adequately indicate the future. Method 4's sales approach requires rebalance on estimates for 1993 and 1992 that assume the Cambridge Brands acquisition had already occurred. While useful for estimating sales given the alternative of using preacquisition numbers, Method 4 appears less accurate than Method 1 for projecting the balance sheet. Method 1's reliance on just the previous year (1994) should approximate Tootsie Roll's 1995 balance sheet because 1994 was the first full year of integrate operations with Cambridge Brands and the Chicago plant, but there are still some qualifications which will be considered.

Tootsie Roll's total assets turnover for 1994 are assumed to equal its total assets turnover for 1995.

$$\begin{aligned}
 \text{Total Asset Turnover 1994}^1 &= \frac{\$296,932 \text{ Sales}}{.5 (\$303,940 + \$315,083) \text{ Average Assets}} \\
 &= .95936 \\
 \text{Total Asset Turnover 1995} &= \frac{\$305,840 \text{ Sales}}{.5 (\$315,083 + x) \text{ Average Assets}} \\
 x = \text{Total Assets End 1995} &= \$322,511
 \end{aligned}$$

Most assets and liabilities can be estimated as a percentage of total assets, but some assets, depending on the firm, can be better estimated using other accounting items. For instance, cash and shareholders equity are more dependent on net income than total assets. Tootsie Roll will use net income that is not paid out in dividends to increase retained earnings, which will then be reduced by issuance of stock dividends that increases Common Stock, Class B Common Stock and Capital in Excess Par Value. Assuming a continuation of Tootsie Roll issuing a 3% stock dividend yearly and no change in the stock prices, then by December 31, 1995, Common Stock

<sup>1</sup> For 1994 to be comparable to 1995, the charge against retained earnings due to the peso devaluation that reduced Tootsie Roll's net assets in Mexico by \$5 million is netted out because it is assumed a similar devaluation will not occur in 1995. This was done by increasing Retained Earnings and Other Assets by \$5 million each, which yielded Total Assets of \$315,083.

(par value) will increase to approximately \$5,245, Class B Common Stock (par value) to about \$2,513 and Capital Excess of Par Value to \$159,198. Another projection not based on a common size balance sheet is retained earnings, is calculated from the pro forma income statement: net income minus cash dividends minus stock dividends equals the amount added to the beginning year retained earnings. In addition, since Long Term Debt will not increase, its value remains at the 1994 amount.

As a result, while all items except Cash, Long Term Debt, Common Stock (par), Class B Stock (par) and Capital Excess are calculated as a percentage of method 1's derivation of total assets for 1995, the items that do not vary with total assets will have values that will ultimately change the amount for total assets that was projected by Method 1.

Tootsie Roll Common Size Balance Sheet - 1994  
(Based on Estimated Total Assets of \$322,511)

**Assets**

Current Assets:

Cash and Cash Equivalents	Depends on Net Income
Investments to Maturity	14.56
Accounts Receivable (Net)	7.01
Inventories:	
Finished Goods & Work-in-Progress	5.30
Raw Materials & Supplies	3.96
Prepaid Expenses	1.00
Deferred Income Taxes	.70

Property, Plant and Equipment:

Land	2.12
Buildings	8.56
Machinery & Equipment	34.73
Leasehold Improvements	.002
Less - Accumulated Depreciation & Amortization	(18.23)

Other Assets:

Excess Cost Over Net Tangible Assets	
Net of Accumulated Depreciation	31.32
Other Assets	3.77

**Liabilities & Shareholder's Equity**

Current Liabilities:

Notes Payable to Banks	0.00%
Accounts Payable	1.94
Dividends Payable	.39
Accrued Liabilities	5.41
Income Taxes Payable	.59

Noncurrent Liabilities:

Deferred Income Taxes	2.45
Post-Retirement Healthcare & Insurance	1.59
Industrial Development Bonds	Same amount for 1994 & 1995
Term Notes Payable	Same amount for 1994 & 1995
Other Long-Term Liabilities	1.00

Shareholders Equity:

Common Stock (par value)	Depends on
Class B Common Stock (par value)	Stock Dividend
Capital Excess of Par Value	Issuance
Retained Earnings	35.79
Foreign Currency Translation	(2.49)

Tootsie Roll Pro Forma Balance Sheet - 1995

**Assets**

Current Assets:

Cash and Cash Equivalents	\$39,905
Investments to Maturity	46,958
Accounts Receivable (Net)	22,608
Inventories:	
Finished Goods & Work-in-Progress	17,093
Raw Materials & Supplies	12,771
Prepaid Expenses	3,225
Deferred Income Taxes	<u>2,258</u>
Total Current Assets	144,238

Property, Plant and Equipment:

Land	6,829
Buildings	27,618
Machinery & Equipment	112,018
Leasehold Improvements	<u>6</u>
	146,471
Less - Accumulated Depreciation & Amortization	<u>58,804</u>
	87,667

Other Assets:

Excess Cost Over Net Tangible Assets	
Net of Accumulated Amortization	100,994
Other Assets	<u>12,160</u>
	<u>113,154</u>
	<u>\$345,639</u>

**Liabilities & Shareholder's Equity**

Current Liabilities:

Notes Payable to Banks	\$0
Accounts Payable	6,268
Dividends Payable	1,248
Accrued Liabilities	17,448
Income Taxes Payable	<u>1,916</u>
	26,880

Noncurrent Liabilities:

Deferred Income Taxes	7,898
Post-Retirement Healthcare & Insurance	5,111
Industrial Development Bonds	7,500
Term Notes Payable	20,000
Other Long-Term Liabilities	<u>3,226</u>
	43,735

Shareholders Equity:

Common Stock (par value)	5,245
Class B Common Stock (par value)	2,513
Capital Excess of Par Value	159,198
Retained Earnings	114,632
Foreign Currency Translation	<u>(8,017)</u>
	<u>281,588</u>
	<u>\$344,186</u> <sup>(1)</sup>

<sup>1</sup> The difference between total assets and liabilities plus equity is probably due to rounding errors and using retained earnings from the pro forma income statement rather than as a percentage of assets, which at \$115,421 would yield \$344,975 for the bottom half of the balance sheet.



Analytic Entries for Tootsie Roll Pro Forma Cash Flow Statement - 1995

1.	Cash (Net Income)	41,152	
	Retained Earnings		41,152
2.	Cash (Amortization Addback)	2,706	
	Net Intangibles		2,706
3.	Retained Earnings	4,893	
	Cash (Dividends)		4,893
4.	Accounts Receivable	521	
	Cash		521
5.	Finished Goods	389	
	Cash		389
6.	Raw Materials	307	
	Cash		307
7.	Prepaid Expenses	131	
	Cash		131
8.	Deferred Income Taxes	90	
	Cash		90
9.	Land	157	
	Cash		157
10.	I am unable to reconstruct the T account transactions for PROPERTY, PLANT and EQUIPMENT because there are no Income Statement figures for depreciation. The net cash flow for PROPERTY, PLANT and EQUIPMENT can be calculated by using beginning balance + purchases – depreciation = ending balance.		
	$143,098 + P - D = 146,471 \rightarrow P - D = 3,373$		
	= net cash flow for the PROPERTY, PLANT and EQUIPMENT account		
11.	Net Intangibles	5,032	
	Cash		5,032
12.	Other Assets	5,280	
	Cash		5,280
13.	Cash	144	
	Accounts Payable		144

14.	Cash	29	
	Dividends Payable		29
15.	Cash	402	
	Accrued Liabilities		402
16.	Cash	44	
	Income Taxes Payable		44
17.	Cash	182	
	Deferred Income Taxes		182
18.	Cash	118	
	Post-Retirement		118
19.	Cash	74	
	Other Long-Term Liabilities		74
20.	Investments to Maturity	1,097	
	Cash		1,097
21.	Foreign Currency Translation	185	
	Cash		185
22.	Retained Earnings <sup>1</sup>	29,390	
	Stock Accounts		29,390

---

<sup>1</sup> This is not a source or use of cash, but is included to show that Retained Earnings was debit as a result of the issuance of stock dividends.

Tootsie Roll T-Account Work Sheet

Investments to Maturity	
45,861	
(20) 1,097	
46,958	

Accounts Receivable	
22,087	
(4) 521	
22,608	

Finished Goods/Work-in-Progress	
16,704	
(5) 389	
17,093	

Raw Materials & Supplies	
12,464	
(6) 307	
12,771	

Prepaid Expenses	
3,094	
(7) 131	
3,225	

Deferred Income Taxes	
2,168	
(8) 90	
2,258	

Land	
6,672	
(9) 157	
6,829	

Buildings	
143,098	
(10) Purchases	Depreciation
146,471	

Net Intangibles	
98,668	
(11) 5,032	(2) 2,706
100,994	

Other Assets	
6,880	
(12) 5,280	
12,160	

<b>Accounts Payable</b>		<b>Dividends Payable</b>	
	6,124		1,219
	(13) 144		(14) 29
	6,268		1,248
<b>Accrued Liabilities</b>		<b>Income Taxes Payable</b>	
	17,046		1,872
	(15) 402		(16) 44
	17,448		1,916
<b>Deferred Income Taxes</b>		<b>Post-Retirement</b>	
	7,716		4,993
	(17) 182		(18) 118
	7,898		5,111
<b>Industrial Bonds</b>		<b>Term Notes Payable</b>	
	7,500		20,000
	7,500		20,000
<b>Other Long Term Liabilities</b>			
	3,152		
	(19) 74		
	3,226		
<b>Retained Earnings</b>		<b>Foreign Currency Translation</b>	
(3) 4,893	107,763	7,832	
(22) 29,390	(1) 41,152	(21) 185	
	114,632	8,017	

Cash			
Beginning Cash	\$16,509		
Operations			
		521	(4)
(1)	41,152	389	(5)
(2)	2,706	307	(6)
(13)	144	131	(7)
(14)	29	90	(8)
(15)	402	185	(21)
(16)	44		
(17)	182		
(18)	118		
Investing			
		157	(9)
		3,373	(10)
		5,032	(11)
		5,280	(12)
		1,097	(20)
Financing <sup>(1)</sup>			
(19)	74	4,893	(3)
<hr/>			
Source Total	44,851	Use Total	21,455
Ending Cash	39,905		
Net Change Cash	\$23,396		

<sup>(1)</sup> The stock T accounts changed due to an issuance of stock dividends rather than the sale of stocks so there was no cash inflow.

Tootsie Roll Pro Forma Cash Flow Statement - 1995

Cash Flow From Operations:

Net Earnings	\$41,152
Amortization	2,706
Accounts Payable	144
Dividends Payable	29
Accrued Liabilities	402
Income Taxes Payable	44
Deferred Income Taxes	182
Post-Retirement Benefits	118
Accounts Receivable	(521)
Finished Goods	(389)
Raw Materials	(307)
Prepaid Expenses	(131)
Deferred Income Taxes	(90)
Foreign Currency Translation	<u>(185)</u>
Net Cash From Operations	<u>43,154</u>

Cash Flow From Inventory:

Land	(157)
Net Property, Plant, Equipment	(3,373)
Net Intangibles	(5,032)
Other Assets	(5,280)
Investments to Maturity	<u>(1,097)</u>
Net Cash From Investments	<u>(14,939)</u>

Cash Flow From Financing:

Other Long Term Liabilities	74
Dividends	<u>(4,819)</u>
Net Cash From Finances	<u>(4,819)</u>

Change in Cash	23,396
Cash at Beginning of Year	16,509
Cash at End of Year	39,905

The increase in cash seems large, but Tootsie Roll is a mature and stable company that generates cash flow from operations that is more than sufficient for new plant and equipment. It uses the excess cash flow to pay off financing from earlier periods. In 1994, Tootsie Roll paid off the debt it incurred in purchasing Cambridge Brands. It appears that Tootsie Roll in 1995 will be lacking beneficial investment opportunities; therefore, it could best benefit its shareholders by purchasing back its own shares. The firm will probably not do that, however, because of management's desire to build empires and their lack of realization that a higher debt to total capital ratio can maximize the firm's value.

The Cash Flow Pro Forma T Account does not provide details on any land, buildings or machinery and equipment transactions that may have resulted in gains or losses because no such information was available in the annual report.

#### Tootsie Roll Off Balance Sheet Projections

Employee benefit plan expenses have changed from 1992 to 1994. A fair amount of the 1994, and to a lesser degree the 1993 changes, resulted from the 1993 acquisition of Cambridge Brands and the Chicago plant; therefore, the 1994 expenses to sales ratio probably best approximates the expenses for 1995:

	<u>1994</u>	<u>Expense/Sales</u>	<u>1995</u>
Defined Contribution	\$1,426	4.8%	\$1,440
Profit Sharing & Investment	\$420	.14%	\$424
Defined Benefit	\$352	.12%	\$356

#### Red October

Inflation in Russia reached 204% in 1994, down from 900% in 1993, with projected inflation of 135% for 1995. Red October's measurement of the value of non-monetary accounts in rubles really amounts to mixing mediums of exchange representing different values because

the value of the ruble in one week differs from the value in the following week. For Red October's non-monetary accounts to accurately portray their historical values requires that at the time of a transaction the ruble amount be converted to a hard currency, such as dollars, at the then existing exchange rate and when the financial statements are prepared, the hard currency balance is converted back into rubles at the exchange rate at that point in time. Otherwise, the value of non-monetary assets (Finished Goods (40)), non-monetary liabilities (Advances from Customers (64)) and equity investments will be understated, which is the case with Red October. The value of monetary accounts, however, equal the ruble amount at the time of the financial statement and can be converted to dollars based on the exchange rate weighted at that time.

The creation of pro forma financial statements requires the comparison of prior financial statement items, which means the items must be measured in units having the same approximate value. Red October's U.S. style balance sheet (p. 11) uses year ending exchange rates and its income statement (p. 13) uses mean exchange rates for each year for monetary and non-monetary accounts. Red October does not provide information on transaction exchange rates or the dates of transactions, so the actual value for non-monetary accounts needs to be estimated. Assuming non-monetary account transactions occur uniformly over the year, a mean exchange rate is used to determine values in dollars. A more refined approximation could be made if Red October disclosed its method of inventory cost flow assumption. FIFO would require an exchange rate weighted later in the year, and LIFO an exchange rate weighted earlier in the year. For 1993, the year end exchange rate: \$1 = 1247 Rb, mean: \$1 = 932 Rb<sup>1</sup>. For 1994, the year end exchange rate: \$1 = 3550 Rb, mean: \$1 = 2202 Rb.

---

<sup>1</sup> I realize that using the mean exchange rate for some balance sheet non-monetary accounts fails to account for the exchange rate for transactions that occurred prior to that particular year. For example, other assets purchased in 1992 and earlier.



Red October Balance Sheet  
(in thousands \$)

ASSETS	<u>Translation</u>	<u>1993</u>	<u>1994</u>
<u>Current Assets:</u>			
Financial Means	Monetary	\$1,287.1	\$4,502.8
(50, 51, 52, 55, 56, 57)			
[Cash & Cash Equivalents]			
Consumers' Accounts	Monetary	2,431.3	1,955.0
(62, 76)			
[Accounts Receivable]			
Other Debtors & Advanced Expenses	Monetary	92.0	176.9
(73, 78)			
[Subsidiaries, State, Employee, Other Debtor Receivables]			
Advances to Suppliers & Contractors	Non-monetary	7,022.4	13,828.4
(61)	(mean exchange rate)		
Inventories	Non-monetary	10,223.0	12,132.0
	(assumed average cost flow, so used mean exchange rate)		
Other Assets	Non-monetary	.54	11.8
	(mean exchange rate)	<u>          </u>	<u>          </u>
Total Current Assets		\$21,056.3	\$32,606.9
<u>Long Term Assets:</u>			
Long Term Investments <sup>1</sup>			
Financial Long Term Investments	Monetary	869.5	771.3
(06)			
[Stocks, Bonds, Loans]			
Capital Investments & Advances to Other Vendors	Non-monetary	2,912.0	3,526.7
(08, 61)	(mean exchange rate)		
Depreciated Cost [Net Fixed Assets]	Non-monetary	4,589.8	5,599.6
	(mean exchange rate)		
Intangible Assets	Non-monetary	.13	2.3
	(mean exchange rate)		
Total Long Term Assets		<u>8,371.4</u>	<u>9,899.9</u>
Total Assets		<u>\$29,427.7</u>	<u>\$42,506.8</u>

<sup>1</sup> Includes long-term securities, loans, advances to other vendors and initial information on procurement of fixed assets, intangible assets, land, buildings and construction costs. When these fixed assets and intangible assets are put into use, the costs are written off to Fixed Assets (01), or Intangible Assets (04). Subsequent nondeductible expenses related to fixed assets are written off to Use of Profit (81) or Directed Financing and Allocations (96).

## LIABILITIES

	<u>Translation</u>	<u>1993</u>	<u>1994</u>
<u>Current Liabilities:</u>			
Suppliers Account (60, 76) [Accounts Payable to Suppliers, Contractors & Other Creditors]	Monetary	2,849.4	1,351.0
Taxes Payable (68)	Monetary	830.0	2,868.2
Mandatory Social, Pension & Medical Insurance Payables (69)	Monetary	264.1	422.0
Bank & Other Loans (90)	Monetary	0.0	1,690.1
<u>Accrued &amp; Other Liabilities:</u>			
Wages Payable (70)	Monetary	196.9	246.0
Other Payables	Monetary	2,722.7	237.7
Other Short Term Liabilities	Monetary	<u>11.5</u>	<u>0.0</u>
Total Liabilities		<u>\$6,874.6</u>	<u>\$6,815.0<sup>2</sup></u>
Shareholders' Equity <sup>3</sup>		<u>22,553.1</u>	<u>35,691.8</u>
		<u>\$29,427.7</u>	<u>\$42,506.8</u>

<sup>2</sup> There appears to be an adding error in Red October's Balance Sheet.

<sup>3</sup> Each account in this section contains rubles from years prior to 1993 so the assumption that the rubles can be valued at the mean exchange rate for 1993 and 1994 respectively is inaccurate. Rubles from earlier years have values significantly higher than 1993 and 1994 rubles. In addition, Russian accounting requires the equity section to include a Reserve Fund account (86) into which profits before taxes are allocated, a Supplementary Capital account (87) that records fixed asset valuation, additional paid in capital and donation of fixed assets and Retained Earnings/Unrecovered Losses accounts (88) which records gains and losses, dividends and special purpose funds that are restricted to certain uses. For example, the Consumption Fund is restricted to providing employee benefits which are essentially expenses for which Red October receives no tax breaks. Red October does not provide any projections of the present value of future expenses that will transfer certain amounts in this fund into liabilities. A more informative method of accounting would be to debit the fund and create a liability in the present value amount. As a result, I have combined all these accounts into a shareholders equity account and determined the amount by Assets: Liabilities – Shareholders Equity.

Red October's U.S. GAAP style income statement translated rubles into U.S. dollars using the average yearly exchange rate, which makes sense since most revenues and expenses result from transactions recorded during the year. The transactions, of course, do not necessarily occur evenly throughout the year so the translation as a representation of actual value is only an approximation. For depreciation, however, the use of an average exchange rate is contrary to FASB No. 52 for operations in hyperinflationary countries. In 1994, Red October invested large amounts from earnings in capital improvements. Since depreciation expenses represent an allocation of cost initially recorded when Red October purchased depreciable assets, the expenses should translate at the historical exchange rate at the time of the purchase. Red October does not separately list its depreciation expenses by equipment for the year nor indicates the transactions during the year that acquired the depreciable assets; therefore, depreciation is translated at the year's mean exchange rate.

Red October Income Statement  
(in thousands \$)

	<u>1993</u>	<u>1994</u>
Sales Gross Revenue	\$76,106.0	\$116,225.0
Sold Products Prime Cost <sup>1</sup> or COGS and Period Expenses	41,920.0	69,657.0
Other Income:		
Other Sales Results <sup>2</sup>	105.0	70.0 <sup>3</sup>
Out of Sales Transaction Results <sup>2</sup>	607.0	474.0
Securities Transactions Gains <sup>4</sup>	257.0	385.6
Foreign Currency Exchanges Gains <sup>4</sup>	<u>504.6</u>	<u>1,465.8</u>
Earnings Before Taxes	<u>\$35,659.6</u>	<u>\$48,963.4</u>
VAT and Special Tax <sup>5</sup>	7,039.9	11,782.4
Excise Taxes <sup>5</sup>	75.8	0.0
Profit Tax	<u>8,394.0</u>	<u>13,250.0</u>
Net Income	<u>\$20,149.9</u>	<u>\$23,931.0</u>
Cash Dividends <sup>6</sup>	0.0	0.0
Stock Dividends <sup>7</sup>	12,266.3	1,851.6

<sup>1</sup> Russian accounting requires all costs relating to the production of goods or services be closed to COGS when a sale is recognized. This includes amounts in Direct Production Costs (20); Costs of Sub-products Manufactured by the Company (21); Costs of Supplementary Production Facilities (23); Indirect Costs (depreciation, repairs, rent, utilities, etc.) (25) that are closed to Direct Expenses (20) or Supplementary Production Facilities (23) and then to Finished Products (40); General and Administrative Costs (audit and consulting fees, management salaries and expenses, etc.) (26) that are closed to account 20 or 23; Service Sector Costs (29); Non-Capital Works (30); Completed Stages of Unfinished Projects (36); Circulation Costs (44); and Selling Expenses (transportation, commission, storage, advertising, etc.) (43). When Red October receives cash, the sale is recognized and all the above costs relating to the items sold are considered COGS. Without information on the individual accounts, GAAP product and periodic costs cannot be separated out. COGS also includes the cost of repairs that extends an assets useful life which Tootsie Roll would account for by capitalizing the cost.

<sup>2</sup> Other Sales Results or Sales of Other Assets (48) and Out of Sales Transactions Results or Sales and Other Disposals of Fixed Assets (47) are used to record the sale, disposal or writing off of fixed assets. In the Russian system, the net gain or loss from both accounts is transferred to Gains & Losses (80), but, apparently, were separated out for purposes of the U.S. GAAP Income Statement. Figures for 1993 probably overstated the gain since the net book value used to calculate sales gain is measured in older, higher value rubles.

<sup>3</sup> The U.S. Income Statement forgot to include in 1994 Other Sales Results of \$70.

<sup>4</sup> Securities Transactions and Foreign Currency Exchange results were not originally included in the Income Statement but were included in Red October's Financial Results (p. 12). I have included them in the income statement because they represent realizable gains. An interesting point in Red October's accounting is that the Profit & Loss figures in the Financial Results Statement (p. 12) do not include Securities Transactions and Foreign Currency Exchanges even though their presentation would imply that they do.

<sup>5</sup> I have relocated the Receipt Taxes account after all income items even though the taxes are determined by gross sales revenues. I have also broken down Receipt Taxes into VAT and Special Tax plus Excise Taxes using the information from the Financial Results Statement (p. 12).

<sup>6</sup> Red October was strapped for cash in 1994 which required it to issue equity. Given the lack of financial markets in 1993 and 1994 and the need for cash to modernize, I have assumed Red October did not pay any cash dividends in 1993 or 1994.

<sup>7</sup> Red October issued stock dividends for 1993: 2.24 million shares valued at 10,000 Rb per share for 22.4 Rb billion in March 1994. Assuming an exchange rate at the time of 1,826 Rb per dollar (if I remember correctly) the amount is \$12,266.3 million. I have no information of stock dividends for 1994 but assume 1,851.6 which equals the difference between Net Income and the sum of the three Funds.

Red October's Pro Forma Financial Statements

The income statement is projected using the common size income statements for 1993 and 1994.

Red October's Common Size Income Statements for 1993 & 1994

	<u>1993</u>	<u>1994</u>
Sales Gross Revenue	100.00%	100.00%
Sold Products Prime Cost (COGS & Period Expenses)	55.08	59.93
Other Income:		
Other Sales Results	.14	.06
Out of Sales Transaction Results	.80	.41
Securities Transactions Gains	.34	.33
Foreign Currency Exchanges Gains	.66	1.26
Earnings Before Taxes	46.86	42.13
VAT & Special Tax	9.25	10.14
Excise Taxes	.10	0.00
Profit Tax	11.03	11.40
Net Income	26.48	20.59
Cash Dividends	0.00	0.00
Stock Dividends	16.12	1.6

## Red October's Pro Forma Income Statement - 1995

### Assumptions:

Sales increased by 52.7% in 1994 due to increasing demand and prices since a large number of Russians have more funds available to purchase consumer goods as a result of the failure of the tax system. Consumers are using these funds to satisfy pent up desires long suppressed by an economy that concentrated on military goods. Red October met demand by beginning to create a modern market distribution system, opening its own retail stores, modernizing its plants with substantial capital investments, entering new product lines such as roasted salt nuts, building an additional plant, obtaining licenses to manufacture additional sweets and cutting back the production of unpopular products (responding to consumer wishes: an alien concept in the former Russia). It appears sales will continue to grow dramatically as Red October pursues its transition to a capitalist firm and the Russian economy moves towards a market system (a significant assumption). Earnings alone are not sufficient to fuel such growth. Red October will have to raise capital externally, by issuing more stock since other sectors of the financial markets cannot provide funds for capital investments. Red October faces competition from more efficient foreign firms, but their understandable caution in entering Russia and the somewhat different taste preferences of Russians will delay Red October's loss of market share. Weighing these factors, Red October's sales should grow by around 50% once again in 1995, financed by earnings and the issuance of equity.

Cost of goods sold and period expenses will continue their upward trend until Red October begins focusing on cost reductions by laying off unnecessary employees and eliminating dental care, kindergartens, children's vacations in the country, provisions of meals, cultural events and employee interest-free loans. In 1995, operating expenses will probably reach 64% of sales but could jump higher if state subsidized energy is reduced or eliminated, which is unlikely for the near term because many Russians would simply freeze to death in the winter.

Other income comprises gains and losses from the disposal of assets, securities and foreign currency. Given the dramatic changes that have occurred in Russia since 1991, the wild east nature of the securities markets, manipulation of ruble exchange rates and inefficient markets, any reliable trend in these accounts cannot be determined. A mean percentage over 1993 and 1994 is used for the 1995 projections.

Earnings before taxes falls another 4% in 1995 due largely to the assumed increase in costs as a percentage of sales.

Taxes in Russia can change quickly and without notice, often depending on who bribes whom with the most. Amid such uncertainty, the only feasible assumption is a mean of the two years percentages.

Net Income as a percentage of sales drops mainly due to increasing costs in 1995.

Stock dividends are assumed to be the same percentage of Net Income as in 1994.



Red October's Pro Forma Income Statement - 1995

	<u>1994</u>	<u>Assumption</u>	<u>1995</u>
Sales Gross Revenue	\$116,225	Growth Rate = 50%	\$174,337.5
Sold Products Prime Cost (COGS & Period Expenses)	69,657	64% of Sales	111,576
Other Income			
Other Sales Results	70	0.10% of Sales	174.4
Out of Sales Transaction Results	474	0.60% of Sales	1,054.7
Securities Transactions Gains	385.6	0.33% of Sales	575.3
Foreign Currency Exchange	1,465.8	0.96% of Sales	<u>1,673.6</u>
Earnings Before Taxes		38.0% of Sales	66,239.5
VAT & Special Tax	11,782.4	9.7% of Sales	16,902.0
Excise Taxes	0.0	.05	87.2
Profit Tax	<u>13,250.0</u>	11.22% of Sales	<u>19,552.0</u>
Net Income	<u>\$23,931</u>	17.04% of Sales	<u>\$29,698.4</u>
Cash Dividends	0.0	All Cash for Growth	0.0
Stock Dividends	1,851.6	7.74% of Net Income	297.8
Reserve Capital & Funds	599.2	2.5% of Net Income	742.5
Accumulation Funds	18,682.5	78% of Net Income	23,164.8
Consumption Funds	2,797.7	11.69% of Net Income	3,471.7

### Red October's Pro Forma Balance Sheet Assumptions

To determine the forecasted balance sheet, a percentage of sales approach is used for items that will vary with sales and estimations are made for other accounts.

Red October's Pro Forma Balance Sheet (1995)<sup>1</sup>

	<u>1994 Percentage of Sales</u>	<u>1994 Percentage of Assets</u>	<u>1995</u>
<b><u>ASSETS</u></b>			
Current Assets:			
Financial Means			\$15,275.0
Consumers' Account	1.7%		2,963.7
Other Debtors & Advanced Expenses	0.2		348.7
Advances to Supplies & Contractors	12.0		20,920.5
Inventories	10.4		18,131.1
Other Assets	0.01		<u>17.4</u>
Total Current Assets			49,180.6
Long-Term Assets:			
Financial Long-Term Investments	0.7		1,220.4
Capital Investments & Advances other Vendors	3.0		5,230.1
Fixed Assets Net of Depreciation	10.4		18,131.1
Intangible Assets	0.002		<u>3.5</u>
Total Long-Term Assets			<u>24,585.1</u>
Total Assets			<u>\$82,241.5</u>
<b><u>LIABILITIES</u></b>			
Current Liabilities:			
Suppliers Account	1.2		2,092.0
Taxes Payable	2.5		4,358.4
Social, Pension & Medical Insurance Payables	NA	0.99%	814.2
Bank & Other Loans	NA	3.98	3,273.2
Wages Payable	NA	0.6	493.5
Other Payables	NA	0.6	493.5
Other Short-Term Liabilities	NA	0.0	<u>0.0</u>
Total Liabilities			11,529.8
Shareholders Equity:			
Total Equity			<u>63,398.4</u>
Total Liabilities & Equity			<u>\$82,241.5</u>

<sup>1</sup>Items noted with NA means they probably do not vary with sales. Current liabilities that do not vary with sales are considered to vary directly with assets, so percentages are the same as for 1994. The account Shareholders Equity is assumed to make up the differences between Assets and Current Liabilities. Since it is unlikely that cash dividends will be paid in 1995, retained earnings in this account will increase by the Net Income amount of \$29,698.4 and be reduced by \$297.8 in stock dividends, which will increase the authorized capital and additional capital in the Shareholders' Equity account by a total of \$297.8.

Red October Pro Forma Cash Flow Statement - 1995

Cash Flows From Operations:	
Net Income	\$29,698.4
Consumers Account	(1,008.7)
Other Debtors & Advanced Expenses	(171.8)
Advances to Suppliers & Contractors	(7,092.1)
Inventories	(5,999.1)
Other Assets	(5.6)
Suppliers Accounts	741.0
Taxes Payable	1,490.0
Social, Pension & Medical Payables	212.0
Wages Payables	122.0
Other Payables	<u>131.1</u>
	<u>18,117.2</u>
Cash Flows From Investing:	
Financial Long-Term Investments	(449.1)
Capital Investments & Advances	
Other Vendors	(1,703.4)
Net Fixed Assets	(6,046.1)
Intangible Assets	<u>(1.2)</u>
	<u>(8,199.8)</u>
Cash Flows From Financing:	
Bank & Other Loans	<u>854.8</u>
Net Change in Cash	10,772.2
Cash Beginning 1995	4,502.8
Cash Ending	\$15,275.0

(Red October provided no information on Sales of Assets.)

Since Red October is growing rapidly, it probably will not keep its cash account at \$15,275 but will use most of it to reinvest in working capital and capital assets. The pro forma balance sheet then needs to be changed to reflect these investments.

Red October does not disclose key off-financial statement items; therefore, there is no information to make projections.

## V. USEFULNESS OF TOOTSIE ROLL AND RED OCTOBER'S FINANCIAL STATEMENTS TO INVESTORS AND MANAGERS

Investors want information that accurately measures a firm's profitability, debt-paying ability, risk and efficient use of assets before lending funds or purchasing a part or all of a company. Financial ratios can provide useful information to investors and indicate areas that require further investigation. Ratios, however, depend on financial statements' data, which in turn depend on the permissible accounting policies that a firm chooses from a range of accepted principles. A firm may use accounting methods that put it in a favorable light rather than those that most accurately measure the economic effects of transactions and events. The usefulness of ratios also depends on their comparability to a benchmark such as the same firm at a different time, another company or the industry as a whole. In order to compare ratios, financial statement data must be adjusted for the different accounting methods used. Firms, however, rarely disclose sufficient information about the application of particular accounting principles to permit financial statement users to assess the degree of comparability.

### Measures of Profitability

ROA measures how well a firm used its assets to generate earnings independent of how the assets were financed.

$$\text{ROA} = \frac{\text{Net Income} + \text{Interest Expense Net of Interest Income Tax Savings}}{\text{Average Total Assets}}$$

Since ROA excludes the impact of financing methods, interest expense minus the amount of tax savings interest provided, is added back to net income. Tootsie Rolls' financial statement notes provide an interest expense of \$1,649 in 1994 and a tax rate of 38%. Interest tax savings = \$626.6. The amount of interest expense net of income tax savings added back to net income equals \$1,022.4. Red October's interest expenses that do not exceed statutory limits are entered into Indirect Expenses (25) but closed out each month to Direct Expenses (20), which is

partitioned among Work-in-Progress, Finished Products or COGS accounts. Red October does not provide separate tax deductible interest expense data so interest expense net of income tax savings cannot be calculated.

Net income for both companies depends largely on sales. Tootsie Roll recognizes income when goods are shipped while Red October recognizes income with receipt of payment. Since neither Tootsie Roll nor Red October are declining companies, Red October's sales for a period will be understated when compared with Tootsie Roll because some sales that Tootsie Roll would recognize during a period would not be recognized by Red October until the following period.

Tootsie Roll uses the allowance method for accounts receivable uncollectibles while Red October uses direct write-off. The allowance method more accurately matches revenues and expenses and is less subject to manipulation, assuming there exists a prescribed manner based on history for estimating the amount of uncollectibles. Tootsie Roll provides the allowance amounts but not how they were determined, so they are open to manipulation. Red October's write-off method, however, provides room for the most manipulation. The company can arbitrarily decide when an account goes bad in order to influence net income in the direction desired. In addition, Red October's balance sheet provides little information on what an investor might expect in uncollectible receivables. As a result, both companies' reported assets may not reflect economic reality. Since both Tootsie Roll and Red October are growing, Red October's write-off method results in greater expected income and more assets as compared to Tootsie Roll's allowance method that implies smaller earnings and assets.

Red October does not state the cost flow assumption it uses for inventories, so the inventory accounting impact is unknown. Tootsie Roll uses LIFO for domestic (most of its inventory) and FIFO for foreign. In the rising price environment of the U.S., LIFO enables

Tootsie Roll to report smaller earnings (as long as it does not dip in the LIFO layers), which results in tax reductions, than if it used FIFO or average cost. LIFO also reports an asset base lower in value than the market would reflect.

Red October does not report the depreciation method used while Tootsie Roll employs both straight line and accelerated, but does not indicate the extent of each. Since Tootsie Roll's depreciable assets generally increase over time, straight line depreciation results in higher earnings and values for assets for any period while the accelerated method reduces earnings and assets. The economically appropriate method depends on the amount of the asset used in producing revenue for a particular period.

Another income and asset distortion between the two companies results from Red October expenses material and life extending repairs, which decreases income and fixed assets, as compared to Tootsie Roll which capitalizes such costs, causing increased income and fixed asset values.

Because of the above differences in accounting policies and lack of information from Tootsie Roll and Red October their ROAs are not comparable because net income, average assets, and interest expense are not comparable.

1994 ROA for Tootsie Roll equals	$\frac{\$37,931 + \$1,022.4}{.5(\$303,940 + \$310,083)}$	= .127
1994 ROA for Red October equals	$\frac{\$23,931}{.5(44,831.7 + 48,992.2)}$	= .51

Rate of Return on Common Shareholder Equity also measures a firm's performance in using its assets but factors financing into the measurement. The ratio has primary interest to investors in a firm's common stock.

$$\text{ROE} = \frac{\text{Net Income} - \text{Dividends on Preferred Stock}}{\text{Average Common Shareholder Equity}}$$

To determine earnings assignable to common shareholders, the cost of other provisions of capital such as preferred stock and loans, is netted out. Neither Tootsie Roll nor Red October have preferred stocks so the numerator consists of the net income for each. However, the same problems indicated in the ROA analysis for determining and comparing the two firms' net incomes exist. In addition, difficulty arises in comparing average common shareholders equity, which consists of average par value of common stock, capital contributed in excess of par and retained earnings for 1994 because Russian accounting includes special purpose funds with pre-tax dollars and restricted uses in the equity section.

Once again, the following ratios are not comparable:

1994 ROE for Tootsie Roll equals	$\frac{\$37,931}{.5 (14,848 + 244,105 + 193,851)}$	= .168
1994 ROE for Red October equals	$\frac{\$23,931}{.5 (4,679.9 + 21,778.9 + 15,718.4)}$	= 1.135

Tootsie Roll provides some quality of earnings information by segmenting its sales, earnings and assets by geographic market but not by product. Red October provides a more detailed segmentation of sales, but not earnings, by geographic region but no useful segment information by product. The lack of more segment information makes it difficult to analyze quality of earnings for the two companies.

### Debt Paying Ability and Risk

Risk to a lender means the uncertainty in receiving the amount due on time while to an equity investor, it equals the uncertainty incorporated in calculating an estimated rate of return. Firms face risks from economy-wide factors, industry factors and firm specific factors. Ratio analysis provides some assessment of firm specific risks by focusing on a firm's liquidity. Cash



and near-cash assets provide a firm with the resources to deal with various types of risk over different time spans.

Current Ratio provides some indication of a firm's ability to meet its short-term obligations by measuring the relationship between assets that include cash and those a firm expects to use within one year and obligations that will require cash within one year.

Tootsie Roll 1994 Current Ratio	$\frac{\$118,887}{26,261}$	= 4.53
Red October 1994 Current Ratio	$\frac{\$32,606.9}{6,815}$	= 4.78

Both ratios can mislead investors since a firm that has an insufficient level of current assets may pay down some of its current liabilities which would increase the ratio. Management can also deliberately manipulate the current ratio by maintaining an inflated level of current assets when it delays routine purchases on account until the following period. A difficulty in comparing Tootsie Roll and Red October's current ratios is that Red October did not reveal its costing of inventories. Tootsie Roll largely uses LIFO but if Red October uses FIFO or average costing then it will have a higher inventory historical cost in a rising price environment such as Russia and the U.S., which will increase its current ratio as compared to LIFO costing of inventory. Other problems are that Red October makes no allowance for uncollectibles in its accounts receivable, which inflates receivables and increases the current ratio, it fails to provide sufficient information on the write-off trend for bad debts and Other Assets provide no indication of how readily transferable into cash these resources may be. Perhaps illustrating the problem that one firm's current assets composition may enable that firm to more readily transfer its assets into cash to meet obligations than another firm.

The quick ratio mitigates inventory comparability problems because it excludes inventory. Red October, however, does not provide sufficient details on its short-term marketable securities

to calculate a quick ratio. Another problem with both the quick and current ratios is that current assets and liabilities can change dramatically over time and the amounts calculated from year end statements may fail to reflect normal conditions. For example, Tootsie Roll's Notes Payable declined from \$22,601 in 1993 to 0 in 1994, changing the current ratio from 2.2 to 4.53. In sum, the current and quick ratios do not fully account for the degree of liquidity of short-term assets, a firm's ability to replace or renew maturing short-term obligations and the likelihood that a firm could liquidate part of its short-term assets without harming its operations.

Cash flow from operations ratios provide the most accurate indication of whether a firm's activities enable it to meet its obligations as they come due. Cash flow ratios can show the relationship between the amount of cash generated by the firm's operations and its current or total liabilities. Still, such cash flow ratios are probably not comparable between Tootsie Roll and Red October given the extensive assumptions and approximations made in deriving Red October's U.S. style income statement and balance sheet from the limited information provided by Red October's financial statements.

The Debt-Equity ratio provides another measure of a firm's ability to meet its obligations but on a long-term basis.

	<u>Current and Noncurrent Liabilities</u>	
	Total Liabilities + Shareholders Equity	
Tootsie Roll 1994 Debt-Equity	<u>\$69,622</u>	= .225
	\$310,083	
Red October 1994 Debt-Equity	<u>\$6,815</u>	= .139
	\$48,992.2	

Assessing these ratios for an individual firm also requires a conclusion as to the stability of a firm's earnings and cash flows from operations because the greater the stability the more debt a firm can incur without threatening insolvency. Given the environment in which Red October

operates, a low ratio appears appropriate while Tootsie Roll's environment and firm history imply the higher ratio as acceptable. As previously indicated, however, Tootsie Roll and Red October have some different policies effecting balance sheet accounts which make the ratio comparisons suspect. For example, Red October includes advances from customers in the equity section while Tootsie Roll would include it in liabilities, probably current. Red October's Wages Payable (70) in its Liability section may include dividends paid to employee owners which would be listed in the equity section of Tootsie Roll's balance sheet.

Interest Coverage ratio partially indicates the extent to which a firm's operating profits can cover interest expenses. The numerator consists of income from operations divided by interest expense.

$$\text{Tootsie Roll 1994 Interest Coverage Ratio} = \frac{\$59,988}{\$1,649} = 36.3$$

Red October's 1994 Interest Coverage Ratio cannot be calculated because its statements provide no information on interest expenses, which are included in the COGS account. A more accurate measure of a firm's long-term liquidity risk would use cash flows from operations rather than earnings since firms pay interest with cash

#### Measures of Efficiency

Accounts receivable turnover ratio and collection period indicate the liquidity and quality of receivables and a firm's credit and collection policies; that is, how efficiently it uses receivables to stimulate sales and produce cash.

$$\text{Turnover Ratio} = \frac{\text{Sales Revenues}}{\text{Receivables End of Year}}$$

and

$$\text{Collection Period} = \frac{365 \text{ days}}{\text{Turnover Ratio}}$$

Which is the number of days the average receivables is outstanding before the firm collects cash.

$$\text{Tootsie Roll 1994 Receivables Turnover} = \frac{\$296,932}{\$22,087} = 13.44$$

$$\text{Collection Period} = \frac{365 \text{ days}}{13.44} = 27.16 \text{ days}$$

$$\text{Red October 1994 Receivables Turnover} = \frac{\$116,225}{\$1,955} = 59.45$$

$$\text{Collection Period} = \frac{365 \text{ days}}{59.45} = 6.14 \text{ days}$$

The ratios and periods for both firms lack precision and comparability. Because of Russia's hyperinflation and its legal system's inability to enforce debts, the overwhelming amount of Red October's revenues come from cash sales while Tootsie Roll receives a significantly larger proportion of revenues from credit sales. The receivables turnover ratio uses sales revenues as an estimate for credit sales. For Tootsie Roll, sales revenues include cash and credit sales but for Red October sales revenues include only cash. Tootsie Roll does not provide information for determining credit sales in 1994. Red October provides some more information in the Receivable and Payable Debt Statement (p. 16), but it does not delineate Receivable Debt due to credit sales. While sales revenues may approximate Tootsie Roll's credit sales, it will not approximate the amount of sales on credit for Red October. In addition, Red October does not account for uncollectible amounts at the time of sale which overstates the quality of its receivables. Non-comparability aside, the ratios would provide better information with respect to their own markets by using an aging of receivables to provide a more accurate indication of quality and a weighted average to provide a more accurate turnover and collection period.

Inventory Turnover Ratio tells how frequently a firm sells inventory and in turn, the time that capital is tied up in inventories.

$$\text{Inventory Turnover} = \frac{\text{COGS}}{\text{Average Inventory}}$$

$$\text{Average Time Inventory on Hand} = \frac{365 \text{ days}}{\text{Inventory Turnover}}$$

The ratios fail to take into account inventory quality, seasonal variations and are effected by cost flow assumptions.

$$\text{Tootsie Roll 1994 Inventory Turnover} = \frac{\$155,565}{\$29,231} = 5.32$$

$$\text{Average Time} = \frac{365 \text{ days}}{53.2} = 68.58 \text{ days}$$

$$\text{Red October 1994 Inventory Turnover} = \frac{\$69,657}{\$11,177.5} = 6.23$$

$$\text{Average Time} = \frac{365 \text{ days}}{6.23} = 58.59 \text{ days}$$

Since Red October incorporates period expenses into COGS, comparison cannot be made with Tootsie Roll.

Plant Asset Turnover Ratio provides a relationship between property, plant and equipment used to generate sales.

$$\text{Plant Asset Turnover} = \frac{\text{Sales}}{\text{Average Plant Assets}}$$

Caveats for interpretation include that a low rate may result from a firm preparing for growth since investment in plant assets often occur well in advance of the sales of the products generated by the investment. On the other hand, a firm with a poor near term outlook may cut back capital expenditures resulting in a high ratio.

$$\text{Tootsie Roll 1994 Plant Asset Turnover} = \frac{\$296,932}{\$86,173.5} = 3.45$$

Red October's fixed assets that are yet to be placed into use or not fully constructed reside in the Uncompiled Capital Investments account, which resolves the problem of attributing sales to plant assets not yet in operations; however, Tootsie Roll does not provide such information so to compare the ratios between the two firms would require adding the Uncompiled Capital Investments (08,61) for each year to the corresponding Fixed Assets Accounts.

$$\text{Red October 1994 Plant Asset Turnover} = \frac{\$116,225}{\$15,814.4 + 6,438.6} = 5.22$$

### Market Valuation

Both investors and managers use financial statements to assess the market value of a firm.

The three key methods of valuation consist of:

1. projecting the net cash flow a firm generates from operations and investments for a number of years into the future then determining the present value of those cash flows by using a firm's cost of capital as the discount rate;
2. multiplying a firm's current earnings times a market multiple derived from similar firms recently acquired,; and
3. determining the ratio between market value and book value of common shareholders equity for similar firms recently acquired, which varies less over time than earnings.

Tootsie Roll acquired the Cambridge Brands candy company in 1993 for \$81.3 million at which time Cambridge had sales of \$62 million. The market multiple under method two using sales instead of earnings = 1.3113.<sup>1</sup> This market multiple for Tootsie Roll provides a value in 1994 of \$389,366 and in 1995 of \$401,048. For Red October in 1994, a value of \$152,406 and

---

<sup>1</sup> I used this method because time constraints deterred my spending extended hours in the library searching for purchases of publicly-owned companies for which I could obtain shareholder equity or earnings information, and I do not have the knowledge to use method 1.

in 1995: \$228,669. The problem with this valuation method is that sales may fluctuate more than earnings, which occurred in Red October's case, and both sales and earnings generally fluctuate more than common shareholders equity. Furthermore, multiples for American companies will only grossly apply to Russian companies due to the dramatically different environments. Secret dealings and the lack of a market system also make any multiple based on a Russia transaction suspect, even if details of the transaction could be discovered.

### Manager Concerns

Managers need accounting principles that accurately depict events and transactions so as to determine the amount of assets used in a period and the amount of economic resources remaining. Firms, however, choose accounting principles for other reasons, including tax minimization that locks a firm into LIFO inventory costing, resulting in reduced earnings and assets in a rising price environment regardless of the economic reality. Tootsie Roll chose this course for its domestic operations, and assuming it avoids dipping into LIFO layers, the method will reduce reported assets and cumulative earnings. Depreciation methods can maximize earnings and assets or minimize them. Managers, whose compensation depends on reported profits, obviously prefer profit maximization over the actual economic benefits produced by the firm's assets. Firms may also choose accounting policies to provide a steady increase in earnings over time in order to reduce the perceived risk of investing in the firm's stock, which will lead to a higher stock price. By pushing purchases or sales recognition into periods in which they economically do not occur, managers can manipulate earnings for a time while straight line depreciation provides a regular periodic expense that may help avoid variability in income. Tootsie Roll uses a combination of accelerated and straight line depreciation; perhaps in an effort to smooth out its earnings. Red October's cost depreciation method is not reported.

Furthermore, its financial statements use policies established for tax reporting purposes, so even without policy manipulation, the statements have limited use for managers.

Lawsuits and governmental action in America can pose significant future costs for a firm that a manager would want to know the present value of. Both Tootsie Roll and Red October do not provide any off-statement information on potential environmental liabilities. A Red October manager, however, need not worry over environmental obligations because neither the Russian government nor the courts enforce environmental regulations. In fact, recent tests of a wide range of foods, including candies, have found unusually high levels of heavy metals and radioactive isotopes, but the government has not taken any action.

Red October's financial statements fail to provide managers with sufficient information for planning future activities or judging the performance of operations, which would enable instituting controlling operations. By incorporating period expenses into one item, COGS, Red October eliminates a basis for developing an annual budget that segregates marketing, selling, advertising, distribution, warehousing general and administrative expenses. In order to make profitable decisions, managers use incremental analysis to choose between alternative actions but to determine the benefits and costs of an action requires data on individual expenses. To avoid confusing sunk costs with variable costs also requires segregated expenses. Tootsie Roll provides more operating expense segregation, but it still combines marketing, selling and warehousing; distribution and warehousing; and general and administrative costs.

Cash is the only resource management can use to acquire economic resources and reward shareholders so in measuring the impact of a decision, incremental analysis requires a comparison of the estimated cash flows from each alternative. Red October does not provide a cash flow statement that could be used in estimating the cash flows from different actions. Furthermore, the lack of a cash flow statement and analysis of cash flows prevents Red October



from determining whether its budget planning decisions will create a cash surplus or deficit. Tootsie Roll, with the aid of its prior cash flow statements, can develop a somewhat useful tentative cash budget which will enable it to decide in which accounts it should alter the cash flows; thereby, refining its incremental analysis decisions.

After the formulation of budget plans, managers require information on the successful or unsuccessful implementation of the plans in order to evaluate managerial performance and economic performance, that is, whether certain activities produce sufficient income and cash to justify their investments. This requires a comparison of results to plan expectations and an analysis of internal or external reasons for any variance:

- The Rate of return on assets measures the success of production and marketing personnel in creating and selling goods to customers.
- Red October's financials do not provide interest expense information for a manager to calculate ROA.
- Red October's direct write-off method for uncollectibles causes greater uncertainty as compared to the allowance method used by Tootsie Roll, which is less certain than ageing receivables for determining the economic benefit of credit sales.
- Tootsie Roll's domestic LIFO cost flow assumption will report a lower amount of assets in a rising price environment and a higher amount in a falling price environment. Neither are consistent with replacement cost or net realizable value that measures economic resources.
- Tootsie Roll's depreciation methods of straight-line and accelerated may not provide a manager the actual value of an asset used up in generating revenues.

Rate of return on capital invested measures economic performance, and whether it is acceptable depends on the cost of capital plus the time frame for producing returns called for in the firm's plan. Rate of return on equity summarizes the managers decisions about operations,

investments and finances. Managers for Tootsie Roll or Red October face similar problems in interpreting ROE as with ROA because cost flow assumption and depreciation methods may yield net income skewed from economic reality. Both Tootsie Roll and Red October's equity are carried at historical cost (factoring out hyperinflation), which results in comparing net income expressed in units that differ in value from the units in which equity is expressed.

For a firm to achieve profit maximization requires knowing approximately when marginal cost equals marginal revenue. Since marginal cost equals the change in variable cost per unit of output, an understanding of which activities comprise fixed costs and variable costs and how variable costs change with output will enable a manager to pursue profit maximization. It will also allow an estimate of average cost (the sum of average variable and average fixed cost) for a particular output from which total profit can be determined. Neither Tootsie Roll, nor Red October provide sufficient information in their financial statements to firmly distinguish variable from fixed costs and the amounts of each. By comparing Tootsie Roll's operating expenses between 1992 and 1993 (in which the impact of Cambridge Brands new products was for only 2.5 months) the following expenses appear essentially fixed although the specific amounts for each are not given:

- Marketing and selling, which increased only a little even in 1994 when the acquisition was fully integrated.
- Advertising, since the increases in 1993 and 1994 were probably attributed to advertising new products rather than increasing Tootsie Roll's already extensive advertising.
- General and administrative increased slightly in 1994 due to the addition of the Cambridge Brands product line and not because of increased sales.
- Amortization costs for an intangible will not fluctuate with changing output although the intangible will probably increase output.

The following expenses appear to be variable for Tootsie Roll:

- Most COGS expenses will vary with output.
- Interest expense can vary with output when paid on loans for financing other variable costs.
- Foreign currency losses depend, in part, on sales overseas which depends on output but the losses lack predictability and do not fall within a managers recognized area of control.

Perhaps a contingent variable cost classification would suffice.

Although mixing together some costs, Tootsie Roll's statements provide some aggregate data on variable and fixed costs and total revenues, but no information on the amount of product units sold or the costs and revenues attributed to each product line. Profit maximization requires marginal cost and revenue data for each product line.

Red October provides a per ton breakdown of its different outputs but no information on the costs or revenues associated with each. In addition, it mixes period costs of which some are probably fixed with product costs that generally vary with output level making even an aggregate distinction impossible.

### Conclusion

Overall, Tootsie Roll's statements provide more clearly understandable information for investors and managers but lack sufficient economic accuracy to solely base a managerial or investment decision on. They do, however, help formulate the questions that an investor or manager need answered.

## **Some differences: males v. females**

By Roy Den Hollander, Esq.

Feminist propaganda claims that except for some mounds of flesh and “gender” organs, there’s basically no difference between guys and girls. They say females can do virtually anything men can—perhaps. But can they do the tasks evolutionarily suited for men as well as men? Not in the real world they can’t!

Think about it. Would you waste time and money watching a bunch of females trying to play basketball when you could catch a higher quality of ball played by the NBA, men in college, or an even really good high school boys team? I don’t think so. Of course, if the girls played in their tongs and halter tops, that’s different.

If you need someone to do your taxes, you’d be foolish to use a female. Studies at Vanderbilt University show that thirteen times more boys than girls score above 700 on the math part of the SAT. Why risk going to jail because some ditz got the math wrong.

Or what about investing the money for which you had to put up with so much grief to earn in an economy where over 50% of the jobs are held by females. Are you going to hand it over to some vain Feminist such as the former CEO of Hewlett Packard who spent lots of company resources and time aggrandizing herself while the stock dropped 55%?

On the other hand, when it comes to prostitution rings—invest with the madams. Los Angeles busted the largest call girl operation in its history that had raked in five to eight million in just 22 months. It was run by females: a 42 year-old Russian madam and her 22 year-old harlot daughter. Money for sex—a girl’s natural calling.

But when it comes to the work Mother Nature made men for, girls don’t cut it. So the next time some Feminist gives you that stern, serious look—like the one your mother did when trying to tell you something that made no sense—and says, “I’m a strong and independent woman,” meaning she’s as good and tough as a guy, ask her to step outside. “Excuse me!” She’ll indignantly respond in a tone meant to intimidate. Reply with “I’m challenging you to a duel. Let’s see how strong, independent, and tough you really are. You can even choose the weapons, so long as it’s not T and A or duplicity.” That’ll shut her up.

# The Need for a Constitutional Convention

by Roy den Hollander

The Congressional Deputies accuse the President of trampling the Constitution, while the President charges the Congress with thwarting the will of the people and trampling the Constitution. Neither side dares to speak the truth that their actions are driven by a lust for power. Behind the half-truths, rewritten history and insincere advocacy for democracy and market reform, each side maneuvers to acquire authoritarian power to exclusively control Russia's vast wealth.

In recent months the Deputies have tried to portray the present Constitution as a sacred democratic document of unquestionable authority - when in reality it has neither sanctity nor authority. A constitution enacted by a dictatorial and discredited political party, amended hundreds of times and filled with material contradictions has no legitimacy in a democracy. No amount of emotional appeal or glib verbiage can transform an authoritarian document into the cornerstone for a democracy.

The power of a Constitution derives from the will of the people. The theory of democracy postulates all human beings have certain *inalienable rights* and the exclusive power and authority to protect those rights. For reasons of individual security and prosperity, the people of a nation join together in a contract, called a constitution, that transfers a limited portion of

their individual power to a government of their own choosing. The government is obligated to use its delegated power to protect the peoples' rights to life, liberty and the pursuit of happiness.

In a democracy, only the will of the people can create a constitution because only they have the power and authority that can be granted to a government, thereby legitimizing that government. The Communist Party, nomenklatura and *bolshaya shyshka* cannot create a constitution because they do not have the power or right to grant a government authority over the people. Authoritarian organizations can, of course, usurp power from the people through deception, intimidation and violence and then draft any document they want and call it a constitution, but it would be a constitution in name only because it did not express the will of the people - only the will of the rulers.

The Executive branch also resorts to fallacious arguments of democratic legitimacy when it says that a nationwide election brought the President to power therefore he embodies the will of the people. The Deputies also gained office by an election held throughout the country. Although no deputy received votes from the entire countryside, voters did elect Deputies from all over Russia. Another disingenuous argument of the Executive states that since the Deputies' elections occurred under Communist rule, the Deputies lack legiti-

macy, but that argument also applies to the President who also was elected when the Communists ruled Russia. Further, the media in Russia and America often condemn the Deputies for their past Communist affiliations (this is called *redbaiting* in America), but the same media conveniently forgets to mention that the members of the Executive branch also belonged to the Communist Party and in some cases at a higher level of authority than many Deputies. Consequently, neither side has any more credibility than the other in their claims to legitimately represent the will of the Russian people.

Recent events have clearly shown that greed drives the warring political factions and not their professed desire for political freedom and prosperity for the Russian people. The Executive and Congress both consist of former nomenklatura and *bolshaya shyshka* who still believe they - not the people - own Russia and that they - not the people - have the sole right to profit from Russia's riches. Each side wants the entire mountain of gold, which is enormous even in the present depressed economy. Over one billion dollars leaves Russia every month for overseas bank accounts. Last year alone, an estimated \$17 billion of Russia's wealth disappeared overseas. With so much wealth at stake, no wonder both factions are willing to risk chaos and destruction for the chance to obtain a piece of the mountain of gold. The only

democratic solution to the present political crisis and wholesale looting of Russia is to let the Russian people - not the Executive or the Congress or the Constitutional Court - decide the form of government, the separation of powers and the type of electoral system. All the uncertainty and danger caused by the greed of pretenders to the throne and their false arguments of legitimacy can be swept aside with a constitutional convention. The will of the Russian people, uninhibited by an oppressive Communist party, can be freely expressed by electing delegates on a district basis to attend a constitutional convention. Candidates running for election to a delegate's position will have to compete for votes. The candidates whose positions on the major tenets of a new constitution most closely matches the majority of the voters will win the election. Each delegate, therefore, will carry to the convention the positions approved by the majority of voters in his district.

At the convention, the delegates will draft a constitution consistent with positions held by a majority of delegates. All the voters of Russia will then vote on whether to accept the draft constitution or have the convention draft another one. In the end, the will of the Russian people will have created a Constitution that provides them with a government of the people, by the people and for the people. ■

## Food Prices in Russia Increase 70% Since Start of Year

by Irina Goryacheva

The prices of major foodstuffs

week increased eight percent. Of 70 foodstuffs covered by this statistical survey, sales of 53 went up. The growth was especially high in

increased 13 percent in the first half of March, and six percent in the second week of March. Price growth was highest in butter,

spectively. In the Volga region, prices remained unchanged, while in northern and northeastern re-

Roy Den Hollander

### Coffin Nails

Decision If Philip Morris cigarette business was spun-off, would it provide investors with higher returns than long-term U.S. Government bonds after taking into account the additional risk.

#### Industry Chart & Date

Competitors: There are six major competitors in the global market that manufacture, distribute and sell American blend cigarettes. While all six are large operations, the industry concentrates in two firms: Philip Morris, usually with a market share of over 40%, and RJR Nabisco, with about a 30% market share.

1. American Brands (AM) sold its domestic operations, American Tobacco Co. to B.A.T.

Industries in December 1994 but retained ownership of its United Kingdom operations. Prior to the sale, AM was the fourth largest producer by market share worldwide. Brands included Lucky Strikes, Pall Mall and Tareyton.

2. B.A.T. Industries owns Brown & Williamson (BW) into which it merged the American Tobacco Co. in 1995. B.A.T. was and still is the second largest producer by market share worldwide. Brands include Kool and Kent.

3. Brooke Group, which was Liggett & Myers Tobacco, has the smallest market share and the most financial troubles. After some initial success at winning market share through discount cigarettes in the 80's and early 90's, Philip Morris retaliated with its own discount cigarettes and in 1993 a 20% price cut on its brand name cigarettes. As other producers followed suit, Brooke's market share shrunk and it is now verging on bankruptcy. Brands include Chesterfield, L&M and Lark.

4. Loews, which acquired America's oldest tobacco company, Lorillard, ranks fifth and has Newport, Kent and True among its brands.
5. Philip Morris (PM) is the largest cigarette producer in the world with 44.8% of cigarette shipments in 1994. Premium brands include Marlboro, Merit, Virginia Slims and Parliament. Discount brands: Basic and Cambridge.
6. RJR Nabisco, parent of R.J. Reynolds Tobacco, formerly the largest cigarette company but now a distant number three pushes Winston, Salem and "Joe" Camel.

**Product Segments:** The two key products and industry battlegrounds during price war are Premium and Discount cigarettes. Discounts include low price brand names and price/value cigarettes that are marketed with no frills packaging (generics) or sold under private or store brand labels. Premiums are essentially the same as Discounts but with an image attached, created by intense advertising to the tune of 8.3% of the industry's total value of input.

**Vertical Structure:** All the major cigarette producers purchase American tobacco at auction and some oriental tobacco outside the U.S. The companies clean, stem, grade and dry the tobacco and age it for three years. Large amounts of leaf tobacco are kept in inventory. The companies mix and roll the tobacco into cigarettes in large, efficiently computer-run plants. Cigarettes are primarily sold to chain stores, large retail outlets and distributors to smaller retail and other wholesale outlets, then on in to mouths of millions of addicts the world over.

Cigarette Industry Chart

Vertical Structure	Product Segments	
	Premium	Discount
Tobacco Growers		
Cigarette Producers	American Brands B.A.T. Brooke Loews	American Brands B.A.T. Brooke Loews
Numerous Distributors	P.M.	P.M.
Numerous Retailers		
Millions of Addicts		



Revenues From Cigarettes

	<u>1989</u>	<u>1990</u>	<u>1991</u>	<u>1992</u>	<u>1993</u>	<u>1994</u>
AM	4,286.35	4,796.60	4,859.82	4,950.40	4,475.52	4,419.10
B.A.T.	8,251.70	11,714.64	12,383.51	11,930.88	13,885.20	11,956.14
Brooke	231.61	479.50	529.47	480.00	210.00	114.51
Loews	1,772.74	1,895.55	2,015.76	2,190.56	2,053.02	1,916.00
P.M.	15,604.40	18,172.43	20,186.88	21,540.85	21,260.82	23,661.44
RJR	<u>7,403.12</u>	<u>8,049.82</u>	<u>8,543.73</u>	<u>8,968.38</u>	<u>8,005.12</u>	<u>7,683.00</u>
Total	37,549.92	45,108.54	48,519.17	50,061.10	49,889.70	49,750.19

		<u>Market Share(%)</u>					
		<u>1989</u>	<u>1990</u>	<u>1991</u>	<u>1992</u>	<u>1993</u>	<u>1994</u>
AM	Premium			5.8	5.3		
	Discount			10.7	10.0		
	Total	11.4	10.6	10.0	9.9	9.0	8.9
B.A.T.	Premium			7.8	7.6		
	Discount			21.2	21.9		
	Total	21.98	25.97	25.6	23.8	27.8	24.0
Brooke	Premium			1.2	1.4		
	Discount	14.4	12.5	9.9	6.9	4.7	5.4
	Total	0.62	1.06	1.1	1.0	0.4	0.23
Loews	Premium			9.6	9.9		
	Discount			0.2	0.9		
	Total	4.7	4.2	4.2	4.4	4.1	3.9
P.M.	Premium			48.0	48.8		
	Discount			29.6	27.1	29.4	26.5
	Total	41.6	40.29	41.6	43.0	42.6	47.6
RJR	Premium			27.6	27.0		
	Discount			28.4	33.2		
	Total	19.7	17.85	17.6	17.9	16.0	15.4

1) I have used revenues from all tobacco products to approximate revenues from just cigarettes. Revenues include domestic and international.

Discount Segments as % of Cigarette Market

<u>1989</u>	<u>1990</u>	<u>1991</u>	<u>1992</u>	<u>1993</u>	<u>1994</u>
	25.0		30.2	36.8	32.5

Return on Equity(%)

All of the major cigarette producers are conglomerates, which makes it difficult to attribute the exact amount of common stock equity to the cigarette portion of the business. I have assumed the percentage of common equity that generates cigarette sales equals the cigarette percentage of sales.

$$\text{ROE from Cigarettes} = \frac{\% \text{ Profits from Cigarettes} \times \text{Total Profits}}{\% \text{ Sales from Cigarettes} \times \text{Total Common Stock Equity at Beginning of Period}}$$

2) Revenue from Cigarettes table was used to calculate Total Cigarette Market Share.

	<u>Return on Equity</u>					
	<u>1989</u>	<u>1990</u>	<u>1991</u>	<u>1992</u>	<u>1993</u>	<u>1994</u>
A.M.	27.9	24.1	25.2	24.0	12.7	20.5
B.A.T.	28.0	13.0	18.8	25.1	26.0	21.1
Brooke	30.1	14.6	14.0			
Loews	81.4	54.7	57.7	58.0	63.9	67.1
P.M.	69.0	61.3	56.3	60.6	37.9	54.5
RJR	5	6	19.4	12.1	6	13.0
RJR	5	416.0	210.0	49.7	47.3	63.0

(Operating Income)

Brooke's problems since 1991 were due largely to loss of market share in the discount and brand segments as a result of price competition by the other producers to meet Brooke's efforts to undermine product differentiation with discount cigarettes. RJR's problems, however, were a

result of paying down its takeover debt. I have, therefore, also calculated RJR's return on equity using operating income figures, which is the second of figures for RJR.

4) From 1996 through 1994, Brooke has had a network deficit, therefore, a return on equity would not be meaningful.

5) Figures not available because RJR was taken private.

6) RJR suffered a deficit; therefore, return on equity was negative.

	<u>Return on Sales(%)</u>					
	<u>1989</u>	<u>1990</u>	<u>1991</u>	<u>1992</u>	<u>1993</u>	<u>1994</u>
A.M.	9.6	8.6	10.9	11.3	6.6	11.6
B.A.T.	11.9	4.8	5.0	7.5	7.1	8.2
Brooke	5.7	14.5	18.7	11.0	8	8
Loews	28.7	20.8	21.3	24.0	25.8	30.5
P.M.	13.6	13.2	14.0	15.1	9.4	11.8
RJR	NA	37.0	35.0	26.3	25.8	31.8

### Barriers to Entry

The revenues for the six major cigarette producers grew from 1989 through 1992 by 30%. 1993 and 1994 resulted in a revenue decline primarily because the industry leader, P.M., dramatically cut prices to win back market share from its brand name premium cigarettes that was lost to discount cigarettes.

7) Since RJR profits were skewed due to takeover debt payments. I have used operating income from cigarettes for RJR instead of net income.

8) Net income negative.

The discount portion of the cigarette market had grown from virtually zero in the early eighties to 41% in early 1993. Until “Marlboro Friday” on April 2, 1993, revenues had increased steadily since 1984, although demand in the U.S. continually declined. But for the price cut in 1993, revenues would have continued to increase. The overseas market, however, especially in Eastern Europe and the former Soviet Union continues to grow since the early nineties. The market shares for the individual firms since 1984, other than Brooke’s flirtation with bankruptcy, did not change significantly, even with the market share battle between premium and discount cigarettes. In addition, no new companies entered or tried to enter the industry. Rather some consolidation occurred when B.A.T. purchased American Brands U.S. operations. As such, the American blend cigarette manufacturing industry has barriers of entry.

Behind those barriers, all the companies, except Brooke, are making economic profits. Even factoring in the risk of Clinton and the Food & Drug Administration’s efforts to regulate the industry and the numerous lawsuits the risk of investing in the cigarette industry as compared to its returns still produces risk/return yields above long-term government bonds. The Republican controlled Congress will temper any federal legislation, a number of states’ laws eliminating the proof of causation in court appears unconstitutional, and, so far, no significant lawsuits have been won against the industry. While cigarettes will not be banned and the industry driven into bankruptcy by legislation, there does exist uncertainty, which is reflected in the rider.

**Types of Barriers:** The ranking of the six cigarette producers from highest to lowest sales is P.M., B.A.T., RJR, A.M., Loews and Brooke. The ranking from high to low for return on sales is Loews, RJR, P.M., A.M., B.A.T. and Brooke. Since the largest in sales do not also have the

highest return on sales, there does not appear to be an economies of scale barrier where the higher the output per period, the lower the average cost per unit.

The key although tenuous barrier to entry is product differentiation. One cigarette, like one spoon of heroin, is just as addicting and satisfying as the next. Cigarettes are essentially commodities, which compete on price and engender very little customer loyalty in any one producer's product. Cigarette producers, however, have combined an addictive commodity with a lifestyle image to win customer loyalty through extensive marketing and advertising. Marketing and advertising for premium (full-price) brands build brand awareness and add value for the customer by subtly connecting the satisfaction of a fix with the illusion of living a certain lifestyle. A consumer is not going to switch when both the relief and high are international with now they wish to be. The careful cultured image is illustrated by the names of some of RJR's marketing programs. Camel Insider, Winston Winners, Winston Select Weekends and Salem Preferred. While producers' sales forces design individual in-store programs to fit the neighborhood demographics, advertising costs the industry over \$2 billion a year.

The barrier of customer loyalty, however, is a tenuous one. At some point the price can become so high that it reduces the customer's ability to satisfy her cravings, so she seeks out quantity at a lower price. As the price on premium brands surpassed a dollar, Brooke began to increase market share through price competition by selling discount cigarettes to satisfy those customers who could not afford a sufficient number of fixes via premium brands. A new market segment resulted, which presented producers with a dilemma: then compete by introducing their own discounts or stand idly by while their premium market and profits shrank. Since some profit from discounts was better than a continuing profit decline in premiums, all the producers introduced discount cigarettes. The market share and larger profits from premium brands

declined as the discounts share of the market grew from 25% in 1990 to 41% in early 1993. Advertising and marketing costs increase the average cost from premiums but not to such an extent as to offset the increased profits from higher prices. In fact, premiums are 10 times more profitable than discounts because of the higher price that product differentiation allows the producers to charge. The growth of the discount cigarette segment undercut the barrier of customer brand loyalty and threatened to push the market somewhat towards a competitive one of commodities. If this key entry barrier were lowered, firms that otherwise would remain out might be tempted to enter, even in the face of other barriers such as government regulations. Additional entrants, even with the growth in overseas demand, would shift each firm's demand curve inward towards a tangential point its average cost curve; thereby reducing Price - Average cost; i.e. economic profits.

The industry's leader, P.M., strengthened the weaker barrier in 1993 and 1994 by using its remaining customer brand loyalty and a dramatic reduction in price for premiums so they were price competitive with discounts to regain market share from the discounts. Coupled with P.M.'s increased brand advertising and marketing, the market share for discounts fell to around 30%, and P.M. gained market share from the other producers, especially Brooke and RJR. The other producers eventually followed P.M.'s strategy in order to stem their loss of market share. But more importantly for the industry, as P.M.'s chairman said, "Brands didn't die in April of '93 (time of P.M. price cut). They were reborn." Although Brooke lost a large percentage of its share and was nearly driven into bankruptcy, the discount segment continues to pose a threat to the industry's barrier of customer brand loyalty.

Federal and state government actions and threatened actions and lawsuits ironically create another barrier behind which the industry can reap economic profits. The executive

branch of the Federal Government wants a ban on the sale of cigarettes to minors, elimination of sales through vending machines (which accounts for \$2.2 billion in revenues), stricter limits on advertising, elimination of free samples as marketing promotions, FDA regulation of cigarettes and will interfere with advertising campaigns such as RJR's effort to market a brand to black smokers. Four states and 100 cities ban smoking in public spaces and some states have passed legislation aimed at making it easier to find cigarette producers liable for the harms of smoking. Lawsuits by individuals and class actions persist. The U.S. Supreme Court ruled that federal labeling did not absolve producers from liability for conspiracy to conceal or misrepresent the effects of smoking. Florida is trying to recover \$1.4 billion in smoking related healthcare costs and 50 law firms intend to file a class action suit on behalf of every American who has ever smoked. Even though the Congress is now trying to reduce business regulations in general and all of the 800 lawsuits brought against the cigarette producers so far have failed, the stigma attached to tobacco sales and the threat of government restrictions have ensured immense profits for those few companies still in the cigarette business, as no new potential competitors are both willing and able to venture into such a troubled market.

#### Nature Competitive Rivalry

Since premium cigarettes face an inelastic demand curve, producers can increase revenues by raising prices because the percentage of decrease in output is less than the percentage increase in price. Since the early 80's prices rose an average 10% per year until 1993. With the introduction of discount cigarettes the premium demand curve shifted inward becoming less inelastic because consumers now had a choice to substitute discounts for premiums. As a result, an increase in premium prices in order to make up for lost revenues from reduced demand did

not bring insufficient greater revenue because a percentage change in price now caused a greater percentage change in output.

The growth in the discount market threatened the very foundation of economic profits in the industry: product differentiation. Extensive advertising and product promotions had enabled the producers to create a myth among consumers that cigarette brands were different. Each premium brand had an image so producers were able to act as mini-monopolists within a particular premium brand segment, which gave them the market power to restrict output and raise prices as compared to a competitive market of undifferentiated goods (which is what cigarettes really are). Product differentiation allows for lower output but at a higher price and economic profits results because the price is greater than the average cost, which remains so because of the entry barrier of customer loyalty (product differentiation). But the escalating high prices of premiums caused customers to try the lower price discounts which began breaking down the myths of differentiation and reducing economic profits as customers shifted to discounts. In a sense the cigarette market today could be classified as almost competitive in the discount segment and oligopolistic in the premium segment. P.M.'s dominance of the industry enabled it to impose discipline and play a coordinated role in price leadership. By slashing 40 cents off of its premium brands, coupled with intense advertising and promotions, P.M. won back many of its former premium customers while forcing the other producers to follow suit or lose more market share to P.M. Initially, the decline in profits cause Brooke and RJR to cut advertising and both lose share. The industry's profits fell by 43% in 1993 but rose in 1994 as demand and the price for premiums increased, unit volume grew and costs fell. Marlboro's market share increased from 22% to 30%. The increased advertising, especially by P.M. and later on by RJR, continues to increase demand for premiums, allow for price increases and



strengthen product differentiation. The discount market, however, still remains a threat at over 30% and there are indications RJR may try to regain some of the market share it lost to P.M. through further price cuts or pushing discounts.

In order to preserve economic profits and prepare for possible additional price cuts, the industry began engaging in aggressive cost cutting in late 1993. The industry however, especially P.M., has pursued increase efficiency for years. Since 1982 the input of labor in number of hours has steadily decreased while value added by manufacturing increased as a result of capital investment in efficient cigarette producing equipment.

For example, P.M. recently entered into a labor contract where employees receive stock instead of wage or benefit increases. The number of shares provided the employees will not be significant enough to cause dilution.

The mature cigarette industry may avoid market competition via further price cuts by exploiting the growing overseas market. Since the fall of the Soviet Union in 1991, the unit volume growth has been especially strong in Eastern Europe and the former Soviet Union. Worldwide markets are expected to expand, and with price increases, cigarette profits should grow. The combined overseas sales of P.M. and RJR made up 46 % of their revenues in 1991, but only 25% of their combined profit. In 1994, overseas combined sales increased to 57% of revenues and 43% of combined profits. Although operating profit margins overseas are between 50% and 75% of U.S. margins, they are rapidly rising.

Following P.M.'s retaliations against discount cigarette producers in 1993, the industry appears to be managing cooperation once again. B.A.T.'s purchase of American Tobacco from A.M. and its decision to produce mainly premium cigarettes with American Tobacco rather than

continue A.M. discounts will eliminate on other large manufacture of discounts. Brooke, the instigator and for a time leader in discounts, has only a 5.4% share of the discount market. Further, all the producers are expected to increase prices in 1995 by consistent 3% with profits growing by 10%. Chosen by “Marlboro Friday” and the discount price wars, the producers are back to pursuing economic profits by strengthening.

The wild card in the industry rivalry is government. Government regulation can affect rivalry by influencing growth and producers cost structure. Additional U.S. restrictions on advertising will hinder product differentiation and further government findings on the health effects of smoking will reduce demand and increase costs via lawsuits. ?? taxes per unit of output will shift the supply curve upward because producers will want to receive the same net price as before. The industry supply curve, which is the sum of the producers’ marginal cost curves, is probably more elastic than the industry demand curve. As a result, a tax will be shifted forward to the consumers, so consumer demand for discounts will increase causing ruinous price competition.

Eliminating sales through vending machines will increase the inconvenience and difficulty of obtaining cigarettes largely for the youth market, thereby reducing sales. In 1993, producers sold 11 million packs through vending machines. The Newtonian Congress, however, will mitigate the executive branch’s impact on cigarette producers, provided the Republicans maintain control after the 1996 elections. There are also government problems overseas. Restrictions on advertising are growing in some Asian countries and anti-smoking sentiment is on the rise in Europe, but in the lawless former Soviet Union, the addiction to cigarettes face no legal threat. Considering the length of time it took to negatively impact cigarette sales in the

U.S. (an enlightened nation), the overseas market should grow substantially over the long term customer brand loyalty, increasing efficiency and focusing on growth in the overseas market rather than fighting over existing market share in the shrinking but relatively stable U.S. market.

Buyer Power The producers will sell to a large number of retailers and wholesalers, whom include convenience stores, supermarkets, wholesale clubs, drugstores and mass merchandisers. When supermarkets and drugstores started to reduce their promotions and sales in response to the politically correct tyranny sweeping the land, convenience stores picked up the slack. In 1994, tobacco as a percent of convenience store sales reached 27.9%. Beer was second at 13.2% so the supermarket and drugstore loss became the convenience stores gain. Buys from the producers do not exert significant power because they are too numerous, unlikely to enter into production, majority of cigarettes are significantly differentiated and any individual buyer, except for RJR's McLane Co., does not purchase a significant percentage of the producers outputs.

Supplier's Power Two key suppliers are the tobacco growers and labor. Labor has very little influence on the producers. Labor is largely unskilled; therefore, there exists a large labor pool. Over the years producers have replaced laborers with technology, minimized labor costs and not all the producers are unionized.

Tobacco growers are more numerous than producers and their product is not differentiated. Growers sell the bulk of their product to the producers, which can be stored for years allowing inventories to build, so growers do not exert significant influence on producers.

Conclusion P.M. is acting to protect its market share, enhance barriers and increase efficiency. The industry has apparently stabilized after the price competition caused by discounts and the overseas market should grow significantly over the long term. The politically correct fanatics in

the White House, however, pose a significant threat to the domestic market. Their efforts may only be campaign tactics, but if not, and Clinton wins reelection, he may pursue a final solution strategy against the cigarette industry since there is no subsequent election to mitigate his actions. I would wait until after the 1996 election, if Clinton loses or his interest in cigarettes wanes, then invest.

## **Two Sides**

By Roy Den Hollander

When I worked for Metromedia TV News, now Fox News, there was only one way out of the newsroom and above that door was a sign: "Each story has two sides—make sure you get both." That maxim is no longer followed by the effete, eastern intellectual, white trash, elitist media.

Today, the fifth estate kowtows to the current, political-correctionalist propaganda of depicting females as victims and men as oppressors. The news media and Hollywood portray the role of wife as dreadful and that of the husband as enviable. As with other superficially, politically naive analyses, the Feminazi infested media often fails to look beyond its members own biased beliefs to the reality of being a husband in feminararchy America

Everyday the husband leaves the house and children to trade 8, 10 or 12 hours of his life for the means to provide for his wife and offspring. Beyond food and housing, he must satiate her voracious appetite for material goods in her Sisyphean effort to keep up with Mrs. Jones; assuage her relentless vanity with expensive jewelry, perfumes, clothes and cosmetics; appease with social status her vindictive, vitriolic ranting as age lines her face; satisfy junior's whining for a new toy, bicycle or car; and fulfill his daughter's limitless greed for MTV hyped products.

At work, the husband must win out over others or jeopardize the means of satisfying his insatiable dependents. Job stress is an ever-present companion that contributes to the seven years shorter life span men have as compared to dames. Many husbands, however, do not have to worry about stress, because their assigned role as serfs to princesses lands them in jobs that kill before stress has a chance to even raise their blood pressure. In the ten most hazardous jobs in America, over 90 percent of the workers are men. Every year industrial accidents kill twelve times more men than girls.

If an unfriendly nation decides to invade a husband's homeland, he, not his wife, will be drafted. The husband will go fight in order to protect his family and their way of life. In the twentieth century, 99 percent of the soldiers killed in wars were men. Perhaps death is the easy way for men to survive a war. Of the over two million young American men who served in Vietnam, approximately 800,000 suffer from post-traumatic stress syndrome. I wonder if any of these guys would have traded washing dishes for the hell they went through and are still suffering from.

In an emergency situation, females, including wives, and children are rescued first while men, including husbands, wait, hoping the grim reaper's scythe swings slowly enough for them to escape.

When the bottom of the economy falls out, the main provider of a family, usually the husband loses his job, which requires the family to seek government assistance. Some welfare programs require the husband to leave his home before the wife and children can receive support. As a result, the wife still has her children and a roof over her head while the husband walks the

indifferent streets alone. Approximately 90 percent of America's three million homeless are men—not a few because of lost jobs.

At the other end of the economic scale where both husband and wife have well paying jobs, government and private support groups' discrimination against men has virtually no effect. But a form of male discrimination still exists. When the wife has a child, she often has the option to leave work to raise the child, to work part-time or return to work full-time. The husband also has three options: to continue working, to continue working and to continue working.

Finally, the burdens foisted on husbands and all men by this wo - man's nation cause men to commit suicide five times more often than females. For example, the Vietnam War killed around 58,000 young men; since that war's end, over 58,000 men who served in Vietnam have committed suicide.

When the Feminazis exclaim, “My God, who would not want to be a wife!” Given the alternative—many.

## **Do Men Cause the Wars?** By Roy Den Hollander

During a trip to the evil empire—formerly the Soviet Union but still as evil as ever—a budding middle-aged Feminazi translator sternly ended her exposition about a battle from World War II depicted in a museum outside Moscow with “Men cause the wars!” The American academicians and others along on the tour, including the males who were no longer men, nodded approvingly. Not me, my juvenile delinquent attitude, which I’ve never been able or wanted to outgrow, made me speak up—“Tell that to the guys pushing up daises in the Falklands!” That shut the broad’s duplicitous mouth.

The Falklands, however, was just one war in which a female, Margaret Thatcher, helped kill 252 British and 655 Argentine soldiers, sailors, and airmen while doing in only three British females. What about all the other wars? Men certainly die in them in greater numbers than girls: the first Iraq war totaled about 22,000 men on both sides to 11 American female combat deaths and in Vietnam 58,185 American men to 8—that’s right—8 American females. But are guys the sole cause of that which destroys so many more men than broads? The National Organization of Witches (N.O.W.) and other modern-day matriarchic tyrants would have us believe so because it infers that if men cause the wars, than they get what they deserve in war.

Let’s look at the first Iraq war and April Glassby, the American ambassador to Iraq in 1990. She met Saddam Hussein just before he invaded Kuwait. At that time, there was rising tension between Iraq and Kuwait, Iraq was mobilizing and there were reports that Saddam might move across the border. So what did April tell Saddam at their meeting: the United States had no obligation to defend Kuwait. How dumb can you get! For dames it has no limits, especially in situations suited for men. Maybe April didn’t want to offend Saddam’s sensitivities by popping his illusion as the modern day Saladin. Whatever the reason for her stupidity, after

April tells Saddam “green light,” he naturally invades—as would any guy when a girl gives him the go-ahead—even though April probably meant “red light.” What was Saddam suppose to do—read the bimbo’s mind? So he invades, figuring the U.S. won’t intervene because that’s what its ambassador said, and if the U.S. won’t than no one will.

As for Viet Nam, lots of contributing factors went into bringing us that war, including the 1.8 million more votes Lyndon Johnson received from females than men in 1964. Of course, those bimbos didn’t swing the election and Barry Goldwater might have dragged us into the same quagmire, but just looking at history as it played-out shows that more girls than guys were responsible for re-electing LBJ who turned Viet Nam into a male meat grinder.

How about the big killer of men—World War II? The war that prompted the bimbat Russian translator to blame only men. This requires a little history—something the Feminazis are excellent at ignoring or re-writing.

The treaty ending the First World War set up the League of Nations. In order for the League, like the United Nations today, to have any power required America as a member. The League ended up including most of Europe, including Germany, as well as Japan and China—but no U.S. Here’s why: President Woodrow Wilson and the leader of the Senate, Henry Cabot Lodge, had some disagreements over the League. Since the Senate would have to approve the treaty that called for U.S. membership, a compromise was crucial and likely because both men were politicians. But when Wilson suffered a stroke, his wife, in effect, took over as President—that doomed any chance of an agreement. When was the last time you tried to reach a compromise with a female? It’s not possible! To broads “compromise” means only one thing: Do it their way! Without the U.S., the League ultimately proved incapable of preventing aggression by the Axis Powers in the 1930s, which culminated in World War II.



Another Mistress of War includes Queen Victoria with her campaigns of imperialism in Africa: the Anglo-Zulu War and the two Boer Wars. The Queen used 250,000 troops to conduct a scorched earth policy against the Boers and throw Africans and Boers into concentration camps: 27,927 Boers (of whom 22,074 were children under 16) and about 20,000 Africans died of starvation, disease and exposure. In all, about 25% of the Boer inmates and 17% of the African ones died. Concentration camps weren't new in 1900, but under the British matriarch Victoria, they wreaked an unprecedented toll of human misery. The Second Boer War alone cost around 75,000 lives — 22,000 British soldiers, 6,000-7,000 Boer soldiers, 20,000-28,000 Boer civilians and perhaps 25,000 Africans. The population of the world back then was 26% of what it is now, so multiply these figures by four to understand the scope of feminine barbarity.

Then there's one of the all time Hoing champs: Catherine the Great of Russia. Ho Catherine started or instigated a number of wars in order to expand her domain to the South and East into the Ottoman Empire and bite off pieces of Poland in the West. Her eminence killed plenty men in order to add some 200,000 square miles to Russian territory, and when finished, she had bankrupted the county. The current German chancellor Angela Merkel has a picture of Catherine the Great in her office because, as Angela says, "Catherine was a strong woman," which in Feminaziese means an unabashed Ho and destroyer of men.

There are plenty of other female tyrants throughout history who have unleashed the irrational fury of their twisted emotions when slighted, given vent to their insatiable greed and blown mindlessly passed the chance of a compromise to kill plenty of men and others. The Feminazis conveniently ignored history hoping us guys will do the same and buy into their con of the empathetic female leader. Don't be fooled; broads are only empathetic so long as they're looking in the mirror. The fighting and dying in wars will always fall on the shoulders of men,

so it seems wise that to avoid unnecessary wars, men should keep bimbos out of the political decision making process.

## **Who are more compassionate, more civilized: males or females?**

Feminist proselytizing demands we believe that girls are better suited for certain male activities—only the high paying and powerful ones of course—because females are more compassionate and caring. Nobody wants a compassionate general, but let's see whether girls really are "compassionate."

Take a husband and wife who both work. While driving, the wife slams into another car—not surprising since she's running her mouth on a cell phone and between breaths and gibberish, she's sucking down a coffee latte. She ends up in the hospital for weeks. The family income is cut, but the husband's main concern is that she's okay and gets well. He knows they'll make it through the financial crunch.

Reverse the situation. The husband is broadsided by some lady yakking on her cell phone and sipping a coffee latte. The accident, more like recklessness, sends him to the hospital for weeks. The wife's only concerns are the impact on her of the loss of income and sex. Sex is a concern, unless she's an adulteress (something many wives are until men no longer find them attractive), and the loss of cash flow needed to keep her in the life style she is accustomed to. While this example shows females as being less compassionate than men, it does show them as equals in one sense: both are primarily concerned about the wife.

Regardless about compassion, girls just aren't as competent as men at many tasks. However; they aren't powerless. Mother Nature gave them the ability to use sex, sexual favors and sympathy to win what they want. But Feminarchy America now allows them to habitually get away with conduct they never could have before. Feminists believe the universe exempted them from civilized conduct by making them female even though that was just an accident.

Some examples: Has a girl ever summarily pushed you out of the way in a crowded night club or in a stampede to squeeze her fat rear into a bus or subway spot that could fit only one of her cheeks? What about cutting in line or mouthing off in such a vitriolic manner that if it came from a man he'd end up with a knuckle sandwich? Or take these female teachers caught having sex with their underage students. They receive no prison time or one to three years while male teachers get 15 to 20. Then there's females murdering their children without getting fried, killing their husbands and not even going to jail or butchering incipient human beings on demand because they want the choice to act irresponsibly in satisfying her sexual whim of the moment.

Feminarchy America allows girls to get away with more than Mother Nature intended, not because girls are superior but because females are now making the rules. We have forgotten six million years of hominid evolution: females aren't here to soothe the "savage beast"; the "savage beast" is here to limit their infinite capacity for evil. And the most virulent feminine evil is Feminism.

So what's to be done with a Feminist? Strap her to a missile and drop her on the Middle East. They'll know how to deal with her.

# Simplified Tonal Music Theory

## Introduction

Music is an audible sound—it cannot be seen. It works through the ears and body on the brain to cause pleasant emotions, sad or angry emotions.

In Western Europe around the ninth century, people began trying to represent the audible sounds visually. Through the rest of the Middle Ages into the Renaissance, they created a system of symbols and rules to depict and understand what composers were doing to elicit emotions. They were not unlike the alchemists of the time trying to understand the physical world.

The problems faced by medieval alchemists and medieval musical theorists were they not only did not understand the science of what they were trying to represent, but failed to pursue the simplest explanation—the simplest hypothesis. The medieval musical theorists kept trying to preserve their original hypotheses by adding new rules that made musical theory overly complex with convoluted and uncertain qualifications.

This paper is a minor effort to simplify tonal music theory by doing away with the 60 different scales, the different clefs and key signatures by focusing on intervals as the reason that music elicits emotions.

## Physics

Tonal music consists of more than one sound occurring at the same time; that is, two or more voices. This creates harmony—the sound of two or more notes occurring simultaneously or where consecutively sounded notes sound as though they were played simultaneously. The consecutively sounded notes harmony is a trick of the brain, similar to watching a movie made up of individual still pictures.

The average adult can hear a range of frequencies (pitches, tone, notes) from a low of 20 sound vibrations in one second (lowest pedal on a pipe organ) to a high of 20,000 per second. Frequencies are measured in “Hertz” (Hz).

Humans can most easily distinguish pitches below 5,000 Hz when they are at a relatively low intensity (amplitude, loudness) such as at a symphony. As a result, the instruments in an orchestra that play tonal music span a pitch range from around 20 Hz to around 5,000 Hz. After all, you want the audience to easily hear what you play; otherwise, why bother.

## 12 chromatic notes

The approximate 20 Hz to 5,000 Hz pitch range consists of about eight octaves as indicated on a piano. The piano has a range of about 7.5 octaves.

The medieval musicologists designated C as the first note in any octave, but that made the first note in the lowest octave a C with a frequency of 16.35 Hz, which next to no one could hear. When the piano was invented, it started with the first note that was easily heard—an A at 27.50 Hz, but that meant the first key of the piano did not start on a C. Logic would have changed the convention for indicating which note began an octave, since any note can be used. But logic was not a strong point of the Middle Ages.

Each successive or higher pitch from A is 1.0594631 (the 12th root of 2) times the previous frequency. For example,  $1.0594631 \times 27.5 = 29.1352$  Hz to get A#; or  $1.0594631 \times 41.2$  (E) = 43.65 Hz to get F. Each octave consists of 12 chromatic pitches, also referred to as notes, tones or keys.

The notes in an octave were originally represented with seven letters, C to B, but that only accounted for seven frequencies. Later medieval musicologists invented flats (b) and sharps (#) in order to represent the other five notes in a chromatic scale while maintaining their seven letter format. Flats and sharps are called “accidentals” because the medievalists had accidentally ignored them by using only seven letters to designate notes.

The introduction of flats and sharps resulted in a notational rule for determining whether a note of a particular frequency be designated a sharp or flat: write sharps when notes are ascending, but flats when notes are descending, or refer to what is written after the traditional cleft, unless a sharp or flat is borrowed from a different scale. It’s a rule divorced from reality, since the sharp of one letter note usually equals the flat of another letter note regardless of the scales from which the notes come. For example, is it A# or Bb?<sup>1</sup> Both have the same pitch or frequency—they sound the same. But which one is used may depend on whether the score is going up or down. That’s similar to having two buttons in an elevator for the same floor—one button for going up and one for going down to the same floor. The use of flats and sharps for identifying pitch is convoluted and just causes confusion. What do you expect from feudal Europe?

Musical alchemy from the Middle Ages created the following nomenclature for notes—some with the same frequency, others not:

A, A# Bb, B Cb, B# C, C# Db, D, D# Eb, E Fb, E# F, F# Gb, G, G# Ab.

Or without the alchemic redundancy of different notations for the same pitch:

A, A#, B, C, C#, D, D#, E, F, F#, G, G#. The interval between each is traditionally called a half-step (“H-step”), which is the 12<sup>th</sup> root of 2 Hz.

A more simple nomenclature would be the following that lists the different frequencies by number. The corresponding medieval notations without multiple names for the same note are also listed below:

1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, 8, 9, 10, 11, 12  
A, A#, B, C, C#, D, D#, E, F, F#, G, G#.

---

<sup>1</sup> Also adding to the convolution, is it B# or C, Cb or B, E# or F, Fb or E.

Once again, the interval between consecutively numbered notes is still a H-step or the 12<sup>th</sup> root of 2 Hz, and each numbered note has a different pitch.

The 8 octaves are ordered from the lowest frequency or fundamental frequency to the highest frequency or highest average frequency in overtones. Traditionally, the notation for octaves has been “0” for notes in the lowest octave set of frequencies to “7” for notes in the highest octave. To avoid confusion with notes being assigned numbers, octaves can be assigned lower case letters a, b, c, d, e, f, g, h, with a as the lowest set of note frequencies and h as the highest.

Each of the 8 octaves would have a set of notes labeled 1 to 12. A note with a number X in one octave sounds similar to a note with the same number X in another octave. That is, note 1 in any octave sounds similar to all the other note-1s in all the other octaves. The same is true for the other notes 2 to 12.

The reason for similar sounding notes over different octaves deals with overtones and the set of neurons that the brain uses to hear. Note X in octave b will have a pitch of 2 times the frequency of X in octave a. So going up one octave will increase the frequency of note X by multiplying it times 2 raised to the power of 1. Going up two octaves will increase the pitch of note X by multiplying it times 2 raised to the power of 2. The formula is X in Hz times 2 raised to the power of n, where n is the number of octaves going up. Going down, divide instead of multiply.

Six-staff lines for a graphic representation of sound

The musical alchemists used a staff of 5 lines, but one with 6 lines can be used that would eliminate the need for clefs by always writing the same note on the same line or in the same space no matter the voice. Also, at the beginning of each staff, the voice would be indicated by writing S for soprano, A for alto, T for tenor and B for base. In front of each voice letter, a lower case letter could be place to indicate the octave. Since a staff of 6 lines can carry every note in an octave, it would also eliminate the use of ledger lines.

The unchanging positions of notes would have odd numbers in spaces, even numbers on the lines:

<i>Octave</i>	<i>Voice</i>	<i>Notes</i>
abcdefgh	S, A, T, B	-----12----
		11
		-----10----
		9
		-----8----
		7
		-----6----
		5
		-----4----
		3
		-----2----
		1

The exact pitch of any note depends on its number (1 to 12) and the octave it is in (a to h). Notes of the same number sound similar throughout all 8 octaves. Since notes 1 to 12 on six-staff lines and spaces comprise an octave, the next note up from 12 will be note 1 in the first space of the next octave up, unless a different octave is designated. And the next note down from note 1 will be note 12 on the line of the next octave down.

Since most western tonal music spans four octaves, a composition will have four voices (S, A, T, B) written over four sets of six-staff lines. The staves for the separate octaves can be stack on top of each other with a highlight indicating where one ends and the other begins—no more ledger lines.

### The ancient ghost of scales

The medieval musicologists invented scales to help explain and show what composers were doing.

A scale is a graduated series of seven notes that ascend in pitch from the first. Each octave has a total of 60 scales called major, natural minor, harmonic minor or melodic minor. The total number of scales are 480 (8 octaves times 60 scales), but the seven notes in each and every scale are represented by the notes: A, A# Bb, B Cb, B# C, C# Db, D, D# Eb, E Fb, E# F, F# Gb, G, G# Ab, which are really only 12 different notes when medieval redundancy is eliminated. Since the notes in one octave had a different pitch (frequency) than the notes in another octave, composers were in reality dealing with 96 different notes of which all but 12 sounded similar. These 12 notes, pitches, tones, frequencies were the building blocks of Western music from around 1600 until Stravinsky—leave it to the Russians to upset matters.

Medieval scales are nothing more than an overly complex method of trying to visually explain what composers were doing by ear. The explanations involved whole-steps and half-steps to note the frequency distance, or intervals, between successive notes on a scale in order to determine whether the scale was major, natural minor, harmonic minor, or melodic minor even though composers most likely did not rely on such descriptions.

Major	W	W	H	W	W	W	H
Natural Minor	W	H	W	W	H	W	W
Harmonic Minor	W	H	W	W	H	(W+H)	H
Melodic Minor	W	H	W	W	W	W	H

The major scales create a mood of “brightness” and minor scales one of melancholy. The mood is created by the particular selection and arrangement of notes with the respective intervals between the notes. For example, take the traditional A natural minor scale: A w B h C w D w E h F w G w A. The first four notes give it a melancholy feel. But start at C (C w D w E h F) and that part of the same scale sounds bright. So it is not the scale that determines the mood but which of the 12 basic notes are chosen and by choosing the notes, the composer is also choosing the interval spacing and sequence of intervals. It is the intervals between notes and the sequence of intervals that matter—not the specific scale.

The medieval musical alchemists gave each note in every one of the 60 scales a number (scale degree) and name depending on its position in the scale: 1=tonic, 2=supertonic, 3=mediant,

4=subdominant, 5=dominant, 6=submediant, 7=leading. Each scale degree is ascribed an importance or non-importance. 1 & 7 are most important. 7 moves the melody to 1 which results in “feel good” because tension is resolved, unless like Teddy Roosevelt and Donald Trump you relish a fight. 2 & 4 are passing tones that take your mood elsewhere. 3 establishes quality, which means whether the scale is major (bright) or minor (melancholic). 5 creates tension that for some needs to be resolved by going to 7 and then 1 or straight to 1. 6 is deceptive, like politicians. The problem with this traditional analysis is that the scale degree of the very same note changes in other scales. Further, the mood elicited depends on the intervals between notes, whether horizontal or vertical—not a note’s scale degree in a specific scale because it is always changing. Using a 12-note, 6-line system eliminates this unnecessary complexity involving scale degrees because it eliminates scales. The composer need only concentrate on the moods created by certain intervals.

Scale degrees:

- 1 = most stable
- 2 = passing tone, tendency to move 1 to 3 or 3 to 1
- 3 = somewhat stable that provides a quality of whether Major or minor
- 4 = passing tone, tendency to move 3 to 5 or 5 to 3
- 5 = stable but tension also leads to 1
- 6 = deceptive, listener thinks 5 will go to 1, but goes to 6 instead leaving a feeling of being conned, it is a game changer
- 7 = not stable, moves to 1

Under the medieval musicologists, a natural minor scale is modified with H-steps to make it harmonic by raising the 7<sup>th</sup> note of the natural minor scale. The melodic minor is created by raising the 6<sup>th</sup> and 7<sup>th</sup> notes of the natural minor scale. This is done to create a H-step from the 7<sup>th</sup> note in the scale to the 1<sup>st</sup> note in the same scale but an octave higher. The shortness of the H-step interval provides a consistency and direction to the melody. Of course, this can simply be done by inserting one of the 12 chromatic notes that is consecutive to the next note, since it will be a half step interval because they are all half steps when consecutive—no scales or scale degrees needed.

Medievally, the melodic minor scale exists only when notes are ascending. If they descend, then the scale becomes a reverse natural minor. This is done to create a mood of “resolution”; otherwise, there will exist unresolved tension. Using a 12 note chromatic system to mimic the same intervals will create the same mood without the unnecessary rule of what goes up must come down differently. The focus is on which intervals or series of intervals elicit the desired mood—not terminology.

### Intervals

An interval is the frequency distance between two notes: frequency “v” of the higher frequency note Y minus the v of the lower frequency note X. The difference is made up of a number of H-steps, or one H-step, depending on how far apart in frequency are notes Y and X.



The musical alchemists not only described an interval in H-steps (two H-steps equaling a whole step) but also assigned each interval a “quality”. The quality descriptions are minor, major, perfect, diminished, and augmented. Such resulted in the following types of interval descriptions:

P1 or d2  
m2 or A1  
M2 or d3  
m3 or A2  
M3 or d4  
P4 or A3  
d5  
A4  
P5 or d6  
m6 or A5  
M6 or d7  
m7 or A6  
M7 or d8  
P8 or A7

Determining an interval is complex thanks to the curse of scales. In medieval Europe, first count the number of letter notes starting with the lowest pitch and ending with the highest pitch. Since we’ve already learned our A, B, Cs, counting the number of letters going up is easy—down, not so easy. That gives the “distance” from one note to the other and is represented by a number, which is the number of letter notes that the interval spans.

Next is to determine the quality. Perfect intervals are easy, well maybe. If the number of letters is one, that equals P1 a.k.a. unison; number of letters is four, that equals P4; number of letters is five, that equals P5; and number of letters is eight, equals P8.

Now, the hard part: For determining major or minor, take the low pitch bottom note of the interval, assume it is the first scale degree or tonic of one of the 60 scales. Look up or run through your memory all the scales until you find one or more with that note as a tonic, then check to see if the high end note is also in that scale. If it is, then the interval has a quality the same as that particular scale, which will be either major or minor. But it is not quite that “easy.” You may be able to find that one of the 60 scales has that low end note as a tonic, but it does not have the high end note in the same scale. Do what the alchemist of old always did when their theories couldn’t explain a phenomenon—add a new rule of exception to their convolutions. In this case, look at the closest note in the scale to the high end note and add a sharp or a flat or eliminate a sharp or a flat to make the high end note the same frequency as the one in the scale. Remember, going up gets a sharp, going down gets a flat. When you do this, however, the interval loses any medieval major, minor or perfect quality and takes on the quality of being diminished (decreased) or augment (increased).

There are other ways but still convoluted. To determine minor or major, once again count the number of letter notes. If the number of letter notes is 2 or 3 and the number of H-steps between

the two notes are even, then the interval is major. If the number of H-steps is odd, then the interval is minor. If the number of letter notes is 6 or 7 and the number of H-steps are even, then the interval is minor. If the number of H-steps is odd, then the interval is major.

There is also the inverse method for determining an interval's size and quality. Every octave can be divided into two intervals. If one is a major with size S, then the other will be a minor of size |9-S|. So, if one is P5 (five letter notes), the inverse will be P4 (four letter notes) and vice versa:

$$\begin{aligned}
 P4 + P5 &= P8 \\
 M2 + m7 &= P8 \\
 m2 + M7 &= P8 \\
 M3 + m6 &= P8 \\
 m3 + M6 &= P8
 \end{aligned}$$

So when faced with a large interval, to create the inverse interval, take the higher note and put it below the lower note—the same note an octave down. Figure out what the smaller interval is and then take the inverse of that to determine the larger interval. That is, count the letters in the smaller interval to get the size, then determine whether it is major or minor. The size of the larger interval will be 9 minus the size of the smaller interval, and if the smaller is minor, then the larger is major and vice versa.

Intervals are considered the building blocks of tonal music because depending on the interval different emotions are elicited. But these emotions result from the frequencies of the notes used and the number of H-steps between them—not the musical alchemists convoluted methodology involving scales.

<u>Interval</u>	<u>No. H-Steps</u>	<u>Consonance or dissonance</u>	<u>Frequency ratios Y/X</u>
P1 or d2	0	consonant	1:1
m2 or A1	1	dissonant	16:15
M2 or d3	2	dissonant	9:8
m3 or A2	3	consonant	6:5
M3 or d4	4	consonant	5:4
P4 or A3	5	either	4:3
d5	6	dissonant	
A4	6	dissonant	45:32
P5 or d6	7	consonant	3:2

m6 or A5	8	consonant	8:5
M6 or d7	9	consonant	5:3
m7 or A6	10	dissonant	9:5
M7 or d8	11	dissonant	15:8
P8 or A7	12	consonant	2:1

If the interval goes beyond 12 H-steps, then subtract 12 from the total number of H-steps, which will give a number of H-steps to be matched with one of the above intervals.

What a chore. With a system of 12 numbered notes on six-staff lines, one glance does the work to determine a specific note, and an ability to count to 12 and subtract takes care of the intervals. The interval between note X and note Y =  $|X-Y|$ , which is the number of half steps and that will tell you whether the notes create a consonant or dissonant sound. For example, if you want to know the number of H-steps from note 3 to note 10, then  $|3-10|$  equals 7, which produces a consonant sound when the notes are played simultaneously or consecutively.

With 12 numbered notes on six-staff lines, there's no counting our A, B, Cs and no major, minor, perfect, diminished, or augmented needed. An added benefit is that Russians, Asians and Arabs use the same numbers and mathematics as Europeans, so they don't have to worry about knowing their A, B, Cs.

#### Guesstimating what scale is where in a composition.

Medieval musicologists' reliance on scales to understand what composers were doing created another problem. Composers were not about to limit their compositions to one scale of seven notes, regardless of the number of similar notes that the different octaves provided. Composers used any note or notes from any scale they wanted to create the effect they desired. The alchemists, therefore, needed a way for preserving their analyses based on scales in determining which of the 60 scales a piece was in at a particular point. They called this invented convolution *modulation*.

The problem with *modulation* is that a composer might be throwing in a note or notes not on a predetermined scale just for an effect. There are even difficulties in discovering what exactly is the predetermined scale. Composers don't always write on which scale a composition starts. If you do not know the starting scale, then how can you find out the alleged modulations using the medieval musicologists' system of analyses? If you do know the starting scale, you still may not be able to determine the modulations. So the alchemists came up with guessing games.

To determine the beginning scale of a piece look at the first note of the soprano—skip the note if it is just marking time, and start with the second note. Then look at the last note of a movement. Also check the first note of the base and the last note of the base for a movement. Scan the piece to see whether there are a lot of such notes used. The alchemists do not define “a lot.” If these

notes are all the same or nearly all the same, then the alchemists claim that is the tonic of the scale with which the composer started—maybe. So you have a guesstimate tonic, now you need to compare the other notes in the piece to the major and minor scales that have that alleged tonic to conclude whether the scale is major or minor.

As long as the composer keeps using notes from that alleged scale, there is no modulation. But what if he doesn't? Does that mean he changed scales or just threw in a note from a different scale for impact? According to traditional theory, it depends on whether the following notes belong to a different scale and whether they persist. The alchemists give no definition for "persist," and with only 12 distinct notes spread over 60 scales, the piece might be in a different scale but using the same notes as the previous scale. The alchemists do assert, however, that a change in scales may be; that is, may be, foretold by the appearance of the leading tone (7) from the new scale. But how do you know a note is the leading tone of the new scale, if you don't know the new scale. Perhaps a "philosopher's stone" would help.

Another alleged way is determining where a cadence occurs in the scale that the piece is believed to be in at a particular point. The cadence would be the melody moving from the guesstimate scale note with degree 5 in the base to 1, or 5 to 6 to 1 in the base, and at the same time moving in the soprano from note scale degree 7 to 1. The motion usually crosses into the next measure where the cadence ends on the down beat. A change in scale may also be indicated by the sudden appearance of accidentals not in the previous scale. Additionally, when only one voice is being played, that may indicate a change in scale.

Once again, none of these calculations are necessary using a 12-note, six-staff line system because in it—scales don't exist.

Then there's *transposition*. This means moving every note in a sequence of notes up or down  $n$  intervals to create a subsequent sequence of notes that maintains the ascending or descending motion of the notes being transposed. The medieval method, however, requires knowing which scale the notes come from. Okay, let's assume the philosopher stone worked, and we know the scale of the first set of notes and the scale of the second set that we want. For each note in the first set, write the scale degree, go to the second scale and copy down the note with the same scale degree.

In a 12-note, six-staff line system, take the number of H-steps ( $n$ ) that you want to move a sequence of notes up or down. The notes in the second sequence will be  $X + n$ , and  $n$  will be a plus for up and a minus for down in frequency. For example, to move 3 H-steps down and the second note in the first sequence is 6, then the second note in the transposed sequence will be  $6 + (-3) = 3$ . No scale guessing needed.

### Musical Motion

Up, down, sideways, together and alone

### *Horizontal*

Notes and rests written horizontally across a set of staff lines comprise a melody, regardless of the voice. It is a directional movement of sounds through time.

A melody is distinguished horizontally by notes of various frequencies and duration, the notes' interval relationships, rests of various duration, and the relationship of notes and rests to the beats. The smaller the interval between consecutive notes in a melody, the smoother the melody.

Melody is a voice's motion and stability as determined by the horizontal intervals between consecutive notes and the phrase form.

### *Vertical*

Notes written vertically on the same set of staff lines or on the staff lines of the four different voices (S.A.T.B.) comprise a harmony that moves and usually changes as the melody progresses horizontally through time.

Harmony is a combination of vertical note intervals called chords. Now sometimes the notes in a chord do not occur at precisely the same point in time, but because of the way humans hear, it sounds as though they occurred at the same point in time.

### *Horizontal + Vertical*

Since tonal music generally has four voices each with its own melody moving through time, the pattern of movement for each melody can be vertically compared to that in a different voice:

Similar—both voices move in the same direction over time (ascending, descending, or level) but the intervals between horizontally consecutive notes differ in different voices.

Parallel—both voices move in the same direction over time but the intervals between horizontally consecutive notes in different voices are the same.

Contrary or counterpoint—both voices move in opposite directions. Counterpoint is the comparison of two voices at the same point in time by determining the vertical intervals between the notes in the different voices. There are 5 types and are the major foundations of music since the 1600s.

Helter Skelter—Mozart.

### Chords

A chord is three or more notes played together (vertical) or one after another (horizontal). A horizontal chord can span beats. This occurs when notes in the base voice are the same over a beat span.

The frequencies of the adjacent notes in a chord (vertically or horizontally) are separated by 3 or 4 H-steps.

A chord with three notes of different frequencies is a Triad. The lowest frequency of the three notes in an octave is the root or base, the second is 3 or 4 H-steps higher, and the third is 3 or 4 H-steps higher in frequency than the second note.

Since a triad has three notes, it has two intervals that can be represent by a fraction. The denominator is the number of H-steps from the root note to the second note and the numerator is the number of H-steps from the second note to the third.

Numerator = 3H/3H or diminished; 4H/3H or minor; 3H/4H or major; 4H/4H or augmented  
Denominator

Under the medievalists' scheme, chords were created from the notes of a particular scale. For triad chords, that meant using three notes from one of the 60 scales in an octave. To determine the chord used by a composer first required determining which scale he was using for a particular phrase. We've seen how uncertain that can be, but assume you intuit the scale. Next, list all the notes in the chord that are from that scale and determine what order of notes yields intervals of only 3 or 4 H-steps, or simply re-arrange the letter notes in positions that are closest to each other. The first note will be the root.

Once the root is discovered, determine the scale degree of that note in the particular scale. That gives the Roman numeral for the chord, but is it an upper case or lower case Roman numeral? That depends on whether the chord is major or augmented, which takes an upper case Roman numeral, or minor or diminished, which takes a lower case Roman numeral. It is major or augmented when the number of H-steps from the root to the second note = 4 H-steps; that is, the denominator = 4 H-steps. It is minor or diminished when the number of H-steps from the root to the second note = 3 H-steps, or the denominator is 3 H-steps. But we're not finished yet. If the denominator is 4 H-steps and numerator is 4 H-steps, the upper case Roman numeral gets a "+" sign. If the denominator is 3 H-steps and numerator 3 H-steps, the lower case Roman numeral gets a "o" sign. So to determine a chord requires not only figuring out the scale; knowing you're A, B, Cs; finding the root scale degree in upper or lower case Roman numeral, assuming you have the right scale and can count H-steps; and ascertaining whether diminished or augmented or nothing, once again assuming you can count H-steps.

In a 12-note, six-staff line system, scale guessing is not required and counting H-steps are easy because moving from a line to a space or space to a line is always one H-step. To determine the root note, list all the notes in the chord and determine what order of notes yields intervals of only 3 or 4 H-steps, or simply re-arrange the number notes in positions that are numerically closest to each other. Use simple subtraction to determine the number of H-steps between the root and second and the second and third notes. For example the chord with notes 2, 6, 9, denominator 4 H-steps and numerator 3 H-steps, so it's a major chord. To label the chords simply write the root note number (1 to 12) with d (diminished) or m (minor) or M (major) or A (augmented). Or replace the traditional D, m, M and A notations with different notations. Whatever, no Roman numerals needed; therefore, no scales or scale degrees required. Further, under this system, since

the notes in a chord are not limited to the notes in the particular scale of that part of a composition, knowing the scale in order to write chords is irrelevant.

### Composition techniques

#### *Species*

Counterpoint, which is contrary motion, is allegedly pleasing to the ear.

The traditional and different species of counterpoint often switch from one to the other in a composition regardless of beat or voice. Which makes one wonder, why even bother with five different species? Anyway, here they are:

#### *First Species Counterpoint:*

In First Species, there is only one note above the other; therefore, both voices move at the same rate, or number of notes per unit of time. Any new section or new theme starts with a P5 or P8 vertical interval and ends with a P5 or P8 vertical interval. There are no consecutive P5 vertical intervals and no consecutive P8 vertical intervals. All the vertical intervals must be consonant—no dissonant vertical intervals between the notes in the two voices; that is, no intervals of P1, 2, P4, 7.

Horizontal or melody motion should have a H-step or whole step interval between consecutive notes. Consecutive notes have to be of different frequencies. There cannot be a repetition of consecutive notes horizontally. This is most pleasing to the ears of overly sensitive people—a majority of millennials in this day and age. The last note must be horizontally moved into by a half or whole step.

In 12-note, six-staff lines, the rules are the same only it is easier to determine the intervals. The intervals are described by the number of H-steps between numbered notes on the six-lined staves, |X-Y|. Stepwise is an interval of one H-step or two H-steps.

To write first species:

1. Start with the melody of the lowest frequency voice.
2. Write in arrows among horizontal notes indicating ascending or descending on lowest frequency voice.
3. In higher frequency voice, move horizontally trying to write successive notes with stepwise intervals moving in opposite direction of the notes in lower voice.
4. Three notes before end, write in possible endings with a vertical interval of 7 or 12 H-steps.
5. Use higher voice notes so that the last note creating the 7 or 12 H-step vertical interval is reached by an H-step or whole step horizontal interval.

### *Second Species Counterpoint:*

One note in one voice corresponds to two notes in another voice—can be any two voices.

The vertical intervals can be dissonant but only on the second of the two notes; the second note must be on a weak beat depicting motion in the same direction as its neighboring notes; that is, for the first set of two notes, the second note and the next first note of the second set of two notes taken together indicate ascending or descending; and the note on the dissonant interval is between two notes with consonant vertical intervals.

A vertical interval of 7 or 12 H-steps can only be approached by contrary motion unless it arises on a weak beat.

Most horizontal moves should be stepwise but a small number of leaps are okay providing each leap is surrounded by stepwise motion.

### *Third Species Counterpoint:*

One note in one voice corresponds to four notes in another voice. The second note of the four may have a dissonant vertical interval or the second and fourth notes may have dissonant vertical intervals. Dissonant vertical intervals are approached and left by stepwise motion, but a leap from a dissonant to a consonant vertical interval is allowed. Consonant intervals may leap between each other.

### *Fourth Species Counterpoint:*

Fourth species like second species has two notes for every given note in the cantus firmus—base line. In fourth species there are suspensions. A consonant vertical interval in measure  $n$  with its note  $X$  is tied to the same note  $X$  in measure  $n + 1$ .  $X$  in  $n + 1$  is on the downbeat and its vertical interval can be consonant or dissonant. Note  $X$  in  $n + 1$  is followed by note  $Y$ , which is on a weak beat. If  $Y$  is a vertical dissonant interval, then it must be one horizontal stepwise interval descending from note  $X$ . If  $Y$  is on a consonant vertical interval, then can be stepwise down or up from  $X$  in  $n + 1$ .

### *Fifth Species Counterpoint:*

Combination of one, two, three or four species.

### *Ritornello form*

Consists of three parts:

1. Vordorstz is the opening segment usually three measures but can be longer.
2. Fortspinning follows with the prior sequence of notes transposed up or down  $n$  H-steps.
3. Epilogue ends with a new melody that ends with a soprano 7-1 cadence accompanied by a base 5-1 cadence. Regardless of the scale, the distance from 7-1 is one H-step and the



distance from 5-1 is five H-steps. In a 12-note, six-lined staff system, the soprano cadence is two notes separated by one H-step, and the base cadence has two notes separated by 5 H-steps.

Composers can start with any of the three parts and throw in a scale degree 6 after the 7 or 5 as a deception. The deception, however, is still created by the intervals involved, not the scale degrees.

### *Phrase form*

A musical phrase is the smallest unit of music with a defined beginning and ending.

1. “Parallel Period” is a musical phrase that lasts for 8 bars and starts with the “Antecedent” for 4 bars and ends with the “Consequent” for 4 bars. Antecedent and Consequent have the same set of notes for the beginning  $n$  bars, or transposed notes for the beginning  $n$  bars in the Consequent. After bar  $n$ , the Consequent notes differ from the Antecedent. The Consequent traditionally ends with a scale degree cadence of 5-1 (five H-steps between the last two notes) or 7-1 (one H-step between the last two notes in a 12-note, six-lined staff system).

Parallel Period develops the melody or is a melody that sticks in your head.

2. “Sentence” also lasts for 8 bars. Starts with a basic idea for 2 bars, then repeats the basic idea for 2 bars, but the notes may be transposed or changed. Next is the Continuation for 4 bars with familiar, contrasted, new material or a combination of these that traditionally end in a scale degree cadence of 5-1 or 7-1; that is, five H-steps or one H-step between the last two notes in a 12-note, six-lined staff system.

Sentence is not a melody but can be used as a transition among melodies.

To determine whether a Parallel Period or Sentence phrase is used, listen for when the music changes. Then re-listen and count the seconds between the changes by counting one-one thousand, two-one thousand, etc.—just like boys playing football without enough players. Each count is about a second long. The timing for Parallel Period before and after a change will be equal. If not, then it is probably a Sentence structure.

To analyze from a written score in the medieval scale system:

1. Guesstimate the scale.
2. Write scale-degree numbers over each note—look for 5-1 or 7-1 cadences.
3. Count the number of measures and write the measure number for each.
4. Mark the sections where the notes are repeated, whether exactly or transposed.
5. Determine which of the two phrase forms most closely approximates the unit of music.

To analyze from a written score in a 12-note, six-staff line system:

1. Look for five H-steps or one H-step between notes.
2. Count the number of measures and write the measure number for each.
3. Mark the sections where the notes are repeated, whether exactly or transposed.
4. Determine which of the two Phrase forms most closely approximates the unit of music.

### *Four part or four voice composing*

Given a base line or *cantus firmus*, the objective is to create a sequence of triad chords according to certain rules:

1. Each of four voices has a note, so the root note is repeated. Traditionally, soprano and alto were spread over the top two octaves and tenor and base over the lower two octaves without the voices crossing. The same applies in a 12-note, six-staff line system.
2. The musical alchemists required determining the scale of the first created vertical chord before following a list of rules for creating successive chords. In a 12-note, six-staff system the scale determination is not necessary, so just pick up following the rest of the rules.
3. The next vertical chord is dependent on the next *cantus firmus* note. If any of the possible triad combinations would repeat a note in the n-1 chord or prior chord, then repeat that identical note in the nth chord. Maximum number of common notes is two.
4. If a note in the n-1 chord is H-step below a possible note in the nth chord, then put that note in the nth chord.
6. Try to have every note in nth chord reached by stepwise motion from a prior note in the n-1 chord.
7. Avoid consecutive chords where both have a vertical interval of P5 (7 H-steps between notes) or both have an interval of P8 (12 H-steps between notes).

### Rhythm

The horizontal progression of notes gives music a time aspect ( $t$ ). The sound represented by a note lasts for a period of time and the silence or rest lasts for a period of time. Notes are played right after each other unless a rest is indicated.

The time ( $t$ ) for a note or rest is determined by the total amount of time  $T$  for a composition.  $T$  is usually divided into equal parts of time called measures. Measures are in turn usually divided into equal time sections called “beats.” Each beat consists of one or more notes or rests. So what is  $t$  for each note and rest—it depends.

The musical alchemists were smart enough to use proportions rather than absolutes because some compositions were fast, some slow and most had parts that seemed fast and slow. The beginning of each composition has a fraction:  $X/Y$ .  $X$  = the number of beats in a measure: 2, 3,

4, 6, 9, 12.  $Y$  = the type of note or rest used to measure one beat duration and can equal whole, half, quarter, eighth, sixteenth, 32nd, or 64th. So if  $Y = 4$ , that means one quarter note or rest lasts one beat, or  $B$  = the time for one beat as determined from the metronome markings on the score. Where  $Y = 4$  and there are two eighth notes that means each eighth note spans  $\frac{1}{2} B$ . When playing a quarter note as compared to two eighth notes, the eighth notes make the piece sound faster even though the total time  $B$  to play them is the same.

With the duration of a composition as  $T$ , and the total number of measures as  $M$ , the duration of each measure is  $m = T/M$  assuming equal time for all measures. Each measure, unless indicated otherwise, contains  $X$  beats, each beat therefore lasts  $B = m/X$ . The amount of time that anyone note or rest lasts is dependent on  $Y$  and the proportional relationship of notes and rests to  $Y$ . For example, a measure that lasts 4 seconds with four beats per measure, each beat lasts one second. If  $Y$  = a quarter note, then any quarter note will last one second, any eighth note will last 0.5 seconds and a half note will last two seconds.

A beat can be characterized as strong, semi-strong or weak and the order may vary from measure to measure.

Rhythm does not involve scales or clefs or key signatures, so it is the same in a 12-note, six-lined staff system.

### Reading

Using 12 numerically numbered notes on six-staff lines for every voice will simplify reading a score for a player. Since the note on a particular line or in a particular space has the same number no matter what the octave, it is unnecessary to engage in Georges Dandelot's recommendations.

According to Dandelot, to read with ease and speed requires knowing the place of each note on a staff. This requires "fixing in the soul of the reader some points of repose/reference situated at different places on the staff." Reliance on the "soul," assuming it exists, is the usual medieval convention of giving credit to that which cannot be proved.

Also according to Dandelot, once a reference point is fixed in the "spirit," the reader then must learn the neighboring notes and the succession of notes up or down. Take the spirit of C, depending on the cleft, it is in a different staff location and its neighbors may be natural, sharps or flats depending on the scale and whether C is natural, sharp or flat. None of that is needed in a 12-note, six-staff lined system.

### Conclusion

The medieval musical alchemists used clefs to tell the pitch of a note on a staff. The note was given a letter plus nothing for natural or a sharp to indicate one H-step higher or flat to indicate one H-step lower. They used the key signature after the cleft to tell which of two scales the composer started with but gave no explicit note of the actual scales used later on or at the end of the piece. To determine which of the two beginning scales were used required an examination of

the intervals because major and minor scales have a different series of intervals between consecutive notes.

Using a chromatic arrangement of the basic 12 notes and a register of six lines where the same note is on the same line or in the same space all of the time eliminates the need for scales, accidentals, clefs and the arrangement of sharps or flats following a clef; that is, key signatures. It also eliminates figuring when a composer switched to a different scale in the composition because there are no longer scales.